

A DICTIONARY OF  
NEW ZEALAND BIOGRAPHY

*EDITED BY*

G. H. SCHOLEFIELD

---

VOLUME I  
A — L

---

WELLINGTON  
*DEPARTMENT OF INTERNAL AFFAIRS*  
NEW ZEALAND  
1940

COPYRIGHT BY THE CROWN  
Extracts of reasonable length may be made with suitable acknowledgment, but for more extended use of material permission must be sought from the Minister of Internal Affairs, Wellington

PRINTED AND BOUND IN NEW ZEALAND BY  
WHITCOMBE AND TOMBS LTD WELLINGTON

---

---

## INTRODUCTION

### ON THE PRACTICE OF BIOGRAPHY IN NEW ZEALAND

---

THE PROJECT of publishing a national biography of New Zealand was first entertained by me about the year 1907. At that time I carried out fairly exhaustive research, with the rather limited sources then available, in order to arrive at some conclusions as to the social origins of the New Zealand people and the significance of the various racial elements. More than sixty years had then elapsed since the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi, which marked the advent of British sovereignty, and about thirty since the abolition of the provinces. There were still alive a few pioneers of the early years of the Colony who had a reliable recollection of events that occurred in the first period. There were also some survivors of the Provincial Councils in all the provinces, among whom I was indebted for information to such figures as Sir Charles Bowen, Sir Maurice O'Rorke, Sir J. Logan Campbell, J. D. Ormond, R. J. Seddon, Dr S. Hodgkinson, J. W. Barnicoat, R. H. J. Reeves, W. D. H. Baillie, A. P. Seymour and C. A. De Lautour. The results of this research were embodied in a series of articles which appeared early in 1907 in the *New Zealand Times*, the *New Zealand Herald*, the *Lyttelton Times* and the *Otago Daily Times*.

#### PREVIOUS BIOGRAPHICAL LITERATURE

When I first became interested in the biographical aspect of New Zealand history the literature on the subject was limited in extent and indifferent in quality. Passing over the field chronologically, we find that S. E. Grimstone's *The Southern Settlements of New Zealand* (1847), contains a small section of official and military biography. Brett's *New Zealand Almanac*, published a generation later, pays some attention to the subject, the issues about 1879 containing extended biographies of leading public men, sometimes with portraits. In 1879 also appeared J. Henniker Heaton's *Australasian Dictionary of Dates and Men*

PREVIOUS BIOGRAPHICAL LITERATURE

of the Time, containing all the History of Australasia from 1542 to May 1879. This book of reference includes more or less reliable biographies of a few dozen New Zealanders. In 1884 appeared Alfred Cox's first volume of *Recollections of Australia, England, Ireland and New Zealand*, which gives a good deal of biographical information about leading people whom Cox met in fifty years of life in the Colonies of New South Wales and New Zealand. Though Cox paid more attention to anecdote and character sketches than to historical exactitude, this volume marks the opening of a field of research in which he was not excelled for many years. In 1886 he published *Men of Mark in New Zealand*, in which he adopted the dictionary arrangement and went to greater trouble, by means of personal consultation, to collect biographical facts.

In the same year appeared the first edition of William Gisborne's *New Zealand Rulers and Statesmen*. Gisborne had a unique experience of New Zealand life, extending from the mid-'forties to the time of his departure from the Colony in 1881. Well educated and intelligent, a shrewd observer of events and human motives, he stood judicially with one foot in public affairs and the other in official position, maintaining an attitude of critical detachment. Pember Reeves remarks that Gisborne's pen pictures of the great men of New Zealand 'are written with such undoubted fairness and personal knowledge, and in so workmanlike, albeit good-natured, a way, as to have a permanent interest.' In 1887 was published T. W. Gudgeon's *The Defenders of New Zealand*, which contains, besides a Maori historical account of the wars, biographical memoirs of colonists who distinguished themselves in the campaigns. Though lacking in method, and occasionally also in accuracy, this is a valuable contribution to the body of biographical literature; and the portraits are comprehensive and useful.

In 1891 Sir Bernard Burke published *A Genealogical and Heraldic History of the Colonial Gentry*, commonly known (and here referred to) as *Colonial Gentry*. This is compiled on the pattern of the Peerage, setting out genealogies at length, regardless of the standing of the subjects in the community and paying little attention to other biographical facts. In 1892 Philip Menzell published in London *The Dictionary of Australasian Biography (1855-1892)*. This also includes a number of New Zealanders, most of whom appear to have furnished the information themselves. It was largely relied upon for some decades afterwards, and to it are traceable many misstatements which have stubbornly retained their validity in later New Zealand history. Within five years of the appearance of Menzell there was published in New Zealand the first volume of a very pre-

PREVIOUS BIOGRAPHICAL LITERATURE

tentious work, *The Cyclopaedia of New Zealand*, the publication of which was completed in six volumes between 1897 and 1907. Most of the life stories in this enormous work were inserted in consideration of a money payment according to the space occupied; and the great majority of them are based on information provided by the families or admirers. Nevertheless this cyclopaedia has considerable historical value.

The last volume of the *Cyclopaedia of New Zealand* had just been published when, with the help of the late Emil Schwabe, I ventured upon the first edition of *Who's Who in New Zealand (1908)*, of which later editions appeared in 1924 and 1932. The compilation of this work was entirely divorced from monetary profit. The sole basis of inclusion was the standing and significance of the subjects in the life of the Dominion; their service to their fellow men in public life, scholarship or character as distinguished from mere personal success in the acquisition of wealth. For this work also the main biographical facts were obtained from the persons themselves, but they were carefully checked by reliable sources. At that time the attitude of public men towards this type of publicity was rather more reticent than it is to-day, and as a consequence many were omitted whose services and unselfish labours deserved recognition. For the same reason, though I had the inestimable assistance of such eminent scholars as Sir Apirana Ngata, Sir James Carroll, Hone Heke, Peter Buck (Te Rangihiroa) and Sir Maui Pomare, it was not possible to include an adequate representation of Maori men and women.

In the field of collective biography in New Zealand it is impossible to overlook the invaluable work of L. G. D. Acland, who in 1930 published his first series of *The Early Canterbury Runs*. I am much indebted to Mr Acland for information generously and spontaneously furnished in response to many inquiries. Another volume of which free use has been made is Dr R. V. Fulton's *Medical Practice in Otago and Southland in the Early Days (1922)*. W. H. Skinner did the same thing in a more modest way for the province of Taranaki. The official lists of some of the leading public schools in the Dominion furnish a good deal of biographical information, notably the *Christ's College School List (1927)*, the *Nelson College Old Boys' Register (1926)* and the *Otago High School Old Boys' Register (1907)*. Other publications which are useful in a limited field are Lord Ranfurly's *New Zealand Roll of Honour, 1840-1902 (published in 1902)*; John Studholme's (*N.Z.E.F.*) *Record of Personal Services during the War (published in 1928)*; J. Chadwick's *Men of Mark in the World of Sport in New Zealand*

#### PLAN OF THE PRESENT WORK

(1906); G. W. Russell's *New Zealand Parliamentary Guide* (1895); Alexander Don's *Memories of the Golden Road* (1936) and *The New Zealand Parliamentary Record* (1913; 2nd ed. 1925).

In individual biographies New Zealand is for obvious reasons not particularly rich. The Dominion market would be a small one even if all New Zealanders were interested in their history. Consequently few biographies have been written by those best qualified to write them, the New Zealand historians. Most of those that have been written are the result of family enthusiasm, and bear the defects of such an origin, being often unduly laudatory and excessively parochial, and generally deficient in historical content and method. Many biographies thus produced have spoiled the subject for the future historian and yet fail to do justice to the persons whose reputations they were designed to aggrandise. The most notable individual biographies are perhaps: Henry Williams (by Hugh Carleton); Sir George Grey (by Professor G. C. Henderson), not forgetting the fulsome panegyric of his intimate biographer, W. L. Rees, and James Collier's contributions; Sir Frederick Weld (by Lady Lovat); Professor Elder's contributions to the life of Samuel Marsden; Richard Garnett's Edward Gibbon Wakefield (beside which the notable life by his great granddaughter, Irma O'Connor, and A. J. Harrop's life deserve to be mentioned); H. W. Tucker's life of Bishop Selwyn; Scholefield's Governor Hobson; and the Hon. W. Downie Stewart's Sir Francis Dillon Bell. The last named is to be followed by a biography of William Rolleston and others, it is to be hoped, of like stature by Mr Stewart. Drummond's life of Seddon, though suffering from the defects of hurried publication, is the only biography yet published of that statesman. R. A. Loughnan's of Sir Joseph Ward is rather severely restricted to his political career.

#### PLAN OF THE PRESENT WORK

On my return to New Zealand in 1920 from a long residence in Great Britain I resumed the study, bringing out in 1924 the second edition of *Who's Who in New Zealand*, and then entering upon a regular plan of work for the National Biography now published. The basic categories were prepared from authentic sources, and from year to year constantly revised and checked from reliable information. The first and second generation of New Zealanders having now passed away, it became evident that the published matter in the biographical sphere was quite inadequate. Very many men and women who had played a significant part in the history of the Colony and Dominion had died unheralded

#### PLAN OF THE PRESENT WORK

and unsung, or untruthfully praised in the press and on tombstones. Obviously a great deal of research would be required if the New Zealand Biography was to be full and accurate. I accordingly commenced in 1929 a series of articles for publication in the daily press in the hope that this outline of the lives of some of the more prominent figures in the history of the provinces would lead to verification or correction of errors in advance of publication in the more permanent form now presented. Using the *noms de plume* 'Condor' and 'Annalist,' I published in the years 1929-31 a long series of memoirs of the great figures in New Zealand provincial history. Of these 36 appeared in the *Evening Post* (Wellington), 39 in *The Press* (Christchurch) and 41 in the *Otago Daily Times* (Dunedin). These were followed in 1934 by a shorter series of biographies of men of more than provincial reputation, such as Weld, Sinclair, Forsaith, Bell, Sewell and the Richmonds, which were published in a number of leading newspapers. These series constituted the most important contribution to New Zealand biography so far published, and they are embodied in extenso in the present work. Their previous publication in newspapers served the dual purpose very effectively. It interested many in the great figures of the past; and it induced those already having some knowledge of the subject to point out inaccuracies and suggest additions. In subsequent years an interesting series of short biographies appeared in the *New Zealand Railways Magazine* by James Cowan, a student of Maori history, who had already published a number of brief memoirs of the personalities pictured in Lindauer's collection of Maori portraits in the Auckland Public Library.

The model on which most collective biographies have been based is, of course, the standard English *Dictionary of National Biography*, which was first projected in 1882 by the well known publisher G. M. Smith, of Smith, Elder and Co. It commenced publication in 1885 under the editorship of Sir Leslie Stephen, and was completed, as originally designed (under Sidney Lee) in 1900, when it amounted to 63 volumes. With the supplements published in 1908, it contained about 30,000 lives, or a proportion of one to 5,000 of the total number of people who attained the adult age of 24 years in the United Kingdom during the period of its history. The *Dictionary of American Biography*, which followed the same lines, was commenced in 1926. When it was completed, in 1937, it consisted of 21 volumes, the number of biographies being 14,000. The history of the United States being so much shorter than that of Great Britain, the number of biographies was relatively much less. The history of New Zealand is yet more

#### BASIS OF SELECTION

limited in both dimensions, duration and population. It begins to all intents about 100 years ago, when the first trickle of organised European immigration arrived. In the work now published are included a certain number of Maori and of pakeha settlers who had disappeared from the stage before 1840. The preceding decades yield a few only of the Maori race, some explorers from Europe and outstanding figures in the fields of missionary and maritime endeavour. That the proportion of articles to our population is twice as large as in the case of the English *Dictionary*, and fourteen times as great as in the American work will, I hope, be used as a justification for the exclusion of well known names rather than as a ground for criticism that too many have been included.

#### THE BASIS OF SELECTION

As to the basis of selection of subjects for inclusion in the *Dictionary of New Zealand Biography*, I agree with the opinion expressed by Sir Humphrey Milford.\* Discussing the *Dictionary of American Biography*, he remarks that whereas in the English case 'the distance of the historic past, with which they had in large part to deal, settled of itself the claims of many,' in America 'the editor had to see things in shorter perspective; had to be sensitive (though not too sensitive) to an historical sense inevitably acute and exigent.' He concludes that it was impossible for the Americans in the course of one hundred and fifty years of history to elaborate 'an orthodox hierarchy of merit.' How then can the New Zealand editor, at so much shorter range, be expected to achieve that feat with exactitude? Many of his subjects have died within his own lifetime; quite a number while the work was in the press.

Dr Daniel Pollen, in a letter to Sir Bernard Burke on 4 May 1889, wrote a delightful little essay which expresses well the attitude of the conservative New Zealander of an earlier generation towards the publication of such personal information.† Having been invited to send information about himself to be published in *Colonial Gentry*, he replied:

'I feel obliged to decline . . . because in my opinion any attempt now to eliminate a caste out of an ultra-democratic community such as ours in New Zealand is at least premature. I do not know upon what basis you propose to build your temple of gentility, whether upon brains, or money or land or lineage. The general level of intelligence and conduct amongst our people is high, but no men of genius have as yet

\* In *The English Speaking World*, XXI, No. 3, March 1939.

† *New Zealand Herald*, 11 May 1889.

#### BASIS OF SELECTION

appeared. . . . Selection would be difficult. The general level of wealth is lower, what may be called the better class being the poorer. The exceptionally rich men are few, and of these some would necessarily be excluded on personal grounds from the ranks of gentility. . . . The number of persons who would be entitled by their possessions or condition to be ranked as landed gentry is so small that it would be absurd on that account to distinguish them as the colonial gentry of 'New Zealand.' [Pollen argues that lineage,] 'even when it has no other attribute than that of age, gives a prescriptive right to distinction . . . and the native claim to consideration from that point of view ought not to be overlooked. You might find on inquiry that the number of Maoris who could fairly claim on account of land and lineage to be included in your sacred circle would be in excess of the number of Europeans who could do so. The Tawhiao, the Nenes, the Taiaroas and others could, for example, proudly trace their unbroken descent through more than 30 generations of chiefs and warriors.'

Pollen suggested that a roll of colonial gentry in such circumstances might not only be a subject of present ridicule, but might even be made an instrument of mischief, and he concluded:

'Our descendants will be better educated, more enlightened and wiser than ourselves; the aristoi will gradually be developed and recognised, and when their number is great enough for judicious record it is to be hoped that they will find a skilled historian as intelligent, accurate and enthusiastic as yourself.'

The only comment upon this dictum that is called for by us is that lineage alone gives no prescriptive right to inclusion in such a National Biography as the one now offered to the public. Neither birth nor wealth in itself is a valid qualification. Significance in our national history, from whatever standpoint, is the sole consideration. Fortunately, Pollen did fill in Sir Bernard Burke's questionnaire, but only for the information of his descendants. I have been unable to obtain any personal data beyond what he inscribed there, and thus it happens that the *Dictionary* lacks certain salient facts about one of New Zealand's most interesting politicians and officials. We know from his remains elsewhere that he was a cultured, genial Irish gentleman, but I have been unable by the utmost diligence to ascertain where he gained his accomplishments and the degree of Doctor of Medicine with which he came to New Zealand in the early weeks of 1840.

When I entered seriously upon this compilation I envisaged a biographical reference book to which the ordinary reader and the student of New Zealand alike should be able to turn for information about any person who had significance in the history of the Dominion. The general reader might expect to find in such a gallery only those who have rendered some measure of public service which was recognisable either contemporaneously or by posterity. Some may question the inclusion, for instance, of James Mackenzie, the Highland reever, who spent only a few years in New Zealand and left it under a bond not to return. Yet did he not give his name to an interesting tract of new country in the South Island; and are not he and his dog almost legendary in the lore of the Dominion? The British work includes Dick Turpin, Wat Tyler and Titus Oates, and the editor frankly admits (in a survey in vol. lxiii) that 'malefactors whose crimes excite a permanent interest have received hardly less attention than benefactors.' Moreover, even some characters which are purely legendary, such as Robin Hood and Guy of Warwick, have been given a place in the English biography. To critics who might be disposed to complain that the space allotted to different men is not commensurate with their public service or their significance in the history of New Zealand I would reply simply that there has been no attempt to evaluate the personality and services of the subjects. Because our history is so close at hand and because so many still living were the friends or admirers of the actors in it, a purely factual approach has been adopted. If evaluation were attempted it would inevitably militate against the usefulness of the work, since *quot homines, tot sententiae*. Opinions at one time and on one subject may differ. Estimates of the significance of a man in the history of the country must inevitably change with the passage of the years; but the facts of his life, once they are accurately ascertained and recorded, cannot change.

In the desire for accuracy I have treated every source as suspect, adopting no information at all, no matter how enlightened the origin, without checking it by other standards. Sir Humphrey Milford (in the article already quoted) remarks: 'The leaders of mankind have been treated on the whole well enough by biographers, but the minor figures, whether of politics, scholarship, literature, education or industry, are apt to be overlooked in our hurried preoccupation with the giants.' On this point also we seem to have followed the practice of the British work, of which the later editor (Sidney Lee) says: 'Great pains have been bestowed on names of less widely acknowledged importance, and every endeavour

has been made to maintain the level of information in the small as well as in the larger articles at the highest practicable standard of fullness and accuracy.' I trust that readers of the *Dictionary of New Zealand Biography* will recognise that a genuine effort has been made to rescue from oblivion figures which 'strutted and fretted their hour upon the stage' and then disappeared from public view. Many of the personalities included in the *Dictionary* may appear insignificant, particularly those whose activities were confined to the halls of some of the provincial councils, those quaint little parliaments round which the hopes and passions of the average New Zealander centred when each province was a world to itself and the brave little cutters and brigs beat for days or weeks from one of the 'little fishing villages' to another. Yet even these men were the leaders in their day and generation, chosen by their fellow men—though sometimes merely by 9 votes to 8—to represent them in their parliaments, provincial and general, and to help to fashion the future of the nation.

For the rest, it has been assumed that figures about whom much has been published are in no need of being voluminously described. Even in such cases the reader will find an adequate factual biography and a bibliography which will enable him, if he wishes, to prosecute his study. On the other hand, many persons of special interest have been dealt with as liberally as possible, notably such figures as William Stedman Aldis, G. M. Waterhouse, Andrew Sinclair, T. S. Forsaith, William Lane, Te Rauparaha, Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake, Gabriel Read, and J. B. Bradshaw. About all of these this research has brought to light much new information. In spite of these special efforts on behalf of the less known, it transpires that the longest memoirs in the work are those relating to Sir George Grey, Seddon, Vogel, Read, E. G. Wakefield, Te Waharoa, Ballance, Fox, Sir F. D. Bell, W. F. Massey, Sir J. G. Ward, Marsden, Sir E. Stafford, Te Kooti, Bracken and Te Wherowhero. In the British work Shakespeare, the Duke of Wellington, Francis Bacon, Oliver Cromwell and Queen Elizabeth (in that order) occupy the largest space.

It will be observed that certain persons have been included in the *Dictionary* who did not live in New Zealand (*e.g.* Samuel Marsden); others who stayed for only a short time (*e.g.* William Brown); some, like Hooker and Lyell and Darwin, who merely visited our shores; and even a few who were never in the country (Professor Owen). Yet they all impinged upon our history in such a manner as to justify at least a mention in this gallery. In cases where they rank amongst the

#### FAMILY INFORMATION

great men of the Old Country and appear in the *British Dictionary of National Biography*, they are not treated at greater length than seems necessary for the benefit of readers who have not access to that work.

#### FAMILY INFORMATION

In the compilation of the *Dictionary* it was found necessary to approach relatives in a great many cases where adequate information was not available. It was disappointing to find, by many hundreds of such inquiries, how few families in New Zealand have preserved their records or know anything of the achievements of their pioneer parents and grandparents. Certain information was available in a limited number of cases from such sources as *Debrett's Peerage* and *Burke's Peerage and Landed Gentry* and the *Colonial Gentry*, but it is rather a disturbing reflection that so few of the family Bibles which were brought to the Colony by the pioneers a hundred years ago seem to be in existence to-day. Not many families, even of our most prominent colonists, were able to give reliable information to supplement what I already had. My acknowledgments to those who could are accordingly all the warmer. Though the beginnings of New Zealand history are so close to us I have treated with the greatest caution the frequent claims of relatives or biographers that such a one was the first to use a plough in such a district, the first to use a steam threshing machine, owned a certain invaluable section in the town of Dunedin or Auckland; or was the first white child born in a district. The individual student may think it worth while trying to decide such priorities. For the *Dictionary of New Zealand Biography* it has not seemed necessary even to record the claims.

Having passed this judgment upon the pakeha people of New Zealand, it is not invidious to comment on a cognate deficiency on the part of certain leading Maori families. The whakapapas, in so far as they have been handed down by memory, constitute a remarkably accurate 'peerage' or 'landed gentry' of the race. The accuracy with which they were transmitted from generation to generation, till the advent of writing and printing undermined this infallible medium, compels admiration. It would still be comparatively easy for a competent committee of Maori scholars to compile a full and accurate genealogy of the rangatira families. Less easy, however, is the task of the historian who tries dispassionately to record the events of the native era. Maori history is sadly distorted and vitiated by the highly developed tribalism and the intense rivalries of the generations that the Maori have spent in New Zealand. Perhaps there is no essential difference

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

between the spirit which actuates the strongly patriotic writing of English history and the tribal pride which moves even the broadminded Maori to ignore, if possible, and to gloss over if not, the vicissitudes of their own tribes and chiefs. Though I was generously guided by Sir Apirana Ngata and other scholars through many pitfalls, I am still not confident that the Maori biographies are accurate. I can only claim that they constitute a considerable advance on any collected Maori biography hitherto published, and hope that while the material is still accessible from the old men and women and the tohungas, scholars of the Maori race will devote their attention to a comprehensive Maori biography.

The projector of the *British Dictionary of National Biography* (Mr G. M. Smith) realised from the first that 'there was little or no prospect of a return of the capital that was needed to secure the completion of the work on a thoroughly adequate scale, and he ignored considerations of profit and loss in providing for it.' The *New Zealand Biography* was entered upon purely as a private venture, of which all the vicissitudes of publishing and marketing would fall upon the author. When the National Historical Committee came into existence it appeared appropriate that the *Dictionary* should be one of the official Centennial publications, and I was thus relieved of the burden of making it a financial success and enabled to devote more time and thought to the work of writing and compilation. Thus more than 95 per cent of the biographies are my own.

#### ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I must record my appreciation of the suggestions of Dr J. C. Beaglehole, particularly in regard to the typographical production.

Others to whom thanks are due for information in response to a variety of questions are the heads of several Government departments, notably the Under-Secretaries for Internal Affairs and Lands, the Secretary of the Army Department, and the Director-general of the Post and Telegraph Department, the Commissioner of Police, and the Registrar-general; officials of various religious denominations (notably the Rev M. A. Rugby Pratt, whose knowledge of the history of the Methodist Church is encyclopedic), Archdeacon W. J. Simkin (Auckland) and the Rev Father McKeefry (Auckland). I am indebted also to the librarians of all the leading libraries in New Zealand, the Mitchell Library (Sydney), the Public Libraries of New South Wales, Victoria, South Australia and South Africa, the British Museum, the Admiralty, the War Office, the India Office, the Royal Empire Society, and the Library of Congress (United States of America); to the

#### CONTRIBUTORS AND SOURCES

Archivists of Canada (Sir Arthur Doughty) and South Africa (C. Graham Botha); to officials of the Public Record Office, London, and the parliamentary librarians of all the States and the Commonwealth of Australia and the Provinces and Dominion of Canada.

Amongst private individuals to whom I owe thanks for assistance are Professors J. R. Elder, J. Hight and J. Rutherford, Sir Apirana Ngata, M.P., J. Cowan, J. C. Andersen, and J. H. Grace; L. G. D. Acland (Canterbury), Dr F. A. Bett (Nelson), Dr W. E. Redman and A. D. McIntosh (Marlborough), W. H. Skinner (Taranaki), Russell Duncan (Napier), W. D. Lusty (Auckland), S. Muir (Gisborne), L. J. B. Chapple (Wanganui), W. Patterson (Otago Early Settlers' Association), J. W. Davidson, E. Ramsden (Sydney), G. L. Gabites, and B. D. Zohrab, M.A. I feel deeply grateful also to Miss J. Fitch, M.A., for faithful research in newspaper sources; and to Miss M. B. Young for her capable co-operation in the preparation of manuscript and proofs. The services of the late H. E. M. Fildes (1875-1937), who for many years acted as a voluntary corrector of the press to all who ventured on historical publication in New Zealand, should not be forgotten.

#### CONTRIBUTORS

The following writers kindly contributed memoirs, which are signed with their initials:

R.I.M.B.	R. I. M. Burnett, M.A.
N.S.B.	Nina S. Brown, M.A.
J.B.C.	Professor J. B. Condliffe
E.D.	Eileen Duggan, M.A.
J.R.	Professor James Rutherford
J.D.P.	J. D. Pascoe, F.R.G.S.
M.A.R.P.	Rev M. A. Rugby Pratt
J.H.B.S.	J. H. B. Scholefield, LL.M.
C.R.H.T.	C. R. H. Taylor, M.A.
W.S.W.	W. S. Wauchop, M.A.

#### NOTE ON THE SOURCES

The sources listed in the following bibliography are generally those which have been referred to in a number of articles; sources which refer only to a single subject are included in the list at the end of the memoir.

#### NOTE ON SOURCES

The bibliography does not pretend to be exhaustive. It would be useless to list mere mentions of a name, or reproductions of matter from other sources which have been listed. Nor is it to be assumed that all the sources listed in any article have been found acceptable or used in the article. In every case an effort has been made to verify them, and hundreds of statements and dates which have been current for many years have been discarded or corrected.

Most of the authorities quoted are to be found in the General Assembly Library (where the work was done) or in the Alexander Turnbull Library, at Victoria University College, or in the Wellington Public Library; in the Public Library at Auckland; the Hocken and the Dunedin Public Library; the Canterbury Public Library and Canterbury University College. The British papers relating to New Zealand (G.B.O.P.) are most strongly held in the General Assembly Library, but good collections are also to be found in the other institutions named. The New Zealand official papers are to be found fairly complete in most of the leading libraries in New Zealand. The papers of the Provincial Councils are almost complete in the General Assembly Library and the Wellington Public Library; and most of the leading provincial libraries have the official papers of their own province. Where the Proceedings of a Council are referred to as 'minutes' they are to be found in manuscript in the New Zealand Archives. A union list of official papers relating to New Zealand, prepared by the General Assembly Library, was mimeographed in 1938.

The newspaper sources, which are of great importance, are to be found scattered in libraries and newspaper offices all over the Dominion. The Union Catalogue published by the General Assembly Library in 1938 shows where individual volumes and papers are to be found.

Most of the portraits listed are in books, and since some have been often reproduced considerable reserve has been used in listing them. Many of the portraits which are listed as being in the General Assembly Library are also in the Alexander Turnbull Library, which has also a considerable collection of original portraits. Each of these libraries indexes its portraits. Fine portrait collections also exist in the Taranaki Historical Collection in New Plymouth, in the Auckland and Wellington Public Libraries and in the Early Settlers' Hall in Dunedin.

G. H. SCHOLEFIELD

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- ACLAND Acland, L. G. D. *The Early Canterbury Runs* 1930
- ALEXANDER and CURRIE Alexander, W. F. and Currie, A. E. (editors). *New Zealand Verse* 1906
- .. *Treasury* .. A Treasury of New Zealand verse (2nd edn. of above) 1926
- ALPERS Alpers, O. T. J. *Jubilee Book of Canterbury Rhymes* 1900
- ANDERSEN Andersen, J. C. *Jubilee History of South Canterbury* 1916
- ANGAS Angas, G. F. *The New Zealanders Illustrated* 1847
- .. *Savage Life* .. *Savage Life and Scenes* 1847
- Annals N.Z. Lit.* *Annals of New Zealand Literature* (issued by New Zealand Authors' Week Committee) 1936
- ANSON Anson, F. A. *The Piraki Log* 1910
- App. H.R.* *Appendices to the Journals of the House of Representatives* 1854 to date
- App. L.C.* *Appendices to the Journals of the Legislative Council* 1854-1914
- ARNOLD Arnold, Thomas. *Passages in a Wandering Life* 1900
- Austral. Encycl.* Jose, A. W. and Carter, H. J. *Illustrated Australian Encyclopedia* 1925
- AYSON Ayson, T. (pseud. Genus) *Story of Adventures and Experiences* 1937
- BAKER Baker, John Holland. *A Surveyor in New Zealand 1857-96* (edited by Noline Baker) 1925
- BARCLAY Barclay, George. *The Extinct Lodges of New Zealand* 1935
- BARLOW Barlow, Joan (ed.). *Charles Darwin's Diary of the Voyage of H.M.S. Beagle* 1933
- BARR, JAMES Barr, James. *The Old Identities . . . First Decade of Otago* 1879
- BARR, JOHN Barr, John. *The City of Auckland, 1840-1920* 1922
- .. *Art* .. *Auckland Art Gallery, including the Mackelvie Collection* 1925
- BARRY Barry, William Jackson. *Past and Present and Men of the Times* 1897
- BARTON, R. J. Barton, R. J. *Earliest New Zealand (the Journals and Correspondence of the Rev John Butler)* 1927
- BAYLY Bayly, G. *Sea Life Sixty Years Ago* 1885
- BEAGLEHOLE Beaglehole, J. C. *The University of New Zealand* 1937
- BEALE Beale, G. C. *Seventy Years in and Around Auckland* 1937

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- BEATTIE Beattie, H. *Pioneer Recollections* (1st series) 1909; (2nd series) 1911; *Southern Pioneers* (3rd series) 1918
- BEAUCHAMP Beauchamp, Sir Harold. *Reminiscences and Recollections* 1937
- BEST Best, Elsdon. *Tuhoe, The Children of the Mist* 1925
- BEVAN Bevan, Thomas. *Reminiscences of an Old Colonist* 1908
- BIDWILL Bidwill, W. E. and Woodhouse, Airini Elizabeth. *Bidwill of Pihautea; the Life of Charles Robert Bidwill* 1927
- BOWEN Bowen, Sir G. F. *Thirty Years of Colonial Government* (speeches and despatches, edited by Stanley Lane Poole) 1889
- BRETT Brett, H. *White Wings* (2 vols.) 1924-28
- BRETT *Albertlanders* Brett, H., and Hook, Henry. *The Albertlanders* 1927
- Brett's Historical Series*, see Sherrin, R. A. A. and Wallace, J. H.
- BROAD Broad, L. *The Jubilee History of Nelson from 1842 1892* 1892
- BROWN Brown, Alexander. *The Early Settlement of the Tokomairiro Plain* 1906
- BUICK *First War* Buick, T. L. *New Zealand's First War* 1926
- .. *Akaroa* .. *The French at Akaroa* 1928
- .. *Dinornis* .. *The Discovery of Dinornis* 1936
- .. *Manawatu* .. *Old Manawatu* 1903
- .. *Marlborough* .. *Old Marlborough* 1900
- .. *Moa* .. *The Mystery of the Moa* 1931
- .. *Old New Zealander* .. *An Old New Zealander, or Te Rauparaha, the Napoleon of the South* 1911
- .. *Waitangi* .. *The Treaty of Waitangi* 1914, 1933
- BULLER Buller, James. *Forty Years in New Zealand* 1878
- BUNBURY Bunbury, Thomas. *Reminiscences of a Veteran* 1861
- BURKE *Peerage* *Burke's Peerage, Baronetage and Knightage*
- .. *Landed Gentry* *Burke's Landed Gentry*
- BUTCHERS *Young N.Z.* Butchers, A. G. *Young New Zealand* 1929
- .. *Education* .. *Education in New Zealand* 1930
- Butt. *Fort. Notes* *Butterworth's Fortnightly Notes* 1925-28
- CAMPBELL Campbell, Sir J. L. *Poenamu: Sketches of the Early Days of New Zealand* 1881
- Cant. O.N.* *Canterbury Old and New, 1850-1900; A Souvenir of the Jubilee* 1900
- CARTER Carter, C. R. *The Life and Recollections of a New Zealand Colonist* 1866

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Cath. Encycl.* *Catholic Encyclopedia* 1907-12
- CHADWICK Chadwick, J. *Men of Mark in the World of Sport in New Zealand* 1906
- CHAPPLE Chapple, L. J. B. and Barton, Cranleigh. *Early Missionary Work in Whanganui, 1840-50* 1930
- CHISHOLM Chisholm, J. *Fifty Years Syne, A Jubilee Memorial of the Presbyterian Church of Otago* 1898
- CHRISTIE Christie, John. *History of Waikouaiti* 1927
- Christ's Coll. List* *The School List of Christ's College from 1850 to 1935* (5th edition) 1935
- CLARKE Clarke, G. *Notes on Early Life in New Zealand* 1903
- COLEMAN Coleman, John Noble. *A Memoir of the Rev Richard Davis, for Thirty-nine Years a Missionary in New Zealand* 1865
- Col. Gent.* Burke, Bernard. *A Genealogical and Heraldic History of the Colonial Gentry* (2 vols.) 1891-95
- CONDLIFFE Condliffe, J. B. *New Zealand in the Making* 1930
- COOPER Cooper, G. S. *Journal of an Expedition Overland from Auckland to Taranaki . . . 1849-50* 1851
- COWAN *Tapsell* Cowan, J. *A Trader in Cannibal Land: The Life and Adventures of Captain Tapsell* 1935
- .. *Sketches* .. *Maori Biographies: Sketches of Old New Zealand* [describing Lindauer's portraits] 1901
- .. *Wars* .. *The New Zealand Wars: A History of the Maori Campaigns and Pioneering Period* 2 vols. 1922-23
- .. *Pictures* .. *Pictures of Old New Zealand* [an enlarged edition of *Sketches*] 1930
- COWIE Cowie, W. G. *Our Last Year in New Zealand* 1888
- COX Cox, Alfred. *Recollections: Australia, England, Ireland, Scotland, New Zealand* 1884
- .. *Men of Mark* .. *Men of Mark of New Zealand* 1886
- CRAIG Craig, J. J. *Historical Record of Jubilee Reunion of Old Colonists* (Auckland) 1893
- CRAWFORD Crawford, J. C. *Recollections of Travel in New Zealand and Australia* 1880
- CRITCHELL and RAYMOND Critchell, J. T. and Raymond, J. *A History of the Frozen Meat Trade* 1912
- CROCKFORD *Crockford's Clerical Directory* (various editions)
- CRUISE Cruise, R. A. *Journal of a Ten Months' Visit to New Zealand* 1823
- CURTEIS Curteis, G. H. *Bishop Selwyn, his life and work* 1889

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Cycl. N.Z.* i
- .. ii
- .. iii
- .. iv
- .. v
- .. vi
- DARROCH Darroch, D. M. *Shipbuilders of Rodney County* 1934
- DARWIN Darwin, Charles. *Journal of Researches . . . H.M.S. Beagle* 1839, 1845
- FOX-DAVIES Fox-Davies, A. C. *Armorial Families* 1930
- DAVIS, C. O. Davis, C. O. *The Life and Times of Patuone* 1876
- DAVIS Davis, J. K. *History of St John's College, Tamaki, Auckland* 1911
- DEANS *Pioneers of Canterbury: Deans Letters, 1840-54* 1938
- DEANS, JANE Deans, Jane. *Letters to My Grandchildren* 1923
- DEBRETT *Debrett's Peerage and Titles of Courtesy* (various edns.)
- DES VOEUX Des Voeux, Sir William. *My Colonial Service* 1903
- DICKSON Dickson, John. *History of the Presbyterian Church of New Zealand* 1899
- D. Am. B.* *Dictionary of American Biography* 1926-37
- D.N.B.* *Dictionary of National Biography* 1885-1937
- DIEFFENBACH Dieffenbach, E. *New Zealand and its Native Inhabitants* 1841
- DILKE Dilke, Sir Charles W. *Problems of Greater Britain* 1890
- Dillon Letters* Dillon, C. A. *Letters in N.Z. Archives* 1848-51
- DINWIDDIE Dinwiddie, W. *Old Hawkes Bay* 1925
- DOBSON Dobson, Arthur Dudley. *Reminiscences of A. D. Dobson* 1930
- DON Don, Alexander. *Memories of the Golden Road* 1937
- DOWNES Downes, T. W. *Old Wanganui* 1915
- DRUMMOND Drummond, James. *The Life and Work of Richard John Seddon* 1906
- DUMONT D'URVILLE Dumont d'Urville, J. S. C. *Voyage au Pole Sud . . . 1837-40* 1841
- DUNCAN Duncan, R. J. *Early Walks in New Zealand* 1918
- EGERTON Egerton, H. E. *A Short History of British Colonial Policy* 1910
- ELDER Elder, J. R. See *Marsden. Encyclopedia Britannica.*
- FEATON Featon, John. *The Waikato War* 1923
- FOX Fox, Sir William. *The War in New Zealand* 1866
- FULTON Fulton, Robert V. *Medical Practice in Otago and Southland in the Early Days* 1922

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- GARNETT Garnett, R. *Edward Gibbon Wakefield* 1898  
 GASCOYNE Gascoyne, F. J. W. *Soldiering in New Zealand* 1918  
 GILKISON Gilkison, R. *Early Days in Central Otago* 1930  
 GISBORNE Gisborne, W. *New Zealand Rulers and Statesmen* 1886, 2nd ed. 1897  
*Gisborne Jubilee Jubilee of the Civic Government, Borough of Gisborne and County of Cook, 1877-1927* 1927  
 GODLEY Letters Godley, Charlotte. *Letters from Early New Zealand* 1936  
 GORST Gorst, Sir J. E. *The Maori King* 1864  
 .. *N.Z. Revisited* .. *New Zealand Revisited* 1908  
 GORTON Gorton, Edward. *Some Home Truths re the Maori War 1863 to 1869 on the West Coast of New Zealand* 1901  
 GRACE Grace, M. S. *A Sketch of the New Zealand War* 1899  
 GRACE, T. S. Grace, Rev T. S. *A Pioneer Missionary Among the Maoris* 1928  
 GRANDE Grande, Julian. *Constance Grande* 1925  
 GRAY Gray, Arthur J. *An Ulster Plantation* 1938  
 G.B.O.P. Great Britain: Official Papers (presented to House of Lords and House of Commons)  
 GREY Jour. Grey, Sir George. *Journals of Two Expeditions of Discovery in North-West and Western Australia, 1837-39* 2 vols. 1841  
 GRIMSTONE Grimstone, S. E. *The Southern Settlements of New Zealand* 1847  
 GUDGEON Gudgeon, T. W. *Defenders of New Zealand* 1887  
 .. *Hist.* .. *History and Doings of the Maoris, 1820-40* 1885  
 HAY, GUTHRIE Guthrie Hay, H. L. *Annandale Past and Present, 1839-1900* 1901  
 HAMMOND Hammond, T. G. *The Story of Aotea* 1924  
 HARROP Eng. and N.Z. Harrop, A. J. *England and New Zealand* 1926  
 .. *Wakefield* .. *The Amazing Career of Edward Gibbon Wakefield* 1928  
 .. *Westland* .. *The Romance of Westland* 1923  
 HAY Hay, James. *Reminiscences of Earliest Canterbury and its Settlers* 1915  
 HENDERSON Henderson, G. C. *Sir George Grey* 1907  
 HIGHT and BAMFORD Hight, J., and Bamford, H. D. *The Constitutional History and Law of New Zealand* 1914  
 HIGHT and CANDY Hight, J., and Candy, A. M. F. *Short History of the Canterbury College* 1927  
 HINDMARSH Hindmarsh, W. H. S. (pseud. Waratah). *Tales of the Golden West* 1906

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Hist. Rec. Aust.* *Historical Records of Australia* 1914-25  
 HOCKEN Hocken, T. M. *A Bibliography of the Literature Relating to New Zealand* 1909  
 .. *Otago* .. *Contributions to the Early History of New Zealand (Settlement of Otago)* 1898  
 HOCHSTETTER Hochstetter, Ferdinand von. *New Zealand; Its Geography, Geology and Natural History* 1867  
 HOOKER Hooker, Sir J. D. *Handbook of the Flora of New Zealand* 1864, 1867  
 HOW How, F. D. *Bishop John Selwyn; a Memoir* 1899  
 HUBNER Hubner, Baron J. A. von. *Through the British Empire* 2 vols. 1886  
 HUME Hume, Hamilton. *The Life of Edward John Eyre, late Governor of Jamaica* 1867  
 INGRAM and WHEATLEY Ingram, C. W. and Wheatley, P. O. *Shipwrecks; New Zealand Disasters, 1795-1936* 1936  
 JACKSON Jackson, Mrs J. Howard. *Annals of a New Zealand Family* 1935  
 JACOBS Jacobs, Henry. *Colonial Church Histories: New Zealand* 1887  
 JACOBSON Jacobson, H. C. *Tales of Banks Peninsula* 2nd ed. 1893  
 JELlicOE Jellicoe, R. L. *The New Zealand Company's Native Reserves* 1930  
*Jewish Rev.* *New Zealand Jewish Review and Communal Directory* 1931  
 FESTING JONES Festing Jones, Henry. *Samuel Butler . . . A Memoir* 2 vols. 1919  
 JOUBERT Joubert, Jules. *Shavings and Scrapes* 1890  
 JOURDAIN Jourdain, W. R. *Land Legislation and Settlement in New Zealand* 1925  
 KEITH Keith, A. Berriedale. *Responsible Government in the Dominions* 3 vols. 1912; 2nd ed., 2 vols. 1928  
 KENNEDY Kennedy, A. *New Zealand* 1873  
 KING King, P. P. *Narrative of the Surveying Voyages of H.M. ships 'Adventure' and 'Beagle' between the years 1826 and 1836* 1839  
 LAMBERT Lambert, T. *The Story of Old Wairoa* 1925  
 LARKWORTHY Larkworthy, Falconer. *Ninety One Years* 1924  
 LAROUSSE *Nouveau Larousse Illustre*  
 LECKIE Leckie, F. M. *Early History of Wellington College* 1934  
 LEYS Leys, Thomas W., see Sherrin and Wallace  
 LOVAT Lovat, Lady Alice. *The Life of Sir Frederick Weld* 1914  
 LOYAU Loyau, G. E. *Representative Men of South Australia* 1883  
 .. *Notables* .. *Notable South Australians* 1885

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- McCORMICK McCormick, Dr R. *Voyages of Discovery in the Arctic and Antarctic Seas and Round the World* 1884
- MACDONALD, C. A. Macdonald, C. A. *Pages from the Past* 1933
- MACDONALD, GORDON Macdonald, Gordon. *The Highlanders of Waipu* 1928
- McDONALD, K. C. McDonald, K. C. *History of Waitaki Boys' High School, 1883-1933* 1934
- MACDONALD, SHEILA Macdonald, Sheila. *The Member for Mount Ida* 1938
- McINDOE McIndoe, James. *A Sketch of Otago from the Initiation of the Settlement to the Abolition of the Province* 1878
- MACKAY Mackay, Alex. *A Compendium of Official Documents relative to Native Affairs in the South Island* 2 vols. 1872-73
- McKENZIE, G. M. McKenzie, G. M. *The History of Christchurch Cathedral* 1931
- McKENZIE, N. R. McKenzie, N. R. *The Gael Fares Forth* 1935
- McKILLOP McKillop, H. F. *Reminiscences of Twelve Months' Service in New Zealand* 1849
- MACMORRAN Macmorran, G. *Some Schools and Schoolmasters of Early Wellington* 1900
- McNAB Murihiku McNab, R. Murihiku 1909
- .. *Tasman* .. *From Tasman to Marsden* 1914
- .. *Whaling* .. *The Old Whaling Days* 1913
- .. *Hist. Rec.* .. *Historical Records of New Zealand* 2 vols. 1908-14
- MARAIS Marais, J. S. *The Colonisation of New Zealand* 1927
- MARJORIBANKS Marjoribanks, Alexander. *Travels in New Zealand* 1846
- MARKHAM Markham, E. *Recollections of New Zealand* (MS. journal in Alexander Turnbull and General Assembly Libraries) 1834
- MARSDEN, L. and J. *Letters and Journals of Samuel Marsden, 1768-1838* (edited by J. R. Elder) 1932
- .. *Lieuts.* .. *Marsden's Lieutenants* (edited by J. R. Elder) 1934
- MARSHALL Marshall, W. B. *Personal Narrative of Two Visits to New Zealand in H.M.S. 'Alligator'* 1836
- MARTIN Martin, Lady. *Our Maoris* 1884
- MARTIN, S. M. Martin, S. M. *New Zealand . . . Aborigines and the Natural Productions* 1845
- MAXWELL Maxwell, E. *Recollections and Reflections of an Old New Zealander* 1935
- MENNELL Mennell, P. *The Dictionary of Australian Biography 1855-92* 1892
- MERRINGTON Merrington, E. N. *A Great Colonist; the Rev Dr Thomas Burns* 1929

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Meth. Conf.* *Minutes of the Conference (Methodist Church of New Zealand)* 1938
- MILNE Milne, James. *The Romance of a Pro-Consul* 1899
- MONEY Money, C. L. *Knocking about in New Zealand* 1871
- MONTGOMERY Montgomery, James. *Journal of Voyages and Travels of the Rev Daniel Tyerman and George Bennett, Esq . . . 1821-9* 1831
- MORLEY Morley, W. *History of Methodism in New Zealand* 1900
- MORTON Morton, H. B. *Recollections of Early New Zealand* 1925
- MOSS Moss, F. J. *Through Atolls and Islands in the Great South Sea* 1889
- MUNDY Mundy, G. C. *Our Antipodes* 1852
- Natural Hist. Cant.* Speight, R., Wall, A., and Laing, R. M. *Natural History of Canterbury* 1927
- Nelson Coll. Reg. N.Z.C.* *Nelson College Old Boys' Register* 1926
- N.Z. Chess Book, 1922* *The Book of the 30th and 31st Congresses* (ed. F. K. Kelling) 1922
- N.Z. Law Jour.* *New Zealand Law Journal* 1928 to date
- N.Z.P.D.* *New Zealand Parliamentary Debates* 1854 to date
- New Zealanders* *The New Zealanders* [Library of Entertaining Knowledge] 1830
- NICHOLLS Nicholls, J. H. Kerry. *The King Country* 1884
- O'BYRNE O'Byrne, W. R. *Naval Biography* 8 vols. 1849-61
- O'CONNOR O'Connor, Irma. *Edward Gibbon Wakefield: The Man Himself* 1928
- OLIVIER Olivier, Lord. *The Myth of Governor Eyre* 1933
- O.D.T. Diamond Jub.* *The Otago Daily Times' Diamond Jubilee, 1861-1921* 1921
- Otago H.S. Reg.* *Otago High School Old Boys' Register* (edited by T. D. Pearce and R. V. Fulton) 1907
- Parltry Record* *The New Zealand Parliamentary Record* 1909, 1925
- PAUL Paul, J. T. *The Press of Otago and Southland* 1924
- .. *Trades Unionism* .. *Trades Unionism in Otago: Its Rise and Progress, 1881-1912* (Souvenir Catalogue of Industrial Exhibition) 1912
- PLAYNE Playne, Somerset. *New Zealand: Its History, Commerce and Industrial Resources* 1912-13
- Polyn. Jour.* *Journal of the Polynesian Society* 1892 to date
- POMPALLIER Pompallier, J. B. F. *Early History of the Catholic Church in Oceania* 1888
- .. *Fishers* *Fishers of Men* [an anonymous compilation based on MMS. of Bishop J. B. F. Pompallier] 1938

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- POWER Power, W. T. *Sketches in New Zealand with Pen and Pencil* 1849
- PRATT Pratt, M. A. R. *Pioneering Days of Southern Maori-land* 1932
- PRESHAW Preshaw, G. O. *Banking under Difficulties* 1888
- PURCHAS Purchas, H. T. *Bishop Harper and the Canterbury Settlement* 2nd edn. 1909
- PYKE Pyke, Vincent. *History of the Early Gold Discoveries in Otago* 1887
- RAMSDEN Ramsden, Eric. *Marsden and the Missions* 1936
- RANFURLY Ranfurly, Earl of. *Roll of Honour 1840-1902. Defenders of the Empire Resident in New Zealand* 1902
- REDWOOD Redwood, Francis. *Reminiscences of Early Days in New Zealand* 1922
- REID Reid, R. C. *Rambles on the Golden Coast of the South Island of New Zealand* 1886
- REID, STUART Reid, Stuart J. *Life and Letters of the First Earl of Durham* 1906
- Riverton Rec.* *Records of Early Riverton and District* 1937
- ROBERTS Roberts, W. H. S. *Southland in 1856-57* 1895
- ROBERTSON Robertson, D. *Early History of the New Zealand Post Office* 1905
- ROSSIGNOL AND STEWART Rossignol, J. E. Le, and Stewart, W. D. *State Socialism in New Zealand* 1910
- ROSS, C. S. Ross, C. S. *Early Otago and Some of its Notable Men* 1907
- ROSS, LLOYD Ross, Lloyd. *William Lane and the Australian Labour Movement* 1937
- Roy. Soc. N.Z.* *Transactions of Royal Society of New Zealand* 1935 to date
- RUSSELL Russell, G. W. *New Zealand Parliamentary Guide Book* 1895
- SAUNDERS Saunders, Alfred. *History of New Zealand* 2 vols. 1896-99
- SCHOLEFIELD *Hobson* Scholefield, G. H. *Captain William Hobson, R.N., First Governor of New Zealand* 1934
- .. *N.Z. Evol.* .. *New Zealand in Evolution* 1909
- .. *Pacific* .. *The Pacific: Its Past and Future* 1920
- .. *Union Catalogue* .. *A Union Catalogue of Newspapers preserved in the Public Libraries* 1938
- See also *Who's Who N.Z.*
- SELWYN *Annals* Selwyn, C. J. and L. F. *Annals of the Diocese of New Zealand* 1847
- SHERRIN and WALLACE Sherrin, R. A. A. and Wallace, J. H. *Early History of New Zealand*. Edited by T. W. Leys. (Brett's Historical Series) 1890

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- SHORTLAND Shortland, Dr E. *The Southern Districts of New Zealand; a Journal with Passing Notices of the Customs of the Aborigines* 1851
- SHRIMPTON and MULGAN Shrimpton, A. W., and Mulgan, A. E. *Pakeha and Maori* 1921, 1930
- SILK Silk, D. V. *A History of Puhoi* 1923
- Sinclair Papers* Sinclair, Andrew, R.N. Manuscript letters and papers (in General Assembly Library), 1813-61
- SKINNER Skinner, W. H. *Pioneer Medical Men of Taranaki* 1933
- SMITH, S. P. *Taranaki Coast* 1910
- .. *Wars* Smith, S. P. *Maori Wars of the Nineteenth Century*, 2nd ed. 1910
- SMITH, W. S. Smith, W. Sidney. *Outlines of the Women's Franchise Movement in New Zealand* 1905
- Southland B.H.S. Reg.* *A Register of the Southland Boys' High School* (compiled by T. D. Pearce) 1930
- STACK Stack, J. W. *Kaiapohia; the Story of a Siege* 1893
- .. *Adventures* .. *Early Maoriland Adventures of J. W. Stack* (edited by A. H. Reed) 1935
- .. *More Adventures* .. *More Maoriland Adventures* 1936
- STEWART, ADELA B. Stewart, Adela B. *My Simple Life in New Zealand* 1908
- STEWART, W. D. Stewart, W. D. *The Right Hon Sir Francis H. D. Bell: His Life and Times* 1937
- STOCK Stock, E. *A History of the Church Missionary Society; vols. i-iii, 1899; vol. iv, 1916*
- STUDHOLME Studholme, John. *Record of Personal Services (of the N.Z.E.F. during the War)* 1928
- STURT Sturt, Mrs George Napier. *Life of Charles Sturt* 1899
- SWAINSON Swainson, W. *New Zealand Tapanui Station. Brooksdale Estate . . . Pioneering Experiences* 1910
- TAYLOR Taylor, Rev Richard. *Te Ika a Maui* 1855
- .. *Past and Present* .. *Past and Present of New Zealand* 1867
- THOMPSON Thompson, G. E. *A Short History of the University of Otago (1869-1919)* 1921
- THOMSON Thomson, A. S. *The Story of New Zealand* 1859
- THOMSON, J. A. James Allan Thomson. *The Taieri Allans and Related Families* 1929
- The Times* (London) *New Zealand Institute, Transactions and Proceedings* 1869-1934
- Trans. N.Z. Inst.*
- TRAVERS Travers, W. T. L. *Some Chapters in the Life and Times of Te Rauparaha* 1872

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- TUCKER Tucker, Rev W. H. *Memoir of the Life and Episcopate of George Augustus Selwyn, D.D.* 1879
- Waka Maori* *Waka Maori* (an official gazette and newspaper in Maori published by the Government of New Zealand from 1863 to 1884)
- WAKEFIELD Wakefield, E. J. *Adventure in New Zealand* 1845
- WAKEFIELD *Stafford* Wakefield, Edward. *Sir Edward William Stafford, a Memoir* 1923
- .. *New Zealand* .. *New Zealand after Fifty Years* 1889
- WAKELIN Wakelin, Richard. *History and Politics . . . 1851-1877* 1877
- Waratah* (See Hindmarsh)
- WEBSTER Webster, John. *Reminiscences of an Old Settler* 1908
- WELLS Wells, B. *History of Taranaki* 1878
- WELLS, G. H. Wells, G. H. (pseud. Geoffrey West). *Charles Darwin, the Fragmentary Man* 1937
- WESTON Weston, F. W. (compiler). *Thames Goldfields ; A History from Pre-proclamation Times to 1927* 1927
- WHITE White, J. *The Ancient History of the Maori ; His Mythology and Traditions* 6 vols. 1887-90
- WHITMORE Whitmore, Sir G. S. *The Last Maori War in New Zealand under the Self Reliant Policy* 1902
- Who's Who N.Z.* Scholefield, G. H. *Who's Who in New Zealand* 1st ed. 1908, 2nd ed. 1924, 3rd ed. 1932
- WILLIAMS Williams, W. *Christianity among the New Zealanders* 1867
- WILLIAMS, W. J. Williams, W. J. *Centenary Sketches of New Zealand Methodism* 1932
- WILLIAMS, W. L. Williams, W. L. *East Coast Historical Records* 1932
- WILLIAMS, W. T. Williams, W. T. *Pioneering in New Zealand (The Life of Archdeacon Samuel Williams)* 1929
- WILSON Wilson, J. A. *The Story of Te Waharoa* 1866
- WILSON, E. Wilson, E. Wilson. *Land Problems of the New Zealand Settlers of the Forties* 1936
- WILSON, J. G. Wilson, Sir J. G. *Early Rangitikei* 1914
- WILSON, JOHN Wilson, John. *Reminiscences of the Early Settlement of Dunedin and South Otago* 1912
- Witness* *The Witness : Official organ of Anglican Diocese of Nelson*
- WOHLERS Wohlers, J. F. H. *Memories of the Life of J. F. H. Wohlers, Missionary, at Ruapuke, New Zealand* (translated by John Houghton) 1895
- WOODHOUSE Woodhouse, Airini. *George Rhodes of the Levels and His Brothers* 1937

## MAORI GLOSSARY

- WOON Woon, J. G. *Wanganui Old Settlers* 1902
- YONGE Charlotte M. Yonge. *Life of John Coleridge Patteson* 1873
- YOUNG Young, J. *The Life of John Plimmer, Father of Wellington* 1901
- YOUNG, R. Young, R. *Southern World ; Journal of a deputation . . . New Zealand and Polynesia* 1858

## GLOSSARY OF MAORI WORDS

- ariki* chief
- aukati* boundary line ; frontier
- hakari* an entertainment or feast
- hapu* a section of a tribe
- Hauhau* the adherents of the Pai-marire doctrine
- heke* a migration
- hongī* to touch noses (in salute)
- hui* an assembly
- kainga* a living village
- karakia* incantation (s)
- korero* a speech, conference
- kotahitanga* union
- kuki* a slave
- kupapa* friendly native rifleman
- makutu* witchcraft ; to bewitch
- mana* prestige ; authority
- marae* a village square
- matua* father ; protector
- mere* a short club for hand-to-hand fighting
- mokihi* a raft
- murū* plunder by way of punishment
- ngautaringa* biting the ear (a ceremony)
- niu* sacred flagstaff of the Hauhau
- ope* a troop or company
- pa* a fort or fortified village
- pakeha* foreigner, a European
- pakihi* sterile land (where fern root is dug)

MAORI GLOSSARY

<i>Pai-marire</i>	cult of the Hauhau, a religion devised by Te Ua Haumene
<i>pouri</i>	sad
<i>rangatira</i>	chief
<i>Ra-tapu</i>	holy day; Sabbath
<i>raupo</i>	a bullrush
<i>ringatu</i>	upraised hand; sign used by Hauhau to ward off bullets
<i>take</i>	a cause or pretext for war
<i>takoha</i>	tribute
<i>tangi</i>	obsequies; to weep
<i>tapu</i>	sacred
<i>taua</i>	war party; hostile expedition
<i>toa</i>	a warrior
<i>tohunga</i>	a priest
<i>tokotoko</i>	a walking stick
<i>utu</i>	payment for wrong; compensation or revenge
<i>waiata</i>	a song
<i>whakapapa</i>	lineage; family tree
<i>whare</i>	a house or hut

ABBREVIATIONS

A.F.C.	Air Force Cross
A.M.I.E.E.	Associate Member Institution of Electrical Engineers
A.R.A.	Associate of the Royal Academy
A.R.A.M.	Associate Royal Academy of Music
A.R.C.M.	Associate Royal College of Music
A.R.C.O.	Associate Royal College of Organists
A.R.I.B.A.	Associate Royal Institute of British Architects
A.R.W.S.	Associate Royal Society of Painters in Water Colours
Assoc.M.I.C.E.	Associate Member Institution of Civil Engineers
B.Ag.	Bachelor of Agriculture
B.D.	Bachelor of Divinity
C.B.	Companion of the Bath
C.B.E.	Commander of Order of British Empire
C.I.E.	Companion Order of Indian Empire
C.M.G.	Companion of St Michael and St George
C.M.S.	Church Missionary Society
C.S.I.	Companion of Star of India
C.V.O.	Companion Royal Victorian Order
D.B.E.	Dame Commander Order of British Empire
D.C.L.	Doctor of Civil Law
D.C.M.	Distinguished Conduct Medal
D.F.C.	Distinguished Flying Cross
D.S.C.	Distinguished Service Cross
D.S.M.	Distinguished Service Medal
D.S.O.	Distinguished Service Order
F.C.S.	Fellow of the Chemical Society
F.E.S.	Fellow of the Entomological Society
F.G.S.	Fellow of the Geological Society
F.I.A.	Fellow of the Institute of Actuaries
F.L.S.	Fellow of the Linnaean Society
F.R.C.P.	Fellow of the Royal College of Physicians of London; F.R.C.P.Ed., do, of Edinburgh; F.R.C.P.I., do, of Ireland
F.R.C.S.	Fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons; F.R.C.S.Ed., do, Edinburgh; F.R.C.S.I., do, Ireland
F.R.I.B.A.	Fellow of the Royal Institute of British Architects
F.R.S.	Fellow of the Royal Society
F.R.S.A.	Fellow of the Royal Society of Arts
F.R.S.N.Z.	Fellow of the Royal Society of New Zealand
F.S.A.	Fellow of the Society of Antiquaries
F.Z.S.	Fellow of the Zoological Society
G.B.E.	Knight or Dame Grand Cross of British Empire
G.C.I.E.	Knight Grand Cross of Indian Empire
G.C.S.I.	Knight Grand Cross of Star of India

## ABBREVIATIONS

G.C.V.O.	Knight Grand Cross of Royal Victorian Order
H.E.I.C.S.	Honourable East India Company's Service
I.C.S.	Indian Civil Service
I.O.G.T.	Independent Order of Good Templars
I.O.O.F.	Independent Order of Odd Fellows
I.S.O.	Imperial Service Order
K.B.	Knight of the Bath
K.B.E.	Knight Commander of the British Empire
K.C.I.E.	Knight Commander of the Indian Empire
K.C.M.G.	Knight Commander of St Michael and St George
K.C.S.I.	Knight Commander of the Star of India
K.C.V.O.	Knight Commander of the Royal Victorian Order
K.G.	Knight of the Garter
Kt.	Knight Bachelor
L.M.S.	London Missionary Society
L.R.A.M.	Licentiate Royal Academy of Music
L.R.C.P.	Licentiate of the Royal College of Physicians ; L.R.C.P.I., do. Ireland
M.B.E.	Member of British Empire Order
M.C.	Military Cross
M.I.E.E.	Member of the Institution of Electrical Engineers
M.L.A.	Member of the Legislative Assembly
M.M.	Military Medal
M.R.C.V.S.	Member of the Royal College of Veterinary Surgeons
M.U.I.O.O.F.	Manchester Unity Independent Order of Oddfellows
M.V.O.	Member of the Royal Victorian Order
N.Z.C.	New Zealand Cross ; New Zealand Constitution (Masonic)
N.Z.E.F.	New Zealand Expeditionary Force
O.B.E.	Officer of the British Empire Order
O.M.	Order of Merit
O.S.B.	Order of St Benedict
(p)	Portrait
Q.C.	Queen's Counsel
q.v.	Whom see
R.A.F.	Royal Air Force
R.B.A.	Royal Society of British Artists
R.E.	Royal Engineers
R.M.	Royal Marines
R.S.A.	Royal Scottish Academician
S.J.	Society of Jesus
S.M.	Society of Mary
S.P.C.A.	Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals
S.P.C.K.	Society for the Propagation of Christian Knowledge
S.P.G.	Society of the Propagation of the Gospel
U.A.O.D.	United and Ancient Order of Druids
V.C.	Victoria Cross
V.G.	Vicar-general
W.C.T.U.	Women's Christian Temperance Union
W.S.	Writer to the Signet
Y.M.C.A.	Young Men's Christian Association
Y.W.C.A.	Young Women's Christian Association

## A DICTIONARY OF NEW ZEALAND BIOGRAPHY

---

# A DICTIONARY OF NEW ZEALAND BIOGRAPHY

---

## A

---

**ABBOTT, JOHN** (1832-1901) was born at Colsterworth, near Grantham, Lincolnshire, and educated at Halifax Place Academy, Nottingham. He joined the staff of the banking house of Craddock and Middleton, Loughborough, and seven years later resigned to purchase a printer's and stationer's business in Loughborough. There he started the *Loughborough News*. Coming to New Zealand (1864) he entered into partnership with F. L. Prime as grocers, but dissolved after six months and bought large stocks of merchandise on his own account. Later he became a business, mining and financial agent. Abbott was interested in many philanthropic movements and was the originator and founder of the Jubilee Institute for the Blind (1890). He died on 15 Jan 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Jan 1901.

**ABRAHAM, CHARLES JOHN** (1814-1903) was born at Farnborough, Hampshire, and was the son of Captain Thomas A. Abraham, 16th Regiment, then on the staff of the Royal Military College. Educated first at Dr Arnold's school at Laleham, he went to Eton (where he played in the XI) and then as a scholar to King's College, Cambridge (of which Thackeray was provost). A fine classical scholar, his Horace and Homer remained with him throughout life. He graduated B.A. (1837) and M.A. (1840), and succeeded to a fellowship, which he held until 1850. Ordained deacon in 1838, he was curate of Headley Downs for a while and then returned to Eton as an assistant master. While there he became the close friend of G. A. Selwyn (q.v.). Abraham published in 1846 *Ancient*

*and Modern History*. In 1848-49, while still at Eton, he was divinity lecturer at St. George's Chapel, Windsor, and in the latter year he published the *Festival and Lenten Lectures*, delivered in that capacity. Having remained at Eton long enough to assist in the carrying out of important reforms in the school, Abraham at last, in 1850, fulfilled a longstanding promise by coming out to Auckland to accept the post of chaplain and principal of St. John's College. Thenceforward he was intimately associated with Bishop Selwyn in the work and organisation of the Church in New Zealand. In 1853 he was appointed archdeacon of Waitemata. "When the see was subdivided Abraham was nominated as the first Bishop of Wellington, and he was consecrated at Lambeth in 1858 along with his friend Edmund Hobhouse (q.v.), who had been designated first Bishop of Nelson. In the new diocese Abraham took a firm stand for justice for the Maori people in the war. In 1870 he resigned the see to accept Selwyn's invitation to be his assistant bishop at Lichfield. Two years later he was presented with the prebendial stall of Bobenshall in Lichfield Cathedral, and in 1876 Selwyn gave him a residentiary canonry, which he held till 1890. He was rector of Tatenhill, Staffordshire (1875-76) and resided for the last few years of his life with his son, Bishop C. T. Abraham (then vicar of Bakewell). He died on 4 Feb 1903. Abraham married in 1850 Caroline Harriet, daughter of Sir Charles T. Palmer, of Wanlip Hall, Leicestershire; she died in 1877, leaving an only son. Abraham was a total abstainer and an advocate of temperance. His work for Eton College is commemorated by a marble slab and effigy in

ACLAND

the college. The foundation of Selwyn College, Cambridge, was due to the joint efforts of Sir William Martin (q.v.), Hobhouse and Abraham.

*D.N.B.*; Davis (p); Tucker; Selwyn, *Annals*; Jacobs; Maxwell Lyte, *History of Eton*.

ACLAND, JOHN BARTON ARUNDEL (1823-1904), the first of the Aclands in New Zealand, was a scion of an old Devonshire family, the Dyke Aclands of Columb John. He was the sixth son of Sir Thomas Dyke Acland, 10th baronet of Killerton. His ancestor's house at Columb John was destroyed in the Cromwellian wars, and the Parliament fined him £3,000. Acland of Canterbury was born at Killerton, educated at Harrow and at Christ Church, Oxford. He graduated B.A. with honours in mathematics (1845) and in due course took his M.A. He proceeded to study law, was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn (1849) and entered into practice in London. Dissatisfied with his prospects at the bar, and not caring for London life, he spent his vacations in Switzerland, Norway, the Orkneys and Shetlands.

The Aclands had taken notice of the proposed Canterbury settlement through C. G. Tripp (q.v.), who in 1850 thought seriously of joining the Canterbury Association. Acland made the acquaintance of Godley, Fitzgerald, Selwyn, and Sir George Grey and decided to give up his practice and become a sheepfarmer in New Zealand. He and Tripp took passage in the *Royal Sumner*, which sailed from London in Oct 1854, and reached Lyttelton in the first week of 1855. As soon as possible they made a journey through north Canterbury as far as the Conway river, visiting many stations. Acland went as cadet to H. J. Tancred at Malvern Hills, and Tripp to W. J. Burke at Halswell. In Mar they went with Burke carrying stores by bullock dray to his station on the Opihi; and in the spring they set out to look for country up the Rangitata and Ashburton rivers. In May 1856 they started their own station at Mount Peel, and during the next three or four years increased their holding to about 250,000 acres, including Mount Peel, Mount Somers, Mount Possession, and Orari Gorge. They were the first runholders in Canterbury who conceived that the hill country overlooking the plains could be successfully stocked with sheep. As all the lower country had already been taken up they made extended explorations up the gorges

ACLAND

of the Rangitata, Ashburton, and Orari rivers, and burned a good deal of country in preparation for their occupation. Mount Peel carried 1,100 sheep in 1857 and 2,700 the following year. It was another ten years before the back part of this station was stocked by Acland himself.

Acland and Tripp, coming from traditional land-owning families in England, understood the duty and the policy of encouraging their employees to settle down and bring up their families on the property. They built cottages for the men and encouraged them to deal in stock on their own account and to become land-owners. Acland in 1868 erected a stone church at Mount Peel capable of seating 80 persons. In 1862 they dissolved the partnership. Acland took the Mount Peel property of 100,000 acres which he had named Holincote, after the family seat in Somersetshire (1856). While paying close attention to his run, he always found time to do what one in his position regarded as his public duty. He never stood for the Provincial Council, but he took a leading part in the affairs of his own locality and of the colony. On his suggestion the first agricultural show was held (1859). He wished it to be on his property at Mount Peel, but the northern stockowners objected to driving their animals so far, and the meeting was held at Benjamin Moorhouse's station at the Rangitata.

Early in 1864 Acland was elected a member of the Geraldine road board. Next year Weld, wishing to have a representative of south Canterbury in the Legislative Council, nominated Acland, and he remained an active member for 34 years until advancing age prompted him to resign (1899). He was chairman of the Mount Peel road board from its inception in 1870 until 1900. He was a fellow of Christ's College (1873-78), a member of the board of governors of Canterbury College, and of the senate of the University of New Zealand, from which he retired to visit England (1877). He was one of the founders of the Christchurch Club. Acland was prominent in the councils of the Church of England, of which he was always a devout supporter. As a licensed lay-reader he preached regularly at Mount Peel and Peel Forest. He was for many years a member of both the diocesan and the general synod and was mainly responsible for the erection of the church at Fendalton.

ADAM

Acland married (1860) Emily Weddell, eldest daughter of Bishop Harper. He died on 18 May 1904 (see W. EMPSON).

*Col. Gent.*; Acland; Scholefield in *The Press*, 5 Jul 1930 (p); *The Press*, 19 May 1904.

ADAM, JAMES (1822-1908) was born in Links street, Aberdeen, and received the usual Scots schooling up to the age of 10. He was then apprenticed to a rope-spinner. At 17 he went to the south of England and worked for a year on railway construction. He then had some experience as a shipwright in Aberdeen. In his twenties he was precentor of the Free West Church. Adam tells in his book, *Twenty-five Years of an Emigrant's Life in New Zealand* (1876), how one evening when passing along Belmont street he heard that Dr Burns and Dr Aldcorn were to speak in the Free Church on the Otago scheme. He went to the meeting and heard them, and afterwards had an interview with the speakers and made some suggestions. This produced a letter from the Edinburgh office of the Otago Association offering him a free passage to New Zealand on condition that he remained in Otago for a certain period.

Adam sailed with his wife in the *Philip Laing* (20 Nov 1847). Two days after the selection of town lands in Dunedin Adam had granted to him at £4 per annum the lease of a section at the corner of High and Princes streets. There was a fine clump of mapau trees on it, and Adam lopped the branches of those that stood in suitable positions and left them standing as the corner posts of his house. The others were used in the building, Native builders inserted wands between the uprights 12 inches apart and laced long swamp grass into them. At the sale of town lands Adam's section was bought over his head. He worked at his trade as a shipwright and boatbuilder; built a ship or two, and planned a sawmill and flourmill for Valpy in the Leith valley. He also acquired at Anderson's Bay a small farm, at which he worked in his spare time. He was precentor and bell-ringer at First Church, the dual position yielding a salary of £10 per annum. Adam owned a small lighter, the *Queen*. He was pilot for the upper harbour and in 1856 piloted the ship *Gi Blas*, 175 tons, to an anchorage within 400 yards of the Dunedin jetty, thus solving the problem of navigating the upper harbour. In 1855 he recovered from the harbour near Port Chalmers the safe stolen in the robbery of the

ADAM

customhouse. Searching the bays from his lighter he detected it, half submerged, and rescued it with practically the whole of the £1,400 that it contained.

In 1853 Adam was elected to the first Otago Provincial Council, being second on the poll. During debates in the Provincial Council he complained of the slow settlement of the province, declaring that it would take 4,000 years at the existing rate to occupy the whole of their lands. The Council decided to open an office in Edinburgh, and Adam was sent to take charge of the work in Great Britain. James Barr remarks that 'he was well fitted by unweaned energy and ability to set forth in graphic and forcible terms the benefits which the working man might derive from emigration. A great qualification he possessed, too, in being able to speak from practical experience and personal observation, and himself was a striking, though by no means uncommon or exaggerated, example of the inducements which the province held out to the intelligent, hard-working and persevering among the working classes.' A vote of £25,000 was provided and Adam was absent until Jun 1857. Two months after his arrival in Scotland 220 emigrants were ready to sail. He returned by the *Jura* with 304 fellow-passengers, making a total of 2,017 souls who had sailed under his auspices in eight ships. There were fears during 1858 that the supply of labour would not easily be absorbed. At a public dinner at which he was entertained on his return Adam said he hoped to see Otago raised from the sixth to the third position amongst the provinces of New Zealand. Some time later, at the invitation of Taieri farmers, he visited Auckland, where there was surplus labour, to induce some of the men to move to Otago. About 100 accepted his invitation.

Adam had represented the Eastern Division of Dunedin in the Provincial Council in 1853. On his return to Otago he was invited to go into the Council again but, wishing to go on the land, he sold his Anderson's Bay property to W. H. Cutten (1859) and bought about seven square miles in south Tokomairiro, where before long he was running 4,000 sheep. Two-thirds of the land was arable, but the discovery of gold put agriculture out of the question; his men went to the diggings and Adam spent long hours in the saddle looking after his flock. When gold was discovered on his own property

## ADAMS

at Adam's Flat 700 miners agreed to pay him a royalty of 2/6 a week each to dig there, but the payments were so irregular and the business so troublesome that he was glad to exchange the land with the government for twice the area elsewhere. His homestead was at Bon Accord, south Tokomairiro.

In various capacities Adam continued to do public service. In 1863 he was road claims commissioner. After contesting the Tokomairiro seat more than once he was again returned to the Provincial Council (1864-67). He was twice a member of the executive government (under Paterson in 1864-65, and Miller in 1865-66). In 1873 he was again appointed emigration agent for the provincial government and succeeded in directing to Otago a large portion of the emigration under the Vogel policy. In 1876 he published the book already mentioned.

Adam married, first Margaret Milne (Aberdeen), who died in 1856; and later Jessie Esson, who died in 1914. He died on 27 Mar 1908.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Hocken; McIndoe; G. Brown; *Otago Witness*, II Oct 1858, 28 Mar 1898; *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Mar 1908; Scholefield in *Otago Daily Times*, II Apr 1930 (p).

ADAMS, ALEXANDER SAMUEL (1861-1937) was born at Taieri Mouth, his father, John James Adams, having arrived in Otago in 1848. Educated at the Stone school in Dunedin (while Sir Robert Stout was a teacher there), he decided at the age of seventeen to become a lawyer and entered the office of his brother (J. A. D. Adams). On passing his final examination in 1883, he received the Canterbury Law Society's honours certificate. Having been admitted, he entered into a partnership with his brother which lasted till 1910. In 1888 he successfully conducted the Roche case, in which it was held that a married woman could not hold a publican's license. His opponent was Stout, then at the height of his fame at the bar. In 1919 Adams took his two sons into the firm. In 1920 he became crown solicitor in Dunedin (in succession to W. C. Macgregor), and a few months later he was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court. Adams was deeply interested in social movements, especially temperance. He was president of the New Zealand Alliance and of the Otago and Southland No-license Council; of the Council of Churches (1903-04) and of the Baptist Union (1905-06). He married

## ADAMS

Margaret, daughter of John Boyd (Tapanui). He died on 10 Sep 1937.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Press*, II Sep 1937.

ADAMS, ARTHUR HENRY (1872-1936) was born in Lawrence, the son of C. W. Adams (q.v.), educated at Wellington College, the Otago Boys' High School (1886-92) and Otago University. He graduated B.A. in 1894 and spent three years studying law but abandoned it eagerly on being offered a position on the literary staff of the *Evening Post*, then edited by his uncle, E. T. Gillon (q.v.). During these years he contributed original prose and verse and he wrote the libretto of a Maori comic opera, *Tapu*, which was produced with success in Australia. Adams then became associated with J. C. Williamson as dramatic secretary and devoted his spare time to writing plays and pantomimes. In 1899 he published *Maoriland and Other Verses*. On the outbreak of the Boxer war in China he was appointed war correspondent for the *Sydney Morning Herald* and some New Zealand papers (1900-01). He was invalided from China with enteric fever and proceeded to England, where for the next few years he was engaged in writing and freelance journalism. He published there a volume of verse, *The Naza, "ene* 1902, and his first novel, *Tussock Land* 1904. His earnings from literature were, however, not adequate to maintain him and he returned to New Zealand in 1905 and became associate editor of the *New Zealand Times*. His bright topical columns in that paper were a feature of New Zealand journalism. In 1906 Adams published *London Streets* and in the same year returned to Sydney and accepted a post on the *Bulletin*, for which he eventually wrote the Red Page. He also worked on the *Lone Hand* and was for a short time editor of the *Sydney Sun*. In 1908 he married Lilian Paton. Among his novels were *Galahad Jones* 1910, *A Touch of Fantasy* 1912, *Grocer Greathea, "i* 1915, and *Honeymoon Dialogues* (published in 1911 under the pseudonym 'James James.') He wrote many full-length plays, including *M. s. Pretty and the Premier*, which was successfully produced by Arthur Bourchier in London. Among his latest work was an autobiographical volume *A Man's Life*. Much of Adams's verse was of a very high order, notably the collections which he published while in London. His prose was particularly

## ADAMS

graceful, the product of an extremely selective and sensitive mind, which showed little diminution in quality in spite of his great output. Adams died on 4 Mar 1936.

*Otago H.S. Reg.; Annals N.Z. Lit.* (p); Adams, *op. cit.*; *Evening Post*, 5 Mar 1936; *Sydney Morning Herald*, 5 Mar 1936.

ADAMS, CHARLES WILLIAM (1840-1918). Born at Buckland, Tasmania, Adams was the son of the Rev H. Cay Adams. He was educated at Campbelltown School, Tasmania, and in 1859 entered the survey department of Victoria as a cadet. Two years later he returned to Tasmania, and in 1862 left for New Zealand, settling in practice in Dunedin as a partner of W. H. Pilliet (q.v.). The partnership being dissolved, Adams entered the survey department of the province of Otago. A year or two later he went to Wellington and entered the service there. In 1867 he was removed to Otago, where he rose to the position of chief surveyor in 1885. In 1897 he was appointed chief surveyor and commissioner of crown lands in Marlborough, which position he held until his retirement in 1904, when he went to live at Hutt. Adams was a man of high scientific attainments and took a keen pioneering interest in astronomy. He was appointed in 1879 the first geodesical surveyor in Wellington. In 1884 he observed the transit of Venus and total eclipse of the sun. He was for some years in charge of the Government Observatory, which was then situated on Mount Cook (Wellington), and collaborated by telegraph with an observer in Sydney in the task of ascertaining the true latitude of Wellington. This was finally established with an error of only seventeen feet between the Sydney and Wellington observations. Adams also discovered an error in the position of a star according to the *Nautical Almanac* and, the report being verified by important observatories elsewhere, the position was duly corrected. In 1888 with an official party he surveyed the Sutherland Falls, the height of which he calculated to be 1904 feet. He sowed garden seeds and planted strawberries and raspberries in the Fiords. For many years Adams edited the *New Zealand Surveyor*, to which he contributed many articles. He died on 29 Oct 1918. Adams married Eleanor Sarah (who died on 11 Dec 1934), Sister of E. T. Gillon (q.v.).

## ADAMS

MCHutcheson, *Camp Life in New Zealand*, p. 89; Jourdain; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Sep, 29 Oct 1888, 11 Jan 1892; *Evening Post*, 29 Oct 1918; *The Dominion*, 13 Dec 1934.

ADAMS, HENRY was a prominent lawyer in Nelson for many years. He was elected to the first Nelson Provincial Council for Nelson, which he represented from 1853- to 1873. As provincial solicitor (then and for many years later), he was a member of the executive in 1854 and again 1865-73, and was deputy-superintendent in 1869.

ADAMS, ROBERT ALBERT (1842-1904) was born in the vale of Clwyd, Wales, a son of the Rev Edward Adams. Educated in Flintshire, he was apprenticed to a draper in Liverpool. In 1862 he emigrated to Melbourne, and in the same year came to New Zealand. He was on the Otago and Thames goldfields and took part in the Waikato war (including Orakau) as a private in the militia. After the war he took up land in Waikato, but soon spent a year or two in Canterbury, and in 1868 again enlisted (in the Armed Constabulary) for the war on the West Coast. He was present at Nukumaru. In 1874 Adams commenced a drapery business in Patea, where he was for many years a leader in local government. A member of the town board, he was afterwards for six years mayor. He was also on the school committee (eight years chairman), the Patea harbour board (1877-78), Wanganui education board, hospital and charitable aid board (some time chairman), and chairman of directors of the Hurleyville Dairy Co. In 1883 he married a daughter of Daniel Smith.

*C)-d. N.Z.*, vi.

ADAMS, THOMAS WILLIAM (1842-1919) was born at Gravely, Huntingdonshire, and educated at a private school in Cambridge and afterwards at the British and Foreign Normal School, Borough Road, London. Coming to Canterbury in 1862, he took up land at Greendale in 1865 which he farmed successfully for many years. At an early date he planted shelter belts of trees, devoting much study to ascertain the best varieties for the conditions. In this way he created fine mixed plantations and a collection of exotic trees and shrubs which was then the largest in New Zealand. His researches will regard to the Monterey

## ADAMS

pine (*pinus radiata*) constituted an important advance in New Zealand forestry, establishing this as a valuable timber tree for New Zealand. In 1897 he became a member of the Philosophical Institute of Canterbury. Many of his papers on tree culture appeared in the *Transactions of the New Zealand Institute*, the journal of the Canterbury A. and P. Association, and the report of the Australasian Association for the Advancement of Science (1904). In recognition of his services he was elected an honorary member of the Royal British Arboricultural Society and a life member of the New Zealand Forestry League. Adams was a member of the Courtenay road board (1875), of the Greendale school committee for 35 years (and its first chairman), and the North Canterbury education board from 1892 (chairman 1897-1905). He was for twenty years from 1896 a governor of Canterbury College, to which he left 100 acres of planted land at Greendale, his entire collection of trees and shrubs and the sum of £2,000 as the nucleus of a forestry school. He was a member of the Royal Commission on Forestry (1913). He was a Baptist and a temperance advocate. Adams died on 1 Jun 1919. He married Miss Pannett.

Acland; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vol. 51 (p); *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *The Press*, 2 Jun 1919.

ADAMS, WILLIAM (1811-84) was born at Upton, Herefordshire, the son of Miles Adams, a lawyer. In 1850 he came to Nelson in the *Eden*, and shortly afterwards went to Marlborough and took up the Redwood run in the Avondale valley. A leader of the separation movement, he was elected to the first Marlborough Provincial Council for Wairau Valley, which he represented till 1862. Adams was the first Superintendent of the province, but resigned the superintendency to accept the post of commissioner of crown lands. He continued a member of the executive until Jan 1862 when, his salary having been reduced by the opposition party in the Council, he resigned and left the province to practise law in Nelson, where he founded the firm of Adams and Kingdon. He represented Picton in Parliament (1867-68). He retained his pastoral run on the north bank of the Wairau river, where he died in 1884 (see W. A. B. ADAMS).

*Marlborough P.C. Minutes and Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.z.* v (p); Buick, *Marlborough*.

ADAMS, WILLIAM ACTON BLAKEWAY (1843-1924) was born at Wilden Manor, Worcestershire, the eldest son of William Adams (q.v.). Coming to Nelson in the *Eden* in 1850, he was educated at Nelson College (1857-59). In 1862 he was admitted a barrister and solicitor and he then went to England and studied for two years at the Inner Temple. He married a daughter of Dr T. R. Leadam, of London. Returning to Nelson in 1869, Adams was junior partner in his father's firm for some years. Early in 1873 he was elected member of the Provincial Council for Nelson City, and during stormy debates in the Council he fought out the question of responsible government against the executive and the superintendent of the day. He took a leading part in the Nelson and West Coast railway league and drew up a scheme for the construction of the line by means of land grants, a plan adopted later in the case of the Midland railway. In 1878 Adams purchased from the Hon N. Edwards his share in the Tarnedale station, and some time later acquired the balance of the property. In 1878 also he entered Parliament as member for Nelson after a hard fight with Col Pitt (q.v.). He was re-elected in 1879, but resigned in 1881 owing to ill-health. Adams consistently supported the Hall government. After a prolonged visit to Europe he returned and took up his residence in Christchurch (1883), practising in partnership with T. I. Joynt and afterwards with Kippenberger. Here too, he became a member and chairman of the Railway League. Adams added considerably to his landed interests, acquiring the Molesworth run, Hopefield and Woodbank in Amuri, Island Farm and Salop Downs, and finally Motunau. At one time he was shearing 75,000 sheep, but he suffered considerable losses through rabbits. Acton Adams died on 19 Jan 1924.

*Parltry Record*; Acland; *Nelson Coll. O.E. Reg.* Portrait: Parliament House.

ADAMSON, THOMAS (1847-1913) was born and educated at Wanganui. At the age of 16 he joined the militia and he served in the East Coast expeditionary force in 1865-66. He was in the Wanganui Rangers in 1866, and the Wanganui cavalry in 1868. An expert bushman who fought in the Maori manner, he was associated with Keepa's Wanganui contingent in the final chase of Titokowaru to Whakamara,

## ADAMSON

## A'DEANE

and was awarded the New Zealand Cross. Adamson was then enrolled in the corps of guides (1869). He was severely wounded at Ahikereru on 7 May. After the war he farmed at Moawhango.

N.Z. Army records; Cowan (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*

A'DEANE, JOHN (1826-89) was born at Ashcott, Somersetshire, his father being an army surgeon named Tucker. Educated at Grosvenor College, Bath, he spent some years in the Taunton branch of a banking house of which his uncle was a director. He came to New Zealand in 1855 with his only brother and for some years they gained experience on Hawkes Bay stations, chiefly in the Waipukurau district. He then took up an extensive property which he called Ashcott and converted into one of the finest stations in the province. He contested the Napier seat in Parliament (1861). In 1863 he visited England, and while there changed his name to A'Deane, and married a daughter of Robert Deane Bayly, Kilcote, Gloucestershire. He was in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council for Waipukurau (1859-62). After his return from England he represented Hampden (1867-71), Te Aute (1871-75) and Ruataniwha (1875-76). For most of this time he held some office. He was speaker from 1867 to 1871; was in the executive in 1869, and was again speaker when the provincial period was closing. A'Deane died on 31 Aug 1889.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *London Gaz.*, 3 Nov 1865; *Hawkes Bay Gaz.*, 20 Feb 1866; *N.z. Gaz.*, 13 Mar 1866.

IE AHU KARAMU' (or Hukiki te Ahu), a chief of the Ngati-Raukawa, was an older brother of Te Whatanui. When Te Rauparaha, having undertaken the heke to Cook Strait, met with difficulties there he appealed to Ngati-Raukawa at Maungatautari to come to his help. The first appeals failed, but at length Te Ahu Karamu collected a taua of 120 and marched southward. A progressive and successful leader in these southern wars, he was so pleased with the country that he returned for the rest of his tribe. They were reluctant to move until he ordered the young men to burn down the huts. Te Ahu was joined by Whatanui and accompanied by Te Heubeu from Taupo. He participated in the sale of Manawatu to Colonel Wakefield (1840), and in 1842 he accompanied C. H. Kettle on his exploration of Manawatu

## AITKEN

and Wairarapa. After Wairau Te Ahu fiercely disagreed with Te Rauparaha and threatened to lead his men back to Maungatautari. He afterwards lived at Ohau and suffered great deprivation and disappointment over the land disputes. In pre-pakeha days he was a cruel and merciless warrior, and in the early pioneer days he generally comported himself arrogantly towards the whites. His eldest son, Wahine-iti, eagerly embraced Christianity. In 1843, when not yet fourteen years old, he accompanied E. J. Wakefield to Taranaki.

N.Z.C. reports; E. J. Wakefield, *Adventure*; Buick, *Manawatu*; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*.

TE AHURU (?-1824), a Ngati-Apa chief in the early nineteenth century, was captured when his people were defeated by the Rangitane at Pohangina, but rescued in a later surprise attack. Resenting the action of Whanganui in preventing the Ngarauru coming to his aid, he got help from the Ngati-Kahungunu and other Wairarapa tribes and surprised the Whanganui at the mouth of the river. He took several upriver pas, sent back his prisoners to Rangitikei and then turned on the Rangitane, who fled through the Manawatu gorge. There was considerable slaughter on both sides. Te Ahu later joined with the Muaupoko and Rangitane against the Ngati-Tu at vVaitotara, but was defeated and retired. He was one of the first chiefs to fall at Kapiti in the combined attack on Te Rauparaha.

Downes; Buick, *Old New Zealander*.

AIKMAN, JOHN CAMPBELL came to Canterbury with his brothers in the first years of the settlement and took up Mount Fourpeaks station in 1858, selling it a year or two later. They had a wharf at Heathcote before the railway was constructed and when freight was brought by sea over the bar at Sumner. Aikman represented Heathcote in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1863-65). He was afterwards in business in Christchurch as an auctioneer and was a lieutenant in the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry. His home was in Aikman's road, which was named after him.

Acland.

AITKEN, JOHN GUTHRIE WOOD (1849-1921) was the son of a farmer at Park Kilchenzie, Kintyre, Argyllshire, and received his education at Campbelltown Grammar School. Instead

AKERSTEN

of becoming a farmer he entered the Glasgow office of James Templeton, carpet manufacturers, and was later connected with the London branch for twelve years. There he met George Wilson, with whom in 1882 he established a business in Wellington, the firm being known as Aitken, Wilson and Co., general merchants. In 1900 Aitken was elected mayor of Wellington and he held the position unopposed until resigning in 1904. He was a member of the harbour board during the same period. In 1902 he was elected to Parliament for Wellington City and in 1905 for Wellington East. He retired in 1908 and in 1914 was called to the Legislative Council, of which he remained a member until his death (on 17 Aug 1921). He was a prominent member of the Presbyterian Church, and in 1917 was elected moderator of the General Assembly of New Zealand. Aitken was chairman of directors of several important companies, and took a great interest in education and philanthropy. He was chairman of the Wellington education board for some years and of the Wellington College board of governors, and was associated with the founding of the Boys' Institute and the activities of the Y.M.C.A. Aitken was unmarried.

*N.z.P.D.*, 22 Sep 1921; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *TVho's TVho N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 17 Aug 1921; *The Dominion*, 18 Aug. Portrait: Parliament House.

AKERSTEN, WILLIAM (1825-1905) was born in England. He served his apprenticeship as a shiprigger, then went to sea, gaining a master's certificate; was a master rigger and stevedore in London and owned small vessels in Australia. In 1855 he came to Nelson on behalf of James Henty and Co., Melbourne, to adjust the insurance on the damaged wool cargo of the *Aden*. He subsequently bought the schooner *Maid Of Alicante* and brought goods and passengers to Nelson. Having made some study of civil engineering, he built the Napier wharf at the port. He had a good business as a ship chandler, stevedore and marine surveyor. As superintendent of public works for the province he designed many bridges and proposed cutting through the Boulder Bank. Akersten was a member of the board of works (1869), of the borough council (1886-1903), and the licensing committee. He was M.P.C. for Nelson (1865-68), and stood for the superintendency in 1869 (Curtis 894, Akersten 374, Gibbs 293). He

ALDIS

arrested Bully Hayes at Croixelles on behalf of the owners of his ship and brought him to Nelson. Akersten died on 11 Mar 1905.

*ParUry Record; Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); Broad; *The Colonist*, 13 Mar 1905 and Jubilee Souvenir.

ALDIS, WILLIAM STEADMAN (1839-1928) was a son of the Rev John Aldis, a Baptist minister, and was (according to *The Times*) the doyen of a noted family of mathematicians, including five high wranglers, among them the inventor of the Aldis lens and unit sight.

Born in London, Aldis was educated at the City of London School and at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he entered in 1858 and was senior wrangler of his year in 1861. *The Times* says: 'His success was indirectly of public importance. No one could take a fellowship in any college without signing a declaration that he was a bona fide member of the Church of England. For 13 years Trinity had failed to secure a senior wrangler. In 1860 there was Stirling, who was afterwards Lord Justice, but he, being a United Presbyterian, refused to sign the declaration. In 1861 Aldis made the same refusal. This succession of brilliant achievements, coupled with the subsequent conspicuous success of Aldis's two younger brothers, set on foot an agitation which ended in the abolition of the religious tests at both Oxford and Cambridge in 1871.'

Aldis remained at Cambridge as a private mathematical tutor for some years. In 1870 he was appointed professor of mathematics and physical science at the new college at Newcastle-on-Tyne (now Armstrong College) and he was principal of this institution when he received the appointment as professor of mathematics at Auckland University College. He married (1863) Mary, daughter of the Rev William Robinson, also a Baptist. Mr and Mrs Aldis were leading advocates of the higher education of women and drew up a petition for the admission of women to examinations and degrees in the universities which was extensively signed throughout the United Kingdom. The outcome of this movement was that women were allowed to compete in the Tripos examinations on the same terms as men.

Aldis's connection with Auckland University College terminated in 1894 as the result of a difference with the council. He then returned

ALDRED

to England and spent some years at Oxford employed as an examiner for the universities. On his retirement he resided in Tenterden, Kent, where he died on 7 Mar 1928. Aldis was not only a man of very wide general knowledge, but he had a particularly lovable and unselfish nature, and was greatly interested in political and social movements. His books on *Solid Geometry* and *Optics* were for many years standard works.

*Auckland Univ. Calendar*; A. and M. Aldis (information); *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Nov 1893; *The Times* (London), 13 Mar 1928.

ALDRED, JOHN (1818-94) was born at Stutton, Suffolk, where he was qualifying for the Wesleyan ministry; he was ordained at Bristol on 4 Sep 1839. Having been selected with several others by the centenary conference at Liverpool for missionary service in the South Seas, he sailed in the brigantine *Triton*, 119 tons, accompanied by the Revs Buddle, Turton, Smales and Buttle.

Arriving at Hokianga on 8 May 1840, Aldred, with Buttle and Ironside, proceeded to their station at Ahuahu, near Kawhia. Here he made quick progress in mastering the Maori language. Travelling on foot to the southern settlements of Taranaki and Wanganui, the three missionaries fell in with a large number of prisoners captured by the Waikato in recent raids upon the Taranaki tribes. They secured the release of many of them and accompanied them back to their homes in Taranaki. In return the Maori tapued 100 acres of land for the purposes of the mission. At Oeo Aldred narrowly escaped evil consequences from having unwittingly used for kindling purposes sacred wood from a wahi tapu. Having reached Waitotara in three months from Kawhia, they returned by foot in three weeks and sailed shortly afterwards in the *Magnet* for their southern stations. Aldred reached Port Nicholson on 23 Dec 1840 and took up his abode at the Te Aro pa as the first resident Wesleyan minister in Wellington. On 16 Jun 1842 he sailed for the Chatham islands in the schooner *Blossom* (which was wrecked shortly after her arrival). He was the first clergyman to visit these islands. The 600 Maori to whom he ministered had come from Taranaki eight years earlier, having sold their guns and potatoes to induce Captain Howard to give them a passage in his brig. They found 300

ALEXANDER

Moriore, whom they enslaved. On 24 Feb 1843, shortly before the Wairau affray, Aldred left Wellington to take charge of a mission at Nelson. In 1849 he was appointed to the Hutt, but before taking up his new post he visited Auckland. He remained at the Hutt until Mar 1854, when he moved to Canterbury as the first resident Wesleyan minister in Christchurch. He married a daughter of the Rev Walter Lawry, superintendent of the mission. After opening the first Wesleyan chapel in Canterbury he moved in 1859 to the Hutt, in 1862 to Wellington, and in 1864 to Dunedin. While there he travelled far and wide on the goldfields, and while riding over the hills from Port Chalmers to Dunedin met with an accident from the results of which he was compelled to retire from regular service in 1867. Thereafter he did connexional work for the remainder of his life and took a keen interest in the British and Foreign Bible society and the female refuge. He died on 12 Jan 1894.

Morley (p); W. J. Williams (p); Buller; M. A. R. Pratt (information); *Lyttelton Times*, 13 Jan 1894.

ALEXANDER, ALEXANDER (1820-73) was one of the earliest agricultural and pastoral settlers in Hawkes Bay and was on the commission of the peace in 1858. He originally settled in the Poraita district and was believed to be the first settler to graze stock on the Wharangi hills. He was also a storekeeper and trader and had an intimate knowledge of the language and customs of the Maori, over whom he exercised a considerable influence. Alexander made an early journey from Napier to Auckland to open up a mail route. He was an advocate of separation, and when Hawkes Bay became a province he was elected to the first Provincial Council for Napier Country, which he represented from 1860 to 1862. In 1861 he was a member of the executive. Alexander died on 25 Jul 1873.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Pmc.*; *TVaka Maori*, 1873, p. 105; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 29 Jul 1873.

ALEXANDER, JAMES (1818-95) was born in Scotland and came to New Zealand in the *MaTtha Ridgway* (1840). He was for a little while in the Wairarapa and then settled in Wanganui as manager for W. B. Rhodes, for whom he carried out several army contracts. Later he undertook contracts with F. Y. Leth-

ALLAN

bridge and D. Peat (with whom he was afterwards in partnership for many years). Alexander died on 15 Jul 1895.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (P).

ALLAN, JAMES (1824-91) was born in Irvine, Ayrshire, the son of John Allan (1791-1863) of Bellfield, Taieri. Brought up at Irvine, he came to Nelson with his parents in the *New Zealand* (1842) and in 1846 went to Otago with a party which had contracted to survey a large block including the Clutha district. Allan brought the plans to Dunedin early in 1847 and shortly afterwards returned to Nelson, where his father had a small farm, and persuaded them all to go to Otago: They sailed in the schooner *Emzly*, 12 tons, in Apr 1848, accompanied by J. C. Smith (q.v.), who had a quantity of merchandise, produce and building material. Together Smith and Allan started a store and bakery. In 1851 Smith retired to go on land at Hopehill, Taieri, which in the following year he transferred to Allan. A few years later they were in partnership in a run near Tokomairiro, and in 1855 made a journey together to Riverton for cattle, which they drove back. The run contained 13,000 acres, including Gabriel's Gully and the Woolshed. About 1860 Allan sold out to John Martin (q.v.) and shortly afterwards the run was resumed for mining purposes. Allan now devoted his attention to the freehold at East Taieri, which he increased eventually to 5,000 acres. He was a successful farmer and breeder. In 1864 he was captain of the East Taieri Rifles and a leading marksman. In 1870 he was elected M.P.C. for Taieri, which he represented to 1875. He was a member of the Taieri county council, the Grey road board and the school committee. Allan married (1850) Jane, daughter of Richard Sutcliffe (who arrived in the *Ajax*, 1849). He died on 5 Jul 1891. (See G. M. THOMSON.)

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; J. A. Thomson (p); James Smith in *Evening Star*, 23 Mar 1898; *Otago Witness*, 23 Mar 1898 (P); *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Jul 1891.

ALLEN, EDMUND GmLETT (1844-1909) was born in Somersetshire, and arrived in New Zealand in 1863 after having spent ten years in Tasmania. Within a few years he became engaged in railway contracts on the Wellington-Hutt and Waipukurau-Takapau lines and the line between Sawyer's Bay and the Purakanui

ALLEN

tunnel, in Otago. When this contract was finished in 1875, Allen settled in port Chalmers, where he was interested in stone work and quarrying. For 10 years (1884-94) he was mayor of Port Chalmers and in 1896 he was returned to the House of Representatives as member for Waikouaiti. He sat continuously until 1908, representing Port Chalmers from 1902. He had the support of the Workers' Political committee in 1902 and 1905. For many years Allen was chairman of the dock trust, and he had a seat on the harbour board. He was a strong advocate of a modern dock at Port Chalmers capable of accommodating ocean-going steamers, and it was largely due to his efforts that this end was achieved. He had a retiring disposition and performed his public duties quietly and unostentatiously. He died on 18 Dec 1909.

Hansard, 20 Dec 1909; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (P); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Paul, *Trades Unionism*; *Otago Daily Times*, 20 Dec 1909. portrait: Parliament House.

ALLEN, GEORGE (1814-99) was born at Deal, Kent, the son of a boatbuilder who took him as a seven-year apprentice to his own trade. By that time the South Australian Company was attracting attention and he accepted an engagement to build its boats and small craft.

In 1836 Allen left England in the brig *Emma*, 160 tons, which six months later cast anchor off Kangaroo island. There they had to wait two months for the arrival of the governor (Captam Hindmarsh) in the last week of 1836. The expedition then proceeded to establish the colony and layout the town of Adelaide: With a view of returning to England, Allen signed on as a carpenter on a homeward-bound ship, which was wrecked at the outset on Encounter island. He then tried the *Sarah and Elizabeth*, but she was condemned, and he had to put in some time at Hobart at his own trade. Having worked his passage to Sydney he joined the *Orontes*, but she too was wrecked (on the north coast of Australia) and the castaways found their way overland to Port Essington, where H.M.S. *Alligator* lay. Allen was engaged to repair the captain's gig and to do jobs, and then found his way back to Sydney, about the middle of 1839. He came to New Zealand in the *Adelaide*, visiting Bay of Islands and Waitemata, was back in Adelaide for Christmas, and reached Deal towards the end of 1840. Having received payment from the Admiralty for work

ALLEN

done for the *Alligator*, he married Jane Elizabeth Paul and left for New Zealand in the *Katherine Stua?t Forbes* (Feb 1841). He was "then 26 years of age.

In the alarm of 1846 he had command of a militia patrol on the outskirts of Wellington. He worked at his own trade (boatbuilding) with such success that he was able to retire in 1866, and bought a farm at Waiwetu. Having now a competence, Allen was elected for Wellington City to the Provincial Council (1861). He was a member of the committee which decided upon the position of the Queen's wharf, and it was largely due to his insistence that the durability of the piles was increased by coppering. He was defeated at the election in 1865. Allen was a member of the City Council (1876-83 and 1887-88), and for a few months in 1879 he was mayor of the city. He also served on the charitable aid board, and was a trustee and treasurer of the hospital.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 30 Sep 1929.

ALLEN, WILLIAM (1806-76) seems to have arrived in Wellington by the *Exporter* in 1842, and was on the burgess roll in 1843 as an auctioneer in Manners street. He was a member of the Wellington town board, and represented the City in the Provincial Council (1856-61). Allen was chairman of the small farms association (1855-58), and later manager of the land on deferred payments society, and of the Wellington Trust and Loan Co. He held a unique position of esteem in political life, exercising considerable influence even when not in office or council. Allen died on 9 Jan 1876.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; *Wellington Independent*, 21 Feb 1863; *NZ. Spectator*, 1854, pass.

ALLEN, WILLIAM SHEPHERD (1831-1915) was born at Manchester, England, and educated at Wadham College, Oxford, where he graduated M.A. He married a daughter of John Candlish, M.P. for the borough of Sunderland.

In 1865 he was elected Liberal M.P. for Newcastle-under-Lyme, which he represented till 1886. Finding himself unable to agree with his leaders on the question of Irish home rule, he became a Unionist. In 1885 Allen visited New Zealand, and a year or so later he acquired a property in Piako, where Morrinsville now is. A staunch Methodist, he and his sons were local preachers and he assisted in establishing Prince

ALLOM

Albert College in Auckland. In 1890 Allen was elected to Parliament for Te Aroha, but unseated on petition. He again tried to gain a seat (for Parnell), but without success. For some years he was a member of the Piako county council, from which he resigned on returning to live in England, where he died on 15 Jan 1915. He was deputy-lieutenant for Staffordshire.

His eldest son, WILLIAM ALLEN (1870- ) represented Newcastle-under-Lyme in the House of Commons in 1892-1900 and Stoke-on-Trent 1931-35. He is a K.C. and was recorder of Ludlow (1928-32). Another son, STEPHEN ALLEN (1882- ) commanded the Auckland regiment in the war of 1914-18 and was administrator of Western Samoa (1928-30. (D.S.a. 1918; C.M.G. 1919; K.B.E. 1933).

Studholme; Morley; W. J. Williams; *Who's Who NZ.*, 1932; *The Times (London)*, 16 Jan 1915; *N.Z. Herald*, 19 Jan 1915.

ALLISON, JAMES (1817-67) graduated in medicine at Edinburgh, and came to New Zealand in 1840. He settled on a farm at Lamb Hill, Wanganui, where he married Georgina, daughter of J. A. Gilfillan. About 1848 he moved to Wairau, where he had a farm. This he sold out in 1855 and returned to Wanganui. He did not practise medicine and being of a retiring disposition, took little part in public life; but he represented his district in the Wellington Provincial Council for several years (Wanganui and Rangitikei 1861-65; Rangitikei 1865-67). He was an ardent horticulturist. Allison died at St Peter's, West Indies, on 30 May 1867 on his way to England.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Woon.

ALLOM, ALBERT JAMES (1825-1909) was the son of Thomas Allom, the artist and architect who made the lithographic plates for Wakefield's *Adventure in New Zealand* (1845). Born and educated in London, Allom came to New Zealand as a survey cadet in the *Brougham* (which arrived at Wellington in Feb 1842). He was employed in Manawatu, on the roads to Porirua and Karori, and in the Hutt valley. In 1841 he was one of the preliminary survey party sent to Otago in the schooner *Carbon*. The staff being disbanded early next year, he settled in Wairarapa in partnership with John Tully, another cadet, leasing the Tauanui run from the natives. Recalled to England on private

## ALLWRIGHT

affairs in 1848, Allom spent some time with Edward Gibbon Wakefield at Boulogne assisting as amanuensis in producing *The Art of Colonisation* (published in 1849). He was associated with Wakefield in the affairs of the Canterbury settlement and with Frederick Young in the shipping arrangements. Having seen the first four ships off at Blackwall, he was soon after appointed private secretary to Sir Dominic Daly, lieutenant-governor of Tobago, and a year later he became colonial secretary in that island. He took part in the defence arrangements in 1853 when relations with Russia became strained, and was in England on leave when the Crimean war broke out (1855). In 1856 he married Eliza, daughter of G. W. Horn, of Winchfield, Hampshire, and returned to his post in the West Indies, which he had to resign in 1860 owing to ill-health. Being appointed general manager and agent of the Great Barrier Land, Harbour and Mining Co., he came to Auckland in the *Mermaid* (1861). The company going into liquidation in 1867, he went to Thames and held various appointments, including those of clerk of the court, mining registrar (1870) and receiver of gold revenue at Mackaytown (1875). Retiring owing to the age limit in 1886, he lived in Tasmania 1889-97, when he returned to Auckland. Thereafter he took a prominent part in public movements, including the Auckland scenery preservation society (1899). Allom died on 16 Feb 1909.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Company reports*; *Thames Jubilee*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Roll of Honour, Auckland Centennial.

ALLWRIGHT, HARRY (1837-92) came to New Zealand in the *Cressy* (1850), worked at Lyttelton for a few years for his father (a painter and glazier), on whose death he took charge of the business. A member of the Lyttelton municipal council (1868), he was on many occasions on the borough council and was mayor 1877. In 1879 he was elected M.H.R. for Lyttelton, which he represented to 1887, defeating Murray-Aynsley and E. Richardson. He was prominent in all sports bodies, president of the yacht club and commodore of the regatta. He was a member of the charitable aid board and school committee. Allwright died on 18 Jul 1892.

*Lyttelton Times*, 19 Jul 1892. Portrait: Parliament House.

ALPERS, OSCAR THORWALD JOHAN (1867-1927) was born in Copenhagen, Denmark, and educated at Kelskov's grammar school there. Coming to New Zealand in the *Friedeburg* with his parents at the age of eight, he completed his education at the Napier High School. In 1884 he entered upon his studies at Canterbury College, where he graduated B.A. (1887) and M.A. (1888), with first-class honours in languages and literature and the John Tinline scholarship.

For three years Alpers was assistant to the professor of English, J. Macmillan Brown (q.v.), and he engaged in literary work for the Christchurch papers, in dramatic productions and in debating societies. He was some years (from 1889) master at the Christchurch Boys' High School, all the time increasing his salary by journalism. In 1904 he graduated LL.B. and was admitted to the bar. He practised for some time in partnership with J. W. White, crown prosecutor at Timaru, moved to Christchurch in 1908, and in 1910 joined the firm of Garrick, Cowlshaw and Co. In 1911 he married Natalie, daughter of Henry Rose (Dunedin). In addition to journalistic work, Alpers wrote a good deal in a better literary style, both to New Zealand publications and to English reviews. As a poet he had some standing. His jubilee ode, written in 1900, struck a high note and he had poems in *College Rhymes* (1923) and the *Jubilee Book of Canterbury Verse* (which he edited in 1900). In 1902 he collaborated with R. F. Irvine in *The Progress of New Zealand in the Century*, and before his death he completed a fine volume of personal reminiscences (*Cheerful Yesterdays*, 1928).

In 1925 he was appointed to the supreme court bench. During the war of 1914-18 Alpers conducted a journal, the *Red Cross Recol'd* (the profits of which were expended upon the Rannerdale home for soldiers), and he was chairman of a citizens' committee interested in a soldiers' club. He died on 21 Nov 1927.

Alpers, *op. cit.* (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *N.Z. Law Jam.*, 1927; *Annals N.Z. Lit.*; *The Dominion*, 26 Nov 1927; *The Press*, 9 Feb 1925, 22, 26 Nov 1927; *Lyttelton Times*, 22 Nov 1927.

AMBURY, STEPHEN JAMES (1851-1929) was born at Aston Ingham, Herefordshire, and came to New Zealand in the *British Empire* (1880). After farming at Cambridge, he started a milk business in Auckland and commenced the manufacture of butter. He was a pioneer of

## AMBURY

## TE ANAVA

butter exporting and factory manufacture. In 1885 he called a meeting of farmers at Mangere and offered to erect a creamery if they would supply the milk. He exported the first ton of factory butter from Auckland (1899) and was later associated with the Auckland Farmers' Freezing Co., of which he was an original shareholder, and director and chairman (1914-21). In public life Ambury was mayor of Newton (1887-90), and a member of the Auckland hospital board. He was an officer of the Pitt Street Methodist Church and chairman of the Probert Trust. On his death (23 Jul 1929) he made substantial religious and philanthropic bequests.

*N.Z. Herald*, 24 Jul, 3 Aug 1929.

TE ANAUA (also called Tu, and Hori Kingi) was a prominent Whanganui chief in the early part of the nineteenth century. He was head chief of the Ngati-Ruaka and uncle of Keepa te Rangihiwini (q.v.). Te Pehi Turoa married his sister, and with him and Paetahi planned the attack on Te Rauparaha at Kapiti.

At the time of the invasion of Ngapuhi under Tuwhare (1819-20) Te Anaua and his brother were in command of the Whanganui and Ngati-Hau at Purua when they were attacked by Tuwhare, who had four muskets. Tuwhare's son being captured, he gave a suit of armour as ransom. Having lost two brothers killed by the Amiowhenua expedition at Mangawere (1821), Anaua followed up the expedition to Mangatua, two miles south of Koriniti, defeated it and continued the chase as far as Taupo, inflicting some losses on Waikato. He was afterwards called Hori Kingi. About 1828, with Pehi Tuma, he attacked a strong position of Ngati-Raukawa high up the river; defeated them and returned to Whanganui with his taua of 400. In the storming of Putikiwaranui (1829) Te Anaua was spared by Te Whatanui on account of his consideration for the Ngati-Raukawa. In 1832 he opposed the passage of the heke Tama te Vaua.

Te Anaua signed the treaty of Waitangi in 1840 and in the forties was an assessor at Putiki. In the disturbances of that decade he was taunted by the natives for taking up arms against his own tribe. In 1848 he divided the money received for the sale of 80,000 acres of land. Donald McLean recommended him for a pension of £20 as 'the most tried, faithful and

## ANDERSON

zealous supporter of the Government.' This was granted in 1859. At the conference at Kohimarama (1860) Governor Gore Browne gave Te Anaua a staff of honour from the Queen and others to hand to his brother Mawae, to Pehi Turoa and Aperahama Tipai. Early in 1865 Te Anaua accompanied Grey to Weraroa to summon the pa to surrender. When the friendlies from Whanganui refused to march with General Chute on the inland route to New Plymouth Te Anaua, at Featherston's request, succeeded in persuading them (1866). He died on 18 Sep 1868.

*App. H.R.*, 1865-68; Cowan, *Wars*; Downes; \\hitmore.

ANDERSON, ARCHIBALD (1817-1910) was born at Stirling, the son of John Anderson, who owned fisheries. After getting a sound Scots education Archibald helped his father in the business. He had not turned 21 when the New Zealand Company's agents came to Scotland and, with the help of his father, he purchased orders for one town acre in Port Nicholson and 100 acres of rural land.

When the *Bengal Merchant* sailed from the Clyde (30 Oct 1839) Anderson was just 22. He took with him a ploughman (Donald Drummond). Reaching Port Nicholson on 21 Feb 1840, the Scotsmen found that the land was not available; the surveyors were engaged elsewhere. Anderson allowed his married couple to take work while he erected a raupo store at Pipitea Point and invested his capital in a business which for a year or two thrived. In 1842, in partnership with Andrew Rowan, he erected a second store in Willis street, but profits being low they invested in the purchase of 20 cows and 500 Southdown sheep, which they depastured on land near Terawhiti (leased from Dr Evans). During the disturbances in 1845 the graziers abandoned the place and Anderson left for Otago in the *Scotia* with John Jones to prospect the country. He had married (1844) Anna, daughter of Joseph Miller, a trader from Sydney (formerly of Bromley, Kent). Favourably impressed with Otago, he took up grazing land and chartered two schooners to convey his livestock—30 cows, two horses and 500 ewes—to their new range. Rowan remained in charge of the stock at Otago Heads for 18 months, bringing in some income by trafficking with whalers. When Anderson had

## ANDERSON

wound up his affairs in Wellington the partnership was dissolved, each partner taking half of the stock. Rowan lost his life on a voyage to Sydney. Anderson's son, John Crawford (q.v.), was born at the Kaik two days before the arrival of the *John Wickliffe*. Anderson now moved to Blueskin, where he spent two years, but owing to trouble with native dogs moved his stock to the higher country about Roslyn, and then to Saddle Hill, where he spent eight years. During this time he had a store at Wise's corner and he acted as postmaster until 1849.

Having prospected south Otago before the new settlers arrived, Anderson took up land at Inch Clutha and Stirling, and in 1850 leased the Molyneux run of 30,000 acres, upon which he erected his homestead at Moir's Bush, Barnego Flat. When the land was required for settlement, he gave up the lease and purchased the freehold of 2,000 acres between Balclutha and Tuakitoto lake. He let small farms and himself farmed 200 acres on Inch Clutha. The Balmoral property he worked from 1858 until 1880. In his kitchen the first services in Inch Clutha were held by the Rev W. Bannerman (q.v.), and the first school. Anderson also held the Beaumont run till 1860. At Inch Clutha he operated a ferry for the benefit of the settlers; grew and ground his own wheat; he sledged his family and supplies all the way from Dunedin, and shipped produce in his own boat round the coast to Otago harbour. He was early prominent in public life. In the Provincial Council he represented the Southern District (1853-59). Generally he walked to Dunedin to attend the meetings. He was speaker of the Council in 1854 and a member of the executive (1854-55).

His wife having died in 1860, Anderson retired from public life, except for his interest in the Inch Clutha church, of which he was an elder and benefactor for many years. When it was first built he gave a site of 25 acres. In 1880 he went to live at the Hermitage, Inch Clutha, where he died on 13 Sep 1910.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Hocken, *Otago*; Beattie; *Otago Witness*, 9 Mar 1893; Scholefield in *Otago Daily Times*, 23 Aug 1930 (p).

ANDERSON, GEORGE JAMES (1860-1935) was born at Back Creek, Bendigo, Australia, and came to New Zealand in 1862 with his parents, who were attracted by the gold rush at

## ANDERSON

Gabriel's *Gully*. He attended the Lawrence school until the age of 14, when he began work as a compositor's apprentice. In 1890 he married Mary Annie, daughter of Edward Ball.

After experience on the mechanical side of several newspapers, Anderson became business manager of the *Zvlataura Ensign*, Gore, and in 1908 took control of the editorial department. In the same year he was elected member of the House of Representatives for Mataura (defeating a stOng opponent), and he held this seat continuously until he was defeated in 1928 (by D. McDougall). Anderson was for some years a member of the Gore High School board of governors, and of the Southland education board. In 1920 he accepted a portfolio (as Minister of Internal Affairs) in the Massey Government. Besides that office (which he held 1920-21), he was Minister of Labour (1921-25), and Minister of Marine in 1922. In the Coates Government (1925-28) he was Minister of Labour and of Mines, and was for a time Minister of Pensions and of the Government Printing and Publishing department. After his defeat in 1928 he was called to the Legislative Council (1929), of which he was a member till his death (on 16 Dec 1935).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Dec 1935 (p).

ANDERSON, HENRY (1838-88) was born at Glasgow, educated there and trained as an analytical chemist. He was for a while a pupil of Dr MacAdam. Before coming to New Zealand (1858) he contributed a good deal to the papers in Rothesay and made a voyage to China with his brother (a sea captain). Anderson spent two years with a sister in Rangitikei before coming into contact with T. W. McKenzie (q.v.), who appointed him in 1863 editor of the *Wellington Independent*. He was a vigorous and forceful writer and made his influence felt in provincial politics. With C. Roe and J. and E. Bull he founded the *Advertiser* (1869), which only lasted a year or two. He was editor of this paper and later of the *Evening Post* and the *Chronicle*. He married in 1864 a daughter of Henry Schultze (Wellington). In 1869 he was elected M.P.C. for Wellington, which he represented to 1871. He died on 20 Jul 1888.

Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 14 May 1879, 21 Jul 1888; *Evening Post*, 20 Jul 1888.

## ANDERSON

ANDERSON, JOHN (1820-97) was born at Musselburgh, Scotland, and at an early age moved with his parents into the city of Edinburgh, where he got; not without difficulty, the usual education of an unendowed Scots boy. Apprenticed to a blacksmith, he worked from six in the morning until the same hour in the evening. He attended evening classes at the school of arts, and gained his diploma and medal. For some time after the expiration of his apprenticeship he worked in Edinburgh. Then he went to Liverpool, and obtained employment in a large shipbuilding yard. In 1847 he married at Edinburgh Jane Gibson, and thus came into touch with a Scots gentleman (Mr Dalmahoy), who was prominent in the councils of the Free Church. This friendship was a tangible influence in his later life.

Anderson became interested in the Otago settlement scheme of the Church. He did not join the pioneers, but in the next few years made up his mind to come to New Zealand, and was accepted as a settler under the Church of England association which was colonising Canterbury. Anderson and his wife and their eldest son sailed in the *Sir George Seymour*. Arriving at Lyttelton (Dec 1850) he walked over the hills to call upon the Deans brothers (q.v.) at Riccarton. Encouraged by their confidence, he decided to start in business at Christchurch rather than at Lyttelton and promptly set up his forge at 'The Bricks,' the terminus on the Avon of the waterway from Lyttelton. There he was fully busy and occasionally in the evening walked across the hills to Lyttelton and carried back the bar iron required for the next day's work. In 1852 Anderson purchased section No. 877 in Cashel street, and laid the foundations of the Canterbury ironworks, with his residence adjoining. The business grew steadily, and in 1857 he imported engines, boilers, and furnace for the first foundry. He operated the first forge; built the first hoiler and imported some of the first ploughs and harvesting machines into the province. Anderson sent his two eldest sons to Scotland to complete their education at the Merchiston Castle school. The eldest trained as a mechanical engineer and the second as a civil engineer. The firm not only made boilers, engines, bridges, dredges, viaducts, flourmilling and flaxmilling machinery, but actually undertook the construction of railways. In 1885 they completed the Rakaia-Ashburton

## ANDERSON

Forks branch. In 1887 they undertook a contract for ttle line from Te Kuiti to the Mokau river. Having in 1887 opened an engineering shop in Lyttelton, in 1890 they launched the steamer *John Anderson* for the Peninsula trade. In the following year they did an important repair job on the steamer *Duke of Buckingham*, and later similar work on the *Fifeshire* and the *Tomoana*. In 1900 they built the dredge *John Townley* for the Gisborne harbour board. They built bridges and viaducts in all parts of New Zealand, including the Beaumont bridge over the Clutha river, the Waiau bridge, many bridges on the Midland railway, and several of the North Island viaducts, including those at Makatote and Mangatera.

While steadily building up his business, Anderson was elected a member of the first town board in Christchurch (1862) and five years later, when Christchurch became a municipality, he was elected to the council, and presided at the first meeting. In 1868 he succeeded to the mayoral chair. When Anderson was about to pay a visit to the United Kingdom in 1875 the citizens of Christchurch presented him with a sufficient sum of money to get his portrait painted by a leading artist in Great Britain (A. Glasgow). Just before leaving he cooPerated with Reeves, Peacock, Gould, Coster, and others in the flotation of the New Zealand Shipping Co., of which he was a director almost to the time of his death. He was an original shareholder, and an early director of the Christchurch Gas Co., an original director of the Christchurch Press Co., and a director of the Union Insurance Co. He was one of the first members of the Lyttelton harbour board, first chairman of the licensing committee, for some time chairman of the chamber of commerce, and a strong supporter of the Canterbury A. and P. association. He was one of the founders of the Mechanics' Institute, which was eventually merged in the Christchurch public library. Anderson was instrumental with others in bringing to the province its first Presbyterian minister (ttle Rev Charles Fraser), and he was a trustee of ttle property of the church. It was largely due to his exertions that a high school was established under the auspices of the church on the Lincoln road.

Mrs Anderson died in Mar 1894, and Anderson on 30 Apr 1897. (See JOHN ELMSLIE).

His son, JOHN ANDERSON (1850-1934), who

## ANDERSON

was educated at Merchiston Castle, became chairman of directors of the firm. He was a member of the Christchurch City Council (1923-25) and many years a director of the New Zealand Shipping Co. and The Press Co., president of the Agricultural and Pastoral Association and a life member of the council of Canterbury University College.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *The Press*, 30 Apr 1897, 21 Dec 1925; Scholefield in *The Press*, 1 Nov 1930 (p).

ANDERSON, JOHN CRAWFORD (1848-1930) was born at Maori Kaik, Otago, the son of Archibald Anderson (q.v.). Educated at Inch Clutha school and Otago Boys' High School (1863-64), he worked on his father's farm and as a carrier to the goldfields. At the age of 20 he leased 2,000 acres from his father. He was engaged opening up an antimony mine in the Lammerlaw range, but returned to farming and shepherding in Marlborough. In 1883 he entered into partnership with James Horn (q.v.) in a general store at Quartzville (Bannockburn). He contested the Bruce seat unsuccessfully against Donald Reid in 1885 and in 1887 (having sold his business and settled at Inch Clutha) he stood as a Stout-Vogel candidate and was successful. He retired in 1890 and devoted his attention to his business as a stock and station agent in Oamaru. Returning to Stirling, he contested the Bruce seat in 1899 against James Allen. Anderson was a member of the Clutha river board, the Otago land board (1911-15), the Stirling school committee, and the Anglican diocesan synod (1910-23), a life member of the Clutha and Matau A. and P. society, a director of the South Otago Freezing Co., and of the Stirling dairy factory. He married (1893) a daughter of Henry Hamilton (London). His death occurred on 12 Nov 1930.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Otago Witness*, 18 Nov 1930 (P). Portrait: Parliament House.

ANDREW, JOHN CHAPMAN (1822-1907) was the son of the Rev James Andrew, vicar of Whitby. Educated at Sedbergh school and at University College, Oxford, he graduated B.A. in 1844 and M.A. in 1847 (with honours in classics and mathematics). In 1845 he was elected a fellow and tutor of Lincoln College, but resigned the fellowship on his marriage in 1856 to Emma, daughter of the Rev H. Fendall, vicar of Crambe, Yorkshire. He was ordained

## ANDREWS

deacon (1847) and priest (1848), and appointed vicar of St Michael's, Oxford.

In 1856 Andrew emigrated to Canterbury in the *Westminster*, and made some explorations in the Mackenzie country and the Southern Alps. In 1857 he leased the Otamatata run, on the upper Waitaki, which he held till 1866, when he moved to the North Island, purchasing 18,200 acres at Castlepoint, upon which he resided after his return from England (1869). He gave the run the name 'Ica,' from his initials as stencilled on his wool bales. Andrew represented Wairarapa East in the Wellington Provincial Council (1867-75) and Wairarapa in Parliament (1871-77). He was chairman of the Whareama road board, a member of the Castlepoint county council and of the first Wellington education board. From 1876 to 1886 he was headmaster of Nelson College, resigning his seat in Parliament to attend to this duty. He was one of the founders of the University of New Zealand, and was a member of the senate (1874-1907), and vice-chancellor (1885-1905). While in Nelson he assisted to found the Nelson Philosophical Society. In 1880 he married (secondly) Emily Sarah, daughter of John Morgan (Hobart). About 1895 Andrew retired from farming and resided thereafter at Otaki, where he died on 7 Dec 1907.

*Nelson Call. Reg.*; *Wellington P.C. Pmc.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Col. Gent.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Hocken, *Otago*; John Wilson; J. Park in *Otago Daily Times*, 25, 26 Mar 1925; *N.Z. Times*, 9 Dec 1907. Portrait: Parliament House.

ANDREWS, JOHN (1842-1932) was born in Somersetshire, England, and came to New Zealand in the *Timandra*. He was educated at a private school and afterwards at a night school in New Plymouth, while he worked with his father, an orchardist, at Hurdon. In the Taranaki war, after being several times rejected as too young, he served under Atkinson. He was present with the militia and volunteers at Wai-reka, Huirangi and Te Arei and employed in the convoy of stores. After the war he went to the South Island, visiting Gabriel's Gully and finding employment at sawmilling in Canterbury and the West Coast. Having married (1865) Emily Young (Aberdeen), he returned to Taranaki and took up land at Huirangi, where their child was baptised by Whiteley (1866). Andrews's first earnings were invested

## ANDREWS

in the purchase of draught bullocks. He was greatly interested in public affairs, being a member of the road board and cemetery board at Huirangi, the education board (1885), the hospital board and the Taranaki county council. He represented Grey and Bell in the Provincial Council (1873-75). Andrews died in Apr 1932.

*Taranaki P.C. Minutes*; *Taranaki Herald*, Apr 1932. Portraits: Taranaki Hist. Coll.; General Assembly Library.

ANDREWS, SAMUEL PAULL (1836-1916) was born in Isle of Wight, educated at private schools and learned the trade of plasterer. For ten years (1854-64) he was in Victoria, at first mining, and later as owner of a threshing plant. He then came to New Zealand, under contract to the Union Bank of Australia to plaster their buildings in Auckland, Nelson and Christchurch. He also plastered the Exhibition building in Dunedin (now part of the public hospital).

Settling in Christchurch, Andrews became a member of the Provincial Council, representing City of Christchurch (1872-75). He also represented Christchurch City in the House of Representatives from 1879, but was defeated for the North Christchurch seat in 1881. He sat on the Christchurch City Council for three years (1884-87). He was a prominent temperance advocate for over 40 years. He took an active part in establishing the Independent Order of Good Templars, being at one time chief templar, and he was interested in founding the Sons of Temperance, of which he was patriarch. For five years he was champion oarsman of Christchurch, and later became vice-president of the Christchurch sports association. Andrews married (1863) Elizabeth Ann, daughter of B. Gahagan. Until his death on 18 Oct 1916, he was a stone-quarry owner and contractor.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Lyttelton Times*, II Sep 1879; *The Press*, 19 Oct 1916. Portrait: Parliament House.

ANGAS, GEORGE FRENCH (1822-86) was born at Newcastle-on-Tyne, the son of George Fife Angas (1789-1879), who was associated with the South Australian Land Co., and whose information of the designs of the French (in Dec 1838) hastened the action of the Col-

## APATU

onial Office in gaining possession of New Zealand. Educated at Tavistock for business, his tastes were artistic, and he studied lithography and anatomical drawing. Going to South Australia in 1843, he accompanied Governor Grey on some of his explorations, making sketches and drawings. He came to New Zealand in 1844, and made many pictures in the North Island, notably about the Taupo district, which he used for his great work, *The New Zealanders Illustrated* (published in London in 1847), and *Savage Life and Scenes in Australia and New Zealand* (1847). Angas spent two years in South Africa doing similar work. He was secretary of the Australian Museum in Sydney from 1853, and returned to England in 1861, where he died on 8 Oct 1886.

*Austral. Encycl.*; Angas, *op. cit.*; Loyau; Hodder, *George Fife Angas*, 1891.

TE AO, TE PUKE (1834-86) a chief of Ngati-Raukawa, came early under missionary influence and was a capable, efficient sheep farmer at Otaki. He was M.H.R. for the Western Maori from 1884 till his death (on 23 Oct 1886).

His relative, ROPATA TE AO, who was the son of Te Aotuta-hanga and Te Raute, represented the Western Maori in Parliament from 1894-96. He was an elder of the Ngati-Raukawa and also belonged to Otaki. He died on 23 Apr 1908.

Cowan and Pomare, *Legends of the Maori*; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; *Te Korimako*, 15 Dec 1886; *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Aug 1884.

APATU, PAORA (?-1875), a Wairoa chief, the son of Te Apatu, was descended from Kahungunu and Ruatapuwhahine. When Pomare attacked the Ngati-Kahungunu in Kaimango pa (1818-19) the defenders stole the Ngapuhi canoes, in which Te Apatu put to sea to escape the vengeance of the northern taua. He was drowned on the Wairoa bar in 1854. Paora Apatu and Kopu (q.v.) in 1866 sold the land on which Wairoa stands. He stood out against the Hauhau invasion and strengthened his pa as soon as the emissaries entered the district. In the campaign against Te Kooti, Apatu and Whanga led their contingents in the pursuit from Wairoa (Jul 1868). They were present at Whiunore's first assault at Makaretu, though too late to take part. Apatu had not much in-

## ARATAPU

fluence and could muster only 25 men to accompany the friendlies in the 'Vaikaremoana expedition (1870). He died in Oct 1875.

Lambert; Cowan.

ARATAPU, RUKA (?-1904), an East Coast chief and one of the lieutenants of Ropata Wahawaha, first distinguished himself at the siege of Ngatapa in 1868. With Ropata and a small force he pursued the Hauhau close up to their defences and fought them muzzle to muzzle across the first wall. Climbing a tree, he fired again and again at the defenders, ignoring Ropata's orders to come down. He was also in the second attack on the stronghold. In 1870-71, with the rank of lieutenant, he served under Ropata and Porter in the long pursuit of Te Kooti. On 1 Sep 1871 he was prominent in the fight at Maungapohatu, where he and Lieutenant Large commanded the right centre party of 20. All but eight of the defenders were captured, Te Kooti having escaped down a cliff at the first alarm. Large and Aratapu were then left in garrison in the Opokere pa. Later they held the new military post at Hinau-Piwai, Maungapohatu, until Nov 1871, when all forces were withdrawn. His father was of the Ngati-Maniapoto tribe (King Country) and his mother of Ngati-Porou. He married Harata Parata, of the Ngati-Ira sub-tribe of Ngati-Porou, and his wife accompanied him on some of the campaigns in which he took part. After peace was re-established Ruka was engaged in trade and at one time kept a hotel near Port Awanui. He died at Gisborne on 13 Feb 1904.

Lambert; Cowan, *Wars*; do. *Sketches* (p); Sir Apirana Ngata (information).

ARKWRIGHT, FRANCIS (1846-1915) was born at Church Mayfield, Staffordshire, the son of the Rev Godfrey H. Arkwright, of Sutton Scarsdale, and great-great-grandson of Sir Richard Arkwright, the inventor. He was educated at Eton and held a commission for some time in the 100th Regiment (Royal Canadians). He was a J.P. for Warwickshire and the North riding of Yorkshire, and lord of the manor of Churchover, Warwick. In 1874 he was elected M.P. for East Derbyshire, which he continued to represent as a Conservative until 1880. He then came to New Zealand and took up a property near Marton, which he called Overton.

## ARMSTRONG

Arkwright took an interest in New Zealand politics and stood for Rangitikei on two occasions as a supporter of Seddon rather than as a Liberal. In 1887 he was defeated by R. C. Bruce and John Stevens, and in 1890 by D. H. MacArthur. At the nomination in 1887 he protested against the 'meaningless sham of nomination at the hustings: which he said had been abolished in England 20 years earlier, and he refused to address the electors first as required by the alphabetical order usually observed. Called to the Legislative Council in 1895, Arkwright moved the address-in-reply in the following session. He was a staunch supporter of Liberal legislation and made one of his best speeches in support of the old age pensions bill, warning members that though they might throw such a measure out again and again they would eventually be compelled to pass it. He was reappointed to the Council in 1902, and resigned four years later on going to reside in England. He died at Bournemouth on 1 Mar 1915.

Arkwright married first (1868) Louisa, daughter of Henry J. Milbanke, and second (1875) Evelyn Addington, daughter of Viscount Sidmouth. As a freemason he was the founder and first master of lodge Marton-Ruapehu (1885) and was grand master of the Wellington district (E.C.) from 1893-1900. During this period articles of recognition were made between the grand lodge of New Zealand and the united grand lodge of England. An accomplished French scholar, Arkwright made a translation of the memoirs of the Due de St Simon which was published after his death. He once hunted a pack of harriers in Derbyshire; was a keen fisherman and a first-rate shot with both gun and rifle.

Hansard, 13 Dec 1897; A. E. Currie (information); *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922.

ARMSTRONG, GEORGE (1822-1905) was born at St Johns, Nova Scotia. He first visited Banks Peninsula in command of a trading brig, and left his ship, the *Phoenix*, at Hawkes Bay in 1846. While in command of the Wellington schooner *Edward Stanley*, engaged in carrying stores for the troops at Wanganui, he was courtmartialled for taking his vessel to the rescue of a settler who was attacked by natives. Armstrong married Miss Cummerfield (Foxton) and settled in Akaroa, taking the Bruce hotel. Returning from a visit with his family to

## ARMSTRONG

America, he bought the schooner *Mary Louisa* at Sydney and traded between Wellington and Akaroa. He bought land at German Bay, and established the Mount Vernon homestead, afterwards acquiring other land from the Government. Armstrong represented Akaroa in the provincial Council (1861-62) and Wainui (1862). Early in 1866 he was elected to Parliament for the same constituency, which he represented till 1870. He died in 1905.

His son, GEORGE ARMSTRONG (1853-1932) was first elected in 1879 to the Akaroa borough council, on which he served for fifty years (for nearly 30 years of which he was mayor). He represented the borough on the North Canterbury hospital board and the Banks Peninsula power board, and was chairman of the Akaroa High School and a member of the Wainui road board. In 1879 he married Mary, daughter of Captain Robert Gray (Nelson). His death occurred on 6 Nov 1932.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; J. Hay; *Akaroa Mail*, 8 Nov 1932; *Wellington Times*, 7 Nov 1932.

ARMSTRONG, HENRY represented Wallacetown in the Southland Provincial Council in 1864; New River (1864-67), and Invercargill (1867-69). He was a member of the executive for almost the whole of that period and in 1868 was deputy-superintendent for J. P. Taylor.

*Southland P.C. Proc.*

ARMSTRONG, JOHN PHILIP (1828-1906) was born in Wexford, Ireland, and trained as a chemist in Dublin, where he qualified as a dentist. In 1848 he went to America, returning to Ireland in 1850, and emigrating almost at once to Victoria, where he spent ten years on the goldfields practising as a dentist. The gold discoveries at Gabriel's Gully attracted him to New Zealand and he established himself in Dunedin in 1861. He represented Mount Ida in the Provincial Council (1871-73 and 1875). Armstrong was a prominent freemason (a founder of lodge Dunedin) and was keenly interested in cremation. He published in the *Otago Daily Times* his reminiscences of *The Adventw'es of an Irish Pilgrim*. His death occurred on 11 Feb 1906.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Feb 1906.

ARNEY, SIR GEORGE ALFRED (1810-83) was born at Salisbury, England, in 1810, the seventh

## ARNEY

and youngest son of William Arney, of The Close, and Maria Charlotte, daughter of Thomas G. White, of Kew. His father was a lawyer with a good practice and steward of several large landed estates. Educated at Winchester and at Brasenose College, Oxford, Arney excelled in classics. He graduated B.A. in 1832 and M.A. the following year. He was admitted to Lincoln's Inn in 1829 and was called to the bar at Easter Term 1837. For some years he went the Western circuit and attained a leading position at the bar. In 1835 he married Harriett (d. 1842), daughter of Captain Thomas Parr, R.N.

After practising for more than twenty years, and being recorder of Winchester, Arney was appointed on 2 Sep 1857 to be Chief Justice of New Zealand, on the recommendation of Mr Justice Coleridge. When he arrived at Auckland early in 1858 by the *Gertrude*, he was the only judge in the colony. Arney was an able lawyer, absolutely impartial, a man of great refinement and a Christian gentleman; modern in his outlook, gentle almost to timidity; a lover of the classics and art. Under him the New Zealand courts led the way in the fusion of law and equity. Immediately on his arrival in New Zealand he was called to the Legislative Council. He intervened in debate rarely, but always with a sense of conviction and earnestness. In his first session he protested against the Government's expecting the Council to come to a decision without sufficient information, and objected to 'holding a position something between a registration officer and a printer's devil' (6 Jul 1858). He spoke chiefly on legal measures, of which in those days there were many, and on 13 Aug 1861 persuaded the Council to reaffirm a resolution of 1856 that judges of the supreme court should not be removable except by Her Majesty or on an address from both houses of Parliament, and that judges should be appointed only on the recommendation of a judge of the superior court in England. One of his most noteworthy speeches in Parliament was delivered on 30 Aug 1860 in a debate on the Maori war. In a dignified and impassioned plea for social justice to the Maori he declared: 'I should hold the entire province of Taranaki hardly worth the cost of one year's contest.'

In 1862 Arney was knighted. He was absent from the Council for two consecutive sessions, and early in 1866 he resigned his seat. In 1873 he was for a few months administrator of the

## ARNOLD

government. On 31 Mar 1875 he retired on a pension, and on the eve of his departure for England he received a flattering testimonial of esteem from the citizens of Auckland and from the Provincial Council. Sir George on returning to England lived chiefly at Torquay, and continued to take a lively interest in colonial matters. By the death in 1879 of his brother, Colonel Arney (who was in New Zealand with the 58th Regiment), Arney inherited considerable property. He died on 7 Apr 1883, and was buried in Salisbury Cathedral.

*N.Z.P.D.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *App. H.R.*, 1874, A5; University Registry, Oxford; Morton; *N.Z. Herald*, 31 Aug 1865, 11 Apr 1883. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

ARNOLD, JAMES FREDERICK (1859-1929) was born at St Peter's Port, Guernsey, the son of Julius Arnold, a lawyer, with whom he came to New Zealand in 1864. In 1875 he was apprenticed as a clicker in the bootmaking industry in Christchurch. There he remained till 1882, when he took an engagement with Sargood, Son and Ewen, in Dunedin:

In Christchurch Arnold was an active member of friendly societies, including the L.O.G.T. and the A.O.F. In 1890 the bootmakers' union agreed to admit clickers to membership, and Arnold attended the first federal conference at Wellington. In 1891 he distinguished himself as a debater in a conference with employers, and for some years thereafter he presided at such meetings. In 1896 he conducted the bootmakers' disputes before the conciliation board and in the Arbitration Court subsequently he successfully raised the question of jurisdiction. In 1898 Arnold was elected president of the union, which he represented for a time on the Workers' Political committee and the trades and labour council. Elected to Parliament in 1899 as one of the representatives of Dunedin City, he sat continuously (for Dunedin City 1899-1905, Dunedin South 1905-08, Dunedin Central 1908-II), until he was defeated by Sir Charles Statham. For some years he was chairman of the labour bills committee. Arnold was a member of the Mornington school committee, and the school committees' association; of the Mornington borough council (for six years); and of the executive of the Dunedin technical classes' association. For some years before his death (on 10 Jul 1929) he was officer in charge of the labour bureau at Timaru. He married (1884) Isabella Lawden.

## ASHCROFT

*N.Z.P.D.*, 30 Jul 1929; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 11 Jul 1929.

ARNOLD, THOMAS (1823-1900), a son of Dr Arnold, of Rugby, was born at Laleham, Middlesex, when his father was rector there. Educated at Winchester and Rugby, he was a contemporary of Thomas Hughes and at University College, Oxford, of Clough, Jowett and Shairp. He graduated in 1845 and commenced to read law, but accepted a post in the Colonial Office (1847). In 1848 he came to New Zealand in the *John Wickliffe*, expecting to take up land purchased by his father from the New Zealand Company. He exchanged his father's sections at Makara for land on the Porima road, but the trustees forbade the exchange. On the advice of Domett he started a school in Nelson, but was soon attracted to Tasmania by the offer of a position as inspector of schools (1849). His book, *Passages in a Wandering Life*, published in 1900, gives interesting sidelights on New Zealand society in the forties. Becoming a follower of the Oxford Movement, Arnold left Tasmania for England in 1856 and joined the Roman Catholic church. He was professor of English literature at the Roman Catholic University in Dublin. There he wrote his *Manual of English Literature, Historical and Critical*. He followed Cardinal Newman to Edgbaston, teaching at the Birmingham Oratory School. In 1882 he was elected a fellow of the Royal University of Ireland, and appointed professor of English in University College, St Stephen's Green. Arnold brought out editions of many English classics. He died on 12 Nov 1900. His eldest daughter was the novelist, Mrs Humphrey Ward.

*D.N.B.*; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; D. Cowie in *NZ. Railways Magazine*, Jan 1937.

ASHCROFT, JAMES (1834-1911) was born and educated in London, and for fourteen years worked in the mercantile firm of Redfern, Alexander and Co. He came to New Zealand in the *Kensington* (1862) and after a year with Peacock and Co., Christchurch, he was eleven years in business as a grain and produce merchant in Oamaru. He represented the town in the Otago Provincial Council (1869-70). For five years he was with Cargill and Co. and the National Mortgage Co., in Dunedin, and he then joined the *Otago Daily Times*, which he edited (1878-83). Appointed official assignee,

## ASHWELL

he was stationed in Dunedin for nine years, and in Wellington until he retired (1908). Over 3,000 bankruptcies came under his supervision. A member of the Church of England, Ashcroft was closely associated with the Sunday school movement, and was a member of the diocesan synod of Otago. His publications include a collection of *Fugitive Poems* on local topics, and two short pamphlets on *Ritualism* and *Auriferous Resources of Otago and Southland*. He died on 23 May 1911.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Paul; Ashcroft, *op. cit.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 23 May 1911.

ASHWELL, BENJAMIN YATES (1810-83), a frail youth, joined the Church Missionary Society at the age of 21, spent two years in the training institution at Islington and then proceeded as a lay missionary to Sierra Leone (1833). The climate reacted unfavourably on his frail physique and his high strung temperament, and he was shortly ordered back to England, on the advice of Kissling (q.v.).

In 1835, with his wife, he sailed for New Zealand, arriving on 23 Dec. His fellow missionaries did not appreciate Ashwell's mercurial temperament, and he was not considered a likely missionary to have a separate charge. On his own invitation he took up his residence amongst the lawless community at Russell, where he ministered not without success. When he joined the Rev R. Maunsell (q.v) at Waikato Heads his temperament provoked hostility, and it was a year before the natives would build him a separate house. When he was at length given a station at Taupiri, five miles north of Ngauwahia, his courage, zeal, enterprise and self-sacrifice, and unremitting sympathy for the Maori yielded results beyond all expectations. Impetuous and eccentric, he held a privileged position amongst the Maoris. He could say and do as he wished, and even persuaded Maori parents to entrust their children as boarders to the care of himself and Mrs Ashwell. In 1839 he chose a site at Te Awamutu for a mission station, and later in the year opened the mission at Otawhao (Jul 1839). He had immediate success with the Ngati-Ruru tribe, converting to Christianity the chief Mokorou (as Riwai) and inducing a section of the tribe to establish a Christian pa. In 1841 Ashwell was succeeded by Morgan (who had been for six years on the vVaihou at Matamata and at Rotorua). Ordained deacon (1848),

## ATKINSON

he was admitted to priest's orders at St Paul's, Auckland, on 22 May 1853. Ashwell later maintained a mission at Kaitotehe, opposite Taupiri, until the outbreak of the war compelled him to retire to Auckland (1863). He was one of the few who could return to their stations afterwards, but he devoted most of his later years to service at the Auckland hospital, the gaol and the old men's refuge, and to the welfare of Maori lads attending St Stephen's school. Ashwell died at Auckland on 29 Sep 1883.

Forst; Morton; W. Williams; Sherrin and Wallace (p); Davis; *Southern Cross*, 22 Apr 1867; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Oct 1883.

ATKINSON, ARTHUR RICHMOND (1863-1935) was born in New Plymouth, the only son of A. S. Atkinson (q.v.), and nephew of Sir Harry Atkinson. He attended Nelson College (1870-78) where he won the Newcombe Scholarship (1874) and was head of the school (1878). He went to Clifton College (England) with a scholarship, and in 1882 entered Corpus Christi College, Oxford, where he won the open classical scholarship. In 1887 he was awarded his B.A. degree. He was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn in the same year and returned to New Zealand.

After serving his apprenticeship in law offices in Nelson and Dunedin, and acting as secretary to his uncle (Mr Justice Richmond) for a year, Atkinson began to practise in Wellington with C. B. Morison, and later on his own account. He sat in the House of Representatives as member for South Wellington (1899-1902). He was an active critic of the Liberal Government and questioned the policy of sending troops to South Africa, thus losing his seat. For some years he served on the Wellington City Council and on the Victoria College council (1912-33). He was a prominent member of the New Zealand Alliance, being president for a term (1920-22). A writer of distinction, Atkinson was also a journalist. He was a regular contributor to the *Evening Post* for more than 25 years, and to the *Round Table*, and he was New Zealand correspondent of the *Morning Post* (1907-II) and of *The Times* (1911-21). He died on 26 Mar 1935.

Atkinson married first (1900) a daughter of Professor T. Kirk. She died in 1921. In 1923 he married Emma Maud Banfield (1869-1931) who was born in South Vales, educated at a

## ATKINSON

convent in Bruges and trained as a nurse at St. Bartholomew's Hospital, London. She was superintendent of the Philadelphia Polydnic Hospital, U.S.A. (1895-1910), served (1914-15) with a British Red Cross unit in France, was appointed matron of the Lord Derby war hospital at Warrington, and in 1918 matron of the British war hospital at Rouen. (R.R.C. 1919).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Mar 1935; *Nelson Coli. a.B. Reg.: Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 27 Mar 1935 (p); *Evening Post*, 24 Sep 1931, 26 Mar 1935.

ATKINSON, ARTHUR SAMUEL (1833-1902) was born in the north of England and educated at Blackheath. He came to New Zealand with his brother, H. A. Atkinson (q.v.) in 1853 in the *Sir Edward Paget* and settled in the neighbourhood of New Plymouth. During the war of 1860 he served in the Taranaki volunteers under his brother, and when peace came he became editor and part proprietor of the *Taranaki Herald*. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell (1864-69) and of Parliament for Omata (1866-68), resigning for private reasons. He had, in fact, decided to prosecute his law studies, and for this purpose went to Nelson as secretary to Mr Justice Richmond. There he finished his legal education, was admitted (1871), and soon after joined the firm of Fell and Atkinson. He practised there until his death (on 10 Dec 1902). Atkinson was a leading member of the Nelson Philosophical Society. (See A. R. ATKINSON).

*Taranaki P.C. Proc. and Ga.: Parltry Record; Cycl. N.Z.*, v; 'Vells. Portrait: Parliament House.

ATKINSON, SIR HARRY ALBERT (1831-92) was born at Broxton, Cheshire, on 1 Nov 1831, the son of John Atkinson, an architect and engineer. While he was a child his father removed to Hunworth, Durham, and then to Frindsbury, Kent, where the boy was brought up. He went to the Rochester School and to Blackheath, leaving in 1850 to pursue an intensive course of reading in history, public administration, theology and colonial affairs.

An elder brother, William Atkinson (1826-74), had gone earlier to New Zealand and recommended his younger brothers to follow. Their father had independent views on education, and when his boys contemplated emigrating to New Zealand with their friends the

## ATKINSON

Richmonds, he had them taught useful trades, such as carpentry, tinsmithing, bootmaking and blacksmithing. Harry and Arthur sailed with the Richmonds in the *Silo Edward Paget*, which reached Auckland in May 1853. Chartering a 14-ton cutter, the *Three Bmthers*, they reached New Plymouth in Aug. Atkinson declined an offer of employment with a bootmaker in the town, and joined his relatives, who were farming small sections on the Carrington road. Their eight farms now aggregated 1,000 acres. Atkinson built his homestead, which he called Hunworth, of timber sawn by himself, and spent strenuous years felling and clearing, fencing and ploughing. Though suffering from asthma, he did not spare himself, and had the satisfaction of creating a pleasant home (which is still standing) in picturesque surroundings. In 1856 he married Amelia Jane Skinner, daughter of a banker in Rochester.

Before they had been long in Taranaki the native question began to assume an alarming aspect. From being enthusiastic and industrious farmers, on cordial terms with the pakeha, the Maori became divided over land disputes, in which the pakehas inevitably were involved. Acting on the advice of Major Lloyd (q.v.), who foresaw that sooner or later they must come into conflict with their Maori neighbours, the settlers commenced military training under his orders. Atkinson in May 1857 was elected to the Taranaki Provincial Council (for Grey and Bell), and was already marked out as a leader amongst the men of action in the province. Towards the end of 1858 the Taranaki Rifle Volunteer company was formed, and he was elected to hold a commission. Punctual, resourceful, prudent, and a master of bushcraft, he was given command of No. 2 company as soon as the war began. His volunteers speedily gained the upper hand in numerous skirmishes and running engagements with the natives. They were first under fire at the battle of Waireka (28 Mar 1860) where they behaved with great steadiness and intrepidity, holding the advanced position above the Waireka stream, and withdrawing to Ornata at nightfall in good order with their dead and wounded. In Aug. while leading a force of volunteers and militia to bring in the property and livestock from threatened homesteads, Atkinson ran into a sharp engagement with a marauding party of natives. At the attack on Mahoetahi (6 Nov) he demanded a post of honour in the

## ATKINSON

attack for his volunteers, who were smarting under the criticisms of the general. They accordingly formed the first line of the attack with the 65th regiment, and acquitted themselves with great distinction. They were also present at the engagements of Kaihihi and Matarikoriko. During this campaign most of the farms were raided by the Maori and many homesteads were burned. Atkinson's was set on fire but escaped destruction.

In Jun 1861 Atkinson was elected unopposed to represent Grey and Bell in Parliament, and he readied Auckland on the day after the defeat of the Stafford Government. On the outbreak of the new war in 1863 Atkinson's great experience in the field was utilised in command of the Forest Rangers, formed in Jul 1863 with an effective strength of 150. At Allen's Hill, Potokou (10 Oct) the Rangers doubled for a distance of four miles to support the regulars. In Mar 1864 they distinguished themselves at Kaitake. On 6 Apr at Ahuahu they rescued the killed and wounded after the regulars had suffered a reverse, and at the end of the month they took part in the skirmishes at Sentry Hill. In Sep they were present at successful operations at Manutahi and Mataitawa. Atkinson was frequently mentioned in despatches; received the thanks of the Government and was promoted major. Colonel Warre described him as 'a first-rate guerilla leader:

During these years Atkinson had been twice deputy-superintendent of the province, but in Feb 1864 he withdrew from provincial politics. While all the volunteers under his command received land grants from the Government, Atkinson alone of the officers received none. When Weld took office, in Nov 1864, pledged to a policy of self-reliance in the conduct of the war, he chose Atkinson as being eminently fitted by character and experience to inaugurate the policy as Defence Minister. During the year Atkinson accompanied the expedition which established Brassey at Pipiriki in the teeth of the Hauhau invasion of the Whanganui district (May 1865). A few months later the Weld ministry resigned office and Atkinson, seeing no hope of keeping Stafford out of office, withdrew at the dissolution (Jan 1866) to devote his attention to his own affairs. His wife died on 22 Jun 1865 (aged 33). When Sir John Richardson resigned the town of New Plymouth seat early in 1867 Atkinson was

## ATKINSON

elected unopposed (29 Apr). He signalled his return to the House by moving a series of resolutions on the militia and volunteer system, and later in the session he brought in a bill to amend the volunteer act of 1865. He considered the British troops should be sent away at once and a militia should be trained for home defence. Atkinson's authority on military matters and native affairs now stood very high. His speech on native affairs in the session of 1868 is noteworthy. As a leader in the field he could not yet be dispensed with, and when the reverse at Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu created a crisis in the conduct of the war against Titokowaru in the west and Te Kooti in the east Haultain (the Defence Minister) considered Atkinson and Whitmore equally qualified for the post of commander-in-chief. The fact that Atkinson intended to pay a visit to Great Britain decided the matter. He left the colony in 1868.

'When he returned to New Zealand by the *Halciane* in 1871 the colonial troops under Whitmore had suppressed the enemy in the west and driven Te Kooti finally into the bush. Taking advantage of a vacancy for the Egmont seat, Atkinson defeated Moorhouse (5 Oct 1872) and thus regained the floor of the House. He took a new interest also in provincial matters in the early seventies. As a settler in a small province impoverished by war, he realised that it had little hope of a prosperous future, and as early as 1867 he had favoured a permissive measure to allow the small provinces to unite with their larger neighbours. He was even prepared to do away with all the provinces if he could see a practicable scheme of local government. Six years later, with the abolition question well advanced, he contested the superintendency of Taranaki against Carrington and Brown, promising that if elected he would sit in council and administer the office of superintendent without the help of a paid secretary. Carrington was elected on 10 Nov 1873 (Carrington 324 votes; Atkinson 276; Brown 172). A fortnight later Atkinson was elected to the Council at the top of the poll for his old Grey and Bell constituency (25 Nov). In May 1874 he became provincial secretary, but on accepting Vogel's invitation to join the ministry (Sep 1874) he relinquished his provincial post. Vogel departed at once for England, and as Pollen was in the Legislative

ATKINSON

Council Atkinson became the virtual leader of the Government. He was thus burdened not only with the Treasury but with the very onerous task of piloting through Parliament the bills for the abolition of the provinces and contingent legislation to inaugurate the new centralised system (notably the financial arrangements, the counties, the roads and bridges and the harbours bills). He was in those days at the zenith of his power; his reputation high and his health as yet unimpaired by the strain to which it was subjected. Beginning with no special knowledge of finance, he mastered the subject by sheer energy and determination. In his first financial statement Atkinson astounded the House by his grip of finance and his thorough knowledge of accounts, and during the next 16 years his reputation survived not only the criticism of an astute opposition, but also the vicissitudes of a severe depression and drastic retrenchment. Gisborne comments on the remarkable political development of Atkinson at this period, due mainly to his self-reliance, his great moral courage and unbounded faith in his own powers. He had more than average ability, great tenacity of purpose, audacity and untiring energy.

Administering the Treasury with little intermission for 10 years, Atkinson was the main-spring of the Government in its various combinations. When Pollen became Premier (Jul 1875) Atkinson openly assumed the office of Treasurer. He continued under Vogel, and from Sep 1876 to Oct 1877 in his own ministry. From 1876 to 1884 he was (except for a short interval) continuously Colonial Treasurer. Atkinson was still at the Treasury in the Hall ministry (1879) and he continued when the cabinet was reformed under Whitaker (1882). It was in this latter period that he brought forward, in the form of resolutions in the House (10 Jul 1882), a proposal for national insurance based on the scheme of the Rev William Lewery Blackley (of Hampshire). The resolutions, which affirmed that provision should be made by national insurance against sickness and pauperism, were roundly denounced by Sir George Grey as a blow at Christianity, and the House received them coldly. In spite of the condemnation of a political committee in his own electorate and of the warm hostility of the friendly societies, he persevered with his campaign, even after he had again become

ATKINSON

Premier in 1883. When he returned to office as Premier in 1887 it was to a bleak vista of lean years ahead, with inevitable economies and retrenchments which forbade him entertaining new obligations in social service; and it was left to a Liberal administration a decade later to put old age pensions on the statute book. Though Atkinson was definitely a social reformer, the stern demands of budget-making were paramount; he was forced to the bitter alternative of cutting down expenditure when the country was in its greatest need.

Atkinson's health was now steadily declining. In 1889 he paid a visit to Tasmania, but returned without improvement. At the elections in Dec 1890 his Government was defeated. Unable to bear up longer under the heavy burden of political leadership, even in opposition, he resigned from the House and was appointed Speaker of the Legislative Council. In 1891 he visited Australia as one of the New Zealand delegates to the Federal Conference. He took an active part in the debates and warmly supported Grey in the effort to get introduced into the federation proposals a plebiscite on the one-man-one-vote principle. It was defeated by 21 votes to eight. When he returned to New Zealand it was obviously merely to await the end, which came dramatically at the commencement of the session of 1892. When the Legislative Council adjourned after paying tribute to members who had died (Whitaker one of them), Atkinson retired to his own room with the Hons R. Oliver and G. B. Morris. To a remark about his own health he replied: 'I may look well, but I have my marching orders. I may die at any moment.' He collapsed shortly afterwards and died peacefully (28 Jun 1892).

There is good warrant for the statement of James Collier that Atkinson was at heart a socialist. Under a stern exterior, and driven by circumstances to scan jealously every shilling of public expenditure, he nevertheless kept himself abreast of modern thought in the social sphere and was amenable to suggestion from advanced thinkers. The influence of James Hinton, if it is really appreciable, was undoubtedly less than that of Henry George, interpreted to him probably by F. W. Frankland (q.v.). Atkinson in his early ministerial days was a staunch freeholder, and in 1879 abolished Ballance's land tax in favour of a property tax.

AUBERT

On the other hand, he was later a strong advocate of Rolleston's perpetual leasing system as regards crown lands in preference to the sale of the freehold. His advocacy of national insurance over a period of three years was admitted even by his critics to be sincere. He also favoured the adoption of the Hare system of voting for the representation of minorities. Collier says that in 1886 Atkinson declared his belief that some day all undertakings then in private hands would be taken over by the state. He was an advocate also of temperance, and at a temperance meeting in 'Wellington (1 Feb 1884) expressed the opinion that in social questions of this sort they would do little until women had more direct influence. On the liquor question they should have a vote on the same footing as men and they should not be confined to this question. Atkinson never enjoyed popularity. He was abrupt in speech; rather stern in demeanour; relentless in criticism. He had none of the arts which make for political popularity; but he had an insatiable capacity for work, great power of concentration and a mastery of detail which, even lacking readiness and gracefulness of speech, gave him superiority in debate.

As a freemason Atkinson became district grand master in Wellington under the English constitution in 1886. Though in sympathy with the formation of the New Zealand constitution he felt bound at first, as the representative of the grand master in England (the Prince of Wales), to abstain from promoting the separation, and he advised Lord Onslow against accepting the position of grand master.

*Parltry Record; Taranaki P.C. minutes and Gaz.; N.Z.P.D., pass.* (notably 10 Jul 1882, 29 Jul 1892); information from Henry Smetham (Strood, Kent), Misses M. and E. Richmond, and H. T. Atkinson; James Collier in *The Press*, 13 Nov 1909; Ethne Tosswill (unpublished thesis); Gudgeon (p); Rusden; Saunders (p); Gisborne (p); Cowan; M. S. Grace; *Nineteenth Century*, 1878, p. 834; *N.Z. Herald*, 31 Mar 1886, 29 Jan 1892 (p); *N.Z. Graphic*, 2, 9 Jul 1892 (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 21 Mar 1883; *Taranaki Herald*, 2 Feb, 15 Mar, 9 Jul 1884, 30 Sep 1874.

AUBERT, MARY JOSEPH (1835-1926) was born near Lyons, France, and was educated at the Benedictine abbey of La Rochette, afterwards studying chemistry and medicine at Lyons. She served as a nursing sister during

AUBREY

the Crimean war and with four others came to New Zealand with Bishop Pompallier in 1861. Not being members of any religious order, they stayed at first with the Sisters of Mercy in Auckland, studying the language and attending at the orphanage for Maori girls.

In 1871, the orphanage having been closed, Mother Aubert moved to Hawkes Bay to attend the poor and sick (principally Maori), operating from the mission house at Meanee. There she became noted for her spirit of self-sacrifice and tireless energy and for her researches into the curative properties of native herbs, the effects of which she had many opportunities of testing and observing. In 1883 she moved to Hiruharama, on the Wanganui river, where she established homes for foundlings and incurables in 1890. In 1885 she published a manual of Maori conversation. While there also she founded the order of the Daughters of Our Lady of Compassion. Beginning with six sisters under Mother Aubert, it gradually expanded into a strong order working in distressed by-paths of society, and was formally acknowledged and established by the Pope during Mother Aubert's visit to Rome about 1914.

Moving to Wellington in 1899, Mother Aubert commenced district nursing and in 1900 established the home for incurables in Buckle street, to which was added in 1904 a home for children. In 1908 she opened the Home of Compassion at Island Bay for the care of diseased and afflicted children. A home was also established at Auckland, all being free of debt at the time of her death (1 Oct 1926). Mother Aubert, during an absence from New Zealand of some years (1913-20), served in the nursing service in Italy during the Great War.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *The Dominion*, 19 Jun 1925; *Evening Post*, 2 Oct 1926 (P).

AUBREY, HARCOURT RICHARD (1818-96) was the son of Colonel H. Aubrey, of the Life Guards. As a young man he travelled widely in Europe, and in 1840 he came to New Zealand in the *London* as a survey assistant. He was attached to the party under Carrington which chose the site for the New Plymouth settlement (1841). In 1848 he was appointed sub-collector of customs at Hokianga, and in 1856 magistrate and collector at Whangarei and Kaipara. Retiring in 1880, he died on 30 May

## AUSTIN

1896. Aubrey wrote some interesting diaries of survey work. (See R. THOMPSON.)

Civil service records; Seffern; *Auckland Star*, 1 Jun 1896.

AUSTIN, SAMUEL (1829-1903) was born in Ireland and arrived in New Zealand with the 65th regiment in 1846. After serving through the war he took his discharge as a sergeant in 1859. He was a sergeant serving with the Wanganui native contingent in the West Coast campaign and was present at Veraroa pa and Opotiki (1865). At the capture of the Putahi pa (on 7 Jan 1866) he ran to the rescue of Lieut-colonel McDonnell, who was severely wounded, supported him during most of the action and carried him off the field under heavy fire. His conduct was witnessed by General Chute, and he was thanked publicly and recommended for the New Zealand Cross, which was duly awarded. Again at Keteonetea (17 Oct), when Captain William McDonnell was severely wounded and his men had fallen back on the main body, Austin came to the rescue and carried off McDonnell, who was on the point of being tomahawked. Austin was present also at Otapawa and Pungarehu (1866), Otautu and Porere (1869). He took his discharge (as quartermaster-sergeant) in 1870 and died at Wanganui (on 25 Jan 1903).

N.Z. Army records; Gudgeon; *Auckland Weekly News*, 27 Oct 1899 (p).

TE AWAITAIA, WIREMU NAERA (? 1796-1866) of Ngati-Mahanga, was a leading chief of the Waikato confederation and a close ally of Te Wherowhero (q.v.). Born at Waipa, he was the son of Te Kata and Pare-hina. When quite a young man he showed his prowess in the field by leading a taua which drove Ngati-Koata off their lands in revenge for the death of the daughter of Te Wehi. Te Awaitaia then occupied their land at Whaingaroa, making his pa at the foot of a woody headland. When Ngapuhi came to Kawhia to make war on Te Rauparaha, Te Awaitaia took part in the fighting. After the peace at Matakiki in 1822 he led a taua of 370 men against Taranaki. In one of the engagements he had a desperate single combat with the great chief Raparapa, whom he killed. He also accompanied Waikato south in 1831, and took a leading part in the battle at Pukerangiora, from which 340 prisoners were brought back.

## TE AWAITAIA

During a later campaign to Taranaki to obtain utu, Te Awaitaia was persuaded by a missionary to abandon fighting. He was one of the first converts, being baptised by the Rev J. Wallis at Whaingaroa about 1834, and taking the name of Wiremu Naera (William Naylor). Hearing of this event, Te Wherowhero lamented: 'I have lost my right arm.' Thenceforward Awaitaia was a firm friend of the pakeha, a zealous Christian with an unblemished character. He discarded eight of his nine wives; built the first church at Raglan and, with the help of Paul Muriwhenua, gained the release of Taranaki slaves held by the northern tribes. He journeyed to Taranaki to introduce the gospel, at once intervened to stop tribal fighting and musket warfare, and interposed in the fighting between Waikato and Ngati-Ruanui at Te Ruaki. He endeavoured to make peace at Kuititanga (1839) and is said to have proposed to Ngati-Awa that they should return to their lands in north Taranaki. While at Patoka in 1841 he tried to stop the hostilities between the Ngati-Tuwharetoa and Wiremu Kingi Matakatea. At the King meeting at Rangiriri (1857) Awaitaia objected to the movement and the flag but in speaking with the Governor at Auckland, he insisted on a separate nationality for the Maori.

When the Taranaki war broke out (1860) Te Awaitaia armed his people in defence of the settlers at Raglan. Taunted by the King natives and challenged to cross the Maungatawhiri, he replied disdainfully that he was the descendant of Muriwhenua, 'who was a constant eater of men in the olden time.' In 1862 he wished to make a road from Kawhia to the Waipa, which the King leaders strongly opposed. A small force of the 12th regiment reinforced him at Raglan and the settlers were not molested. On the outbreak of the Waikato war he offered his help to the Government to defend Auckland if necessary, and gave valuable assistance to the British forces by cutting a road through the bush from his lands at Raglan to the Waipa.

Te Awaitaia died at Raglan on 27 Apr 1866 and was succeeded by his nephew (Ketaraka Naera). Handsome, dignified and courteous, Awaitaia was a brave warrior, a sagacious counsellor and a faithful ally. His influence was less wide than that of Te Wherowhero.

Cowan, *Sketches* (P), and *Wars*; Gorst; Morley;

## TE AWE AWE

S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Angus (P); *Waka Maori*, 5 May 1866.

TE AWE AWE, PEETI (? 1820-84), a chief of Rangitane, was the Senu of Te Awe Awe, who was chief of the Raewera pa when Te Rauparaha came south from Taranaki and was saved from the massacre of Rangitane (by Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Toa) through the intervention of Tungia, who thus showed his gratitude for the saving of his own life by Te Awe Awe at Hotuiti (1823). Te Awe Awe sought revenge against the assailants and, returning almost immediately with a taua of Rangitane and Muaupoko, he killed 60 of the Ngati-Toa. Peeti Te Awe Awe was born about 1820. He took a leading part in demanding the Horowhenua district for Rangitane and Muaupoko in 1866, and in 1871 uttered a noteworthy curse against Te Whatanui. He died on 1 Jun 1884. A monument to him is in the Square at Palmerston North.

Buick, *Maoriawatu*; Bevan; J. G. Wilson.

AYLMER, WILLIAM JOSIAH (1802-83), born at Donaded Castle, county Kildare, Ireland, was the son of Sir Fenton Aylmer, 7th baronet. He was educated at the old college at Armagh and at Durham, and graduated M.A. at Dublin University. He was ordained to the ministry of the United Church of England and Ireland and shortly afterwards appointed to the family living at his native parish, where he was incumbent for 24 years. In 1830 he married Elizabeth Frances, daughter of the Rev Henry Lambert. During the famine of 1848 he endeared himself to people of all denominations by the fearless and self-sacrificing manner in which he devoted himself to relieving the suffering. His noble service was generously remembered when Aylmer resigned the living to proceed to New Zealand. Arriving in Canterbury by the *Lady Nugent* at the end of 1851 Aylmer was at once appointed incumbent of Akaroa (where he selected his 50 acres of land). The parish then included the whole of Banks Peninsula. Aylmer was elected to represent Akaroa in the first Provincial Council (1853) but was unable to

## AYSON

attend regularly and resigned (Nov 1855). He retired from the ministry in 1872, and thereafter lived quietly as a country gentleman. Aylmer took a keen interest in local matters and rendered great service to the Akaroa library, domain and horticultural society. He died on 9 Aug 1883.

His son, JUSTIN JOHN AYLMER (1832-85), was born at Donaded, Kildare, Ireland, and before coming to New Zealand was a cadet on the public works survey staff in the west of Ireland. In Canterbury he assisted J. C. Boys in surveying lands in Banks Peninsula. In 1853 he took up with S. Perceval the Hororata run and in 1861 took up a run on the Mataura river. In 1864 he was appointed warden on the goldfields, residing at Queenstown. Later he was warden and resident magistrate at Ross, and from 1872 magistrate at Akaroa. There he died on 10 Jan 1885.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Burke, *Peerage*; *Cycl. N.Z.*; *Lyttelton Times*, 10 Aug 1883, 11 Jan 1885.

AYSON, ALEXANDER (1814-95) was born at Glenshee, Perthshire. As a youth he joined the Gordon Highlanders and received his education in the regimental school. When his father bought him out of the army he entered the Normal school in Edinburgh, working in his spare time to make money for fees. Qualifying as a teacher either in English or in Gaelic, he became master of an English school at Lossiemouth. On the disruption he took the side of the Free Church and was appointed to its School at Urquhart. He was selected in 1856 as one of the first school teachers for the Otago colony and, being appointed to Tokomairiro school, he remained there 10 years. He then farmed at Warepa. When some of the family were able to earn a living he rejoined the teaching service, taking charge of the school at Tuturau (1871). In 1873 he went to Waiholo Gorge and in 1879 to Southbridge, where he remained till his retirement (1883). He died on 7 Oct 1895.

Ayson (p); Scholefield, *Tokomairiro H.S.*, 1856-1931 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 9 Oct 1895.

---

---

# B

---

---

BACOT, JOHN THOMAS WATSON (1821-88) was born in England, the son of an army surgeon who served in the Peninsula with the 1st Foot Guards. He graduated in medicine (M.R.C.S., Eng., 1843) and was appointed assistant surgeon to the 39th regiment in 1844 (Staff 1847; 2nd class surgeon 1852). During this time he served in India. Bacot came to New Zealand with the Fencibles and settled at Howick. He was elected one of the Pensioners Settlements representatives in Parliament and obtained leave from his commanding officer (Colonel Kenny, M.L.C.) to attend the session. This was the basis of a question of privilege raised by Carleton (16 May 1854). Bacot was an independent, outspoken member, and took a stand in Parliament which he well knew would lose him his seat. He was defeated at the general election (26 Oct 1855). In 1862 Bacot was posted to the 89th regiment, with which he again served in India. (Surg-major 1864; staff 1865; half-pay, with honorary rank of deputy inspector-general 1870). He died on 10 Oct 1880. Bacot was the author of *The Bahamas; a Sketch* (1869) and contributed many articles to the *Medical Times* and *Gazette*.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 16 May 1854; War Office records.

BAGNALL, LEMUEL JOHN (1844-1917) was the son of the Hon George Bagnall (1818-89), of New Glasgow, Prince Edward island, Canada, and came with his father to Auckland in 1864. He engaged in the timber trade at the Thames, and with his brothers purchased a sawmill on the Waihou river (1878) which they operated till 1912. Bagnall represented Thames in the Auckland Provincial Council (1873-75), and was a member of the Thames harbour board; a member and chairman of the county council and of the Auckland education board. and a

member of the land board. Removing in 1903 to Auckland, he became a member of the City Council forthwith, and remained so till 1910, when he was elected mayor. He served on the hospital board; on the Auckland district conciliation board (of which he was chairman) and on the Auckland licensing committee, the Grammar School board of governors and the Auckland University College council. Amongst the companies of which he was director were the Kauri Timber Co. (chairman), the New Zealand Insurance, Milne and Choyce (chairman), and the Auckland Farmers' Freezing Co. Bagnall died" on 30 Apr 1917.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 May 1917.

BAGSHAW, JOHN CHARLES, (1820-99) was educated at Brasenose College, Oxford, graduating M.A., and was ordained priest (1846). He came to New Zealand in 1856 as headmaster of Nelson College, which position he held till 1858. He had an austere disposition and was a strict disciplinarian. Bagshaw attended the first general synod (1859), and at that and other synods he had strong differences of opinion with Bishop Selwyn. He returned to England and was presented with a living by Selwyn. In 1876 he became vicar of Osbournby, Folkingham, Lincolnshire, where he died in May 1899.

*Nelson Coli. Register*; Crockett; Jacobs.

BAIGENT, EDWARD (1812-92) was born at Wendlesham, Sussex, and was brought up as a mechanic, but afterwards took to farming. He came to Nelson by the *Clifford* (1842) and started farming at Wakefield. There in 1846 he erected a Hourmill with machinery which he had brought from England. Some years later he disposed of the mill and took to saw-

## BAIGENT

milling, in which he was engaged for the rest of his life. Baigent represented Waimea South in the Nelson Provincial Council for the whole of the provincial period (1853-76), being a private member throughout. In 1867 he was elected to Parliament for Waimea, which he represented on two occasions (1867-70 and 1876-79). He was a member also of the Waimea road board and other local bodies. Baigent died on 9 Nov 1892.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv.

BAIGENT, HENRY (1844-1929) was born at Wakefield, Nelson, the son of Edward Baigent (q.v.). Educated there, he joined his father in the sawmilling and timber business. In 1865 he moved from Wakefield to Nelson. He was a member of the Nelson City Council from 1893 and was mayor in 1901-04 and again in 1905-06. He was chairman of the hospital board and the Permanent Building Society, and a member of various other organisations. He died on 31 Aug 1929.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 2 Sep 1929.

BAILLIE, WILLIAM DOUGLAS HALL (1827-1922) was born at New Brunswick, Canada, of a very old Scottish family which had been domiciled in Ireland for many years. Educated at the Royal Military college at Woolwich, he was commissioned at the age of 19 as an ensign in the 24th foot, with which he served for six years in India under Sir Hugh Gough and Sir Colin Campbell. He was present at the battle of Chillianwallah. Returning to England in 1853, he was promoted captain and appointed commandant at Chichester. He resigned from the army to come to New Zealand in the *Oriental* (1857) and settled in Marlborough. He had a run of 5,000 acres on the Wairau, which he disposed of after a few years and settled at Para, near Picton. Baillie maintained his interest in military matters in New Zealand and was for some years colonel commanding the Marlborough forces. In 1881 he took part in the expedition to Parihaka.

He took a keen interest in local government. In 1860 he was elected to the Provincial Council, in which he represented Wairau Valley (1860-65) and Tuamarina (1869-76). He was

## BAIN

the second Superintendent of the province (1861-63), his term being one of the most stormy in the very troubled provincial history of Marlborough. After being defeated for the superintendency in 1863 he was elected speaker, holding that position for two years. He was several times a member of the executive between 1863 and 1865, and deputy superintendent in the latter year. His firm control of affairs and conciliatory manner were of considerable service. He was called in 1861 to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (25 Feb 1922), and for 23 years chairman of committees. He was the last life member of the Council. Baillie was for 20 years a member of the Marlborough education board. He married (1854) Hannah Maria Ann, daughter of Major Greensill, commissary of ordnance.

*Marlborough P.C. Minutes and Gaz.; Parltry Record; N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1922; *Col. Gent.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Marlborough Express*, 27 Feb 1922. Portrait: Parliament House.

BAIN, JAMES WALKER (1841-99) was born in Edinburgh and educated at the Free Church Normal School there. He trained as a compositor with Constables and Oliver and Boyd, and after coming to New Zealand in the *Jura* (1858) he was employed for two years in Auckland. In 1861 he established (with Smallfield) the *Southland News and Foveaux Straits Herald*, which a few years later they sold. Bain paid a visit to Scotland, and on his return to Southland in 1868 he again acquired a partnership in the *News* and afterwards in the *Southland Times*, which he held until it was purchased by a company. In 1883 Bain was elected to the Invercargill borough council and in the following year he was mayor. He was president of the Southland Building society from its inception in 1869 for 30 years; a director of the board of the Scottish and New Zealand Investment Co. from 1876 (chairman from 1890), president of the chamber of commerce, and a member (and at times chairman) of the High School board of governors, the education board and the hospital board. He was also an Otago school commissioner. In 1879 Bain was elected to Parliament for Invercargill, defeating Feldwick by two votes. Defeated by Feldwick at the next election (1881), he contested both

## BAIN

Awarua and Invercargill at later elections, but without success. He died on 29 Sep 1899.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Southland Times*, 12 Nov 1912, 30 Sep 1899, 23 Jan 1931; *Lyttelton Times*, 12 Sep 1879. Portrait: Parliament House.

BAIN, JOHN WATSON (1822-67) was born in Scotland. After holding responsible positions in the London publishing houses of Smith Elder and Co., and Spalding and Hodge, he came to New Zealand in the *Lalla Rookh* in 1849 and commenced business in Auckland as a general merchant and commission agent. He was afterwards Lloyd's agent in Auckland and at times officiated as consul for the United States and for Hawaii. Bain was elected to the first Auckland Provincial Council for Auckland Suburbs, which he represented during 1853-55. He was again in the Council, for Auckland East, from 1865-67. He was 12 years a justice of the peace and two years chairman of the Auckland city board. He died on 3 Dec 1867.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; London Gaz.*, 11 Mar 1851; *Southern Cross*, 4 Dec 1867.

BAKER, CHARLES (1804-75) left England in Jun 1827 and joined the C.M.S. mission at Bay of Islands on Jan 1828. In 1830 he was stationed at Kerikeri, when it was decided that he should accompany Clarke in opening a new station at Waimate. He was afterwards stationed at Paihia, Waikare, Tolaga Bay and Tauranga. Retiring to Auckland in 1865, he died there on 6 Feb 1875.

His son, CHARLES BAKER (1828-65), who was stationed with the Rev R. Taylor at Putiki and studied for the church, was twelve years in the Native Secretary's department and was afterwards resident magistrate at Waiapu, Hawkes Bay and Tauranga.

*N.Z. Herald*, 7 Feb 1875; *Wellington Independent*, 7 Oct 1865.

BAKER, LOUISA ALICE (*nee* Dawson). For some years Mrs Baker contributed to the *Otago Witness* under the pen name of 'Alice'. In 1894 she went to London to publish her first novel, *A Daughtel' of the King*, which was followed in steady succession by 15 others, including *The Majesty of Man* (1895), *In Golden Shackles* (1896) and *Wheat in the Ear* (1898).

*Who was Who; Annals N.Z. Lit.; N.Z. Herald*, 7 Jun 1902.

## BAKER

BAKER, RICHARD (1810-54) was the son of the coroner of Middlesex. As a young man he took part in the civil war in Portugal and was present at the operations before Santarem. He received the first and second class orders of the Tower and Sword. Participating thereafter in the war in Spain (with the rank of major), he was awarded the order of St Ferdinand of the first class. Baker joined the New Zealand Company's expedition in the *Aurora*, arriving in Wellington in 1840. Deans describes him as a gentlemanly young man for whom he acted as second in duels. As the magistrate appointed under the settlers' provisional constitution in 1840, Baker presided at the trial of Captain Pearson, of the *Integrity*, which was held to be illegal and which led to the disbandment of the council. Baker had to proceed to Sydney to defend himself in an action brought by Pearson for damages for false imprisonment. He was a major of volunteers when the Wellington settlers enrolled for defence after the Wairau affair, and held the same rank in the Thorndon militia at the time of the disturbances in 1845. He married (1840) Miss J. E. Morgan, and died on 22 Dec 1854. (See W. M. BANNATYNE.)

E. J. Wakefield; Grimstone; Ward; Beauchamp; Deans; Buick, *Waitangi*.

BAKER, SHIRLEY WALDEMAR (1836-1903), a son of the Rev George Baker, a Church of England clergyman, was born in London, and educated for the ministry. Emigrating to Australia, he joined the Wesleyan church, and in 1860 was sent to Tonga by the Australian 'Wesleyan conference. There he laboured for 20 years, for 10 years of which he was leader. He resigned to become adviser to King George of Tonga. As Premier, Baker did much to promote the liberty of the people; he compiled a code of laws; constructed roads and public buildings; formulated a constitution (1875) with a legislative assembly of hereditary chiefs and representatives of the people, and made education free and compulsory. Trouble arising between the Church and the Government, he established the Free Church of Tonga. Baker succeeded in getting Tonga acknowledged by England, Germany and the United States as an independent kingdom, but his administration was not acceptable to all parties, and an attempt was made to assassinate him. In 1890

## BAKEWELL

he was deported by the High Commissioner for the Western Pacific. For some years he lived in Auckland in retirement, but later returned to Tonga and carried on religious work until his death on 10 Nov 1903.

Mennell; Beatrice Shirley Baker, *Memoirs of the Rev Dr Shirley Waldemar Baker; N.Z. Herald*, 2 Dec 1903.

BAKEWELL, ROBERT HALL (1831-1908) was born in Manchester, the son of a Congregational minister. On completing his surgical course at Guy's Hospital, London, he took his M.D. degree at St Andrews University. He later became a member of the Royal College of Surgeons (England), and L.S.A. (London). In 1852 he joined the Army Medical Corps and spent two years in the Crimea during the war, from which he was invalided. For the following five years he served as medical officer in Trinidad. After practising in London for a few months he came to New Zealand in 1873, where he practised in Dunedin, Ross and Hokitika before settling in Auckland (1888). In the South African war (1899-1901) he served as medical officer to a New Zealand contingent. Bakewell was a frequent contributor to the medical press and was the New Zealand correspondent of one of the American medical journals. He wrote on the female franchise question in New Zealand and in 1894 carried on in English reviews a controversy with Mrs H. Fawcett. He died on 26 Dec 1908.

His son, FREDERICK HASLAM BAKEWELL (1858-1935), was a graduate of the New Zealand University (M.A., 1896) and a prominent educationist. He was senior inspector of schools for some years and a member of the senate of the University of New Zealand, the Council of Education and the Victoria College council.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Fulton (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Jun 1894; *N.Z. Graphic*, 26 Sep 1891; *Auckland Star*, 28 Dec 1908.

BALDEY, ALFRED (1836-1924) was born at Brighton, Sussex, and educated at the Brotherhood Hall Grammar School, Steyning. At the age of 16 he went to Australia and tried his luck on the Victorian goldfields, where he was present at the Eureka stockade. In 1861 he came to Otago and took up land at Ryal Bush, Southland, where he farmed for many years.

## BALDWIN

He was a member of the Southland land board, the hospital board (seven years), the Southland county council (17 years), the Bluff harbour board (14 years), the Otago school commissioners and the Southland education board (26 years), being chairman of each for some time. In 1879 Baldey contested the Riverton seat as a supporter of Grey. He was called to the Legislative Council in 1903 and remained a member till 1917. Later he lived in Wellington. Baldey married (1861) a daughter of James Laing (Waianiwa). He died on 20 Aug 1924.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; Hansard, 28 Aug 1924; *Evening Post*, 21, 29 Aug 1924. Portrait: Parliament House.

BALDWIN, WILLIAM (1838-1917) was the son of Henry Baldwin, of Bandon, county Cork, and received his commission in the 19th regiment, with which he served in the Indian mutiny. Coming to Otago in 1860, he took up a run at Teviot. He was gazetted a magistrate in 1860 and when gold was discovered at Gabriel's Gully he was appointed commissioner at vVaitahuna (1 Oct 1861) and warden and resident magistrate (22 Nov 1862). In 1863 he married Janet, daughter of the Hon A. Buchanan. He was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for the Goldfields (1863-64) and was on the executive in 1863. At the same time he was returned to Parliament for the Goldfields District, which he represented till 1865. He then resigned and represented Manuherikia (1866-67). While in the Provincial Council Baldwin was chairman of a committee which recommended that the number of miners' members be increased by two and that business men and miners who had held a miner's right for nine months should be entitled to the vote. He afterwards gave up his runs in Otago and became a travelling commissioner for the Government Life Insurance department. In 1873 he established the *Otago Guardian*, which he controlled till 1875. In 1890 he acquired an interest in the *New Zealand Times and Mail*, which he sold to a company in 1893. He was a director of the Dunedin City Tramways Co. Baldwin died on 30 Jul 1917. His daughter married (1883) the Hon Edmund W. Parker, son of Lord Macclesfield.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Pyke; *Col. Gent.*; Hocken, *Otago*.

## BALFOUR

BALFOUR, JAMES MELVILLE (1831-69), the son of the Rev Lewis Balfour, D.D., of Colinton, and cousin of Robert Louis Stevenson, was born in Edinburgh and educated at the Edinburgh High School. He studied engineering, was a pupil of his brother-in-law, Stevenson, the lighthouse builder, and had a wide experience in Great Britain, mainly in marine engineering. In 1863 he came to New Zealand under a three years engagement to the Otago Provincial Government. Amongst the works he carried out there were the survey of the Molyneux bar and "Waikawa harbour, plans for the lighthouses at Dog island and Taiaroa heads, for the Dunedin waterworks and the graving dock at Port Chalmers. He was appointed in 1867 marine engineer for the Colony and in this capacity designed the lighthouses at Farewell Spit and Cape Campbell, carried out a marine survey of the coast of Taranaki and planned the harbour works at Timaru. He was drowned on 18 Dec 1869 while landing at Oamaru to attend the funeral of the railway engineer Thomas Paterson (q.v.), who was drowned in the Kakanui river. Balfour married Christina, daughter of George Simson, R.S.A.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*, 1864-67; *App. H.R.*, 1867-69; *Cant. O.N.*; MS. journal in Turnbull Library.

BALL, THOMAS (1809-97) was born at Brigg, Lincolnshire, educated there and qualified as a chemist. He had acquired a competence when he emigrated to New Zealand with his family in the ship *Victoria*, with 200 immigrants, most of whom settled on 40-acre sections at Mangonui (1861). Ball had taken an active interest in local and general politics in England and received an address from the citizens of Brigg when he left there (1859). He represented Mangonui in the Auckland Provincial Council (1861-72), and was a member of the executive (1862). Resigning his seat in 1872, he was succeeded by WILLIAM THOMAS BALL, who sat till the abolition of the provinces (1873-76). Thomas Ball represented the district also in the House of Representatives (1866-70). He was a strong advocate of popular education and in 1869 moved a resolution, which was carried without debate, calling for the introduction of a progressive system of public schools. He retired from Parliament in 1870, but his efforts were recognised by Fitzherbert in the debate of

## BALLANCE

1871, when his object was advanced a step towards the education act of 1877. Ball settled at Onehunga about 1880. He was a staunch Congregationalist and a justice of the peace. He died on 25 Dec 1897.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; Macmorran; *N.z. Herald*, 28 Dec 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

BALLANCE, JOHN (1839-93) was born at Glenavy, county Antrim, Ireland, on 27 Mar 1839, his father being Samuel Ballance, a farmer, and his mother Mary McNiece, a Quaker. The Ballances settled in Ireland in Cromwell's time and his grandfather, John, was wounded in fighting in the village during the rising of 1798. Ballance was educated in the local national school and was brought up on the farm until the age of 14, when he was apprenticed to an ironmonger in Belfast.

His departure four years later to Birmingham to take up a post in the same trade was the turning point in his life. He now travelled widely in England and studied deeply at the evening classes of the Midlands Institute; attended many of the political meetings for which Birmingham was then famous, and as a member of the literary society (of which he was secretary) took a prominent part in the debates and was a successful chess player. His main athletic exercise at this time was boxing. In 1865, when 26 years of age, Ballance came to New Zealand, crossing from Melbourne in the *Albion*. While in Australia he made contacts in the belief that he would be able to enter into some sort of business in his new home, and purchased jewellery and other goods with which he stocked a small shop in Taupo Quay, Wanganui. He also took up a small piece of land. He soon found time on his hands which he employed congenially in writing to the local newspapers (the *Chmnicle* and the *Wanganui Times*, both bi-weeklies). By this means, and by becoming a member of the Wanganui Literary society (1866), he aired his views, which were distinctly liberal.

The shop did not flourish and Ballance joined a partner in starting a brewery; but new avenues of activity soon opened up. Discontented with participating in journalism only as a free lance, he gathered a small amount of capital and credit, purchased from John Martin the plant of a newspaper which had closed

## BALLANCE

down, and announced his intention of starting a new journal in Wanganui. On 4 Jun 1867 the *Wanganui Herald* made its appearance as a penny evening paper. The first partnership did not last long and Ballance then took in as a practical printer A. D. Willis (q.v.), who had been with the *Chmnicle*.

The Maori war on the West Coast was now a serious factor in the prosperity of Wanganui and Ballance helped to found the Wanganui Cavalry, of which he was a member. The services of this corps were accepted on 25 Jul 1868, and it was called out for active service on 30 Nov, two days before the date of Ballance's cornetcy. His comments on military policy in the columns of the *Herald*, in which he described the calling-out of the corps as a senseless scare, brought him into conflict with the military authorities, and he was put under arrest by Colonel Gorton and ordered for court-martial. At this stage Ballance recognised his error, made a due apology and returned to duty, but his commission was cancelled. He served in the field at Weraroa (where he was one of Whitmore's escort), Wairoa and Nukumaruru, and for his courageous conduct at Nukumaruru was promoted corporal.

After the war the *Herald* lost a good deal of money and Ballance paid out his partner, thereafter running the paper himself. He first essayed to enter politics in 1873, when he stood for the Egmont constituency, but retired in favour of Harry Atkinson, who was thus able to defeat Moorhouse. Two years later he entered upon parliamentary life, defeating W. H. Watt and W. Hutchison for the Rangitikei seat. At the outset he was a supporter of Atkinson, with whom he was at one on the provincial question. He strongly advocated the abolition of the provinces and proposed a system of municipalities elected on a special franchise. In 1876 he was re-elected (defeating James Bull). In the ensuing Parliament Ballance found himself drawn towards the Liberal party of the future. He met Grey and Stout and became immediate friends with them, particularly Stout. He supported Vogel on the abolition of the provinces, but did not come into close association with him. His decision as to party allegiance was finally made in 1877, when he wrote to Atkinson stating that he was withdrawing his support from the Government

## BALLANCE

on account of its native land policy, which he considered was enriching the few at the expense of the natives and the Colony. He then definitely threw in his lot with Grey, separating from Atkinson and his colleague Bryce. Public life was now making demands on his time and he found it necessary to appoint an editor to look after the paper during his absence in Wellington. He accordingly took in John Notman as a partner, thus freeing himself for work that was becoming daily more urgent. He was chairman of the Wanganui harbour board.

When Parliament met in 1877 the Atkinson Government was defeated and Grey took office. Ballance was not in the ministry, but he was obviously a coming man. A fluent and thoughtful speaker, a vigorous debater with a pleasing, courteous personality, he was a tower of strength to Grey's Government. On 12 Jan 1878 he was sworn in as Commissioner of Customs and Minister of Education, and on 18 Apr he became also Commissioner of Stamp Duties. Then on 12 Jul, when Larnach left for England, he took office as Colonial Treasurer. In his first financial statement he embodied one of the leading planks of Liberal policy, the tax on unimproved values. In Jul 1879, before Parliament met, Ballance and Grey had a serious personal disagreement arising (it is believed) from a criticism of Grey in Ballance's paper. As a result Ballance resigned (30 Jan 1879). The difference was not a serious one, and Grey offered to apologise, but Ballance refused to withdraw his resignation, feeling that he could only remain in the cabinet by the humiliation of his leader, to which he would not consent. Thus at a critical period of its history the new Liberal party was robbed of the services of one of its most able administrators, for Grey himself was hopelessly inept at departmental management. It was a serious blow to Grey. With financial troubles growing daily, cabinet discontent rife and native disaffection threatening, he was called upon to administer the Treasury. The land tax was replaced by a property tax.

At the general election Ballance stood as a Liberal for Wanganui and was returned, with Bryce as his colleague (Bryce 560; Ballance 547; Fox 501). His personal victory was not a satisfactory one, inasmuch as Fox's defeat was due mainly to the opposition of the Roman

## BALLANCE

Catholics. The liberal Government being defeated and practically disbanded by the dethronement of the leader, the fortunes of the party were guarded in the next Parliament mainly by Macandrew, Montgomery and Ballance. Meanwhile the native crisis had come to a head, and Hall, after trying to avoid it and jettisoning Bryce, had to accept his policy. The expedition to Parihaka resulted in Te Whiti (q.v.) being put beyond the power of making further trouble. In the flush of this event the Government went to the country. Bryce was the hero of the hour. Ballance had the misfortune to be opposed in a single electorate by W. H. Watt, who defeated him by four votes only. Freed of Parliamentary duties, he devoted more attention to the newspaper, of which he was now editor and manager and sole proprietor. In Oct 1882 he floated the business into a company.

At the general election of 1884 Ballance was returned at the head of the poll, defeating Hutchison and Watt. He took the portfolios of Native Minister and Minister of Defence in the Stout-Vogel cabinet, which held office for only a fortnight. When it came back again (in Sep) Ballance was entrusted with these same offices and also with lands and immigration, and he entered with vigour upon perhaps the most constructive period of his departmental administration. The country was in the depth of a depression which had already defied the ingenuity of several administrations. Ballance approached it from the angle of a new land policy which would put unemployed men on land as peasant farmers, with perpetual leases granted by the crown and organised in state-aided village settlements. Towards the natives, despondent still after the wars and sullenly opposed to the advance of settlement in the centre of the North Island, he adopted a policy of conciliation which extended even to such men as Te Kooti and Te Rerenga, Tawhiao and Rewi. He visited most of them at their homes, and soon felt justified in disbanding the Armed Constabulary and installing civil police in Maori districts. The setting aside as a national park of 60,000 acres, including Tongariro and Ruapehu, symbolised the better understanding which his sympathetic policy produced. From the defence point of view, with the Russian war scare as an incentive, he stimulated the

## BALLANCE

patriotism of the people to promote volunteering and show a vigorous self-reliance.

The Government was defeated on its financial proposals in 1887, and Ballance now became the leader of the liberals in opposition, though this position was not formally recognised until 1889. Atkinson, struggling manfully with the depression, could not stem the tide of unpopularity which ran inevitably against the cautious budgeteer. Ballance was confident of the superiority of his political programme and threw himself with energy into the election campaign in 1890. The rising Labour party, which had become conscious in the maritime strike, threw in its lot with the liberals, and the electors on 18 Dec gave their verdict against the Government in power. Instead of resigning or at once calling Parliament, the defeated ministry proposed to carry on until the normal time for the session, and recommended the appointment of six new members to the Legislative Council. The Liberal leaders protested to Governor Onslow against the appointments, but he replied that it was already done and that he was responsible only to the Secretary of State. Parliament did meet, however, on 23 Jan 1891. The election of W. J. Steward (the Liberal nominee) as Speaker showed that Ballance had 37 followers and Atkinson only 30. Atkinson, whose health was failing, had already accepted the speakership of the Legislative Council. Mitchelson accordingly announced that the Government had resigned and on 24 Jan Ballance was sworn in with the following ministry: Sir Patrick Buckley, Attorney-general, Colonial Secretary and Postmaster-general; William Pember Reeves, Minister of Education and Justice; R. J. Seddon, Minister of Public Works, Mines and Marine; John McKenzie, Lands and Agriculture, and J. G. Ward (without portfolio). Cadman came in a few days later to take charge of Stamp Duties, Native Affairs and Justice; Ward became Postmaster-general, and a month or two later Carroll was appointed as the representative of the native race. Ballance and Buckley were the only ministers with previous experience. Before coming into office as Premier, Ballance had made a sound contribution to the social legislation of New Zealand. He had assisted in widening the suffrage so that every man now had a vote. He had promoted village settle-

## BALLANCE

ments, under which already 1,000 families had been placed on the land; and he had conciliated the King natives. He now gathered around him, in spite of the territorial restrictions, men who were as anxious as he to implement the programme of advanced liberalism of which they had spoken to the electors and to unite the rising Labour party with the liberals under one banner. The property tax was abolished and replaced by a land and income tax with a graduated land tax.

In the first session of the new Government laws were passed prohibiting the payment of wages other than in money, changing the system of taxation, and inaugurating inspection of factories. This was the first instalment of a series of acts demanded by Labour to ameliorate the lot of the working classes. A labour department was established (under Reeves), which in the next 20 years was to effect radical improvements in the conditions and hours of factory labour and the relations between master and man. Land settlement was provided for in the next session in a measure which created three tenures-lease in perpetuity, occupation with right of purchase, and the optional method; and an act was passed authorising the Government to purchase lands from private owners for subdivision. The existence of an opposition majority in the Legislative Council menaced the passage of liberal measures. Ballance in his first session amended the law to replace life membership of the Council by a term of seven years, but the appointments made by Atkinson on the eve of his resignation created a majority which could not be overcome by normal process. When opposition to the new Government persisted, Ballance asked the Governor to make 12 new appointments. Onslow refused. Instead of resigning for a fresh appeal to the country, Ballance had the matter referred to the Secretary of State, who ruled that the Governor must accept the advice of his ministry. Accordingly, in Oct 1892, 12 members were appointed to the Legislative Council whose liberal opinions ensured that the policy of the Government would no longer meet with unreasonable obstruction in the upper chamber. On another point, the pardon of criminals, Ballance got a ruling from the Colonial Office that the Governor must act on the advice of his ministers. His relations with Onslow were

## BALLANCE

somewhat strained during these controversies, in which Onslow frankly espoused the view of the opposition. Nevertheless Ballance, with innate courtesy and consideration, took steps to see that there should be no demonstration in the House which might hurt his Excellency's feelings.

Progressive, ill-health and the heavy strain of administrative duties and constitutional controversies were taking toll of Ballance's energies, and during the session of 1892 he was on several occasions unfit to take his place in the House. On such occasions Seddon, with his fine parliamentary knowledge, became the deputy-leader. When the new members were appointed to the Council Ballance's life work was practically finished. He was not to meet Parliament again. He returned to Wellington in view of the session of 1893, but was obviously a dying man and the end came on 27 Apr 1893.

Ballance did not see the fruition of the Liberal programme which he had envisaged for so many years, but he saw the Liberal party established in office with such safeguards as were likely to enable it to implement its intentions. In a peculiar sense he was the heir and successor of the ambitions of Grey. The high humanitarian ideals of that leader Ballance adopted with quiet enthusiasm, and promoted with the practical commonsense of the trained politician. Quiet, amiable and simple, but solid and well-informed, he disarmed many of his opponents by his courtesy and consideration. Gisborne remarks upon his gentleness of manner and its sweetening influence upon the more robust and less considerate members of his Government. Stout says that he had a magnetic power of attaching men to himself. He was tender to human suffering. When serving in the Wanganui Cavalry he burst into tears at the sight of some Maori women who had been killed in a whare during the fighting.

Throughout life Ballance played chess regularly, finding in the game a relief from the anxieties of public life. He started a chess club in Wanganui, promoted the Wanganui and Rangitikei Building society (1869), and a lodge of the American oddfellows, of which the public library was an offshoot. He was a keen lover of Shakespeare and possessed several editions of his works, and always took a part in literary

## BALLANCE

and debating societies. Medicine and astronomy were two of his favourite studies. He was fond of animals, took an interest in poultry-raising and gardening, and at one time owned some useful racehorses (including Fishhook).

Of Ballance's political and philosophical views Stout says that he followed at first Cobden and Bright, both of whom he had heard speak, and his budget speech of 1878 was unmistakably of the Manchester school; but later his views grew more advanced. 'As the years wore on he began to see that the *laissez faire* policy was not the last word spoken on political science. He gradually drifted away from the orthodox political economists, becoming more radical and what is termed socialistic, following in this way the lead of such men as Toynbee, Sedgwick, Marshall, Ingram and others . . . He recognised, however, that a politician must be a practical man and not deal with theories only and he sometimes got impatient with some Liberals for continually talking of theories without having any practical suggestions to carry them out. He approached many questions as a merchant would, dealing keenly and in a business way with bankers and others who had business transactions with the Government, and making a bargain with all the shrewdness of a business man: In his early years he spoke seldom in the House, but later he became more vehement in his utterance and more rapid, sometimes speaking 'like a perfect tornado:

Originally a strict adherent of the Church of England, Ballance had rather evangelical tendencies and in English politics he was an Orangeman and conservative. His mother was a Quakeress who, in America, would have been considered a Hicksite or even a Unitarian. Ballance went farther even than this. Association in Birmingham with the Presbyterian Y.M.C.A. changed his views on life, and Stout considered that he became eventually an agnostic, but 'reverent withal and never intruding his religious views on anyone:

Ballance married first (1863) Fanny, a sister of H. S. Taylor (Wanganui). She died in 1868, and he married in 1870 Ellen, daughter of David Anderson (Wellington), formerly of county Down. They had no children, but adopted two nieces of Mrs Ballance. Mrs Ballance took a keen interest in women's movements and was a vice-president of the Women's

## BALNEAVIS

Progressive society. She died on 14 Jun 1935.

*N.Z.P.D.*; *App. H.R.*, notably 1891-92; *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; Gudgeon (p); *Brett's Almanac*, 1879; Gorton; Saunders (p); Reeves; Condliffe; Scholefield, *N.Z. Evol.*; Hight and Bamford; *N.Z. Graphic*, 23 Jul 1892 (p); *Woman To-day*, Jul 1937; *N.Z. Times*, *Lyttelton Times*, *Evening Post* and *Wanganui Chronicle*, 28 Apr 1893; *Wanganui Herald*, *pass.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 6, 7 Feb 1885, 18 Dec 1891; Sir R. Stout in *Austr. Reviews of Reviews*, ii, 1893; James Collier in *The Press*, 31 Dec 1910; *Auckland Star*, 27 Sep 1887. Portrait: By Tennyson Cole in Parliament House.

BALNEAVIS, HENRY COLIN (1818-76). Born at Ghent, Belgium, Balneavis was a younger son of Lieut-general Henry Balneavis, C.M.G., K.H., who commanded the 65th Regiment in the Peninsular war and was afterwards commandant and Governor of Malta. In recognition of his services the son was granted his first commission in the 55th Regiment without purchase in 1838. He rose to be captain and adjutant of the battalion.

Balneavis arrived in New Zealand (Apr 1845) in command of the light company, and the whole of his military life thereafter was in this country. He was present at minor actions in Heke's war and also at Ohaeawai and Ruapekapeka. At the last-named, while commanding the advanced picket, he reported the evacuation of the pa during the night, but Despard distrusted the intelligence. Balneavis led a patrol of the 58th in pursuit of the murderers of the Giffilans at Wanganui (1847). When the 58th left New Zealand in 1858, having completed 20 years service, he retired as captain, took up his military grant of land at Maraetai and for some years was a settler. When the war broke out in vVaikato Balneavis organised the Waikato militia, whose high efficiency was mainly due to him. He attained the rank of lieutenant-colonel in Feb 1862. He served for a while in the Wanganui district. He was keenly interested in fortifications, and constructed for a military college in Great Britain an exact model of Ruapekapeka. For his services in New Zealand Balneavis received the military good service medal and the New Zealand war medal.

After retiring from active service he was appointed sheriff for the province of Auckland. Amiable and unassuming in disposition, he had marked social qualities. He was an accomplished violinist and a founder of the Auckland

## BANNERMAN

Choral Society. His foreign experience as a boy gave him a ready knowledge of various European languages, and he was also proficient at Arabic, Greek and Maori. He died on 26 Aug 1876. His coffin was draped with the colours of his regiment, which he had borne as a subaltern and had been presented to him in 1866 for deposit in Auckland.

Gudgeon; Cowan; Buick; Grimstone; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Aug 1876.

BANNERMAN, WILLIAM (1822-1902) was born at Kirkcaldy, Fifeshire, and as a child moved with his parents to Edinburgh, where he received his education. He went to the High School and to the sessional school, and then proceeded, on a four years' bursary of £20 a year, to the University of Edinburgh.

While he was there the disruption occurred in the Church of Scotland. Bannerman was present in St Andrew's church when the protest was read by Dr Welsh, whereby 470 of the leading ministers of the Church renounced their allegiance and withdrew to form the Free Church of Scotland. Bannerman joined the new church and on the completion of his four years at the University he entered the Free Church theological college (of which Dr Chalmers was principal). At the end of his course he was licensed as a probationer. During these eight years in Edinburgh Bannerman was engaged in private tuition, and added much to his knowledge of the world by an extended tour in Europe in the company of one of his pupils. Partly on foot, they travelled through Belgium, Germany, Switzerland and Italy. At Geneva they met the historian of the Reformation, Merle D'Aubigne. Another tour took them through southern Ireland. After being licensed by the Free Church presbytery of Edinburgh, Bannerman was employed by the home mission committee in the parish of Crathie, in which were included the royal estates of Balmoral and Abergeldie. He conducted divine service and Sunday school in a building belonging to the estate of Abergeldie, and thereby laid the foundations of the present parish. On leaving Crathie, Bannerman for a few weeks supplied the vacant charge at Echt, near Aberdeen. Then he went to Perth to take the place temporarily at St Leonards of the Rev John Milne, who had gone to Calcutta.

## BANNERMAN

Some time before this the congregation of First Church in Dunedin had requested the Free Church of Scotland to assist in providing missionaries for the central portion of Otago province outside of Dunedin. An old parishioner wrote to Bannerman that he was going to Otago with his two sons, and suggested that Bannerman might find the opening agreeable. He accepted the suggestion at once, offered his services to the colonial committee, and in Sep 1853 was ordained by the Perth presbytery as a minister of the Otago Church. Dr Andrew Bonar presided. Accompanied by the Rev William Will, Bannerman sailed the following month in the ship *Stately*, which arrived in Otago in Feb 1854. The presbytery of Otago divided the district between the two ministers, it being agreed that Will should take the better-settled Taieri district and Bannerman the sparsely-settled far south. Being unable to ride, he entered upon his task with the prospect of travelling afoot, and in this fashion he made journeys in 10 months which totalled 3,600 miles. Then a horse was procured, and he soon became an accomplished horseman. At the request of the presbytery he travelled as far north as Oamaru, and then returned to his own sphere in south Otago. Every small settlement there he visited regularly. Before long Tokomairiro, Clutha, Kaihiku, Warepa and Inch Clutha were organised congregations, and by the end of 1856 Bannerman had extended his visitations as far as Invercargill. After visiting all the congregations on the northern side of the Mataura he crossed the river and proceeded with great difficulty to Bluff, suffering much from thirst on the way. After sleeping the night in the lee of a house which was building there, he proceeded by foot and boat to the site of Invercargill, where surveyors were already at work laying out the township.

Returning in company with Logie (collector of customs at Dunedin), they lost themselves among the Hokonui mountains and spent two nights in the bush, drenched to the skin. At length they struck the mouth of the Popotunoa gorge and reached the manse at Warepa, a clay hut, on Sunday morning. Bannerman caught his horse and rode off to Balclutha for the Sunday service. The manse at Puerua was erected in 1857. These arduous years taxed to the utmost the strength of the minister, who was

## BAMFORD

scarcely out of the saddle for a day at a time. Gradually the advent of more population required the establishment of sanctioned charges within his territory. In 1860 the Rev A. H. Stobo was stationed at Invercargill. Then the Warepa and Kaihiku, Tokomairiro, Inch Clutha and Popotunoa districts became settled charges (under the Revs J. Waters, A. B. Todd, James Kirkland and Charles Connor), and Bannerman was free to devote his attention to Puerua and Port Molyneux, with Catlins and Tapanui. He had laboured for 30 years in this heavy field, and was now over 60 years of age, when in 1884 he met with a buggy accident which left him so lame as to be unable longer to travel. He retired at the beginning of 1885, his congregation retaining him as senior minister.

Bannerman went to live at Roslyn. He did occasional work in and around Dunedin, but devoted most of his attention to the clerkship of the synod, which he held from its formation. He had previously been clerk to the presbytery for some years. In the church courts Bannerman was methodical in the transaction of business and uniformly helpful, courteous and courageous in debate. He was one of the old Scots Presbyterians, versed in all church law, a keen debater, and an inveterate fighter. He took a warm interest in missions and for many years was convenor of the mission committee. In this capacity he paid a visit with his wife to the New Hebrides, where the Otago Church had stations. Bannerman attended two general assemblies of the Victorian and New Zealand churches, and in 1876 he represented the Church of Otago at Edinburgh at the alliance of the Reformed Churches holding to the Presbyterian system.

In 1900, in recognition of his long and valuable service in New Zealand, the University of Edinburgh conferred upon Bannerman the degree of doctor of divinity. He died on 24 Dec 1902. Mrs Bannerman was a daughter of the Rev Dr Burns.

Hocken; Chisholm; Don; John Wilson; *Otago Witness*, Mar 1898 (G.U. jubilee); *Otago Daily Times*, 20 Jan 1885, 25 Dec 1902, 13 Jun 1930 (P).

BAMFORD, HARRY DEAN (1878-1922) was the son of Edwin Bamford, registrar-general of deeds. Educated at Napier High School and Auckland Grammar School, he entered the office

## BARCLAY

of Buddie and Button and studied law at Auckland University College (B.A. 1898; LL.B. 1900; LL.D. 1901). From 1904 he practised in Auckland, being some time lecturer at the University College and a member of the College council. Bamford collaborated with Professor J. Hight in *The Constitutional History and Law of New Zealand* (1914). He married (1914) Jean, daughter of John Richmond. His death occurred on 27 Mar 1922.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Hight and Bamford; *N.Z. Herald*, 29 Mar 1922.

BANNATYNE, WILLIAM McLEOD (1818-88) came to New Zealand in 1842 and founded a merchant's business in Wellington. Though naturally retiring, he took his part in public affairs. In 1848 he was nominated by Governor Grey to a seat in the Legislative Council of New Munster. This he resigned in 1850 in view of Earl Grey's despatch of 22 Dec 1849, as being incompatible with his independence. In 1856 he married Jane Emily, the widow of Major Richard Baker (q.v.). He was a member of the Wellington City Council (1871-73). About 1883 he returned to England, where he died on 17 May 1888.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i, 292; Beauchamp; Ward.

BARCLAY, ALFRED RICHARD (1859-1912), son of the Rev George Barclay, was born in Ireland, and came to New Zealand in 1865. He attended the Timaru public school, Christ's College and Otago University (B.A. 1878). He completed his LL.B. degree in 1884, and was admitted as barrister and solicitor three years later. He then began to practise in Dunedin, and for a time was with the firm of George and J. A. Cook. Always interested in education and university matters, he was clerk of the court of convocation from its inauguration in 1884. In 1891 he was appointed lecturer in constitutional history at Otago University. Barclay was member for Dunedin in the House of Representatives (1899-1902), supporting the Seddon Government. He was defeated by Bedford, Millar and Arnold, but gained the Dunedin North seat in 1905, when he defeated Bedford. He was connected with many public bodies, notably the Athenaeum committee and the Fabian society. His wife, Annie, was a daughter of H. W. Baron (Dunedin). Barclay died on 10 Nov 1912.

## BARCLAY

Hansard, 5 Jul 1913; *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Christ's Coll. Seh. List*; *Otago Daily Times*, II Nov 1912.

BARCLAY, PETER, of Aberdeen, was selected by the colonial committee of the Free Church of Scotland to inaugurate the Presbyterian Church in Hawkes Bay. He arrived in 1859 by the *White Swan*, opened a church in 1861, and four years later was moderator of the General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church. Following the death of his wife, he resigned in 1866 and returned to Scotland. Barclay published a book, *The Word and Work of Christ in New Zealand*, and in 1872 *Notes on New Zealand and the Use of Emigrants*.

Dickson.

BARFF, EDMUND came to New Zealand with the gold rush to the West Coast, and was a typical miners' representative. In 1865 he was elected to the Canterbury Provincial Council for the West Coast, and he sat for that and the Westland seat till 1867. In 1868 he was elected by Okarito to the Westland county council. In 1868 Barff was returned as M.H.R. for Westland South, which he represented till 1870. He was again in Parliament (for Hokitika) from 1876-79, and was mainly responsible for the framing of the mining act of 1877. At the election in 1879 he was defeated, the two seats being gained by R. C. Reid and Seddon, with Dungan third and Barff last.

*Parltry Record*; Harrop, *Westland*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v.

BARKER, ALFRED 'CHARLES (1819-73), was born in London, the son of Joseph Gibbs Barker, of Birmingham. During his childhood his parents lived at Hereford, Cambridge and Kenilworth, and for a while in the Vintners' House at Holborn. The boy received most of his education in a private school at Hereford, and went to King's College, London, to study medicine. After qualifying as a surgeon he practised at Matlock, Bath and Rugby. He married Emma, daughter of Samuel Outram Bacon.

Becoming interested in the Canterbury scheme, Barker was one of the original land purchasers and was appointed surgeon to the *Chm'lotte Jane*. On arrival in Lyttelton (16 Dec 1850) he was in the first boat which went off and found rooms at Day's Hotel, Sumner, where he left his family until their home was

## BARKER

ready. At Christchurch he lived in a dugout in the park while he erected his first shelter, a V hut covered with a sail from the ships. The hut was used by the land office for the convenience of the land purchasers at the selection of sections in Jan 1851. The garden of his permanent home stretched from Cathedral square to the terrace in Worcester street. Though a member of the council of the Society of Land Purchasers from 1852 to 1854, Barker was too much engaged in his practice to take part in politics. For years he was one of the few medical practitioners on the Plains, and he had to ride long distances. In 1855 he was returned to the Provincial Council for Christchurch City, which he represented until 1857. He had no taste for public life, but had strong opinions which he often expressed in the press. His wife having died in 1858, Barker gave up his practice in 1859 and devoted himself more and more to his hobbies. His tastes were studious and scientific. Throughout his life he corresponded with Owen, Huxley and others on geology, botany and other phases of science. He studied the Darwin theories deeply, and in 1872 and 1873 contributed papers to the Canterbury Philosophical Institute. Many sketches which he made in the early days of the settlement are preserved in the Christchurch museum, and his skill as an amateur photographer furnished valuable historical pictures. He was a trustee of the museum and assisted every intellectual and literary movement in the province. He was also a fellow of Christ's College, and the College library was built from his plans after his death. Barker died on 20 Mar 1873.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Deans; Wigram; *Church News*, May 1873; Scholefield in *The Press*, 27 Sep 1930 (p).

BARKER, LADY MARY ANNE, later Lady BROOME (1831-1911) was born in Jamaica, where her father, W. G. Stewart, was Island Secretary. In 1852 she married Captain (afterwards Sir) George Barker, who served in the Crimea and the mutiny. She joined him in 1860, when he was commanding the Royal Artillery in Bengal. He died in 1861. In 1865 she married Frederick Napier Broome, who was then sheep farming in Canterbury. They took up Steventon in 1866 and called it Broomielaw. Their life in New Zealand came to an early

## BARLOW

end. Broome was a keen sportsman and spent much time pig-hunting and writing poetry. He gave up the property in 1868. In 1869 he did his first work for *Macmillan's Magazine*, and at Alexander Macmillan's suggestion his wife wrote the first of her books describing station life in New Zealand. It was published in 1870. Her books contain some of the most lively and interesting accounts of station life in the early days, as she experienced it, mainly at Broomielaw, Rockwood and Heathstock stations. *Station Life in New Zealand* was followed by *Traveling Over Old and New Ground* (1871), *A Christmas Cake in Four Quarters* (1872), *Station Amusements in New Zealand* (1873), *Letters to Guy* (1885) and *Colonial Memories* (1904). Broome joined the staff of *The Times* as special correspondent and reviewer, and travelled widely while his wife became superintendent of the national school of cookery and editor of a magazine. In 1875 Broome was appointed colonial secretary in Natal; lieutenant-governor of Mauritius (1876), and governor of West Australia (1882-90). (K.C.M.G. 1883). He was governor of Trinidad when he died (1896). Lady Broome died on 6 Mar 1911.

Acland; Buller; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; Broome, *Colonial Memories*; *The Times* (London), 7 Mar 1911.

BARLOW, PETER WILLIAM (1847-90) was the son of Peter William Barlow, F.R.S. Educated in England and trained as a civil engineer, he was employed on contracts in Turkey and Brazil and on the Tower subway in London. In 1883 he came with his family to New Zealand under engagement to a land company and settled at Matakahe. In 1888 he published under the title *Kaipara* an interesting volume of description and experiences. Barlow died in Apr 1890.

*N.Z. Herald*; Barlow, *op. cit.*

BARNES, JOHN (1817-89) was born at Stockport, Lancashire, and came to Otago in the *Nourmahal* (1858). For many years he was in business as a carter and contractor, carrying to Tokomairiro and to the goldfields at Lindis and Tuapeka, and undertaking many public works contracts, such as the Rattray street, Stuart street and Pelichet Bay jetties. In 1863-65 he was a member of the town board, and in 1866-67, 1870-74 and 1879-85 of the City Coun-

## BARNETT

cil, from which he resigned twice to become inspector of works. He was mayor of Dunedin in 1885 and a member of the harbour board (1883-88). Barnes died on 18 Nov 1889.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Nov 1889.

BARNES, RICHARD JAMES (1860-1929) was born in Victoria and came to New Zealand with his parents, who were attracted to the Central Otago goldfields. As a young man in Wellington he learned the game of chess as a member of St Paul's young men's club. He became a regular prize-winner in local contests; in 1890 was runner-up in the Dominion championships, and three years later was champion. Barnes attended 27 Dominion congresses, winning the championship five times and being runner-up nine times. He was an accountant by profession. He died on 7 Jan 1929.

*N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; *The Dominion*, 8 Jan 1929.

BARNETT, JOHN MAUGHAN (1867-1938) was born in Leamington, Warwickshire, and educated at a private school. He studied piano and composition under Gustav Ernest, and the organ under Frank Spinney. After holding the position of organist and choirmaster at the church of King Charles the Martyr (1882-89) and at St Mary Magdalen church, St Leonards-on-Sea, and giving concerts in South Kensington and in the provinces, he came overseas on account of his health. For three years he was organist at the Hobart Cathedral, Tasmania, where he opened the new organ. He composed the anthem used at the laying of the foundation stone of the cathedral chancel and tower, and conducted the Hobart musical union. In 1893-95 he was organist and choirmaster at Napier Cathedral, and he was first conductor of the liedertafel there. In 1895 he was appointed organist and choirmaster at St John's Church, Wellington, and he was the city organist until 1913, when he took up similar duties in Auckland. He played an important part in establishing the Wellington Choral Society and was conductor of the Wellington Operatic society. The music of the commemorative ode for the Christchurch Exhibition (1905) was his composition. Barnett married a daughter of the Rev Lewen Tugwell. He died on 1 Jan 1938, 16 weeks after being appointed organist at Christchurch Cathedral.

## BARNICOAT

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908 and 1924; *Evening Star*, 15 Jun 1926; *The Press*, 2 Jan 1938.

BARNICOAT, JOHN WALLIS (1814-1905) was born at Falmouth, Devonshire, educated at the Falmouth proprietary school and articled to a civil engineer. He practised his profession in England until 1841, when he came to Nelson in the *Lord Auckland* (arriving on 23 Feb 1842).

There he practised for a while in partnership with a fellow passenger, T. J. Thompson, and was employed by the New Zealand Company surveying lands at Waimea and Moutere. He was so employed at Wairau when Te Rauraha and Rangihēata interposed (Jun 1843). Barnicoat was one of those who escaped, finding his way with Frederick Tuckett (q.v.) to Cloudy Bay and back to Nelson. He then surveyed the Motueka and Takaka districts, and in Mar 1844 explored with Tuckett the whole of the east coast of the South Island as far as Stewart Island to find a suitable site for the New Edinburgh settlement. With Davison he surveyed the Waikouaiti harbour. Later in the year he settled on his own land near Richmond. In 1846 Barnicoat explored the Pelorus and in 1850 (with John Tinline) he tried to find a route from Nelson to the Wairau.

Barnicoat in 1853 was elected unopposed for Waimea East to the Nelson Provincial Council, in which he sat throughout the provincial period (1853-75). He was speaker (1858-75) and deputy-superintendent in 1875. In 1862 he contested the superintendency (*Robinson* 593 votes; Barnicoat 218). He was chairman of the Waimea road board and for many years of the Waimea county council. Barnicoat was keenly interested in education, being a trustee under the Nelson trust funds act and one of the founders of Nelson College, of which he was a governor for 40 years from 1856. He was a member and chairman of the board of education, a trustee of the Richmond institute (1846), a member of the archdeaconry board (1856) and of the first Nelson synod (1859); an assessor of the bishop's court, a member of many diocesan trusts, diocesan treasurer (1875-97) and a member of the General Synod (1862). In 1883 Barnicoat was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member to 1902.

He married (1849) Rebecca Lee, a daughter

## BARR

of William Hodgson (q.v.). Barr died on 2 Feb 1905. (See R. C. KIRK.)

His daughter, CONSTANCE ALICE BARNICOAT (1877-1922), was educated at Nelson Girls' College and Canterbury University College. (B.A. 1895). She studied languages, was private secretary to W. T. Stead (1898-1903), and for many years acted as special foreign correspondent for English and New Zealand newspapers. She married (19B) Julian Grande, who wrote her life in 1925.

*N.Z.C.*; Hocken, *Otago; N.Z.P.D.*; Grande, *op. cit.* (p); Buick, *Old Marlborough*; Broad; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Colonist*, 3 Feb 1905.

BARR, GEORGE MORRISON (1837-1907) was born in Glasgow and received his education in that city, passing out of the University with two firsts (engineering and mechanics). He served his articles with Thomas Kyle and remained with him as assistant for three years before taking up his residence in Edinburgh in the service of Charles JoPP, A.M.L.C.E., consulting engineer to the North British Railway Co., for whom he surveyed several branch lines in the south and east of Scotland. He arrived at Port Chalmers in the *Jura* in 1862 and took up his duties in the provincial survey department. In 1866 he transferred to the general government and was chief engineer of public works (1869-72). During this time he had charge of all roads, buildings and public works. Resigning in 1872 to enter private practice, he was appointed in 1882 engineer to the Otago harbour board. Until loans ceased in 1888 he carried out all the harbour works, including the opening of the Victoria channel. In private practice he executed harbour works at Wanganui and waterworks at New Plymouth, Queenstown, Cromwell, Palmerston South, Mornington and Roslyn. He was two years a member of the City Council and four years of the harbour board; was one of the first members (and sometime chairman) of the Mornington school committee. Barr became a member of the Institute of Civil Engineers in 1882 and received the Telford premium for a report on Otago harbour (1892). He was vice-president of the N.Z. Institute of Surveyors and a member of the first board of examiners. At the time of his death (27 Apr 1907) he was the only surviving foundation member of the

## BARR

Glasgow Geological Society. He married in 1871 a daughter of Thomas Oliver, of Kaikorai.

*Evening Star*, 29 Apr 1907.

BARR, JAMES (1820-85) was born in Glasgow and had a careful upbringing in the Scots and Presbyterian tradition. Arriving in Otago by the *Marinel'* (1849), he and a brother farmed for some years at Halfway Bush. Finding this occupation not sufficiently profitable, he left in 1851 for Sydney, where he spent five years. He took a great interest in the social aspect of early Otago and was secretary of the committee which promoted winter lectures. He floated some of the early building societies. Barr was in business for many years in Walker street and Stafford street and finally at the Phoenix Bond. He took little part in politics, except in the days of the Otago convention, which was established to protest against the abolition of the provincial system (1875). Barr had a pleasant literary turn and published many articles on the early life of the province, as well as a volume entitled *The Old Identities* (1879). He was the first secretary of the Old History Society of Otago. Barr died on 4 Apr 1885.

Barr, *op. cit.*; Hocken, *Bibliog. and Otago*; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Apr 1885.

BARR, JOHN (1867-1930) was born in Paisley, Scotland, and educated at the public school at Pollokshaws. He spent three years as a weaver before taking part in his first industrial dispute, and then served his apprenticeship as a stonemason. Before coming to New Zealand in 1902 he lived in Winnipeg, Canada, for a time, and was employed as a telegraph linesman in Canada and the United States. Settling in Christchurch, he took a prominent part in labour matters, becoming president of the Canterbury trades and labour council. In 1907 he was called to the Legislative Council, and he was re-appointed in 1914, 1921 and 1928. He was chairman of committees from 1925 until his death (on 6 Dec 1930). For many years Barr was a member of the Sumner borough council, and he was mayor (1917-23). He occupied a seat on the Christchurch tramway board (1912-21), being appointed deputy-chairman in 1916 and chairman in 1918. A staunch freemason, Barr was the first master of the Sumner Masonic lodge. In his capacity as stonemason, he was a member of the committee responsible for the

## BARRAUD

restoration of the old Provincial Council chambers.

*N.Z.P.D.*, II Mar 1931; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *The Press*, 8 Dec 1930 (p).

BARR, JOHN (1809-89) was born at Paisley, Scotland, and was for many years a member of the engineering firm of Barr and McNab, of Paisley, who were engaged in connection with the Clyde shipbuilding. In 1852 he emigrated to Otago in the *Dominion*, and was for many years a familiar figure in the settlement. He settled at Halfway Bush, and later took a place at Kaihiku, which he named Craigielee. There he lived for a number of years and then sold the farm and lived at Water of Leith, Dunedin. Barr was regarded as Otago's first poet. He had a talent for composing songs, and wrote verse of good quality, including satirical and humorous poems for every occasion. For many years he contributed regularly to the *Otago Witness* and the *Saturday Advertiser*. In 1861 he published his first volume of *Poems and Songs* (many in the Scots dialect), and in 1874 they were republished with some additions. Barr inaugurated the Burns Club and was laureate to the Caledonian Society. He died on 18 Sep 1889.

Hocken, *Otago and Bibliog.*; Barr, *op. cit.*; *The Press*, 5 Jun 1907; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Sep 1889.

BARR, WILLIAM (1831-87) arrived in Otago with his parents in the *Philip Laing*. He sat in the Otago Provincial Council as member for Green Island and Caversham (1861-70), and for Kaikorai (1871-73). He died on 10 May 1887.

*Otago Daily Times*, 12 May 1887.

BARRAUD, CHARLES DECIMUS (1822-97) was born in Surrey and educated in Camberwell. After serving his articles to a chemist and druggist, he spent some time in that business in Southampton and came to New Zealand in the *Pilgrim* in 1849. He was in business in Lambton Quay, Wellington, until 1887, when the misfortune of having his premises burned caused him to retire. Barraud was a competent artist in water colours and painted a great deal during his life in Wellington. In 1875 he visited England, where he published (1877) a portfolio of lithographs in colour and plain entitled *New Zealand: Graphic and Descriptive* (the descriptive matter being by W. T. L. Travers). Bar-

## BARRETT

raud was one of the founders, and for some years president, of the New Zealand Academy of Fine Arts. He was the first president of the New Zealand Pharmacy board and was treasurer of the convalescent fund of Wellington Hospital and chairman of the Sailors' Rest. He died on 26 Dec 1897.

Ward; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (P); Barraud, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Times and Evening Post*, 28 Dec 1897.

BARRETT, RICHARD (1807-47) was born in Rotherhithe, London, became a sailor and visited New Zealand waters as mate of Love's schooner *Tohora* (whale), which traded in pork and flax between Nga-motu (New Plymouth) and Sydney from 1828-29 until a cask of pork fell from the slings and destroyed the vessel. Barrett remained at Nga-motu, where he married Lavinia Waikaiua (Rawinia), of the Ngati-te-Whiti tribe. He was the mainstay, with Love (Hakirau), in the defence of the Otaka pa (Breakwater, New Plymouth), when it was fiercely besieged by the invading Waikato in 1831. With the survivors, Barrett journeyed south inland of Waikanae, where they were under the protection of Te Rauparaha at Kapiti island. Thence he moved to Port Nicholson and across the straits to Te-Awa-iti (Tanwhite), on Tory Channel, where he became a whaler. On 18 Aug the *Tory* anchored in Ship Cove, and Colonel Wakefield engaged Barrett as interpreter. Edward J. Wakefield says: 'Dressed in a white jacket, blue dungaree trousers, and round straw hat, he seemed perfectly round all over, while his jovial, ruddy face, twinkling eyes and good-humoured smile could not fail to excite the pleasure of all beholders.' H. S. Chapman in the *New Zealand Journal*, 1850, said he was 'a great man among the natives, who adore him, and is respected by even drunken whalers.' Barrett went with Wakefield to Port Nicholson, where he explained to the chiefs the intentions of the Company and its desire to acquire land. A purchase was accordingly made of a considerable area, now occupied by Wellington city and suburbs and the Hutt valley. *Mter* the Treaty of Waitangi was signed, the Company's claim was investigated and considerably reduced. On 1 Feb 1840 Barrett piloted the *Tory* to Moturoa (New Plymouth) with a similar object. He returned to Wellington and acted as agent for natives and inter-

## BARRON

preter. On 24 Oct he opened a hotel (known as Barrett's), which became a meeting place for colonial deals and social events in the young settlement. Barrett possessed the first horses in New Plymouth. In 1843 he accompanied three stockmen, driving 70 head of cattle, from Wellington to New Plymouth. In 1844 he retired to his MotuJoa whaling station, where he died on 23 Feb 1847. N.S.B.

N.Z.e. 113; G.B.a.p., 1840-41; H. M. Jervis in *N.Z. Herald*, 5 Mar-30 Apr 1892; A. Hood, *Taranaki and Dicky Barrett*, 1890; E. J. Wakefield; McNab, *Old Whaling Days*; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; "ard.

BARRIBALL, CHARLES (1812-80) came to New Zealand by the *Westminster* in 1843 and resided in Epsom for some years. At the first Waiuku sale (1859) he purchased a farm, and the family settled there in 1860. Barriball was a warden of the Auckland hundred and later a member of the Waiuku road board, but he took no part in politics. He was a staunch 'Vesleyan Methodist and for many years a local preacher. He died on 23 Jan 1880.

*N.Z. Herald*, 26 Jan 1880.

BARRON, WILLIAM (1837-1916) was born at St Andrews, Scotland, and educated in the parish and Free Church schools at Whitburn, Kirkliston and Lennie Moor. He was trained for commercial life in Edinburgh. He arrived in Otago in 1861 by the *Lady Egidia*, and spent the next 18 months mining and storekeeping on the goldfields. He then went into business in Dunedin, being senior partner first in Barron and Campbell and afterwards in Barron, Grant and Co., merchants and runholders. He retired in 1874, paid a visit to Great Britain, and on his return settled in Caversham. He was a member of the City Council in 1874, and five years later entered Parliament for Caversham, which he represented 1879-90, being unopposed on two occasions. Barron was a consistent Liberal and freetrader and took the initiative in many reforms of the eighties and nineties. He fought for several years to extend the hours of polling to enable the working class to register their votes; he promoted legislation to protect wages in cases of bankruptcy, and advocated the abolition of plural voting and the reduction of the number of members of Parliament. He also carried through drastic amendments of the

## BARRY

patent law, cheapening the costs to patentees and simplifying the procedure. In Parliament he strenuously opposed heavy borrowing. Barron was a leading advocate of the Otago Central railway and chairman of the executive of the league. He was a prominent freemason. He married (1870) Mary, daughter of Robert Banks (Puerua). He died on 16 Jun 1916.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1909; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Jun 1916.

BARRY, WILLIAM JACKSON (1819-1907) was born in Melbourn, Cambridgeshire, and at the age of nine left England on a trip round the world in the *Red Rover*, an ill-fated ship. At Sydney he deserted and worked for a butcher, who sent him to school at Parramata, until in 1835 he left on a whaling cruise in the *Mary*. He deserted at Melbourne, but being retaken, sailed for the Bay of Islands. In 1838 he went with an expedition to form a convict settlement at New Holland, on the Australian coast, and being wrecked on the return journey, was one of three who were saved. He joined the navy in 1840 and went to India and China (where he took part in the first Chinese war). After several trips across the Tasman, trading and whaling, Barry left the sea and in 1845 married Miss French, of Western Australia. She brought him a substantial dowry, and for a time he managed her father's station. After her death he joined the California gold rush, where momentarily he made a fortune. Marrying again in 1852 at Shasta, he returned to Australia, lost his money in a wreck, but soon made another fortune in quartz mining at Ballarat. In the early sixties he brought his wife and family to New Zealand, where he worked first at Gabriel's Gully and later as a farmer and butcher in Cromwell. In 1864 Barry was elected mayor of Cromwell, and he held the position for a few years. He engaged in goldmining, auctioneering and butchery, and purchased a hotel in Queenstown, where his wife died in 1874. Four years later he visited England as immigration agent for the Government. Grey being put out of office during his absence, he carried out a lecture tour of England. On his return to New Zealand he contested the Dunedin West seat in Parliament (1887), but illness prevented him from prosecuting his campaign. His book, *Up and Down: or 50 Years of Colonial Experience*, was pub-

## BARTH

lished in 1879. From 1887 he toured the Australian colonies giving lectures until he became too infirm. He also published *Past and Present and Men of the Times* (1897). Barry died on 25 Apr 1907.

Barry, *op. cit.* (p); *The Press*, 25 Apr 1907.

BARSTOW, ROBERT CLAPHAM (1820-90) was born at Skipton Bridge, Yorkshire, a grandson of Sir Michael Barstow, mayor of York. He was educated at St Peter's School, York, and proceeded as a foundation scholar to Jesus College, Cambridge (1838). After completing his course there he spent some time travelling in Europe, and sailed in 1843 for New Zealand. On the *Bangalore*, which was carrying Captain Fitzroy to assume the Governorship. Arriving in Dec, he purchased land at Tamaki, and then speculated in loading the *Bangalore* with spars and timber. He sailed in the ship on her return to England, put into Valparaiso in distress and sold her cargo there. Barstow made his way to Payta (Peru) and then to Tahiti (Aug 1844) in search of a vessel for his return to New Zealand. After visiting the Marquesas and Hawaii, he reached Auckland in 1845, just before the arrival of Governor Grey. He had a schooner, the *Undine*, built in Auckland, and made further cruises in the Pacific. In 1846 he married Jane Mary (d. 15 Jul 1902), daughter of Colonel Hulme, of the 96th Regiment.

In 1848 Barstow was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until 1850. On account of the scarcity of labour following the gold discoveries in California, he sold his farm (partly to St John's College) and moved to Great Barrier, where he had a cattle station for some years. From 1859 he was resident magistrate at Bay of Islands; from 1872 at Onehunga; and from 1877 at Auckland, retiring in 1881. Barstow took a great interest in the establishment of the Auckland Industrial School, and was many years on the committee. He was for some time president of the Auckland Institute and was interested in acclimatisation and horticulture. He had a valuable collection of engravings, coins and medals. Barstow died on 28 Sep 1890. (See J. P. CAMPBELL.)

*Parltry Record; N.Z. Herald*, 3 Jul, 10 Oct 1881, 29 Sep 1890; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p).

BARTH, ARTHUR JAMES (1850-1905) was born and educated in London, and studied

## BARTLEY

music under J. F. Barnett and Dr H. Wylde, being elected in 1868 an associate of the London Academy of Music. He was teaching from the age of 17, and when he came to New Zealand (in the *Taranaki*) in 1881, he had already acted as examiner and professor at the London Academy. Barth was conductor of the Choral society and the Liedertafel in Dunedin, and was successively organist at St Matthew's, All Saints and Knox churches. He died in 1905.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p).

BARNEY, THOMAS HOUGHTON (1798-1878) was a son of William Bartley, of Liverpool. Admitted to the Inner Temple in 1818, he was called in 1823 and practised on the northern circuit and at Liverpool.

In 1838 he emigrated to South Australia, where his brother entered into practice. He came to Bay of Islands early in 1840 and was associated with F. Whitaker there until the capital was removed to Auckland. Bartley was a man of singular modesty and reserve, who carried chivalry almost to the verge of quixotism; imbued with every instinct of a gentleman. On removing to Auckland he was leader of the bar for many years. Much against his disposition he took part in politics. In 1853 he was urged to stand for the superintendency of Auckland, but withdrew later (25 Apr 1853). He was, however, elected to the Provincial Council for the City, which he represented in 1853-54 and 1855-57. He was elected speaker of the Council and controlled it with tact and dignity through stormy crises in which party feeling ran very high (1853-57). He was deputy-superintendent of Auckland in 1856. Meanwhile Bartley was also a member of the House of Representatives (1853-54) and in this arena too he played his part in heated controversy. He was a member of the executive with Fitzgerald (Jul-Aug 1854). In Jul 1854 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which in 1856 he was appointed Speaker. That position he held with dignity until 1868, when he accepted a pension of £300. He remained a member of the Council for some years longer, but vacated his seat in 1874.

In spite of his gentle and mild manners, Bartley had great strength of will and physical energy. He frequently pulled his boat across to Stokes point after the Council rose, and he

## BARTON

took a prominent part in the trenches at Fort Britomart during the native crisis. Bartley died on 25 Dec 1878, his wife having predeceased him by seven years. His daughter Mary married Sir Edward Stafford (q.v.).

The Treasurer's office, Inner Temple; *Auckland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.Z.P.D.*; Saunders; Rusden; Thomson; Kennedy. Portrait: Parliament House.

BARTON, GEORGE BURNETT (1836-1901) was a son of William Barton, a Sydney sharebroker and brother of Sir Edmund Barton (prime minister and chief justice of Australia). He read law at the Middle Temple from 1856, was called to the bar in 1860, and shortly afterwards commenced to practise in Dunedin.

While engaged in journalism in Australia he wrote (1866) a literary history of New South Wales for the Melbourne exhibition. In 1868 Barton succeeded Vogel as editor of the *Otago Daily Times*, a position he held for almost three years. His administration was marked by a prosecution for criminal libel arising out of an article which appeared on 3 Oct 1870 charging the Government with deliberately delaying telegrams intended for the *Times* until a summary of them had been communicated to opposition newspapers supporting the Government. Charges were also made against the personnel of the Government and officials of the Telegraph department. The case was heard by the magistrate (23 Feb-30 Mar 1871) and Barton was committed for trial. He had meanwhile retired from the editorship of the *Times* to be free to attend the proceedings, and the Government abandoned the prosecution. Barton edited *The New Zealand Jurist and Practical Statistics of New Zealand*.

Returning to New South Wales he did some more journalism, was a lecturer in English at Sydney University, and published *Poets and Prose Writers* (1886). He began to edit certain historical publications for the centenary of New South Wales, and one volume of history from the historical records (1783-89) was published by him. He also wrote the life and times of William Charles Wentworth (for serial publication). In 1891 Barton published an annotated copy of the draft constitution for the projected Australian federation, and in 1892 a complete digest (which appeared in the *Yearbook of Australia*). At the time of his death (on 12 Sep

## BARTON

1901) he was on the staff of the *Werriva Times* at Goulburn.

Paul; *Austral. Encycl.*; *Otago Daily Times*, Feb-Mar 1871; *Sydney Morning Herald*, 14 Sep 1901.

BARTON, GEORGE ELLIOTT (1827-1906) studied for the bar, was admitted and began his professional career in Dublin, where he had been a pupil with a barrister of high standing. In the early fifties he emigrated to Victoria and practised for some years in Melbourne. He was a member of the Legislative Assembly for North Melbourne from 1859 until he moved to Ballarat, when he retired from Parliament (1860). In 1862 Barton came to Otago and commenced practising in Dunedin. Though a successful advocate with a remarkable power of concentration, he had an impulsive and highly excitable temperament and was frequently at loggerheads with bench and bar. Barton was elected member of the Provincial Council for the City of Dunedin in 1871, but was defeated in 1873. In 1874 he contested a Dunedin seat in Parliament against Wales, who defeated him by 632 votes to 542. In 1876 Barton moved to Wellington, where he entered into practise with H. S. Fitzherbert. In conducting a case before Mr Justice Richmond in the Supreme Court he was committed for contempt and imprisoned in Wellington gaol. While there he contested the Parliamentary election for Wellington City against E. Pearce and W. Hutchison. His son, Elliott L'Estrange Barton (1857-1934) appeared on the platform to speak for him and Barton was elected (10 Feb 1878). A crowd formed outside the gaol and Barton appeared to answer their congratulations, but was not permitted to speak. He lost his seat in 1879. Some years later Barton went to the United States and practised in San Francisco. On returning to New Zealand he was appointed a judge of the native land court, and in 1892 judge of the validation court. Barton died in 1906, his wife having predeceased him by 10 years.

*Cycl. N.z.*, i; Barclay; *Otago Witness*, 12 May 1866; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 May 1876; *N.Z. Times*, 4 May 1877, 11 Oct 1878.

BARTON, RICHARD (1790-1866) was born at Newport, Isle of Wight. He was well qualified in estate management and for some years was employed as a superintendent on the estates of the Duke of Sutherland, from whom he

## BASSTIAN

leased' quarries at Brora. In 1839 Barton became interested in the New Zealand Company's project and enlisted a considerable number of young Highlanders as recruits for the settlement. He persuaded more than 40 to emigrate, and arranged dances to be held during the winter in the hope of getting them married. Barton arrived in Port Nicholson by the *Oriental* (1840) and took up land on the Hutt river, where he formed a settlement and was able to employ a number of the HiggWanders when they arrived by the *Blenheim* (1841). They were settled on the river bank between two tribes. In 1843 he married Hannah (1817-94), daughter of the Rev J. G. Butler (q.v.). He formed a sheep station at White Rock before 1847 and afterwards extended his holdings. He was M.P.C. for Hutt (1861-65). Barton died on 20 Aug 1866.

N.Z.C. (emigration papers); *Christ's Coll. Sch. List*; *Col. Gent.*; J. A. Thomson; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 18 Jul 1879; *Wellington Independent*, 4 Jul 1862, 23 Aug 1866.

BASSETT, WILLIAM THOMAS settled in Auckland province in the fifties. He represented Raglan in the Provincial Council (1864-65) and Franklin (1872-73), and was a member of the executive in 1864.

BASSTIAN, CHRISTOPHER (1820-95) was born in London, and in 1822 emigrated to Tasmania with his father, who became a landowner and business man. As he grew up Basstian entered into his father's farming pursuits and also carried on a wholesale wine and spirit business in Hobart for a number of years. In 1858 he came to New Zealand, having already sent a cargo of sheep, which were landed at Bluff under the charge of his brother. He took up the Dunrobin station, and later another block of land north of Long Bush, which he called Woodstock. Basstian was a member of the Provincial Council of Southland for Aparima (1867-70) and afterwards sat in the Otago Council for Southland (1870) and for Aparima (1871-73). He was a member of the House of Representatives for Wallace in 1875. He was also a member of the Wallace county council from its formation, and for some years chairman; and he served on the Southland hospitals and charitable aid board, being one of the Southland hospital trustees at the time of his death in 1895.

## BASTINGS

*Otago and Southland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p).

BASTINGS, HORACE (1831-1909) was born at Islington, London, and educated at the Bluecoat school. He emigrated to Victoria with his father in the *Medway* (1849); had some experience of mining, and went into business as a storekeeper at Ballarat. He married (1850) a daughter of Samuel Aldred (Bungay, Suffolk).

Bastings took an interest in public affairs and was once mayor of Brunswick. In 1862 he came to Otago in the *City of Hobart* and settled at Dunedin. From the first he was prominent in public life. In 1863 he was elected to the Dunedin town board, of which he was a member until it dissolved, when he was a city commissioner pending the election of the first city council. He was elected to the Provincial Council for Dunedin City in 1864, took a leading part in the separation movement, and resigned (Aug 1865) on going to live in Lawrence. There he built the Commercial hotel, with the Black Horse brewery at Wetherstones. He purchased the interest of Cobb and Co. in the South Island coaches.

Bastings represented Tuapeka in the Provincial Council (1871-75) and in the last two years of the provinces he was a member of three executives, as provincial secretary, secretary of lands and works, and goldfields secretary. When Southland proposed to return into the union with Otago he accompanied Macandrew to discuss with the smaller province the conditions of reunion. He was mayor of Lawrence (1868-72), was for some time chairman of the Tuapeka county council, and a member of the first Otago land board. In 1875 he was returned to the House of Representatives by the Waikaia constituency, which he represented until 1881. He returned to Dunedin to live in 1876 and was senior partner in Bastings, Leary and Co., auctioneers and forwarding agents. He was secretary-manager of the Waimea plains railway, which he sold to the Government.

In 1882 Bastings went to Australia, where in conjunction with George Duncan he constructed the first cable tramway (at North Shore). He contracted for the Bacchus Marsh-Ballan railway in Victoria, the estimate for which was £225,000. Returning to New Zealand, he entered into business as an auctioneer in Auckland, and in 1896, after a visit to Great

## BATHGATE

Britain, settled in Invercargill as proprietor of Deschler's hotel. He died in Auckland on 28 Jun 1909. He was a prominent oddfellow and was provincial grand master of the Otago district, M.U.I.O.O.F.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 29 Jun 1909; *Southland Times* and *N.z. Herald*, 29 Jun 1909. Portrait: Parliament House.

BATEMAN, THOMAS (1805-74) was part owner of a whaling station in Hawkes Bay as early as 1838. He was settled in Bay of Islands when Hobson arrived, and signed the address of congratulation to the lieutenant-governor on that occasion (Feb 1840). He was engaged at that time in the coastal and intercolonial trade, and in 1846 accepted the post of sub-collector of customs at Bay of Islands. In 1850 Bateman went to San Francisco, but remained only a short time. He died at Ruku Ruku, Ovalau, Fiji, on 28 Sep 1874.

Carleton.

BATHGATE, ALEXANDER (1845-1930) was born in Peebles, Scotland, the son of John Bathgate (q.v.), and was educated at the Peebles and Edinburgh schools, and Edinburgh University. Coming to New Zealand in 1863 he joined the Bank of Otago, of which his father was colonial manager, and later transferred to the Bank of New South Wales, being stationed in Hamilton (1866) and Cromwell (1868). In 1872 he was admitted a barrister and solicitor, and he practised his profession in Dunedin till 1909. In conjunction with Thomas Bracken (q.v.), Bathgate established the *Saturday Advertiser* (1875). Three years later he founded the Reserves Conservation or Amenities Society, which effected many improvements in Dunedin, and led to the formation of similar societies in other centres. He was a founder of the Dunedin Art Gallery, and president (1890-1922). In 1902-08 Bathgate filled with distinction the position of chairman of the industrial conciliation board of Otago and Southland. For some years he was president of the Otago Central Railway League, which promoted the railway to Cromwell, in whose fruitgrowing future he had great faith. He was for many years chairman of Kempthorne, Prosser and Co., and of the Trustees, Executors and Agency Co. (1914-27). He was a director also of the *Otago Daily*

## BATHGATE

*Times Co.*, and of Donaghy's Rope and Twine Co. He was a founder and first president (1912-18) of the Otago Expansion League. As a literary man, Bathgate published several books, including *Colonial Experiences, or Sketches of People and Places in the Province of Otago* (Glasgow, 1874); *Waitaruna, a Story of N.Z. Life* (1881), *Far South Fancies* (1889), *Plea for Establishment of Arbor Day* (1891), *The Legend of the Wandering Lake* (1905). He was editor of *Picturesque Dunedin-* (1890) and of *Dunedin and Its Neighbourhood* (1904). In 1873 he married Fanny Gibson, daughter of J. Turton (Manchester). He died on 9 Sep 1930.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Bathgate, *op. cit.*; Beattie, ii; *The Press*, 8 Jun 1907; *Otago Witness*, 13 Jun 1930.

BATHGATE, JOHN (1809-86) was born at Edinburgh, the son of a school teacher, educated at the High School and completed his legal studies at the University. Meanwhile he was articled to Dymock, a writer, and also spent some time in the office of a factor and estate agent in Renfrewshire. On being admitted in 1835 as a solicitor, or writer, he went to Peebles to practise, his father having moved there in the course of his duties. Bathgate soon had a good business and was appointed procurator-fiscal for the county (1844). For many years he was town clerk of Peebles and clerk to the commissioners of supply.

In 1844 he established the *Peebleshire Monthly Advertiser and Tweedside Journal*. He took a great interest in all social movements and was especially active in the promotion of the railway between Peebles and Edinburgh. After years of opposition this was carried through in 1852-53. Bathgate combined banking with his other business and was local agent of the Union Bank of Scotland. When the Bank of Otago was established he accepted the post of manager, though it meant breaking friendships of long standing (including that of William Chambers, who published much of Bathgate's literary work).

Arriving in Dunedin at the end of 1863, Bathgate devoted himself closely to the affairs of the bank, and refrained from public life. He entered the volunteer movement as a captain in No. 2 (the Scottish) company, from which he retired as major. One of his first public activities was the formation of the Dunedin

## BATHGATE

Waterworks Co. In 1867 Bathgate resigned from the bank, and early in 1868 he was appointed managing director of the *Otago Daily Times and Witness Co.* He was for some months editor of *The Times*. In 1870 he was appointed provincial trustee in bankruptcy, and in the same year he was admitted a barrister and solicitor, and commenced to practise. Towards the end of 1870 he yielded to his impulse towards politics by contesting the Dunedin seat in the Provincial Council against H. S. Fish. Though defeated then, he won a seat in Parliament for Dunedin City in Jan 1871, at the head of the poll. In the following year he became Minister of Customs, Justice and Stamps in the Waterhouse Government. A few weeks later he transferred the first portfolio to Reynolds, but he held the others in the reconstructed ministry under Fox until Feb 1874, when he resigned his seat in the House to accept appointment as district judge and resident magistrate in Dunedin.

In 1875 Bathgate assisted Thomas Bracken in founding the *Saturday Advertiser*, of which he was business manager. In provincial politics he had felt very strongly on the goldfields dispute with the general Government in the late sixties, and once declared publicly that he favoured separation, and would even take command of the Scottish company and seize the customhouse. He was in the Provincial Council, 1871-74 (defeating E. B. Cargill in 1873). From the middle of 1871 until the end of 1872 he was a member of the Reid executive. Bathgate held the position of district judge until 1880, when increasing deafness caused him to take extended leave and visit the Old Country. There he was an active agent in the canvass for emigrants, and had considerable success. He published in Edinburgh a book on *New Zealand; Its Resources and People*, and in *Chambers's Journal* a series of letters and talks. Bathgate took advantage of his visit also to organise the New Zealand Mortgage and Investment Association, of which he was manager 1881-85. Shortly after returning to Otago he was again in political life.

In 1881 Bathgate was elected to represent Roslyn in Parliament, but he was defeated at the next general election by A. H. Ross. A year later he was called to the Legislative Council, of which body he was an active member

## BATKIN

until his death. Bathgate's political views were democratic; in some ways advanced. He took a sympathetic interest in the welfare of the working classes, and believed strongly in a state bank. On the latter subject he gave public addresses and published a pamphlet (1884). In 1886 he succeeded by 12 votes to 11 in carrying a favourable resolution in the Legislative Council. Sanguine in temperament, felicitous and vigorous in speech, he had a fund of humour and a wide knowledge of men and events. In 1883 he published an illustrated guide to Dunedin and the province. He was on the council of Otago University (1876-86).

Bathgate married first (1841) a daughter of Dr Anderson, of the 92nd Highlanders, and second, a daughter of James McLaren, tea merchant, of Edinburgh. He died on 21 Sep 1886.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; N.Z.P.D.*; Hocken; Mndoe; Thompson, *Short Hist. Univ. of Otago*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Saturday Advertiser*, 5 Jul, 27 Dec 1879; *Otago Daily Times*, 28, 30 Jun 1879, 22 Sep 1886, 19 Sep 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

BATKIN, CHARLES THOMAS (1822-1903) came to New Zealand in 1849, settling in Taranaki, where he was private secretary to the superintendent (1853), and provincial clerk and storekeeper. Later he became, successively, chief clerk to the colonial treasury (1859), accountant (1865), secretary for stamp duties (1867), paymaster and receiver-general (1869-78), secretary to the treasury (1873), and assistant controller and auditor-general (1878). He retired in 1890. Batkin served on several royal commissions, notably on the public accounts (1868) and civil service pensions (1870). He died on 13 Aug 1903.

Civil Service records; *Evening Post*, 14, 17 Aug 1903.

BAUCKE, WILLIAM (1848-1931) was born at the Chatham islands. His father, Johann Heinrich Christian Baucke, was a native of Bavaria, who came to Nelson in 1843 as a member of the Moravian mission of the Evangelical Lutheran Missionary Society and shortly afterwards went to the Chatham Islands. He was naturalised in 1853. Brought up among Maori and Moriori children, William learned to speak both languages with fluency, and in later life was the leading authority on Moriori.

Baucke wished to be a civil engineer, but his

## BAUMBER

father intended him for work in the South Seas mission. At the age of 14 he was sent to Wellington, where he attended public schools for four years. Returning to the Chatham Islands, he worked on a 50,000 acre sheep farm in which his father had an interest. Incidentally he acted as schoolmaster to pakeha and native children, and widened his education to a remarkable degree by private study. An apt linguist, he acquired a good knowledge of French, German, Italian and Greek; to the end of his life he delighted in the Greek classics. On the practical side, Smith's work was especially congenial to him and he acquired a competent knowledge of carpentry and navigation. His father having given up the sheep farm, and unsuccessfully petitioned Parliament for redress, William returned to New Zealand and found employment as an interpreter in the King Country, where he spent the remainder of his life. During the war he served under von Tempsky (q.v.) and received a wound in the foot. From his intimate knowledge of the life and thought of the Maori he wrote a series of articles in the *New Zealand Herald* (which were published in book form in 1905 under the title *Where the White Man Treads* and reprinted later). At the request of the Bishop Museum (Honolulu) he wrote his memoirs of the Moriori, which the museum published in 1928. This is an important contribution to the ethnology of this extinct race, especially on the linguistic side. Baucke was a man of rugged exterior but exceptionally high intellectual powers, with the pride and sensitiveness of the German. He died at Otorohanga on 6 Jun 1931.

*App. H.R.*, 1885 AI; 1870; *New Zealand Herald, pass.*; Baucke, *op. cit.*; *Otorohanga Times*, 10 Jun 1931.

BAUMBER, WILLIAM (1852-1932) was born at Spilsby, Lincolnshire. Educated at Spilsby Grammar School, he was accepted by the British Methodist conference and sent for training to Didsbury College, Manchester. In 1876 began a ministry of power and distinction. He came to New Zealand by the *Opawa* and began his New Zealand ministry at Lawrence (1877). He filled important charges at Christchurch, Wellington, Dunedin, Napier, Nelson and Timaru. Never robust in health, his self-forgetting zeal triumphed over a frail physique. By untiring industry he gathered large stores of knowledge

and brought a penetrating and appreciative mind to the great things in life and literature. He had a consuming passion for preaching; was tender in heart, yet outspoken in utterance; tolerant in opinion yet firm in his own convictions; abreast of modern thought yet ever loyal to the central verities of the Christian faith. As a pastor he had a rare capacity for sympathy. His church gave him membership of many important committees, made him treasurer of the contingent fund and of the children's fund, called him to the chair of the synod districts of Otago, Wellington and Nelson, and made him chairman of the supernumerary fund board. On seven occasions he represented New Zealand at the general conference of the Methodist Church of Australasia, and he was appointed to represent that conference at the British Wesleyan conference of 1904. In 1896 he was president of the New Zealand conference. In 1884 Baume married Laura Garland (who died on 11 Oct 1931). He retired from the active ministry in 1918. One memorial of the zeal of his later years is the Methodist Church on Cashmere Hills, erected through his capable leadership. He died on 8 Sep 1932.

M.A.R.P.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii.

BAUME, FREDERICK EHRENFRIED (1862-1910), a son of Joseph Baume, was born in Dunedin and educated at the Thames and Otago High Schools, and Auckland University College and Otago University (where he won the mental science prize in 1885 and the political economy prize in 1887). After six years in commerce and journalism (1877-83), he was admitted to the bar and began to practise law in Auckland. (LL.B., 1891.) In 1896 he went into partnership with A. E. Whitaker. Entering public life in 1893, Baume gained a seat on the Auckland City Council, and he was also on the Auckland harbour board. He sat as a Liberal in the House of Representatives (for Auckland City, 1902-05; Auckland East, 1905-10), and was chairman of the education committee (1903-06). His other public activities were numerous. He was a member of the Auckland University College council from 1893, a fellow of the New Zealand University senate from 1903, president of the Auckland law institute, and of the Auckland graduates' association. He was president

of the New Zealand Natives' Association, and an honorary captain in the New Zealand Native Infantry No.3 (1901). A member of the Jewish faith, he was president of the Auckland Chovevi Zionists' association, of the Auckland Macabaeans, and of the Auckland Hebrew Aid society. In 1907 he was made King's Counsel. He died on 14 May 1910.

Baume married (1899) Rosetta Lulah Leavey (1870-1934), who was born in San Francisco, and educated at the San Francisco Girls' High School and University of California, graduating Ph.B. She was teaching for a few years. Mrs Baume served on the Auckland education board, the Grammar School board of governors, and the boards of the technical school and the Elam school of art. On the death of Baume (1910) she contested the Parnell seat. In 1921 she married E. W. Kane (q.v.). She was afterwards on the board of governors of the Wellington College and of the Girls' High School.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 28 Jun 1910; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Auckland Star*, 16 May 1910; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Aug 1899; *The Dominion*, 23 Feb 1934 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

BAXTER, ALFRED ERNEST (1878-1936) was born at Christchurch and educated at the Normal and Boys' High schools. He was associated for 40 years with A. and W. Baxter, Ltd., latterly as manager and partner. He took an early interest in painting and was taught by Samuel Moreton. Later, when he was able to devote himself more fully to art, he spent much time in Europe studying under good teachers. Baxter painted many New Zealand landscapes. Some of these, and also European subjects, are in the McDougall gallery in Christchurch. He died on 20 Jul 1936.

*The Press*, 21 Jul 1936; Canterbury Society of Arts.

BAYLY, ALFRED (1866-1908) was born at Waitara, a son of Thomas Bayly, and a grandson of Thomas Bayly (1804-79). He was educated at the New Plymouth Boys' High School, and became a farmer.

Bayly excelled in all forms of athletics, notably cricket, rowing, swimming and running. He was one of the most distinguished Rugby footballers in New Zealand. For some years he played for the Tukapa club, but on taking

up land in the Toko district he joined the Stratford club. He represented Taranaki for many years between 1885 and 1901, playing successfully in several positions amongst the backs, but generally at threequarters. He captained the Taranaki provincial team when it became the champion team in New Zealand. Bayly was a member of the New Zealand team which visited Australia in 1893 and captained the team of 1897. He was president of the Taranaki Rugby Union (1899-1906). He died on 14 Oct 1907. In 1909 the Bayly memorial scholarship was established for athletic competition in Taranaki schools.

*N.Z. Rugby Annual; Fifty Years Rugby in Taranaki*, 1935 (p); A. F. Wiren and A. L. Hempton (information); *Taranaki Herald*, 4 Jul 1931 (p).

BAYLY, ISAAC (1840-1927), the son of Thomas Bayly (q.v.), was born in Devon, came with his parents to New Zealand (1841) and commenced farming in north Taranaki. He later spent 18 years in the Hawera district and several years at Mahia, Hawkes Bay. About 1900 he returned to settle in New Plymouth. In 1879-80 he was captain of the Hawera rifles, retiring at the time of the Parihaka trouble. Bayly represented Grey and Bell in the Provincial Council 1869-72. He was for five years chairman of the Hawera county council and was a member of other bodies. He married Hannah, daughter of James Dingle (New Plymouth).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi.

BAYLY, THOMAS (1804-79) came of a west country yeomen family, and was born at East Peak, Devonshire. He was brought up at Claxton Vernal, married and resided for 11 years on a farm in the parish of North Tamerton, Cornwall. After a dangerous attack of typhus in 1830 he began to take a deep interest in religion and joined the Bible Christian Society. In 1841 he sailed with two brothers and their families in the *Amelia Thompson* for Taranaki. Thomas took up a farm at Kaipakopako, where on one occasion he was attacked by a hostile party of Katatore's people. Governor FitzRoy having ordered the settlers to evacuate their holdings, Bayly retired to New Plymouth and took up land on the town belt. He was a zealous Christian and took a great interest in the formation of a branch of the Bible Christian Society. When it merged in the Primitive

Methodist connection he became a lay preacher and a staunch supporter of that denomination. He died on 19 Aug 1879.

*Taranaki Herald*, 20 Aug 1879.

BAYLY, WILLIAM (1811-74), the younger brother of T. Bayly (q.v.), came to New Plymouth with his wife and family in the *Amelia Thompson* and engaged in farming close to that town. The brothers had some hostile personal encounters with the natives before the Taranaki war. He represented Grey and Bell in the Provincial Council (1857-65), and died on 12 Jan 1874.

*N.Z. Archives; Taranaki Herald*, 15 Jan 1874.

BAYLY, WILLIAM (1834-1902) was born in Devonshire, the son of Thomas Bayly (q.v.), and at an early age came to Taranaki with his parents in the *Amelia Thompson* (1841). Educated in New Plymouth, he took up farming and dealing in stock with some success. In the Taranaki war he served under Major Brown, being severely wounded at Waireka. After the war he bought a farm at Stony river and later acquired properties at Warea, Rahotu and Okato. Bayly took a prominent part in the local government of the province. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Omata (1869-74), and was a member of the executive and treasurer until his voluntary retirement in 1873. After the abolition he was a member of the county council and the New Plymouth harbour board, and was mayor of New Plymouth on two occasions (1881-83, 1886-87). Important works were carried out during his term of office. He was one of the founders of the Moturoa freezing works. During the Te Whiti troubles (1879-81) Bayly was captain of the Okato rifles. He died on 7 Jul 1902.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald*, 25 Oct 1873, 8 Jul 1902.

BEALEY, JOHN (1824-67), born in Lancashire, came to Canterbury with his brother, Samuel Bealey (q.v.), in the *Cornwall* (1851) and took up the Haldon estate. He was M.P.C. for Christchurch Country District (1855-57). He died on 20 Jun 1867.

*Canterbury P.C. Pmc.*; Acland; *The Press*, 24 May 1930.

BEALEY, SAMUEL (1821-1909), a native of Lancashire, was educated at Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1851

## BEALEY

(at an unusually advanced age). Becoming interested in the Canterbury project, he and his brother John purchased orders in London for 1,000 acres of land and sailed in the *Cornwall*, which arrived in Lyttelton on 10 Dec 1851. They at once prospected for land, and in May 1852 took up what was afterwards known as Haldon, between the Selwyn and Hororata. Their first run was No. 19, and in a year or two they had a property of 40,000 acres, comprising seven runs. For a while they were well occupied with their land and erecting their homes in Christchurch.

Samuel had a liking for public affairs, and in Nov 1852 (as soon as the constitution arrived in New Zealand), he announced himself as a candidate for the Canterbury Provincial Council. At the elections in 1853 he was returned as a member for the City of Christchurch, which he represented until the first dissolution (1857). His standing in the Council was soon established. From Oct 1854 to May 1855 he was a member of Hall's executive. Being something of a student, with no great love of publicity, he did not seek re-election, but when a dissolution occurred in 1862 he was again returned for his old constituency. His career then took a turn for which he was scarcely prepared and certainly not anxious. The rival policies of Moorhouse and FitzGerald each had a strong following. Moorhouse had achieved great things for the province, and Bealey was in general sympathy with his policy of public works. When he resigned the superintendency early in 1863 Bealey, desirous of seeing party animosities composed, headed a requisition asking Robert Wilkin to stand. Wilkin declined and Bealey was then led into the breach, it being understood that there would be no contest.

He was elected unopposed on 5 Mar 1863. John Ollivier, his proposer, remarked that he was admired for his affability and courtesy in private life, and for his straightforward conduct and untarnished honour in public affairs; a man of lofty principle closely identified with the policy of his predecessor. Bealey, in his speech, stated his determination to give proper consideration to the out-districts and to do something for education. He had none of the brilliance of FitzGerald or the driving power of Moorhouse, but he had sound judgment, common sense and confidence, and so was able

## BEALEY

to achieve more at the moment than either of his predecessors might have done. Cox remarks: 'It can hardly be said of him that, like Moorhouse, he had a passion for politics or that he had an insatiable appetite for work; but he was an educated man and the people of Canterbury readily accepted him as their chief magistrate.' Hall said that 'his common-sense and coolness enabled him to grapple with the difficulties of the first gold rush on the West Coast. He left behind him a record as a good office man and a safe administrator.' Bealey was able, session after session, to carry his council with him in sanctioning the necessary expenditure. In 1864 he created the post of secretary of public works and offered to reduce the salary of the superintendent in order to meet some of the additional cost. He let a contract to Holmes and Co. for the railway to Rakaia, undertook lines north and south and to Kowai, set aside lands to provide for a line to the West Coast, improved the landing service at Timaru and the harbour at Lyttelton, engaged experts to report on the rivers and built adequate provincial chambers and offices. When provincial finance seemed likely to fail he obtained from the general government the promise of state assistance.

Towards the end of 1864 Bealey told his council that he expected gold discoveries of importance on the West Coast. On 2 Mar 1865 Westland was gazetted a goldfield, and Bealey sent a member of the executive to establish the machinery of government there, and ordered a road to be constructed, over which a year later he was able to drive to the coast on a stage coach. His term of office was marked by the steady, vigorous, and yet cautious promotion of public works. His presidents of executive were Wilkin, Cass and Tancred, and as colleagues they had Hall, Moorhouse, Joshua Strange Williams, Rolleston, Travers, E. C. J. Stevens, and others. When his term came to an end (May 1866), Bealey laid down his powers as cheerfully as he had taken them up.

A few months later his brother died. About the middle of 1867 he returned to England with his family, paying only occasional visits to New Zealand thereafter; Part of the estate was sold to the Government early in the century, and in 1910 the rest was cut up and sold. Bealey died in England on 8 May 1909.

## BEAUCHAMP

Acland; Cox; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *The Press*, 26 May 1909, 24 May 1930 (P).

BEAUCHAMP, ARTHUR (1827-1910) was born in London, the son of John Beauchamp. Educated at Hampstead Grammar School, he entered his uncle's silk business in Austin Friars (1843). In 1848 he sailed for Port Phillip in the brig *Lochnagar*. In 1850 he came to New Zealand in the *Katherine Johnstone* and disposed of a cargo of merchandise in the new settlements at Otago and Canterbury. In 1854 he married Mary Elizabeth Stanley (of Port Fairy). After living in several provincial towns in Victoria, they came to New Zealand in the *Lalla Rookh* and settled at Picton.

There Beauchamp started in business with William Welford as merchants and auctioneers. He was chairman of the Picton town board, and in 1864-66 represented the town in the Marlborough Provincial Council, being a member of the executive in 1865. In 1866 he was elected to Parliament in place of Sir David Monro. For some time he was in charge of the firm's branch in Westport, and in 1869 he moved to Wanganui, where he entered into business as an auctioneer and general merchant. In 1876 he became a partner with Robert Laery and F. Noble Campbell in Wellington. He later engaged in the same business in Christchurch, and in sawmilling in the Sounds. He died on 28 Apr 1910. (See SIR HAROLD BEAUCHAMP.)

*Marlborough P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.* v (P); Beauchamp; *Marlborough Press*, 6 Jan 1866.

BEAUCHAMP, SIR HAROLD (1858-1938) was born at Ararat, Victoria, the son of Arthur Beauchamp (q.v.), with whom he came to New Zealand in 1861. Educated at Picton school and Wanganui Collegiate School, he entered his father's office in Wanganui in 1872 and four years later became clerk to Beauchamp, Campbell and Co., in Wellington. In 1877 he joined W. M. Bannatyne and Co., and on the retirement of Bannatyne (1889) he became a partner. In 1894 W. I. Nathan became a partner, and in 1900 the business was formed into a limited liability company, of which Beauchamp was managing director. He was a member of the Wellington harbour board (1895-1908), and chairman (1900-02), and a member of the royal commission on federation with Australia (1901).

Beauchamp was appointed in 1898 a Govern-

## BECKETT

ment director of the Bank of New Zealand, on the board of which he continued with the exception of a few months until 1936. He was chairman on various occasions for 13 years. During the period of his directorship the bank was restored to its former stability and the state's interest in it became recognised and permanent. Beauchamp/was a director also of the Wellington Gas Co. from 1904 (and chairman from 1923), and of other companies, including the Wellington Patent Slip Co., the Royal Insurance Co., the Australian Mutual Provident Society, and Imperial Chemical Industries. He made many gifts to the city of Wellington, including large sums and property to the National Art Gallery, and the memorial (in Fitzherbert terrace) to his daughter Katherine Mansfield (q.v.).

Beauchamp married (1884) Annie Burnell (who died in 1918), daughter of Joseph Dyer (Wellington), and secondly (1920) Laura Kate, widow of Lewis Bright. He died on 5 Oct 1938. In 1937 he published his *Reminiscences and Recollections*.

Beauchamp, *op. cit.* (p); Bank of N.Z. reports 1898-1936 (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908-32; *The Dominion*, 6 Oct 1938 (p).

BECKETT, REGINALD BOWARD (1855-1938) was born in London and educated at the London University School. In 1873 he came to New Zealand, and two years later commenced business at Marton as auctioneer and general merchant (the firm being known as Beckett, Hammond and Dick, and later as Beckett and Hammond). Finally, for some years he carried on in his own name before selling the business to Abraham and Williams, of which he became a director for life. He was closely associated with the development of the district. He was a member of the first Marton town board and borough council, and was mayor on three occasions (1881-84, 1898-1901, 1909-13), during which the council inaugurated the water supply and sewerage. He was also on the Rangitikei county council from 1892 (and chairman from 1905), resigning in 1907 to visit England. He was an original member of the Rangitikei Building Society (1876) and chairman of directors to 1935. Beckett was a guarantor of the Rangitikei Hunt Club and the Marton Jockey Club. He was secretary of the latter for many years and

## BECKHAM

afterwards chairman and president (1922-33), and a life member for 30 years. In his youth he was a prominent cricketer and for some years was president of the Marton athletic club. He was an original member of the Marton Agricultural and Pastoral association and the Marton club, and chairman for some years of the local branch of the Reform party. Beckett died on 23 Jun 1938.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Rangitikei Advocate*, 23 Jun 1938.

BECKHAM, THOMAS (1810-75). Born in 1810; Beckham seems to have been educated at Guildford, Surrey, or the Royal Military College at Woolwich, since he claimed to have been at school with Sir George Grey. Receiving his commission in the 28th (North Gloucester) Regiment in 1828 (lieutenant 1832), he sailed with it to Australia in 1835, and three years later resigned to come to New Zealand in the *Diana* (1838). Shortly after the declaration of British sovereignty, Beckham was appointed magistrate at Hokianga and rode to his post from Auckland. A year later (Aug 1841) he was transferred to Russell. At the outbreak of Heke's war, he and the Rev Henry Williams endeavoured to mediate, but without success, and when Kororareka was sacked and burned he withdrew to Auckland with the refugees. There he helped to raise the local militia and commanded one company of volunteers. He also co-operated in the building of Fort Britomart and the stockade. In Mar 1845 he was appointed police magistrate at Auckland and in Nov 1846 resident magistrate. He was from Jan 1842 sheriff of the northern district and later in the year harbourmaster at Bay of Islands. Tall, well built and carefully dressed, Beckham was a stickler for procedure and a stern dispenser of justice. He did good service for both the Kororareka and Auckland communities in their early days.

In Oct 1855 he was elected by the City of Auckland a member of the Provincial Council. He was a member of the executive for a year under Logan Campbell, and then retired from the Council. He was also elected in 1855 to the House of Representatives, where he held his seat until 1860. In 1858 he moved the address-in-reply. He frankly disliked politics, and was afterwards appointed resident magistrate at Auckland and district judge, which positions he

## BEDGGOOD

held until his death on 31 Jul 1875. Beckham married a daughter of Maj-general Baddeley, at one time colonel of engineers in New Zealand.

G.B.O.P., 1845/130; P.R.O., A.L., 1829; Buick, *First War*; Morton; *N.z. Herald*, 1 Aug 1875.

BEDFORD, HARRY DODGSHUN (1877-1918) was born in Leeds, Yorkshire, and came to New Zealand at the age of nine with his father, Walter Scott Bedford, whom he assisted at farming, tailoring and blacksmithing. He was educated at the public schools at Morley (England) and Invercargill; and having matriculated, proceeded to study law at Wellington and Auckland. He graduated B.A. at Otago in 1899, won the senior scholarship for political science, and took his M.A. (1901).

In 1901 Bedford contested the Caversham seat in Parliament. He was then practising in Dunedin, and, having graduated LL.B. (1906) and LL.M. (1910), was some years lecturer at Otago University. In 1902 he was elected senior member for Dunedin City. He was an advanced Liberal, a strong advocate of prohibition, and a trenchant critic of the Seddon administration. He lost his seat at the general election of 1905.

In 1907 Bedford was appointed professor of economics and history at Otago, a post which he filled with distinction until his death (on 17 Feb 1918). In 1916 he was awarded the degree of doctor of literature. He was a supporter of the Workers' Educational Association. He married (1907) a daughter of S. N. Brown (Dunedin).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 9 Apr 1918; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; W. J. Williams; *Otago Daily Times*, 18 Feb 1918. Portrait: Parliament House.

BEDGGOOD, JOHN (1802-60) was born at Stroud, Kent. A wheelwright by trade, he joined the service of the Church Missionary Society in 1836 and was stationed at Waimate. There he erected the first flourmill (after those belonging to the mission), and installed ovens and biscuit-making machinery to manufacture the wheat grown by the natives. He shipped his manufactures by way of Kerikeri to supply the shipping and troops visiting and quartered at the bay. Bedggood was a member of the Provincial Council for Bay of Islands from 1855 till his death (on 30 May 1860).

Marsden, *L. and J.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Jun 1860, 5 Feb 1900.

## BEEHAN

BEEHAN, WILLIAM (1853-1917) was born at Tralee, Kerry, Ireland, and arrived in New Zealand in 1873. After a period on the goldfields he served with John Cossgrove in Auckland, and later with Holloway, Garlick and Co., finally starting on his own account. He was a strong Liberal and was chairman of the central Liberal committee (1890), and president of the Auckland Liberal and Labour association for seven years. He assisted to establish the first Labour League, and was president of the shop assistants' association which co-operated in the passing of the shop hours act. He assisted also in organising the tailoresses' union and other textile workers, and was a constant champion of benefit societies. In 1903 Beehan was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 27 Oct 1917).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Oct 1917; *N.z. Herald*, 28 Oct 1917. Portrait: Parliament House.

BEETHAM, GEORGE (1840-1915), a son of William Beetham (q.v.), was born at Horn-castle, Lincolnshire, and emigrated to New Zealand in the *William and Jane*, which arrived in Wellington in 1855. With his brothers he settled on the Brancepeth estate, Wairarapa, and took an active part in the settlement of the district. He represented Wairarapa South in the Wellington Provincial Council (1873-75), and later sat for many years in the House of Representatives (for Wairarapa 1877-81, Wairarapa North 1881-87, and Masterton 1887-90). He was senior whip under the Atkinson ministry. Beetham was one of the founders of the Masterton hospital, and took an active interest in its administration. An alpinist of note, and a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society, Beetham saw the crater lake on mount Ruapehu when, accompanied by J. P. Maxwell, he reached the top on his second ascent in 1879. His accounts of the previous unsuccessful attempt and that of 1878, are given in his book, *The First Ascent of Mount Ruapehu, New Zealand*. In 1892 he and his wife (who was a daughter of N. W. Levin) were members of a party which ascended mount Ngauruhoe. In 1898 he settled in London, where his death occurred on 20 Aug 1915.

*N.z.P.D.*, 14 Sep 1915; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Col. Gent*; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; Cowan, *Tongariro National Park*, p. 70. Portrait: Parliament House.

## BELCHER

BEETHAM, WILLIAM (1809-88) was born in Yorkshire and lived there for many years. In 1835 he married Mary, daughter of Phillip Horsley. He studied art and became an accomplished portrait painter. He was living at Frimley, Surrey, when he decided for the sake of his family to emigrate to New Zealand. They sailed in the *William and Jane* (1855). His objective was Canterbury, but he was attracted by Wellington and decided to settle at the Hutt. In 1856, in partnership with John Hutton, he took up 10,000 acres of land in the Wairarapa, upon which he settled his sons. His later years he again devoted to painting, making some very good portraits (including Featherston, Te Raurapaha, Wakefield, Te Puni and Wi Tako). In 1885 he returned to England on a visit. He died on 3 Aug 1888.

BEGG, ALEXANDER CAMPBELL (1839-1907) was the son of a minister and was born at Liberton, near Edinburgh. After being educated at the High School in Edinburgh, he entered an insurance office. In 1859 he came to Otago in the *Alpine* and was for three years in the office of Young and McGlashan. He spent four years farming at Clutha and returned in 1866 to Dunedin, where he became manager for Douglas, Alderson and Co., pastoral agents. In 1870 he established himself as a stock and station agent. Begg was a member of the road board and the Roslyn borough council, and was for eight years mayor of Roslyn, and again in 1905-06. He was nine years a member of the Otago education board and served also on the hospital and charitable aid board, the benevolent trust (1894), and the Otago harbour board. He was on the Otago prohibition council and one of the leaders of the prohibition movement in the province, being a member at different times of the licensing committees in Roslyn and Dunedin city, and of the board of property of the Presbyterian church. Begg contested the City of Dunedin seat in 1896, and that for Taieri in 1899. He married (1867) a daughter of Peter Clarke (Clinton). His death occurred on 12 Oct 1907.

*Otago Daily Times*, 14 Oct 1907.

BELCHER, ROBERT HENRY (1846-1916), a son of Dr John Belcher, of Stoke, Devonport, was educated at King's College School, in Lon-

don, and from 1864-68 at King's College, where he graduated B.A. in 1867 and M.A. in 1868. He was elected a fellow in 1885. Ordained deacon, he was curate of St Ives, Cornwall (1868), and of St. John's, Kensington. In 1871 he was ordained priest and appointed assistant master at King's College School, and in 1874 master and chaplain. (LL.D. 1879). Belcher was in 1886 appointed rector of the Otago Boys' High School, of which he was in control for 10 years. During his regime much was done to improve the school and grounds and the standard of scholarship was raised in a marked degree. Belcher married (1868) Katherine, daughter of John Beard, London. On her death in 1894 he resigned the rectorship and returned to England. He was the author of *Degrees and 'Degrees'* (1873), part author of *Manuel des Examins.*

*N.Z. Clergy List*, 1889; *Col. Gent.*; Crockford; *Otago B.B.S. List*; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Aug 1933 (p).

BELL, ALLEN (1870-1936) was born in Canterbury and educated there, and as a young man he worked as a bushman until he saved enough money to buy a bush section. In 1895 he enlisted in the Bechuanaland Mounted Police and he served throughout the Matabele war in the Chartered Company's forces. He afterwards worked as a surveyor in South Africa, served in the Boer war (including the relief of Mafeking) and returned to New Zealand in 1902. He became a dairy farmer at Hamilton, and was prominent in farmers' organisations and a member of the Waipa county council and the Hamilton borough council. In 1914 he moved to the far north, and thereafter strongly advocated the needs of that district. Bell was elected M.P. for Bay of Islands (1922) as an independent, but in the next Parliament supported the Massey Government. Defeated by Rushworth in 1928, he contested the seat again in 1931. He was a founder of the Waikato Agricultural and Pastoral association and a first director of the Waikato Dairy Co. (1912), president of the North Auckland development board, and of the Kaitiaki chamber of commerce and Dairy Co. He edited the *Northland Age* and founded the *Northlander*. His death occurred on 14 Oct 1936.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Oct 1936. Portrait: Parliament House.

BELL, CHARLES NAPIER, was the son of James Stanislaus Bell, the British superintendent of Bluefields, Central America. He was a pupil with Bell and Miller (Glasgow), for whom he assisted in surveys of the Tay, the sewerage of Edinburgh and the Glasgow graving dock. He came to New Zealand in 1871 on behalf of Brogden Brothers and after completing their railway works was engineer to the Christchurch drainage board (1876-83), the Lyttelton harbour board (1878-85) and the Westport harbour board (1855-93). He was for a while chief engineer in New Zealand for the Midland Railway Co., and he constructed the Napier breakwater. Bell died on 3 Jan 1906.

*The Press*, 4 Jan 1906.

BELL, SIR FRANCIS DILLON (1821-98) was the second son of Edward Bell (died 1864), of Homsey, London, a merchant in France, and a descendant of Robert Barclay, of Urie, the Quaker apologist. His mother was Fanny (who died 1870), daughter of the Rev J. Matthews, of Cirencester. Bell was educated in France at Bordeaux, where his father lived, and at Auteuil, by tutors from whom he acquired an easy command of the French language. At the age of 17, through the influence of his kinsman Edward Gibbon Wakefield, he entered the service of the New Zealand Company in London, and for some months he was assistant-secretary (during the absence of Ward in Hamburg). He was keenly interested in the colony and in 1840 contributed to the *Colonial Magazine* an article on the subject, while in 1842, with F. Young, he published *Reasons for Promoting the Cultivation of New Zealand Flax.*

In 1843 Bell sailed for New Zealand in the *Ursula*, arriving in Port Nicholson on 12 Sep, a few weeks after the clash at the vVairau. In Oct he was sent to Auckland to interview acting-Governor Shortland and, if possible, to select lands there on behalf of the Company to the value of £50,000. By 9 Dec he had selected £10,000 worth of town lands and £25,000 of country, but the task was held up on the arrival of FitzRoy to assume the governorship. After several interviews Bell purchased for the Company at public auction 81 acres of land in the town at £100 per acre and a considerable area at North Shore. Altogether the Company spent £8,125 in town lands, £1,817 in suburban, and

£2,614 in farm lands at North Shore. Bell returned to Wellington with FitzRoy in H.M.S. *North Star* (Jan 1844). He was still hopeful (he wrote to W. Wakefield on 25 May) of 'evading any opposition in such a way as to enable them to carry on their usual operations with a better chance of success.' He suggested that the Company should buy a tract of native land not far from Auckland. Unfortunately the proposal was not promptly adopted; the land was bought up by private individuals and the Company was shut out of the Auckland field altogether by the competition of land claimants. By 16 Sep Bell realised that it was useless to persevere. At the increased price of land the Company could not hope to establish a profitable settlement there. Soon hostilities broke out in the neighbourhood of Bay of Islands, and Bell joined the militia, in which he held a lieutenant's commission until they were disbanded (Jul). In 1846, in company with W. Carrington, he made an ascent of mount Egmont, in the course of which he discovered the Bell fall (100 ft. high), on the main branch of the Hangatahua river. Later in the year he was gazetted a justice of the peace, and on 1 Oct a magistrate for Nelson. But other duties kept him in the North Island. In the Wairarapa squatters were paying as much as £300 a year for their runs, of which they claimed to have leases for 21 years. Squatting was illegal and Governor Grey gazetted a warning to that effect. After consulting Grey, Bell was sent to the Wairarapa (Feb 1847), accompanied by George Clarke as interpreter; with the object of purchasing a large tract of native land. Bell was unable to meet any paramount chiefs whose authority was unquestioned. The younger men were willing enough to sell, but the elders were generally hostile and would not even visit Wellington to discuss the matter with the Governor. Bell returned empty-handed, defeated by the squatting licenses (17 Mar).

On 15 Jun he was appointed to succeed Wicksteed as resident agent for the Company at New Plymouth, and he arrived there from Nelson on 31 Aug. He speedily made himself popular with settlers and natives, and when Grey visited the settlement in Mar 1848 the settlers asked that Bell might be permitted to negotiate with the natives for the purchase of land. Grey concurred and Bell, exercising great

vigour and judgment, negotiated the purchase from Rawiri Waiaua and others of a total area of 13,000 acres, including the Bell block. Payment was made for the most part in cattle. In order to test the friendliness or otherwise of the chiefs Katatore and Parata, a day was fixed some time ahead for cutting the survey lines in a public manner. Bell and his party arrived with an escort of 60 friendlies. There was some desultory scuffling with fists, sticks and the backs of tomahawks; but in a few days the line had been cut and the event was celebrated by a feast at which Wi Kingi te Rangitake was present. Bell left shortly afterwards to relieve Fox, who had resigned the post of resident agent at Nelson on being offered the attorney-generalship of New Munster. Fox was delayed for some time investigating land claims and it was not until Aug that Bell took over. Shortly afterwards, in consequence of an accident, he went to Wellington, where he was present at the deathbed of his relative, Col. Wakefield (Sep 1848). He contemplated returning to England, but Fox, having now succeeded as principal agent at Wellington, prevailed upon him to make another effort to purchase land in Wairarapa. In Nov 1848 Bell proceeded thither with the Government land purchase agent, H. T. Kemp (q.v.). Since his previous visit settlers had taken up another 100,000 acres, and they were now paying £600 per year rent. Bell convened meetings of the squatters and by promising fair compensation for their improvements won them over to a more conciliatory disposition. With his fluent command of Maori and his persuasive manner he made good headway also with the natives. They were excited by the prospect of the Canterbury settlement being located in Wairarapa. Anticipating advantages to themselves from having a number of whites settling among them, they had almost concluded to sell 900,000 acres between the Tararuas and the sea when news arrived that Captain Thomas was selecting a site on the Canterbury plains. It being now impossible to continue the negotiations on the old basis, Bell withdrew to consult Fox and Grey. His despatch of 31 Dec contains a spirited defence of the squatters, who in those days were anathema to the agricultural settlers. Bell and Kemp agreed that the news from Canterbury was responsible for the natives suddenly increasing their demands to £16,000 when the

negotiators returned after the earthquakes in Wellington. Fox was inclined to blame Bell for the failure, and decided to abandon the attempt to purchase the Wairarapa (18 Feb 1849).

Bell accordingly proceeded to his post at Nelson, completed the purchase of the Waitohi block and settled down to the duties of his office. Thomas Arnold, who visited him at that time, remarks on Bell's 'charming and delightful manners, for which I suppose he was greatly indebted to his French education.' An estrangement occurred between Bell and Fox during these years, originating in differences of opinion on Company and colonial affairs. Late in 1848, when Fox was absent from New Zealand, Bell was offered a seat in the Legislative Council of New Munster. Suspecting that Grey intended to postpone indefinitely the establishment of representative government, Bell at first hesitated to accept. A few days later Grey said that the settlers had made their wishes so clear that he would bring forward at once for consideration by the Legislative Councils of both provinces his scheme for a constitution, on the distinct understanding that the principles should be established as early as possible. In view of the great improvement in the state of the colony since Grey assumed the governorship, Bell felt that he would be justified in accepting the post. He was confident that Grey would not long delay the introduction of representative government, and in the meantime he could assist in the overhaul of the colony's finances. It would be better that he should express the views of the settlers of New Munster than leave the whole work of legislating to a council drawn from the population of Auckland. He realised that local obloquy would probably attach to him and was aware of Fox's objection to nominated councils, but he did not think that Fox (if he had been present) would have objected to one of the Company's officials acting as he was doing. Fox's objection was emphatic. He contended that Bell's acceptance of a seat 'could in no respect be regarded as a mere exercise of private political liberty,' but was calculated to prejudice the interests of the Company. The court of directors supported him (28 Jun). But constitutional changes on the spot eliminated the whole problem. The tenor of Earl Grey's despatch of 22 Dec soon convinced Bell that the

acceptance of seats in the Council (as nominees) was incompatible with the independence of members. Bell, Ludlam and Bannatyne thereupon resigned.

The year 1849 was full of change for Bell. In Apr he married Margaret, daughter of Abraham Hort, a leading member of the Jewish community in Wellington. Thereafter he returned to his post at Nelson and devoted his attention to straightening out the affairs there. Having completed the Waitohi purchase, he presided over a committee of settlers to adjust differences between the Company and its land purchasers, and did duty regularly as a magistrate until the Company surrendered its charter in 1851. For some months in 1850 he was engaged with Fox before the land claims inquiry commission, and he had, of course, acted previously as commissioner for confiscated titles. In Apr 1851 he was appointed commissioner of crown lands in Wellington and he arrived there with his family in Jun, in time to take his seat in the Legislative Council of New Zealand, presumably as an official member. His contribution to this session was of outstanding value. He showed a sound grip of constitutional principles and incidentally advocated universal franchise for every colonist of good character. Bell also attended the session of 1852-53, at which Grey took his farewell of his own Councils on the eve of the promulgation of the new constitution. When that instrument was brought into operation Bell's services were in demand. In the first Wellington Provincial Council he was elected to represent Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay, and in Dec 1853 he was appointed chairman of the committee on education. A few months later he was a member of the executive.

In May 1854 he was called to the Legislative Council and he was the first minister to have charge of Government business in that chamber (where 60 years later his son held the same position). On 6 Jun he seconded a motion in favour of an elective upper house as being more likely to command popular respect. In 1855 he was present only at the opening of the session. At the general election at the end of that year he was returned for the Hutt seat and he was thus in full standing in the popular chamber when responsible government came into its own; and a few months later (18 Apr 1856) he was ap-

pointed a member of the executive council. He collaborated as Colonial Treasurer in Sewell's administration (7-20 May). In that session the land claims settlement act was passed. There was nobody in New Zealand better qualified to unravel the tangled thread of New Zealand land claims than Bell, and his appointment as commissioner (5 Nov) was a foregone conclusion. He had dropped out of provincial politics (15 Feb) and he now resigned from the House. For the next six years he devoted himself with patient skill and industry to the intricate problem presented by the confused mass of claims. The electors of Grey and Bell when Lewthwaite resigned petitioned him to stand for Parliament (1858), but he was defeated by C. Brown. In Jan 1860 he was elected unopposed to represent the southern constituency of Wallace. The burning question was the demand of the Murihiku settlers for separation from the province of Otago, whose government, seated remotely in Dunedin, was accused of neglecting the needs of Southland. Bell fought strenuously for the separation of Southland; it was duly achieved, and when he first visited the district in the middle of 1861 he was able to say that the electors had twice elected him to Parliament without having seen him. He was one of the commissioners appointed early in 1862 to adjust the debt between Southland and the mother province.

In Aug 1862 Bell was sworn in as a member of the Domett ministry, with charge of the important departments of the Treasury, Customs and Native Affairs. In Feb the Imperial Government had definitely relinquished control of native affairs. Knowing the Maori as he did, Bell strongly advocated a vigorous policy towards them, and in Apr 1863 he accompanied Grey with the force which reoccupied the Tairāhema. He believed in dealing justly with the Maori, and it was mainly on his advice that Grey, after discussing the Waitara purchase on the ground with Teira, published his proclamation (22 Apr) admitting the invalidity of the transaction. It was duly renounced a week or two later (11 May). Grey complimented Bell and his colleagues on the zeal and cordiality with which they had entered into this investigation. Convinced, nevertheless, that where war was necessary it should be prosecuted with vigour, Bell went to the Waikato to try to limit

the scope of the fighting by persuading and propitiating friendly or doubtful tribes. When General Cameron crossed the Maungatawhiri (on 12 Jul) the die was cast. Bell left Auckland on the following day with Gorst (q.v.) to get into touch with refugees in the Hunua range in the hope that he could move them out of harm's way before they became involved in hostilities. He spoke in Maori to an excited and hostile gathering at Te Aparangi, explaining to them that the removal of Waikato tribesmen from their lands at Mangere was due to the existence of a conspiracy in the Waikato to make an attack on Auckland. They appreciated his courage in making such a journey, and remembered that he was one of the supporters of FitzGerald's motion for the admission of Maori members to Parliament; but the crossing of the Maungatawhiri was an unanswerable objection to their taking the oath of loyalty. Determined now to push the war as vigorously as possible, Bell went with Gorst to Australia to raise military settlers for the frontier lands in Waikato, and incidentally to discuss the Panama steam service with the Australian colonies (Aug 1863). The ministry, however, did not long survive.

When he went out of office (30 Oct), Bell was free to take up his residence in Otago, where for some years he had had both business and political interests. He severed his northern associations (including membership of the Auckland domain board) and settled in Dunedin. In partnership with C. W. Richmond and Stafford he took up the pastoral property in the Ida valley known popularly as the 'ministerial run.' For some years thereafter Mrs Bell was one of the most popular hostesses in Dunedin. Bell himself was fully employed with his property, his political interests, and, as time offered, with his artistic pursuits. In 1865 he collaborated with Richmond and Fox in forming a fine collection of their water colours for the Dunedin exhibition. In 1864 Bell was one of the commissioners to investigate the Otago civil service. Early in 1865 he decided to enter provincial politics. He was defeated for the Manuherikia seat (which Murison resigned to make way for him), but was accepted a few weeks later by Matau and represented that electorate until Jan 1867, when he unsuccessfully contested Dunedin City. He declined office

under Vogel in 1866. In Parliament he represented Wallace until 1866; and thereafter, owing to a redistribution, he was member for Maitāura (1866-75). When Vogel resigned from the Provincial Council of Otago, Bell succeeded him as representative of the City of Dunedin (May 1869). Two months later he became a member of the executive in Fox's ministry, and the country was well served when he went to England with Featherston to raise a loan of [2,000,000 for Vogel's public works policy. Saunders remarks that 'the courtly and attractive manners of both contributed to the success of their task.'

Bell got back to New Zealand early in 1870. He at once re-entered the Otago Provincial Council as member for Oteramika (1871-73). He still retained his seat in the General Assembly and when Parliament met (14 Aug 1871) he was elected Speaker of the House (in succession to Sir David Monro). He held that position with distinction until the end of the Parliament (21 Oct 1875) when he retired from popular politics. He was created a Knight Bachelor in 1873 and in 1894 was granted the title of 'Honourable.' In Jul 1877 Bell was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until May 1882. Practically his last public service in New Zealand was (again in collaboration with Fox) as a member of the royal commission appointed in 1880 to investigate the confiscation of Maori lands and the trial of native prisoners. Their long experience of native questions; their sympathies, somewhat differing; and their shrewd commonsense enabled these two veterans to render signal service to the colony.

When that task was finished Bell was nominated to succeed Vogel in London as agent-general for the colony. He had now seen forty years' service in connection with New Zealand. He could certainly, at different stages of his career, have achieved high political office and probably have retained it; but he had never courted popularity. He was too good an administrator to be very successful as a party politician; and he could, moreover, see too plainly the point of view of his opponents. In saying farewell to his neighbours in Otago (13 Dec 1880) he prided himself that he had never asked favours, and as a pastoral settler he had realised from the beginning that his

class should retire automatically before the advance of the agriculturist. In London Bell at once took a leading position amongst the oversea representatives. That was assured by his fine personal equipment and his long experience. His courtly manners and his facile command of the French language called him to leadership also in the diplomatic field. The early eighties, when France was disposed to extend her activities in the western Pacific, were anxious for the British colonies in that neighbourhood. The settling of recidivists in New Caledonia and the New Hebrides was a source of constant friction; and Bell led with great judgment and determination the demand for its cessation. He could discuss the problem as freely and effectively in Paris as in Whitehall, and he steered the negotiations through difficult channels with remarkable success. In 1881 he received the K.C.M.G. In 1886 he was an executive commissioner for the Colonial and Indian exhibition in London (receiving the C.B. for his services). Three years later he was a member of the Mansion House committee for the Paris exhibition, and amongst the honours distributed by M. Waddington on 25 Jan 1890 he received the cross of a commander of the Legion of Honour. During his term of office as Agent-general he raised over [8,000,000 for the colony by loan and conversion. As delegate, ambassador and financial agent he was equally successful, and when he retired (25 Sep 1891) his services were acknowledged by votes of thanks passed by both houses of the New Zealand Parliament. He came to New Zealand at the end of 1891 and six months later returned to London, where Lady Bell died (12 Jun 1892). A helpmeet of ready tact and pleasant manners, Thomas Arnold had found her 'not less intelligent than she was amiable; and to talk to her was a real pleasure.' Her hospitality at Wellington and Auckland, at Waihemostation and in the Dunedin home hedged with fragrant briar, was continued in the colonial circle in London. Bell returned to New Zealand at the end of 1896 and died on 15 Jul 1898.

Bell entered upon colonial life with the great advantage of a previous apprenticeship in the office of the New Zealand Company, but with definite handicaps. The polished manners acquired with his French in his school days did

not necessarily make the path easier in early colonial days for one of distinctly retiring habit who often appeared to be aloof. Well educated and widely read, he was a fine speaker and a keen critic. In debate he was imperturbable in temper, considerate and moderate in language; so that he often smoothed over difficult situations. A good business man, he never desired wealth and could sympathise with the difficulties of others. For many years he was one of Grey's most valued advisers. As an administrator Gisborne considered him one of the best officials New Zealand ever had. He had 'a mind remarkable for its perceptive faculties and for its analytical powers. His industry is indefatigable; his fondness for work grows by what it feeds on; and in fact he often makes work for his own enjoyment.

G.B.a.p., 1844i556, N.Z.C.; *NZ.P.D.*, pass.; *Otago and Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *App. H.R. pass.*; Gorst, 327, 384; Arnold; Wells; Ward; Broad; Rusden. Saunders; Rees; Reeves; W. D. Stewart (p); Gisborne (p); Harrop; Ross; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Cox, *Men of Mark*; Ward; Hocken, *Otago*; *Otago Daily Times*, II Dec 1880, 15 Jun 1892, 16 Jul 1898; Scholefield in *Evening Post*, 22 Sep 1934 (P). Portrait: Parliament House.

BELL, SIR FRANCIS HENRY DILLON (1851-1936) was the eldest son of Sir Francis Dillon Bell (q.v.) and was born at Nelson while his father was resident agent for the New Zealand Company. He was educated at the Auckland Grammar School and at the Otago Boys' High school (1864-69), where he was dux for four years (1864-68) and captain of the cadet corps. Proceeding to St John's College, Cambridge, he graduated B.A. (1872). He read law at the Middle Temple, was called (1874) and commenced to practise his profession with C. B. Izard in Wellington. He was for many years senior partner after the amalgamation of the firm with Buller and Gully.

Bell was an outstanding lawyer with a high reputation at the bar, and appeared over a long period in many leading cases in the courts of New Zealand and before the Privy Council. Some notable cases were the litigation of the Midland Railway Company and the Bank of New Zealand assets realisation board. After the elevation of Sir Robert Stout to the chief justiceship Bell was the acknowledged leader of the bar in New Zealand. He was crown solicitor

in Wellington from 1878 to 1911, was president of the Wellington Law society and for 17 years president of the New Zealand Law society (1901-18), only retiring to become Attorney-general. He was one of the first king's counsel appointed (in 1907). Under Atkinson's Government Bell was offered a judgeship, but found his practise at the bar and his public activities too attractive. He always took a keen interest in law reform, and both as a barrister and as a minister of the crown seized every opportunity of amending the law in such ways as his long experience suggested. Not only could he elucidate the law in terms which were intelligible to the layman, but he was a skilful draftsman and could direct legislative enactment in a competent manner. No better drafting was ever done in the New Zealand Parliament than when Bell was leader of the Legislative Council and the minister responsible for the law drafting office. Amongst the measures which stand out as monuments of his skill are the mortgages extension act (which was afterwards copied in other dominions) and the licensing amendment act of 1918.

Bell took a very full share in the public life of Wellington and the country at large. In 1891, 1892 and 1897 he was mayor of Wellington and during this time he secured the passage through Parliament of a bill authorising the raising of a loan of [150,000 to introduce a system of drainage. From 1891-93 and 1896-97 he was also a member of the harbour board. When he first contested a parliamentary election (for Wellington City in 1890) he stood as an Independent, making no pledge, and declaring himself firmly opposed to granting the freehold of crown lands. G. Fisher, Duthie and T. K. Macdonald were elected. In 1892 Macdonald resigned. Bell stood again and was defeated by W. McLean (q.v.). At the general election in 1893 he was returned, with Stout and Duthie as his colleagues. In his short term in Parliament (1893-96) he established a friendship with W. F. Massey which lasted throughout life. For the next few years Bell was closely engaged in his legal practice, and made no attempt to re-enter politics. When the Reform party came into power in 1912 he was at once called to the Legislative Council and became a member of the ministry. He administered the portfolios of Internal Affairs and Immigration

until the formation of the National Government in 1915. In this he was at first only Minister of Immigration, but on the appointment of Herdman to the Supreme Court bench in 1918 he assumed the attorney-generalship, which he held continuously under Massey and Coates until 1926. His control of the Legislative Council was marked by singular tact and decorum and conciliatory treatment of criticism, which yielded the best results in legislation.

By his personal qualities and standing in the cabinet Bell exercised a profound influence upon the affairs of New Zealand during the war of 1914-18. His own part in the war (in which he lost a son) was whole hearted and unquestioning. Grasping essential facts readily, he appreciated without difficulty the implications of the war upon the social economy and the legislation of New Zealand, and was able not only to guide his own Government soundly through the constitutional troubles by which it was surrounded, but on occasion to advise a course which commended itself to the British Government and to the allies. He shared with Sir John Salmond (q.v.) the task of framing the intricate and novel legislation and regulations that were called for by the new conditions. Incidentally it was Bell who led the protest against the despatch of the first portion of the New Zealand Division oversea without what he considered an adequate convoy. He tendered his resignation and Massey threatened to offer his. Only at this point did the Governor-general recognise that the cabinet was in earnest.

Almost as soon as he became a member of the Legislative Council Bell introduced a bill to reform the constitution of that chamber by placing it on an elective basis. Before the election he had induced Massey to adopt this proposal, and he declared that he had entered the Council for the express object of amending it in this fashion. The Council passed the second reading almost without opposition, but deferred further consideration till next session in order to permit the electors to consider the proposal. The Lower House passed a series of resolutions approving the principle of the bill. Next session the Council again resisted the reform and Massey had to obtain from the Governor a sufficient number of new appointments to the Council to ensure its passage.

This was achieved in 1914, but the intervention of the war and the formation of the National Government (some members of which were not favourable to the reform) prevented its being put into operation. Stewart says that Bell's real object in moving for an elective legislative council was to prevent the possibility of a government in power using the system of nomination to the council to push radical measures through parliament. On the legislation to introduce conscription for service in the forces oversea Bell's Quaker ancestry was evident in the stand which he took on behalf of conscientious objectors.

He was created a K.C.M.G. in 1915. After the war Bell was the adviser of the Government in the mass of legislation to implement the repeal of the war regime. His part in drafting the legislation under which Samoa was entrusted to New Zealand under a mandate is noteworthy. He firmly believed that it was a duty New Zealand must assume. The statute and regulations which he drew up were wise and far-sighted; a model of brevity and precision. When some years later (1923-26) he was minister in charge of the mandate he imported an energy and firmness into the task which were unwonted and to the native mind almost startling. One of the interests into which Bell threw much enthusiasm during the war years was the establishment of the Forestry department, of which he had charge as first commissioner (1915-22). During Massey's post-war administration Bell had on more than one occasion to assume the responsibility of leading the Government.

In 1922 Bell fulfilled an ardent desire of his later years by visiting Europe and representing New Zealand at the allied conferences at Genoa and the Hague and at the assembly of the League of Nations. There he insisted on the right of the mandatory power to appeal against adverse criticism of its administration, and questioned the right of the mandates commission, which was only a committee of the council, to initiate such criticism. Firmly attached to the cause of peace, Bell came back to New Zealand filled with enthusiasm for the League of Nations Union, which seemed to him as necessary to the success of the League as popular election is to democratic government. He never succeeded in imparting to the Prime Minister his own belief in the future of the

League. While in England Bell received at the hands of the Prince of Wales a casket presented to him by the Legislative Council and at a latter date a gift from the members of the House of Representatives. He was promoted to G.C.M.G. in 1923, and was created a privy councillor in the same year.

In Parliament in 1923 Bell set his hand to the reform of the land laws by bringing all titles under the land transfer act. In that year he was again acting-Prime Minister during the absence of Massey in London. When Massey's health failed towards the end of 1924 Bell was the virtual head of the Government for a few months. After the death of Massey (on 10 May 1925) he became Prime Minister almost automatically and remained so from 14 to 30 May. This was merely to enable the party to elect a new leader; he declined the party's invitation to continue in office until the general election at the end of the year. There had not been a Prime Minister in the Legislative Council since Waterhouse (52 years earlier) but Bell made it clear that that was not the reason why he declined to hold office. His age and personal difficulties prevented him from acceding to the wish of the party, and he was determined to go out of office altogether as soon as the new Prime Minister had formed his ministry. He wrote to Sir James Allen: 'You can understand that it is nothing but mischievous for a man who has led the orchestra to play anything else than a second violin when he loses the lead.' (He had been credited by the public with having, by his personal influence and his ripe experience, practically controlled the policy of the Government for years past.)

In Jan 1926 he surrendered his departmental duties and left New Zealand to accompany Coates to the Imperial Conference in London and to attend the League of Nations in Geneva. At the Prime Minister's request he remained in the executive while he was in Europe on this occasion. He also attended, at the request of the Foreign Office and the Colonial Office, the conference at Geneva relating to the International Court of Justice at the Hague, at which he was vice-president and a member of the drafting committee. Bell was deeply anxious to take such action as would encourage the United States to participate in the court. On the other hand he insisted vigorously that any

dispute between different units of the British Commonwealth of Nations should not be amenable to the International Court but should be regarded as a domestic one. At the League of Nations he viewed with uneasiness the claim of some of the dominions to a seat on the council of the League. He felt that this would tend to destroy the unity of the Empire and might even on occasion result in the vote of Great Britain being neutralised by that of one of the dominions. He viewed with suspicion also the Balfour formula (which evolved into the statute of Westminster) and he was equally opposed to the idea of an empire consultative council. The council of prime ministers he held to be the true imperial council and inevitably superior to 'any conclave or cabal of ministers of second rank in London.' Bell married (1878) Caroline, daughter of the Hon. William Robinson (q.v.). He died on 13 Mar 1936. His life, by W. Downie Stewart (1937) is a judicious though intimate biography.

His son, WILLIAM HENRY DILLON BELL (1884-1917), was educated at Wellington College and Cambridge University; read for the bar at the Inner Temple and after being called joined his father's firm in Wellington. He was M.P. for Suburbs of Wellington (1911-14) and served in the war of 1914-18 with the New Zealand force at Samoa (Aug 1914) and with King Edward's Horse in France, where he was killed on 31 Jul 1917.

*N.Z.P.D., pass.* (notably 8 Jul 1917, 31 Mar 1936); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; Sheila Macdonald; W. Downie Stewart, *op. cit.* (p); *Otago Daily Times, Evening Post*, 15 Dec 1922, 13 Mar 1936 (p); *The Dominion, N.Z. Herald, Otago Daily Times*, 14 Mar 1936 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

BELL, GEORGE (1809-99) was born at Hull, Yorkshire, his father being an official of the customs. He received a good classical education at a private school and served his apprenticeship to a mercantile firm, after which he became accountant and salesman to a firm in York. Owing to the closing down of a sugar refinery with which he was connected he became superintendent of a manufacturing establishment at Sheffield. There he taught himself shorthand, became interested in the anti-com law agitation and published a brochure on the currency. He was of a religious disposition and took a great

## BELL

interest in Sunday school work. In 1852 Bell came to Melbourne, where he became a government shorthand writer, was engaged in the law courts and assisted in establishing a parliamentary Hansard staff for the *South Australian Advertiser*. In 1863 he came to Dunedin and was appointed to the reporting staff of the *Otago Daily Times* and for some time edited the *Witness*. In 1869 he helped to establish the *Independent* and a little later bought the *Star*, with which he amalgamated the *Independent*. In 1872 he brought out a morning issue of the *Star* to prevent another morning paper being established. This paper was sold in 1873 to the *Guardian* company, which also took over the *Southern Mercury*. In 1894 the *Star* was taken over by a company and Bell retired. He died on 4 Feb 1899.

Paul; *Evening Star*, 4 Feb 1899.

BELL, GEORGE MEREDITH (1836-98) was born in Tasmania, where his father was Governor of the convict settlement. Educated at Hobart and Eton College, he returned to Australia, became a squatter and married. After the gold rush in Otago he bought the Waimea Plains estate from David McKellar (q.v.) and also Croydon; and sold them in 1878 to the New Zealand Agricultural company. He proceeded to England to watch the interests of the vendors to the company, and about 1885 returned to New Zealand and bought Wantwood estate, where he resided till his death (on 10 Jun 1898). Bell took part in initiating the Waimea Plains railway and assisted in many ways to develop the district. He was a prominent supporter of the Southland Agricultural and Pastoral association and helped to promote the Southland Freezing Co. He represented Oteramika in the Southland Provincial Council (1869-70) but declined to stand for Parliament. He was president of the Southland Racing Club and was a keen supporter of the Birchwood Hunt Club.

Beattie, ii; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Jul 1898.

BELL, ROBERT (1863-1937), a son of David Bell, was born in Dunfermline, Scotland, and at the age of 20 emigrated to Queensland, where he was sub-manager of the *Townsville Daily Bulletin* (1883-86). Coming to New Zealand, he joined the *Timaru Herald*, and in

## BELLAIRS

1900 bought the *Ashburton Mail* and the *Guardian*. He managed these papers till 1908, and in 1911 he transformed the business into a private company. He was managing director of the *Lyttelton Times* (1917-26) and chairman of the *Timaru Post* from 1922. In 1911 Bell attended the conference of the Empire Press Union in London, and he was a delegate to the Press Congress of the world at San Francisco in 1915. He was a chairman of the Ashburton Permanent Building and Investment Society and of the Ashburton Gas Co. and president of the Canterbury Society of Arts and a governor of the Ashburton High School. He endowed a scholarship in journalism at Canterbury University College. His marriage to Mary, daughter of Captain John McPeake, of Donaghadee, Ireland, took place in 1885. He died on 24 Aug 1937.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post* and *The Press*, 26 Aug 1937.

BELLAIRS, EDMUND HOOKE WILSON (1823-96) was the eldest son of Sir William Bellairst, of Mulbarton Lodge, Norfolk. Entering the army (1841), he received his commission in the 60th Rifles and transferred to the 7th Fusiliers (1842) as a lieutenant. In 1848 he retired to accept the post of exon of the Yeomen of the Guard (1849). He served in that capacity until 1852, when he retired. Bellairst in 1852 married Emilia, daughter of James Bellairst Stevenson, of Uffington, and came to New Zealand. In 1854 he accompanied W. D. B. Mantell to the south to pay the Maori owners for the Murihiku block, and he himself took up land at Waimahaka. He was appointed a justice of the peace and in 1853 was called to the Legislative Council under the new constitution. He took a prominent part in the constitutional debates in 1854. Returning to England soon afterwards he vacated his seat.

In 1859 he acted as correspondent for *The Times* in Paris. Between 1861-64 he was captain and adjutant of the 1st Norfolk rifle volunteers. In 1878 he was appointed vice-consul at Bayonne (France) and in the following year transferred to Biarritz, where he lived for many years. Bellairst died on 14 Sep 1896.

Var Office records; Fox-Davies; Hocken, *Otago; N.Z.P.D.*, 1854; Beattie, i, ii; *The Times*, 16 Sep 1896.

## BENNET

BENNET, JAMES (1830-1908) was born in Forfarshire and brought up to agriculture. In 1853 he married a daughter of Alexander Findlay, of Forfarshire, and emigrated to Victoria, where he became a carter to the goldfields. Twelve years later he crossed to New Zealand, and carried on the same occupation till 1872, when he bought land in the Crookston district, and settled at Rae's Junction. In 1876 Bennet was elected to the Tuapeka county council, of which he was chairman for ten years. He served on the school committee (becoming chairman in 1895) and was a member of the Tuapeka licensing committee. From 1899 till his death (on 3 May 1908) he was Liberal member of Parliament for Tuapeka.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1908; Don; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

BENNETT, JOHN BOYLE (1808-80) was born at Clonakilty, county Cork, Ireland. He studied medicine and graduated M.D., but after some years of practice forsook medicine for journalism and a few years later became editor of *The Watchman*, a religious paper in London. A writer of considerable ability and style, he was invited in 1849 by John Williamson (q.v.) to accept the editorship of *The New Zealander* (Auckland), and he held that position for six years with conspicuous success. Though his position precluded him from taking a very active part in public affairs, he was closely associated with social movements, particularly the Y.M.C.A., of which he was many years president, and the Benevolent Society (in which also Mrs Bennett was deeply interested). In 1855 Bennett was appointed registrar of births, deaths and marriages for the province of Auckland, and later registrar-general for the Colony. In 1866 he left Auckland to take up his residence in Wellington, where he died on 15 Jun 1880.

BENT, KIMBLE (1837-1916), the son of a master ship-builder and a half-caste Red Indian mother, was born in Eastport, Maine, United States of America. With his brother he was sent to Portland to learn the confectionery trade, but tiring of that he joined the U.S. training ship *Martin* and soon rose to be deckman and instructor of recruits. In 1856 he married Sarah Crosby. When she ran off with another man he went to England, where he

## BEST

lived wildly until his money was finished. In 1859 he enlisted with the 57th Regiment at Liverpool, but soon regretted his action and attempted to desert. He was brought back and sentenced to a term of imprisonment. He served two years with the regiment in India and came with it to Taranaki. Bent made several attempts to obtain a discharge. Eventually he deserted to the Hauhau, who accepted him as a slave. He became the personal possession of various chiefs and was constantly in danger both from the fire of the soldiers and from the distrust of his Hauhau companions. He served behind the Maori lines during Titokowaru's war (1868-69) making cartridges and cultivating the land; and was an eyewitness of many gruesome scenes, including the revival of cannibalism. In 1881 Bent came out of his bush exile, but he never returned to live amongst the whites. He gained some reputation amongst the natives as a tohunga and a medicine man. He died on 22 May 1916.

James Cowan, *The Adventures of Kimble Bent*, 1911 (p); *Taranaki News*, 28 Jun 1873; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Aug 1880.

BERRY, WILLIAM (1839-1903) was born in Scotland. At the age of 12 he was apprenticed in the composing room of the *Scotsman*, Edinburgh, and thereafter he educated himself by private study and attending night schools. He was for some years a reader and was assistant foreman in the office. Berry came to New Zealand in 1864 under engagement to the *Southern Cross* (then owned by Creighton and Scales) and remained on the paper as a reporter till 1868, when he went to the *Thames Advertiser* which was acquired by A. G. Horton. In 1875 he returned to Auckland, and became editor of the *New Zealand Herald* which he controlled until his death (on 2 Oct 1903). Berry, who spoke Maori and sympathised with the natives, acted as correspondent for the *Southern Cross* during the Hauhau war and wrote despatches exposing the treatment of Hauhau women and children.

Morton; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Oct 1903; *Evening Star*, 3 Oct 1903.

BEST, ELSDON (1856-1931) was born at Porirua, where his father, William Best (who arrived in 1844) had taken up land. Until the age of nine he lived in close touch with nature

## BEST

in the bush and learned much of the habits of birds and the lore of the countryside. In 1865 the family moved to Wellington and he had a few years' education in the Commercial School on Wellington Terrace. He passed the junior civil service examination and obtained a post in the office of the registrar-general.

After one year of sedentary occupation he gave up his post and went to Poverty Bay (1874). There he worked for some years on a sheep station, but when the Parihaka trouble arose he joined the Armed Constabulary. He left the force after the coup of 1881 and returned to the East Coast, where he was employed with W. D. S. Macdonald on a cattle station. In 1883, wishing to see the world, Best left for Hawaii. Thence he proceeded to California, where he worked amongst the redwoods and then farther east, ranching in Texas and the Middle West states. Returning to New Zealand after the Tarawera eruption in 1886, he worked for some years in sawmills in the Urewera country, then being opened for the first time. Then he joined the lands and survey department.

Altogether Best spent about sixteen years in the Urewera, in circumstances which enabled him to gain a competent command of the language and a rich knowledge of the customs, traditions and lore of the Tuhoe. At the suggestion of S. Percy Smith he made a special study of the Urewera from 1896. He was a tireless explorer, a patient observer and a methodical recorder, and when he returned to Wellington in the early years of the century his knowledge of the Maori people made him a desirable officer of the Dominion Museum. There in the following years he devoted study and care to the arrangement and setting forth of the vast mass of material already in his possession and to the acquisition of further stores. He wrote a series of papers on Maori life and customs which were published as Museum bulletins and monographs, holding a unique position as authoritative studies of various phases of Maori ethnology and philology. These monographs were on such topics as the Maori canoe, thepa, fishing and sea foods, storehouses, agriculture, mythology and religion. Many papers were contributed by him to the proceedings of the Polynesian Society and the New Zealand Institute and he published also

## BETHUNE

several volumes of greater importance in size, though not necessarily more scholarly, than these modest bulletins. Best's first noteworthy paper, on the neolithic Maori, appeared in the *Yearbook* of 1892. In 1896 he published a paper on the Rangitaiki basin and in the following year one on Waikaremoana. His period of greatest output was following the great war. His material was now better digested and arranged and he was able to publish fourteen bulletins within seven years. During this period also he published his two most important works, *The Maori as He was* (in 1924), and *Tuhoe, the Children of the Mist* (in 1925). Each was in two volumes. During the same time he provided much historical information for other purposes and wrote smaller volumes on the history and topography of certain localities.

In 1914 the New Zealand Institute honoured Best with the award of the Hector medal for research in ethnology, and five years later he was elected a fellow. He was a foundation member of the Polynesian Society (1892). Sir Apirana Ngata, speaking in 1922, said: 'There is not a member of the Maori race who is fit to wipe the boots of Mr. Elsdon Best in the matter of the knowledge of the lore of the race to which we belong.' Best died on 9 Sep 1931.

*Polyn. Jour.*, pass. (notably Mar 1932 with p. and bibliog.); *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*; Best, *op. cit.*; *Annals N.z. Lit* (p); James Cowan in *N.z. Railways Magazine*, 1 Jan 1936 (p); *The Dominion*, 10 Sep 1931 (p); *Evening Post*, 9 Sep 1931.

BESWICK, JOSEPH SUTTON (1831-88) was born in England and came to Canterbury in the early days of the settlement, becoming interested in the Springfield estate. He represented Mandeville in the Provincial Council (1862-67, 1870-74) and was a member of the Stewart executive in 1866-67 and of the Kennaway executive in 1871-74 (in the capacity of provincial treasurer). He also represented Kaiapoi in Parliament (1866-67). Beswick was in business as a grain merchant at Ashburton for some years, and was then appointed magistrate at Lyttelton. In 1882 he was transferred to Timaru, where he remained till his death (on 3 Jun 1888).

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Acland; *Timaru Herald*, 5 Jun 1888.

BETHUNE, JOHN HUGH (1827-94) was born at Dingwall, Scotland. He first came to New

## BETHUNE

Zealand in 1851 and left shortly afterwards for New South Wales to wind up the affairs of the Auckland Islands Whaling Co. He settled in Wellington finally in 1854. He was for many years with Bethune and Hunter, and eventually in 1877 established the auctioneering business and land and estate agency of J. H. Bethune and Co. He married (1857) a daughter of George Hunter (q.v.). Bethune was a founder of the Wellington chamber of commerce and of the Wellington Gas Co. and for many years was a government nominee on the board of the Government Life Insurance department. He was a churchwarden of St. Peter's, Wellington. His death occurred on 10 Aug 1894.

Ward (p); *N.Z. Times*, II Aug 1894.

BETHUNE, KENNETH (1825-55) was a son of the Rev H. Bethune, of Dingwall, Ross-shire, Scotland. He came to New Zealand in the *Cuba* (Jan 1840) and entered into business in Wellington with G. Hunter as Bethune and Hunter. He was a burgess in 1843 and in 1846 was elected a lieutenant in the Te Aro militia. Bethune represented Wellington City in the Provincial Council (1853-54), resigning to go to England. There he married (1855) Martha Harriette, daughter of Captain Goldie, of the 76th regiment (HigWand Light Infantry). He died in London on 25 Jul 1855.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; *N.Z. Spectator*, 5 Dec 1855; *Wellington Independent*, 6 Dec 1870.

BEVAN, JOHN (1837-1911) was born in Jersey, Channel islands, and educated at the Jersey Grammar School. He emigrated to Victoria in 1857 and came to New Zealand nine years later. Bevan was chairman of the Westland education board and a member of the Westland waste lands board and served on other local bodies. He represented Hokitika in Parliament (1884-87).

Harrop, *Westland*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v. Portrait: Parliament House.

BEVAN-BROWN, CHARLES EDMUND (1854-1926) was born at Camelford, North Cornwall, the son of the Rev William R. Brown, a Methodist minister. He began his education at the Grammar School, Louth (which Tennyson once attended). Later he moved to the Bristol Grammar School, where he remained till 1874. In 1873 he won an Oxford

## BEVAN-BROWN

leaving scholarship and in 1874 an open scholarship at Lincoln College, where he went into residence. Among his contemporaries were H. H. Asquith, Herbert Gladstone, George Curzon, and Oscar Wilde. His education continued along classical lines and in 1878 he gained a second class in literae humaniores. During his term at Oxford he came under the influence of Jowett, Ruskin and Matthew Arnold. His faith in religion was almost shattered by the teachings of Arnold but later, on broader and more secure foundations, grew strong and remained with him till the end of his life. His first appointment in 1879 was as a master at Manchester Grammar School, where he had as colleagues C. F. Bourne (q.v.), afterwards headmaster of Christ's College, Christchurch, and John Harkness (q.v.), some years rector of Waitaki High School.

In 1883 after having been summoned with 20 others to an interview with Professors Jowett and Sedgwick, Mr. Wilson (head of Clifton) and Sir Walter Kennaway, he was appointed to the headmastership of the Boys' High School, Christchurch. In Jan 1884 he married Annie Allen, daughter of Augustus Cridland (Exeter), and sailed for New Zealand. The school had been opened in 1881, the headmaster being Thomas Miller, who had endeared himself to pupils and parents but had resigned after a disagreement with the board. Much resentment was felt and many boys removed to other schools, until in 1886 the number had fallen as low as seventy. The new headmaster's reputation as a teacher and organiser grew rapidly, by the nineties the school was again flourishing and it became the largest secondary school in New Zealand. Its growth continued until in 1920 the roll had reached 448, the maximum set by the board of governors. In 1899, such was his reputation as a scholar and teacher that Bevan-Brown was offered the post of inspector-general of schools, which he declined. His object in teaching was the building of character and he did not measure the success of a school solely by examination results. In building character he attached supreme importance to religion and religious observance. The school day opened with prayers and in addition he established classes for religious instruction which were held in the morning prior to the general assembly.

## BEVERIDGE

He himself instructed the senior classes, but he enlisted the services of local clergymen to take other classes. He was a great imperialist and imbued his pupils with a true sense of patriotism and a real love of the mother country and the Empire. The principles which he laid down and the force of his personality made him a great figure in the life of the school. During the war he wrote to each of the 800 old boys who served with the colours. Bevan-Brown died on 14 Jun 1926. W.S.W.

*Christchurch B.H.S. Magazine*, Dec 1926 (p); *Lyttelton Times* and *The Press*, 15 Jun 1926.

BEVERIDGE, ANDREW (1826-74) arrived in Auckland in 1861. In 1862 he was chairman of the city board of Auckland, but he had to relinquish the post on account of pressure of other duties. Beveridge was in practice in the city with Ritchie, after whose death he carried on alone. They established themselves at Thames soon after the opening of the goldfields and enjoyed a lucrative practice. For several years Beveridge was law adviser to the provincial executive. In 1870 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Thames and in 1873 was returned for Eden. From Dec 1873 he was provincial solicitor and a member of Williamson's executive. He died 12 Sep 1874. Beveridge was a prominent freemason (a D.P.G.M. of the Scottish Constitution) and founded a lodge in Thames.

Barclay: *N.Z. Herald*, 24 Sep 1874.

BEVERLY, ARTHUR (1822-1907) was born at Alford, Aberdeenshire. The son of a farmer, he received school education in his parish and at a night school kept by John Taylor, of Stoneham, a shoemaker. There he made extraordinary progress and was in charge of the class in navigation. At the age of 13 he was apprenticed to a watchmaker in Aberdeen, and he worked there to 1852, and in Melbourne to 1856, when he moved to Dunedin and set up in business for himself.

A confirmed student, he lived frugally and, by means of careful investment in town sections and the profits from his business, he was able to retire in 1864 and devote himself to his hobbies, gardening, science and mechanics. He was a geologist and a good botanist and on the provincial expedition to the West Coast of Otago (1862) he made an exhaustive collection

## BICKERTON

of plants between Preservation Inlet and Breaksea Sound. Beverly had a genius for mathematics, made original investigations in various branches of science and was expert at manipulating formulas. He found an empirical formula for the law of expansion of aqueous vapour which gave more accuracy than existing formulas. He was an excellent optician both in theory and practice and made many microscopes and telescopes. His combined thermometer and barometer on the aneroid principle was for many years in the Fernhill club, Dunedin. He also designed new escapements for chronometers and a compensation pendulum; and made a metallic thermometer with a circular face on which the divisions of the degree were so far apart as to be visible a few yards away. For his platometer, or planimeter (exhibited at the Dunedin Exhibition in 1865) he received from the Royal Scottish Society of Arts a bronze medal and the Macdougall Brisbane prize. The instrument was afterwards perfected and patented by Professor Amsler. In connection with a paper on the measurement of distances with long steel tapes, he devised a formula for sag and made a concise table which was used all over the world.

All Beverly's investigations were carried out in the most thorough manner. He left a great volume of mathematical formulas, and was the first modern geometrist to solve the twisting angle. After an exhaustive examination of Professor C. Piozzi Smyth's book on the construction of the Great Pyramid, Beverly devised a new 'radical calculus' and new formulas in hydraulics and optics. For some years he contributed monthly 'Rough Astronomical Notes' to the *Evening Star* and 'Notes and Queries' to the *Otago Witness*; and he consistently offered advice gratuitously to farmers and others on the construction of water races and power wheels.

Beverly was unmarried. He took no part in public life beyond a short period on the town board. He was an agnostic. His death occurred on 25 Oct 1907.

Reid; *N.Z. Surveyor*, Dec 1907; *Otago Witness*, 11ass.; *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Oct 1907.

BICKERTON, ALEXANDER WILLIAM (1842-1929) was born at Alton, Hampshire, and educated at the Grammar School there. An

## BICKERTON

orphan, he was taken by an uncle to Bridge-water to be educated as an engineer. He passed through the drawing office and workshop of a railway company; and gained a prize studentship, a full certificate, and several medals at the Painswick school of art. Afterwards he entered a civil engineer's office in London, and attended the classes at South Kensington.

Finding the exposure necessary for an engineer too severe for his health, Bickerton relinquished that intention and devoted his attention to science. In 1864 he established a factory in the Cotswolds to develop his wood working inventions. There he came under the influence of Stroud and took up science teaching. In 1867 he organised technical classes at Birmingham. He obtained an exhibition in the Royal School of Mines, London, gaining three national medals, six first-class advanced Queen's prizes and seven second-class. At the end of the first year's study at the school of mines he was at the head of the list. He obtained highest place in mechanical drawing and chemistry, and second place in physics (thus winning the senior Queen's scholarship). While at the school of mines, Bickerton taught evening classes of artisans which attracted considerable attention, and the only surplus Whitworth scholarship available for evening classes was awarded to them. Bickerton accepted a post on the staff of the Hartley Institution, Southampton (1870), and later was appointed lecturer in science at Winchester College, and public analyst. His publications on the correlation of heat and electricity attracted some attention and he had offers of several university chairs. He accepted that of chemistry and physics at Canterbury College, and he came out in the *Atrato* (1874). As the college had not been built he gave his first lectures in the Oddfellows' hall. Bickerton's occupancy of this chair, which terminated in 1903, was distinguished by the boldness and originality of his approach to scientific problems. His theory of cosmic construction by partial impact was set forth in scientific papers from 1880 onward, attracting considerable attention and some hostility in astronomical quarters. Amongst his scientific papers were: *On a new relation of heat and electricity*; *On temporary and variable stars*; *On the problem of stellar collision*; *On the origin of double stars, of nebulae, of*

## BIDWILL

*the solar system and universe*; and *On agencies tending to alter the eccentricities of planetary orbits*. In 1877 he was elected a member of the Christchurch City Council. Bickerton was an enthusiastic student of systems of education. He designed several pieces of experimental apparatus, the most successful of which was a model to represent the motions, the kinetics, and the phenomena of the solar system. The Education Department printed the first part of his book of simple experiments to enable school teachers to illustrate science teaching without costly apparatus and labour of preparation. A public fund, to which the Government contributed, enabled Bickerton to propound his theories in Great Britain. He published *The Romance of the Heavens*, *The Birth of Worlds and Systems* and other volumes expounding his researches. In 1928 Canterbury College elected him professor emeritus. He died in London on 22 Jan 1929.

Cox, *Men of Mark*; C'd. N.Z., iii (p); Bickerton, *op. cit.*; Hight and Candy; *Evening Post*, 24 Jan, 26 Apr 1929, 7 Jan 1933 (p).

BIDDLE, BENJAMIN (1848-1933) was 20 years of age and had been a seaman when he joined the Armed Constabulary in 1868. He was attached to the force under Whitmore, serving against Te Kooti after the Poverty Bay massacre, and distinguished himself at the second battle of Ngatapa (Jun 1869), for which he was awarded the New Zealand Cross. He later did valuable service as a scout and was promoted temporary sergeant. At Ara-kanihi he pursued the Hauhau to their stockade and during the night liberated a number of settlers' horses which were in their possession. At Paengaroa (Jan 1870) while leading the advance guard of Fraser's force, he was caught in an ambush and had a desperate fight and a personal encounter with Peka Makarini, the half caste Hauhau. Taking his discharge on 13 Aug 1871, Biddle settled at Opouriao, Bay of Plenty, doing contract work, and when the estate was cut up he drew a section, on which he lived for the remainder of his life. He died on 10 Mar 1933.

N.Z. Army records; Cowan; Gudgeon; *Whakatoke Post*, 12 Mar 1933.

BIDWILL, CHARLES ROBERT (1820-84), the son of Joseph Green Bidwill, was born at Ex-

BIDWILL

eter, Devonshire, educated in England and had commenced to study medicine when his father received letters from his elder son (John Carne Bidwill, q.v.) advising him to allow the boy to go to Australia. He sailed in the *Arachne* and reached Sydney early in 1841.

There for two years he gained colonial experience and in Mar 1843 sailed for New Zealand in the schooner *Posthumous* with 1,600 sheep. Some of these he sold at Nelson and the balance he took to Port Nicholson. A few weeks later he joined Clifford, Vavasour, Weld, Petre and William Swainson, F.L.S., on an expedition to prospect in the "Vairarapa for sheep country. Bidwill got a tract of land at Kopungarara to which he started in Apr 1844 with 350 merino sheep. Driving them round the Mukamuka rocks and the western shore of Wairarapa lake, he left them to return to Wellington for his cattle. He was thus the first to arrive with sheep in the Wairarapa. His wool was sent by packhorse to Te Kopi, on Palliser Bay, and thence by small ships to Wellington. Bidwill bought some Red Devon cattle and thoroughbred horses (notably Figaro, which he purchased from James Watt, Wanganui, in 1847). In 1857 he imported merino rams which his father obtained from Saxony. By 1879 the Pihautea property consisted of 10,000 acres purchased from the Government and 250 acres from the natives. Only 70 acres was as yet cultivated.

Bidwill took a keen interest in local governing bodies and the licensing committee, and in the racing club, which he assisted to establish in the fifties. He did not own racehorses but patronised all the meetings. In 1851 he married Catherine, eldest daughter of John Orbell (Wai-kouaiti, Otago). Bidwill died on 21 Apr 1884 and his widow ten years later.

Bidwill; Weld; Lovat; *Wairarapa Age*, 27 Oct 1923.

BIDWILL, JOHN CARNE (1815-53) was born at St Thomas, Exeter, the eldest son of Joseph Green Bidwill. At the age of 17 he sailed for Canada in the ship *Exmouth*, returning towards the end of 1834. In 1838, with his sister Elizabeth, he sailed for Sydney in the ship *Arachne* in the interest of his father's mercantile business. While waiting to gain possession of land which he had selected some distance

BIGGS

from Sydney, he sailed for New Zealand, arriving at Bay of Islands on 5 Feb 1839. He proceeded in a small schooner to Tauranga and spent three months exploring in the interior. Accompanied by several Maori and a white interpreter, he visited Rotorna, Taupo and Tongariro. In defiance of Maori advice, he climbed Tongariro alone, and returned to the coast after thirty days. Bidwill made a journey to Matamata and returned by sea from Tauranga to Thames and Bay of Islands. Thereafter he devoted himself to the business of his firm. He again visited New Zealand in 1840, and accompanied E. J. Wakefield by sea from Wellington to Whanganui.

Bidwill had a considerable knowledge of botany and was helpful in the founding of the Sydney botanical gardens, where he carried out experiments in hybridisation as early as 1841. In New Zealand he met Colenso and collected rare seeds and discovered new plants. In 1849 Bidwill was magistrate at Tinana (Maryborough) and later commissioner of crown lands and chairman of the bench of magistrates. He died on 16 Mar 1853, unmarried. His book, *Rambles in New Zealand*, was published in 1841. He was a brother of Charles Robert Bidwill (q.v.).

Bidwill, *op. cit.*; Hocken.

BIGGS, REGINALD NEWTON, who died 1868, came to New Zealand in the late fifties and settled in Rangitikei, living for some years with Major Trafford at Koreromaiwaho and afterwards at Mangiroa. He was an energetic farmer and a fine shot and horseman. In the early sixties he moved to Poverty Bay.

As a lieutenant in the Hawkes Bay volunteers (22 Apr 1865) Biggs joined the reinforcements at Turanganui and commanded the left wing in the attack on Pakairomiromi (3 Aug 1865), when 25 Hauhau of Ngati-Porou were killed. He took a leading part in the capture of Hungahungatoroa (Oct), where the surrender of 500 disaffected Ngati-Porou ended the movement amongst that tribe. For these services Biggs received the thanks of the Government and promotion to a captaincy (11 Oct). He served under Fraser throughout the East Coast campaign and at Omaru-Hakeke commanded the left wing enfilading the Hauhau retreat and storming the position (25 Dec 1865). In Nov

BIRCH

he was appointed a justice of the peace and local magistrate.

Te Kooti was suspected of disaffection at the siege of Waerenga-a-Hika and Biggs, who was appointed magistrate at Turanganui (7 Feb 1867) recommended his deportation to the Chathams. He strongly opposed repatriating the prisoners until the confiscations in Poverty Bay were settled. When Te Kooti landed at Whareongaonga (1868) after his escape from the Chathams, Biggs took energetic measures against him, sending for help to Wairoa and Napier and mobilising the mounted rifles under Westrupp (q.v.). Te Kooti refused to surrender his arms and Biggs (who was promoted major on 1 Aug) marched with 80 men to intercept his retreat to the Urewera. He left his force at Papatatu to bring up supplies from Gisborne, and they were attacked in his absence and badly defeated. Suspecting that Te Kooti would take vengeance for his banishment, Biggs made careful dispositions to watch his movements. His own camp was situated 20 miles from Gisborne, at the crossing of the Hangaroa. Confident that he knew Te Kooti's plans, he rejected the warnings of his scouts and allowed an old track to remain unwatched and delayed calling in the settlers. While he was sitting in his home after midnight on 10 Nov writing orders for an assembly the following day the house was surrounded by Hauhau, and Biggs and his wife and child, besides many other settlers, were shot and bayoneted.

Cowan. *Wars* (p); Gudgeon (p); J. G. Wilson; Gascoigne (p); Whitillore.

BIRCH, JOSIAH (1833-81) was an early resident of Canterbury. He represented Kaiapoi in the Provincial Council (1861), Rangiora (1862-66) and Kaiapoi (1868-71). As a young man Birch saw service in the Austrian army. Coming to New Zealand in the *Westminster* (1856), he took up bush land at Rangiora, where he soon had a successful sawmill. After farming at Ashley Bank for a few years, he became a merchant in Kaiapoi, afterwards moving to Christchurch.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Lyttelton Times*; 7 Jun 1881.

BIRCH, THOMAS (1825-80) was born at Fortrose, Ross, Scotland. He was an orphan and received only the parish education, after which

BLACK

he served an apprenticeship to a cabinetmaker in Aberdeen. He worked for some years in Edinburgh and London and came to Otago in the *Slains Castle* (1852). In Dunedin he worked at his trade for a few years. He accompanied James Macandrew and C. W. Ligar in the *Star* to survey the site of Invercargill, spending three days ashore at Waikawa, whence they proceeded overland to Toetoes, living in Maori whares en route. Birch erected at Invercargill a frame house which he had constructed in Dunedin.

In 1858, with his wife he revisited Scotland, lecturing to promote immigration. He sat in the Otago Provincial Council for Dunedin City (1863-64) and in 1865 was elected to the first City Council. Birch was unanimously elected Mayor in 1868 and re-elected for the visit of the Duke of Edinburgh (1868-70). He created the Mayor's Court in Dunedin. In 1869 he was returned to Parliament as one of the members for Dunedin City (1869-70). In 1873 he went to Scotland again as immigration agent for Otago. He was an enthusiastic volunteer (No. 2 Scottish company 1863), and three years president of the Caledonian Society. Birch died at sea on 12 Mar 1880.

*Pm-ltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *N.Z. Herald*, 14 Mar 1880. Portrait: Town Hall, Dunedin; Parliament House.

BLACK, GEORGE CHARLES CECIL (1904-32) was born at Reefton. In 1923 he became a committee clerk in the House of Representatives and in 1928 was elected as United Party member for Motueka. He was junior government whip 1928-31 and was re-elected as an Independent member in 1931. He died on 17 Oct 1932.

*Evening Post*, 18 Oct 1932; *The Dominion*, 19 Oct. Portrait: Parliament House.

BLACK, JAMES GOW (1835-1914) was born in Drnmtochty, Scotland, and was believed to be the original of the Australian professor in Ian Maclaren's *Days of Auld Lang Syne*. Educated at Dunkeld and the Moray House training college and Edinburgh University, he graduated M.A. in 1864, B.Sc. in 1866 and D.Sc. in 1869, taking prizes in chemistry and experimental science. He established Scott and Black's collegiate classes in Edinburgh; inaugurated in 1871 the Field Naturalist Club, and became a fellow of the Royal Botanical Society of Edin-

## BLACK

burgh and of the Educational Institute of Scotland. He declined the chair of natural philosophy at the Andersonian College in Glasgow and in 1871 accepted that of natural science at Otago University, to which he came in the *Christian McCausland*. Black was selected to open the schools of mines in New Zealand (1884), conducting the inaugural classes at Thames and Reefton. He collaborated with Professor Etard, of Paris, in perfecting the permanganate system of gold extraction. His text book, *Chemistry for the Goldfields*, was published in 1885.

Thompson, *Hist. Otago Univ.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

BLACK, SOLOMON (1834-?) was born in Scotland. He came to New Zealand in 1864 and joined the Military Settlers. Later as a private in No.1 division of the Armed Constabulary he served in engagements on the East and West Coasts of the North Island. In Jan 1869 he took part in the siege of Ngatapa (against Te Kooti) where he won the New Zealand Cross for the gallant and determined manner in which he held his position on the ridge at the rear of the fort. Black returned to Scotland in 1892 and was residing in Glasgow in 1910.

N.Z. Army records; Cowan (p); Gudgeon.

BLACK, WILLIAM (1815-94) was born at Muiravonside, Stirlingshire. He learned the bakery trade and was for some years in the mercantile marine as steward on board passenger ships sailing to the East Indies. In 1841 he came to New Zealand as steward in the *Amelia Thompson* and, having married a daughter of Thomas Veale, he settled in New Plymouth, where he established a successful bakery. In 1849 he visited California, but soon returned to his business.

In the Maori war Black was a captain in the militia and served under Atkinson in the Bushrangers, also undertaking contracts to supply the Imperial troops with bread. In 1872 he retired from business and took up his soldier's grant of 200 acres at Tikorangi. He was a member of the Taranaki Provincial Council for Grey and Bell (1869-73). He was on the town board and the vestry of St Mary's and became an elder of the Presbyterian Church when that denomination was established in

## BLACKETT

New Plymouth. He was president of the New Plymouth Friendly society. An ardent freemason, he was a charter member of the Mt Egmont lodge and once walked by the coast to Wanganui to open a lodge. He died on 22 Nov 1894.

*Tamnaki P.C. minutes; Tamnaki Herald*, 23 Nov 1894, 16 May 1936. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coil.

BLACKETT, JOHN (1819-93) was born at Newcastle-on-Tyne, educated there and apprenticed to engineering with R. and W. Hawthorne (1834-41). He became draughtsman and office engineer to the Great Western Steamship Co. (1841) and in 1844 head engineer in iron shipbuilding and railway work with T. R. Guppy and Co. In 1846 he was appointed engineer to the copper mines at Cwm Avon, south Wales, and from 1848 he was in private practice as an engineer.

In 1851 Blackett came to New Zealand with his family in the *Sir Edward Paget* and took up land near New Plymouth. In 1856 he moved to Nelson and in the following year was appointed provincial engineer. In that capacity he made wide explorations to open up the country on the West Coast and also to Marlborough and Canterbury. In 1859 he made a report on provincial works. He carried out the Nelson waterworks, reported on the goldfields (1863) and was a member of the provincial executive for some years. He was commissioner on the Nelson south west goldfields during the rush years (1864-66), his district including the Grey Valley and Inangahua and Buller counties. He had jurisdiction over about 8,000 miners and control of expenditure on public works wherever they seemed to be required. In 1871, on the inauguration of the public works policy, he was appointed acting engineer-in-chief for the colony, and had a heavy task initiating the roads and railways policy for the colony as a whole. He was also marine engineer. In 1878 the North Island was made a separate district, Blackett being in charge of it and Blair of the South Island. In 1884 Blackett became engineer-in-chief, with Blair as assistant. In 1890 he went to England as consulting and inspecting engineer to the Government. He returned to New Zealand in failing health, retired from the service and died on 8 Jan 1893.

## BLACKLOCK

*Nelson P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z. Times*, 4 Jan 1893.

BLACKLOCK, JOHN, came to Otago in the fifties and at the end of 1856 went to Invercargill to arrange for starting a business there. In returning to Dunedin on foot (Feb 1857) he lost his way in the Tautuku forest and was without food for four days. He started a soft-goods business with Calder at Invercargill. Blacklock took a prominent part in public affairs. He represented Invercargill in the Southland Provincial Council (1865-67); and Waihopai (1867-69); and after the reunion Witl Otago represented Waihopai in the Otago Council (1871-72). He was a member of the executive in Southland almost continuously from 1865 to 1869. He died in California in Jun 1905.

Roberts, *Southland*; Beattie, i, ii.

BLAIR, JOHN, was apprenticed to a bookseller in Edinburgh before coming to Otago in the *Dunedin* (1855). He took up land at Kaikorai and later in life had a property at Owaka, but was for 16 years teaching at Green Island. He was an elder of the church and a member of the road board and represented Green Island in the Provincial Council (1863-67). Blair was a writer of pleasing verse and contributed regularly to the *Otago Witness*. A volume of *Lays of the Old Identities* was published in 1889.

BLAIR, JOHN RUTHERFORD (1843-1914) was born at Balphurock, Lanarkshire, Scotland. After receiving the usual Scots education, he entered the office of a wholesale paper merchant in Glasgow, and was later employed in the same trade in several other towns. In 1860 he came to Otago, but soon left for Australia and became associated with Sands and McDougall, printers and publishers. In 1869 he came back to Wellington and entered into partnership with William Lyon (q.v.) as Lyon and Blair. Later he became sole proprietor and eventually sold the business to Whitcombe and Tombs. Blair was a member of the Wellington education board from 1880, and chairman for many years from 1882. He was chairman of the technical education board and of the Wellington College board of governors (to 1899), and was a Wellington school commissioner until their abolition. In 1899 he was appointed the first chairman of the Bank of

## BLAIR

New Zealand under the reorganisation, holding that position till 1902. He was mayor of Wellington (1898-99) and a member of the harbour board (1897-99). He was a visiting justice, a member of the prison board, and a director of several important companies in Wellington. He died on 25 Nov 1914.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 25 Nov 1914.

BLAIR, WILLIAM NEWSHAM (1840-91) was born at Islay, Argyllshire, the son of a farmer and flourmiller who owned mills at Dumbar-ton, Greenock and Islay. He was educated at Ballygrant parish school and then articled to a surveyor in Oban. On the completion of his papers he entered the office in Edinburgh of Sir Thomas Bouch, constructor of the Tay Bridge. While staying with his brother in Islay, he received an engagement to survey the boundaries of the Kildalton estate. Sailing from Glasgow in the *Daniel Rankine*, he arrived in Otago at the end of 1863, and was at once engaged by T. Paterson on the provincial survey staff. As surveyor and road engineer he was employed on the Dunedin, Clutha, Winton and Kingston railway lines. In 1867 he married a daughter of Robert Kennedy, of Oban. The railways having been taken over by the general Government, Blair was appointed (1871) district engineer in the public works department. He made a number of reconnaissance surveys in Otago and Canterbury (1877-79) and laid down a proposed scheme of railways for the whole of the South Island, including the Otago Central and Midland. In 1878 when John Carruthers, engineer-in-chief, went to England Blair became engineer in charge of the Middle Island (Blackett occupying the same position in the North Island). In 1884 he was appointed assistant engineer-in-chief. He made an important exploration of the King Country to report on the North Island main trunk railway. In 1890 Blair was appointed engineer-in-chief and Under-Secretary for Public Works. During his regime, 113 miles of railway and many important public works were constructed, including the Wingatui viaduct and bridges on the Otago Central. He was a capable engineer and organiser and possessed a wide general knowledge. Blair was convenor of the building committee for the new First Church in

## BLAKE

Dunedin. In the sixties he prepared plans for a bridge over the Rangitata river, which was the first cylinder bridge in the Colony. Amongst Blair's publications were *The Building Materials of Otago* (1879) and *Reminiscences of Islay* (read before the Gaelic Society), and several reports on industries and public works (M.I.C.E., 1877). He died on 4 May 1891.

*Cycl. N.Z.; Bruce Herald*, 3 Sep 1875.

BLAKE, EDWIN (1830-1914) was born in Hampshire and educated at Wimborne, Dorset. Trained as a civil engineer, he worked on railway construction contracts in England and came to Otago in 1861. Two years later he moved to Canterbury and was employed on the West Coast road under construction by the Canterbury provincial government. On the completion of this he settled in Westland. In 1882 he returned to Canterbury, where he engaged in sheep farming and agriculture. Blake was a member of the Avon road board and chairman for seven years. He twice contested the Hokitika Parliamentary seat against Seddon. In 1887 he was elected for Avon. He retained the seat against G. G. Stead in 1891 and was defeated by Joyce in 1893.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Harrop, *Westland*.

BLAKISTON, CHARLES ROBERT (1825-98) was born at Okeover Park, Staffordshire, the son of Sir Matthew Blakiston. He came to Melbourne (1851) with his brother, but was persuaded to visit Canterbury (Apr 1852). There he entered into business, but soon took up land at Kaiapoi. He was M.P.C. for Lyttelton (1855-57), and for Kaiapoi (1857-61), being in the executive as provincial secretary. Blakiston was called to the Legislative Council (1857), but retired in 1862 owing to the demands of his business. In 1858 he married Mary Anna, daughter of Bishop Harper. On a visit to England in 1863 he was appointed manager of the Trust and Agency Co. of Australia in Christchurch, a position he occupied for 35 years. He was a director also of the South British Insurance and other companies; a member of the diocesan synod and a governor of Christ's College. He died on 1 Sep 1898.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Col. Gent.; Lyttelton Times and The Press*, 2 Sep 1898. Portrait: Parliament House.

## BLUETT

BLASCHKE, WILLIAM JOHN, was born at Breslau, Prussia, in 1809. Passing through Basle at the time of the revolution he volunteered for service and was wounded. After serving for three years as a lieutenant in the Landwelu on the Rhine and three and a half in Algeria, he left the army as a non-commissioned officer. Having married, he came to New Zealand as a military settler for a period of ten years, arriving by the *Bernicia* (1848). Blaschke settled in Taranaki and became naturalised. In 1853 he was elected to represent Omata in the Provincial Council and served till 1856. Finding his means unequal to the expense of breaking in bush land, he left his family in New Plymouth and went to Melbourne to seek his fortune. Hearing of the outbreak of the Taranaki war and the removal of his wife and family to Nelson for safety he returned to New Zealand in Dec 1860 and became a volunteer. As he was not a fluent English speaker, he could not receive a commission. The Taranaki hostilities being over, Blaschke entered into negotiations with the Government and the Hamburg firm of F. C. Godeffroy and Son to bring from Germany 500 married couples between the ages of 20 and 40. The scheme was suspended on the outbreak of the Waikato war.

*N.Z.C.; App. H.R.*, 1863 D.5.

BLICK, WILLIAM (1833-82) was born in England. He came to Nelson early and was engaged for some years (from 1852) as a contractor carrying mails between Nelson and Canterbury. In 1865 he settled at Blenheim where he owned a good deal of property. He represented the town in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1870-74).

*Marlborough Express*, 21 May' 1882.

BLUETT, WILLIAM JAMES GEFFRARD (1834-85) was a native of Devon. He studied for the Church of England and was ordained. Bluett came to New Zealand, settled in Canterbury and later he turned his attention to farming. He had a property at Leeston for many years, took a great interest in blood stock, cattle, sheep and pigs, and in 1873 established the *New Zealand Herd Book*. He was in Parliament as the representative of Coleridge (1872-75) and in Provincial politics he represented Rakaia (1873-74) and Selwyn from the latter date till the abolition. For many years he pre-

## BLUNDELL

sided at all political meetings in Leeston, and he was a member of the road board, the licensing committee and the school committee. In 1870 he took over from Colonel Whitmore the New Zealand herd book of shorthorn cattle, which he published for some years. Bluett died on 23 Nov 1885.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*: Philpott; *Lyttelton Times*, 24 Nov 1885. Portrait, Parliament House.

BLUNDELL, HENRY (1814-78) was born in Dublin and brought up to the printing trade there. He was for 27 years connected with the management of the *Evening Mail* before coming to Victoria in 1860. In the following year he came to Otago and was engaged for some time on the *Lyttelton Times* and on the *Otago Daily Times* (1863). On the outbreak of the Wakamarina goldfields he moved with his family to Havelock, where with David Curle he founded the *Havelock Mail*. The rush having died down they took the plant to Wellington and established the *Evening Post* (5 Feb 1865) as a small four-page sheet. This was the first attempt to run a daily newspaper and it had as opposition the existing tri-weeklies, the *Independent* and the *Advertiser*. Curle shortly withdrew and Blundell with his sons developed the *Post* to a position of sound prosperity. He was a frank, quiet man, of genial temperament and unblemished integrity. In 1874 he retired from the business and he died on 15 Jun 1878.

BLUNDELL, LOUIS PROCTOR (1849-1934), a son of Henry Blundell (q.v.), was born in Dublin, and came with his parents to Victoria (1860) and to New Zealand (1861). Educated at schools in Dublin and Melbourne and at the 'Stone School' (Dunedin), he entered the office of the *Evening Post* shortly after its establishment (1865) and received a general training in the management of a newspaper, mainly on the literary side. After the death of Henry Blundell in 1894 the business was formed into a limited liability company, of which Louis Blundell was for many years managing director. He was a life member of the New Zealand Newspaper Proprietors' Association and some time chairman of the New Zealand Press Association. On grounds of policy he declined to be associated with public companies or local bodies, thus preserving the independent status which was a cardinal principle of the founders

## BOARDMAN

of the paper. He was, however, a generous benefactor of charities and made many handsome gifts to the City of Wellington, including a large bell for the city carillon.

Blundell married (1879) Annie Elizabeth, a daughter of Captain Coker (Christchurch). She was prominently associated with the District Nursing service, the Red Cross and the Victoria League. (M.B.E. 1919). Blundell died on 5 Nov 1934 and his widow in 1935.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Post*, 5 Nov 1934.

BLYTH, JAMES (1790-1862) was born at Cupar, Fifeshire, and lived as a boy in Glasgow. As a young man he went to South America, where he spent some years and had many exciting adventures during revolutionary wars. He arrived in Wellington in 1842, and after being in business in Wellington for some years he settled at Mary Bank, Wanganui, about 1859. He was elected to the Wellington Provincial Council for Wanganui and Rangitikei in 1856, and sat till the following year as a strong supporter of Featherston's policy. He was an elder of the Presbyterian Church in Wellington and in Wanganui.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 16 Oct 1862.

BOARDMAN, ABRAHAM (1824-97) was born near Bolton, Lancashire, and educated at a private school and Chester Diocesan Training College for teachers. Before attaining the age of 20 he was appointed to take charge of a large church school in Liverpool, and while there passed examinations for education diplomas. He became accountant in a Liverpool office and then in London: whence he sailed in 1864 for New Zealand. Letters which he wrote on the population question secured him an engagement as leader-writer on the *New Zealand Herald* and he received an appointment in the Superintendent's office. He made a detailed report upon claims for war compensations and was appointed curator of intestate estates. As a member of the Ponsonby highway board, Boardman resisted the proposal to create a separate borough, but helped to carry out important works, suggested amendments in municipal law and promoted the merger of Ponsonby in the City of Auckland. He was a member of the Ponsonby school committee, the harbour

## BOLLAND

board and the City Council and was elected mayor of Auckland (Dec 1896) but had to resign a few months later owing to ill health. He died on 21 May 1897. Boardman was a trustee of the Auckland savings bank, was once manager of the Thames Goldmining Co. and the first general manager of the South British Insurance Co. He was a member of the Anglican synod for 17 years and of the general synod.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 12 Dec 1896 (P), 22 May 1897.

BOLLAND, WILLIAM (1820-47) was educated at University College, Oxford, where he graduated B.C.L. He came to New Zealand in 1842; was at St John's College for a year or two and was ordained by Bishop Selwyn (deacon 1843; priest 1845). Bolland was sent to New Plymouth as its first minister (Dec 1843). Young and full of zeal, he was not robust in health and died on 29 May 1847.

J. K. Davis; Jacobs; Seffern. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

BOLLARD, JOHN (1839-1915) was born in county Wicklow, Ireland, educated at the Church of England school there and received a special training in agriculture. He acted as a clerk of works before emigrating to New Zealand. For a few months he was on the goldfield at Snowy river, but having no luck returned to New Zealand with 200 horses to sell as remounts to the forces engaged in the war (1861). He served as a sergeant-major and then took up land at Avondale and was in business as a land agent and valuer. He was a member of the Avondale road board for a long period (including 28 years as chairman) and was a member of the Eden licensing committee and chairman of the Auckland hospital and charitable aid board. For 51 years he was chairman and for 54 years a member of the Avondale school committee. He was a justice of the peace for 40 years and coroner for 30.

In 1896 Bolland was elected to represent Eden in Parliament and he was a member till 1914, when he retired. He supported the Conservative party, was a useful member of the stock and agricultural committee, and was the earliest advocate of workers' homes. He died on 23 Mar 1915.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Jun 1915; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 190B; *N.Z. Herald*, 25 Mar 1915. Portrait: Parliament House.

## BOLT

BOLLARD, RICHARD FRANCIS (1863-1927) was born at Tamaki, Auckland, the son of John Bolland (q.v.). He was educated at the public schools there and at Avondale, and was for seven years secretary of the Avondale road board. He resigned to move to Waikato, where he started a sawmill at Taupiri, which employed 60 hands and had an output of 40,000 feet per day. After operating it successfully for 10 years he sold out in 1909 and took a farm at Tamahere. Bolland was a member of the Kiri-kiroa road board and of the Waikato county council and hospital board, and was a prominent supporter of the Waikato racing club and the hunt club. He married Louisa, daughter of Robert Dakin (Avondale).

In 1911 he was elected M.H.R. for Raglan. He sat in his first Parliament while his father was still a member (1911-14). Bolland represented Raglan continuously till his death (on 25 Aug 1927). He was a useful member of parliamentary committees and was chairman of the railways committee. For some time he was Reform whip, and in 1923 he joined the Massey Government as Minister of Internal Affairs. In this capacity (which he continued under Coates and Bell) he did much for the control of racing and regularised the conduct of lotteries.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *N.Z.P.D.*, 25, 26 Aug 1927; *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Aug 1927 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

BOLT, WILLIAM MOUAT (1838-1907). Born at Lerwick in 1838 and educated in the parish school of Sandness, Bolt for some years assisted his father (Francis Bolt, 1805-98) in the village smithy and in working small craft and fishing. In 1855 he shipped at Liverpool in a vessel chartered by the Government to carry troops to the Crimea. After two voyages in this service and six years in sailing ships trading to North and South America and Australia, he landed in New Zealand from the *Nelson* in 1863.

On coming to Dunedin Bolt was employed for a short time lightering from Port Chalmers and then obtained employment with Bing, Harris and Co., whom he served as storeman for 30 years. Shortly after his arrival in New Zealand he attached himself to the democratic party. He was a close friend of Sir Robert Stout and Richard Hudson and often discussed with them a socialist scheme for a settlement on Stewart Island. He himself propounded a

## BONAR

scheme of a co-operative settlement, upon which he lectured throughout the colony and published at least one pamphlet (*Industrial Settlement*). It was widely endorsed by Labour organisations and he brought forward in the Legislative Council resolutions dealing with it. Other pamphlets published by him were *The Religious Conditions of Europe a Century Ago* and *Land and Labour*, and in 1891 he published a telling reply to Dr Laishley's pamphlet on the economic depression. In later life he was interested in archaeology. Bolt was prominent in the free thought movement and was first secretary and sometime vice-president of the Dunedin society. He served on the Dunedin schools committee for four years (as chairman part of the time), was a member of the first trades council (later vice-president) and a member of the council of the New Zealand federated tailoresses' union. His political ideal was the gradual advance of the people in their collective capacity by means of general industrial co-operation.

Bolt was called to the Legislative Council by Ballance on 15 Oct 1892 and remained a member until his death, which occurred 29 Apr 1907. At that time he was president of the Dunedin Progressive society. He married in 1861 a daughter of Captain Lawson, of Lerwick.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1907; *N.Z. Times*, 17 Oct 1892; *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Nov 1892, 30 Apr 1907.

BONAR, JAMES ALEXANDER (1841-1901) was a son of Archibald Bonar, an Edinburgh banker (who was later in business in Melbourne and afterwards manager of the Invercargill savings bank, and died in Hokitika, 29 Feb 1872). Born in Edinburgh and educated at the Academy, Bonar came to Australia with his father (1854) and became shipping clerk to Henty and Co. He was a member of Knox Bible class and of the Young Men's Mutual Improvement Society at Scotch College, where he participated in debates on political questions (1860). In Melbourne, too, he first took an interest in volunteering, being a sergeant in the artillery. In 1863 he came to New Zealand and entered into business at Invercargill as a merchant (Henderson and Bonar). Two years later they moved to Hokitika, taking with them the agency for McMeckan, Blackwood and Co., of Melbourne, and other shipping companies, as well as Lloyds.

## BOOTH

In 1867 Bonar was elected first mayor of Hokitika and also to represent the town in the Canterbury Provincial Council, in which he was a member of the executive and goldfields secretary (1867-68). Governor Grey visited Hokitika during his mayoralty and shortly afterwards called him to the Legislative Council (of which he was a member until his death). In 1868 Westland was given separate administration as a county and Bonar was a member of the council to 1869. When it became a province (1874) he was elected Superintendent and held office until the abolition. He showed great spirit and tact in handling the political riots (1868). Strongly attached to the district, he supported its industries and participated in every form of public service. He was chairman of the harbour and hospital boards and the school commissioners. As a volunteer he was promoted major (1884), and lieutenant-colonel (1895) and received the Victoria decoration (1895). He married (1874) a daughter of William Montgomerie Bell (Melbourne). Bonar died on 7 Nov 1901.

*Vestlald C.C.*, and *P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; Hansard, 7 Nov 1901; *Col. Gellt.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); Ross (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

BOOTH, GEORGE (1818-88) was born at Sunderland, Durham, educated there and apprenticed to the shipbuilding trade. On completing his articles he entered into the business in Sunderland and also took an interest in local government, being a member of the town council. In 1859 he came to New Zealand and settled at Rangiora, where he was engaged in farming and business for four years. He then moved into Christchurch and established himself as an importer of agricultural implements, which he continued until 1883. Booth lived in Sydenham and took a leading part in the formation of the municipality. Being elected the first mayor of the borough, he devoted much thought and time to its affairs and was largely responsible for its being regarded as a model borough. He was also chairman of the North Canterbury education board for some years and of the Christchurch West school committee. By religion he was a Free Methodist, and he started the first church of that denomination in Rangiora. Booth was an active temperance advocate. He died on 5 May 1888.

*Lyttelton Times*, 7 May 1888.

## BOOTH

BOOTH, JAMES (1830-1900) was born in Westmorland and educated there and in London. He came to New Zealand in the *Slains Castle* in 1852 under engagement to the Church Missionary society to assist the Rev R. Taylor (q.v.). After revisiting England he settled down in 1856 with his brother at Pipiriki; farming and teaching in the capacity of a catechist.

In 1864, when Hauhau emissaries were at work on the river, Booth reported the plans of the invaders to Wanganui and took munitions and supplies to the friendlies, who were besieged at Hiruharama. He and his family were detained by the Hauhau for several days until the battle of Moutoa (May 1864), when they escaped to Wanganui. In 1865 he was appointed resident magistrate at Wanganui, and during the rest of the campaign he was constantly in the field with the commanders for Maori purposes. In 1866 he was appointed a judge of the native land court and in 1867 he was stationed at Patea. In May 1868 he issued a warrant for the arrest of two of Titokowaru's chiefs and called upon Colonel McDonnell to execute it, thus precipitating the renewal of hostilities.

In 1883 Booth was appointed magistrate at Gisborne, where he died on 14 May 1900.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Cowan, ii; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924.

BOOTH, WILLIAM (1837-1903) was born at Pilkington, Lancashire, educated at Lancashire College in Manchester and went into commercial life. In 1872 he came to New Zealand by the *Nevada* and settled in Carterton, where he established himself as a sawmiller and timber merchant. He was a member of the charitable aid board for many years and a founder of the Wairarapa A. and P. society. As a sheep farmer he carried off many prizes in export classes and he was a director and chairman of the Wellington Meat Export Co. In 1887 he assisted to found the Dalefield Dairy Co. He was a director of the Bank of New Zealand (1894-97) and a member of the Wellington harbour board (1884-1902) and chairman in 1891. Booth died on 26 Mar 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z. Times*, 27 Mar 1903.

BORLASE, CHARLES BONYTHON (1820-75) came of a West country family which lived not far from the Molesworths. He was born in India, the son of Lieut.-Colonel Borlase, of a Dragoon

## BOSCAWEN

regiment, and taken home to be educated. He studied law, and was for a while connected with the press in London as law reporter, until obtaining a partnership in a legal firm in the city. His acquaintance with the Molesworths led to an interest in New Zealand, and in 1850 he sailed with his wife and family in the *Victory*.

Having some little capital Borlase invested it in land in Wairarapa, but spent two years in Wellington before going on it. During the eight years that he spent on his bush-clad country he was drawn into politics. In 1857-58 he sat in the Provincial Council for Wairarapa. During that time the feud between Featherston and Wakefield culminated in Wakefield's enjoying a substantial majority in the Council, but he could not take office without a qualified solicitor as provincial solicitor. Featherston refused to accept an executive in which Wakefield held the two posts of secretary and solicitor. Wakefield therefore prevailed on Borlase to stand for a city seat. He was duly elected and he represented the City (1861-75), being provincial solicitor for part of the time. He was in the executive (1866-68).

Borlase brought his family to Wellington in the early sixties. He was a member of the first Wellington town board (1863) and some years later (1870-74) a member of the first City Council under the new act. He resigned in 1874, and was elected mayor. In 1865 he contested the Superintendency against Featherston, who defeated him by 229 votes. In the following year he stood side by side with Featherston for the City seats in the House of Representatives: Featherston, Borlase, and Waring Taylor being returned. At the general election of 1871 he was unseated. He does not appear again in colonial politics, but was provincial solicitor until his death (on 15 May 1875).

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; Carter; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Evening Post*, 16 May 1875, 26 Sep 1929 (P). Portrait: Parliament House.

BOSCAWEN, JOHN HUGH (1851-1937) was the eldest son of the Rev and Han J. T. Boscawen (brother of Viscount Falmouth) and was born at Lamorran, Cornwall in 1851. Educated privately and at Cheltenham he then joined the training ship *Britannia* and served on various naval stations. He was present at the Jamestown riots in Jamaica; was in New

## BOTHAMLEY

Zealand with the flying squadron (1869-70); took part in the Ashanti war (including the capture of Kumassi) and retired with the rank of lieutenant (1875).

Boscawen came to New Zealand in the following year and joined the lands and survey department. He acted as private secretary to Lord Onslow and as aide-de-camp to Lord Ranfurly. In the lands department he became chief clerk at Auckland, from which post he retired in 1919 to reside in Cornwall, where he died on 20 Apr 1937. He was a volunteer (captain in No.3 Native Rifles), and an artist of some ability in water colours and photography.

Burke, *Peemge: Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 2 Jun 1937.

BOTHAMLEY, ARTHUR THOMAS (1846-1938) was born at Champion Hill, Surrey, educated in England and in 1868 paid a visit to Australia for his health. He joined the civil service in New Zealand as a clerk and in 1871 was appointed extra clerk to the Legislative Council, becoming later clerk assistant and retiring in 1925. Bothamley was gentleman usher of the black rod from 1892 to 1937. (I.S.O. 1924). He was a talented amateur photographer and an oarsman, being founder and first captain of the Tainui canoe club (1880).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Post*, 17 Dec 1938 (p).

BOURNE, CHARLES FREDERICK (1850-1913) was born in England, educated at the Merchant Taylors' School, London, and passed in 1868 to St John's college, Oxford, with two exhibitions. There he won a Casberd scholarship and graduated B.A. (1872). He was a fine cricketer and a leader in most sports. Two years in succession he won the one mile race for the challenge cup and the one mile and two mile races at college. Bourne joined the staff of the Manchester Grammar School as a classical master (1874) and in 1881 was appointed headmaster at Auckland Grammar School. From there he was invited in 1892 to be headmaster of Christ's College, Christchurch. By hard work and devotion to duty during eleven years there he steadily raised the efficiency and tone of the school. He retired in 1904 and afterwards conducted a school at Sumner, acted as examiner for the University and relieved the professor of classics at Canterbury College.

## BOWDEN

Bourne married (1880) Margaret, daughter of Richard Roe, M.R.C.S., Eccles, Lancashire. He died on 29 Mar 1913.

*Christ's Coli. School List; Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *The Press*, 1 Apr 1936.

BOWDEN, THOMAS ADOLPHUS (1824-1906), a son of John Saunders Bowden, solicitor, of London, was educated privately at Totteridge, Hertfordshire, and at Magdalen College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. (1845). In 1847 he was ordained deacon and in 1848 priest. He was curate of Holy Trinity, Brompton (1847-50) and of Tresco, Scilly islands.

In 1851 Bowden came to Nelson and was appointed curate of Waimea South. In 1860 he was private secretary to Bishop Hobhouse and in the following year re-opened the Bishop's school, which he conducted till 1863. He then moved to Wellington with the intention of opening a private grammar school, but was appointed inspector of schools for the province. In this position he looked forward to the establishment of middle-class schools in Wellington and at the Butt and Wanganui. In 1866 he advised H. E. Tuckey (B.A., of St John's, Cambridge) and W. S. Hamilton (of Edinburgh Training College, who had been engaged at the Geelong High School) to start a grammar school as a private venture. This they did under the superintendence of Bowden and carried on for several years, the classes being held in the Independent chapel. This school developed into Wellington College, of which Bowden became headmaster in 1869, continuing in charge till 1874. He had strong views on secondary education and disliked the proposal that his staff should give university lectures simply because they were fully employed otherwise. In 1874 Bowden retired, after a very successful term as headmaster, and opened in Featherston street an 'educational institute' and a private school, known as the English High School. The premises soon became inadequate for the number of pupils and in 1877 Bowden's health began to fail and he resigned and withdrew from teaching.

He accepted the curacy of Greymouth (1877); was later vicar of All Saints, Nelson, and was temporarily in charge of St John's, Wakefield (1881-82). While there became interested in fruitgrowing. Bowden was a man of fine pre-

sence and a commanding personality. His views on education, which were sound and progressive, he set out in a letter to Sir William Fox in 1868. In 1869 he published his *Manual of New Zealand Geography* and in 1900 *Words of the Wise*. He died on 24 Jun 1906.

*N.z. Clergy List*, 1889; Butchers; Leckie (p); Hocken, *Bibliog.*; Macmorran; *The Colonist*, 27 Jun 1906; *Nelson Dioc. Gaz.*, Aug 1906.

BOWEN, SIR CHARLES CHRISTOPHER (1830-1917) came of an old county family of Welsh origin, descended from Robert, son of John ap Owen, or Bowen, who in 1578 was granted a castle and lands at Ballyadams, Ireland, and was appointed provost-marshal of the province of Leinster and the counties of East and West Meath. Bowen was born in Milford, county Mayo, and educated for some years in France, where he gained a lifelong facility in the language. He went to Rugby and to Cambridge (to study for the bar), but before he could proceed to his degree his father had become deeply interested in the Canterbury Association, and sailed with his family in the *Charlotte Jane* (arriving in Lyttelton Dec 1850).

Charles Bowen, senior, played the appropriate part of leader of the settlement. He was a member for Christchurch Country district in the first Provincial Council and afterwards for Avon. Thrice he was deputy-superintendent, and for nine years (from 1855-64) speaker of the council. In 1864 he returned to England, and he died at Hastings in 1871.

When scarcely in his twenties C. C. Bowen threw himself with enthusiasm and marked ability into the life of the colony. For two years he was private secretary to Godley, the virtual governor, riding across the hills between Lyttelton and the land office at Christchurch almost every second day. He rode from end to end of the South Island, going as far as Nelson to visit Domett, who was civil secretary for the South Island. When Godley returned to England (1852) Bowen was appointed inspector of police and he had to do his part in the apprehension and prosecution of James Mackenzie for sheep-stealing. At the age of 24 he became provincial treasurer. He was never a member of the Provincial Council, though he was for some time (1858-59) in Cass's executive. His

association with Moorhouse demonstrated his capacity for administration and his constructive mind. They co-operated heartily in the project for piercing the Port hills by a railway tunnel, and Bowen furnished much of the data which enabled Moorhouse to promote the scheme in the Council. In 1856 Bowen was appointed a commissioner of the waste lands board; in 1857 a justice of the peace and in 1858 a commissioner of native reserves. From the early days of the settlement he had taken part in journalism, contributing to the columns of the *Lyttelton Times*. In 1856 he became one of the proprietors, joining with Crosbie Ward in acquiring the property from I. Shrimpton for £5,000, and he continued to write leading articles for his colleague. In 1859 he sold his interest in the paper to William Reeves (whose partners were W. J. W. Hamilton and T. W. Maude) and resigned his official posts to visit England. Bowen's tour abroad was not only a period of travel, but an intellectual exercise. He took a ship to Peru (1860), and crossed the Andes in company with Clements Markham, who had previously spent two years there with a view to acclimatising the cinchona plant in India. That journey Bowen described in Galton's *Vacation Tourists* (1861), and he was elected a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society. In the United States and Canada he formed friendships with many intellectuals, including Longfellow, Lowell, Oliver Wendell Holmes, and Alexander Agassiz. In Great Britain he fought hard for the Lyttelton tunnel scheme, demonstrating to financiers and engineers that the conditions of Canterbury urgently demanded the adoption of bold measures, and that the proposal was not a fantastic one. Bowen spent the greater part of 1861 in England, where he married Georgina Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev D. Markham, canon of Windsor.

Returning to Canterbury (1862) he was soon back at his post as receiver of land revenues. In 1864 he was appointed resident magistrate at Christchurch, and during his tenure of that office (ending in 1874) he studied criminal psychology and formed plans of reform which later he was able to put into effect as Minister of Justice. To him is due the inauguration of the system of marks, enabling prisoners by good conduct to earn a reduction of their terms of

confinement. When Moorhouse was about to retire from the Superintendency (1868) leaders of both parties in provincial politics suggested that Bowen should be nominated, but he declined. In 1872-74 he was chairman of the Canterbury education board. He was also president of the Collegiate Association (which was affiliated to the university of New Zealand as the forerunner of Canterbury College). When the college came into existence he was nominated by the Provincial Council to the first board of governors, upon which he acted in 1873-75 and 1878-85. In 1874 Vogel invited Bowen to succeed O'Rorke as Minister of Justice and Commissioner of Stamps. He accordingly resigned the magistracy and was appointed to the Legislative Council, but the opportunity was soon offered by the retirement of John Studholme for him to enter the House as member for Kaiapoi (1875). He was a man of very attractive manners and quick perception: say Saunders, 'with great tact and far-reaching ability, which soon caused him to be appreciated in commercial circles and gave him an opportunity of retreat from the false step he had taken in accepting office under Mr Vogel.' In the subsequent changes of government Bowen retained his portfolio of justice and stamps (under Pollen, 1875-76; Vogel, 1876; Atkinson, 1876; and in the reconstructed Atkinson government, 1876-77). In 1877 he was permitted by Atkinson to bring forward an education bill, which eventually became law, and 'has left the most indelible mark on the history of New Zealand.' Bowen, according to Saunders, had some very valuable qualifications and experience which 'contributed to open his eyes to the real magnitude of the many stumbling blocks he would have to contend with. Intensely alive to the ridiculous and absurd, he was conciliatory and politic in all his movements, and was more amused than irritated by listening to the most frivolous objections.' The bill which Bowen brought down provided for Bible-reading in the schools, but he gave way on that and a few other points, and eventually secured the passage of the law of 1877, which established the present system of free, compulsory, and secular education.

When the Whitaker-Atkinson government was defeated, Bowen retired. He remained in Parliament for Kaiapoi until 1881, when he

paid another long visit to England. He then devoted himself to business and to public life in more local spheres. He was manager of the New Zealand Trust and Loan Co. In 1886 he was elected a director of the New Zealand Shipping Co. on which board he remained until his death. In 1884 he was elected first president of the West Coast Railway League, the object of which was to push on the Midland railway. In 1881-82 he was on the senate of the University of New Zealand, and again 1888-1915, being elected vice-chancellor in 1903. Just before the last Atkinson government went out of office (1891) Bowen was appointed to the Legislative Council, one of the last life-members. He was speaker 1905-15. Sir Clements Markham being now president of the Royal Geographical Society, Bowen threw himself heart and soul into the preparations in New Zealand for Scott's Antarctic expedition. In 1914 he was made a K.C.M.G. He remained a member of the Council until his death (12 Dec 1917). Lady Bowen died on 6 Jun 1921.

Gisborne says of Bowen: 'He combined with a thorough mastery of his subject persuasive powers of a high order, a conciliatory attitude, firmness where he deemed it necessary, and patient forbearance from angry retort. He has a winning and gentle manner. His speeches are good and logical, but more notable for mild persuasiveness than polemic force.' Bowen to the day of his death read French almost as freely as English, and he found mental relaxation throughout life in the Greek and Latin classics. He was one of the scholars to whom the General Assembly Library owes the strong classical character which it early acquired. As a poet Bowen held no mean place. He published in Christchurch in 1861 *The Battle of the Free* (including a spirited poem foreshadowing the rally of the colonies to the Mother Country). He was a lover of trees, of which he had a profound knowledge: and for many years was an active member of the Christchurch domain board.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; Saunders (p); Gisborne; Cox; Reeves; Hansard, 9 Apr 1915; Beaglehole; *The Press*, 19 Mar 1903, 15 Mar 1930 (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 9 Oct 1882, 13 Dec 1917. Portrait: Parliament House.

BOWEN, SIR GEORGE FERGUSON (1821-99) was born in Ireland, the eldest son of Edward

Bowen, afterwards rector of Taughboyne, county Donegal. Educated at Charterhouse, he gained a scholarship at Trinity College, Oxford, matriculated in 1840 and graduated B.A. in 1844. He was elected a fellow of Brasenose, and in 1847 graduated M.A. He was twice president of the Union. In 1844 Bowen entered Lincoln's Inn as a student.

In 1844 he was appointed president of the University of Corfu, which post he held for four years. While there he wrote his *Ithaca in 1850* (published in the islands, and reprinted in several editions). This established his reputation as a scholar, Gladstone and others believing that it proved the identity of Ithaca with the island of Odysseus. In 1852 he published *Mount Athos, Thessaly and Epims*. In 1848 he was in Vienna when desperate fighting took place leading up to the capture of the city by the imperial troops. In the following year before the close of the war he made a journey across Hungary, conveying a letter from refugees at Widin to Sir Stratford Canning, the British ambassador at Constantinople, which saved them from being handed over to the Turks. In 1854 Bowen was chief secretary of the Ionian islands. When Gladstone arrived there in 1858 as Lord High Commissioner to investigate the desire of the people for union with Greece, Bowen advocated surrender of the southern islands to Greece and the incorporation of the strategic islands of Corfu in the British Empire, the population of Corfu and Paxo being more Italian than Hellenic. In 1855 he was created C.M.G. and in 1856 K.C.M.G.

In 1859 Bowen was appointed first governor of Queensland, which had been separated from New South Wales. Landing at Moreton Bay on 10 Dec 1859, he spent some months instituting the machinery of government and then undertook a tour of the interior. Here, as in New Zealand later, he was quick to see the resemblances of social phenomena to those of ancient Greece. He favoured universal suffrage and the ballot as mere conservative measures in such a colony. He urged the British government to establish an efficient volunteer force for the defence of Queensland from foreign attack and to maintain order with the native population. The Queensland mounted rifles were accordingly embodied with several

companies of infantry. Bowen gave every encouragement to exploration of the interior, especially to Landsborough and Dalrymple, and he accompanied an expedition which led to the establishment of a coaling station at Cape York. In 1860 he was promoted G.C.M.G. and in 1866 his term of service was extended to eight years. When the failure of the Agra and Masterman's banks caused serious embarrassment in the colony Bowen refused to sanction the Ministry's proposal to issue inconvertible paper money and was for a while unpopular.

Late in 1867 he was appointed to succeed Grey in the governorship of New Zealand and he assumed the duties of that difficult office on 5 Feb 1868. Native affairs were at a very grave pass when he took up his task and the first year of his governorship was one of the darkest periods in the history of New Zealand. Unlike his predecessors, Bowen was not as governor personally responsible for native affairs; that was part of the responsibility of the government as a whole. He cordially assisted Stafford's ministry to bring the war to a conclusion and no disagreements between governor and cabinet marred their co-operation. On the other hand Bowen had to use his pen vigorously and wholeheartedly in defence of the reputation of the settlers and government of New Zealand against charges made in Great Britain, arising in the main out of the inauguration of complete self-reliance and the adjustment of accounts for military assistance from the Home Government. In his first despatch as governor he informed the Secretary of State that the ill-feeling entertained in the colony towards the British government was due to the tone of the despatches from the Colonial Office rather than to the substance, and he hoped the continued discussion of matters which could not be improved thereby would not be insisted upon. Addressing the settlers at Wanganui a few months after his arrival in the Colony Bowen assured them they must rely only on their own stout hearts and strong arms. With fighting rampant in almost all the provinces of the North Island it is probably true, as Saunders suggests, that the only thing that saved the isolated settlements whose men were in the field was the abhorrence in which the Hauhau and their barbarities were held by the King tribes and by the wronged Wiremu Kingi and his friends. Bowen en-

deavoured to become acquainted with the Maori question by requiring the agents of the government in all Maori districts to make him a detailed report on their condition, numbers and wishes, their opinions of recent events and of the working of measures passed by Parliament for their good.

In an important despatch of 7 Dec 1868, while concurring in the determination of the Imperial government to withdraw all the troops from New Zealand he still advocated: (1) leaving one regiment of regular troops 'to hold the chief towns and to keep up the prestige of the Imperial power in the eyes of the Maoris'; (2) prohibiting the establishment of fresh settlements in exposed and dangerous districts; and (3) making a peaceful arrangement with Tawhiao (q.v.) which would not be inconsistent with the suzerainty of the Queen. The Secretary of State approved the two latter suggestions and guaranteed a loan of £1,000,000 towards the defence of New Zealand instead of leaving one regiment here. Featherston and Bell were sent to England to carry out the requisite negotiations. By the end of 1869 all apprehension of a general rising of disaffected tribes was past. Bowen paid four visits to Waikato, receiving many expressions of goodwill from the natives. He presented swords of honour to the friendly chiefs who had done good service in the war, and called to the Legislative Council the first two of the native race to sit in that chamber (Wi Mokena and Wi Tako Ngatata). Before leaving New Zealand he recommended the granting of a general amnesty for political offences. Thus he saw the long Maori war brought to a termination.

Bowen conducted with the Imperial government the correspondence relating to the use of the title 'honourable' by retired ministers in the colonies. Stafford and Richmond at first declined the honour if it were only to be valid in New Zealand. Bowen also (in 1869) by order-in-council instituted the New Zealand Cross, which was afterwards sanctioned by Her Majesty. He endowed at the University of New Zealand the Bowen prize for an English essay on British or British colonial history. In 1873 he was appointed to the governorship of Victoria and he left for that post on 19 Mar. His last weeks in New Zealand were marked by ministerial crises owing to the resignation of

Waterhouse. Eventually Fox agreed to assume the premiership until the return of Vogel, and Bowen was enabled to take his departure.

In Victoria Bowen encountered a parliamentary controversy between the representative chamber and the Legislative Council (which was elected for life and consequently held a position of unusual independence). Bowen took a strictly impartial attitude in the dispute, which was eventually settled by compromise and the passing of a separate supply bill. He paid a visit to Europe and America during this governorship and received from Oxford University the degree of D.C.L. (1875). On the expiration of his term in Victoria, he was appointed to Mauritius, where he landed on 4 Apr 1879. There his chief task was to inaugurate the labour code devised by his predecessor. In 1882 he was appointed governor of Hongkong, where he reconstructed the legislature and was called upon to exercise great vigilance during the war between France and China (1884-85).

In 1885 ill-health compelled him to pay a visit to Europe and in 1887 he retired from the service. He was nominated a Privy Councillor in 1886 and received the honorary LL.D. from Cambridge University. In 1887 he was chairman of the royal commission to report on the working of the constitution in Malta, his recommendations being adopted with the thanks of the Government. Bowen died at Brighton on 21 Feb 1899. He married, first (1856) Diamantina, countess Roma (d. 1893), daughter of Candiano, Count Roma, president of the Ionian Senate; and second (1896) Florence, daughter of Thomas Luby, and widow of Henry White. Besides the works already mentioned, Bowen wrote Murray's handbook for Greece (1854). Some of his letters and despatches were published by Stanley Lane Poole in 1889 as *Thirty Years of Colonial Government*.

*App. H.R.*, 1868-73; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *N.Z. Gaz.*, 10 Mar 1869; *DN.B.*; Egerton; Whitmore; Gisborne (p); Morton; Bowen, *op. cit.*; Saunders; Rusden; Reeves; Des Voeux.

BOWLER, WILLIAM (1803-63) was born in England and brought up to commercial life in London. He became associated with the New Zealand Company in its earliest years and was colonists' clerk, closely concerned in shipping arrangements from 1840 till 1850, when he be-

## BOWRING

came shipping manager for the Canterbury Association. At the end of 1851 he sailed in the *Stag* for New Zealand and at once entered into business in Lyttelton and Christchurch with Isaac Cookson (formerly of Newcastle-on-Tyne), as merchants and shipping agents. The associated firm in Wellington was Bowler, Son and Co. Bowler took a prominent part in public affairs in Wellington. He represented Wellington in the Provincial Council (1857-61). On being defeated he retired from provincial politics, but twice tried to gain a seat in Parliament. The business was sold to Mathieson and Co., of London. Bowler had landed interests in Canterbury, being the owner of the Warren Station, on the Eyre river, in 1852. He died on 6 May 1863.

N.Z.C., papers and reports; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Acland; Godley, *Letters*; *N.Z. Spectator* and *Wellington Independent*, 9 May 1863; *N.z. Advertiser*, 7 May 1863.

BOWRING, WALTER ARMIGER (1874-1931) was born at Auckland, the son of Alfred Bowring, educated at the Auckland Grammar School and studied art. His first work was black and white sketches for the *Auckland Observer*, after which he became cartoonist to the *Spectator* (Christchurch) and the *Weekly Press*. In 1905 he went to London and studied for a while under Orpen and John. On returning to New Zealand he made many portraits (some of which are now in private and public galleries), and a number of important political and social cartoons, including the colour prints of the Court of Appeal and Coalition Cabinet. He also did some work for *Punch* and other London publications. On a visit to England (1921-23) he was elected a member of the Royal Institute of Oil Painters. In 1925 he moved to Sydney, where he continued his work and became a member of the Royal Art Society. Bowring married (1901) Millicent, daughter of Robert McOwen. He died on 3 Nov 1931.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Sydney Morning Herald*, 6 Nov 1931 (p); *The Dominion*, 5 Nov (p).

BOYD, WILLIAM came to New Zealand from Tasmania about 1858 and engaged in sawmilling in Southland. He represented Waianiwa in the Provincial Council for a short time in 1867.

## BRACKEN

BOYLAN, JAMES THOMAS (1818-1911) was born in England, where he married in 1846. Three years later he came to Auckland and established himself in business as a hardware merchant. Boylan represented the City in the Provincial Council (1853-61) and Auckland West (1870-75), and he was a member of the executive in 1854-55 and 1856-57. He was chairman of the harbour board, a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank and a commissioner for the building of the Auckland public hospital. He died on 6 Jul 1911.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.z. Herald*, 7 Jul 1911.

BOYS, JOHN COWELL (1824-89) was born in Sussex and brought up in the village of Bets-hanger. At the age of 17 he was appointed a cadet on the survey staff of the New Zealand Company and came in the *Will Watch* to Nelson where he spent three years in exploring and surveys. He returned to England in 1845. completed his professional qualifications and again came to New Zealand in 1849. He was engaged for some time under Captain Thomas in the triangulation of the district between the Waimakariri and the Waipara and afterwards under Cass on road sectional survey in Canterbury. In 1853 he joined Colonel Campbell's staff to adjust the French claims on Banks Peninsula. He married and settled on his property, Betshanger, near Rangiora. Owing to ill-health he gave up field work as district Surveyor and was inspector of surveys until the abolition of the provinces. Boys was a noted breeder of Romney sheep, and a keen advocate of acclimatisation (in which interest he paid an extended visit to the Australian colonies). He advised the introduction of the soft-billed hedge sparrow to combat the caterpillar in Canterbury. He was for many years a member of the waste lands board and the hospital and charitable aid board and chairman of the Rangiora and Mandeville road board. He died on 13 Jun 1889.

N.Z.C.; Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Lyttelton Times*, 14 Jun 1889.

BRACKEN, THOMAS (1843-98) was born at Clones, county Monaghan, Ireland, on 21 Dec 1843. His parents were Protestants. His mother died a few days after his birth, and the death of his father left him an orphan at the age of 9.

## BRACKEN

About 1855 he was sent to Melbourne to the care of an uncle, John Kernan, J.P., an enterprising farmer of Merai, Moonee Ponds. He worked on the farm for a year and was then apprenticed to Hugh Boyd, a chemist in Bendigo. After staying there for eighteen months, he went up country and got employment on the station of Winter brothers at Colbinabbin. Tall, well-built and of a bright disposition, Bracken got on well with his mates, took aptly to the rough occupation, and was soon a good horseman and an efficient shearing hand. Already he showed a facility in making verse, and it is believed that many of the poems which were first published in *Behind the Tomb and other Poems* (1871) were written at Colbinabbin.

At the age of 26 Bracken came to New Zealand, landing at Dunedin in 1869. In his first book of verse is a poem dated at Dunedin on 7 Feb 1869. He was employed for a year or two on the *Otago Guardian* and, becoming acquainted with John Bathgate (q.v.), they co-operated in establishing the *Saturday Advertiser*, the first issue of which appeared on 17 Jul 1875. The *Advertiser* was a very popular paper and speedily attained a circulation of 6,000 copies a week. It was printed by CouUs and Culling. and Bathgate was the business manager. Bracken besides controlling the paper and writing most of the leading articles, contributed columns of original matter (both prose and verse) to every issue. He used the nom de plume 'Paddy Murphy' for his column. Some of these letters were dated from 'Lambton Kay' and some (in 1883) from Samoa, where Bracken appears to have gone on a visit with J. Lundon (q.v.). His best known poem, *Not Understood*, first appeared in the *Advertiser* on 2 Aug 1879, and *God Defend New Zealand* on 26 Oct 1878. Bracken did notable and unselfish service for New Zealand literature in throwing his columns open to writers of prose and verse, novelists and essayists. In 1879 the imprint of the paper was 'Mackay Bracken and Co.', and about this time the *Advertiser* was issued as the weekly edition of the *Morning Herald*. In 1880 the title was changed to *New Zealand Public Opinion, Sportsman, and Saturday Advertiser*. A year later Mackay, Bracken and Co. ceased to be publishers, but Bracken was still associated with the literary side of the paper.

## BRACKEN

Bracken's incursion into politics was characteristic. He came forward at the general election of 1879 as an out-and-out Liberal of Grey's school. Parliament having been dissolved on 15 Aug, he announced himself (in the *Advertiser* of the 30th) as a candidate for the City of Dunedin. In a long manifesto he declared himself a supporter of the policy of Grey. 'Although but young in politics and incompetent at present to enter into the details of political economy or the technicalities of finance, I flatter myself that, to quote Shakespeare, "I know a hawk from a handsaw," or, in other words, I am always able to distinguish justice from injustice and right from wrong.' Bracken placed the land question in the forefront, appealing for the subdivision of large estates and the creation of 'a thrifty and hardy yeomanry of the soil.' On the question of education he declared himself unequivocally, 'so that no charge of wavering or trimming may hereafter be brought against me. To me it seems clear enough that in a country like this where, thank Heaven, we have no state religion, dogmatic teaching should not be introduced into our public schools. Christian, Jew, Mohammedan, freethinker and pagan are all equal in the sight of the law, and whilst we cherish the inestimable blessing of civil and religious liberty it would be manifestly unfair to introduce any particular form of belief into our state schools. Therefore I am opposed to Bible reading, with or without comment, by our state teachers. On the other hand, I should be glad to see a scriptural textbook, containing the literary gems of the Bible, introduced into our state schools. The beauties of Job, Isaiah and David, and some of the grandest passages in the New Testament might be introduced into such a reading book. I consider the outcry against secular education raised by the Roman Catholics is unwise in the extreme, and I should, from the bottom of my very soul, desire to see the narrow sectarian partitions which divide people in the old lands removed at least from our schools so that our children might grow up a united people. But the Roman Catholics all over the world, rightly or wrongly, are determined to make any sacrifices rather than allow their children to be educated in what they are pleased to miscall "godless schools"; and the question then arises, would it not be better to give their

## BRACKEN

educational institutions some encouragement than to perpetuate what they consider to be a grievance . . . Looking at the question from a point of expediency alone, I think that such a consummation as the removal of this (to Catholics) grievance would be cheaply purchased by some concession to the religious scruples of such a large and united minority of our fellow-colonists.' Bracken supported manhood suffrage and triennial parliaments. In conclusion he said: 'I do not intend to seek the assistance of any clique or committee in this contest. Nor shall I engage a hall, nor a cab, nor a canvasser to work for me. I consider the tactics employed at election time degrading and contemptible, and if elected I will willingly support any measure having for its object the suppression of the touting and button-holing and bribery which obtain to such an extent at these contests.' The poll (on 4 Sep) resulted: T. Dick 1,140, R. Oliver 1,044, W. D. Stewart, 989, J. Macassey 744, C. S. Reeves 676, T. Bracken 477. The *Advertiser* recorded Bracken's disappointment-('If men did not vote without being forced or dragged to the poll they did not deserve the franchise')-and some resentment at the small support he received from the Catholics who, he declared, had recorded their votes for Macassey.

At the next election (1881) he stood for Dunedin Central (now a single-member electorate). There was now a definite labour sentiment evident in politics and it was due to the persuasion of the Dunedin Trades and Labour Council that Bracken came forward. Of the five candidates nominated two were men of prominence in Otago, E. B. Cargill and H. Bastings. In proposing Bracken, T. W. Kempthorne said that there was no more unselfish man in the province, a hard worker and a man of the people. Bracken, in his hustings speech, strongly advocated land nationalisation and was the only candidate who declared for protecting native industries. Bracken topped the poll with 340 votes (Cargill 320 votes, and Bastings 263). He owed his election largely to the votes of tradesmen and labourers. In Parliament Bracken severely criticised the policy of the Government against the Maori at Parihaka, contending that Te **Whiti** and **Tohu** should have been tried like any other offenders. On the education question he voted for Pyke's bill and

## BRACKEN

against the attempt to introduce Bible-reading in schools, contending that the people should be allowed to educate their children as they liked, so long as they conformed to the requirements of the state. He voted to reduce the salary of the governor from £7,500 to £5,000 on the ground that a colony so deeply in debt as New Zealand should not pay more than New South Wales did. At the general election of 1884 Bracken was defeated by Bradshaw (q.v.) by the narrow margin of 499 to 496. Although Bradshaw had been an advocate and inspirer of social reforms for many years, the Trades Council considered that Bracken's conduct in Parliament had been consistently proper and that it would be ungenerous not to support him. The Constitutional Reform Association also decided to support him.

During the campaign Bracken resigned the editorship of the *Evening Herald* on account of its attack on Stout (Jul 1884). Having lost his seat also, he went to Wellington to seek employment, receiving a flattering farewell from the citizens of Dunedin (20 Aug). Early in 1885, in company with Bathgate and Melland, he purchased the *Evening Herald* (Dunedin), the issue of 3 Feb bearing the imprint 'Thomas Bracken and Company Ltd.' Bracken carried on his column 'The Humorist' under his own name, and continued to encourage local writers. On the death of Bradshaw (1 Sep 1886) he was again requisitioned to stand, W. Hutchison offering to retire in his favour. Eventually both went to the poll, which resulted: Bracken 501, Hutchison 255, C. R. Chapman 80, W. Darling 3. A dissolution occurred in Jul 1887. Bracken did not offer himself for re-election. His affairs were not flourishing, and in Sep 1890 the *Evening Herald* was sold and closed down, making way for a new Liberal paper, *The Globe*.

Bracken now turned his attention to publishing, and in 1890 brought out his most pretentious volume, *Musings in iHaoriland*, with a preface by Sir George Grey. A considerable edition de luxe was printed in Leipzig and the person who financed it had no success in selling copies in Australia. At length he persuaded Bracken, much against his will, to visit Australia to make a personal canvass. He is said to have sold 700 copies, but there is evidence that he was in financial difficulties either on this or on a subsequent lecturing tour. During

## BRACKEN

this tour he wrote *God's Own Country* (which first appeared in the *Yea Chmnicle* and the *New Zealand Herald*, and which he considered his best poem up to that time). He had been lecturing 'without success and was staying with P. Galvin (q.v.), who was running the *Yea Chronicle*. Galvin offered to do the printing for a lecture which he was to deliver on 6 Apr 1892, the subject being 'A night with Samuel Lever.' It was another failure. Shortly afterwards Galvin had a letter asking for assistance. Bracken was unable to pay his way and had even been forced to part with his dress suit. The Premier (Seddon) offered him a post in the land and income tax department, but close clerical work did not suit his temperament. In May 1894 he was appointed a bill-reader, and he held that position till late in 1895. Many members favoured his being appointed sergeant-at-arms in the House of Representatives on the death of Colonel de Quincey (Jul 1894). He died on 16 Feb 1898.

Bracken's career was at one time full of promise. He was a staunch Liberal with a genuine sympathy for the oppressed. He was a freemason for many years and a pastmaster of the Celtic Lodge (S.C.). Though born a Protestant, he was pre-eminently an Irishman and had a good deal in common with his fellow-countrymen in New Zealand and with the Roman Catholics. When Bishop Moran was establishing the *Tablet* in 1874, R. A. Loughnan (q.v.), one of the provisional directors, suggested employing Bracken to canvass for shares. He had great success and the paper was started forthwith. Bracken came more closely in touch with Catholics on the question of education and he became a Catholic in 1896 and died in that faith. In 1887 he moved a resolution in the House of Representatives in favour of home rule for Ireland.

Bracken's publications are: 1871, *Behind the Tomb and othel' Poems*; 1876, *Pulpit Lectures*; 1877, *Flowers of the Freeland*; 1879, *The New Zealand Tourist* (containing N.Z. Anthem); 1880, *Paddy Mill'phy's Budget*; 1884, *Lays of the Land of the Maori and Moea*; 1886, *Paddy MW'phy's Annual* (a record of political and social events); 1887, *A Sheaf from the Sanctum*; 1890, *Musings in Maoriland*; 1892, *Dear Old Bendigo* and *The Triumph of Woman's Rights*; 1893, *Lays and Lyrics*; 1896, *Tom*

## BRADNEY

*Bracken's Annual* (i); 1897, *Tom Bracken's Annual* (ii); 1905, *Not Understood and Other Poems* (many later editions, the 8th in 1928).

Personal information from P. Galvin, T. L. Buick, Sir R. Stout; Bracken, *op. cit.*; Innes, *Canterbury Sketches*; N.Z.P.D., 1881-84, 1886-87; G. W. Otterson, *Memoirs of Thomas Bracken*, 1929; Scholefield, *Union Catalogue*; and notes towards a bibliography of Thomas Bracken; Hocken; *Saturday Advertiser*, Aug-Sep 1879, 20 Dec 1879; N.z. *Herald*, 19 Feb 1898; *Evening Post*, 6 Apr 1931; N.z. *Tablet*, II Mar 1898; J. Cowan in *Otago Daily Times*, 4 May 1926; R. Irwin, *ib.* Aug 1930; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 Dec 1882, 14, 20 Aug 1884, 18 Nov 1893; *Evening Star*, 17, 21 Feb 1898.

BRADNEY, FREDERICK (1833-1911) was born at Greenwich. His father, Francis Bradey (1793-1864), was a grandson of a former chancellor of Ireland, served in the Royal Artillery, 1812-19, and was in business in Southwark for 20 years. He selected land under the New Zealand Company in London in 1839, brought his family to New Zealand in the *Adelaide* (1840) and took up land at Pahautanui. Bradey was one of the survivors of the boat accident at Petone on 25 Aug 1840. He died on 29 Oct 1864. Frederick went to England with his father in 1841, but returned to New Zealand and remained here all his life except for two years on the Australian goldfields (1852-53). He took up a property of 2,000 acres at Pahautanui in 1855 and greatly improved it in subsequent years. In 1872 he was a lieutenant in the rifle volunteers, of which he was in command when they were disbanded some years later. He was a justice of the peace (1882) and a vice-president of the Wellington Agricultural and Pastoral association, chairman of the Hutt county council (1898-99), and of the 'Wellington education board and a member of the Wellington harbour board (1896-1908), the benevolent trustees, the hospital and charitable aid board, the Technical College board, the Anglican diocesan synod and many other bodies. Bradey married (1855) Agnes, daughter of Richard Stuart. He died on 8 Aug 1911.

*Career of F. Bradey* (1906, p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.L.*, 1908; *N.L. Times*, 9 Aug 1911; *N.L. Spectator*, 15 Jun 1853.

BRADNEY, JOHN HENRY (1853-1936) was born in Staffordshire and came to Auckland

## BRADSHAW

with his parents at the age of six. At 11 he commenced work on a farm and eventually took to the sea, and was engaged in coastal trading, bushfelling at Coromandel and gold-mining at Thames. He was for some years a waterman at Auckland, plying rowboats between the city and North Shore. Mter serving in the steamer *Lily* in the Kaipara service and in larger ships in oversea trade he was again a waterman in the service of the harbour board. In 1884, with his brother-in-law (E. C. Binns), he founded a firm of steamboat proprietors (aftenvards J. H. Bradney and Sons). 'Bradney was for nine years (1907-15, 1922-23) on the Auckland harbour board; was a member of the Mount Albert borough council and represented Auckland West in Parliament (1911-14). Fond of music, he was for half a century a member of the Auckland Choral Society. He died on 25 May 1936.

*N.Z. Herald*, 27 May 1936.

BRADSHAW, JAMES BENN BRADSHAIGH (1831-86), one of New Zealand's earliest labour reformers, was the son of General Joseph Bradshaw, H.E.I.C.S., and was born at Barton Blount, Lancashire. He was educated at Haileybury for the service of the East India Company, but a few months in India showed that his health would be unequal to the climate and he resigned and travelled widely in South America, in the islands of the Indian Ocean and in South Africa. He was a fine shot and horseman, a clever swordsman and a good all-round athlete. When the Kaffir war broke out in 1850 he received (through his friend Sir Harry Smith) first a post as agent for the War Office and then a commission in the field. He served until Sir Harry's recall in 1852 and then went to Isle of France and in 1855 to Victoria, attracted by the goldfields.

Bradshaw studied auriferous drifts scientifically and was early impressed with the future of quartz mining. He followed each new rush and had considerable fortune, especially at Eaglehawk and New Bendigo. At Castlemaine he opened an assay office which he eventually sold to the Union Bank, of which he became the local agent. At this time he took a great interest in the Otago fields and proposed to the Superintendent (Richardson) opening a government assay office which would raise the price

## BRADSHAW

of gold to the miners. This project he afterwards pressed without success upon Macandrew, Vogel and Moorhouse. Coming to Otago about 1864, he brought 3,000 oz of gold from the fields to Waikouaiti for shipment to Dunedin before the escort was established. Bradshaw followed the rush to Queenstown and settled there as editor of the *Lake Wakatip Mail* (1863-64). He stoutly advocated liberal land laws, including the cancellation of pastoral leases to make way for agricultural leases; higher prices for gold, with the reduction of duty and the abolition of all special taxes. In 1864 he contested the Provincial Council seat (against Mouat) without success; but early in 1866 he defeated Main and Manders for the Goldfields seat in Parliament. On 17 Apr 1867, owing to his outstanding knowledge of mining matters, the general government delegated to Bradshaw the special powers over goldfields which were normally exercised by the Superintendent (see MACANDREW). There was strong feeling in the province, and many demonstrations against the general government until the powers were transferred to the Otago executive (Dec 1870). In 1870 Bradshaw married Harriette Clementina, daughter of Capt. R. N. Bolton, 84th Regiment (of county Meath).

On the opening of the Thames fields Bradshaw made useful reports to the government on quartz-mining and he remained at Thames for some time engaged as a sharebroker, which business he continued after his return to Dunedin. From his close friendship with Richardson, he was inspired by information and advice to persevere in projects of labour reform. In 1870 he won the Waikaia parliamentary seat, and during that Parliament he obtained the passage of his employment of females act (1873) which restricted to eight hours a day the hours of labour for women. Next year he advised some amendments of the factory act, and in 1875 he got it enacted that no child under ten years of age should work in a factory and no boy or girl between 10 and 14 should work for more than four hours a day. He assisted materially in the achievement of the Saturday half-holiday.

In 1871 Bradshaw was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for Mount Bengel, and he at once joined Reid's executive, of which he was a member until Reid joined the Stafford ministry (Sep 1872). Being wrongly held re-

## BRAME

sponsible for the Moa Flat sale, Bradshaw lost his seat at the elections in 1873. Standing for Wakatipu at the next parliamentary elections (1876) he was defeated by Manders, largely on account of his views on secular education. Though now out of Parliament, he continued his advocacy of liberal legislation, and as a member of the Otago waste lands board from 1878 he fought strenuously against dummyming and received the warm thanks of a great labour meeting in Dunedin (1884). A few months later he was elected for Dunedin Central, defeating the sitting member (Bracken, q.v.). He died on 1 Sep 1886, leaving a widow and young family. His great humanitarian services were recognised by labour organisations throughout the colony. Bradshaw played cricket against the first All England team both in Victoria and in New Zealand.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Paul, *Trades Unionism*; *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Sep 1886; *Otago Witness*, 24 Dec 1886; *Mt. Ida Chronicle*, 23 Jan 1874. Portrait: Parliament House.

BRAME, WILLIAM RAWSON (1833-63) was the son of a Baptist minister and was preparing for the church when his health failed and he entered upon his apprenticeship to a publisher in Birmingham. For a short time he edited the *Mercury* there, and then settled in Brussels as foreign correspondent of several English newspapers. He had published one novel, *The Last of the Czars*, and was engaged on another (*Excelsior*) when he conceived the idea of a Nonconformist settlement in New Zealand. Being a persuasive speaker, he had considerable success and took advantage of the prevailing sentiment on the occasion of the bi-centenary of the expulsion of Nonconformists from the Church of England to promote the Albertland Christian Colonisation movement. He was appointed honorary secretary and general manager and obtained from the Auckland provincial government the agency for colonists' land orders (of which he proposed to dispose of 1,000). Land was acquired at Oruawharo in Albertland (which was named after the Prince Consort). The colonists sailed between May 1862 and Oct 1863. They encountered unexpected difficulties in getting settled on their farms and friction occurred with Brame in respect to the township sections, which he claimed he had the right to dispose of. He paid only

## BRANDON

two short visits to Albertland, his death occurring in Auckland on 21 Mar 1863.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; Brett, *Albertlanders* (P).

BRANDON, ALFRED DE BATHE (1809-86) was born in London, educated for the law and had practised for some time, when, at the age of thirty years, he took his passage for New Zealand in the *London* (700 tons) (Aug 1840). Mrs Brandon died shortly after their arrival, and he married again (1854) Miss Poole. Brandon commenced practice at Brandon's corner, almost opposite the present Government Buildings. For many years he was crown prosecutor. In 1863 he took in as partner J. S. Moore (q.v.), who soon withdrew to accept a seat on the Supreme Court bench. In 1870 he took in W. H. Quick, and they practised together until 1875, when A. de B. Brandon, junior (q.v.) joined the firm.

Brandon was a member of the Settlers' COLSTITUTIONAL association. Shortly after the provincial councils were set up he was appointed provincial solicitor, and with short intermissions he held this office throughout the long superintendency of Featherston. Wakefield's opposition to Featherston developed into a feud, and for some years the affairs of the province were held up by opposition in the Council. The Council supported Wakefield, who insisted in the name of responsible government that an executive of his nomination should take office as the Superintendent's advisers. For a short space Brandon and his colleagues stood down and Wakefield's colleagues were nominally in charge. A dissolution and a general election brought Featherston back to power with a majority, and thenceforward politics moved more smoothly.

Brandon was a member of the Provincial Council throughout the whole period of its existence -1853-76. He sat part of the time for the Wellington Country constituency and for the remainder as the representative of Porirua. The same constituencies sent him to the House of Representatives from 1858 until he sought retirement in 1881. Two years later he was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat until his death on 22 Sep 1886. Few public men were so continuously acceptable in politics. He was a staunch provincialist and in the colonial sphere an opponent of Stafford. He supported

## BRANDON

whole-heartedly Weld's self-reliant policy and thereafter gave his adherence to Fox until 1870, when the Vogel policy drove him into a critical opposition. He voted against the government in 1872.

Apart from politics Brandon took a great interest in education. He was the first chairman of the board of governors of Wellington College. In business life he was intimately connected with substantial companies and was for years a director of the Colonial Insurance Co. and the Australian Mutual Provident Society. He was president of the Wellington Club and of the Wellington Law Society.

*Wellington p.e. Proc.*; Ward (p); *N.Z. Times*, 23 Sep 1886; *Evening Post*, 11 Sep 1929 (p).

BRANDON, ALFRED DE BATHE (1854-1938), the son of A. de B. Brandon (q.v.) was born at Wellington, and educated at Wellington College (where he entered on the opening day, 1872) and at Trinity Hall, Cambridge (B.A., 1877). Called to the bar at the Middle Temple, he joined his father's practice and was, like him, president of the Wellington Law Society. Brandon was a member of the Wellington City Council (1886-91) and mayor (1893), was a member of the chamber of commerce from 1892 (councillor 1894-1900, 1903-06; president 1895, 1897 and 1898; life member 1928). He was a foundation member of the Wellington Automobile Club in 1905 (president 1907-12; and life member). He was a director of the Gear Meat Co. and of the Australian Mutual Provident Society from 1888 (chairman 1918-34). Brandon married (1879) Louisa, daughter of Thomas Keble. He died on 30 Jul 1938.

Ward; *eye! N.Z.*, i (p); *The Dominion*, 1 Aug 1938.

BRANIGAN, ST JOHN (1824-73) was born in King's county, Ireland. He joined the 45th regiment, resigning in Cape Colony to join the police, in which he made rapid progress and became an inspector. He was rewarded for gallantry in frontier duty against Kaffirs (in which he was wounded). In 1854 he went to Victoria and after running a small schooner without success he accepted a cadetship in the police and rose to sub-inspector. In 1861 he brought a detachment of 20 mounted police from Victoria and organised the Otago force and the goldfields escorts. He became commis-

## BRAY

sioner (1863) and resigned in 1869 to organise the Armed Constabulary on service against Te Kooti. Ill-health compelled him to retire in 1870 and he died on 10 Sep 1873. Branigan was the originator and organiser of the Otago industrial school.

*App. H.R.*, 1870, D.7; Gilkison; Hocken, *Otago*; Larkworthy; *Otago Daily Times*, 23 Oct 1869, 16 Sep 1873; *Otago Guardian*, 11 Sep 1873.

BRASSEY, WILLOUGHBY (1818-1904) as a young man served in the British navy. Retiring in 1839, he entered the service of the East India Company and was present at the operations in Scinde, Afghanistan and against the Southern Mahrattas. He was acting field engineer at the sieges of Panalla, Powenghur, Managhur, Mansingtoosh and Samunghur; was five years adjutant of his regiment and retired on half-pay with the rank of captain. Brassey being in New Zealand in 1865, the Government commissioned him as a major in the Taranaki Military Settlers, and he was sent with a force of 400 to garrison Pipiriki against a Hauhau invasion by the river route. The enemy by a surprise movement took possession of high ground overlooking the position and was only driven out by a resolute assault under Lieutenant Cleary. Some time later a relieving force arrived from Wanganui. Brassey was next sent to Opotiki (Sep 1865) and shortly afterwards retired from the force. He died at Christchurch on 29 Jan 1904.

Cowan ii; Gudgeon (p); *Lyttelton Times*.

BRAY, WILLIAM BAYLEY (1812-85) was born in London, the son of a wine merchant and educated as a civil engineer partly there and partly in Germany. (Assoc. I.C.E., 1836.) He was engaged on railway construction abroad and carried out important work for Robert Stephenson in Egypt in face of considerable official obstacles. In 1845 he was constructing a railway in Tuscany, Italy.

In 1851 Bray landed in Canterbury with his family. Believing that his professional life was at an end, he took up 500 acres of land at Avonhead, and (with Joseph Hill) the Bray Down run of 10,000 acres, in the forks of the Hawkins and Selwyn rivers. Bray was in the Provincial Council for Christchurch Country (1855-56) and in the first session was appointed chairman of a committee to report on the com-

## BREE

pletion of the Port road. This brought him back to his profession. He took the levels in the Heathcote valley and ascertained the point at which the railway tunnel should enter the hills, and then proceeded to London, explained the project to the railway commissioners and obtained a contract at £235,000. In 1862 he reported on wharves for Lyttelton harbour, where the berthage was very exposed; and in the following year was chairman of the wharfage commission. Their report was strengthened by the opinion of Stephenson, the result of which was the breakwater at Officers' point and the Gladstone pier. Bray constantly warned the people of Christchurch against an inundation of the town by the Waimakariri floods (which was fulfilled in 1868). He was a deeply religious man and a strong churchman. He died on 26 May 1885.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 27 May 1885.

BREE, EDWARD NUGENT (1803-83) was the son of the Rev Robert Francis Bree, of Sydenham, England. He was curate of East Dereham, Norfolk, to 1848, and rector of All Saints, Hereford (1851-59). In the early sixties Bree came to New Zealand, and in 1864 was vicar of Whangarei. Thereafter he lived in Auckland as vicar of All Saints for a short time and then for sixteen years as vicar of St Mattheus. He was a strong evangelical and freely associated with the clergy of other denominations at church meetings. He took a great interest in social movements. In the time of the depression of the sixties he proposed a scheme of poor law relief for destitute persons, combining the principles of equal distribution of the burden and benefits and the labour test for able-bodied recipients. Another interesting social plan he outlined in 1881. Bree was president of the Young Men's Christian Association. In 1864 he was a highway trustee for the Wairoa district. He died on 6 Jun 1883.

Ruvigny, *Plantagenet Roll of the Blood Royal*, 1911; *Southern Cross*, 26 Jul 1866, 28 Oct 1873; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Jan 1868, 18 Feb 1881, 7 Jun 1883, 8 Nov 1926; *Auckland Star*, 7 Jun 1883.

BREES, SAMUEL CHARLES (1810-65) was practising as an engineer and surveyor in Gray's Inn, London, when he was appointed in 1841 to succeed W. M. Smith (q.v.) as principal

## BRETT

surveyor to the New Zealand Company for a period of three years. He came to New Zealand in the *Brougham*, arriving on 9 Feb 1842. In 1843, with Taringakuri (q.v.), Brees laid out the route from Wellington to the Wairarapa. He made some of the best known maps of Wellington, including one of the town in 1843 and a map of the reserves in 1844. He is, however, best known for his sketches of New Zealand scenery, many of which were published in 1847 in a large portfolio entitled *Pictorial New Zealand*, 'with introduction and descriptive matter by Brees. He left New Zealand with great reluctance on the conclusion of his contract, regretting that the colony had not been better understood and treated in its earlier years. He resumed the practice of his profession in London, this time at Lincoln's Inn, and lived later at Croydon and at Brighton. He died at sea on 5 May 1865.

*N.Z.C.*, Reports; Ward; E. J. Wakefield; Brees, *op. cit.*; *Brighton Gum'dian*, 28 Nov 1849.

BRETT, DE RENZIE JAMES (1809-89) was the son of a barrister at Wexford, Ireland. He was educated at Patora, county Enniskillen, under Dr (afterwards Bishop) Knox, and in 1825 received his ensigncy in the 31st Madras Light Infantry, in which he served 24 years (nine as adjutant and some time as fort adjutant at Bellary).

Brett had a most gallant record of service. In the Coorg campaign (1834) he distinguished himself in rearguard actions; in saving the regimental treasure when the transport bullocks had been killed; at the capture of the stockade of Cassinully and in command of the assaulting party at the storming of the Bakh stockade (when six out of eight officers were killed). This action, which is described in Warren's History of India, was referred to by King William IV in a speech to Parliament. Brett also assisted in the capture of the Rajah of Coorg, and received his company in recognition. Returning to Ireland on a visit, he was promoted major in 1853 and served in the second Burma campaign as a volunteer, second in command of the 35th Madras Light Infantry. He captured a post far in advance of the expedition on the Irrawaddy river, commanded the flank companies at the capture of Prome and the wing in the advance from that position. When the Crimean war broke out Brett's services were

## BRETT

requisitioned by the War Office and he was appointed (with the rank of brigadier) to command four regiments of Osmanti cavalry in the service of the Sultan of Turkey. He went to Syria and Albania and raised new formations in an incredibly short time, landing them at the Dardanelles without loss of man or horse. He commanded the Osmanli cavalry regiments throughout the campaign in the Balkans to Shumla, his services being recognised by the dignity of 'Ieva pasha' (with the rank of major-general) and the third-class of the Medjidieh.

Brett had no sooner reached England (to give evidence in a courtmartial) than he was summoned to India on the outbreak of the mutiny. Joining the flying column at Kurnul, he was appointed to Whitlock's personal staff until the arrival of his own regiment (the 108th Foot) and the 3rd Madras Europeans, which he led in the relief of Delhi and Lucknow and the capture of the Nabob. Whitlock's column pressed on to Kirwee, where treasure to the value of three-quarters of a million was captured and sent to Allahabad. Brett was president of the Banda and Kirwee prize court. He then, with a regiment of irregular cavalry, two guns and two companies of Europeans mounted on camels and elephants, operated for two months in pursuit of Tantia Topi (1858). Returning to England after the mutiny to look after the claims of his superior officers Brett retired on full pay with £5,000 of prize money (1863).

In 1865 he arrived in Lyttelton by the *Gl'ey-hollnd* and at once took up a property in the Courtenay district, which he named Kirwee. He was a fine settler, adopting the best methods of farming and taking a prominent part in local affairs. In 1870 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Selwyn. Having already promoted some experiments in irrigation, he brought in resolutions calling upon the executive to inaugurate a system of water races for the light lands of Canterbury, especially in Courtenay, Malvern and Hororata (Aug 1871). Eventually £10,000 was voted (Dec 1872), and from this beginning irrigation was rapidly extended over a great part of northern Canterbury, with benefits so obvious that in 1887 the farmers of the district combined to make a presentation to Brett in recognition of his

## BRETT

services. He was also largely responsible for the opening of a school in the district. Brett was called to the Legislative Council in 1871 and attended to his duties with soldierly regularity throughout his life. In the Provincial Council (1870-74) and in the General Assembly he consistently urged the need for strengthening the defences of the colony and he personally supported the volunteer system. At the time of the Russian scare he was expected to command the Canterbury Irish Rifles, but there was a prior claim on his services for the honorary reserve corps, which he had assisted to establish and of which he was commandant at his death. He was the first president of the local Agricultural and Pastoral association.

Brett moved into Christchurch a few years before his death, which took place on 16 Jun 1889. He married in 1845 Harriet Baker, daughter of Colonel Harris, of the 24th Foot.

*Parltry Record; Canterbury P.C. Proc., 1870-74* (notably 1 Aug 1870, 4 Dec 1872); *N.Z.P.D.*; *Col. Gent.*; *The Press*, 17 Jan 1889, 27 Jan 1930 (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 17 Jun 1889. Portrait: Parliament House.

BRETT, SIR HENRY (1842-1927) was born at St Leonards, Sussex, and brought up to the printing trade with his uncle, who owned the *Hastings and St Leonards Gazette* and was a well-known stationer and local historian. At the age of 19 Brett became interested in the Albertland proposal, bought a section of 40 acres from the Auckland Provincial Government and received a promise of three days' work per week in the office of the settlement newspaper and the other days for his farm work. He sailed in the *Hanover*.

On arriving at Auckland (on 17 Sep 1862) he was offered by one of the owners of the *Southern Cross* a position on that paper as a reporter at £1 per day. He accepted, and soon became known as a most efficient shipping reporter. An amateur oarsman in England (where he was pair-oar champion of the South Coast), he now became an expert boatman, meeting the English ships as they arrived far down the channel and gaining many 'scoops' in advance of his competitors. Moving in 1865 to the *New Zealand Herald*, he enhanced his reputation there. In 1870 Brett became part owner of the *Evening Star*, which had just been established by

## BRETT

Farrar and G. M. Reed (q.v.). There he developed his news-getting methods by the use of pigeons and transmitting by this means photographs of political speeches which had appeared in the Thames newspapers. For some years he represented the news agency of Holt and McCarthy. By the retirement of Reed in 1876 he became sole proprietor of the *Star*, which made steady progress. In 1884 he moved from "Wyndham street to new offices in Shortland street. In 1920 the paper was floated into a public company, of which Brett continued to be managing director until his death. He was associated with many other newspaper organisations, being a director of the Press Association for 39 years (and many years chairman), and an original member (and eventually a life member) of the Newspaper Proprietors' Association. He attended the first Empire Press Conference in 1909.

Brett introduced photo-engraving and from 1890 published the *New Zealand Graphic*, an illustrated weekly, and the *New Zealand Farmer* (monthly). For many years (from 1873) he published *Brett's Auckland Almanac*, the *Colonists' Guide*, the *Gardening Guide*, and the *South Pacific Pilot*. Of his historical works the most important was *Early New Zealand* (by Sherrin and Wallace) published in 1887. He published also *Defenders of New Zealand*, by T. W. Gudgeon (1890), *White Wings* (vol. i, 1924; vol. ii, 1928) and (with Henry Hook) *The Albertlanders* (1927), which was based on a diary kept by him during the voyage to New Zealand.

Brett took a limited part in public life. In 1874 he was a member of the Parnell highway board and he was later on the domain board, the Auckland harbour board, the city improvement commissioners and the City Council (1877-78). In 1878 he was mayor of Auckland. He was a governor of the Grammar School and University College and was associated with the Mechanics' Institute. A Liberal in politics and a supporter of the Ballance and Seddon administrations, he declined a seat in the Legislative Council (1899) and twice declined a knighthood, which eventually he accepted in 1926. He was a commissioner for the Paris Exhibition, for the International Exhibition at Christchurch (1906-07) and for the visit of the Duke and Duchess of York (1901).

## BREWER

Brett made generous gifts to Auckland University College and the Auckland Art Gallery (1904). Keenly interested in music, he was a chorister of St Leonard's Church in England and thereafter for 72 years continuously sang in church choirs, including those of St Matthew's, St Paul's and St Peter's, Auckland. He was choirmaster of St Peter's and presented organs to that church, to the town hall in Auckland and to the Blind Institute, besides making many gifts of music to various societies. He was president for some years of the Auckland Orchestral Society (which he took to the exhibition at Christchurch) and of the Choral Society and the Bohemian Orchestra; and was a life patron of the Royal Auckland Choir. He was fond of gardening, was president of the Auckland Horticultural Society and in 1910 won a gold medal of the Royal Horticultural Society. He held few directorships except that of the Auckland Savings Bank and the Kauri Timber Co. Brett was a member of the Cinque Ports artillery volunteers, and on coming to Auckland joined the Rutland Rifles, with which he did duty during the Maori war.

He married (1864) Mary, daughter of James Moon (Westfield, Sussex). He died on 29 Jan 1927.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Brett, *op. cit.*; *The Albertlanders* (p); *The Star* (Auckland), 31 Jan 1927.

BREWER, CHARLES BABINGTON (1816-68) was a son of T. G. Brewer, a London barrister, and brother-in-law of H. S. Chapman (q.v.). He was a barrister of the Middle Temple (1838) and was appointed crown prosecutor at Melbourne (1839). Arriving at Bay of Islands in Feb 1840, he attended a meeting of white settlers to consider the formation of a joint stock banking company and he was a member of the provisional committee. In Apr he attended a meeting in Sydney of people interested in New Zealand. A few months later he attended a meeting of land claimants at Coromandel and acted as their agent in Sydney. After the separation of New Zealand from New South Wales Brewer was appointed clerk of the peace at Auckland and registrar of the court of requests (3 Aug 1841). He was one of the commissioners appointed by the governor to inquire into the affray at Wairau (1843) and he was appointed a county court judge at Nel-

## BRIDGE

son and shortly afterwards a commissioner of the court of requests for the Southern division (Dec 1844). During FitzRoy's governorship Brewer went to Tasmania and then to New South Wales. In 1862 he was appointed a county court judge and he served in that capacity and as mining judge at Geelong, Portland, Colac, Sale and Beechworth. He died 14 Jan 1868. An elder brother, WILLIAM VINCENT BREWER, who was also a barrister, arrived in New Zealand at the same time and acted with him as agents for the New Zealand Association in respect to land claims. He was shot in a duel with another lawyer (Ross) at Wellington on 26 Feb 1844.

Crown Law Office, Melbourne; Ward; Sherrin and Wallace; *N.Z. Journal*, 28 Sep 1844.

BRIDGE, CHARLES JOSEPH (?-1876) before coming to New Zealand was on the Liverpool stock exchange. In 1854 he bought the Homebrook station in Canterbury, and by 1865 had a fine freehold property of 1,400 acres upon which the town of Southbridge was laid out. Bridge was on the Canterbury Provincial Executive for a few months in 1859. He died in 1876.

Adam!

BRITTAN, JOSEPH (1805-67), who was a brother of W. G. Brittan (q.v.), came to New Zealand in the *William Hyde* (1852) and settled in Christchurch. A practised writer, he was the first editor (1854) and for some time proprietor of the *Canterbury Standard*. He was elected to the Canterbury Provincial Council for Christchurch City in 1855 and represented it till 1857 and again 1861-62. He was leader of the executive in 1855 and provincial secretary under Tancred (1855-57). Brittan was a fine, fluent speaker, an unequalled debater and an attentive and competent administrator. In 1857 he contested the superintendency against Moorhouse. He then withdrew from politics for a year or two and strongly opposed Moorhouse's railway policy in 1859. In 1861 he was again in the Council (representing Christchurch to Sep 1862, when he resigned). In 1863 he succeeded Hall as resident magistrate for Christchurch and Kaiapoi, but he resigned owing to ill-health in 1864. He died on 27 Oct 1867.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Cox, *Men of Mark*; *Lyttelton Times*, 28 Oct 1867.

## BRITTAN

BRITTAN, WILLIAM GUISE (1809-76) was born at Gloucester on 3 Dec 1809 and educated at the Plymouth Grammar School, where he was head of the school. He studied medicine and surgery, and made two or three voyages to India and China as surgeon of the Indiaman *General Palmer*. He lived for some time near Staines, and married Louisa Chandler, of London. In 1841 he moved to Castleton, Sherborne, Dorsetshire, and became editor and proprietor of the *Sherborne Mercury*, a Conservative paper.

The *Mercury* received advertisements from the New Zealand Company, and Brittan became interested in Canterbury. He was one of the first to enrol as a colonist and was in the chair at the historic meeting at the Adelphi rooms on 24 Apr 1850 when the Society of Canterbury Colonists was formed. He was on the committee of management, and as chairman was the medium of communication between the colonists and the Canterbury Association. Brittan in May pledged himself to fill with emigrants a ship of the largest size. He was constantly to the fore in the deliberations of the colonists and he was warmly thanked for his untiring exertions. Wakefield drafted a letter to Godley suggesting that Brittan should be given a post of trust in the colony next to that of Godley himself. 'This gentleman,' he wrote, 'has taken, naturally as it were, a position of leadership of the body of colonists who are now preparing to depart from England. His popularity and influence with them and the marked confidence with which they regard him have manifestly been occasioned by no design on his part to win their good opinion, but have resulted from their own observation of his valuable and amiable qualities: It was Brittan who suggested that the colonists should recognise the assistance of Lord Lyttelton by giving his name to the capital city of the province. The proposal was unanimously adopted by the Society, but when the capital was removed to the plains Godley allowed the names to remain as they were. Brittan took passage in the *Sir George Seymour* and he was succeeded as chairman in London by Captain Charles Simeon. The *Sir George Seymour* sailed from Plymouth on 8 Sep 1850, and arrived at Lyttelton on 17 Dec. The Society of Canterbury Colonists then became the Society of

## BRITTAN

Canterbury Land Purchasers. Brittan was again elected to the chair and was appointed by Godley to take charge of the land office, and supervise the allotment of sections in town and country. Early in 1852 the Society dissolved and two new societies were formed, one at Lyttelton and the other at Christchurch. Brittan declined to take office. From a piece of bush which he milled he supplied timber for many of the houses in the new town. His own residence, in Oxford terrace, was used in 1858 as a meeting place by the Provincial Council, and afterwards became part of the old Clarendon hotel.

In public life Brittan took little part. He appeared on the first electoral roll in 1853 and announced himself as a candidate for the Christchurch Country District in both General Assembly and Provincial Council. Defeated in the former contest, he felt that he had been badly treated and withdrew from the other. Having had charge of the land office since Jan 1851, he was appointed by the General Government in 1853 to be commissioner of crown lands for Canterbury in succession to Colonel Campbell and a commissioner under the land claimants ordinance. In 1854 he became a trustee of the Deans estate, which he helped to manage until 1874. In 1853 he was chairman of the Christchurch Market Co. In Oct 1856 he was appointed a resident magistrate and chief commissioner of the waste lands board. He was chairman of the Halswell road board (1867), but otherwise never sought public office, except in the service of the Church of England. He was a member of the first synod of the diocese (1859); gave the site for the second church erected on the plains (at Papanui), and was largely responsible for the erection of churches at Avonside and Halswell.

Brittan was regarded as the father of cricket in Canterbury. A keen player himself, he was a moving spirit in obtaining facilities for playing. At an early date he set aside a field in which he erected a pavilion for the benefit of players. In 1871, the cricketers of Canterbury presented him with a clock in recognition of his services. He was a member of the committee which formed the Jockey Club (in 1851) (and treasurer of the club in 1854). He brought out from England two brace of partridges which he carefully guarded while they multiplied. He was a founder of the Horticultural Society and

## BRODIE

of the Farmers' Club (of which he was some time president) and chairman of the Christchurch domain board (1871-74). He died on 18 Jul 1876.

Adand; Godley, *Letters*; *The Press*, 19 July 1876, 22 Mar 1930 (p).

BRITTIN, DINGLEY ASKHAM, who was born in Huntingdonshire in 1823, was educated in England and passed as a solicitor. He came to New Zealand in the *Minerva* (1853) and took up land in Canterbury. He was M.H.R. for Christchurch Country from 1855 to 1856, when he resigned to return to England.

*Parliamentary Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii.

BROAD, LOWTHER (1840-92) was born at Kensington, London, the son of the Rev J. B. Broad, M.A., of Hitchin, Hertfordshire. Educated partly in France, he came to Victoria as a youth and engaged in mining at Bendigo. In the early sixties he was attracted to Otago, where he was goldmining on the Molyneux. In 1863 he was appointed resident magistrate at Queenstown and later at Arrow, and in 1870 he was transferred to the Thames as warden and magistrate. There he was tempted to resign and enter into business as an auctioneer. In Aug 1870 he was elected to represent Thames in the Auckland Provincial Council, but he did not take his seat. A few weeks later he was appointed warden and magistrate on the Nelson South-West goldfields. In 1872 he was moved to Nelson, where in 1873 he became district court judge, a position he held until his death (on 16 Aug 1892). He was called to the bar in 1875. Broad was a man of comprehensive human sympathies and considerable ability. He was vice-president of the Nelson Exhibition in 1873 and won the prize for a tale of goldfields life. He published a number of legal works, including a digest of cases in district courts, a *Resident Magistrate's Court Guide*, a *Justice's Handbook*, and *The Law of Innkeepers* and the *New Zealand Law List* (1881). He also compiled for the jubilee of Nelson a history of the province. Broad married (1867) Mary Isabella, daughter of Henry Bunny.

*Col. Gent.*; Broad, *op. cit.*; Weston; *The Colonist*, 16 Aug 1892; *Thames Advertiser*, Jul 1870.

BRODIE, ALEXANDER (1831-94) was born at Leith, Scotland, and as a young man joined the

BRODIE

Royal Engineers. After a course of study he was sent to Canada and received special thanks from the War Office for assisting to save the vessel on the voyage. Arriving in New Zealand in 1863, he was attached to the troops as engineer and constructed the military telegraph line, the first in the colony, which he operated throughout the war. He then brought out his family and for many years was one of the most prominent residents on the Thames goldfields. For some time he managed the Criterion battery (Waiotahi). He was mayor of Thames (1888) and chairman of the Thames county council. Brodie was a man of considerable administrative ability and an authority on mine drainage. He contested the parliamentary seat (1881). Brodie died on 17 Apr 1894.

"eston; *N.Z. Herald*, 20 Apr 1894; *Thames Star*, 25 Jul 1927 (p).

BRODIE, GEORGE (1833-72) was born in Scotland. After some experience as a youth in Edinburgh he arrived in Victoria at the height of the gold diggings, was in Ballarat in 1854 and worked in a co-operative party crushing quartz at Bendigo in 1855.

In 1858 he was elected at the head of the poll as a member of the Victorian Legislative Assembly for Mandurang (with Thomas Carpenter) and he was appointed a member of the board of science. When Brodie joined the Heales cabinet early in 1861 as Commissioner of Trade and Customs, he was re-elected by his constituency without opposition. A few months later, attracted by the gold discoveries in Otago, he resigned from the ministry and from Parliament and came to New Zealand as correspondent of the *Otago Daily Times* on the goldfields. Brodie was elected at the head of the poll as a member of the first mining board, of which he became chairman. He was also returned (with Captain Baldwin) to represent the Goldfields in Parliament (1863). He became editor and part proprietor of the *Dunstan Times* and was elected in 1863 to represent the district in the Provincial Council. There, both as private member and on the executive (1865-66), he took a keen interest in education. In Parliament he directed his attention mainly to mining legislation, of which he had a competent knowledge. He did not seek re-election in 1865, and withdrew in 1866 from the Provin-

BROHAM

cial Council, being appointed an inspector under the debtors and creditors act 1865, and in 1867 accountant in bankruptcy. Brodie died on 3 Nov 1872.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; pyke (p); *Otago Daily Times*. 20 Nov 1872.

BRODIE, WALTER ( ) was a son of the Rev Alexander Brodie, D.D., chaplain to King George IV, his mother being a daughter of John Walter (of *The Times*). He first came to New Zealand in 1839, when he purchased land at Bay of Islands. In 1840 he chartered the schooner *Hope* to ship stock to the Chatham islands for two stations of 300,000 acres which he had purchased for £2,000. Except for a short stay in Port Nicholson (1842) and a visit of twelve months to Tahiti, he lived at Bay of Islands till 1843. He was a witness of the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi. Brodie travelled widely in New Zealand, purchasing land mainly with a view to mining, and claimed to have acquired valuable copper tracts. In 1844 he gave evidence before the select committee of the House of Commons. In 1845 he published a controversial book on *The Past and Present State of New Zealand*. In 1850 he visited California (with Carleton, q.v.) and next year published his book on Pitcairn's island. In 1861 he again appeared as the author of a pamphlet criticising Grey's administration.

Brodie established a business in Auckland as a general merchant, retiring about 1870 and returning to live in England. He was M.P.C. for Auckland Suburbs (1855-57) and M.H.R. for the same constituency (1855-60). He had a large estate also at Mangonui, on which he liberated English sparrows and pheasants.

G.B.O.P. 1844/556; *Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Hocken.

BROHAM, THOMAS (1840-1901) was born in county Limerick and came to Victoria as a youth. He was for four years (1859-63) a member of the mounted police, engaged in gold escort duty from Bendigo, and came to the Otago goldfields to work as a digger. In Aug 1863 he joined the Canterbury police under Commissioner Shearman, under whom he had served in Australia. In 1864 he accompanied Revell with a detachment to the West Coast fields, crossing the Hurunui saddle, and was stationed there as an inspector till 1870, when

BROMLEY

he was chosen as an inspector of armed constabulary in Auckland under the General Government. In 1877 he was transferred to Christchurch, in 1882 to Timaru, and in 1888 to Auckland, whence he returned to Canterbury in 1893. He was engaged in many noteworthy criminal prosecutions, including the Hall poisoning case (Timaru), the Scott case in Auckland, and the apprehension of Cyrus Haley for the Pa farm outrage at Onehunga. Broham retired in 1900 and died on 29 Dec of that year.

Police department records; Harrop, *Westland*; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Jan 1900.

BROMLEY, WILLIAM (1816-88) was born in London and served for some years in the Navy. Coming to Wellington in the early forties, he bought land at Pahautanui and kept a hotel there. He was greatly interested in racing, owned a few horses and frequently rode at meetings at Burnham Water and Petone. He represented Wellington Country District in the Provincial Council in 1855. About 1860 Bromley took a position in the customs, in which he was a warehousekeeper until 1880. He died on 2 Nov 1888.

Ward; *Evening Post*, 2 Nov 1888.

BROOKE, THOMAS GEORGE (1849-1931) was born at Wargrave, Berkshire. He spent his boyhood at Reading where he was baptised by the Rev Samuel Leigh (q.v.).

Brooke became a local preacher in Cumberland and was studying for the English ministry when he met the Rev James Buller, then visiting England, who induced him to come to New Zealand. He landed at Auckland on 19 Dec 1878. He spent a year in the Kaipara as assistant to Gittos (q.v.) and in 1880 went to Three Kings College for training. His college course was interrupted in 1881 when he was sent to Leeston to replace the Rev John Armitage (drowned in the wreck of the *Tararua*). In 1884 he married Fanny Rogers, daughter of George C. Waby. He was a forceful preacher, a tireless worker, a wise and capable administrator. He devoted 29 years to circuit work, filling various secretarial positions, and serving in the chair of synods. For eight years he was editor of the *Methodist Outlook*. In 1906 he was president of the Methodist conference, a position he filled with distinction. In 1909 he

BROUN

was appointed general secretary of home missions and superintendent of the Methodist Maori mission. For 15 years he rendered valuable service in this position, which involved constant travel on foot and horseback, heavy correspondence and the oversight of weak circuits and home mission stations. During his term the income of the department trebled, the number of home missionaries increased from 37 to 55 and the number of home mission stations from 48 to 65. Brooke took a leading part in raising the standard of ministerial stipends and led the movement to establish the home missionaries' retiring fund. He was superannuated in 1924, but continued to preach and to serve various boards and institutions of the church until his death (on 31 Aug 1931). M.A.R.P

BROOKFIELD, FREDERICK MORRIS PRESTON (1825-1906) was born in England, came to New Zealand in the early fifties and shortly afterwards went to Melbourne to study law. He married Maria Drakeford (d. 1902). Admitted to practise in 1855, he was for some years provincial solicitor for Auckland and afterwards crown prosecutor. He represented Onehunga in the Provincial Council (1861-63) and Pensioner Settlements (1870-73), and was on the executive in 1862 and 1869-70. Brookfield afterwards became a judge of the native land court, but resigned to resume practice with his son. He died on 4 Oct 1906.

*Auckland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *NZ. Herald*, 5 Oct 1906.

BROUGHTON, REGINALD (1831-1910), the third headmaster of Nelson College (1861-62) was educated at Balliol College, Oxford, where he graduated M.A. He was a brilliant classical scholar, and became a master of Hindustani, which he had studied with a view to taking an official post in India. He left Nelson in 1862 to become headmaster of Christ's College, Christchurch. In 1864 he returned to England, where he took holy orders and subsequently became a fellow and lecturer of Hertford College.

*Nelson Call. Reg.*; Beauchamp; *Christ's Coll. Sell. List* (p).

BROUN, THOMAS (1838-1919) was born and educated in Edinburgh and served in the Crimean war. He had a commission in the 35th Regiment in the Indian Mutiny, after which

## BROWN

he was invalided with cholera and retired (1862). Having married he came to New Zealand and in the Waikato war held a commission in the 1st Waikato Regiment. (Major, N.Z.M., 1905). After the war he farmed at Opotiki for a few years, was a teacher under the Auckland education board (1876-88). Broun was government entomologist. (1894-1905). For many years after 1866 he studied New Zealand insects and he described about 2,000 species in his *Manual Of New Zealand Coleoptera*, and in British scientific publications. Broun was first drawn towards the study of entomology by observing the brilliant tropical insects in Burma. He died on 24 Aug 1919.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); Trs. N.Z. Inst., vol lii (P).

BROWN, ALFRED NESBITT (1803-84) intended to study law but, conceiving a desire to engage in missionary work, for which the Church Missionary Society had as yet no training college, he entered the home of the Rev Edward Bickersteth, a leading member of the Society. When the institution at Islington was opened in 1825, Brown completed his studies there and was ordained by the Bishop of London in the Chapel Royal at St James's (1828). In the following year he married, and shortly afterwards sailed for New Zealand in the *Elizabeth* (C. Davis and his wife being fellow passengers).

Arriving in Sydney in Oct 1829 Brown stayed for a short time with Marsden (q.v.) and eventually reached his destination at Bay of Islands at the end of Nov. In 1833 he accompanied William Williams on an exploration to Thames. In Feb 1834, with Hamlin, he explored the Waikato and later he made a long journey through the southern district and Waikato. Sites for stations were chosen at Otawhao, Puriri, Matamata, and Rotorua and for Brown's own station at Te Papa, Tauranga. In 1835 he opened a station in Waharoa's territory at Matamata. There he laboured for a short time and the chief's son, Tamehana Tarapipipi te Waharoa (q.v.), became a sincere convert and a powerful advocate of Christianity. A general war breaking out, Brown had to leave this station and he returned for a while to Paihia. In 1837 he accompanied Marsden in H.M.S.

## BROWN

*Rattlesnake* to visit the eastern and southern settlements. In 1838 Brown took up his abode permanently at Tauranga, where he spent the rest of his life labouring with great success amongst the adjacent tribes.

As the third ordained minister sent to the New Zealand field Brown was of great assistance to the brothers Williams and later to Bishop Selwyn, who appointed him in 1843 archdeacon of Tauranga and four years later wished to nominate him for a new bishopric. Brown was a generous benefactor of St John's College, Auckland, where he founded the Marsh scholarship in memory of his only son (who died in 1845). His wife died in 1855, and five years later he married Christina Crombie Grant Johnston (who died in 1887). During the Maori war of the sixties Brown was much distressed at the turn events had taken, involving so many of the missionary natives in hostilities with and against their own people. The mission house at Tauranga was the refuge to which all the white women in the district repaired and he intervened in every way to bring about a peaceful settlement. On 28 Apr 1864, the night before the attack at Gate Pa, he invited to communion the British officers chosen for the assault. All but Dr Manly were killed the following day. Brown was described by Mail' as 'a courtly, scholarly English gentleman: He died on 7 Sep 1884.

Sherrin and Wallace; Stock; Jacobs; Carleton; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); Brown, *Brief Memorials of an Only Son* (1845); Maxwell.

BROWN, ANDREW (1799-1854) came to New Zealand in the *Aurora* (1840). He was member of the Wellington Provincial Council for Wellington Country District from 1853 till his death in Dec 1854.

*Wellington P.C. Pmc.*; Ward; *Wellington Independent*, Dec 1854-Jan 1855.

BROWN, CHARLES (1820-1901) was the only son of Charles Armitage Brown (q.v.) and was born in Ireland. He spent the first two years with his 'native Irish' mother and thereafter lived in Italy with his father until 1834, when they returned to England for the boy's education, which was obtained at Plymouth. He learned no trade or profession.

Brown had not reached his majority when he sailed (Mar 1841) in the *Amelia Thompson* for

## BROWN

New Zealand, where his father's sanguine expectations pictured a bright future. Brown brought with him the machinery for a sawmill, which he lost no time in erecting. He went through the whole gamut of the colonist, pioneering, business, journalism and public affairs, and speedily took a leading part in the life of the province. In 1849 he paid a visit to England, returning by the *Cornwall*. In the election for the Legislative Council of New Ulster (Oct 1852) he was returned for New Plymouth though he was only 32 years of age. In the first election of Superintendent for Taranaki (Jul 1853) he defeated Halse and Wicksteed. He served the office until Jan 1857, when he was defeated by Cutfield. Finding the press a doubtful ally, Brown's supporters established the *Taranaki News* to oppose the *Herald* and for most of his life Brown had its support, actually controlling and editing it for some years. In Nov 1855 Brown was elected to represent Grey and Bell in Parliament. He was Colonial Treasurer in the first responsible government, formed by Fox (May-Jun 1856). Private affairs compelled him to retire from Parliament, but he was re-elected in 1858 (defeating F. D. Bell).

From 1855-60 Brown was a captain of the militia, which was called out for training in Feb 1858. A year later the Taranaki Rifle Volunteers were formed, Brown being senior captain and Stapp (q.v.) junior captain and instructor. The development of the Waitara dispute brought all the defence companies into training, martial law was proclaimed (22 Feb 1860) and reinforcements of H.M. troops and naval detachments came to the aid of the province. After some preliminary skirmishes the militia and volunteers came into action on 25 Mar 1860 at Manutahi. Major Herbert was now appointed commander of the district, and Brown acted as his engineer officer. Late in Mar, after consultation with Governor Gore Browne, a force of 103 volunteers and 56 militia was ordered to proceed to Waireka by the sea coast to relieve the Omata settlers, the regulars under Colonel Murray and seamen from H.M.S. *Niger* supporting by the road. The colonial troops were soon heavily engaged. Brown, having no experience, asked Stapp to take charge while he advanced to hold a position at jury's farm, where the wounded were collected. The

## BROWN

65th were withdrawn while the Taranaki force was in difficulties, but Captain Cracroft, R.N., gallantly assaulted the enemy's position and assisted to turn the tide and enable the Taranaki force to retire in good order. Brown made his official report on the action (29 Mar 1860) and was promoted major after Waireka. On 23 Feb 1861 he commanded the advanced line of skirmishers at Mahoetahi, where his conduct was warmly approved.

From 1861-65 Brown was again Superintendent of the province. He acted as paymaster of militia and volunteers for some time but returned to field duty and was again in action. In 1869 he had command of the local forces at the time of the massacre at White Cliffs. Throughout these troubled years he had legislative duties also. He was in the Provincial Council (for New Plymouth 1866-69) and a member of Parliament (for New Plymouth 1864-65; Omata 1868-70). He retired by choice rather than give up his military command in Taranaki, and spent the next years repairing his private affairs. He was for some years (to 1873) a member of the town board of New Plymouth. In 1873 he contested the Superintendency against Carrington and Atkinson. Two years later he succeeded Parris as civil commissioner.

Brown's first wife died in 1875. He afterwards married a daughter of W. Northcroft (q.v.). He was brought up as a Catholic, but his children belonged to the Church of England. He died on 2 Sep 1901.

Gudgeon (P); Gorton; Cowan, *Wars* (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 3 Sep 1901; *Taranaki News*, 25 Jan 1873, 11 Oct 1873. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

BROWN, CHARLES (ARMITAGE) (1786-1842) was born in South London of Scottish parentage, his father having made a competence on the stock exchange. At 14 Charles entered a counting house, and at 18 he became a merchant in St Petersburg, in partnership with a brother. Owing to the substitution of whalebone for bristles, and fear of a war with Russia, his business failed (1808) and he returned to London, where he acted as agent for another brother, a local resident of the East India Company.

This brother's death placed him in enjoyment of a modest competence, which enabled

## BROWN

him to cultivate the society of literary people. He became the associate of Dilke, John Hamilton Reynolds, Walter Savage Landor, Hood and Keats; and himself at the age of 23 composed a comic opera *Narensky, or the Road to Yaroslav*, which was produced at the Lyceum and yielded him £500 profit. Brown was a bon viveur, rather quaint in appearance; stout, bald and spectacled. His friendship with Keats became very close. They spent the summer of 1818 on a 600-mile walking tour of England and Scotland (where Keats developed the first symptoms of consumption). In 1819 they spent the summer at Shanklin, Isle of Wight, sketching and writing the tragedy *Otho the Great*, for which Brown, supplied the fable, character and dramatic conduct. He left Keats at Winchester and found time to run across to Ireland where, unknown to his friends, he married a peasant woman, Abigail Donohue. Summoned back to Winchester, he brought Keats to London in a serious condition. Brown then employed himself sketching and copying Hogarth's heads. In 1820 he went to Ireland for the birth of his son (Charles, q.v.) while Keats went in search of health to Italy, where he died on 23 Feb 1821, before Brown could reach him. Brown then remained in residence in Florence, enjoying the company of Byron, Dilke, and Monckton Milnes, and later watching the education of his boy. He continued his studies in art, wrote for London magazines and translated admirably the first five cantos of Boiardo's *Orlando Innamorato*. In 1829 the publishers rejected his life of Keats. He made many sketches, including a portrait of Keats which came to New Zealand and was not made public until his granddaughter sent it to Sir S. Colvin. In 1834 he returned to England, settled at Plymouth and edited the *Plymouth Journal*. He lectured a good deal on Shakespeare and published his lectures as *Shakespeare's Autobiographical Poems* (1838).

Brown's interest in Shakespeare and in Keats was almost scholarly. He made an exhaustive collection of his friend's remains for publication, but had not found a publisher when he happened to attend a meeting in Plymouth to consider establishing a colony in New Zealand. He was at once infected with colonising enthusiasm, handed over his Keats task to Milnes with a biographical notice written by himself,

## BROWN

and prepared for his migration. He sent his son in the *Amelia Thompson*, which sailed on 25 Mar 1841, while he sailed in the *Oriental* on 22 Jun, arriving in New Plymouth in Nov.

The change from good living and select artistic surroundings to colonial fare and fortune was a severe test for one no longer young, and a few months after his arrival in New Plymouth he had an apoplectic stroke and died (on 5 Jun 1842). Brown adopted the second name 'Armitage' in publishing some of his Keats papers in the *Plymouth Journal*.

Wells; Amy Lowell, *John Keats* (1925); A. Erlande, *Lite* (1929); *Taranaki News, pass.*; S. Colvin, *Lite of John Keats* (1918); H. Bolitho and J. Mulgan, *The Emigrants* (1939). Portraits: E. V. Weller's *Autobiography* (1933); bust by L. A. Holman in Lowell, *op. cit.*, i, p. 286.

BROWN, CHARLES HENRY JEFFRIES (1871-1917), who was born in Christchurch, went to the West Coast in the eighties, where he became well-known as an athlete and footballer. He worked as a trucker in the Brunner coal mines, spent some months on the New South Wales coalfields and returned to the Denniston mines, in which he became underground manager. Brown joined the Denniston volunteer corps in 1900, and was later transferred from this command to the New Zealand Staff Corps. When war broke out in 1914, he left with the Main Body of the New Zealand Expeditionary Force, with the rank of captain. He served with distinction in Gallipoli, Egypt and France, first in the Canterbury Regiment, then in the Auckland Regiment, and finally, as brigadier-general in command of the 1st brigade New Zealand Infantry (Feb 1917). Brown was awarded the D.S.O. and mentioned in dispatches and was killed in action on 8 Jun 1917.

Studholme; *Evening Post*, 11 Jan 1917; *London Gaz.*, 17 Jun 1917.

BROWN, CHARLES HUNTER, was born in Scotland, emigrated to Australia as a young man and, having gained experience there, came to Lyttelton early in 1850 with his own sheep and cattle, and occupied Double Corner. He also brought she-oak seeds which he planted with success on various properties. Brown sold Double Corner in 1859 and joined Cox for a few years at Springs. About 1863 he sold his

## BROWN

station interests in Canterbury and invested in town property in Christchurch and in a sheep run, Long Lookout, in Nelson. In 1860 he was elected to represent Christchurch Country in Parliament, retiring at the end of the year. He travelled a good deal in Europe and the Holy Land and he was later resident magistrate at Wairoa (Hawkes Bay) in 1863-65 and again in 1868. Brown married (1861) Ellinor Jane, daughter of Augustus Abraham, barrister-at-law.

Cox; Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Godley, *Lettel's*.

BROWN, DONALD FORRESTER, was a son of R. Brown, draper, of Oamaru. He served in the war 1914-18 with the Otago Infantry and repeatedly distinguished himself in the operations in France. On several occasions he attacked machine gun posts which were holding up the advance and put the guns out of action, doing much to raise the spirits of his companions by his 'utter contempt for danger and coolness under fire.' Sergeant Brown was killed in action on 1 Oct 1916 and was awarded the V.C. posthumously for conspicuous bravery and determination on 15 Sep.

Byrne; *Official Hist. of the Otago Regiment in the Great War* (p); *London Gaz.*, 14 Jun 1917; Studholme; *The New Zealander* (London), 22 Jun 1917.

BROWN, FREDERICK DOUGLAS (1851-1922) was born at Woodford, Essex, and educated in England and at Strasbourg University, where he graduated. It was then a university of France. (Honorary M.A., Oxford; B.Sc., London.) He proceeded to study chemistry at St Bartholomew's Hospital (1870), the Royal College of Chemistry and Leipzig University. Graduating B.Sc. at London in 1873 he entered on research in organic chemistry at the Royal Institution, London, and physical chemistry in the Royal School of Mines. In 1880 he became a lecturer at Oxford and he taught at Clifton and Cheltenham until 1883 when he was appointed professor of chemistry at Auckland University College. This post he held to 1914, when he was appointed emeritus professor. He was a director of the Auckland Gas Co. and vice-chairman of the Grammar School board. Brown died on 2 Aug 1922.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 10 Apr 1883, 3 Aug 1922.

## BROWN

BROWN, HENRY (1842-1921) was born in Lincolnshire, the son of the Rev H. H. Brown (1813-93); educated at Neuwied (Germany) and Lausanne, and arrived in Taranaki with his parents in the *Eclipse* in 1859. He served in the Maori war for four years as a volunteer, being present at Waireka and Mahoetahi and a member/of Atkinson's company of Forest Rangers. He became ensign in the Rifles (1863), lieutenant (1865) and captain in the militia (1871). Brown engaged in the timber trade for ten years in the vicinity of New Plymouth and in 1877 started a mill at Inglewood. He was chairman of the town board for some years and a member of the Taranaki county council (1876-92). In 1896 he was elected M.H.R. for Taranaki, defeating E. M. Smith, to whom he lost the seat in 1899. Brown died on 10 Mar 1921. He married (1867) a daughter of J. Brooking, of New Plymouth.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *N.Z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1921. Portrait: Parliament House.

BROWN, JAMES (1819-77) was born at Milngavie, near Glasgow. He was trained as a calico printer and worked at his trade for some years. He evinced artistic talent at a very early age, and his employer considerably transferred him from printing to designing. Ambitious for a wider field, he moved to Manchester, but though he received higher pay there he suffered during the depression of the forties, and accordingly decided to come to New Zealand (1850). Unable to work at his own trade in Otago, he taught himself engraving and became highly proficient. He was also a caricaturist and made many cartoons for reproduction, notably in J. Barr's *Old Identities* (1879). Brown was an office-bearer of the First Church. He was described as a man of distinct idiosyncracies, simple habits and warm affections, unobtrusive and self depreciative. He died on 12 Sep 1877.

Barr, *op. cit.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Sep 1877.

BROWN, JAMES CLARK (1830-91) was born at Macclesfield, Cheshire, the son of a British naval officer; educated at a private school in the neighbourhood, and apprenticed to a merchant. In 1852 he emigrated to Victoria, where he was occupied in mining for a few years. His friends in England having sent out a small steamer, the *Macclesfield*, Brown ran it for a

## BROWN

few years without loss in the trade between Sydney and Tasmania. In 1861 he sold it and came to Otago for the diggings, entering into business as a storekeeper at Wetherstones, Queenstown and Gabriel's Gully. He became a substantial merchant.

In 1865 he was elected to the Otago Provincial Council for Lawrence, in 1867 for Goldfields and in 1871 for Tuapeka, which he represented until 1875. In 1870 he was elected M.H.R. for Bruce and the following year for Tuapeka, which he represented until 1890 (when he was defeated by Valentine). He took a great interest in mining and in the Lawrence railway, which he was mainly instrumental in promoting. He was a liberal supporter of charities. Brown married (1879) the widow of Dr Ebenezer Halley. He died on 6 Feb 1891, and his widow in 1938.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Kinross; *Evening Star*, 7 Feb 1891. Portrait: Parliament House.

BROWN, JAMES ELDER (1823-1900) was born in Banffshire, trained as a school teacher and came to Otago in the *Ajax* (1849). He first accepted an engagement to erect Valpy's flour-mill at Water of Leith and in 1850 he relieved James Blackie, as the first teacher of a public school in Otago. His parents and brothers having now arrived in the colony, Brown assisted them to erect, at Grant's Braes for Dr Burns, a threshing mill made entirely of native materials. He showed a model of this machine at the exhibition of 1889-90. The family also made 25 winnowing machines. In 1856, under the new regulations, Brown and his father settled on 105 acres in Tokomairiro adjoining the land which P. McGill had taken for a flour-mill, and they assisted to erect the mill (1857). In 1860 he sold half an acre to W. H. Mansford to open a store, and thus the town of Milton came into existence, McGill cutting up 25 acres for town lots. In 1866 Milton was incorporated. Brown was mayor for the first three years and he carried on the surveys and engineering work for 14 years. In 1882 he retired from business and gave his attention to public affairs. He was chairman of the school committee (1878, 1880-81) and secretary for a long period, and a justice of the peace for 30 years. Brown died on 16 Jan 1900.

Brown; Scholefield, *Tokomairiro D.H.S.*, 1856-1931; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Jan 1900.

## BROWN

BROWN, JAMES MACMILLAN (1846-1935) was born at Irvine, Scotland, the son of a ship-owner, and educated in the first place at Irvine Academy. He proceeded to the Universities of Edinburgh and Glasgow (where he graduated with first-class honours in mental philosophy and gained the rector's prize for an essay). There also he gained a five-year Snell exhibition on which he proceeded to Balliol College, Oxford, in 1869. Owing to indifferent health he could not complete his course, and spent some time on the geological survey in Scotland (1873-74).

On the foundation of Canterbury College in 1875 Brown was appointed professor of classics and English. Five years later the onerous duties of this double chair were rearranged and he taught English history and English literature till 1895, when he resigned on account of ill-health. Brown devised a new and practical method of treating English composition, which was specially useful with backward students. Several volumes of his notes on English classics were published in New Zealand (including *Julius Caesar*, *The Merchant of Venice* and *Esmond*). He also published (in 1894) a manual of English literature of the eighteenth and nineteenth centuries. Brown was a member of the royal commission on higher education (1879-82) and was a member of the University Senate from 1879, vice-chancellor from 1916, and chancellor from 1923 till his death (on 18 Jan 1935). In 1901 he published, under the pseudonym of 'Godfrey Sweven,' a novel entitled *Riallaro*, satirising life and politics in New Zealand. This was followed in 1903 by *Limanora*, a Utopia.

Brown rendered valuable service to New Zealand by his researches in Polynesian anthropology and ethnology, to which he devoted himself after his retirement, travelling widely in Pacific countries every year. About 1907 began his series of publications on the Polynesian people, including *Maori and Polynesian* (1907), *The Riddle of the Pacific* (1924), and *Peoples and Problems of the Pacific* (1927). In 1908 he published a volume, *Modern Education* and in 1914 a travel book, *The Dutch East*. His fine collection of curios and native art he left to Canterbury College, together with his library and an endowment for upkeep and £2,500 towards a library building. The resi-

## BROWN

due of his estate he left to found a school of Pacific studies at that institution.

Brown married in 1887 Helen Connon, the first woman M.A. in New Zealand and the first woman to take the M.A. degree with honours at a British university. She was principal of the Christchurch Girls' High School (1882-94).

*Cycl N.Z.*, iii (p); Hight and Candy (p); Beaglehole; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; E. S. Grossman, *In Memoriam*, 1903 and *Life of Helen M. Brown*, 1905; *The Press*, 23 Feb 1903; 19, 21, 22, 23 Jan 1925 (p).

BROWN, JOHN EVANS (1827-95) was born at Lewistown, Pennsylvania, United States, where he was educated. In 1849 he crossed to California and spent some time at his profession of a surveyor. Finding the goldfields unattractive, he went to New South Wales, where he engaged in cattle and sheep dealing on a large scale, and was for some years consul for the United States. In 1864 he came to New Zealand and spent 20 years in Canterbury, taking a prominent part in the affairs of the province. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Rangiora (1866-72 and 1875), and was during that time a member of two executives (Knight's 1869; Hall's 1870-71). Brown represented Ashley in Parliament (1871-79) and St Albans (1881-84). He was the first chairman of the Christchurch Tramway Co. In the late eighties he returned to America, where he died on 9 Jul 1895. Brown married first (1857) a daughter of J. J. Peacock and sister of the Hon J. T. Peacock (q.v.) and, second, 1883, Mrs Martin (Wellington).

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Lyttelton Times*, 11 July 1895.

BROWN, JOHN MAINWARING (1851-88) was born in England and educated at Tonbridge School and Christ's College, Cambridge (where he entered on a Judd Exhibition). He graduated B.A., 1876; LL.M., 1880; M.A., 1881. He became lecturer in history and political economy at Cambridge (under the local lectures syndicate) and in 1881 was called to the bar. In the same year he was appointed to Otago University as professor of English language and literature, constitutional history and political economy. Brown lost his life on 6 Dec 1888 while exploring (in company with Major Goring and John White), in the region

## BROWN

of the Micabum creek, west of Lake Te Anau.

Thompson; *Otago Daily Times*, 15, 27 Dec 1888.

BROWN, RICHARD (1804-60) was born in Dublin, and educated by an uncle. As a youth he went to Tasmania and entered a mercantile office in Hobart and at the age of 20 visited Bay of Islands in a whaler. He had a good education and pleasant manners. Coming to Taranaki soon after the Colony was established, he engaged in the coastal trade and whaling and eventually settled down as a merchant in New Plymouth. Later he became also an auctioneer and for a while was a journalist on the *Taranaki Herald* staff. He was Provincial Councillor for Omata (1857-59). In the native feuds he supported Ihaia against Katatore. When war broke out Brown was appointed a captain in the native contingent. On 26 May 1860, while reconnoitring along the beach, he was fired on and wounded by hostile natives at the ford of the Waiongona river. He died on 31 Aug.

*Taranaki P.C. Minutes*, 1858; Wells, p 205; Gudgeon, p 47; *Taranaki Herald*, 3 Oct 1855; 8 May 1858.

BROWN, WILLIAM (1809-98) was born near Dundee, Scotland, educated there, and read law with the intention of becoming a writer to the signet. He became interested in colonisation and joined the South Australian settlement, arriving in Adelaide in the early part of 1839.

Soon realising that prospects were not good, he joined the *Palmyra* for Sydney. On the voyage he became acquainted with the surgeon, J. Logan Campbell (q.v.). On 2 Feb 1840 Brown arrived at Bay of Islands where he witnessed the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi. On the 25th he arrived at Coromandel and on 13 Apr again met Campbell, who had come from Sydney in the *Lady Lilford*. With several others they visited the shores of the Waitemata gulf, hoping to buy land from the natives. This failing, they prospected the neighbourhood and purchased from the Coromandel natives the island of Motukorea (Brown's island). On 13 Aug they entered into possession. On 21 Dec, Mrs Brown having arrived from Sydney, they established themselves in a tent on the future site of Auckland, and in Feb 1841 they began getting timber for their building. The *Black Joke* was chartered to bring the timber from Whangaroa, and the partners carried it on their

## BROWN

shoulders to the site. On 24 Jun the Brown family took possession of their home in Auckland.

Brown took part in the affairs of Auckland as soon as the town was founded. On 6 Jun 1844 he was called to the governor's Legislative Council, of which he was a member to 1845 and again 1847-48. The interval was due to his proceeding to the old country in the *Bolina* with a cargo belonging to his finn (1845). With S. M. Martin and Charles Clifford he protested against the native trust bill (1844) and thus got out of favour with FitzRoy.

Brown was one of the founders and a large shareholder in the *Southern Cross*, which was established in 1843 to represent the interests of the rank and file of the colonists and the landowners as against those of the philo-Maori party, to champion which the *New Zealander* was established in 1845. Feeling ran high between the two parties and politics in Auckland followed this line of cleavage for some years to come. When Brown returned to New Zealand (1847) he was again called to the Legislative Council and reappointed to the list of justices in the position he had previously occupied.

On the constitution of 1852 coming into force he contested the Superintendency of Auckland against Wynyard, but was defeated (12 Jul 1853). In Aug 1854 he was elected M.H.R. for City of Auckland. A few months later Wynyard resigned the Superintendency and Brown was elected by a large majority over Whitaker (14 Mar 1855). He had a difficult session with a Council which was generally opposed to his policy, and in Sep obtained a dissolution, which necessitated a fresh election for both Superintendent and Council. He was entering into this contest with vigour when family reasons called him to Scotland, and he retired from politics (Nov 1855). He did not return, but remained associated with Campbell until his death (on 19 Jan 1898). Brown was a man of high principle, wide experience and considerable energy and would doubtless have gone far in politics had he remained in the colony. Carleton described him as 'one of the most severely truthful and worthy men that ever set foot in the colony: Brown wrote in 1840 the first chapter of his book *New Zealand and its Aborigines*, which he re-wrote on the passage home and published in 1845.

## BROWNE

G.B.a.p., 1843/323, 1850/1280, 1851/1420; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1855; Campbell; Thomson; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Southern Cross*, 17 Aug, 3 Sep 1852, *et pass.*; *New Zealander*, 10 Sep 1853, *et pass.* Portrait: *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Nov 1933.

BROWNE, GEORGE FRANCIS COLLINS (1831-85) was the son of John Collins Browne, of Holsworthy, Devon. He was educated at Grosvenor College, Bath, and emigrated in 1852 to Melbourne. After spending ten years in Australia he came to Otago and settled at Waitahuna, where he was engaged in mining for 16 years. He represented that constituency in the Provincial Council from 1871 until the abolition. In 1876 he moved to Lawrence, where he took a leading part in public life. He was a member of the school committee and the hospital committee and leader of the opposition in the parliamentary union. In 1884 he contested the Tuapeka seat in Parliament against J. C. Brown. Browne died on 5 Jun 1885.

*Tllapeka Times*, 6 Jun 1885.

BROWNE, SIR THOMAS GORE (1807-87) was the son of Robert Browne, J.p., D.L., of Morton House, near Buckingham, and a brother of Bishop Harold Brown, of Winchester. Commissioned as ensign in the 44th Foot (1824), he exchanged into the 28th (lieutenant, 1826; captain, 1829). He was aide de camp to Lord Nugent, High Commissioner in the Ionian islands (1832-35) and acted for a time as Colonial Secretary. Obtaining his majority in 1834, he exchanged into the 41st regiment (1836), with which he served in the first Afghan war. For a time he commanded the regiment in the absence of the two colonels. He covered the retreat after the repulse of General England's force at Hykulzi (28 Mar 1842), forming a square and driving back the enemy. He was present at the action at Kandahar (29 May), the march on Kabul and the storming of Istalif. On the return through the Khyber pass he was frequently in action with the rearguard. (Brevet lieut.-colonel 1842; C.B., 1843.)

Returning to England, Browne became lieut.-colonel of the 41st regiment (1845), exchanged into the 21st in 1849, and retired on half-pay in 1851 to assume the governorship of St Helena, where he enjoyed the local rank of

## BROWNE

colonel. There he solved the long-standing problem of the water supply. In 1854 Browne was appointed to succeed Sir George Grey in the governorship of New Zealand, the duties of which he assumed on 6 Sep 1855. In the political sphere there was nothing to worry him, since the controversy over responsible government had been fought to a conclusion under the administrator (Colonel Wynyard). Browne announced himself to the Parliament (which was in session) in a message in which he stated that he would adhere to the policy of maintaining the native title to their lands inviolate and securing to them the impartial administration of justice. A man of strong social instincts and warm friendships, he visited all the provinces during the recess. Shortly after his arrival the King movement in the Waikato became prominent. Native affairs were the governor's own responsibility. He was expected to consult his responsible advisers, but not necessarily to take their advice. Unfortunately Browne did not bestir himself sufficiently to form an independent opinion on native affairs and he never acquired a personal influence over the native mind. Quite early he made the unpardonable mistake of declining to see an influential chief (Wiremu Tamihana te Waharoa, of Ngati-Haua who wished to lay before him the grievances that were entertained by the King tribes. Tamihana accordingly threw in his lot with the Maori king. In May 1857 Browne showed a more approachable disposition at a native gathering at Rangiriri and he met some chiefs in runanga near Auckland. He made a grave mistake in yielding to the clamour of merchants and revoking Grey's wise order against supplying firearms and ammunition to natives.

Stafford, the Premier, was absent in England when Browne, accompanied by C. W. Richmond (acting leader of the Government) and McLean (native secretary) met a number of Maori chiefs at New Plymouth. Teira offered to sell to the Government 600 acres at Waitara, and Browne agreed to purchase if Teira's title was valid. Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake, the paramount chief of the Ngati-Awa, declared firmly that he would not permit the sale. Ignorant as he was of Maori law, and regarding Rangitake's demeanour as discourteous and offensive to himself, Browne was determined to

## BROWNE

proceed with the purchase. Commissioners were accordingly sent to Taranaki to ascertain whether the title of Teira was good. They reported (wrongly) in the affirmative, and Browne gave orders on 25 Jan 1860 to proceed with the survey, under military protection if necessary, and to hold the block by force if there should be any resistance on the part of Wiremu Kingi. On 1 Mar he himself arrived at Taranaki with the available troops, and a blockhouse was built for the protection of the civil population. On the 13th and 14th the block was surveyed under military protection. Next day Wiremu Kingi erected a pa and burned the survey pegs. The pa was accordingly attacked (17 Mar) and destroyed after two days' operations.

Browne appealed to Australia for more troops and some hundreds of women and children were sent for refuge to Nelson. Desultory operations continued, including the battles of Waireka, Puketakauere and Mahoetahi. At an early stage Bishop Selwyn courageously intervened to protest against the unjust treatment of Wiremu Kingi. A great Maori gathering at Otaki (at which Archdeacon Hadfield was present) demanded the recall of Gore Browne. In Waikato the King chiefs, though not directly concerned, discussed the events in Taranaki and resented the action of the Governor in making war without first consulting the friendly chiefs. McLean left the meeting to avoid seeing the King flag hoisted. A few days later the benevolent old King, Te Wherohero, died. Sir William Denison, the governor of New South Wales, loyally sent what troops he could in response to Browne's request, but he wrote to Browne strongly advising him to adopt a different policy towards the natives. Stafford, having now returned to the colony, loyally adopted the policy of the Governor, on the ground that the executive had advised him and fully concurred in the course he had taken. The House of Representatives gave its confidence by 19 votes to 17 (11 Sep 1860). During the session Hadfield and McLean appeared at the bar of the House to undergo searching examination. After the prorogation of Parliament Browne and Richmond together attended the gathering of chiefs at Orakei (Nov 1860) and on 5 Feb 1861 Browne received a deputation of seven chiefs (from Auckland, Waikato,

## BROWNE

Thames and Otaki) who made proposals of peace, one of the conditions being that the Waitara dispute should be decided by the courts. The Governor would not accept the terms; there must be restitution of plunder taken from settlers, compensation for their losses, and a due recognition of British law for the future. McLean, with the Governor's permission, accompanied the King chiefs back to Taranaki and persuaded Wiremu Tamihana to lead his taua of 400 back to their homes and Wiremu Kingi to retire inland.

Browne then visited Taranaki with Richmond and Whitaker (the attorney-general) and again made a mistake by refusing to receive Wiremu Kingi's daughter as a mediator (27 Mar 1861). He now offered terms of peace which included the investigation of Teira's title, but the survey was to proceed and the Governor was to retain all land belonging to the rebels which the troops were occupying, and the Ngati-Awa were to submit quietly to the law and not again to seek redress for grievances by force. The arrival of General Cameron from Australia just as the terms were about to be accepted caused a complete change in the position (30 Mar). On 8 Apr harsher terms were dictated, nothing was said about examining the Waitara title, and the settlers were promised that they would soon be able to return to their farms. In May a truce was agreed to, and on 3 Jun Browne opened Parliament, laying on the table the terms which he had now offered, which included a demand [or restitution and compensation against the natives, but promised an investigation of the Waitara title. More alarming was the determination of the Governor to regard the King movement in itself as a cause of war and to invade the Waikato, towards which Cameron had already moved his artillery from Taranaki.

At this stage the ministry was defeated on its native policy (12 Jul 1861) and Fox came into power. A week or two later (27 Jul) the Governor received a despatch from the Duke of Newcastle (dated 25 May 1861) informing him that he was to be relieved and that Sir George Grey was to succeed him. The Duke wrote: 'I recognise with pleasure the sound and impartial judgment, the integrity, intelligence and anxiety for the public good which have characterised your government. The pre-

## BROWNING

sent juncture, however, renders it necessary to leave no expedient untried which is calculated to arrest the course of events, now unhappily so unpromising, and at the same time to provide for future difficulties, which there is only too much reason to anticipate even if the war should soon be brought to a conclusion.' He felt he would be neglecting a chance of averting a more general and disastrous war if he 'omitted to avail himself of the remarkable authority which would attach to the name and character of Grey as governor.' In the flush of sympathy for Browne, Richmond and Stafford challenged the Government with a no-confidence resolution, which was defeated by 26 to 25 (29 Jul).

Soon after assuming office, Grey withdrew the manifesto addressed by Governor Browne to the disaffected natives and approached the problem by promising to investigate the Waitara purchase and announcing a number of bills to extend to natives all over New Zealand a liberal system of local government. Browne left for Sydney in October and a few months later was appointed to the governorship of Tasmania. He was made K.C.M.G. in 1869, was Governor of Bermuda (1870-71) and died in London on 17 Aug 1887. Browne married Harriet, daughter of James Campbell, of Craigie, Ayrshire. Historians agree generally with Gisborne that Browne was distinguished for his singleness of heart, his devotion to what he held to be his duty, and many sterling and attractive qualities. His letters, preserved in the Richmond and Stafford collections, give evidence of a fine humanity, a high idealism and lofty devotion to duty. Socially he had a host of friends. In spite of the tragedy of his rule in New Zealand he left the reputation of a high-minded, well-meaning and eminently able administrator whose failure was due more to the conditions of his task than to any lack of ability on his part.

G.B.a.p., 1856-62; Saunders; Gudgeon (p); *DN.B.*; *App. H.R.* (specially 1856-62); Hansard; Lomax, *Hist. of the 41st Regiment*; Gisborne (p); Rusden; Mennell; Cowan; Lovat.

BROWNING, SAMUEL (1802-88) was born in London, his father holding a position in the General Post Office. He entered business life and became a member of a firm of shipowners. In 1830 he went on a tour to the Rocky moun-

## BRUCE

tains and in 1840 sailed to Australia in the *Sea Horse*. He visited all the colonies and spent a year travelling in the interior of China, where he saw something of the war. Equipped with wide experience gained in travel abroad, Browning took part in 1847 in obtaining the repeal of the navigation laws in the interest of foreign shipping visiting English ports. He gave evidence before a select committee of Parliament.

Some time later Browning came to Australia as managing inspector of the Royal Bank of Australia, and wound up its affairs. In 1855 he came to reside in Auckland. He took part in many commercial undertakings, being a director of the Bank of New Zealand and the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co. and the New Zealand Insurance Co. His death occurred on 11 Jun 1888. A daughter married General Sir Trevor Chute (q.v.).

*N.z. Herald*, 12 Jun 1888, 18 Feb 1889.

BRUCE, DAVID (1824-1911) was born at Craigmond, near Edinburgh. Educated at Edinburgh University and the Free Church Divinity Hall, he was ordained in 1853 by the presbytery of Aberdeen, and shortly afterwards sailed in the *Simlah* for Auckland.

Bruce was the first minister of the Presbyterian Church in Auckland, having been appointed by the colonial committee of the Free Church. He was introduced by the Rev W. Lawry, general superintendent of Wesleyan missions, to a charge which embraced the whole of the northern part of New Zealand and was included at first in the synod of Eastern Australia. A presbytery was formed in 1856, and in the years up to 1862 Bruce visited all the outlying districts of Auckland. In 1862 he was released by the presbytery to undertake extension work over the whole of the North Island and as much of the South as was not included in the provincial district of Otago. He was moderator of the Assembly in 1866 and delegate the following year to the conference held in Dunedin on the subject of union. His own charge meanwhile assumed the name of St Andrews. In 1877 Bruce was appointed church agent. In 1889 he went to Sydney, where he was minister of North St Leonards and moderator of the Presbyterian Church of Australia (1903-04). Bruce was a brother of Professor A. B. Bruce, of the Free Church College, Glas-

## BRUCE

gow. He married Mary Alexandra Sinclair (d. 3 Dec 1870). He died on 15 Dec 1911.

Dickson (P); Johns, *Australian Biography*.

BRUCE, ROBERT CUNNINGHAM (1843-1917) was born at Kelso, Scotland, and spent his early years in Ireland. He went to sea at the age of 14 and sailed in all parts of the world for 20 years. A fine athletic figure, he excelled in boxing and other sports and was fond of botany. He left the sea at different times to work on the goldfields of California, Australia and New Zealand. Arriving in Otago in 1860, he was for some time at Arrow and visited the Dunstan in 1862. He then returned to the sea, sailing mainly on the Atlantic and (for two years) on the American lakes. In 1877 Bruce decided to settle in New Zealand and walked from Wellington to take up land at Paraekaretu, where he spent six years. After a trip to England, working his passage before the mast, he was elected to Parliament for Rangitikei, which he represented (1884-90). He was defeated by George Hutchison for Waitotara (1890) and by McGuire for Egmont (1891), but regained the Rangitikei seat in 1892. He retired at the general election of 1893, and contested Manawatu unsuccessfully in 1896. Bruce was a brilliant speaker and a staunch free-trader. He was greatly interested in the native flora of New Zealand and on his death he left to his district a fine park at Hunterville, with a considerable amount of virgin bush. In 1914 Bruce published his reminiscences of his early life. He died on 23 Apr 1917.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

BRUCE, THOMAS WHILLIANS (1832-1908) was born at Jedburgh, Scotland, educated there and commenced farming. In 1859 he came to New Zealand in the *Indiana* and for some years managed the Motunau estate in north Canterbury. About 1868, with John Madarlane, he bought Cora Lynn, on the Waimakariri river, and in 1870 bought out his partner. Adding Riversdale, across the river, he ran altogether about 17,000 sheep. Another property which he owned was Inchbonnie, on the West Coast road, beyond Arthurs Pass. About 1890 his Canterbury estates fell into the hands of the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co.

## BRUNNER

and he moved to Inchbonnie in 1893. In Canterbury he was chairman for many years of the Upper Waimakariri road board, which during his term erected a bridge over that river and another over the Poulter. Inchbonnie was an estate of 6,000 acres and Bruce had also a run of 13,000 acres at the Otira. He died in 1908.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p).

BRUNNER, THOMAS (? 1822-74) was a son of William Brunner, barrister-at-law, Oxford. He came to New Zealand as an assistant on the survey staff of the New Zealand Company in the expeditionary ship *Whitby* to prepare the way for the second settlement (at Nelson). With Captain Wakefield and the pioneer staff she arrived in Oct 1841.

In 1843 the settlement was dismayed by the loss of its leaders at the Wairau. The demand of the settlers for land being thus disappointed, Brunner was sent by Tuckett (q.v.) to prospect for good grass lands somewhere within reach of Nelson which might serve the purpose, but he returned without success. Thereafter for some years he was engaged in arduous and dangerous explorations between Nelson and the West Coast of the South Island. On the first journey William Fox (q.v.), then agent for the Company at Nelson, Charles Heaphy and Brunner (who had now left the Company's service) left Nelson on 2 Feb 1846 with the intention of exploring the country adjacent to lakes Rotoiti and Rotoroa and the Tairaumea (or Marylea) river. They examined the headwaters of the river which they called the Buller and reached their farthest point at the Matukituki valley, where Fox, burdened with a heavy pack, was almost drowned in crossing the river. The party reached Nelson again on Mar 1. Thus aware of the excessively rugged character of the country to be crossed, Fox urged Brunner to make a new exploration along the sea coast to see whether there was any level land. Brunner and Heaphy started again on Mar 17 with the same native guides, intending to pass down the West Coast and then across the divide of the Southern Alps to the plains of Canterbury, where the only white settlers were the Deans brothers of Riccarton. Proceeding round Massacre Bay they crossed to West Wanganui, where the Ngati-Tama chief put obstacles in

## BRUNNER

their way. They then coasted down to the mouth of the Grey (or Mawhera) river and examined the mouth of the Buller river, which Joseph Toms had entered in a 50-ton schooner in 1844. On the South Beach, between the Buller and Cape Foulwind, they discovered the remains of the old wool ship which had been cast away some years earlier. At the Mawhera the explorers stayed with the natives for some time and suffered considerable hardship and could not persuade the natives to cross the mountains. They therefore abandoned that object and returned from their farthest point at Arahura, reading Nelson after a pilgrimage of 550 miles in 22 weeks.

In the following summer Brunner entered upon the most arduous of all his travels. With no white companions, and accompanied only by two Maori guides and their wives, he left Nelson (3 Dec 1846) with the intention of exploring the Buller from its source to the sea, and also, if possible, finding a way across to Canterbury. For the first five days of travel he had an extra man to carry loads. From the departure from Stafford's station on the 11th, he had the use of a mule as far as lake Rotoiti, which he reached on the 13th. Leaving lake Rotoroa on 31 Dec, Brunner reached his previous limit at the Matukituki valley on 16 Jan 1847. He was already very short of food and in the struggles of the next stage he was forced to eat his dog. Reading at length the native settlement at Arahura, he remained there until the spring. By this time Brunner had learned how to overcome two of the greatest difficulties of the European traveller in the New Zealand bush, namely to walk barefooted and to subsist on fern root. Thus inured, he recommenced his journey in Oct 1847, his feet shod with flax sandals which had to be replaced every two days. Passing Okarito on the southern seacoast he turned back on 11 Dec at Parika or Titihara. Early in Mar he saw the plains of Canterbury, but could not persuade the natives to go there and he came to the conclusion that there was no access from coast to coast north of the Grey river nor any practicable route from the settlement at Nelson to Canterbury except along the coast and through the Wairau plain. Early in Jun 1848 Brunner was cheered by seeing the marks of many sheep in the Rotoiti

## BRYCE

region. On 15 Jun he reached Fraser's station, having been 560 days absent and given up for lost. The narrative of this amazing journey was delivered to the Royal Geographical Society, and Brunner was honoured with the award of the Society's medal. Besides exploring the Grey and the Buller from source to mouth and tracing the Inangahua down to its junction with the Buller, he discovered the existence of coal seams in the vicinity of which the town of Brunner afterwards grew up. Captain Richards, of H.M.S. *Acheron*, acknowledged his indebtedness to the detailed coastal survey of Brunner.

Brunner in Sep 1851 was appointed surveyor of crown lands in Nelson. He set out in 1854-55 the reserves required for native purposes in Croixelles, Pelorus and Kaituna, and was disappointed here again to find so little land suitable for cultivation. He was on the commission of the peace, a visiting justice, deputy-sheriff for the province (1866) and member of the board of health (1869). In the early seventies he retired from the government service. He died on 22 Apr 1874. Brunner was a man of high integrity and unblemished character. His discoveries, though they did not disclose the existence of gold on the West Coast, were of the greatest value to the colony.

A. Mackay, ii; Broad; N.Z.C. papers; Buick, *Marlborough; Nelson Evening Mail; N.z. Journal*, 1847, 1849; *Wellington Spectator*, Nov 1848; *The Colonist*, 18 Dec 1857.

BRYCE, JOHN (1833-1913), was born at Glasgow and came to New Zealand with his father (John Bryce), an elder brother and a sister in the *Bengal Merchant*, arriving at Port Nicholson early in 1840. He said in 1875 that he was almost a New Zealander; he had no recollection of the ship which brought him out. Their first home was at Petone, and for some years the father carried on his business as a carpenter in Wellington. He then moved to the HUI valley, where they farmed a bush clearing and had their first experience of Maori hostilities. Bryce had little opportunity for schooling, but by close reading equipped himself very well. When he was 18 years of age he was attracted to the goldfields in Australia, where he remained for more than two years. Returning to New Zealand in 1853 he took up a farm at Brunswick, near Wanganui (on which he lived

## BRYCE

until 1903), and in the following year he married a daughter of T. J. Campbell.

In 1859 Bryce was chairman of the Tuna-haere wardens. He volunteered in the first Maori war (1860) and served under General Cameron. In 1862, when he was a warden of the North Brunswick road district, he was elected to the Wellington Provincial Council for the district of Wanganui and Rangitikei. In his first speech in the Council (on 1 May) he disapproved strongly of the native policy of the General Government, which he said had managed the Maori by bribery. As long as the Maori believed themselves a match for the soldiers there would never be a solid peace. He fought vigorously and successfully for a bridge over the Wanganui river to connect the town with the country settlement. He advocated the rights of the settlers in the outlying districts between Wellington and Taranaki provinces and fought hard for a separate local government for this area. He was, however, opposed to the whole provincial system, which he considered had outlived its usefulness. Bryce resigned from the Provincial Council in May 1863, mainly as a protest against the action of the Superintendent (Featherston) in permitting the executive to manage affairs in defiance of the Council. When he stood again (May 1865) he still insisted on preserving his independence. What he desired to see was municipal councils everywhere and the Provincial Councils abolished. He was elected at the head of the poll (Bryce 116, Kells 84; W. H. Watt 80). Still keenly desirous that local settlers should have the management of their own affairs, he presented a petition for the creation of a new province from the Manawatu river to the Taranaki border. When Halcombe threatened to create a new port at Manawatu Bryce put forward a counter-proposal to set up a provincial government in Wanganui town alone, without any hinterland. In Feb 1866 Bryce was elected to represent Wanganui in the General Assembly, defeating H. S. Harrison by 102 votes to 51. He declined to give an unqualified support to the Stafford Government. About a year later ill-health compelled him to resign from both the Provincial Council and Parliament (Feb 1867).

Bryce's opinions on the Maori question were the orthodox views of the fighting frontiers-

## BRYCE

man who had already served in the war of 1860 and had seen his neighbours who stuck to their farms shot down on their doorsteps. In 1866 he insisted that two British regiments should be retained for garrison duty while the farmers themselves fought the campaign in the field. In 1868, when the front of the victorious Titokowaru was within 12 miles of his farm, Bryce help to form a local volunteer troop, the Kai-iwi Yeomanry Cavalry, and accepted a lieutenant's commission under Captain Newland. Whitmore said of this corps: 'It was to a large extent upon the devotion and energy of these highly competent mounted corps that I relied for the defence of the settlement'; and (elsewhere) 'they were for all the duties of frontier mounted infantry absolutely perfect: At the end of 1868, when the main force was withdrawn for service in Poverty Bay, the cavalry troop was entrusted with the duty of patrolling the front against any activity on the part of Titokowaru. In Apr 1869 Bryce scouted in canoes far up the Waitotara river in search of hostile forces belonging to the Tangahoe tribe. It was in this West Coast campaign that the engagement occurred at Handley's woolshed, Nukumaru. Unimportant in itself, this incident was destined to be exaggerated by charges brought against Bryce by G. W. Rusden (q.v.), who in his *History of New Zealand* accused him of cutting down Maori women and children. Bryce took proceedings against Rusden in London and gained a verdict with [5,000 damages.

In 1871 Bryce was elected to Parliament for Wanganui unopposed, and in 1876 he was again returned, with Vogel as his colleague (Bryce 380, Vogel 361, Watt 191, Pharazyn 36). At the election for Wanganui (Sep 1879) Bryce and Ballance were returned, defeating the philo-Maori Fox (Bryce 560, Ballance 547, Fox 501). Despite the weak state of his health, which had given his friends grave anxiety earlier in the year, Bryce was indicated by his wide experience and firm views as the obvious Native Minister in Hall's cabinet, in which he took office on 8 Oct 1879. In a policy speech at that time he insisted that firmness and justice were essential for the welfare of both races, and asked that for the reputation of the Colony grievances should be properly inquired into. He infused vigour and policy into the administration of native affairs,

## BRYCE

organising the Armed Constabulary and preparing communications before he laid before his colleagues his plans for breaking up the settlement of malcontents at Parihaka. Representing a frontier constituency, he held strong views on the various forms of resistance to settlement exerted by the Maori at Parihaka, and tried to persuade his colleagues that the only solution was to be found in strong action against the prophets Te Whiti and Tohu. A majority of the cabinet shrank from any action that might precipitate war. Believing that the Government could gain its end by a waiting policy, they could not be prevailed upon to adopt Bryce's plan and, as he had declared he would only hold office while he was able to do what he considered best for the country, he resigned (21 Jan 1881) and stood off in a benevolent liaison.

The Hon W. Rolleston assumed the charge of native affairs, and did his utmost to bring about a better atmosphere. Te Whiti again refused to accept the ample provision for all sections of the Maori race which was proposed by the West Coast land commission and declined to meet the Governor at Parihaka, while his followers continued fencing the roads and interrupting the farming operations of the settlers. Converted at length to Bryce's view, the Ministry invited him to resume his old office, and he was again sworn in on 19 Oct as Minister of Native Affairs and Defence on the distinct understanding that the nest of resistance at Parihaka should be eradicated by strong measures. No-time was now lost in preparing his coup. A force of 959 Volunteers and 630 Armed Constabulary, commanded by Lieut.-Colonel Roberts, was concentrated at Rahotu and Pungarehu under the direction of Bryce and marched on Parihaka before dawn of 5 Nov 1881. Bryce rode into the settlement and demanded the surrender of Te Whiti and Tohu, whose arrest was effected without bloodshed. The arrest included some hundreds of their followers, together with a man named Hiroki, who was wanted on a charge of murder. Rolleston joined Bryce on this occasion to share responsibility for the action of the Government. Historians and politicians have criticised the harshness of the proceedings at Parihaka; not always remembering that firmness seemed imperative in the view Bryce took

## BRYCE

of the danger which menaced the colony. Te Whiti and Tohu were kept in custody for some months. Hiroki was tried and convicted of murder, and Titokowaru was, on a charge arising elsewhere, bound over to keep the peace. After the satisfactory outcome of these operations Bryce took an active part in legislation to pacify the Maori people and redress some of their grievances. One of these measures was the West Coast peace preservation act, 1882, which empowered the Government to hold the prophets prisoner at the Queen's pleasure. In 1883 the amnesty act was passed granting a free pardon to Te Kooti, who had been specially excepted from the earlier measure. Bryce invited Te Kooti to meet him at Whatiwhatiho in the King Country, where he extended the Queen's pardon and shook hands with the ancient enemy of the pakeha. This incident was seized upon by his many political opponents, and also figures in Rusden's history.

Bryce continued in office under Whitaker (1882-83) and Atkinson. On the defeat of the Atkinson Government in 1884 he proceeded to England in connection with his case against Rusden, and, in fact, spent in Europe most of the three years that his party was in opposition. He returned to Wanganui in the middle of 1887, when he was enthusiastically received. At the general election in Jul he was defeated for Waitotara by George Hutchison (q.v.). In 1889 he gained a seat without opposition as member for Waipa (in succession to Major Jackson) and at the general election in 1890 he was re-elected (for the new Waikato seat) also without a contest. The Atkinson Government having suffered a defeat, Bryce, who was by seniority and qualifications leader of the opposition, insisted on Atkinson staying in office for a few weeks, during which new appointments were made to the Legislative Council. Bryce led the party in opposition for only a few months. In his first session (Aug 1891) he was named by the Speaker for using words in the heat of debate which reflected on the Premier. Refusing to withdraw, he repeated the words and incurred the censure of the House (by 33 to 24). Bryce withdrew, and a telegram of resignation the following day terminated his political career in a manner typical of his stern, uncompromising temperament.

He was a man of resolute will and sterling

## BRYDONE

honesty; sensitive to a degree; fair but candid; strong-willed and uncompromising; lacking that tact towards the pakeha or suavity towards the Maori which have carried less able men farther. He used no soft speech with political opponents and received hard knocks in return. Bryce retired to his farm, to devote his time to pastoral pursuit, books, chess and occasionally bowls. But his influence did not cease to be felt in the political affairs of the country. In 1903 he intervened in a press discussion to defend the action of Rolleston at Parihaka, and he wrote a few months later a valuable series of articles on Maori fanaticism which clearly illuminates his own native policy.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably 31 Jul 1866, 24 Aug 1875, 27, 31 Aug 1891, 29 Jun 1892); Gorton; Cowan (p); Gudgeon (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; J. G. Wilson; *The Press*, 4 Feb 1903, 23, 24, 28 Mar 1903; *N.Z. Herald*, 12, 19 Nov 1881 (p).

BRYDONE, THOMAS (1837-1904) was born at West Linton, Peebleshire, and removed with his parents to Blair Athol. He was educated at Perth Academy and entered the office of a commissioner appointed to inquire into the means of lending money to landlords to improve their estate by drainage. He was two years there and then became land steward to the Earl of Buchan at Roxburn, West Lothian; and later to the Duke of Hamilton. He was afterwards a travelling inspector for the West of England Land Co. engaged in the same type of business; was factor to Lord Falmouth in Kent and returned to Roxburn, where oil was discovered. Brydone was a partner in Young's Paraffin Oil Co. (1866-67), but its prospect was defeated by American competition and he was then appointed by the Australian and New Zealand Land Co. to take charge of its properties in New Zealand. The company was an amalgamation of the Land Co. and the Canterbury and Otago Association.

Brydone's claim to the gratitude of New Zealand rests on the fact that he was the practical founder of the frozen meat and dairy industry. He worked hard to establish the Burnside freezing works (of which he was a director) and was responsible for the first shipment of frozen meat from New Zealand to London. The dairy factory established at Edendale by his advice was the pioneer in a great expansion of dairying. He was a pioneer also in the use of lime and

## BUCHANAN

artificial manures, by which he greatly increased the output of the company's estates at Tokarahi, Totara, Clydevale, and Edendale. He was closely associated with the Otago A. and P. society from its inception (1876) and was president in 1880, 1884, 1885 and 1887. Brydone assisted to form the Agricultural Hall Co. and was a director of the Milburn Lime and Cement Co., and chairman of the Kaitangata Railway and Coal Co. During the dredging boom he took part in the formation of several companies. Brydone died on 17 Jun 1904.

Philpott (p); Critchell and Raymond; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Jun 1904.

BUCHANAN, ANDREW (1806-77) was born in Jamaica, his father being a sugar planter and his mother the daughter of a planter in St Kitts. After the liberation of the slaves they settled in Dorsetshire and he was educated at Sherborne and at Paris University, where he graduated in medicine and surgery. In 1830 he volunteered for service in the Polish struggle for independence. On the suppression of the insurrection he went to St Andrews University, where he graduated M.D. In 1833 he settled in the south of England as a public vaccinator. Two years later he married a daughter of Dr Harkness (London). He was in London for about 25 years, being a governor of St George's hospital and having an estate at Chingford, Essex.

Having achieved a competence, Buchanan retired from practice and in 1857 brought his family to Auckland. In 1858 he was called to give evidence before a parliamentary committee on lunatic asylums, and in 1859 a site was chosen at Nelson for an asylum. The Taranaki war intervening, Buchanan moved to Dunedin, where he took up the Patearoa run of 75,000 acres, extending from the Lammerlaws to Souburn point. In 1862 he brought his family and horses to Otago in the schooner *Clutha*. He erected a house in North East Valley, but frequently visited his run at Maniatoto. In 1862 he was called to the Legislative Council, in which body he did good service in various measures of social reform. He was particularly responsible for the committee which was set up in 1871 to consider the establishment of a central asylum for persons of unsound mind, and he kept the subject before the public both

## BUCHANAN

in Parliament and in the press until the appointment of Dr Macgregor as inspector general of hospitals and lunatic asylums. In 1874 he retired from the Council and returned to live in England, where he died on 4 Sep 1877. He was a strong Anglican and a fellow of the Royal Geographical Society and the Royal Colonial Institute.

*N.Z.P.D.*; Fulton (p); *Otago Witness*, 26 Oct 1866; Mar 1898 (jubilee); *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Jun 1872, 12 Sep 1877.

BUCHANAN, HUGH (1812-77) was born at Kinloch Mhor, Argyllshire, where his father had extensive pastoral farms on lease from the Earl of Breadalbane and the Stewarts of Appin. He was educated privately and, having been trained to farming, he leased Blarreen in Argyllshire. There he farmed until 1848 when he sailed for Melbourne. Finding the climate too hot, he came to Canterbury and settled at Motunau, acquiring a property at the head of lake Forsyth which he called Kinloch. He did much to improve his farm and to promote the interests of the district. He was chairman of the Little River road board and afterwards of the Akaroa county council and he represented Wainui in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1866-70). Buchanan died on 23 Sep 1877.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Playne; J. Hay.

BUCHANAN, JOHN (1819-92) was born at Woolwich, England. About 1839 he emigrated to Australia and was for many years government storekeeper at Sydney. In 1861 he came to New Zealand in the *Montezuma*, settled in Napier and later bought the Elsthorpe estate of 10,000 acres. He was in the Provincial Council (1865-75) representing Napier Town (1865-66), Napier Country (1867-71) and Waimarama (1871-75). At the fighting at Omarunui he was in command of the Napier Rifles. Buchanan represented Napier in Parliament (1881-84). He died in 1892.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

BUCHANAN, JOHN (1819-98) was born at Levenside, Dumbartonshire, Scotland, and educated at the parish school there: Apprenticed to a pattern designer at the print and dyeworks, he made a study of botany and obtained many designs from leaves. Moving to Glasgow, he pursued his studies there until 1849, when he

## BUCHANAN

came to Otago in the *Columbus* and settled at North East Valley. There he began almost at once to collect plants, a pursuit which he maintained throughout life.

After a short visit to the Victorian goldfields he joined the staff of the triangulation survey in Otago, and when Hector took control he devoted himself to the study of the botany of the province, in pursuit of which he did much exploration and made reports on the occurrence of gold in the Clutha and Tuapeka rivers. He was afterwards permanently attached to the geological survey as botanist and draughtsman. Amongst his explorations were visits to the Campbell and Macquarie islands. He published a volume on the indigenous grasses of New Zealand (in 1880) and botanical notes on the Kaikoura mountains and Mount Egmont (1867). He was a founder of the New Zealand Institute, and contributed many papers to its transactions, besides illustrating most of the earlier volumes with his fine sketches. In 1880 he was elected a fellow of the Linnean society. When he retired (in 1885) he was elected a life member of the Wellington Philosophical Society. Buchanan died on 18 Oct 1898.

*TrailS. N.Z.* 111st.; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Oct 1898.

BUCHANAN, SIR WALTER CLARKE (1838-1924) was born at Glendaruel, Argyllshire, the son of Duncan Donald Buchanan, a farmer of Auchenbreck. He was educated at the parish school and at Greenock Academy; and at the age of 18 went to Victoria, where he spent six years as stockman to the Hon Neil Black, of Glenormiston.

In 1862 he crossed to the Otago goldfields, where he engaged in carrying and stock dealing. In 1865 he moved to Canterbury with the intention of taking up land in company with a friend, John Ferguson. The discoveries of gold on the West Coast suggested the possibility of making a fortune there, and they hurried across the mountains and commenced packing between Greymouth and the Greenstone by way of Taylor's Saddle and the Teremakau. In company with Captain Leech they walked to Hokitika and marked out the channel of the river with poles to enable Leech to bring in safely a vessel which he was to load with merchandise at Nelson. Meanwhile Buchanan and Ferguson erected a store in Revell street. For the next two

## BUCHANAN

years they made handsome profits, then sold out and returned to their Canterbury place near Halswell where they resumed cattle dealing and shipping to the North Island.

About 1871 Buchanan moved to the North Island, and with his elder brother Donald purchased the Tupurupuru property, of 13,000 acres in Wairarapa, where he established an English Leicester flock and later specialised in Lincolns and in Shorthorn cattle. The sheep came mainly from Henry Dudding, of Riby Grove, Lincolnshire, and the cattle were founded on animals purchased from Alex McHardy, with later infusions of blood from Victoria. Buchanan took an early part in the affairs of the district, mainly in the eradication of scab and rabbits, two scourges which he was convinced would ruin the farmer if not remedied. He was one of the founders of the Wairarapa A. and P. Society (1877). Within the next few years he was a determined advocate of refrigeration, being an original promoter of the Wellington Meat Export Co. (1881) and its first chairman and a member of the board throughout life. He assisted later in the establishment of several dairy factories, being chairman of the companies at Greytown and Clareville, and took an interest in fruit growing in the Greytown district. He was chairman of the local highways board and a member for some years of the Wairarapa South county council. Buchanan represented Wairarapa South in Parliament 1881-87, and Wairarapa 1887-99, being defeated in the last year by Hornsby (q.v.). In 1902 he regained the seat, but lost it again at the following election. In 1908 the tables were again turned and Buchanan sat until 1914, when once more Hornsby defeated him. In 1915 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a prominent member until his death. In his early days in Parliament he supported Atkinson, but as a farmer differed on protection and eventually followed Russell into opposition (1888). He was associated with Massey from his earlier entry into parliamentary life (1894) and was one of the strongest supporters of the Reform Party which eventually came into office (1913).

Buchanan was an ardent advocate of farming interests, attending for many years the Farmers' Union and Agricultural Conferences. In 1907

## BUCKLAND

he formed a committee to bring about reductions in the freight on New Zealand wool to the same level as that ruling from Australia. The outcome was the formation of a fanners' shipping company (G. H. Scales and Co.), which achieved considerable improvement and in the interests of which he toured the Dominion shortly before his death. He was keenly interested in agricultural education, and his gift of £10,000 resulted in the establishment of a chair of agricultural at Victoria College and eventually led to the creation of Massey College. Buchanan was also for 30 years on the Wellington education board and assisted in the establishment of Flock House for the training of English boys and girls in farming. He was one of the founders of the meat control committee (1921) and was prominent for many years in the Council of Agriculture and the Royal Agricultural Society. Amongst his gifts to the Wairarapa district was the Buchanan Home for Incurables at Greytown. He was one of the founders of *The Dominion* newspaper (Wellington). Buchanan was knighted in 1913. He died, unmarried, on 19 Jul 1924.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1881-1924, *pass.*; *Parltry Record*; Scholefield in *Wairarapa Age*, 21 Jul 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); iii, p 668. Portrait: Parliament House.

BUCKLAND, JOHN CHANNING (1844-1909) was a son of W. T. Buckland and was born in Auckland. Educated at the Grammar School and St John's College there, he served in the Waikato war with Nixon's cavalry and, after a trip to England, settled at Otalmhu. A few years later he took up the Tumai estate near Waikouaiti, Otago, and subsequently Lake Taieri station. In 1899 he sold his Otago interests and settled at The Glen, Akaroa. Buckland was a member of the Waikouaiti county council and road board and represented the district in Parliament (1884-87). He married (1867) a daughter of W. Fairburn. His death occurred on 4 Apr 1909.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 6 Apr 1909.

BUCKLAND, WILLIAM FRANCIS (1847-1915) was born at Auckland, the son of William Thorne Buckland, who represented Southern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council (1855-61) and was on the executive (1857-61); and sat in Parliament for Raglan (1865-66) and for Franklin (1871-75). Educated

## BUCKLEY

at the Grammar School, Parnell, and St John's College (where he won a scholarship), W. F. Buckland entered the provincial engineer's department (1865) and two years later joined the Colonial Survey. In 1868 he resigned and became manager of the Una battery and mine at Thames. Between 1873 and 1880 he was a member of the Remuera road board, licensing committee, school committee and domain board. In 1883 he was elected to the Auckland education board and in 1884 he was called to the bar. Buckland represented Franklin North in Parliament (1884-87) and Manukau (1890-93). In 1885 he was elected to the Auckland hospital and charitable aid board. He practised law for many years in Cambridge and was mayor of the borough (1898-1902 and 1905-07). He died on 29 Dec 1915. Buckland introduced the satirical washers' and mangers' bill in Parliament in 1892.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 10 May 1916; *Parltry Record*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

BUCKLETON, SIR HENRY (1865-1934) was born in Sydney, his father being a journalist. Educated at the William street school, he joined the Bank of New Zealand in Sydney in 1878, and in 1891 was sent to Melbourne as acting accountant. In 1892 he was accountant at Hamilton (New Zealand) and in 1893 at Auckland. In 1901 he was appointed manager at New Plymouth and in 1905 chief inspector at the head office. He returned to Auckland the following year as manager and remained there until he became general manager in 1920. He was created a knight bachelor in 1929 and retired in 1933. Buckleton married (1893) Gertrude (O.B.E.), daughter of W. A. Graham. He died on 7 Dec 1934.

Bank of New Zealand, annual reports; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *The Dominion and Evening Post*, 8 Dec 1934 (Pp).

BUCKLEY, GEORGE, was brother-in-law of John and Allan McLean, with whom he was interested in many estates in Canterbury, including the freehold of Waikakahi. Buckley sold his share to his partners in 1875. He was a partner in the firm of Dalgety and Co.

In public life Buckley was a member of the Canterbury Provincial Council for Lyttelton (1862-66) and for Waimate (1866-75); and was in the executive in 1866, 1871 and 1875-76. He

## BUCKLEY

was called to the Legislative Council in 1871 and remained till 1885, when he resigned.

A son, WILLIAM FREDERICK McLEAN BUCKLEY (1861-1930) graduated at Christ Church, Oxford, and was called to the bar. He fanned at Dunsandel, specialising in wheatgrowing and breeding draught and harness horses and polo ponies. He was a fine polo player, and a good oarsman. He was some time president of the Ellesmere Agricultural and Pastoral association and a member of the board of governors of Canterbury Agricultural College (1901-08, 1915-19). Buckley died on 20 Aug 1930.

Another son, GEORGE ALLAN McLEAN BUCKLEY (1866-1937) was educated at Christ's College and Cheltenham, received his commission in the East Lancashire Regiment and served in India with the Hampshire Regiment. He married Mabel Gertrude Warren and returned to New Zealand to look after estates which he had inherited from his uncle, John McLean. He instituted a profit-sharing scheme for the benefit of his employees. A fine horseman, swimmer and sportsman, Buckley accompanied an expedition to Patagonia in 1897. He was an ardent yachtsman; took his master mariner's ticket in 1904, and until over 60 years of age sailed his 30-ton ketch *Truant* single-handed in north European waters. In 1908 he was in charge of the ponies of Shackleton's expedition. Buckley commanded a battalion of the Leinster Regiment in the war of 1914-18 (D.S.O. 1916; C.B.E. 1919). He died on 10 Nov 1937.

*Parltry Record*; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Col. Gent.*; Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Christ's Call. Sch. List.*; *The Times* (London), 15 Nov 1937; *The Press*, 22 Aug 1930.

BUCKLEY, SIR PATRICK ALPHONSUS (1841-96) was born at Castle Townsend, county Cork, Ireland. He was educated at Queen's College, Cork, and in Paris, and having matriculated entered the University of Louvain, Belgium. While there he was commissioned by Count Carlo Macdonald, private chaplain to the Pope, to conduct from Ostend to Vienna a band of volunteers to join the Papal forces against the Piedmontese (1860). Serving under General Lamoriciere, he was present at the battle of Castelfidardo, and was taken prisoner at the capture of Ancona, being twice wounded.

Returning to Louvain Buckley qualified as a licentiate and shortly afterwards made up his

## BUDDLE

mind to go to the colonies. In 1862 he sailed for Queensland and entered the law office in Brisbane of Charles Lilley (who was premier 1868-70, and chief justice 1879-93). He was admitted to the bar and commenced to practise in Brisbane, but moved to Melbourne and was admitted there and in 1865 came to New Zealand. Settling in Wellington, he was at first a partner of C. E. Button and W. S. Reid, but in 1867 joined Robert Hart (q.v.). He was afterwards a member of the Wellington firm of Buckley, Stafford and Fitzherbert.

In 1872 Buckley was elected to the Provincial Council for Karori and Makara and in the following year for Wellington, which he represented until 1875. He was for some time provincial solicitor. For two years (1871-73) he was a member of the Wellington City Council. In 1878 he was called to the Legislative Council and in 1884 became Colonial Secretary in the second Stout-Vogel ministry. In 1891 he was a member of the Ballance ministry, in which he held the portfolios of Attorney-general and Colonial Secretary, being also Minister of Marine for a few months in 1893. On 20 Dec 1895 he retired from politics on being appointed a judge of the supreme court. He held his first sessions at Napier, but failing health soon terminated his career and he died on 18 May 1896.

Buckley married (1869) Alice Jane, daughter of Sir Wm. Fitzherbert. He was a keen volunteer, and was captain of D battery, which he was instrumental in forming.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (P); Ward; Reeves; Gisborne; *N.Z.P.D.*, 11 Jun 1896; *N.Z. Graphic*, 13 Aug 1892, 4 Feb 1893; *The Times* (London), 19 May 1896; *N.Z. Times*, 19 May 1896. Portrait: Parliament House.

BUDDLE, THOMAS (1812-83) was born at Durham of a Church of England family. At the age of 17 he began to attend the Wesleyan Church at Barnard Castle, of which he became a member and local preacher. He studied theology with great diligence, and at the age of 23 was accepted by the conference as a probationer and appointed to the Daventry circuit, Northamptonshire. The remainder of his four years he spent at Huntingdon and St Neots and Peterborough.

In 1839, having passed his examinations, he was ordained at Liverpool and accepted an

## BUDDLE

offer from the Wesleyan missionary committee to go to New Zealand. He married a daughter of William Dixon, of Barnard Castle, and sailed from Bristol (Sep 1839) with the Rev J. and Mrs Skevington, the Rev H. H. and Mrs Turton, Buttler, Aldred and Gideon Smales in the schooner *Triton*, 130 tons, the first mission ship sent out by the society. After calling at the Cape and Hobart they reached Hokianga (May 1840). Buddle and his wife landed at Kawhia and walked to their station at vWhaingaroa. A few months later he was detailed at the request of Tamihana te Rauparaba to establish a mission at Porirua; but the schooner which was to take them south was wrecked on Kawhia bar. Buddle had to return to Whaingaroa. The general superintendent arriving shortly afterwards appointed him at the request of Te Rau Takerei to a new station at Kopua, on the Waipa. During four years there he baptised many important chiefs and opened schools under native teachers in villages as far afield as Mokau and Taupo. In 1844, in common with Morgan, Ashwell, Whiteley and Wallis, he accompanied his particular tribe to the great meeting at Remuera.

Much against his wish, Buddle was removed from Waipa to Auckland in the belief that he was the best qualified to take charge of the training institution for native teachers which had just been opened in Grafton road. Twenty students from all over the country were in training. Buddle also acted as financial secretary of the Wesleyan missions in the South Seas while the headquarters were in Auckland. He spent 22 years ministering to natives and Europeans in the vicinity of the city and was chairman of the Auckland district. With Whiteley he attended the first Australasian conference at Sydney, by which he was appointed to Manukau. Thereafter for ten years he filled circuits in the South, including Christchurch (1866), Wellington (1870) and Nelson (1873). Then, the conference having decided to establish Wesley College (a theological institution) at Three Kings to train young men of both races for the ministry, Buddle was appointed principal and lecturer in theology. This position he held until 1881. In the following year he resigned from full work, to continue as a supernumerary for a few years more. Buddle was in turn chairman of the Auckland, Christchurch,

## BUDDO

and Wellington districts. He was president of the Australasian conference in 1861 and of the first New Zealand conference (1874). He was a fluent Maori linguist and a sound scholar and was chosen by the Bible society as one of the translators of the Bible into Maori. As an educationalist he was on the senate of the New Zealand University (1871-80) and the council of Auckland University College.

While stationed at Onehunga (1860) he was called upon to calm the excitement amongst the natives consequent upon the Taranaki war. With the Superintendent of the province (Williamson) and the Native Minister (McLean) he spent many weeks at Ngaruawahia. His accurate knowledge of the Maori mind and sympathetic understanding of their problems were of great value, but all efforts to detach the Waikato tribes from the King movement failed. Buddle saw the King proclaimed and wrote an illuminating booklet *The Maori King Movement* (1860). He died on 26 Jun 1883; and his widow on 1 Sep 1884.

Morley; Buller; Buddle, *ap. cit.*; M. A. R. Pratt (information); *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *New Zealand Herald*, 27, 30 Jun 1883; *Public Opinion* (Dunedin), 2 Apr 1881 (P).

BUDDO, DAVID (1856-1937) was born in Edinburgh, the son of a surgeon in the Indian army. Educated in Kincardineshire and Perth, he trained as an engineer for one year and came to New Zealand in 1877. After working as an engineer in Canterbury for two years he took up land at Ellesmere, where he farmed till 1890, when he removed to Fernside.

Buddo was a member of the Springs and Mandeville-Rangiora road boards (1884-1900) and chairman of the latter; of the North Canterbury education board (1887-1909; chairman 1900-07), the Lyttelton harbour board (1897-1907), the Rangiora county council from 1896 (chairman 1897-1900), the Christchurch domain board and the board of governors of Canterbury Agricultural College from 1915 (chairman 1930). He was captain of the North Canterbury Mounted Rifles (1901-3). Buddo entered Parliament in 1893 as a Liberal (defeating R. Moore for Kaiapoi), and represented that constituency until 1928 (except for two parliaments). He was defeated in 1893 and 1919. He was Minister of Internal Affairs in the Ward Government (1909-12). Called to the Legisla-

## BUDGE

tive Council in 1930, Buddo remained a member until 1937, in which year he died (8 Dec). He married (1886) Janet, daughter of James Rollo.

*Parltry Record*; Hansard; *The Dominion*, 9 Dec 1937 (P). Portrait: Parliament House.

BUDGE, WILLIAM (1816-71) came to New Zealand as an assistant surveyor in the *Will Watch* (1841) and worked for the New Zealand Company for some years. In 1848 he was sent to survey the Wairau and Queen Charlotte sound and he lived on Budge's island until it was submerged in an earthquake in 1855. He then took up a run at the Bluff and some farming country, which later he leased to the Redwoods. Budge represented Lower Wairau in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1862-64). He died on 30 Oct 1871.

*Marlborough P.C. Proc.*; Buick, *Marlborough*.

BUICK, DAVID (1848-1918) was born at Karori, the son of William Buick, who arrived in the *Arab* (1841) and in 1852 settled at the Hutt. There David was educated and worked until 1885, when he bought 550 acres of first-class grazing land near Palmerston North. Buick was a well known breeder of Romney Marsh sheep and owned successful racehorses. In public life he was a member of the Hutt road board, and chairman of the Manawatu road board and drainage board. He was a prominent supporter of the Manawatu Agricultural and Pastoral association. In 1896 he contested the Manawatu seat in Parliament. In 1908 he was elected for that constituency which he represented in the Reform interest till his death (on 18 Nov 1918).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 19 Nov 1918; *Evening Post*, 19 Nov 1918.

BUICK, THOMAS LINDSAY (1866-1938) was born at Oamaru, the son of John Walker Buick, educated at the South school there and taught the trade of a carpenter. At the age of 18 he moved to Blenheim, where he took his first interest in public affairs. He joined the local branch of the Irish National League and lectured in favour of home rule in Wellington and Christchurch.

In 1890 he was elected to Parliament as the representative of Wairau, defeating A. P. Seymour. He was one of the first labour members

## BUICK

of the House. "As secretary of the Liberal Association Buick was selected by Ballance as organising secretary of the Liberal" Federation. Re-elected to Parliament in 1893, he became Liberal whip but showed a degree of independence, especially in his denunciation of the abolition of the railway commissioners. Having lost his seat at the following election (1896), he devoted himself to journalism, purchasing a third interest in the *Manawatu Standard* at Palmerston North. While living there Buick published his first volumes on New Zealand history, *Old Marlborough* (1900) and *Old Manawatu* (1903). In 1903 he moved to Dannevirke, acquiring an interest in the *Advocate*. While there he published (1911) his life of Te Rauparaba under the title of *An Old New Zealander*. In that year he visited England and on his return he sold his interest in the paper and moved to Wellington, where in 1913 he joined the staff of the United Press association, of which he was first assistant when he retired (1933). In 1914 he published the first edition of *The Treaty of Waitangi*, of which the third appeared in 1933. He was elected a fellow of the Royal Historical society. He published later *New Zealand's First War* (1926), *The French at Akaroa* (1928), and *The Mystery of the Moa* (1931).

In 1933 Buick retired from journalism to devote his whole time to history. For the last year or two of his life he occupied an official post at the Turnbull Library in succession to Elsdon Best. His later historical works were *The Discovery of Dinornis* (1936), *The Moa Hunters of New Zealand* (1937) and *Waitangi, Ninety-four Years After* (1934). Though without training in historical method, Buick was an avid researcher and a well-balanced historian with a graceful style of popular prose. He was chairman of the Wellington provincial historical committee (1937-38). He was devoted to music and for many years attended the brass bands competitions in New Zealand. He published in 1935 a story of Mendelssohn's *Elijah* and in 1927 *The Romance of the Gramophone*. On his death (on 22 Feb 1938) he bequeathed £1,000 to the Hocken library and £12,000 to the National Art gallery. (C.M.G. 1934.)

Russell; Saunders; *Annals N.Z. Lit.* (P); *Evening Post*, 22 Feb 1938 (p); *The Dominion*, 22 Feb (P).

## BULL

BULL, JAMES (1831-?) was born in London, trained as a carpenter and worked for Gazell and Peto on the building of the House of Parliament at Westminster. Coming to Wellington in 1859, he did some work on the provincial buildings. Having contracted to build a house at the ferry in Rangitikei, he took up land and erected a sawmill and later acquired 100 acres at Pukapukatia, where he established his Pukenui farm (now Ohakea). Bull had a hotel and store at a spot afterwards called Bull Town, and eventually Bulls. He was carrying for some years between there and Wanganui.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; J. G. Wilson.

BULLER, JAMES (1812-84). Born in Cornwall in 1812, Buller as a young man felt drawn towards the Church and acted as a Wesleyan local preacher. In Oct 1835, with his wife, he sailed for Australia by the *Platina*. In Sydney he met the Rev N. Turner (q.v.) who engaged him as tutor to his young family about to return to New Zealand, and they continued their voyage in the *Patriot*, arriving at Hokianga on 27 Apr 1836.

During the three years that Buller spent at Mangungu he thoroughly mastered the Maori language, in which he was able to preach after 12 months residence in the country. He showed such aptitude for mission work that he was accepted by the London conference on the recommendation of the missionaries. Buller experienced many dangers, but throughout evinced unflinching courage. On the occasion of the attack on the native teachers at Rotopiwai (1837) he went at once to the spot with his colleagues and interviewed the murderers. In the following year he was appointed to take charge of a station at Tangiteroria where, mainly under the protection of Tirarau, he spent a useful 15 years. In 1839, in view of the expected arrival of emigrants, he made a long journey on foot to Port Nicholson to secure a site for a mission. There (on 21 Jan 1840) he found the *Cuba* at anchor and met Wharepouriri and other local chiefs. The *Aurora* arrived on 22 Jan and Buller preached to the emigrants on board on Sunday, 26 Jan. Returning to Bay of Islands by the *Atlas*, Buller reached his station on the Kaipara before the meeting to consider the Treaty of Waitangi.

During Heke's war he rendered important

## BULLER

service to the government. In these years he paid periodical visits to Auckland to minister to the Wesleyans resident there. In 1854 he was removed to Wellington. There his duties extended to Wairarapa and Wanganui, where he opened the church in Ridgway street. He had also six native churches to visit, and was chairman of the district. In 1861 he was posted to Christchurch, with charge of the Canterbury circuit. On several visits to Timaru he launched the work of the church in south Canterbury. He opened the Durham street church in Christchurch, and added 10 places of worship to the circuit. Before his term expired he was called upon to supervise the establishment of the Church in the new mining districts of the West Coast (1865). He rode from Christchurch to Hokitika and with the Rev G. S. Harper (who went by sea) he established Methodism in the west. Returning to Auckland (1866), his organising genius was again requisitioned in connection with the Thames goldfields. He opened a church in Oct 1867, two months after his arrival, and was delighted to find many miners from his native county amongst the worshippers. Thames was erected into a separate circuit in 1870 with Buller as superintendent, and a young minister as assistant at Coromandel.

In 1864 Buller presided at the Australasian conference in Melbourne. For twenty years he was chairman of one district or another: and in 1875 he was elected president of the New Zealand conference. In 1876 Buller went to England, where he spent the next five years lecturing and publishing his well known book *Forty Years in New Zealand* (1878). He returned to New Zealand in 1881 and settled at Christchurch, where he died on 6 Nov 1881. Mrs Buller died on 23 Dec of the same year. Buller was a man of great mental power, a fine preacher and a capable administrator. He had a thorough knowledge of the Maori people and their language and a sympathetic understanding of their modes of thought. Apart from his distinguished service as a missionary, he was always an active citizen, interested in all social movements, and in the politics of both races. He was at different periods a governor of Nelson and Canterbury Colleges.

Morley; Sherrin and Wallace; Buller, *op. cit.*; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Gorton.

## BULLER

BULLER, WALTER LAWRY (1838-1906) was born at Newark, Bay of Islands, the son of the Rev James Buller (q.v.). He received his early education at Wesley College, Auckland, and entered the service of the Union Bank at Auckland. There he won rapid promotion, but on medical advice took a year's rest at Wellington. Here he devoted himself to literary and scientific studies, enjoying the friendship of William Swainson, F.R.S. In 1861 he gained first prize for an essay on *The Moral Welfare Of New Zealand* offered by the Auckland Association. In 1865 he was awarded the silver medal of the New Zealand exhibition for an essay on the ornithology of New Zealand, which was published (1865).

Having acquired a competent knowledge of Maori, Buller was appointed government interpreter at Wellington (1855). He started and edited a weekly Maori newspaper, *Te Karere o Poneke*, which became self-supporting and was afterwards subsidised by the government. In 1859 he was appointed native commissioner for the Southern Provinces, where he carried through the partition and individualisation of the Kaiapoi reserve. In 1861 he acted as secretary of the Kohimarama conference of native chiefs, and prepared the proceedings for publication. In the same year he was appointed editor of the official *Maori Messenger* (a bimonthly journal in English and Maori), and he was likewise the promoter and first editor of *Te Manuhiri Tuarangi*, or *Maori Intelligencer*. In Feb 1862 he was gazetted a justice of the peace, and in Apr resident magistrate at Manawatu. In 1865 he was appointed a judge of the native land court, in which capacity he frequently earned the thanks of the government. He saw a good deal of active service and showed great personal courage on the West Coast, especially at Weraroa and in the Ruahine ranges. He published many papers on biological subjects, mainly ornithology. He was elected a fellow of the Linnean, Geological and Royal Geographical societies, and a corresponding-member of the Zoological Society of London. In 1866 he was appointed resident magistrate and sheriff at Wanganui. These appointments he held till 1871, when he went to England as secretary to the agent-general. While there he was called to the bar at the Inner Temple, and published his first important work, *A History*

## BUMBY

*of the Birds of New Zealand* (1873). In recognition of its merit the university of Tubingen conferred on him the honorary degree of doctor of science. Buller presented to the Colonial museum the collection of birds on which the letter-press was founded. In 1875 he was created a C.M.G., and in 1876 was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. Returning to New Zealand in 1874 he was admitted to the bar and for the next 30 years he devoted himself to practice. Devoting himself especially to native work, he appeared for the Ngati-Apa in the Rangatira block case (1882) and the Horowhenua case (1895). In 1881 he contested the Foxton seat in Parliament. He continued to make contributions to zoological literature. In 1882 he prepared for official publication a *Manual of the Birds of New Zealand*, illustrated by photo-lithographic prints from his larger work. In 1883 he received from the New Zealand exhibition the gold medal 'for science and literature.' In 1885 he went to London to represent the colony at the Indian and Colonial Exhibition. In 1886 his services were recognised by the K.C.M.G. In 1894 he was made a knight commander of the crown of Italy. At this period he was governor of the New Zealand Institute and president of the Wellington Philosophical society. In 1888 he published an enlarged edition of *The Birds of New Zealand*, and in 1905 he published in London his supplement, in two volumes.

Buller married (1862) Charlotte (who died in Nov 1891), daughter of Gilbert Mair (q.v.). He died on 18 July 1906.

*App. H.R.*; Cox, *Men of Mark*; Buller; Ward; *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vol i, *et pass.*; Gudgeon (p); Mair; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 20 Jul 1906.

BUMBY, JOHN HEWGILL (1808-40) was born at Thirsk, Lincolnshire. His father released him from a business career to follow his natural bent, and he went in 1827 to a boarding academy at Leeds to study for the ministry. The Wesleyan schism of 1828 intervening, he returned home, studied privately and did home mission work, especially in connection with juvenile associations. Accepted as a probationer, he served in the circuits at York, Hull, Waltham Abbey, Halifax, Holywell and Birmingham.

At Birmingham he met the Rev John Waterhouse, superintendent of the circuit, and he

## BUNBURY

returned there from the London conference in 1834 as a fully acknowledged minister. Though very delicate in health and sensitive in disposition, he early showed a desire to engage in missionary work and in 1838 was designated to proceed to Australia with Ironside, Creed and Warren under the general superintendence of Waterhouse. They sailed in the *James* in Sep 1838 and arrived on Mar 1839. Bumby's headquarters in New Zealand were at Mangungu, on the Hokianga river. In common with other missionaries of the time he had many perilous experiences in his journeys amongst the New Zealand tribes. With Hobbs he circumnavigated the North Island and returned to Kawhia, and then with Hobbs and Whiteley travelled overland to Taranaki to put a stop to tribal fighting at Mokau. Bumby and Hobbs arrived at Port Nicholson on Friday, 7 Jun 1839, and held a service at Petone the same day. On 8 Jun they tapued land for the Wesleyan mission at Te Aro, and they preached at Te Aro pa on Sunday, 9 Jun. They left behind them the following native teachers until a European missionary should be sent from Hokianga: Moretara; Reihana, his wife and children; Hemi and wife; Ngarota and Waka. These natives laid the foundations upon which John Aldred and others afterwards built. Bumby also paid a short visit to Sydney, and then returned in the *Triton* to Kawhia with newly arrived missionaries. On his homeward journey to Mangungu he was drowned in the Waitemata estuary through the upsetting of a canoe near Tiritirimatangi (26 Jun 1840). Though an earnest, devout missionary and a good preacher in English, Bumby never fully mastered Maori and had not attained his full usefulness in the field. Bumby's sister, who introduced bees to Mangungu in Mar 1839, married the Rev Gideon Smales (q.v.).

Buller; Morley; M. A. R. Pratt (information); A. Barrett, *Life of J. H. Bumby* (1852).

BUNBURY, THOMAS (1791-1861) was the son of a military officer and was born at Gibraltar. In 1807 he received his ensigncy in the 90th Regiment, and he was later transferred to the 3rd Foot, with which he served in Portugal. With the 20th Portuguese infantry he entered France at the end of the Peninsula campaign. (Knight of the Tower and Sword). He came to

## BUNNY

New South Wales as a major in the 80th Regiment (1837), and was commandant at Norfolk island until the withdrawal of the troops there.

In Mar 1840 Governor Gipps requested Bunbury to come to New Zealand, in view of the indisposition of Hobson; and, if necessary, to assume the lieutenant-governorship, and he sailed in the *Buffalo* with 100 men of his regiment. Finding Hobson improving in health but surrounded by difficulties and incompetent advisers, Bunbury came loyally to his assistance and carried through the duties which were necessary to complete British sovereignty in New Zealand. He proceeded in H.M.S. *Herald* to Port Nicholson and the far south, obtaining the signatures of chiefs to the treaty of Waitangi. At Thames and Coromandel he visited the chiefs in the tender *Trent*. Rejoining the *Herald* on 15 May, he proclaimed sovereignty at Sylvan bay (Stewart Island) on 4 Jun, and at Cloudy Bay on 17 Jun. He was gazetted a magistrate of the territory in May 1841 and was deputy-governor in FitzRoy's absence from the seat of government (18 Jan 1844). A few weeks later he was relieved as senior officer in New Zealand by Col. W. Hulme. (C.B. 1846) Bunbury afterwards served in the Indian mutiny. He wrote a very entertaining book *Reminiscences of a Veteran* (1861).

G.B.a.p., 1841/311, 1842/569; Rusden; Bunbury, *op. cit.* (p); Buick, *First War*; and *Waitangi* (p); Scholefield, *Hobson* (P).

BUNNY, HENRY (1823-91) was an English solicitor and an attorney of the Queen's bench before coming to Wellington in 1853. He was admitted and practised for some years. In the fifties Bunny took up land first in Rangitikei and later in the Wairarapa in the neighbourhood of Featherston. He was a member of the Provincial Council (for Wairarapa 1864-69, and for Wairarapa West 1869-75). In 1871 he was a member of the provincial executive and in the last days of the province he was provincial secretary and treasurer, and as deputy superintendent was responsible after the departure of Fitzherbert for winding up the affairs of the province.

Bunny was in Parliament for many years (representing Wairarapa 1865-81). He was a Liberal and was eventually defeated by Buchanan, against whom he unsuccessfully contested the seat on several later occasions. He acted

## BURN

as whip for the Stafford government for several years and was an exceptionally clever parliamentary tactician. Bunny held a major's commission in the militia and commanded the Wairarapa volunteer district (1882-89). He was a member of the education board, the waste lands board, the Wellington College board of governors, and of the Featherston town board, licensing bench and school committee. He married first a sister of the Rev Arthur Baker, and (secondly, 1867) Bessie, daughter of S. Thome, Chapelton, Yorkshire. Bunny died on 15 Feb 1891.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*: Carter; 'Ward; Leckie (p); *Evening Post*, 16 Feb 1891. Portrait: Parliament House.

BURN, DAVID (1805-75) was in early life an officer in the Royal Navy. He married Miss Fenton in Ireland (1832). On retiring he went on the stage and had some reputation as an actor of Shakespearean parts. Indifferent health induced him to emigrate to Australia, where he engaged in journalism and other literary activities. He wrote a number of plays, some of which were produced in Australia and New Zealand; and while in Tasmania he published two volumes of *Plays and Fugitive Pieces*. Bum came to Auckland in the forties and was associated first with the *New Zealander* and afterwards with the *New Zealand Herald*, in which he was part proprietor with Wilson. He edited the *Maori Messenger* in 1849 and again in the period 1855-63, and was also connected for a while with the *Southern Cross*. From about 1865 he lived in retirement in poor health. Bum died on 14 Jun 1875.

Hocken, *Bibliog.*: Morton; Burn, letters in Mitchell Library, Sydney; *N.z. Herald*, 27 Aug 1873, 15 Jun 1875.

BURN, MARGARET GORDON (1825-1918) was born at Edinburgh, the daughter of Alexander Huie, and educated at the Circus Place School under Dr Reid and in languages under private tutors. She was for some time governess in the family of Sir William Jackson, of Liverpool.

On the death of her father (in 1852) she came to Victoria and opened a small private school at Geelong. In 1857 she married Andrew Bum (who was a master at Scots College and later head of the Presbyterian School at Gee-

## BURNS

long). Her husband's health failing in 1864, Mrs Bum opened a new high school for girls on the lines of the one in Circus Place. In 1870 she was selected from a large number of applicants as the first lady principal of the Otago Girls' High School. Under her skilful management and capable teaching the school in 14 years attained a high degree of efficiency. She retired in 1884, but shortly afterwards accepted the same position in the Waitaki Girls' High School at Oamaru, where she was for five years. Mrs Bum was deeply religious and charitable and a strict disciplinarian. She died on 8 Dec 1918. Her son, DAVID WILLIAM MURRAY BURN (1862 - ), an M.A. of New Zealand University, has published several volumes of verse, most of which he contributed to the *Otago Witness* and other papers under the nom de plume of •Marsyas:

*Otago Girls' High School*, 1871-1921 jubilee magazine (p); *Who's Who N.z.*, 1932; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Dec 1918.

BURN, ROBERT (1823-1909) was born at Maidstone, Kent, and came to New Zealand in the *Lord Auckland* in 1842. He was in business for many years in Nelson as a coppersmith, and represented Nelson in the Provincial Council (1861-69 and 1872-73). Burn was a prominent freemason, and a past chief ranger in the Foresters.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v, 132; *The Colonist*, 11 Dec 1909.

BURNS, ARTHUR JOHN (1830-1901) was born at the manse at Monkton, Ayrshire, the son of the Rev Thomas Bums (q.v.), and was educated there and at Wallacetown Academy. Being apprenticed to the sea, he had experiences with pirates in the Arafura sea, and during the China war (1845-46) was called upon with other merchant seaman to assist the blue-jackets. Coming to Otago with his father in the *Philip Laing* (1848), he took up land at Grants Braes and was practically the founder of Mosgiel.

Burns was a member of the Provincial Council for Central (1855-59) and for Taieri (1863-66, 1867-70), and was on the executive (1865-66, 1867-68 and 1868-69), being several times leader of the government. Bums was member of Parliament for Bruce (1865-66), for Caversham (1866-70) and for Roslyn (1876-78). He strong-

## BURNS

ly opposed the abolition of the provinces. He was keenly interested in manufacturing and was the founder of the Mosgiel Woollen Co., for which he bought the machinery in England (1869). Burns resigned from Parliament to promote the Westport Coal Co. (1880), of which he was manager for many years. He supervised the development works, spending four or five years on the West Coast and then returned to live in Dunedin. He again contested a parliamentary election (for Taieri) in 1890. Burns was a justice of the peace from 1850 and was a strong supporter of the Burns Club of Dunedin. He died on 15 Sep 1901.

*Otago P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *N.Z.P.D.*, 15 Sep 1901; McIndoe; Hocken, *Otago; Otago Daily Times*, 16 Sep 1901. Portrait: Parliament House.

BURNS, DAVID (1811-87) was born in Scotland and trained as a builder. He came to Nelson about 1848 and after working at his trade for a good number of years was able to retire. He took little part in public affairs beyond being a member of the school committee from its inception, a member of the Nelson board of works and of the City Council. As a freemason he was a founder of Victory Lodge and member of Southern Star and of the Royal Arch Chapter. He claimed relationship with Robert Burns and was himself a minor poet. His only published volume, *Scottish Echoes from New Zealand*, appeared in 1883. Burns died on 2 Sep 1887.

*Nelson Evening Mail*, 3 Sep 1887.

BURNS, THOMAS (1796-1871), the first minister of the Presbyterian congregation in Otago, was a son of Gilbert Burns (brother of the poet), and was born in the farmhouse of Mosgiel, Ayrshire, where Robert himself spent his childhood. After attending the parish school he went to Wallace Hall Academy, in Closeburn, Dumfriesshire (where Edward Irving was one of the teachers), and when his father left the farm in Dumfriesshire he went to the Grammar School at Haddington. Burns entered himself in 1812 at the University of Edinburgh to study for the ministry of the Established Church of Scotland. While still there he was tutor in the family of Sir John Dalrymple in Berwickshire, and, being licensed in 1823, he received from Sir Hugh Dalrymple the presentation of the

## BURNS

parish of Ballantrae, to which he was inducted in 1826. There he laboured for four years, and in 1830 he accepted the parish of Monkton, Ayrshire. Early in that year he married Clementina, daughter of the Rev James Francis Grant, rector of Merston, Sussex, and a canon of Chichester Cathedral.

Burns was still ministering to the parish of Monkton when the disruption came in 1843, and, sacrificing position and emoluments amounting to £400 a year, he threw in his lot with the Free Church. He remained in Monkton as a minister of the Free Church for two years longer, and established Free Churches in various parishes where the ministers had stuck to the Established Church. In 1843 Burns became interested in the scheme for a Free Church settlement in New Zealand. It was adopted by the Assembly of the Free Church, and a few months later Burns accepted the offer of the post of minister to the first congregation in New Edinburgh. Though the scheme was temporarily suspended, Burns did not lose sight of it, and brought it before many of his former parishioners. When the negotiations were renewed he stuck tenaciously to the idea of a Free Church colony, with church, school and constitution complete, and he spent twelve months without salary advancing the project. The horizon being still clouded by the financial difficulties of the New Zealand Company, Burns felt himself no longer justified in remaining unemployed, and in 1846 he accepted the parish of Portobello, near Edinburgh. He spent about 18 months in that charge before the Otago scheme reached the stage at which he was able to sail with his wife and family in the *Philip Laing*, which reached Port Chalmers on 15 Apr 1848.

Thereafter Burns spared no energy in ministering to the spiritual needs of his widely scattered congregation. For six years, unaided, he travelled the length and breadth of the Otago block, wherever Presbyterians were settled, working the vast parish. His first relief came in 1854, when the Revs W. Bannerman and W. Will arrived to take charge respectively of the Clutha and Taieri districts. Where church and state were so closely united the minister was constantly called into counsel upon questions affecting the social, economic and even the political welfare of the people. Twenty years of

## BURROWS

arduous and at times anxious ministrations took toll of his erstwhile robust health, and he welcomed sincerely the arrival of his assistant, the Rev G. Sutherland, in 1868. Sutherland took much of the work of First Church off his shoulders, so that Burns was shortly able to abstain from an active part in the affairs of the congregation. He died on 23 Jan 1871, and his widow in 1878.

Burns's labours had been crowned long since by the gratitude of the widespread congregation which he had led into the wilderness. The success of his ministry and the triumph of his personality were marked in a distinctive manner by his old University, which in 1861 conferred upon him the doctorate of divinity (one of the first honorary degrees conferred upon Free Church ministers). The passion for education was dominant in Burns throughout his life. He was elected (10 Nov 1869) chancellor of the University of Otago, but he did not live to see the inaugural ceremony. (See A. J. BURNS.)

Chisholm; E. N. Merrington, *A Great Coloniser*, 1929; Hocken, *Otago*; McIndoe; Barr; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Jan 1871, 5 Oct 1891, 17 Jan 1930 (P).

BURROWS, ROBERT (1812-97) was born at Stroud, Gloucestershire. He studied at the C. M. S. college at Islington, was ordained deacon (1838) and priest (1839), and left for New Zealand at once, arriving at Bay of Islands on 8 Mar 1840. His first station was Kororareka and his next Waimate, where in 1844 he established an industrial school for young men and boys.

During Heke's war Burrows acted as chaplain to the troops. He visited the hostile camp to tend the wounded, and was treated with confidence and made laudable efforts on every occasion to bring about peace. He published (1886) extracts from his diaries kept during Heke's war. Burrows visited England in 1853, and returned to fill the position of local secretary to the Church Missionary Society until 1896. He then retired and became a member of the board, besides continuing his duties as a missionary and filling pulpits as required. He was a governor of St John's College and a trustee, a member of the standing committee, of the general trust board and the Purewa cemetery board. He died on 22 Jul 1897. His

## BUSBY

wife (Charlotte Eliza, 1806-88) died on 22 Aug 1888.

Burrows, *op. cit.* (p); Carleton; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 24 Jul 1897.

BURTON, GEORGE (1842-80) was one of the earliest settlers of Wairoa, Hawkes Bay, where he was sent in the first instance to survey the town. He remained there practising his profession and farming and surveyed much of the confiscated land between Ruakitire and Waikaremoana. He once owned Whakake estate. He represented Wairoa in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1875), and was the first chairman of the Wairoa county council. Burton died on 27 Feb 1880.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; Lambert, 403-6.

BURTON, GEORGE RUTT (1825-62), an early Taranaki settler, took up land at Omata. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Omata from 1853 until his death (on 4 Aug 1862). Burton was the designer of the interior defences of the Omata stockade, which was warmly praised by Maj.-General Sir James Alexander. He married (1854) Clara Hortensia, daughter of Dr Richard Kingdon. Burton was for a short time in 1862 deputy-superintendent of the province.

Cowan, *Wars; Taranaki News*, 7 Aug 1862.

BURTON, WILLIAM MUMFORD (1830-93) was an early settler of Taranaki, farming at Grey block. An educated man and a good public speaker, he sat in the Provincial Council of Taranaki for a number of years as member for Grey and Bell (1865-69), and for New Plymouth (1873-74). He resigned to proceed to England as emigration agent for the province. In this work he was most successful, bringing to Taranaki many useful settlers, including a large number of men from Lincolnshire. Burton died on 4 May 1893.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc.*

BUSBY, JAMES (1800-71) was born at Glasgow, the son of John Busby, who was appointed to New South Wales as mineral surveyor and civil engineer. Before leaving Europe James Busby studied the culture of the vine in France, with the idea that wine might take the place of beer and spirits in Australia.

On the voyage to Australia (1823) he compiled his work on viticulture, which he published in 1825. He conducted practical experi-

ments to such effect that he was able in 1831 to send the permanent under-secretary at the Colonial Office a sample case of wine. In 1824 he found employment in the civil service and during his service as superintendent of the male orphan school at Cabramatta he made his first experiments at wine culture. He then became collector of internal revenue, and a member of the land board (which carried the title of 'honourable'). He was also a commissioner to inquire into the state of penal settlements. In 1830 he retired dissatisfied with his treatment by the government in England, Lord Goderich having made an appointment which in effect superseded him. He accordingly in 1831 returned to England, and impressed himself on the Colonial Office by numerous informative reports on colonial questions (including viticulture, pauper emigration, crown lands, the jury system, and New Zealand affairs). Through the influence of Lord Haddington, which had previously been used in his favour, Lord Goderich decided to appoint him resident in New Zealand, in preference to Darling's nominee, Sturt (Mar 1832). Darling had tried to find employment for Busby, but favoured a military officer for the post in New Zealand. Goderich intended that the resident's authority should be supported by a British vessel of war permanently stationed at New Zealand, and that an act should be passed conferring on him magisterial authority over British subjects. Neither intention was carried out. The Admiralty would not do more than order occasional visits to New Zealand by warships serving in New South Wales; and the bill for extending the jurisdiction of New South Wales courts to New Zealand failed on the plea that New Zealand was not within the British dominions. Busby therefore had to rely on what moral influence he could gain over the Maori chiefs with the aid of missionaries. To Bourke, who had succeeded to the governorship of New South Wales, Busby was not persona grata, and he soon had reason to complain that he was inadequately supported by the New South Wales government. Indeed, within eighteen months, the governor was recommending his withdrawal (1 Sep 1834). His frequent requests for increased powers went unheeded, and his impotence gained him an undeserved reputation for inefficiency.

In 1832 Busby was married at Segenhoe, New South Wales, to Miss Agnes Dow. He arrived in New Zealand in May 1833, was well received by the chiefs of the North, and in due course established his official residence at Waitangi, building his house on land which he purchased at his own expense. Busby laboured to create some rudimentary organisation of the chiefs and tribes of the North, by which they might gradually acquire a sense of responsibility, and under his guidance enforce certain simple regulations for their own protection and that of the European settlers. The *Sir George Murray*, of Hokianga, having been seized by the Sydney customs authorities, Busby induced a conference of chiefs to adopt a national flag (20 Mar 1834) to provide New Zealand-built ships with certificates of registration. This conference brought into being a simple native tribunal to handle on behalf of the New Zealand tribes . . . any transactions of an international character; as well as local matters such as the arrest of convicts and deserters. The flag was duly recognised by the Admiralty, and thereafter New Zealand-built vessels were granted certificates of registration by the resident in the name of the Independent Tribes of New Zealand. Busby regarded this 'national act of the New Zealand chiefs' as 'the first step towards the formation of a permanent confederation of the chiefs:

On 30 May 1834, Busby, who had now been joined by his wife, narrowly escaped death in an attack on his house by native marauders. He was wounded in the cheek by a splinter from a wooden door post. The chiefs in conference disavowed the act and promised to trace the guilty parties, but thought it better 'to let the matter sleep for the present: The settlers at the Bay upbraided Busby for his weakness, but in Dec 1834, when H.M.S. *Alligator* arrived with troops, fresh from the punitive expedition against the captors of the crew of the *Harriet*, the culprit Rete was apprehended by the chiefs, who decided to punish him by exile and confiscation of his lands to the Crown. Busby declined the land for himself. With the departure of the *Alligator*, however, Rete defied Busby and boasted of his powers in having 'shot the British resident: Busby was as much defied by Europeans as by natives. Unable to afford legal protection to person or

property, and unwilling therefore to interfere in European disputes, he soon gained the title of 'No-authority Busby,' and when several petitions to the Crown for protection produced no result, the Bay settlers took the law into their own hands by forming the Kororareka Association for the administration of a species of lynch law (1838). His vexations were increased by the appointment in 1835 of Thomas McDonnell as additional British resident at Hokianga, an honorary appointment, nominally subordinate to his own, but in fact exercised by an energetic and headstrong man in complete independence of Busby's wishes. In Sep 1835, when McDonnell led a movement for prohibiting the importation and sale of spirits, by means of a 'law' enacted by the natives and the British residents, to be administered by a mixed committee, Busby sympathised with the purpose of the scheme, but believed it both ultra vires and impracticable. He also resented McDonnell's having taken independent action without consulting him as chief resident. McDonnell obtained the approval of the Governor of New South Wales, and Busby had the mortification of seeing his views set aside. His action in this matter, though fully vindicated by the complete failure of the prohibition plan in practice, brought him into undesired conflict with the missionary body, especially at Bay of Islands.

Simultaneously (Oct 1835) came the announcement by de Thierry that he intended to set himself up in New Zealand as a sovereign chief and a benefactor of the Maori race. Busby seized on this 'external threat' as an occasion for advancing his plans of native organisation a step further, and induced 35 northern chiefs to sign a Declaration of Independence, purporting to create 'a Confederation of the Chiefs and Tribes of New Zealand,' with exclusive powers of legislation through an assembly and of administration through a native committee advised and controlled by the British Resident. Busby believed that the chiefs would enact and enforce whatever laws the British government thought advantageous, and that in effect 'the establishment of the Independence of New Zealand under the protection of the British government would be the most effectual mode of making the country a dependency of the British crown in everything but the

name: The New South Wales government recognised the Confederation as an approach to a regular form of government in New Zealand (Feb 1836) and Glenelg gave a cautious promise of 'British support and protection' (May 1836). But it soon became evident that, in the absence of any real British authority to support it, the experiment had little chance of success. Busby's renewed appeals for legal powers as magistrate and for a police force, now more than ever necessary, produced no result. The outbreak of tribal wars, which in 1836 and 1837 spread over the whole country from Tauranga and Rotorua to Hokianga and the Bay of Islands, revealed the impotence of the new 'government: In Jan 1836, Busby wrote that the powers of the Confederation existed only in theory, the natives had no conception of subordination to legal authority, and during their slow political education they needed the protection of British troops. When troops were refused, Busby confessed his complete impotence (May 1836); he considered his office in abeyance and asked leave (which Bourke refused) to go to England to put the needs of New Zealand before the Colonial Office. Beyond occasional arrests, four Europeans were deported by authority of the Confederation for trial and execution in Sydney in 1837, and a Maori slave was put to death in New Zealand for his share in the murder of Henry Biddle.

In 1837 Captain Hobson visited New Zealand and made proposals for its better government by adoption of a modified factory system, whereby the districts settled by Europeans should be brought under direct British rule. Busby prepared a set of counter-proposals based on his Confederation scheme, and was on the point of leaving for London to further his scheme and carry through some business proposals when he learnt of the appointment of Hobson as consul and lieutenant-governor of New Zealand, empowered to negotiate for the cession of the country. It is greatly to Busby's credit that his disappointment did not prevent his cordial co-operation with Hobson in drafting the Treaty of Waitangi and negotiating its acceptance by the chiefs. Busby's services were handsomely recognised by Hobson in his despatches.

After visiting Sydney to defend his land claims

BUTLER

and oppose Gipps's land act for New Zealand (1840), Busby returned to New Zealand as a permanent settler. He continued to play an active part in public affairs, and published many able and interesting pamphlets on questions of land and general policy. He represented Bay of Islands in the Auckland Provincial Council from 1853-55, 1857-63, and was the leader of the unsuccessful movement to erect Auckland province into a separate colony. To further the land claims of himself and other settlers who claimed also to have been unjustly treated, Busby established a newspaper in Auckland. After 27 years of agitation he was awarded £38,000 compensation (1869) by the Colonial government. In 1870 he visited England for medical advice, and he died at Anerley on 15 Jul 1871. His widow died on 13 Oct 1889.

J.R.

P.R.O. London, series C.O. 202 and 209 ; G.B.O.P., esp. 1832/516, 1835/585, 1836/538, 1837/425, 1837-38/122, 1838/680, 1840/238, 560, 582, 1841/311, 1845/108, 1846/337; *Hist. Rec. AllSt.*; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Church Missionary Register*, 1833-40; Marsden, *L. and J.*, esp. p 502 n; Buick, *Waitangi* (p); Scholefield, *Hobson*; Hight and Bamford; Ramsden; Morton; Buller; Mennell; Turner; Sherrin and Wallace; Hocken in *Otago Witness*, 17 Dec 1896; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Jan 1869.

BUTLER, GEORGE EDMUND (1870-1936) was born in Southampton, England, and educated first at Taunton College. He came to Wellington in 1881, completed his education at the Te Aro School and, while assisting his father at his trade as a carpenter, studied at the School of Art (afterwards the Technical College) under J. M. Nairn (q.v.). In 1897 he went to Sydney with McGregor Wright to study the pictures in the Art Gallery, and in the following year worked his passage to London in the stokehold of the *Gothic*. He studied at the Lambeth School of Art and at the Academie Julian in Paris, where he gained honours. At Antwerp he won the Concours gold medal and was crowned with the laurel wreath. On returning to New Zealand Butler settled in Dunedin where in 1903-04 he taught drawing to private pupils. At this time he did a good deal of painting, and sold *Spring Blossoms* to the Dunedin Art Gallery. He soon returned to England, whence he exhibited year by year in the New

BUTLER

Zealand Academy's annual exhibition and at the opening of the National Gallery. He had many pictures hung in the Royal Academy and the Royal Scottish Academy. Butler during the war of 1914-18 made many pictures as an official artist with the New Zealand Expeditionary Force. He had a personality of great charm and was twice married. He died on 9 Aug 1936.

*Evening Post*, 2 Oct 1936.

BUTLER, JOHN GARE (1781-1841) as a young man went into business in London, where he spent 20 years, latterly as a clerk in a large firm of carriers. In 1798 he married Hannah Hitchman (d. 1852).

Butler evinced a religious turn of mind and took part in Church matters in Paddington, where he lived. In 1816 he was honorary secretary of the newly formed Grand Junction and Canal Bible Association, and he was prepared by the Bishop of Paddington for work under the Church Missionary Society. In 1818 he was ordained by the Bishop of Gloucester and in Dec he sailed in the convict ship *Baring* for Australia as the first ordained minister dedicated to the work of the Society in the New Zealand field. Though superintendent in New Zealand, he was subordinate to Marsden (q.v.), the Society's agent in Sydney. Amongst the passengers, by the *Baring* were the chiefs Tui and Titore, returning in charge of Butler from their visit to England. In Sydney Butler had many conferences with Marsden on mission policy and met some influential New Zealand chiefs staying at Parramatta. To avoid delay Marsden chartered the ship *General Gates*, in which he sailed with the New Zealand party on 29 Jul 1819, arriving at Bay of Islands 12 Aug. Butler's agreement was to receive £160 a year and rations, and he was invested by the governor of New South Wales with the authority of a justice of the peace for the preservation of order in the settlements in New Zealand (24 Jul). Butler settled at Kerikeri. At an early date it became evident that he had not the personal authority to control missionaries who had been some years in New Zealand and developed habits which were detrimental to the mission cause. Kendall was troublesome and defiant from the outset and disputes soon occurred, especially in regard to the traffic in arms. Butler endeavoured to curb his colleagues,

BUTLER

but there is evidence that he himself was compelled to traffic in guns and powder, not for private profit but to obtain necessary supplies for the mission. He tried to establish brick works and to procure timber for mission buildings, but the competition of visiting ships defeated him. He did in 1820 use the first plough in New Zealand and he was a successful gardener; but the lack of draught bullocks until early in 1820 prevented him from hauling timber for the erection of the mission buildings. Marsden's arrival in the *Dromedary* eased his plight somewhat, but he had no residence for his family for two years. In 1820 he made long journeys with Marsden, and late in 1821 he visited Sydney, returning in the *Westmorland* (Feb 1822).

When Marsden visited New Zealand in 1823 to install Henry Williams in Paihia he came to the conclusion that Butler and Kendall could not possibly remain together in Bay of Islands. Butler's own habits had deteriorated, and eventually Marsden insisted on his removal to New South Wales. There his active connection with the mission ended, though Marsden employed him for some time supervising Maori and European artisans at work at the seminary at Parramatta.

Butler sailed for England in the *Midas* (Aug 1824) and passed some years rather precariously in the service of the Church. For eight years he was curate at Aston Bottrell and for a few months had charge of the parish of Haddenham, Isle of Ely. Butler's dual qualification as a clergyman of the established church and a former magistrate in New Zealand recommended him to the New Zealand Company, and in 1839 he was appointed native guardian and interpreter. He sailed with his family in the *Bolton* and on his arrival at Port Nicholson (21 Apr 1840) took up his residence at Pito-one. His sympathetic knowledge of the Maori and command of the language were of great value in the settlement of disputes and bargains between the two peoples. In the intervals of a strenuous official life he found time to complete the manuscript of the Maori grammar which he had commenced in his earlier residence in the colony.

Butler died 18 Jun 1841, and was buried at Gear island. His daughter Hannah (born 5 Sep 1817) married Richard Barton (q.v.).

Marsden, *L. and J.* and *Lieutenants.*, Ramsden;

BUTLER

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; R. J. Barton, *Earliest New Zealand* (1927).

BUTLER, SAMUEL (1835-1902) was the son of the Rev Thomas Butler and grandson of Samuel Butler (1774-1839), Bishop of Lichfield. Born at Langar, Nottinghamshire, he was educated at Allesley, near Coventry, and at Shrewsbury school. At St John's College, Cambridge, he took a high place in the classical tripos in 1858. He was deeply influenced at an early age by Italy and music, and studied art with some success, painting passably in water colours. He was intended for the church, but his opinions made this profession distasteful to him, and after stormy scenes with his father he persuaded him to make available sufficient capital to enable the son to settle as a sheep farmer in New Zealand.

Sailing in the *Roman Emperor* (Sep 1859) Butler landed in Lyttelton in Jan 1860. With a companion he took long rides through the province in search of land, and eventually selected a small property up the Rangitata river which he called Mesopotamia. There he settled in Jun with a man and two cadets, their nearest neighbour being 25 miles distant. The station was of 8,000 acres and Butler soon had 3,000 sheep. His cadet, John Brabazon, had a fourth share. Though quite inexperienced, Butler showed great determination and judgment and succeeded in a few years in achieving his ambition by doubling his capital of £4,000, and thus being able to return to England. His letters home, after being severely edited by his father, were published in 1863 under the title *A First Year" in Canterbury Settlement*. They showed that he had a fund of common-sense. By the end of 1863, aided by the reflected prosperity of the Otago goldfields, Butler sold the property to William Parkerson. While at Mesopotamia he had written for *The Press* some articles which he afterwards used in *Erewhon, or Over the Range* (1872). In these, as in many subsequent works, he satirises the Darwinian theory and conventional religion. Amongst Butler's acquaintances in New Zealand were G. S. Sale, William Rolleston, W. S. Moorhouse, Joshua Strange Williams, John Baker and von Haast. During his occupancy of Mesopotamia, but while he was temporarily absent, Dr Andrew Sinclair (q.v.) met his death in fording the

BUTLER

Rangitata river, and was buried on the flat below the homestead. On returning to England Butler established himself at Clifford's Inn in London and devoted his attention mainly to music and painting. Between 1868 and 1876 he exhibited regularly at the Royal Academy. But the publication of his book *Life and Habit* in 1877 convinced him that letters were his forte, and thereafter he wrote regularly. He was extremely versatile, indulging with equal thoroughness and success in classical exercises such as the translation into colloquial English of the *Iliad* and the *Odyssey* and in biological controversy. His dispute with Darwin over evolution, in the course of which he published three books, rather embittered Darwin and did not entirely satisfy Butler. With Festing Jones, after his biographer, Butler composed a secular oratorio *Narcissus* (1888) and he had done his part of another (*Ulysses*) before his death. Butler died on 18 Jun 1902, and his best known novel *The Way Of All Flesh* was published posthumously in 1903.

Festing Jones (pp); *Encycl. B., it.; D.N.B.*; Acland; Baker; *Cant. O.N.*; Wigram; *Natural History of Canterbury*; *The Press*, 25 May 1911.

BUTLER, WILLIAM (1814-75) was born in England. He went to sea early and at the age of 24 he commanded a sailing ship in the Australian trade. He engaged in whaling and trading in these waters and eventually settled at Mongonui, where his first child was born (Jan 1841). There he established a flourishing business in the purchase of flax, timber and kauri gum. He was highly respected by both races and for many years was a leader of the European community.

In 1861 Butler was elected to Parliament for the Mongonui constituency, which he represented until the dissolution in 1866, though the remoteness of his home prevented him from giving regular attendance except during two sessions. His advice on native matters was particularly sound. In 1862 he was a passenger in the *Lord Worsley* when she was wrecked on the coast of Taranaki, and fell into the hands of unfriendly natives. To ensure the safety of the passengers and their belongings Butler and R. Graham jointly purchased the wreck for the natives and so avoided the spoliation of the survivors. Butler died on 4 Mar 1875.

A son, WILLIAM JAMES BUTLER (1848-1904),

BUTT

who was born at Mongonui and received his education at the Auckland Grammar School, served his articles as a surveyor and was for some years flaxmilling on the Thames goldfields. In 1878 he was native land purchase agent in the Wairarapa, and later he was private secretary successively to three native ministers (Bryce, Rolleston and Ballance). In 1881 he explained to Te Whiti and Tohu the government's proclamations. Two years later he accompanied the prisoners during portion of their tour of the colony (1882-83). He carried through the purchase of the Waimarino block and was afterwards a judge of the native land court.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; G. C. Beale, *Seventy Years in Auckland*; J. P. Ward, *Wanderings with the Maori Prophets*, 1883; *Evening Post*, 1 Feb 1904.

BUTT, HENRY FRANCIS (1815-86) was a son of the Rev John Marten Butt, vicar of Oddingly, Worcestershire. To prepare for the medical profession he was articled to Dr Webb (Lilleshall, Shropshire) and became a member of the Royal College of Surgeons, but being attracted towards missionary life, he offered his services to the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel. He was accepted as a catechist and sailed for New Zealand with Bishop Selwyn in the *Tomatin* (Dec 1841). In common with the others of the party Butt studied Maori on the voyage. On arrival in Bay of Islands (by the *Bl'istolian* from Sydney) he travelled a good deal with Selwyn and was specially employed in rendering medical service to both Maori and pakeha and giving lectures on medicine at the college at Waimate. In 1843 he was ordained deacon and married Serena (d. 1901), daughter of the Rev Richard Davis. He was appointed to Nelson and distinguished himself in charge of the bishop's school, of which he took charge in 1847, when he was ordained priest and appointed to the Nelson parish. In 1849 he laid the foundation stone of the first Nelson cathedral, which was opened by Selwyn in 1851.

While in Nelson Butt had charge of practically the whole of the South Island except Motueka, and he made many long and arduous journeys. In 1857 he was offered the missionary district of Wairau and he settled at Beavertown, erecting a house for himself at Amersfoort and preaching in the courthouse. Two years later Hobhouse (the first Bishop of Nelson) licensed

BUTT

him as curate of Wairau and Waitohi, and shortly afterwards Waitohi and Picton were made a separate district. -Early in 1860 the first church was commenced in Blenheim, the church of the Nativity being dedicated in Dec 1861. Blenheim later became a separate parish. In 1868 Butt was collated the first archdeacon of Marlborough, and in succeeding years he saw many new parishes formed and churches built. He resigned owing to failing health in 1884 and died on 20 Dec 1886. Butt continued to an advanced age to administer medical help where called for. All fees received as a doctor in his early days in New Zealand he paid into the sick fund of the church.

Tucker; Coleman; Davis; *Annals Dioc. N.Z.*; *Malborough Express*, 24 Dec 1886; *Church of Nativity* (p).

BUTT, JOHN (1830-79) was born in Sussex. He became a master mariner and commanded vessels for Henderson and Macfarlane (including some of the Circular Saw line) between Auckland and San Francisco. He was afterwards in business with Captain Anderson as shiphandlers and stevedores. In 1867 he joined the Thames rush, and erected a hotel and theatre at Thames. On the outbreak of the Whangamata rush, he erected a large hotel there, but lost heavily and having sold out went into business with Onyon as shipping and commission agents. He took a keen interest in politics and was M.P.C. for Thames (1869), supporting Williamson. Butt was on the first Thames borough council. He died on 26 Jul 1879.

*Thames Advertiser and Star*, 28 Jul 1879.

BUTTON, CHARLES EDWARD (1838-1920) was born in Launceston, the seventh son of a settler of 1833 who was a member of the first Hobart municipal council. Educated at the Launceston Grammar School and the High School at Hobart, he was articled to a firm of solicitors in Launceston, admitted to the bar in 1861 and practised for a short time in his native town.

In 1863 he came to New Zealand and started practice at Invercargill. Two years later he entered into partnership at Hokitika with W. S. Reid (q.v.), and he was soon regarded as one of the leading authorities on mining law. In

BUTTS

his practice in the wardens' courts he became a close friend, though a professional opponent, of Seddon (q.v.), then a prominent miners' advocate. Button was for a few months a member of the Westland county council for Hokitika and for two years represented Totara (1870-72). He was mayor of Hokitika in 1869. In 1876 Button was elected one of the members of Parliament for Hokitika. He resigned in 1878 because he could not support Grey, as his constituency desired. In 1880 he removed to Christchurch, where he practised for two years, and in 1882 he joined the Auckland firm of Whitaker and Russell. In 1893 Button was elected to Parliament for the City of Auckland, but he was defeated in 1896. He was the first mayor of the borough of Birkenhead (1888) and held office for twelve years. In 1907 he was appointed temporary judge of the supreme court, in which capacity he acted for about a year.

Button was keenly interested in science, and over a period of 40 years lectured frequently on such subjects as voltaic electricity (1863) and chemistry. He was a staunch adherent of the Congregational Church, in which he filled many offices, and was also an elder of the Presbyterian Church at Hokitika and Christchurch. In Auckland he strongly supported the Y.M.C.A.

He married in 1862 a daughter of Henry Cowell, of Cullenswood, Tasmania. He died on 27 Dec 1920.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1876-78, 1893-96; Harrop, *Westland; Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p).

BUTTS, JOHN GEORGE (1840-91) was born at Hartest, Suffolk, the son of the Rev Drury Butts, and was brought up at Melplash, Bridport. In 1861 he entered the army as an ensign in the 2nd battalion of the Royal Irish Regiment, with which he served in Jersey and Isle of Wight. Coming to New Zealand with his regiment, he served through the Waikato and Wanganui campaigns. On his return to England he was promoted captain and transferred to the 1st battalion, with which he went to Malta and in 1874 to India. Being invalided from Mghanistan (1880), he retired the following year and came to New Zealand. In 1887 he was appointed adjutant of volunteers. He died on 5 Dec 1891.

*N.z. Times*, 7 Dec 1891.

## BUXTON

BUXTON, SEARBY (1832-1919) was born in Lancashire, came to New Zealand in 1865 and took up land at Springston, Canterbury, and later at Rangitata Island. Eventually he acquired the Clifton station in Totara valley, where he farmed until retiring to live in Ashburton. Buxton in 1887 contested the Rangitata seat in Parliament and defeated Rolleston. At the following election he stood for Geraldine and was defeated by A. E. G. Rhodes. He was quiet and unostentatious, and he seldom spoke in Parliament, but was a zealous religious and temperance worker.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1919; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932. Portrait: Parliament House.

## BUXTON

BUXTON, THOMAS (1863-1939), son of Searby Buxton, was born at Holbeach, Lincolnshire, and accompanied his father to New Zealand at the age of three. He was educated at the public schools, and was for some years in business in Temuka, Timaru and Christchurch. He was 10 years mayor of Temuka and represented it in Parliament 1908-14. A staunch Liberal, he was minister without portfolio in the Mackenzie Government (1912). Buxton organised the election campaign for the United party in 1928. He died on 28 May 1939.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Christchurch Star-Sun*, 29 May 1939.

# C

CADMAN, SIR ALFRED JEROME (1847-1905), a son of Jerome Cadman (q.v.), was born in Sydney and came to Auckland with his parents as an infant. He received his education in the parish schools of St Paul's and St Matthews and at Wesley College, after which he completed his term of apprenticeship as a carpenter under E. I. Matthews. As a young man he served in the volunteer forces during the war. At the age of 21 he entered the sawmilling business in Coromandel, and he did very well for many years. There he first entered public life as a member of the Tiki road board, of which he soon became chairman. He was chairman of the Coromandel county council for the first ten years. Cadman was elected to represent Coromandel in Parliament in 1881, and again in 1884 and 1887. In 1890 he was returned after a severe contest for a changed constituency under the name of Thames. Ballance invited him to join his cabinet (1891) as Commissioner of Stamp Duties, to which were presently added the portfolio of Native Affairs and in May 1892 that of Justice. As Native Minister he dealt sympathetically with the South Island tribes, and assisted to have a large area of land made available for their use. Owing to charges made against him by W. L. Rees in 1893 of using his position to benefit himself in connection with native lands, he challenged his accuser to resign and contest a seat. They both resigned on 20 Jul and, Rees choosing his own constituency of Auckland City, Cadman defeated him by 750 votes (4 Aug). He declined, however, to retain the administration of native affairs and assumed instead the portfolio of mines, to which was added later that of railways, then a difficult and exacting department.

In 1893 Cadman became member for Wai-kato and from 1896 for Ohinemuri. His health having been undermined by close application to the detail of his departments, he retired in 1899 and was called to the Legislative Council. He continued as a member of the cabinet without portfolio until Apr 1901, in which year he received the C.M.G. After his retirement he continued to take a keen interest in the development of ironsand on the west coast of the North Island, paying two visits to Great Britain to form a company. He was promoted K.C.M.G. in 1903. In Jul 1904 he was elected Speaker of the Council, but his health prevented him assuming the duties and he died a few months later (23 Mar 1905).

Cadman married (1886) Fanny, daughter of Joseph Bell (of Aylesbury, who arrived by the *King of Italy* and settled at Whangarei). She died 7 Apr 1892.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably 27 Jun 1905); *N.Z. Cycl.*, i (p); Reeves; *Coromandel County Diamond Jubilee*; *N.Z. Herald*, 15 Jul 1879; 24 Mar 1905. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

CADMAN, JEROME (1816-79). Of Shropshire parentage, Jerome Cadman emigrated to New South Wales in 1840, and came to New Zealand in 1848. He was identified with the early history of the Coromandel goldfields, where he owned a sawmill from 1855. Moving to Auckland, he carried on a successful business as builder and contractor and was responsible for much of the Queen Street wharf construction. He was a member of the Anglican Church, representing his parish of St Matthews in the diocesan synod until 1867, and after that Christ Church, Coromandel. He was also a member of the Auckland City Council (1854-55).

## CAFLER

In provincial politics Cadman was a member of the Constitutionalist Party and a supporter of Williamson, with whom he collaborated in initiating the 40-acre settlement scheme. He was a commissioner for the Drury railway. In the Provincial Council he represented the Northern Division (1859-67), and from 1870 until the abolition he represented Coromandel. Thereafter he spent a few years in Honolulu and California. Cadman died 13 Jul 1879.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Southern Cross*, 4 Oct 1865; *Thames Star*, 14 Jul 1879; *Thames Advertiser*, 28 Jul 1870; *Church Times*, Aug 1879.

CAFLER, EDOUARD EUGENE (1798-1893) was born at Douai, France, and as a young man serving in the army was present at Waterloo in the ambulance service. His father was much interested in beetroot sugar and was commissioned by Napoleon to inquire into its manufacture. Educated at the Ecole de Commerce, Edouard went into business and in 1832 left for Mauritius, where he spent a few years purchasing cargoes of sugar and disposing of them in the East and the Australian colonies.

Suffering an attack of yellow fever in China, he came to Bay of Islands to recruit (1840), and bought land in Kororareka. He traded successfully with the natives until Heke's war (1845), when he lost most of his property and left for Auckland. Heke returned his horse and some other property, but Caller sailed in the French corvette *Rhin* for Akaroa (1846), and aftenvards for France. In 1848 he was again in Mauritius, where he spent five years. Then he settled in Sydney, making trading voyages to Auckland and Kaipara. and eventually starting business in Whangarei. There he prospered for a few years but his premises being burned down, he sold out and retired to his farm at Sans Souci, where he died on 20 Feb 1893. He was twice married.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii {p}; Buick. *French at Akaroa*; *N.z. Herald*, 22 Feb 1893.

CALDER, WILLIAM HENDERSON was a member of the firm of Calder and Blacklock, which was established in Invercargill in the earliest years of the settlement. He took a prominent part in the affairs of his province. In 1861 he was elected to the Southland Provincial Council for Invercargill, which he represented for some years (1861-65, 1867-70). He was a mem-

## CAMERON

ber of the executive in 1864 and again in 1869, and was a strong supporter of the reunion of the province with Otago. When this was achieved he represented Invercargill in the Otago Provincial Council (1870). He was returned in the following year to represent the town in Parliament and sat till 1873 (when he retired). Calder could have been Superintendent if he had desired, but preferred to support William Wood.

*Southland P.C. Proc.*; Kinross, 26-28.

CALLAN, JOHN BARTHOLOMEW (1844-1928) was born in Dublin and educated there and at Melbourne University. He emigrated to Victoria in 1859 and entered the civil service there (1862). He studied at Melbourne University, where he graduated B.A. and LL.B., being admitted to the bar in 1876. He then resigned from the civil service and came to Dunedin, where he entered into practice (1877), being in partnership with J. M. Gallaway from 1883. In 1885 he raised and commanded the Irish Rifles. (Major 1887; lieut.-col. commanding Otago battalion 1895; retired 1896.) In 1889 he was elected to the licensing committee, of which he was chairman in 1890. He was president of the Otago Law Society and speaker of the Dunedin parliamentary union. Callan retired from practice in 1906 and in 1907 was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till 1914. He died on 20 Apr 1928. A son, JOHN BARTHOLOMEW CALLAN (1882-), became a judge of the Supreme Court.

*N.z.P.D.*, 3 Jul 1928; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Apr 1928.

CAMERON, ANDREW (1855-1925) was born in Paisley, Scotland, and came with his parents to Otago in the *City of Dunedin* (1863). Educated at the Port Chalmers High School, he gained a scholarship at the University, where he graduated B.A. in 1879 as a senior scholar in zoology.

In 1880 he went to Edinburgh to study for the Church and after being licensed by the presbytery there he took courses in theology at the Universities of Jena and Leipzig. He was in charge of the Andersons Bay Church from 1884 for more than 30 years, a wise and sagacious counsellor to his people; shrewd, progressive and conciliatory in the affairs of the

## CAMERON

parish and the church; always cordially cooperating in social movements and taking his part in the advancement of education in all its branches. He was one of the promoters of the Presbyterian social service association, which spread throughout the church. For many years he was a member, secretary or convenor of the Theological College and he was the first to advocate a residential college building. Knox College is a monument to his vision, persistency and faith. He was for some years a governor of the Otago Boys' and Girls' High Schools, and in 1894 he was appointed to the council of Otago University, of which he was elected vice-chancellor in 1910 and chancellor in 1912. From 1902 he was a member of the senate of the University of New Zealand. In 1919, the year in which he retired from the charge at Andersons Bay, he received the honorary LL.D. of Edinburgh University. Cameron married (1885) Mary, daughter of Peter McKellar (Invercargill). He died on 19 May 1925.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 20 May 1925 (p).

CAMERON, SIR DUNCAN ALEXANDER (1808-88) was the son of Sir J. Cameron and obtained his first commission in the 42nd Highlanders in 1825. (Lieutenant, 1826; colonel 1854.) On the outbreak of the Crimean war he was made a local major-general in Turkey, and he commanded the 42nd regiment at the Alma and the HigWand brigade at Balaklava. He was present at Kertch and the fall of Sebastopol.

Promoted major-general and appointed to command in Scotland (1860), he came in the following year to New Zealand to succeed General Pratt (q.v.). On landing here Cameron found that the Imperial troops had been withdrawn from Taranaki and were working on the construction of military roads from Auckland to W'aikato. He represented to the Governor (Grey) in 1862 that his force was insufficient for the forthcoming campaign. On hostilities being resumed over the Tataraimaka block he advanced with a force including the 57th and 70th regiments towards the enemy position at Katikara, which was carried on 4 Jun 1863.

On 12 Jul he initiated the advance from winter quarters at Pokeno and crossed the Mangatawhiri river, thereby opening the Waikato campaign. He personally led the 14th Regiment at Koheroa. After defeating the King forces at

## CAMERON

Meremere he was repulsed with severe loss at Rangiriri, where he ordered repeated assaults by military and naval detachments on an almost impregnable trench. On the following day (21 Jun) the defenders, under Tioriori, surrendered. The flag was hoisted at Ngaruawahia on 8 Dec and with a force of 3,000 men Cameron took possession of an important part of the Waikato, with headquarters at Tuhikaramea. The strong enemy position at Paterangi was cleverly outflanked by engagements at Rangiaowhia and Hairini. Cameron was not present when the operations against Orakau commenced, and he made an effort to induce the defenders to surrender but had to carry on the assault. After the fall of that place he conducted the assault on the enemy position at the Gate Pa. Though he had a force of 1,650 of all ranks, naval and military, the works were not destroyed by the artillery preparation and he was severely repulsed, with the loss of 31 killed and 80 wounded (29 Apr). He inflicted heavy losses on the enemy at Te Ranga (21 Jun), but the defenders withdrew under cover of night and escaped.

Early in 1865 Cameron opened the campaign to take possession of the Waitotara block. Advancing cautiously along the coast he left the strong position of Weraroa in his rear. Attacked in broad daylight at Nukumaru, he suffered some losses. Thereafter he kept away from the bush, but again the natives drove in his pickets. He moved northward with 2,300 of all arms, crossed the Waitotara river, and built redoubts to hold the country. Governor Grey pointed out the danger of leaving the Hauhau post at Weraroa in his rear, but Cameron protested he had not sufficient force to reduce it. After an acrimonious correspondence the Wanganui native contingent offered to assault the pa, Colonel Waddy moved 400 troops up in support and colonial troops outflanked the pa, which was abandoned and captured. Cameron incurred some losses on the rearguard of the enemy at Kakaramea and continued his march to the Waingongoro river. There he deemed it advisable to turn back owing to the difficulty of provisioning the force on an open coast. He accordingly stationed 750 troops at Patea and, having garrisoned the redoubts, left for Auckland.

Cameron disliked the field tactics of the Hau-

CAMPBELL

hau and disapproved of the war, which he believed was being deliberately waged for the benefit of the settlers. In Feb 1865 he resigned and returned to England, with the approval of the War Office and the thanks of the Legislative Council of New Zealand. He became lieutenant-general 1868; general 1874; governor of Sandhurst College 1868-75; G.C.B. 1873. He died on 7 Jun 1888.

*D.N.B.*; *App. H.R.*, 1861-66; Cowan; Rusden; Gudgeon (p); Rees; Gisborne; Gorton.

CAMPBELL, EWEN ALEXANDER (1843-1934) was born at Wanganui, the son of Captain Moses Campbell (q.v.). He was educated privately in Wanganui and as a young man served in the Wanganui Cavalry in the Maori war. He farmed successfully for many years at Brunswick, and took his part in local government as a member and chairman of the Waitotara county council and of the Wanganui harbour board, the chamber of commerce and the Farmers' Union. He was one of the founders and for 30 years chairman of directors of the Wanganui Meat Freezing Co. until its merger with the New Zealand Refrigerating Co. (1927). He was a director also of the New Zealand Farmers' Institute and of the Mauriceville Lime Co. Campbell was a keen racing owner and a successful breeder. He was for 30 years president of the Wanganui Jockey Club. He died on 18 Dec 1934.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Wanganui Herald*, 19 Dec 1934.

CAMPBELL, FRANCIS EASTWOOD (1823-1911) was a son of Lieut.-col. James Campbell (q.v.). He held a commission in the 23rd regiment, in which he was the youngest captain when he retired to come to Canterbury with his father (1851). After farming for three years he was appointed clerk of the House of Representatives, a position which he held until 1889. Campbell was at first clerk to both Houses of Parliament. His position was a difficult one since there were no precedents to guide him in recording the proceedings. He retired in 1889 and resided at Palmerston North, where he died on 27 Sep 1911.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.* and 27 Sep 1911. Portrait: Parliament House.

CAMPBELL, GEORGE FREDERICK COLIN (1858-1937) was born in Nelson, his father,

CAMPBELL

Alexander Le Grand Campbell, having arrived there in 1842. Educated at Nelson College (1869-74), he joined the Public Works department as a cadet (1874) and transferred to the Justice department in 1877 and to the newly formed Land Tax department in 1879. In 1890 he was transferred again to the Property Tax Department and in 1894 he became deputy-commissioner of taxes. Three years later he was also appointed deputy valuer-general and in 1904 Valuer-general. In 1908 he was appointed General Manager of the State Fire Insurance Department; in 1910 Commissioner of Taxes; in 1913 Secretary to the Treasury and Receiver General; and in 1922 Auditor-general. He held the last position until his death on 3 Mar 1937.

Campbell was a fine athlete. He was a representative Rugby player for Wellington, was president of the Athletic Football Club from its inception in 1878 and one of the founders of the New Zealand Rugby Union (1892) and president in 1893. He was a keen yachtsman and oarsman and president of the Star Boat Club and the New Zealand Rowing Association. As a volunteer he joined the Wellington Naval Artillery in the ranks, became captain (1894), lieutenant-colonel of garrison artillery (1902) and colonel on retirement. He was aide-de-camp to the Governor-general in 1914 and received the C.M.G. in 1919. Campbell married Miss A. Pike (Dunedin).

*Evening Post* and *The Dominion*, 4 Mar 1937.

CAMPBELL, JAMES (1783-1858) of the Campbells of Skerrington, Ayrshire, was an officer of the 45th and 50th Regiments, with which he served in the Peninsular War. He was on the staff of Sir Thomas Picton's division, being brigademajor of the right brigade. Campbell was present at the battles of Vimiera, Talavera, Busaco, Fuentes d'Onoro, Badajoz, Toledo and Salamanca and was promoted major and lieutenant-colonel, receiving the medal with 14 clasps. He served also at Monte Video and Buenos Ayres (under Whitelock), and in Ceylon and North America.

After retiring from the army Campbell experienced many misfortunes until 1850, when he became interested in the Canterbury Association and invested in land. On 25 May he was elected a member of the committee of the Society of Canterbury Colonists (with Tancred,

CAMPBELL

Sewell and Brittan). He came to New Zealand in the *London* (arriving at Auckland in Feb 1851). A recommendation from the British government to Sir George Grey led to Campbell's being appointed on 27 Sep a commissioner of claims in New Munster and afterwards commissioner of crown lands and government agent in Canterbury and senior justice of the peace. In this capacity he was called on to investigate

CAMPBELL, SIR JOHN LOGAN. For this memoir, inadvertently omitted from its correct alphabetical position, see Volume ii, Addenda.

post, he contested the superintendency of Canterbury against Fitzgerald, in spite of the returning officer's warning that he was not qualified by being on the electoral roll. The election resulted: Fitzgerald 135 votes; Campbell 94. Tancred 89. A few months later Campbell was superseded and thereafter he persistently petitioned for compensation for loss of office. In his statement (dated 1 Nov 1856) he says that he was opposed to provincialism and was a consistent advocate of a strong central government.

He died on 7 Jul 1858. (See FRANCIS EDWARD CAMPBELL.)

War Office records; memorial to Governor Browne (in Hocken Library); *App. H.R.*, 1856; *Cant. O.N.*; Andersen; Acland; Woodhouse; Hocken; Hempleman; Godley, *Letters*; Deans; *Lyttelton Times*, 18 Oct 1851; 1853 (12 Feb-5 Mar, 21 Apr, 11, 18 Jun, 2, 1623 Jul); 7 Jul 1858.

CAMPBELL, JAMES PALMER (1855-1926) was born in Helensburgh, Scotland, and educated by his father and at the Academy there, afterwards qualifying as an accountant. He arrived in Nelson in 1868 and was in business in Auckland (1869) and farming in Waikato and Thames (1870). At Cambridge he was a contractor for supplies to Armed Constabulary parties making roads and the railway from Mercer. In 1875, with his brother Hugh, he took up land at Waihou. He was secretary to the Patetere Land and Settlement Co. and later joined Whitaker and Russell in Cambridge. He was articled to F. A. Whitaker, admitted to the bar (1883) and became a partner. In 1885 he joined Russell in Auckland, and in 1893 he opened a branch of the firm at Wellington, where he became president of the Law Society. About 1902 he returned to Auckland, retiring from practice in 1920.

CAMPBELL

Campbell contested the Waikato seat against J. B. Whyte (1879). He was called to the Legislative Council in 1921 and died on 27 Feb 1926. Campbell served in the militia on patrol duty in his early days, and was a sergeant in the Cambridge Volunteer Cavalry (1873). He was chairman of the Cambridge town board and Piako county council, and later president of the Auckland Reform League and Club. He

— — — — — C. Barstow (q.v.).  
Portrait: *Who's Who NZ.*, 1924; Parliament

CAMPBELL, MAURICE (1815-83) came to New Zealand in the *Thomas Harrison* in 1842 to settle in Nelson. He was keenly interested in education and on board the ship he ran a school for the children and classes for the adults. On arriving in Nelson he was struck by the need for schools and forthwith opened one (in May 1842). The committee which was formed to control this institution included William Fox, J. P. Robinson and T. J. Thompson (q.v.). The Nelson School society was formed to provide for the education of children of all classes and denominations. Campbell was the main-spring of the Society throughout. He opened most of the schools himself, and exercised personal supervision throughout. At one time he had day or Sunday schools (and in some cases

both) in Stoke, Richmond, Appleby, River Terrace, Riwaka, Motupipi, Waimea West, Spring Grove, Wakefield, Wakapuaka and the town of Nelson. He was one of the first to open a Sunday school in Nelson, and he did much to place the Sunday schools of the province on a sound footing. The Society was for many years an unofficial education board for the province, providing primary education for the children of the town and district. In 1856 the Nelson Provincial Council passed an education ordinance and it then recorded its thanks to the Society for the great benefits that had accrued to the Province from the zeal and the disinterested exertions of the Society animated as it has constantly been by Mr. Campbell's never-ceasing devotion to the advancement of the cause. In 13 years, 2,074 pupils had been educated. The esteem in which Campbell was held was evidenced by his being repeatedly elected to the education board for 27 years.

Campbell was a man of wide human sym-

CAMPBELL

hau and disapproved of the war, which he believed was being deliberately waged for the benefit of the settlers. In Feb 1865 he resigned and returned to England, with the approval of the War Office and the thanks of the Legislative Council of New Zealand. He became a lieutenant-general 1868; general 1874; governor of Sanahurst College 1868-75; G.C.B. 1873. He died on 7 Jun 1888.

*D.N.B.*, *App. H.R.*, 1861-66; Cowan; Rusden; Gudgeon (p); Rees; Gisborne; Gorton.

CAMPBELL, EWEN ALEXANDER (1843-1934) was born at Wanganui, the son of Captain Moses Campbell (q.v.). He was educated privately in Wanganui and as a young man served in the Wanganui Cavalry in the Maori war. He farmed successfully for many years at Brunswick, and took his part in local government as a member and chairman of the Waitotara county council and of the Wanganui harbour board, the chamber of commerce and the Farmers' Union. He was one of the founders and for 30 years chairman of directors of the Wanganui Meat Freezing Co. until its merger with the New Zealand Refrigerating Co. (1927). He was a director also of the New Zealand Farmers' Institute and of the Mauriceville Lime Co. Campbell was a keen racing owner and a successful breeder. He was for 30 years president of the Wanganui Jockey Club. He died on 18 Dec 1934.

*Cycl. NZ.*, i (p); *Wanganui Herald*, 19 Dec 1934.

CAMPBELL, FRANCIS EASTWOOD (1823-1911) was a son of Lieut.-col. James Campbell (q.v.). He held a commission in the 23rd regiment, in which he was the youngest captain when he retired to come to Canterbury with his father (1851). After farming for three years he was appointed clerk of the House of Representatives, a position which he held until 1889. Campbell was at first clerk to both Houses of Parliament. His position was a difficult one since there were no precedents to guide him in recording the proceedings. He retired in 1889 and resided at Palmerston North, where he died on 27 Sep 1911.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.* and 27 Sep 1911. Portrait; Parliament House.

CAMPBELL, GEORGE FREDERICK COLIN (1858-1937) was born in Nelson, his father,

CAMPBELL

Alexander Le Grand Camp'bell, having arrived there in 1842. Educated at Nelson College (1869-74), he joined the Public Works department as a cadet (1874) and transferred to the War Office in 1877 and to the newly formed Legislative Council in 1879. In 1890 he was appointed Tax

Departmental Commissioner of Taxes; also appointed deputy Valuer-General in 1904. In 1908 he was appointed General Manager of the State Fire Insurance Department; in 1910 Commissioner of Taxes; in 1913 Secretary to the Treasury and Receiver-General; and in 1922 Auditor-general. He held the last position until his death on 3 Mar 1937.

Campbell was a fine athlete. He was a representative Rugby player for Wellington, was president of the Athletic Football Club from its inception in 1878 and one of the founders of the New Zealand Rugby Union (1892) and president in 1893. He was a keen yachtsman and oarsman and president of the Star Boating Club and the New Zealand Rowing Association. As a volunteer he joined the Wellington Naval Artillery in the ranks, became captain (1894), lieut.-colonel of garrison artillery (1902) and colonel on retirement. He was aide-de-camp to the Governor-general in 1914 and received the C.M.G. in 1919. Campbell married Miss A. Pike (Dunedin).

*Evening Post* and *The Dominion*, 4 Mar 1937.

CAMPBELL, JAMES (1783-1858) of the Campbells of Skerrington, Ayrshire, was an officer of the 45th and 50th Regiments, with which he served in the Peninsular War. He was on the staff of Sir Thomas Picton's division, being brigademajor of the right brigade. Campbell was present at the battles of Vimiera, Talavera, Busaco, Fuentes d'Onoro, Badajoz, Toledo and Salamanca and was promoted major and lieutenant-colonel, receiving the medal with 14 clasps. He served also at Monte Video and Buenos Ayres (under Whitelock), and in Ceylon and North America.

After retiring from the army Campbell experienced many misfortunes until 1850, when he became interested in the Canterbury Association and invested in land. On 25 May he was elected a member of the committee of the Society of Canterbury Colonists (with Tancred,

CAMPBELL

Sewell and Brittan). He came to New Zealand in the *London* (arriving at Auckland in Feb 1851). A recommendation from the British government to Sir George Grey led to Campbell's being appointed on 27 Sep a commissioner of claims in New Munster and afterwards commissioner of crown lands and government agent in Canterbury and senior justice of the peace. In this capacity he was called on to investigate all land claims and adjudicate upon them. He came into conflict with the settlers and protests were made to Grey against his administration.

In Jul 1853, though still holding his official post, he contested the superintendency of Canterbury against Fitzgerald, in spite of the returning officer's warning that he was not qualified by being on the electoral roll. The election resulted; Fitzgerald 135 votes; Campbell 94, Tancred 89. A few months later Campbell was superseded and thereafter he persistently petitioned for compensation for loss of office. In his statement (dated 1 Nov 1856) he says that he was opposed to provincialism and was a consistent advocate of a strong central government.

He died on 7 Jul 1858. (See FRANCIS EDWARD CAMPBELL.)

War Office records; memorial to Governor Browne (in Hocken Library); *App. H.R.*, 1856; *Cant. O.N.*, Andersen; Acland; Woodhouse; Hocken; Hempleman; Godley, *Letters*; Deans; *Lyttelton Times*, 18 Oct 1851; 1853 (12 Feb-5 Mar, 21 Apr, II, 18 Jun, 2, 16 23 Jul); 7 Jul 1858.

CAMPBELL, JAMES PALMER (1855-1926) was born in Helensburgh, Scotland, and educated by his father and at the Academy there, afterwards qualifying as an accountant. He arrived in Nelson in 1868 and was in business in Auckland (1869) and farming in Waikato and Thames (1870). At Cambridge he was a contractor for supplies to Armed Constabulary parties making roads and the railway from Mercer. In 1875, with his brother Hugh, he took up land at Waihou. He was secretary to the Patetere Land and Settlement Co. and later joined Whitaker and Russell in Cambridge. He was articled to F. A. Whitaker, admitted to the bar (1883) and became a partner. In 1885 he joined Russell in Auckland, and in 1893 he opened a branch of the firm at Wellington, where he became president of the Law Society. About 1902 he returned to Auckland, retiring from practice in 1920.

CAMPBELL

Campbell contested the Waikato seat against J. B. Whyte (1879). He was called to the Legislative Council in 1921 and died on 27 Feb 1926. Campbell served in the militia on patrol duty in his early days, and was a sergeant in the Cambridge Volunteer Cavalry (1873). He was chairman of the Cambridge town board and Piako county council, and later president of the Auckland Reform League and Club. He married a daughter of R. C. Barstow (q.v.).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Jun 1926; *Who's Who NZ.*, 1924; *NZ Herald*, 1 Mar 1926. Portrait: Parliament House.

CAMPBELL, MATTHEW (1815-83) came to New Zealand in the *Thomas Harrison* in 1842 to settle in Nelson. He was keenly interested in education and on board the ship he ran a school for the children and classes for the adults. On arriving in Nelson he was struck by the need for schools and forthwith opened one (in May 1842). The committee which was formed to control this institution included William Fox, J. P. Robinson and T. J. Thompson (q.v.). The Nelson School society was formed to provide for the education of children of all classes and denominations. Campbell was the main-spring of the Society throughout. He opened most of the schools himself, and exercised personal supervision throughout. At one time he had day or Sunday schools (and in some cases both) in Stoke, Richmond, Appleby, River Terrace, Riwaka, Motupipi, Waimea West, Spring Grove, Wakefield, Wakapuaka and the town of Nelson. He was one of the first to open a Sunday school in Nelson, and he did much to place the Sunday schools of the province on a sound footing. The Society was for many years an unofficial education board for the province, providing primary education for the children of the town and district. In 1856 the Nelson Provincial Council passed an education ordinance and it then recorded its thanks to the Society for the great benefits that had accrued to the Province from the zeal and the disinterested exertions of the Society' animated as it has constantly been by Mr. Campbell's never-ceasing devotion to the advancement of the cause.' In 13 years, 2,074 pupils had been educated. The esteem in which Campbell was held was evidenced by his being repeatedly elected to the education board for 27 years.

Campbell was a man of wide human sym-

## CAMPBELL

pathies, discreet and unassuming in his private life, liberal and tolerant. He worked on terms of complete amity with all religious denominations and with a single view to advancing the interests of both secular and religious education amongst the children of the province. His death occurred on 30 May 1883.

Broad; *The Colonist*, 1 Jun 1883; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 31 May 1883; 11 Dec 1926 (p).

CAMPBELL, MOSES (1787-1862) was a son of John Campbell, of Auch, Perthshire. He was a captain in the 72nd Highlanders and saw service at the Cape and elsewhere. He came to Port Nicholson with his wife (Jessie Cameron of Glen Nevis) and their family in the *Blenheim* (1841) and in Nov proceeded in the *Clydeside* to settle in Wanganui. Fifty head of cattle were driven overland. Campbell's farm, Wiritoa, between the south road and the sea, is still in the hands of his family.

In Dec 1841 Campbell was gazetted a magistrate. He represented Wanganui and Rangitikei in the Wellington Provincial Council (1857-61). A strong supporter of the Presbyterian Church, he was a member of the conference (in 1861) on the union of the different Presbyterian churches of New Zealand. He died on 20 Sep 1862. (See EWEN A. CAMPBELL.)

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; N.Z.C., 60; L. J. B. Chapple: Woon; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 25 Sep 1862.

CAMPBELL, ROBERT (1843-89) was the son of Robert Campbell, of Buscot Park, Berkshire, England, and was educated at Eton College. His father having emigrated to Australia on the opening of the diggings, Campbell followed after leaving school and in the early sixties he landed with his brother at Auckland and made his way southward to Otago, inspecting land on behalf of his father. In 1866 they purchased Benmore, South Canterbury, on behalf of R. Campbell and Sons. Amongst other stations was Otekaike, on the Waitaki river, where Campbell in 1876 made his home. He married (1868) Emma Josephine (d. 17 Apr 1890), a daughter of the Hon T. Hawdon (q.v.).

Campbell represented Oamaru in Parliament (1866-69), being a whip for the Stafford government. Having resigned in 1869, he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member from 1870 till his death (9 Dec

## CAPLES

1889). He was not prominent in parliament or public life, but rendered considerable service to North Otago as first chairman of the Waitaki county council (from which he resigned in 1881) and a member of the Oamaru harbour board. He was on the New Zealand University Senate (1871-79). Campbell was for a while a figure on the turf, his most successful horse being Sir Modred.

*Parltry Record; Col. Gent; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 May 1876, 11 Dec 1889.

CAMPBELL, THOMAS HEWITT (1830-63), M.A. Oxford, was headmaster of the Wolverhampton Grammar School before being selected as rector of the Otago Boys' High School. He arrived at Port Chalmers by the *Matoaka* and was drowned in an accident to the harbour steamer on the following day (4 Jul 1863).

*Otago B.H.S. List*; Hocken, *Otago; Otago Daily Times*, 3 Aug 1933 (P).

CANNING, JOHN DAVIS (1822-84) was born at Marlborough, Wiltshire, educated at Marlborough College and came to New Zealand in the *Cornwall* in 1851. He was first employed by John Harding at Mount Vernon, Hawkes Bay, and then took up 2,000 acres at Porangahau, where he established his Oakburne station, afterwards increased by native leases to 40,000 acres. Canning introduced the Cotswold sheep into Hawkes Bay and always devoted his attention to the best strains of all stock. He was a member of the Hawkes Bay Agricultural and Pastoral society in 1858. He represented Porangahau in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1875-76). He died in 1884.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 16 Oct 1925.

CANTRELL, RICHARD SEAWARD (1825-72) was born in England and arrived in New Zealand in 1858. He first contested a parliamentary seat in 1866, when he was defeated by Artlm] Burns for Caversham. In 1871 he was elected to represent that electorate in both Parliament and Provincial Council. A year later ill-health compelled him to resign from both bodies, and he died on 11 Aug 1872.

*Parltry Record; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Aug 1872.

CAPLES, PATRICK QUIRK (1830-1904) came to New Zealand in the early days of the gold

## CARGILL

diggings and had considerable success as a prospector in Otago. In Jan 1863 Caples started alone from Queenstown for the West Coast. Crossing the mountains at the head of the Dart river, he descended to a river he called the Hollyford, but was repulsed by want of food. On a second attempt he crossed near the head of the Greenstone river and followed the Hollyford down to Martin's Bay, which he reached on 10 Mar. He found only traces of gold but made a very accurate map of the country. His report was confirmed by Dr Hector, who visited the West Coast shortly afterwards.

Caples was elected a member of the Otago mining board (1862). Moving to Westland, he discovered the reefs at Point Reefton, Moonlight and Capleston, and erected the first quartz battery on the coast. He died on 27 Nov 1904.

Pyke; Press Association, 28 Nov 1904; *Otago Witness*, 18 Nov 1930.

CARGILL, EDWARD BOWES (1823-1903), the seventh son of W. Cargill, was born at Edinburgh, and received his education in Edinburgh, and afterwards (when his father moved to the east of England) at the Grammar School at Norwich and at Perone's School. At the age of 14 he was apprenticed to the sea in the mercantile marine. There he spent six years, visiting Australia and the Far East. In 1844, having attained his majority, he settled down at Colombo (Ceylon) in the service of the Bank of Western India (afterwards the Oriental Bank). From this he moved into a mercantile office, and eventually went into business as Dowdall, Cargill and Co. Later they took into partnership Andrew Nicol, brother of the founder of the Bombay firm of W. Nicol and Co., and they continued to trade under the name of Nicols, Cargill and Co.

Cargill moved to Melbourne where he was in business (1855-57) as Eastern importers. In 1858 he settled in Dunedin. For the first two years after landing he was in partnership with John Jones as Jones, Cargill, and Co., merchants, shipping agents and shipowners. This was dissolved in 1861, and Cargill was then joined by his brother John. On the discovery of gold their business expanded rapidly, though they had the misfortune to be burned out in Dec 1861, and again in Feb 1864. In 1859 they purchased the paddle steamer *Geelong*, which

## CARGILL

was the first steamer to ply, under a provincial contract, between Lyttelton, Dunedin and Invercargill. The *City of Dunedin*, specially built for the firm, was delivered in 1863, after the dissolution of the partnership, but Cargill retained his interest in her. Jones and Cargill together projected the Otago Steam Navigation Co. for which ships were built on the Clyde to run in the intercolonial trade. The first of these, the *Scotia*, arrived in Mar 1864, but on her first voyage to Melbourne ran ashore near the Bluff. The *Albion* arrived in the same year and was sold for service in the East. The *City of Dunedin* sank in Jun 1865 and the *Geelong* near Whangape in 1878. The firm of Cargill and Co. was the first to import sugar direct from Mauritius (1862), and imported some of the earliest tea shipments direct from China. They were agents for the Scottish firm of Patrick Henderson and Co., whose ships carried emigrants under the Otago provincial government scheme. For some time G. McLean (q.v.) was in the firm (then Cargill and McLean) and on his retirement W. C. Gibbs came in (Cargill, Gibbs and Co.). In 1881 the business was purchased by the British and New Zealand Mortgage and Agency Co. (formed for this purpose by Cargill, Tolmie, Gibbs, Joachim and others). The company, which had investments in station lands in Otago, suffered heavily in the slump of the eighties, and was wound up in 1889. Cargill lost severely, and he was disappointed also in the meat-preserving works at Green Island, in which he had invested much money. Discouraged by these misfortunes, he retired from business. He was a director of the New Zealand Refrigerating Co., the Mosgiel Woollen Co., the Union Steamship Co. (on the first board), the Trustees, Estate and Agency Co., the Westport Coal Co., and the old City and Suburban Tramway Co., and a founder of the National Insurance Co. and the Colonial Bank (of which he was for two years president).

In the first Otago Provincial Council Cargill represented Western District (1862-63). In the next Council (1863) he sat for Dunedin and was for a month or so provincial secretary; but he was defeated at the general election in 1867. He again successfully contested the seat in 1871, and was again in the executive, but was defeated in 1873. In the Council he introduced resolutions aiming at the free selection

## CARGILL

of land in the interior of the province, but they were withdrawn in favour of another scheme. In Parliament Cargill represented Bruce (1862-65), retiring at the general election. He stood for Dunedin Central in 1887, but was defeated by Fitchett. He was a member of the old Dunedin town board, of the Otago harbour board and of the city school committee. In 1870-71 he was a member of the City Council. When the jubilee of the province was about to be celebrated Cargill, as a son of the first Superintendent, was "mayor of Dunedin (1897-98). Education always had in him a strong supporter. He was a member of the High School board of governors and of the council of Otago University (1869-1903), and a vice-chancellor (1894-1903). Cargill was a strong supporter of Knox Church, of which he was an elder, and the last survivor of the first kirk session.

Cargill was unwittingly the originator of the term 'Old Identity.' Having in public utterance exhorted the original settlers to stand together to preserve their identity, he was made the butt of a joke by Thatcher, the comedian, who represented him as 'an Old Identity.' Cargill married (1854) Dorothy (d. 1889), daughter of Dr Nesham, of Newcastle-on-Tyne. His death occurred on 9 Aug 1903.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; NZP.D.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv(p); Ross; McIndoe; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 May 1872, 10 Aug 1903, 17 May 1930 (P). Portrait: Parliament House.

CARGILL, JOHN (1821-98) was a son of W. W. Cargill (q.v.). As a young man he served in the Royal Navy. He was for some years in the West Indies in the sloop *Ringdove* and the frigate *Seringapatam*. Retiring in 1840, he came to Tasmania (1841) and Port Philip, cruised in the Pacific islands and eventually settled in Ceylon as a coffee planter. In 1846 he returned to England to assist his father in the Otago scheme, and they came out together in the *John Wickliffe* (1847).

Cargill took up a run on the coast at Tokomairiro, and later at Mt Stuart (with his station at Meadowbank). In 1861 (in partnership with his son-in-law, E. B. Anderson) he took the Teviot run, where they soon had a fine flock of 55,000 well-bred merino sheep. They had also a large property at Gladfield, in south Otago. Losses resulting from the rabbits were

## CARGILL

disastrous. Cargill was elected M.H.R. for the country district (1853) and represented it to 1858. In 1866 he was elected for Bruce, which he represented to 1870. In the Provincial Council he represented Tokomairiro (1855-58) and North harbour (1863-67). Keenly interested in volunteering, he held a commission as ensign in the Edinburgh corps and took a course at the musketry school at Hythe (where he qualified as a first-class marksman). He was colonel in command of the Otago volunteers and militia.

Cargill married first the eldest daughter of John Jones. After her death (1868) he married a daughter of Dr Featherston. In 1882 he left for England and five years later settled in British Columbia, where he died on 2 Jan 1898.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Otago Daily Times*, 9 Feb 1898.

CARGILL, WILLIAM WALTER (1784-1860) was born in Edinburgh and was descended from the Scottish Covenanter Donald Cargill, who was beheaded in 1681. His father was James Cargill, a writer to the signet, and the boy had a Scots tutor, Thomas Chalmers, who was later a famous divine. He also attended the Edinburgh High School.

At the age of 18 Cargill received an ensigncy in the 84th Foot, and went to Calcutta to join his regiment. At the battle of Assaye (Sep 1803) the casualties suffered by the 74th Highlanders provided promotion, and Cargill was appointed a lieutenant in that regiment. After spending four years in India he returned to England, and in 1810 the regiment went to the Peninsula, where he served for four years. Severely wounded at Busaco, he was invalided to England, but soon returned to his regiment as captain and fought through to the concluding victory at Toulouse. In 1813 he married at Oporto, Mary Ann, daughter of Lieutenant Yates, R.N. After the peace of 1814 the regiment returned to Ireland and eventually to Scotland, and in 1820 Cargill retired, with the Peninsula medal and seven clasps.

Cargill now thought of going abroad, but the family strongly opposed the idea, and he went into business in Edinburgh as a wine merchant. In 1834 he joined the service of the Yorkshire District Bank, in charge of one of its branches. In 1836 he became general manager for the East of England, with headquarters at Norwich. In 1841 he resigned and joined the board of

## CARGILL

the Oriental Banking Corporation in London. His attention was attracted by the correspondence of George Rennie in the *Colonial Gazette* in 1842 regarding the proposed Scots settlement in New Zealand. He got into touch with Rennie and for a year or two worked in close conjunction with him to further the scheme of a Free Church colony. The New Zealand Company favoured the project, and the Assembly of the Free Church of Scotland adopted it. When Cargill paid for two sections in New Zealand (Jul 1843) he gave his address as 'Bombay, India.' Troubles arose at both ends, and the Otago scheme was suspended for about four years.

When eventually the pioneers sailed in the *John Wickliffe*, with Cargill as their leader, he was already 64 years of age, with a military career of 17 years completed fully a generation earlier. But he had the ripe, shrewd sagacity which a body of Scots wanted in their leader. 'I almost believe,' said Sir George Grey some time later, 'that a more wise and sagacious man than Captain Cargill never existed.' In spite of his Nonconformist tradition and upbringing, Cargill was not more narrow than a man of nearly three score and ten years must necessarily be. If he opposed innovations that were wisely liberal, he also resisted some which were too liberal for the good of posterity. When the constitution of 1852 came into force (1853) Cargill waited anxiously for weeks and months after the other provinces lest his Council should take any step in the appropriation of moneys that was not fully justified by the law. He was elected Superintendent without opposition; and re-elected without opposition for a new term (1855-60). For part of the time he was also a member of Parliament, representing the Dunedin Country District (1855:60). Tried by the opposition of a small but able party within the province, Cargill showed a tendency to obduracy with his Council, which was obviously the result of advancing years. He steadfastly contended for his dignity and his prerogative and chafed sorely in the harness of responsible government, under which all his utterances to the Council had to be composed or approved by his executive before he delivered them. Accused of nepotism in circumstances which left him little option but to promote some of his influential and brainy sons-in-law, he said (Oct

## CARKEEK

1857): 'This I say because of the untruthful ribaldries that are on this occasion being circulated. Nepotism and family clique are words that must indeed be a farce, in the face of the Otago public, whose Superintendent and sons-in-law have been so openly opposed to each other in politics, and that with perfect independence on either side. Truly there never has been, and on my part never shall be, a vestige of favour or affection in any such matters. But neither am I to be scared from public duty by any such missiles as I have referred to. I would have all to know that I am in no degree to be swayed from doing what I have a right to do - to put the right man into the right place - whether that man might happen to be my son-in-law or anyone else.' A greater insult to the veteran was the suggestion that he was old. 'This at least is the truth,' he admitted in a message to the council, 'and to the curious in such matters I shall give a gauge not easily forgotten. Your Superintendent is just 50 days older than Lord Palmerston, and can look back upon half a century when, as a humble sub, he had occasion to correspond with his lordship, then Secretary at War. Subsequent experience must have taught him something of public matters, but he will only notice that the last 14 years have been extremely devoted to the planting and progression of this colony, in whose advancing prosperity he greatly rejoices, and I should therefore lament its passing under the slashing regime of a young assistant-young, at least, in experience - and whose first vaunted steps would be a breach of the law.'

Cargill held office for two years longer. He handed over the superintendency to Macandrew on 3 Jan 1860, and several months later resigned his seat in Parliament. He died on 6 Aug 1860 and his widow on 26 Oct 1871. (See E. B. CARGILL, JOHN CARGILL and WILLIAM H. CUTIEN.) G.H.S.

N.Z.C. (Otago Association); *Otago Witness*, Mar 1898 (p); *Otago P.C. Proc.*; Arnold; Cox; Reeves; Hocken, *Otago*; Gisborne; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Jan 1930 (P).

CARKEEK, ARTHUR WAKEFIELD (1843-97), a son of Stephen Carkeek (q.v.). was born at Nelson, educated and trained as a surveyor, serving for many years on the staff of the provincial government. He was a keen oarsman and cricketer. In the later stages of the Maori

## CARKEEK

war Carkeek was in the fighting at Tokaanu, Pourere and Taupo (1869). In Feb 1870, when Te Kooti attacked Ohinemutu, he volunteered to carry a message to Colonel McDonnell at Tapapa, a distance of thirty miles. He was awarded the New Zealand Cross. Carkeek lived after his retirement at Otaki. He died on 24 May 1897.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Gudgeon; *Feilding Star*, 27 May 1897.

CARKEEK, STEPHEN (1815-78) was born at Swansea, Wales, educated there and went to sea. He arrived in New South Wales as first officer of a convict ship and took service under the government in command of a revenue cutter. He came to New Zealand in 1840 on loan to the administration, was appointed landing walter at Russell and was employed for some time with the cutter *Ranger* in the survey of Waitemata harbour. After completing this duty he was appointed collector of customs at Nelson, where in 1843 he was harbourmaster and member of the board of management. In 1849 he was promoted to Wellington as collector. He was nominated to the Legislative Council (19 May 1851) and attended the following session (1852), the Council lapsing with the introduction of the new constitution. Carkeek stood for Wellington City at the Parliamentary elections of 1855. In 1858 he was appointed first inspector of customs for New Zealand, and in 1865 he opened the customs at Chatham islands.

Carkeek was a keen astronomer and the establishment of the time-ball in Wellington for the convenience of shipping was due to him. When he retired from the service (1866), he went to live in Featherston, where he established a private observatory. Carkeek married Miss Piotti (d. 1893). His death occurred in 1878.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *N.Z. Spectator*, Oct-Nov 1855; *Wellington Independent*, 23 Jun 1864, 18 Apr 1868.

CARLETON, HUGH FRANCIS (1810-90) was the eldest son of Francis Carleton, of Claremore, county Tipperary, and Greenlands, county Cork. Though born in England, he was of Irish descent. Educated at Eton (under Dr Keate), he was admitted to Trinity College, Cambridge, in 1828. With the promise of high classical distinction, but his studies were interrupted by rustication as the result of what he called 'an affair of honour with the long carpenter,' arising

## CARLETON

out of a town-and-gown disturbance. He pulled No. 4 in the Privateer for Trinity in 1831, when it bumped Lady Margaret (Bishop Selwyn pulling No 7), which had been head of the river for three terms.

Proceeding to London, Carleton studied in the Middle Temple under Sir John Bailey, but took a dislike to law and was never called. Instead he went to Italy to study art and spent the greater part of three years in travelling. He came to Auckland in 1845, and was employed for a while by Brown and Campbell. Then he engaged in commercial speculations, notably the importation of stock from Australia, for which he chartered a small vessel, the *Orwell*. She made three unprofitable voyages, and ended her career by being cast away on the Orwell Bank at Manukau (Mar 1848). At intervals Carleton took part in editing the *New Zealander*, which advocated the rights of the pre-emption land claimants and FitzRoy's grantees. Then he established on his own account (Apr 1848) the *Anglo-Maori Warder*, in opposition to the government of the day. In spite of Carleton's ignorance of business, it paid its way for about six months, and then closed down. Carleton next turned his attention in a desultory manner towards the South Seas, and saw much of the islands of Fiji. William Brown having decided to despatch the schooner *Noble* to San Francisco, agreed to take Carleton with him as a cabin passenger. When Carleton was ashore at Pitcairn island the vessel was blown off and he spent three weeks on the island awaiting a chance to leave. During this time, it is said, he amused himself teaching the natives part singing. He was picked up by the *Colonist* (Capt. Marshall, from whom he had previously chartered the *Haidee*), and reached San Francisco some time ahead of the *Noble* but in some difficulty owing to the absence of his property.

Returning to New Zealand in time for the first election of the General Assembly, Carleton was elected member for Bay of Islands, which he represented continuously from 1853 to 1870, when he was regarded as 'the father of the House.' He took a prominent part in the controversy regarding responsible government, and acquired a reputation as a polished and high cultured speaker, though inclined to be ponderous and dogmatic. A marked attitude of superiority, and a facility in several

## CARLETON

languages, with which he freely adorned his speeches, militated against his political popularity. Responsible government at that stage he considered a mistake. Carleton did not enter the first Auckland Provincial Council, but at the general election in Oct 1855 he was returned for Bay of Islands. Here, too, he took a prominent part in the early struggles, exciting Opposition often by his obvious attainments. He was provincial secretary for most of the year 1856 (under the Superintendency of Campbell) and again (1864-66) under Graham and Whitaker. He represented Bay of Islands (1855-57), the City of Auckland (1859-61), Newton (1861-65) and Bay of Islands again (1865-75). As early as 1858 he supported the new provinces bill in the hope of destroying the provincial system by subdivision. Having taken his part in defeating the Sewell government in 1856, Carleton supported Fox for the sake of his waste lands policy; then supported Stafford and voted for the compact. In 1856 he took charge (as editor) of the *Southern Cross*, to which he had long been a contributor. He had strong views against the Waitara war, but supported Stafford because he felt himself pledged to a general support. Next year he gave his casting vote to put the government out. He agitated for direct purchase of native lands, thus destroying the government monopoly.

Having paid a visit to England, from which he returned in 1864, Carleton found Stafford in office and supported him. For a period of 14 years (1856-70) he acted as chairman of committees in the House. At the general election in 1870 he was defeated for Bay of Islands by John McLeod, the lessee of the coalmines, and this practically closed his political career. He was nominated again in 1878 for the Eden seat, which he could have won if he had pledged himself to support Grey, but he answered that 'if he were to follow any man blindfolded it was not worth having the seat.' A scholarly man even amongst many fine classical scholars in the early Parliaments of New Zealand, Carleton nevertheless had limitations of manner which were politically disastrous. He knew nothing of compromise, and was often considered 'crochety' in his fine distinctions and punctilio. His speeches, though at times they struck a high note of oratory and sentiment, often bored the House. Nor was he a stranger

## CARNELL

to invective, as witness his scathing indictment (during the debates on responsible government) of Edward Gibbon Wakefield's sense of honour.

On retiring from politics Carleton lived quietly at his home at Pakaraka, Bay of Islands, only emerging to maintain his steady interest in higher education. As early as 1851 he had urged the establishment in each province of a secular university supported by the state. In 1871 he was elected vice-chancellor of the University of New Zealand, a position which he occupied until his departure for England in 1880, and was one of the leaders of the successful struggle against the foundation of a single university institution in Otago. He represented the university at the tercentenary celebrations of the University of Edinburgh (1884). Carleton spent the last ten years of his life in England, and when he died on 14 Jul 1890, he had been almost forgotten in the Colony. He married on 30 Nov 1859 Lydia Jane (1835-91), daughter of Archdeacon Henry Williams (q.v.).

Carleton's life of Archdeacon Henry Williams is an important, though controversial, contribution to the early history of New Zealand. He published several controversial pamphlets.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, pass.; *Registry of Cambridge University*; Thomson; Rusden; Beaglehole; P. A. Carleton, *Memorials of the Carletons*, 1869; *Otago Guardian*, 8 Oct 1873; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Feb 1871, 9 Apr 1878, 20 Sep 1890. Portrait: Parliament House.

CARLYON, GEORGE GWAVAS (1824-75) was a son of Major-General Edward Carlyon, and himself served for some years in the Imperial army. He was in the Crimea with the 1st Foot regiment and afterwards came to New Zealand. He spent a year or two at the Hutt and in 1859 bought portion of Gwavas station, Hawkes Bay. He represented Waipukurau in the Provincial Council (1862), and died on 17 Oct 1875.

A brother, EDWARD AUGUSTUS CARLYON (1823-74), M.A., was a barrister at law. He represented Te Aute in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1867-71), and died on 4 Dec 1874.

Burke, *Landed Gentry*; *Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi. 398-9. 505.

CARNELL, SAMUEL (1832-1920) was born in Nottinghamshire, educated at Old Lenton and trained as a mechanic in the lace industry. He turned his attention to photography and after the discovery of the collodion process came to

CARPENTER

New Zealand in the *Caduceus* (1860). For some time he was employed by Crombie and Webster in Auckland. He visited Hokitika at the time of the rush and opened a studio at Nelson. Before long he returned to Auckland and then proceeded to Napier (1869) as manager of the business of Swan and Wrigglesworth, which he soon purchased. He sold out in 1905. Carnell was mayor of Napier (1904-07) and was many years on the Napier harbour board, the Hawkes Bay hospital board, the land board and the Napier school committee. In 1894 he won the Napier parliamentary seat as a Liberal (defeating Swan). He was defeated in 1896 by R. D. D. McLean. He had advanced views on land tenure and in 1895 carried a resolution in favour of abolishing the totalisator. He died on 14 Oct 1920.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); Hansard, 11 Mar 1921; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 15 Oct 1920.

CARPENTER, ROBERT HOLT (1819-91) was born in England and trained as a bookbinder. After marrying he came to New Zealand in the *Birman* (arriving at Port Nicholson Mar 1842). He left shortly afterwards for Nelson but the vessel being wrecked, he returned to Wellington and opened a second-hand bookshop in Molesworth street. He represented Wellington City in the Provincial Council (1856-61, 1864-65) and was a member of the town board and of the borough council (1867-71). Carpenter died on 24 Feb 1891.

*Parltry Record; Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; *Evening Post*, 24 Feb 1891.

CARPENTER, WILLIAM (1832-1914) was born at Great Yarmouth, Norfolk, and travelled widely before coming to Victoria in 1856. In 1863 he came to Auckland, where he was employed in the native department (1867-68). Settling at Thames in 1870, he became mayor, chairman of the harbour board and highway board and M.P.C. (1873-75). He died on 30 Jul 1914.

*N.Z. Herald*, 14 Feb 1874, 31 Jul 1914.

CARRINGTON, FREDERIC ALONZO (1807-1901) was born at Chelmsford, Essex, his father being later barrackmaster at Douglas, Isle of Man. His grandfather and great grandfather were prebendary and chancellor respectively in the diocese of Exeter. Frederic studied under Robert Dawson, a distinguished military en-

CARRINGTON

gineer, and received an appointment in 1826 in the Ordnance Survey. In this service he surveyed a large tract of country in Wales and adjacent English counties and revised blocks of original survey work in various parts of England. After the passing of the Reform Bill (1832) he did much of the work entailed in determining the boundaries of parliamentary boroughs between Bristol and Manchester.

In 1839 Carrington met at the surveyor-general's office in the Tower Captain W. M. Smith (q.v.), who was discussing the duties that he would be called on to carry out in New Zealand. Carrington was attracted by the idea of emigrating and eventually accepted the position of chief surveyor to the Plymouth Company, to select, purchase and survey the land required for the settlement. He sailed in the *London*, arrived at Port Nicholson in Dec 1840 and carried out his task with complete success. Owing to the difficulties of the Company his engagement terminated in 1843 and he returned to England. There he gave evidence before the select committee of the House of Commons and he exhibited at Sir Roderick Murchison's house his valuable collection of New Zealand fauna, canoes, weapons, carvings, minerals and timber. He twice had an audience of the Prince Consort, who was much interested in his collection and his delineation of country. Thereafter he spent some time on surveys for projected railways and harbour works in Great Britain. His system of surface delineation and plan-modelling attracted much attention as a guide in the planning of drainage and road systems. He received a prize medal at the exhibition of 1851 for his models. Between 1851 and 1856 he carried out important explorations in California, France and Belgium in the interests of British engineering firms.

Early in 1857 Carrington returned to New Zealand with the intention of establishing iron-works, constructing a harbour and managing properties as agent. When the Maori war broke out he was appointed road engineer for Taranaki. He took no part in government until 1869, when he was elected Superintendent of Taranaki, and the following year he was returned to Parliament for Omata. He was re-elected Superintendent (against Brown and Atkinson) and held office until the abolition. In Parliament he sat for Grey and Bell (1871-79).

CARRINGTON

Carrington died on 15 Jul 1901. He was mainly responsible for the earmarking of one-fourth of the provincial revenues for the construction of protective works at the harbour.

G.B.O.P., 1844/556; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Wells; *Taranaki Herald*, 15 Jul 1901; *Taranaki Daily News*, 31 Mar 1891.

CARRINGTON, WELLINGTON (1814-90), who was a surveyor, first visited Bay of Islands in 1835, and in 1839 was engaged as an assistant surveyor to the New Zealand Company. He sailed in the *Cuba* and worked on a survey of the site of the town, which it was proposed to establish at Petone. In Dec 1840 he visited Wanganui to layoff sections for the town, and then went to Taranaki, where his brothers (F. A. and O.) had already arrived. During the Taranaki war Carrington was a captain in the militia and he was later attached to the native office. He interpreted at the arrest of Te Whiti (1881). Carrington represented Omata in the Taranaki Provincial Council (1872-73). He married a daughter of T. Mace (q.v.). His death occurred on 8 Feb 1890.

Wells; *Taranaki Herald*, 7 Nov 1872, 8, 10 Feb 1890. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Call.

CARROLL, SIR JAMES (1857-1926) was the son of Joseph Carroll (1815-99), who was in the botanical department of the government in New South Wales in the thirties and settled in Wairoa, where he engaged in agriculture and sheep farming and imported stock and machinery. Besides owning a large tract of land at Hurumoa, he engaged in business as a blacksmith and kept several small schooners for whaling. He married Tapuke, a chieftainess of the Wairoa hapu of Ngati-Kahungunu.

James was born at Wairoa on 20 Aug 1858, the youngest child of the family. He spent his childhood in the Urewera under leading tohungas, and at the age of six was sent to Thomson's school at Napier. He showed no aptitude for study, spoke little English and at the age of 12 returned to work on his father's station. In 1869 he enlisted with the native allies (under F. E. Hamlin) in pursuit of Te Kooti; in every skirmish with the enemy 'behaved in all cases with great steadiness,' and for his services received the war medal and a bonus of £50. Then he spent 18 months as a cadet under Locke, native commissioner and

CARROLL

magistrate for the East Coast. McLean transferred him to the native office in Wellington, and a year later he was licensed as an interpreter and attached to the native land court under Judge Rogan. In 1879 he was appointed interpreter in the House of Representatives, where he gained a close acquaintance with the forms of parliament and became a fluent speaker.

In 1883 Carroll resigned to contest the Eastern Maori seat, but was defeated by Wi Pere by 23 votes. Declining to return to his old post, he became thoroughly intimate with the needs of his people, and in 1887 he defeated Pere by 200 votes. He held the seat continuously until 1894, when he was elected for the European constituency of Waiapu (afterwards Gisborne), defeating De Lautour by 497 votes. That seat he held for 25 years. Meanwhile Carroll had a distinguished career. In 1892 he was appointed a member of the executive representing the native race, and he held that position throughout the Ballance and Seddon administrations. From 1896 he was also Commissioner of Stamps and in Dec 1899 he became Minister of Native Affairs. His native policy was conservative and he carried some important measures extending native government, notably the Maori councils act 1900. His object was to conserve and extend the remaining rights of the Maori and to encourage the co-operative farming of their lands. Carroll had a dignified personality, was a fluent speaker, practised in the imagery of Maori lore, and equally eloquent in English. He had great influence and mana, and did much to make the Maori better understood by the pakeha. He continued in office throughout the Hall Jones and Ward administrations and was for some years the senior member of the Cabinet. In 1911 he was created K.C.M.G.

Reverting to the position of a private member when the Liberal government was defeated in 1912, he lost his seat to Lysnar at the election of 1919, and two years later was called to the Legislative Council by the Massey government. Carroll attended one of the conferences in London of the Empire Parliamentary Association. He died on 18 Oct 1926, nine days after delivering an eloquent oration at the grave of his friend Sir William Herries (q.v.). He married early in life Heni Materoa, who survived him until 1 Nov 1930. There were no children, but

## CARSON

Sir James and Lady Carroll brought up about thirty foster children.

*Parltry Record*; Anny department record of war service; *N.Z.P.D.* (notably 24 Jun 1927); Cowan; Gisborne; *Evening Post*, 19 Oct 1926; *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 29 Oct 1926; *Gisborne Times*, 10 May 1927; *N.Z. Times*, 21 Aug 1911; *N.I. Herald*, 2 Nov 1926. Portrait: Parliament House.

CARSON, GILBERT (1842-1924) was born at sea in the ship *Jane Gifford* on the voyage from Scotland to Auckland. His father, James Carson (1815-80), came to work the copper mines at Kawau and Coromandel. Educated in Auckland, Carson served his apprenticeship on the *New Zealander* (completing in 1863), and had been appointed manager when the office was burned down. He then went on active service with the Auckland volunteers, assisting in the building and defence of the Wairoa redoubt. In 1867 he went to Wellington, where he was engaged for some years as a compositor and proof-reader in the Government printing office. In 1874 he purchased the *Wanganui Chronicle*, with which he was associated for the remainder of his life.

Carson contested a parliamentary seat on four occasions before he defeated A. D. Willis for Wanganui in 1896. He lost the seat to Willis in 1899. In 1914 he was called to the Legislative Council, from which he retired when his term expired (1921). He was for many years in the Wanganui borough council and was mayor for three years (1881-84). He was also chairman of the harbour board, the hospital board, the Girls' College board of governors, and the Wanganui education board. He was a staunch temperance advocate and a Baptist (being president of the Baptist union in 1904). He died on 4 Mar 1924.

*N.I.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1924; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

CARTER, CHARLES ROOKING (1822-96) was born in Kendal, Westmoreland, the son of a builder. He was intended for a profession and went to Samuel Marshall's school (1835-36) but in the latter year made an attempt to go to sea from Liverpool. On his father's death in 1837 he obtained employment as a property man, scene-shifter and part-time actor, but a few months later signed a seven years' apprenticeship to a carpenter. In these years he became a total abstainer and read deeply, being specially

## CARTER

interested in the intelligence from New Zealand. He was an ardent Chartist and a radical reformer. While working at Newcastle and Gateshead (1839-43) he attended the exhibition of arts, manufactures and practical science and took classes in drawing.

Going to London in 1843, Carter was a good deal out of employment and made use of his leisure by studying in the Westminster Literary Institute. He was interested in working-class politics and was secretary of the movement which resulted in many London shops stopping work at 4 p.m. on Saturdays. Inspired by the Liberal risings in Europe, he wrote many letters to the papers in favour of emigration to New Zealand. He was now employed as a builder's principal foreman. When news reached London of the earthquake in New Zealand (1848) he wrote an article on the defective building construction then prevalent in Wellington.

In 1850 Carter married Jane Robieson (or Robertson), of Turriff, Aberdeenshire, and sailed for New Zealand in the *Eden*. He at once entered into business as a builder, erected a fine country house for Fitzherbert, and in 1853 began to practise as a surveyor and valuer. He helped to form the No 1 Building Society and became interested in politics as a supporter of Featherston and the Constitutional Association. He was nominated for the Provincial Council in 1853 but withdrew on accepting a government contract for the first reclamation in the harbour. In Mar of that year he attended the first public meeting with the object of forming a small farms association. W. Allen (q.v.) presided and Masters (q.v.) and Carter were on the committee. Carter saw the project through, and was eventually liquidator of the association (1858). In 1853 he purchased Wilson's brickyard. In 1855 he was one of the two members of the earthquake commission, and was responsible for the report (presented to the Superintendent on 4 Sep 1855). He was an active promoter of the first Steam Navigation Co., which purchased the *Wonga Wonga* and afterwards the *Stormbird*, paid 10 per cent. per annum and returned to shareholders £19 for every £10 share. In 1857 a petition was sent to the Provincial Council asking for another small farm settlement to be proclaimed and to be named 'Cartervale': ('Carterton' was duly proclaimed in on 26 July 1859).

## CARTER

Carter and Borlase were elected to the Provincial Council for Wairarapa, defeating Revans and Jackson. In the political duel between Wakefield and Featherston he supported the Superintendent. In 1859 Carter was elected to represent Wairarapa in the House of Representatives, in which he sat until 1865. He retired from the Provincial Council in 1859 on accepting a contract for the bridge over the Waiohine, but was re-elected unopposed. At the end of 1863 Carter sailed for England, where he acted as immigration agent for the province and negotiated on behalf of the Provincial Council for the patent slip in Evans Bay and the iron bridge over the Wanganui river. During his absence he resigned from both Council and Parliament. Carter suggested to the people of Greytown to create an educational trust out of unselected town sections (a plan afterwards adopted in Masterton). In 1866 he published the first of a three-volume autobiography which gives a valuable insight into life and politics in early Wellington. He lived for some years in England, being employed by the agent general as immigration officer (1871-74). On his wife's death he returned to New Zealand, and died on 22 Jul 1896.

Carter, *op cit.*; *Cycl. N.I.*, i; *Wellington P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.I.P.D.*; Wakelin; *Wellington Independent*, 13 Jan 1860. Portrait: Parliament House.

CARTER, HENRY was M.P.C. for Wellington 1873-75. He afterwards returned to England and eventually settled as a builder in Cape Colony, where he died on 8 Apr 1902.

CARTER, JOHN CHILTON LAMBTON (1816-72) was the son of Lieut.-colonel J. C.L. Carter of the 44th Regiment, in which he received his ensigney in 1834 after passing through the military college. (Lieutenant 1836; captain 1844.) He transferred to the 53rd Regiment and served in the Punjab (being present at the battle of Gujerat) and retired in 1852 to settle in New Zealand. Carter was sheep farming in Hawkes Bay about 1853 and was one of the signatories to the Ahuriri petition (1857). He was one of the representatives of Napier Country in the Provincial Council (1859-63) and was Superintendent in succession to T. H. Fitzgerald (1861-62), and deputy-superintendent in 1865. His wife (Susan Frances, daughter of vice-admiral

## CASS

James Lillicrap) died on 31 Dec 1862. Carter died on 27 May 1872.

'Var Office records; *Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 7 Jan 1863, 31 May 1872.

CARTER, THOMAS (1827-1900). The third Superintendent of Marlborough was born at Winterton, Lincolnshire, educated there, and left as a young man for the Californian diggings, whence he moved to those of Australia and finally, in 1855, landed in Nelson with his two brothers.

In New Zealand Carter devoted himself to pastoral pursuits and acquired wide landed interests in Marlborough, including such runs as Stronvar, Wantwood, Hillersden, the Wither, Glenfield, Te Arowhenua, Richmond Dale, the Clarence and Burleigh. He paid some attention to flax and erected a mill at Hillersden. In 1886 Carter visited England and thereafter spent 10 years visiting Australian and New Zealand cities before settling at Burleigh, near Blenheim. In public life he was shrewd and reliable, and his services were of great value in the troubled politics of the province. In 1862 he became member of the Provincial Council for Wairau Valley, which he represented continuously until the abolition. Eight months after his entry into politics he was elected Superintendent of the province, administering that office until Jul 1864 when the demands of his business required his time. In 1867 and 1870 he was a member of the executive. Carter was for some years chairman of the Marlborough county council, a member of the board of education, the Wairau road board and the Land and Railway League and was president of the A. and P. Association. He took a prominent part in establishing the Marlborough High School, for which he gave the site and endowed a scholarship. Carter died on 27 Feb 1900.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Buick, *Marlborough*.

CASS, THOMAS (1817-95) was a native of Yorkshire. He received his education at Christ's Hospital, where he was for four years on the Royal Mathematical foundation. On leaving school he went to sea, and for the next three years sailed chiefly in the East India trade. On returning home he studied architecture and surveying and was an assistant in the tithe com-

mission office at Somerset House. This involved much surveying and land valuing, and Cass received a thorough grounding in field work.

In 1841, on the recommendation of Captain Dawson, R.E., he was appointed to the surveying staff of the New Zealand Company at a salary of [200 a year. Ligar (the surveyor general), embarked with his staff in Apr 1841, in the *Prince Rupert* (owned and commanded by Sir Henry Esch Atkinson). Amongst the passengers was William Spain (chief land claims commissioner). Provisions ran short and Atkinson put into Bahia. On 4 Sep, when about to enter Table Bay, the *Prince Rupert* struck a rock and became a total wreck. Cass and the other surveyors, who lost much of their outfit, were brought on by the *Antilla* and reached Auckland in Dec. For some months Cass was employed on surveys under the land claims commission, first on the north shore of Waitemata harbour and then in the vicinity of Bay of Islands. He assisted in surveying the town of Kororareka, exploring the country to the northward, and cutting lines for the roads to Hokianga, Whangaroa and Mangonui.

At the end of 1844 a reduction of the survey staff threw him out of employment, and he joined the government brig *Victoria*, first as second officer and then as chief. He saw much rough work, and not a little fighting, first in connection with the sack of Kororareka (1845) and later in the operations about Cook strait. While on the coast of the South Island Cass took in custody to Auckland men who had stuck up the Greenwoods' station at Purau and threatened the Dean, S family at Riccarton. In 1847 he returned to England. There he represented to the New Zealand Company the loss he had sustained by the termination of his employment, and as a result he was appointed assistant-surveyor under Captain Thomas to prepare for the Canterbury settlement. Sailing in the *Bernicia*, he reached Canterbury in Dec 1848, the other members of the party being E. Jollie, C. O. Torlesse, Gollan, S. Hewlings and John Boys. In 1849 Cass took part in the survey of Lyttelton harbour and Banks Peninsula, and then in the triangulation of the Canterbury Block. His name was given to a river flowing out of the Alps, a peak in Banks Peninsula and one of the bays in Port Cooper.

Shortly after the arrival of the Canterbury

pilgrims Thomas retired and Cass succeeded him as chief surveyor (1851). He was present at the first allotment of town and country lands and until failing health compelled him to retire on pension (1868) Cass administered the post with efficiency and vigour. In 1854 he went to the site of Timaro and with W. Brittan reported on the steps that were necessary. Though holding an official position Cass was not debarred from membership of the Provincial Council. He was one of the first members for the City of Christchurch (Sep 1853). Standing for cheap land and improved communications, he polled 77 votes, followed by S. Bealey 74, Packer 71, Fooks 51, Dobson 21. He retired from the Council in 1855, but was in again (1857-60). He was repeatedly a member of the provincial executive and on two occasions led an executive of his own. In 1858 he was on a commission appointed by Moorhouse to report upon the best route for the railway to the port. In 1853, with Sewell and the Rev R. B. Paul, he fixed the site for Christ's College. For 10 years Cass was a commissioner of the waste land board, and from 1858 a commissioner of native reserves. After retiring from the council he was several times in the executive, and again in 1863 he led an executive. In 1864 he was chairman of the railway and bridge commission.

Cox remarks that Cass was 'the lightest-hearted and youngest man that ever went through 30 years of the toughest work.' On retiring he paid a visit to Great Britain. There again his services were requisitioned as emigration officer (until 1868). Returning to Canterbury, he served another three years on the waste lands board. He was for many years a church warden at St Michael's.

Cass married (1856) the widow of David Theodore Williams, manager of the Deans estate. She died in 1886. Cass died on 17 Apr 1895.

N.Z.C.; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Wigram; Alpers; Cox; *The Press*, 3 May 1930 (p).

CASSIUS, MICHAEL ALBERT (?-1892) was born in Germany and came to Otago with the gold diggers in the sixties. He was in business in Southland and afterwards in Westland, where he represented Hokitika in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1866-67). In 1864, with his partner (Comisky), he took up one of the first sections in Hokitika. He was very

successful in goldmining ventures and was the principal in the Ross Creek Deep Levels, from which in the first two years 22,000 oz. of gold was taken. In 1872 Cassius offered £200 towards an award of [1,000 for the discovery of goldfields south of the Teremakau river. Later he acquired the Duke of Edinburgh hotel and theatre at Hokitika. He died in 1892.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Kinross; Harrop, *Westland*; *N.z. Herald*, 4 Oct 1892.

CAUTLEY, WILLIAM OLDFIELD was educated at Cambridge University, and came to New Zealand in the *Mary Ann* (1841). He took up land at Wensley Hill, Richmond (Nelson), where he was sheep-farming for some years. In 1847 he accompanied Governor Grey to the upper Wairau, where he had already established a sheep station. In 1849 he was called to the Legislative Council of New Munster and on 3 Jun 1851 he took the oath as a member of the Legislative Council of New Zealand. When the new constitution came into force Cautley was elected to represent Waimea in Parliament and in the following year he was returned for Waimea East to the Nelson Provincial Council, in which he sat till 1857. He resigned from Parliament in 1854 and from the Provincial Council in 1857 and returned to England.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1853-54; *Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *L.C. of New Munster*, minutes: Jour. L.C. of N.Z.; Arnold; C. A. Macdonald.

CAWTHRON, THOMAS (1833-1915) was born at Camberwell, London, received a good education at Hoxton school and at the age of 15 came to New Zealand with his father, arriving in Nelson in the *Mary* (1849). His strength being unequal to working on his father's farm at Richmond, Thomas went to Wellington and obtained clerical employment with W. B. Rhodes. In 1852 he was attracted to Australia by the gold discoveries and spent several years on the diggings at Bendigo and Ballarat. His health had greatly improved and he made a considerable amount by contracting and carrying on the goldfields.

Owing to his father meeting with an accident Cawthron returned to Nelson on a visit (1857), but eventually decided to remain. He accepted mining contracts, the first being for the Jenkins Hill coalmine. While carrying out a contract at the Dun Mountain copper mine he pushed a

heavy wheelbarrow all the way from Nelson to the site, round Wooded Peak. About 1859 Cawthron went into business in Nelson as a merchant and shipping agent, and for the next 30 years he represented the Sydney and New Zealand Royal Mail Co. and other shipping lines and carried out many coal contracts. Possessed of acute business judgment and vision, he steadily amassed a large fortune and late in the eighties was able to retire from business and devote his attention to the management of his estate. His gifts to the city and district were on a munificent scale, directed towards social, charitable and church objects, the beautifying of the city and finally to scientific research. He gave £15,000 towards the new hospital and £30,000 for a solar research laboratory, and when he died (8 Oct 1915) he left a large sum for the establishment of an industrial and technical school, institute and museum. Out of this bequest originated the Cawthron Institute.

*The Colonist*, 9, 12 Oct 1915; *Cawthron Institute Lectures* (p).

CHAFFERS, EDWARD MAIN, was an officer of the Royal Navy, in which he was promoted master in 1830. In the following year he was appointed to H.M.S. *Beagle* for her second voyage to the Pacific (1831-36) and in 1833 had command of the *Unicorn* in South America. In 1839 he gave up his naval career to accept command of the *Tory* bringing the New Zealand Company's expeditionary party. She reached Queen Charlotte Sound in 96 days from Lands End. Chaffers surveyed Port Nicholson, and the Company was able from his data to publish a good map before Apr 1841. He was appointed harbourmaster early in 1840, but returned to England shortly afterwards.

Public Record Office, C.O. 207; N.L. 1832; N.Z.C. reports and papers; E. J. Wakefield; Ward.

CHALMERS, NATHANIEL (1830-1910) was born in Rothesay, Scotland, and at an early age taken to London, where he got his education at Christ's Hospital. In 1845 he entered a shipbroker's office in Liverpool and afterwards took service in a London bank. In 1846 he sailed in the *Ajax* for Otago. Having selected a farm at Omaro bush, he chartered the schooner *Jumping Jackass* to carry his belongings to the Molyneux and then proceeded overland to the Waihopai river. In 1852 he and a

## CHAMBERLIN

brother were attracted to the Forest Creek diggings in Victoria, where they had little luck. They then proceeded to Sydney to take delivery of sheep from Bathurst and the Hunter river on account of Edwin Meredith. Arriving off Stewart island in the schooner *Otago*, 70 tons, in Jul 1853 they landed 450 sheep on the island to recuperate; then took them into the New River estuary, where the voyage ended and drove the flock overland to Moa Hill. Chalmers took up a property at Popotunoa. In 1856 he married Miss McGrath and moved to Otakaramu; and in 1858 he purchased McNab's Hokonui run.

Chalmers did fairly well, and in 1861 sold out his sheepfarming and timber milling interests to live in Invercargill. He was first elected to the Southland Provincial Council (for Invercargill) in Jul 1861. In Dec he was appointed provincial treasurer so had to contest his seat again. He was then elected for Matakura, which he represented (1861-64). He was a member of the executive in 1861 and again from the end of that year until Feb 1864, and during the last few months was provincial treasurer and deputy-superintendent of the province. In 1864 he retired in ill-health and moved to Moa Hill.

Chalmers made many explorations in Southland, including a noteworthy journey to Wakatipu with the chief Te Reko (1853). In 1856 he found gold in potholes at Matakura falls. As deputy-superintendent he cut the first sod of the Southland and Great Northern railway (1863). In Nov 1868 Chalmers settled at Fiji, where he engaged in cotton planting at Rewa, Labasa and Koro. In 1870-74 he was deputy-warden and magistrate at Levuka, and in 1879-83 he was a member of the Legislative Council. After 12 years sugar planting (1879-91) he was again magistrate (1891-1906). He died on 2 Dec 1910.

*Southland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*, Beattie, ii; Moss; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 31 Dec 1910.

CHAMBERLIN, HENRY (1825-88) was born at The Close, Norwich, England, the son of Henry Chamberlin, of Narborough Hall, Norfolk. He came to New Zealand with capital in 1853 and purchased the Waihoihoi estate, near Drury, and land at Raglan. He married in 1859, Elizabeth, daughter of G. H. Heard (Nor-

## CHAMBERS

folk). Chamberlin later bought a large block of land at Hobsonville, extending to Riverhead. His brother Charles assisted him in the management. In 1866 he came to live permanently in New Zealand. He was much interested in coal and prospected a great deal of what was later the Drury coalfield. His farming operations were not successful.

In 1869, after failing in a Provincial contest, Chamberlin was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death. He was not successful in politics and was generally averse to publicity. He did, however, each session, many years before its acceptance, introduce a motion prohibiting the employment of women in hotel bars; and he cordially supported the deceased wife's sister bill. Chamberlin throughout his life gave liberally to charities in his native town of Norwich, and to good causes in New Zealand. In later years he was a director of the South British Insurance Co. He devoted much attention to inventions, especially in the hope of coping with the rabbit nuisance; and until his death he was prospecting energetically for coal. In the early eighties he cut up much of his Raglan property to meet the demand for small farms. He died on 12 Apr 1888.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 17 Apr 1888. Portrait: Parliament House.

CHAMBERS, JOHN (1819-93) belonged to a family of Quakers. He married the daughter of a Presbyterian minister of Burntisland, Fifeshire, and about 1840 left for Australia, where he gained much experience of station life, mainly in South Australia. He is said to have driven one of the first wagons across the continent.

Chambers came to Hawkes Bay in the fifties and erected a home at Taradale. In 1855 he took up the Te Mata block, which he carried on successfully for many years and then cut up amongst his three sons. He was a strong supporter of the Presbyterian Church, and with his wife assisted in establishing regular services at Havelock North (1865) and a church (1869), of which he was a trustee. Chambers was of a retiring disposition and took little part in public life. He was, however, a member of the first Napier harbour board (1875) and of the waste land board (1861). He died on 11 Jul 1893 and his widow on 23 Feb 1904.

## CHAPMAN

*Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 16 Oct 1925; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 13 Jul 1893, 1 Mar 1904.

CHAPMAN, CHARLES ROBERT (1847-1928) was born in Edinburgh, the son of Robert Chapman (1812-98), and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Blundell* (1848). He was educated at the Otago Boys' High School and Otago University and apprenticed in law to J. Macassey. In 1873 he commenced to practise. He contested the mayoralty of Dunedin in 1888, was elected to the City Council in 1890 and mayor in 1891. During his term he secured from Andrew Carnegie a grant for the erection of the free public library. Chapman died on 15 Aug 1928.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (P); *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Aug 1928.

CHAPMAN, SIR FREDERICK REVANS (1849-1936) was born in Wellington on 3 Mar 1849, the fifth son of H. S. Chapman (q.v.), and Catherine, daughter of T. G. Brewer, barrister, London. He was educated at the Church of England Grammar School, Melbourne, and in France, Germany and Italy. For some time he was with a special pleader in London, and then with Charles Russell (afterwards Lord Killowen). He was called to the bar at the Inner Temple in 1871, practised at the common law bar in London and on circuit, and was later with Russell Roberts, a chancery barrister.

Chapman returned to New Zealand and practised in Dunedin (Smith, Chapman and Sinclair) from 1872 to 1903. Chapman was a member of the Dunedin City Council in 1875 and the following year was law lecturer at Otago University. For some years he was on the New Zealand council of law reporting, and he was a member of many societies connected with scientific pursuits. Like his brother judge of later years (Sir Theophilus Cooper), he was for some time a deputy inspector of lunatic asylums. He was also chairman of the board of Industrial Conciliation. From 1903-07 he was President of the Court of Industrial Arbitration, and laid the foundation of the work since done by that court. Thereafter he sat on the regular Supreme Court bench. He retired in 1921, but his judicial work was not finished, for on more than one occasion of emergency he returned to the bench. He was president of the war pensions appeal board (1923-24), and for some

## CHAPMAN

years acted as compiler of statutes. A large number of the consolidation acts now on the statute books are the fruit of his labour. He was knighted in 1923, and finally retired from the bench in 1924.

Apart from his celebrity as a jurist, Chapman was an authority in many branches of learning. He had a high literary bent, and his studies took him into the fields of ethnology, botany and other branches of natural history, the love of which was inherited from his father. He was for many years a member of the Otago Institute and was president in 1877; a member of the Wellington Philosophical Society; of the PolyneSian Society; and of the Geographic Board (from its inception in 1924). It was to the Otago Institute that he contributed his classic paper *Maori Methods of Working Greenstone*, which is still an authoritative work on the subject, and also *Moa Remains in the Mackenzie Country*. In the field of botany he discovered the red manuka, which now bears his Latinised name. He was a writer also on mountaineering and historical matters.

Chapman married in 1879, Clara, daughter of George Cook, barrister, of Dunedin. He died on 24 Jun 1936. His brother, MARTIN CHAPMAN, K.C., was with Cracknell, an equity draughtsman and conveyancer, and never went into common law chambers. He was a member of the firm of Chapman, Skerrett, Wylie and Tripp (Wellington). J.H.B.S.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *N.Z. Law Jour.*, 7 Jul 1936 (p).

CHAPMAN, GEORGE THOMSON (1824-81) was born at Stonehaven, Kincardineshire, Scotland, and educated there. After serving his apprenticeship to a general storekeeper he went into business and married. Becoming interested in Otago, where the Free Church was founding a settlement, he and his brother purchased land and sailed in the *Blundell* (1849). They settled as missionary teachers at East Taieri but soon withdrew and entered mercantile life in Dunedin.

Chapman originated the Mechanics' Institute and was secretary of it (1851), and in the same year was vice-president of the Otago library. At the end of 1851 he left for Sydney, found his way to the Victorian goldfields and, having some luck there, paid a visit to Scotland (1853).

Having re-married, he sailed again for Sydney. There his ship became involved in litigation, so he started in business in Pitt Street, but finding this not promising he came to Auckland in the brig *Heather Bell* (1855) and set up a bookseller and stationer's business in Queen Street, with a circulating library attached. There he published the first of his *New Zealand Almanacs* and guide books, the first of the guides being dated 1872. His centenary memorial of Captain Cook's discovery of New Zealand appeared in 1870. Chapman died on 24 Jun 1881. (See C. R. CHAPMAN.)

*N.Z. Herald*, 25 Jun 1881.

CHAPMAN, HENRY SAMUEL (1803-81) was born at Kennington, London, on 21 Jul 1803, the son of Henry Chapman, for many years connected with the department which had the duty of constructing barracks and defensive works throughout the Kingdom. The elder Chapman was secretary and afterwards one of the higher officials under the American loyalist general, Oliver de Lancey.

Young Chapman was educated partly at the private school of Mr. Peters at Bromley, in Kent, and partly on the continent. Owing to defective eyesight, he left school at an early age, but he cultivated a love of literature, and on the Continent and in Canada acquired a good facility in French and German. He also indulged in rowing and skating. Chapman first took a position with Esdaile's Bank in London, but soon transferred to the office of a Dutch financial agent in the city. In 1822 he was sent on a mission to Holland, where he profited by a winter spent in Amsterdam to acquire a knowledge of Dutch. In 1823, while still in his teens, he commenced his colonial career as a merchant in Quebec, with connections in England and New York. In Canada he spent 10 years, doing well enough without amassing a fortune. Each winter he visited England, keeping in touch with old friends, and in particular with John Stuart Mill. In summer he made extended business tours in North America, which had a profound influence upon his later life. On a steamboat excursion on the lakes in 1824, he made the acquaintance of John A. Roebuck, with whom he was afterwards closely associated.

In 1833 Chapman went again to Canada. Im-

pressed with the justice of the Canadian demand for self-government, he took a printing press and settled down in Montreal, where, with Revans (q.v.), he established the *Montreal Daily Advertiser*. He did most of the literary work himself for the *Advertiser* and other papers issued from the same office. His friendship with Papineau, the Liberal leader, ripened; and through him Chapman made his first public speech in French. The paper was intensely disliked by the dominant party and did not achieve permanent success. In 1834 Chapman disposed of his interest and returned to England as the agent of the Liberal parliamentary party in Canada. This brought him into close touch with leading reformers of the time (including Buller, Ricardo, Mill, E. G. Wakefield, and Dr Evans). He assisted Roebuck in the compilation of his pamphlets (in every number of which he had an article) and in other ways promoted the demand of the Canadian Liberals for representative government. When Roebuck got into Parliament again in 1837 he became the parliamentary agent for the Canadian Liberals, as Burke had been of the American loyalists, and with the changes resulting from the Papineau rebellion, Chapman's arrangement came to an end. He then devoted himself more to journalism and the writing of pamphlets in the cause of colonial reform. It has been suggested that Chapman had an active part in the Papineau rising, but he had left Canada two years earlier, and was in no way involved. He always regarded the resort to arms as a mistake. Revans, however, was deeply involved and fled from Canada.

In the late thirties Chapman read for the bar as the pupil of Dodgson, an eminent pleader, and he was called at the Middle Temple on 12 Jun 1840. A week earlier he was married to Catherine, daughter of T. G. Brewer, barrister, of Nottingham place. As a beginner, Chapman had a fair practice on the Northern Circuit, but he still relied for his main income upon journalism, writing to the reviews and many pamphlets on economics. This work, about 1832, brought him into close touch with Cobden. A lifelong freetrader, he took an active part in the anti-corn law agitation. He was also employed on various royal commissions, including that relating to the condition

of the handloom weavers of Yorkshire. This experience resulted in his being asked to write the article on wool and woollen manufacturing in the *Encyclopaedia Britannica*, the mechanical drawings for which he did himself. He then pointed out to the editor that New Zealand had been omitted from the work, and he was commissioned to write it. But, as the letter 'N' had been passed the article had to be placed under 'Z.'

Chapman was deeply interested in the New Zealand project of Wakefield, and in Feb 1840 published the first issue of his *New Zealand Journal*, which he brought out continuously (as editor and owner-proprietor) until the middle of 1843. Owing to the indifferent health of his wife he contemplated living in New Zealand. The opportunity came in 1843, when Lord Derby appointed him a judge of the Supreme Court for the southern division (which included Wellington and Nelson). He sailed with his wife and son in the *Bangalore* in Jun 1843 (amongst the passengers being Governor FitzRoy). At Sydney Chapman renewed his acquaintance with Robert Lowe (afterwards Lord Sherbrooke). While there he reported favourably to the government on the system of having a resident judge at Port Philip. At Auckland on 26 Dec the Governor and the judge took their oaths of office. Chapman lived at Wellington for the next nine years. During the native troubles of 1846 his home at Karori was one of the defensive posts against possible attacks. When the two judges (Martin, C. J., and Chapman) had to confer on the making of rules they met in Taranaki. The vessel in which Chapman took his passage landed him at Kawhia, from which he had to walk back to New Plymouth and later to Wellington.

In 1852, unsought by himself, Chapman was appointed Colonial Secretary in Van Diemen's Land (under the governorship of Denison). There he found public opinion highly incensed against the Colonial Office and the Governor on the question of transportation. When a division was forced in the Council lifelong convictions compelled Chapman to side with the colorists, and he declined to vote. Denison was furious at the recalcitrance of his new official, and Chapman had to sacrifice his post to his convictions and proceed on leave to

London to place his case before the Colonial Office. Transportation was soon abolished and responsible government granted later to both Tasmania and Victoria. Having declined a governorship in the West Indies, Chapman in 1854 took passage in the *Lightning* to Victoria, and engaged in a lucrative practice in Melbourne. In 1855 he was elected to the Legislative Council (still partly nominated) for the district of South Bourke. The Ballarat riots brought him into prominence as counsel for some of the accused, who were acquitted. In the last session of the Council in 1855 Chapman and others managed to have inserted in the reform bill provision for the ballot system of voting. It was carried against the government with the assistance of the votes of eight members sent from the goldfields (including Vincent Pyke, q.v.). Chapman's part in this episode proved to be of considerable future importance. When the vote was carried against the government the Attorney-general (Stawell) refused to draft the ballot clauses. Nicholson, the merchant who had carried the resolution, was unable to do so, and a meeting of his supporters appointed Chapman to draw the clauses. The result was the scheme now known as 'the Australian ballot.' It discarded the method of the voter putting a mark against the name of the favoured candidate, in favour of striking out the names of those not favoured. This idea was Chapman's.

At the first elections under the new constitution (1856) Chapman was defeated, but in Mar 1857 O'Shanassy persuaded him to accept office as Attorney-general, and a seat was soon found for him (for Rodney) by the resignation of Mr Baragwanath. The ministry lasted only four or five weeks. Within a year the succeeding government was defeated and Chapman was entrusted with the formation of a ministry. O'Shanassy again became Premier, and remained there for 18 months. He was on bad terms with the Governor (Sir Henry Barkly), and the ministry was kept together mainly by the tact of the Attorney-general. The government's defeat in Oct 1859 practically marked the end of Chapman's political career. He was returned late in 1861 as member for Mornington, but a few months later was appointed a temporary puisne judge. After serving on the bench for a considerable time he returned to

CHAPMAN

his practice and resumed an appointment he had previously held as lecturer in law at Melbourne University (where he was vice-president of the forensic society). In journalism he was Melbourne correspondent of the *London Times*.

Early in 1864 Chapman accepted a new appointment to the New Zealand bench and in Apr took up his duties at Dunedin, where he was to live for the remainder of his life. Besides earning credit for sound law and patient and painstaking administration of his office, he took a keen interest in the Otago community. He was a member of the council of Otago University (1870-81) and chancellor (1876-79). He was a strong supporter of the Otago Institute, before which he read an important paper on the political economy of railways. He was a lover and patron of music in all its forms. In business life he was a director of the Victoria Insurance Co. after his retirement from the bench, and for a while he had an interest in a run in the Maniatoto district.

Early in 1866 Mrs Chapman and two of her sons and a daughter were drowned when the ship *London* foundered in the Bay of Biscay. In 1868 Chapman married (in Victoria) Selina Frances, daughter of the Rev T. C. Carr, rector of Aghavoe, Queen's county, Ireland, and a sister of the police magistrate at Avoca. He visited England and returned to New Zealand in 1870. Five years later he retired from the bench. He was granted the title of 'honourable' in 1877. He died on 27 Dec 1881 and his widow on 27 Dec 1902. (See SIR FREDERICK CHAPMAN.)

Family information from Sir F. R. Chapman; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Scott; Chapman papers in Canadian Archives; J. A. Roebuck, *Pamphlets for the People (Van Diemen's Land)*; Cox; Wakelin; Godley, *Letters*; *Melbourne Herald*, 20 Dec 1855; *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Dec 1881, 7, 24 Jan 1893, 12 Sep 1930 (P). Portrait: Supreme Court, Dunedin.

CHAPMAN, THOMAS (1791-1876) was born in England. He was for some years at sea and seven years farming before he offered his services to the Church Missionary Society for work in New Zealand. Arriving in Jul 1830 with his wife he soon made a place for himself in the mission as a simple-minded, hard-working Christian. In 1831 he volunteered to serve in the first mission to be established in the Thames

CHAYTOR

district, and he made the first exploration of the field in company with Henry Williams (q.v.). Chapman was stationed at Thames and afterwards opened a mission at Te Koutu, on the western shore of Rotorua, which was sacked during Te Waharoa's war against the Arawa (6 Aug 1836). He then established himself on Mokoia island, but, finding it remote, established the mission at Te Ngae, where he lived for many years. Later he was appointed to Wharekahu, near Maketu, and shortly before his death (on 22 Dec 1876) he returned to Rotorua and assisted in teaching. Busby in 1836 wished Chapman to act as British resident during his absence from the country. He was ordained by Bishop Selwyn (1844) and was for some time on the staff of St Stephen's College.

Stock; Carleton; *Bay of Plenty Times*, 3 Jan 1877.

CHAPPLE, WILLIAM ALLAN (1864-1936) was born at Alexandra, Otago, the son of John Cole Chapple (1828-99, a farmer who was four times mayor of Alexandra). Educated at Alexandra school and Otago University, he graduated M.B., Ch.B. (1890) and M.D. (1899). From 1892 he practised in Wellington. He married Sarah Douglas, daughter of Thomas Turnbull, architect.

Chapple was a member of the council of Victoria College (1898-1906). After contesting the Newtown parliamentary seat in 1902 and 1905, he won Tuapeka at a by-election in 1908, but was defeated by Macpherson at the general election that year. Proceeding to England, he was elected in 1910 to represent Stirlingshire in the House of Commons, holding the seat till 1918, and representing Dumfriesshire (1922-24). Chapple published *The Fertility of the Unfit*, 1903, *First Principles in the Art of Physical Development*, *How to Impress the Evils of Alcohol*, *Cases and Comments from a Doctor's Practice*, and other pamphlets on social and educational subjects. He died on 19 Oct 1936.

*Parltry Record*; Chapple, *op. cit.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Otago Witness*, 8 Sep 1931; *The Dominion*, 20 Oct 1936. Portrait: Parliament House.

CHAYTOR, JOHN CLERVAUX (1836-1920) was born in London, the son of an English barrister, educated at Dedburgh grammar school, Yorkshire, and as a young man did gar-

CHEESEMAN

rison duty with the Forfar and Kincardine militia artillery during the Crimean war and Indian mutiny. At 22 he was captain. On the regiment being disbanded (1860) Chaytor came to New Zealand and took up Coverham station, in Marlborough, and afterwards (in 1880) Marshlands. He served on road boards, county council and school committees, and was in the Marlborough Provincial Council for some years (for Awatere 1871-74; Picton. 1875). Chaytor married 1867 Emma, daughter of Edward Fearon (q.v.).

His son, SIR EDWARD WALTER CLERVAUX CRAYTOR (1868-1939) was educated at Nelson College and served in the South African war with the New Zealand forces (brevet lieutenant-colonel 1902). In the war of 1914-18 he commanded the New Zealand mounted brigade in Palestine and Egypt. (C.B., 1915-; C.M.G., 1917; K.C.M.G., 1918; Order of the White Eagle, Serbia, 1916; Order of the Nile, Egypt, 1918). He commanded the forces in New Zealand (1919-24).

The second son, ALFRED HENRY CRAYTOR (1870-1931), who was educated at Nelson College; Durham and Clare College, Cambridge, was a fellow of his college, a barrister of the Inner Temple and K.C. He published books on law, sport and forestry.

*Marlborough P.C. minutes*; Burke, *Landed Gent*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Nelson Dioc. Gazette*, 1 Oct 1931.

CHEESEMAN, THOMAS (1815-1907) was born at Tetney, Lincolnshire, the son of a tenant farmer, and educated at Humberston Grammar School. His parents intended to put him to a trade, but he chose the church and at the age of 25 was ordained to the Methodist ministry. An eloquent and popular preacher, he held charges at Hull, Scarborough and Doncaster, but suffering in 1854 from an affection of the throat he migrated to New Zealand in the *Al-temisia*. In Auckland Cheeseman threw himself with vigour into educational, church and public affairs. In 1861 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Parnell, which he represented till 1869, and thereafter he was member for Newton from 1873 till the abolition. In 1865 he was member of the executive. He was one of the promoters of the Auckland-Drury railway and chairman of the board of railway

CHEESEMAN

commissiOners (the other members being Newman, J. Cadman and William Rowe). They carried the work almost to Onehunga. Cheeseman was a member of the first provincial education board and was the first chairman of the Remuera road board (of which he was a member for many years). Through his instrumentality the provincial government was induced to set aside reserves for education in Remuera and other districts. He was interested also in the Y.M.C.A. and other organisations.

Cheeseman entered into business with his brother in 1858 as auctioneers and estate agents, the firm later being known as Cheeseman and Hunter. He retired in 1866 and was appointed valuer and assessor under the land tax act, acting in this capacity for government departments until 1899. Cheeseman was a student of astronomy and constructed many telescopes for use on his own observatory at Remuera, where he collaborated with American astronomers who visited New Zealand to observe the transit of Venus. He was a shrewd and far-seeing administrator, a calm and incisive speaker and a politician of outstanding integrity. He died on 24 Sep 1907. (See T. F. CHEESEMAN.)

*N.Z. Herald*, 26 Sep 1907.

CHEESEMAN, THOMAS FREDERIC (1846-1923) was born at Hull, Yorkshire, the son of Thomas Cheeseman (q.v.), with whom he came to New Zealand at the age of eight. He attended first the Parnell Grammar School and later St John's College. He started farming.

Stimulated, it is thought, by reading Hooker's *Handbook*, Cheeseman conceived an interest in New Zealand flora, of which he had acquired such a sound knowledge by 1876 that he was able to publish a comprehensive account of the plant life of the Waitakerei hills. In 1874 he was appointed secretary of the Auckland Institute and curator of the museum, then in its infancy. His duty led him to the gathering together of invaluable natural history collections and to studies in botany, agriculture, horticulture and forestry, which he continued with unabated interest till his death (on 15 Oct 1923). Though primarily a botanist, 22 out of the 101 papers that he wrote for the scientific publications of New Zealand were on ethnology and zoology. As a botanist he was pre-eminent, and he made a keen search for plants, notably in

## CHEVALIER

Nelson province and in the Three Kings and the Kermadecs. He also visited Polynesia and published in the transactions of the Linnaean Society an account of the flora of Rarotonga. In 1906 appeared his monumental *Manual Of New Zealand Flora*, to which was added in 1914 his own and Dr W. B. Helmsley's *Illustrations of the New Zealand Flora*. He described the vascular flora of the Macquarie islands for the Australian Antarctic expedition of 1911-14. He wrote many papers of a philosophical character dealing with New Zealand sub-Antarctic flora and, in his earlier writings, were some dealing with the pollination of certain species. He had sound judgment and infinite patience so that his Flora, to quote the words of Dr L. Cockayne, stands out the equal of any of that brilliant series of floras dealing with various parts of the British Empire which were conceived and in part executed by Bentham and Hooker: He presented to the Auckland Institute his almost complete herbarium and the most extensive collection illustrating Maori ethnology.

Cheeseman was early elected a fellow of the Linnaean society, which awarded him its rare gold medal, and he was a corresponding member of the Botanical Society of Edinburgh. In 1911 he was president of the New Zealand Institute, in 1918 he received its Hector memorial medal, and in 1919 was elected a fellow.

L. Cockayne in *Trans. N.Z. Institute*, vol 54, xvii (P) (Hamilton's bibliography in vol xxxvi lists his publications); Cheeseman, *op. cit.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii, 209; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Oct 1923 (P).

CHEVALIER, NICHOLAS (1828-1902) was born at St Petersburg, his father (a Swiss) holding a post in the household of the Tsar. He studied art at Lausanne, architecture at Munich and lithography under Grunner. In 1852 he exhibited two water colours at the Royal Academy. He became naturalised and lived in England, obtaining some important commissions, assisting in the illustrations of Layard's *Nineveh* and designing the setting of the Koh-i-nor diamond. In 1853-54 he studied in Rome and in 1855 visited Australia to inquire into his father's investments. There he spent some years engaged in painting and in illustrated journalism. He introduced chromolithography for illustrating newspapers and drew some of the first cartoons for Melbourne *Punch*.

During these years Chevalier turned to oil

## CHEW CHONG

pamung. In 1857 he exhibited at the exhibition of fine arts in Sydney. In the early sixties with his wife (Carrie, daughter of Sir David Wilkie, R.A.), he visited New Zealand, where he did much artistic work. Late in 1865 he commenced a tour of the lakes and mountains of Otago which yielded about 70 sketches, many of which he completed in later years in London and Paris. The provincial government of Canterbury voted him £200 as preliminary expenses of a sketching tour of the Southern Alps. Many of his New Zealand sketches he showed at the International Exhibition in Melbourne (1866-67). His widow afterwards presented a large collection of these to the New Zealand government. Others he completed in later years and showed in London and Paris (1868). He returned to Europe with the Duke of Edinburgh in the *Galatea* (1868) and some years later was commissioned to paint the picture of the Duke's wedding at St Petersburg. Settling at Porchester terrace, London, Chevalier in the next 20 years did many oils and water colours which he exhibited regularly in London and Paris. He was one of the promoters of the Melbourne Art Gallery, the first in Australia, and his picture *The Buffalo Ranges*, won the prize of £200 offered by the trustees for the best painting by a resident artist. Another of his works, *A Race to Market, Tahiti* (Royal Academy, 1880) is in the New South Wales Art Gallery, for which he acted as honorary purchaser for many years.

Owing to ill-health Chevalier did little work after 1886. He died at his home, Ashmore, Sydenham Hill, on 15 Mar 1902.

*Otago Witness*, 31 Mar 1866, 19 Jan 1867.

CHEW CHONG (1830-1920) was born in China, educated there but went as a youth to Singapore, where he spent several years in English households.

In 1855 he emigrated to Victoria, where he was storekeeping and goldmining for 11 years. He landed in Dunedin in 1866, spent two years there and then commenced travelling, mainly buying old metal for export to China. While so employed he became aware of the presence of edible fungus in the New Zealand forests, especially on the tawa, pukatea and mahoe trees, and in 1868 he commenced collecting it for export to China. During 1870-1904 he exported fungus to the value of over £375,000,

## CHILMAN

and many struggling Taranaki farmers received welcome increments of income from this source. Chew Chong opened a store in New Plymouth (with branches later in Eltham and Inglewood), selling toys and Chinese goods and buying fungus. In 1875 he purchased butter from farmers and sent a consignment to Australia, but without success. Finding that he could not sell in New Zealand at a profit, he made a shipment to Great Britain, again incurring financial loss. In 1887 he established the Jubilee dairy factory at Eltham. Two years later he installed a separator which is believed to have been the first in New Zealand, and he had two creameries augmenting the supply of milk. At the Dunedin Exhibition (1889) he received a prize for the best half-ton of butter for export. He himself milked 200 cows and gradually extended his business. He became interested in box factories and himself invented an impressed brand. In 1893 Chew Chong bought the Mangatoki factory, which he sold two years later to the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co. He retired from business about 1900 and settled in New Plymouth. He married a daughter of Joseph Whatton (Masterton). Chew Chong died on 7 Oct 1920.

Philpott (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 7 Mar 1874; *N.Z. Times*, 11 Jan 1892; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p).

CHILMAN, RICHARD (1816-77) was born in London on May 5, 1816, received a good commercial education and at the age of 16 went to America. He returned to England after an extended tour through Canada and the United States. Having recently married, he sailed in the *William Bryan* for New Plymouth in 1840. On the voyage he was appointed clerk to Cutfield, leader of the expedition, and he remained in the service of the New Zealand Company until its winding-up. Then he farmed on the east bank of the Henui river, near the coast. After a year or two on a suburban section near New Plymouth he took up bush land at Mangorei. In 1853, on the inauguration of the provinces, he was elected to the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell, which he represented to 1856. He was appointed provincial treasurer in 1853 and retained that position till 1861, when he became collector of customs. Other posts which he held were those of provincial auditor and receiver of land revenue. He was a

## CHILTON

member of the first New Plymouth borough council.

Chilman in 1871 visited England to obtain capital for the working of iron sand. He was chairman at different times of the Petroleum Co., the Pioneer Steel Co. and the Opunake Flax Co., a trustee of the Savings Bank and the New Plymouth Building Society, and chairman of the harbour board. He devoted much of his energy to the improvement of the harbour. He was one of the founders of the Taranaki Institute and its treasurer for many years. He died on 12 Mar 1877.

Wells; *Taranaki Herald*, 13 Mar 1877.

CHILTON, CHARLES (1860-1929) was born in Leominster, Herefordshire, and came to New Zealand with his parents, who took up farming at West Eyreton, Canterbury. He decided on a professional career, and attended the West Christchurch district high school and Canterbury College, where he gained his B.A. degree in 1880, and M.A. in 1881 (with first-class honours in zoology).

Working under Professor Hutton, he made a study of the crustacea of the Southern Hemisphere, about which little was known at that time. He taught in Christchurch till 1886, when he was appointed a tutor at the Dunedin Training College. Continuing his studies at Otago University, he gained his B.Sc. in 1887 (the first in New Zealand), and his D.Sc. in 1893. In 1888 he was made rector of the Port Chalmers District High School and in the same year married Elizabeth Jack. Seven years later Chilton began to study medicine at Edinburgh, where he graduated M.B.C.M. with honours (1898). Later at Heidelberg, Vienna and London, he specialised in the eye, ear and throat. Returning to New Zealand he practised in Christchurch for a year, and then filled the chair of biology and palaeontology at Canterbury College (1902-10), and later the chair of biology (1910-28). In 1921 he became rector of the College and on his retirement in 1928 he was created professor emeritus. Chilton was an original fellow, at one time president, and Hector medallist, of the New Zealand Institute; president of the Philosophic institute of Canterbury (1903-04); he was an original member of the Australasian society, an honorary member of the Royal Society of New South Wales, a fellow

## CHISHOLM

of the New Zealand University (1909-18), a member of the North Canterbury education board (1903-05), as well as of the West Christchurch school board, and of the Canterbury Agricultural College board of governors (being chairman in 1927). He was instrumental in establishing the Canterbury College biological station at Casso. His writings include many papers on crustacea, especially subterranean and sub-antarctic forms. His death occurred on 24 Oct 1929.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Hight and Candy (p); *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, Mar 1930 (p); *The Press*, 25 Oct 1929.

CHISHOLM, JAMES (1843-1916) was born at Scotlandwell, Kinrossshire, on the shores of Loch Leven, where he attended the parish school to the age of 13. He came to New Zealand in the *Three Bells* (1858) and worked with his father as a carpenter for three years. Then he visited the diggings at Gabriel's Gully, where he won sufficient to fulfil his desire of studying for the ministry.

Returning to Scotland in 1863, he took the regular arts course at Edinburgh University, where he won prizes in English literature and mental and moral philosophy. His health broke down at this stage and he returned to Dunedin, where he completed his theological studies. In 1870 he was inducted to the charge of the Tokomairiro Church, where he laboured for 28 years. In 1883 he was moderator of the Otago synod and in 1886 he acted temporarily as professor of theology. Chisholm married Jessie, daughter of J. B. Park (of Loanhead, Scotland, and afterwards master of the High street school, in Dunedin). As a pastor and as a preacher he stood very high in the Church. He also had a graceful literary style and contributed freely to the *Outlook* and other Presbyterian journals. In 1898 he published *Fifty Years Syne* (a memorial volume of the Presbyterian Church in Otago) and in 1908 a *Memoir of J. A. Torrance*. For 27 years he was a member of the foreign missions committee of the Otago Church and for 15 years of the United Church.

In 1898 Chisholm resigned the charge at Milton from a sense of duty. Taking charge of the church at Palmerston North in 1899, he succeeded in healing a breach in the congregation and then resigned in order that someone altogether unconnected with either section might

## CHURCH

be appointed. In 1901 he took charge of Roslyn, where he died in 1916. Chisholm was moderator of the General Assembly in 1908.

*Who's Who N.Z.*; A. Brown; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Chisholm, *op. cit.*; Rev J. Chisholm, *Rev James Chisholm*, 1917 (p).

CHOLMONDELEY, GEORGE JAMES (1833-1901) was born at Peel, Isle of Man, and was related to the Marquis of Cholmondeley and Lord Delamere. He came to New Zealand in the fifties to join his brother, but returned to England and studied at St Aidan's College, Birkenhead, being ordained deacon (1858) and priest (1859). He was curate of Great Cressingham and Bodney (Norwich) and Sydney and Aylburton (Gloucestershire), and returned to New Zealand in the *Tasmania*, to take up the curacy of St Michael and Ail Angels, Christchurch (1861). He became vicar of the pastoral district north of the Waimakariri; in 1862 of Heathcote and Sumner, and in 1875 of Opawa. He was made a canon in 1882 and archdeacon of Christchurch in 1890. From 1887-90 he was diocesan secretary. Cholmondeley wrote *Retrospect and Prospect* (1882), *Church Work* (1883) and *Clergy Pensions* (1885). He died on 11 Dec 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times* and *The Press*, 12 Dec 1901.

CHRISTIAN, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1867-1934) was born in London and educated at Eton and Balliol College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. in 1890. He was engaged for some years in journalism and literary work and travelled widely in the Pacific and published: *The Caroline Islands* (1899), *Eastern Pacific Lands* (1910), *Vocabulary of the Archaic Dialect of Mangaia* and other works in Polynesian philology. He was schoolmaster at Mangaia (1918-20) and public librarian at Palmerston North from 1923 till his death in 1934. He married (1911) Ethel Lilian, daughter of W. G. Mares (Romsey, Hampshire).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932.

CHURCH, HUBERT (1857-1932) was born at Hobart, Tasmania. He was taken to England as a child and received his education there, eventually proceeding to Oxford. Returning to New Zealand in 1873, he studied law in Blenheim and then entered the civil service. He

## CHURTON

was a treasury official for 33 years, retiring in 1912. Church published verse at various times, his best known books being *West Wind* (1902); *Poems* (1904), *Egmont Poems* (1908). He died at Melbourne on 8 Apr 1932.

Jessie Mackay in *The Press*, 14 May, 1932.

CHURTON, JOHN FREDERICK (1797-1853) was born in London and educated there for the bar, taking his degree of LL.B. He afterwards read for holy orders, was ordained, and in 1840 was appointed by the Church of England Society as chaplain at Wellington. He arrived in the *Bolton* (Apr 1840), and a few months later was appointed by the Bishop of Sydney to the church at Russell, Bay of Islands. Hobson gazetted him colonial chaplain, and in that capacity he read the prayers at the opening session of the Legislative Council in 1846. Soon afterwards he was appointed also vicar of St Paul's, Auckland. Churton ministered to the troops serving in New Zealand during Heke's war. He died on 26 Jan 1853.

Buick, *First War*; Buller; Ward; *New Zealander*, 26 Jan, 2 Feb, 19 Mar 1853; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Mar 1879.

CHUTE, SIR TREVOR (1817-86) was born in county Kerry, Ireland, entered the army in 1832, and served for a few years in the Ceylon Rifles. He then joined the 70th Regiment, with which he served till attaining the rank of major-general. He saw service in Ireland and, being at Peshawur when the Mutiny broke out, he succeeded in rescuing the British officers and disbanding the mutinolls sepoys. As brigadier at Lucknow he formed several flying columns to pacify the country.

In 1864 Chute came to New Zealand with the regiment. Returning to Australia on being promoted brigadier, he came back to New Zealand in 1865 to succeed General Cameron as major-general commanding. He carried out a swift and successful campaign on the West Coast, reducing seven fortified pas and many open villages and making a march from Ketemarae to New Plymouth east of mount Egmont and back by the westward route (Jan 1866). He thus effectively demonstrated that the troops could follow the natives into their forest fastnesses. (K.C.B.)

Chute was afterwards colonel of the Cheshire regiment (22nd foot). He married (1868)

## CLARK

Ellen, daughter of Samuel Browning (q.v.), of Auckland, and died on 12 Mar 1886.

Gorton; Morton; Gudgeon; Grace; Cowan; *Illustrated London News*, 1 May 1886 (p); *Wellington Independent*, 13 Mar 1866; *The Times* (London), 20 Mar 1886.

CLAPCOTT, HENRY (1830-97) was born in England and, educated for the church, but decided to emigrate and came to Otago in the *Carnatic* with his brother (1853). He walked as far as Riverton and visited Ruapuke, taking up land at Inch Clutha and Splylaw, which he exchanged for Popotunoa. Losing these runs by the declaration of hundreds, he went to the goldfields and made a good profit by running a slaughterhouse on the diggings between Gabriel's and Munro's gullies. In 1864 Clapcott was elected to the Provincial Council for Wakatipu, and he was treasurer in Paterson's executive. On the executive being defeated, he resigned from the Council to contest the superintendency, but withdrew before the poll. He was a trustee of the Dunedin Savings Bank (1864). In 1873 he was registrar of the University of Otago, and he was engaged in the eighties lecturing for the Government Life Insurance department. Clapcott died on 19 Sep 1897.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Beattie, ii; I.M.I. in *Evening Star*, 21 Sep 1897; *Otago Daily Times*; 21 Sep 1897, 23 Mar 1898.

CLARK, ARCHIBALD (1805-75) was born at Beith, Ayrshire, and educated for the Presbyterian ministry at the University of Glasgow, where he acquired a love of literature. Before completing his course he had to take charge of his father's business. In 1849 he came with his family to Auckland, where he established the firm of Archibald Clark and Sons. Taking an immediate interest in public affairs, he was the first mayor of Auckland (1851). Clark was M.H.R. for City of Auckland (1860), for City East (1866-70) and for Franklin (1871-74). He also represented Auckland East in the Provincial Council (1867-68), and took a great interest in education and in the Presbyterian Church, being an elder of St Andrew's. (See J. M. CLARK, K. M. CLARK.)

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Morton.

CLARK, CHARLES (1824-1906) was born near London and educated at the Chingford Gram-

## CLARK

mar School. He was apprenticed to an architect and afterwards worked with one for 15 years. For health reasons he came to Canterbury in the *Egmont* (1856), and after farming at Halswell road for four years, he carried on business (at first in partnership with Isaac Luck) as land agents and auctioneers. Clark was a member of the Halswell road board, of the Christchurch rifle volunteers and later of the Canterbury Yeomanry Cavalry. He represented Lincoln in the Provincial Council (1862-66), in which he generally supported Moorhouse, but he was partly responsible for bringing out Rolleston in provincial politics. His death occurred on 30 Dec 1906.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; The Press*, 31 Dec 1906.

CLARK, EDWARD HENRY (1870-1932) was the son of Edward Clark, of Macraes, Otago; was educated there and at the Palmerston District High School and apprenticed to his father (a builder). In his youth he was a successful athlete, especially on the cycle track, and was a member of the North Otago Mounted Rifles and captain of the Palmerston Rifles. On coming of age he took control of his father's business. He was chairman of the Sdloo committee, a member of the borough council from 1895, and mayor (1904-10 and 1919-23). In 1905 Clark contested the Waihemo seat against T. Mackenzie, and at the following election, standing as an Independent Liberal for Chalmers, he defeated E. G. Allen. Being re-elected in 19U he supported the Ward ministry, but on Mackenzie taking office crossed the floor with J. A. Millar and voted against him. He retired in 1914, and in 1920 was called to the Legislative Council (in which he was chairman of committees 1930-32). He was keenly interested in social reform.

Clark married (1897) Helen, daughter of David Ross (Palmerston). He died on 10 Sep 1932.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Otago Daily Times*, 11 Sep 1932 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

CLARK, HENRY (1821-1905) was born in Berwickshire, educated in the parish school at Polwarth and took to farm work. He was later apprenticed to carpentry and at the age of 22 he went to Edinburgh and worked at that trade.

Having married (1844) Christian, daughter of David Heron (Dunfermline) he sailed in

## CLARK

1848 in the *Blundell* for Otago, where in partnership with Garvie and later with W. Langlands, he carried on business as builder and contractor. His 10-acre section at Mornington he sold, and on the dissolution of his partnership, bought land at Tokomairiro, and in 1864 960 acres at Glenore. He continued building until about 1884, when he settled on his farm at Clarksville. In the first provincial elections Clark actively canvassed against the enrolment of Maori voters. He was elected M.P.C. for Tokomairiro in 1864 and sat in the Council for that seat till 1870 and for Matau (1871-75). In 1865 he was for a few days in the executive. Clark was a member of the first Bruce county council and chairman to 1897. He was on the Otago education board (1878-98) and chairman three years; a governor of the Otago High Schools (1891-95), and on the council of Otago university (1898-1901). He was a member of the Otago land board, the hospital board and the charitable board, and an elder of the Dean Free Church in Edinburgh and of First Church, Dunedin (Apr 1849). Clark died on 15 Aug 1905.

Chisholm; A. Brown; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken, *Otago; Otago Daily Times*, 16 Aug 1905.

CLARK, JAMES McCOSH (1833-98) was born at Beith, Ayrshire, Scotland, and arrived in Auckland with his father (Archibald Clark, q.v.) in 1849. In 1856 he became a partner in the business, and later senior and managing partner. He commanded No 6 company Auckland Volunteer Rifles in the Waikato campaign (1863), being at Galloway's redoubt. Clark was M.P.C. for Newton (Jan-Oct 1870), a member of the City Council (1886-87), and mayor of Auckland (1880-83). During his mayoralty the city tramways were built and sites fixed for the public library and the town hall. He was chairman of the Auckland education board and president of the chamber of commerce. He died in London on 27 Jan 1898.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Cowie; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Feb 1898.

CLARK, KATE EMMA McCOSH (1847-1926) (nee Woolnough) was born at Ipswich, Suffolk, England, educated there and studied art. In 1875 she married James McCosh Clark (q.v.) and came to reside in New Zealand. She exhibited for many years at the Auckland Art

## CLARKE

Society's exhibitions. Mrs. Clark took an interest in St Mary's home, the Blind Institute and the Girls' Friendly Society. She resided in England (1889-1900) and during that period published *A Southern Cross Fairy Tale*, with notes by Reischek (1891); *Persephone and Other Poems* (1894), and *Maori Tales and Legends* (1896). She died on 30 Nov 1926.

Cowie; *Annals N.Z. Lit.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Jan 1898, 1 Dec 1926.

CLARKE, GEORGE (1798-1875) was born in England and apprenticed to a gunsmith. He was early interested in mission work. Arriving in New South Wales in Oct 1822, he stayed with Samuel Marsden at Parramatta until Jan 1823, when he was sent to assist in the formation of a settlement for the benefit of Australian natives.

Early in 1824 Marsden arranged for him to proceed to New Zealand with his wife and son in the French corvette *Coquille*, which arrived at Bay of Islands on 3 Apr. Stationed at Kerikeri, and living at first with the Kemps, he knew Hongi well and enjoyed his friendship, though Hongi always resented his refusal to practise his trade of a gunsmith. Teaching in the native school, Clarke acquired the language so rapidly that he was able to assist Marsden on his next pilgrimage in New Zealand. When the Wesleyan mission at Wesleydale was sacked (early in 1827) Clarke hastened to assist the distressed missionaries to the Bay of Islands. Governor Hobson, impressed by his knowledge of the Maori and his success in establishing a farm colony at Waimate, offered him the post of protector of aborigines (May 1841). In the next few years he rendered capable and interesting reports upon native affairs in all parts of the country. His advocacy of the rights of the natives made him unpopular in the Company's settlements. It was on his advice that Hobson concluded the purchase which led to Nopera's war. He advised also on the claims of Waikato in north Taranaki and on the purchase of the Waitemata (which was never impugned). He had great influence also with Governor FitzRoy, who relied upon his advice; but Governor Grey was less impressed with his qualities. He recognised the incongruity of a protector taking part in the purchase of native lands, and later questioned the validity of his own landed possessions. In 1846 Grey abolished

## CLARKE

the protectorate and assumed personally the management of native affairs.

Clarke returned to duty as New Zealand secretary of the Church Missionary Society, but his connection was terminated by the Society (with that of Henry Williams) in Nov 1849. Returning to settle at Bay of Islands, Clarke was elected in Sep 1852 to the Legislative Council of New Ulster (which never met). In the following year he was elected to the Auckland Provincial Council for Bay of Islands, but at the following election (1855) he was defeated. Clarke was a judge of the native land court for some years. He died on 29 Jul 1875.

Two of his sons were the Rev GEORGE CLARKE (q.v.), and HENRY TACY CLARKE (d. 1902, who was a judge of the native land court and M.P.C. for Bay of Islands 1859-60).

G.B.O.P., 1847; *Parltry Record*; Clarke; Stock; Ramsden; Thomson; Marsden, *L. and J.*; E. Wilson; *Queen v. George Clarke* (report of action to annul a land grant) 1844; S. M. Martin.

CLARKE, GEORGE (1823-1913), son of George Clarke (q.v.), was born at Parramatta and came to New Zealand in the following year with his father. At the age of seven he was taken to Australia and lived with Marsden at Parramatta for a while.

In 1833 he went to Hobart for his education, returning to New Zealand early in 1837. He lived at Waimate and studied the classics under the Rev William Williams, with whom he moved to Poverty Bay (1839). He made many missionary journeys with his tutor in the East Cape country, where the news of the Gospel preceded them, borne by slaves returning from captivity in the north. Clarke studied Greek and Latin assiduously, and in his daily life became familiar with the character and language of the Maori people, of whose rights he was an ardent champion. In Dec 1840 he rejoined his father at Bay of Islands and shortly afterwards, resisting the desire to enter the Church forthwith, was appointed clerk in the Native Department. As interpreter at the trial of Maketu for the murder of a European family at Bay of Islands (Feb 1842) Clarke, under the instructions of the Chief Justice (Martin) explained to the natives with the utmost care the procedure of British law, and so helped materially to reconcile them to the transfer of authority

## CLAYTON

to the crown. He was afterwards attached to Spain's land claims commission as interpreter and Maori advocate.

The protectorate of aborigines being abolished in 1846, Clarke now desired to follow his bent, and in 1848 he sailed for England to complete his education for the ministry of the Congregational Church. He returned to the colonies in 1851 and was appointed to the Congregational Church in Collins street, Hobart (afterwards in Davey street), where he ministered for 52 years. As a minister he was eloquent, learned, zealous and broadminded. He took a great interest in higher education and was partly instrumental in bringing into existence the University of Tasmania, of which he was chancellor 1898-1907. Clarke died on 10 Mar 1913. In 1903 he published *Notes on Early Life in New Zealand*.

G.B.a.p., 1847/837; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii; *Chambers Cycl.*; Clarke, *op. cit.* (p); Marsden, *L. and J.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 19 Mar 1913.

CLAYTON, WILLIAM HENRY (1822-77) was the eldest son of Henry Clayton, of Wickford, Tasmania. He qualified in Brussels as an architect and in London (under Sir John Rennie) and practised for some years in Australia before coming to Dunedin, where he became a partner of W. Mason in the early sixties. He made the acquaintance of Vogel (who married his daughter, 1867). In 1869 Clayton was appointed Colonial Architect, in which capacity he designed many important buildings, including the Government block in Wellington and the old Parliament House (destroyed by fire in 1907). He also practised privately, designing among other buildings St Mary of the Angels Church. He was the first to use concrete in a private house, portion of his own residence in Hobson street (afterwards Queen Margaret College) being of that material. Clayton died on 23 Aug 1877.

Personal information from J. L. F. Vogel; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Aug 1877; *Wellington Almanac* 1878; *N.Z. Times*, 1 Mar 1912 (Obit. H. C. Field).

CLEARY, HENRY WILLIAM (1859-1929) was born at Oulart, county Wexford, Ireland, the son of a farmer. He was educated at St Aidan's Academy, Enniscorthy (1874-76), at St Peter's College, Wexford, and then at Maynooth Ecclesiastical College, near Dublin. From there he

## CLEARY

proceeded to the Pontifical Seminary at the Lateran, Rome, pursuing higher studies in theology and canon law at the Papal University of the Apollinaire (1880-83). His health suffered from close study in Rome and he had several times to retire for rest periods. On leaving Rome he completed his studies at the College of St Sulpice in Paris (1884).

In the following year Cleary was ordained priest in the Shannon chapel at Enniscorthy and was appointed to the house of missions there. Owing to indifferent health he did not remain in mission work but was sent as assistant to the parish priest at Monagheer. He was then appointed professor of modern languages in his old college at St Peters, where one of his pupils was Sir James O'Connor, afterwards Lord Chief Justice of Ireland. It seemed imperative that he should seek change of climate and in 1888 he took up duty as assistant priest in the diocese of Ballarat, in Australia. In 1890 he went to Hamilton (Victoria) and later to Ararat. While there, in addition to intense devotion to parochial duties, he undertook the task of defending the Catholic faith in the press. Working at high pressure he published a book, *The Orange Society*, which ran into 12 editions.

This work attracted the attention of Bishop Verdon and Cleary was in 1898 invited to assume control of the Catholic organ in New Zealand, the *New Zealand Tablet*. His term in charge of that paper was distinguished by brilliant journalistic success and in 1900 the paper received the apostolic blessing. While in Dunedin Cleary published *An Impeached Nation*, giving the Irish version of the agrarian outrages which were constantly occurring in Ireland. He also published *Secular v. Religious Education* and wrote a number of articles for the *Catholic Encyclopaedia*. In recognition of the notable work done in this sphere the Pope in 1908 conferred upon him the doctorate of divinity. He made an extensive tour abroad in 1910, including a long visit to Central and South American countries for the purpose of establishing a number of Catholic news agencies which should combat hostile propaganda at its source. He was made a life member of the International Catholic Truth Society. While Cleary was on this tour the death occurred of Dr Lenihan (q.v.), Bishop of Auckland, and the nomination of a new bishop was unamim-

## CLEARY

ously in favour of Dr Cleary. He was consecrated on 21 Aug 1910 at Enniscorthy and he took possession of his see on 11 Jan 1911.

The new Bishop made the Maori people his especial care, and for that purpose learned the language thoroughly. He was mainly responsible for the establishment of St Peters rural training college at Takapuna, in which the Mill Hill Fathers co-operated and which they afterwards controlled. There selected native boys are not only trained for service as catechists, but learn technical work of various kinds which they may afterwards impart to their own people. Cleary saw the Star of the Sea home for orphans at Howick replanned on generous lines. He wrote many fairy tales for children and personally told them to the orphans. He was most zealous in the cause of Catholic education, building schools wherever he could find the means, and publishing many pamphlets in defence of the Catholic standpoint on the Bible-in-Schools question. He envisaged a Catholic school in every parish. During his episcopate of Auckland he saw the number of parishes increased from 33 to 57, of primary schools from 30 to 51, of secondary schools from 8 to 9, of children receiving Catholic education from 3,300 to 7,200, and the total Catholic population from 31,000 to 55,000. He took the interest of a scholar and a historian in the preservation of Catholic archives, which he left complete and well organised as a legacy to posterity. In 1916 he had to go abroad for the medical advice and spent some months in various private hospitals in Australia, America and Great Britain. Finding in England that there was only one Catholic chaplain for the military camps of the New Zealand division in Great Britain, and that the 2nd brigade in France had none, he volunteered for service and on 31 Oct 1916 was gazetted a chaplain of the 4th class. From Dec 1916 to Feb 1917 he was with the troops in the front line. Though he received injuries in attending the wounded under fire he did not flinch; and found time also to write his observations of the effect of shell fire upon bird life. (O.B.E. 1918.) He returned to New Zealand in Oct 1917. In 1918 Cleary founded a Catholic newspaper in Auckland, *The Month*. His death occurred on 9 Dec 1929.

*The Month*, *pass.* (notably 17 Dec 1929 (p)); *N.z. Tablet*, *pass.*; Studholme; Cleary, *op. cit.*;

## CLENDON

Father Martindale, *The Risen Sun*; H. Stewart, *Official Hist. of N.Z.'s War Effort*, vol ii; *N.Z. Herald* and *The Dominion*, 10 Dec 1929.

CLENDON, JAMES REDDY (1801-72), who was born at Deal, Kent, was a London merchant and shipowner, and commenced trading to New Zealand with his broker, John Chitty Clendon, at least as early as 1828. In 1831, he brought back two Maori chiefs, Taraia and 'Ahouiffe' to England to see the King, and also made an interesting report to Lord Goderich on conditions in New Zealand. While in command of the *City of Edinburgh* he had bought land in the Bay of Islands from Pomare and others in Dec 1830, and on this he settled in Sep 1832, opening a trading establishment in partnership with Samuel Stephenson at Okiato. During the official residency of Busby (q.v.), Clendon, being one of the wealthiest settlers and influential with the natives, played a prominent part. When Busby's house was attacked (May 1834), he protested against Busby's weak handling of the natives and joined his fellow-settlers in petitioning for military protection. He was one of the leading agitators for the prohibition of spirits (1835), and gave a practical lead by starting all his own casks. He supported Busby, however, in his attempt to confederate the Norman chiefs, and he (not, as usually stated, James C. Clendon) was a witness to the Declaration of Independence (28 Oct 1835). In the war of 1837, he saved the lives and property of several Europeans at the Bay, and assisted the Rev Henry Williams in the peace negotiations. Buick's suggestion that Clendon acted as assistant-resident at Hokianga is mistaken. He was the first consul at Bay of Islands for the United States (1838-42). From the beginning of 1839 to Apr 1841, Clendon acted as American consul at the Bay of Islands. Though the Colonial Office had anticipated that the American government might protest against the establishment of British sovereignty Clendon did not consider that his office obliged him to oppose Hobson's mission. On the contrary, he actively supported Busby and Williams in winning over the chiefs to the treaty of Waitangi, his influence with the natives being the greater because his office created the impression that he was disinterested. He signed the memorial witnessing Hobson's assumption of authority, and was one of the witnesses to the treaty.

CLENDON

The decision to fix the seat of government temporarily at Bay of Islands, and to form a government township there, gave Clendon an opportunity for profitable speculation. Felton Mathew (q.v.), as acting surveyor-general, reported that Clendon's estate at Okiato (some 380 acres) was the only site in the Bay suitable for government purposes. Clendon, anticipating this, had had his land surveyed and laid out as a township, and commenced selling lots. He was willing enough to sell to the Government, and started by asking £23,000; he refused to suspend sale of lots till Hobson referred to Gipps for authority to buy; and eventually (22 Mar) he agreed to accept £15,000. The price was not unduly high compared with the speculative prices then prevailing and the very high cost of building material and labour. The buildings consisted of a comfortable dwelling house, a large store, two small cottages, and blacksmith's and carpenter's shops, valued at £13,000, the land being valued at £2,000. In the event, it proved that Clendon had not made as good a bargain as he thought. Gipps refused to sanction the purchase, the sale of lots in the government township of 'Russell' was held up *sine die*, and without the income from sales neither capital nor interest due to Clendon was forthcoming. He had received only the first instalment of £1,000. In Jun 1841 he was persuaded to accept £1,250 as *rent* plus interest on the debt to date, and 10,000 acres of government land in lieu of the capital sum still due. His selection of this land was limited, and instead of getting a block at Tamaki (near the new capital of Auckland) he had to take 10,000 acres at Papakura. The value of these lands fell sharply, to about 1/6 per acre, and in 1845 Clendon complained (in a petition to Lord Stanley), that he was the loser, in capital and accumulated interest, to the tune of nearly £18,000.

In Mar 1840 Clendon was appointed magistrate, and he was a member of the Legislative Council (1841-44). After the destruction of Kororareka, he was made police magistrate at Bay of Islands in place of Thomas Beckham. His confidential reports to the Governor throw much light on the conduct of the war in the north (1845-46), the condition of the Natives, and the intrigues of the few disaffected Europeans. His nominal census of the Bay of Islands and Ho-

CLIFFORD

kianga districts in 1846 is an interesting compilation. He was superseded as magistrate (Dec 1846) by the senior military officer, but was reappointed in Jun 1850 and held other offices (sub-treasurer, 1850; registrar of births, etc., 1854; and inspector of police, 1859). About the end of 1861, he removed to Herd's Point (Rawene) on the Hokianga, resigning his Bay offices, and becoming magistrate, inspector of customs, and registrar at Hokianga. He was superannuated in 1866 with a pension. He continued trading till the end of his life, but latterly his affairs went badly, mainly through giving too much credit. He died at Rawene, 24 Oct 1872. J.R.

N.Z. Archives, G. 1, B.R. 1 and 2; *N.Z. Gaz.; Journals L.C. of N.Z.*; G.B.O.P., 1842/569; U.S. Department of State (consular service); Glendon MSS.; Felton Mathew MSS.; P.R.O., Series C.O. 202 and 209; Carleton; McNab; *Whaling*; McNab, *Hist. Rec.*; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Ramsden; Buick, *Waitangi*.

CLIFFORD, SIR CHARLES (1813-93) was born at Mount Vernon, near Liverpool, the son of George L. Clifford, and grandson of the Hon Thomas Clifford. Educated at Stonyhurst College, he came to New Zealand in the *George Fyfe* and at once set to work to clear his section near Porirua, on which he and Vavasour entertained their fellow passengers at a picnic before they went on to Nelson.

Having been gazetted a justice of the peace in 1844 and a member of the Legislative Council, Clifford went to Auckland to attend the sittings of that body. In 1845 he, in view of the unrest amongst the native tribes, took his part in the mobilisation of the militia and volunteers for the defence of the Port Nicholson settlement. With Vavasour and Weld he took up land in the lower valley of the Wairarapa and their sheep, driven round the rocks from Wellington, were actually the first to reach their station in the valley, though C. R. Bidwill reached the valley first and cut the track by which the others overtook him. Meanwhile Clifford was conducting a land agency in Wellington. His attention was attracted to pastoral land in the northern part of the South Island, and he made some explorations there which resulted in the partnership in 1846 taking up a large area of open country on lease. They at once brought a flock of merino sheep across and

CLIFFORD

occupied what was afterwards known as Flaxbourne and Stonyhurst stations, on the borders of Canterbury and Marlborough. In 1850 they had 10,000 merino sheep thriving on the native grass and were so well satisfied with the outlook that they parted with their interests in the North Island and concentrated on their new station.

In 1847 Clifford married Mary Anne (who died in 1899), daughter of John Hercy, deputy lieutenant of Berkshire. He was now actively engaged in the agitation for self-government, and took part in the work in England, where he spent most of the years 1848-50. On his return the partners decided to dispose of their property at Wharekaka, in south Wairarapa. They were soon realising the highest prices in New Zealand for their rams bred in the South Island.

At the inauguration of the new constitution Clifford, although a Catholic, was returned at the head of the poll as representative for Wellington City in the Provincial Council. He was at once elected speaker of the Council, a position which he filled with credit until his voluntary retirement in 1857. He took a great interest in the development of provincial institutions and was a member of the education commission in 1854. In 1853 also he was elected to Parliament for the City of Wellington. When he took his seat at Auckland on the opening of Parliament he already had a reputation as a speaker. Edward Gibbon Wakefield, and others who desired him to be Speaker of the House feared that he might use his position to favour his own faith. Clifford, on the other hand, with his co-religionist Weld, was actuated by one thought only as regards religion. He wished to ensure, as Bishop Pompallier had done at Waitangi in 1840, merely that all religions should have equal freedom in the new colony; that there should be no suggestion of a state religion. He declined to give Wakefield any assurances and was eventually elected Speaker without opposition. Though he had refused to give any undertaking to get a Church of England clergyman to open with prayer, he had arranged that one of that denomination (the Rev J. F. Lloyd) should be in the vicinity at the moment when Parliament commenced its deliberations. Having been elected Speaker, he stated that he believed it would be the wish of members that they should open their meeting

CLIFFORD

with some sort of prayer and he requested the sergeant-at-arms to go outside and bring in the first clergyman he could find. Lloyd soon made his appearance, and said a prayer. The House afterwards debated at length the manner of saying prayers and eventually referred it to a committee of two to recommend a procedure (Clifford and Weld being the committee). They recommended that the Speaker should read prayers at the opening of each Sitting of Parliament, a course that has been followed to the present day.

In 1858 Clifford was knighted. He paid a visit to England in 1860 and, having decided to remain there, resigned his seat in Parliament and the Speakership. In England he was a director of several financial companies. On 16 Jul 1887 Clifford was created a baronet (£ Flaxbourne). His death occurred on 27 Feb 1893.

*Wellington P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.Z. Gaz.*; *N.Z.P.D.*; Burke; Acland; Bidwill; *D.N.B.*; Ward (P); Lovat; Rusden; Gisborne; Godley, *Letters*; *Wellington Independent*, 7 Jul 1847; *Taranaki Herald*, 3 Mar 1893.

CLIFFORD, SIR CHARLES LEWIS (1885-1938), 3rd baronet, was the only son of Sir George (q.v.). He was educated at the Marist Brothers' school at Christchurch, St Patrick's College, Wellington, and Stonyhurst College, England. Being rejected for service with the New Zealanders in the war of 1914-18, he served with the Lancashire Yeomanry Hussars (as lieutenant), and afterwards with the Lancashire Fusiliers, being part of the time in Salonika. On returning to New Zealand he was mainly interested during his father's lifetime in yachting and shipping, but after his father's death he continued both the stud at Stonyhurst and Chokebore Lodge at Riccarton and raced with great success. With horses of his own breeding he was at the head of the winning list on six occasions. Some of his most successful horses were Fast Passage, Wild Chase, Cricket Bat and Fracas. H. and A. Cutts were his trainers throughout. Clifford was unmarried, and on his death (13 Sep 1938) was succeeded by his uncle, WALTER LOVELACE CLIFFORD (1853-), son of the first baronet.

*N.Z. Racing Calendar*; *The Press*, Sep 14, 1938.

CLIFFORD, SIR GEORGE HUGH (1847-1930) 2nd baronet, was the eldest son of the first

## CLIFFORD

baronet (Sir Charles, q.v.). Educated at Stonyhurst College, Lancashire, he was called to the bar in London and returned to New Zealand well equipped for public life, for which, however, he had no bent. He assumed the management of his father's estates, Flaxbourne and Stonyhurst, and took a keen interest in sheep breeding and in racing. About 1886 he commenced breeding at Stonyhurst halfbred Lincoln-Merinos, which soon achieved a high reputation, gaining prizes at many shows and becoming dispersed fairly widely over the type of country in which Stonyhurst was situated. He was chairman of the New Zealand Sheepbreeders' Association (South Island) from 1902 and president of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral Association (1911), and was one of the founders of the Canterbury Frozen Meat Co. (of which he was a director from 1901 and chairman from 1902). He was chairman also of the New Zealand Shipping Co. for a term (before the merger with the P. and O. Co.), of the Christchurch Press Co. and the Gas Co. (from 1908), Hayward brothers, the Blackball Coal Co. and Booth Macdonald and Co.

In public life Clifford took little part beyond being chairman of the Waipara county council for some years. He was, however, very prominent in the government of racing. He was a life member of the Canterbury Jockey Club and the Wellington and Auckland Racing Clubs, and for 34 years president of the New Zealand racing conference. During this time he introduced many reforms in the government of the sport and the conditions of those connected with it. Clifford first raced at Burnham Water, Wellington, at the age of 11. He saw much of the sport while in England and established his own racing stud at Stonyhurst in the early eighties with horses purchased from Henry Redwood. Tiger Tim and Cruchfield were two of his earliest successes. Amongst the animals which he purchased for stud purposes were Aurifera, Maligner and Clanranald, and he bred many horses of the highest records. In 1903-04 for the first time he was at the head of the list of winning owners for the season. He won all the leading races in the Dominion and most of them on several occasions. The Clanranald stock were most famous in their day, but up to his death Clifford allowed no diminution in the quality of his stud and raced with unin-

## COATES

errupted success. Winning Hit won the two Derbies and created a record for the Idle and a quarter for Australia and New Zealand which has stood for many years. All of Clifford's trainers were of the Cutts family. Edward Cutts trained for more than thirty years, his sons H. and A. Cutts succeeding him.

Clifford married first (1880) Mary, daughter of Sir John Lawson. She having died in the same year, he married (1884) Janet (d. 1885), daughter of James Burnett (Nelson). He had one son. In 1891 he married Helen Frances, daughter of the Rev James Dennis. He died on 17 Apr 1930.

Burke, *Peerage; N.Z. Racing Calendar; Acland; Chadwick; The Press*, 19 Apr 1930 (p).

COATES, DANDESON (1778-1846), the lay secretary of the Church Missionary Society, joined the committee of the Society in 1817 and from 1820 (on the retirement of the Rev E. H. Bickersteth) took up his residence in the Mission House. An able correspondent and a man of great business ability, he drew up the regulations for the control of the vast machinery of the Society, expounded the Society's point of view in controversy, and guarded it jealously against official church control. He became assistant-secretary on the retirement of the Rev Josiah Pratt in 1824, and lay secretary in 1830. From 1840, when the Rev William Jowett, the clerical secretary, retired, Coates was sole secretary. He had long been the ruling mind of the Society. He was against Bickersteth in the theological controversy of 1831, and was an uncompromising opponent of the various schemes to colonise New Zealand. On 27 Nov 1837 he wrote: "Only let New Zealand be spared from Colonisation, and the mission have its free and unrestricted course for half a century more, and the great political and moral problems will be solved: In evidence before the various parliamentary committees he adhered firmly to this view. Coates died on 23 Apr 1846.

G.B.O.P., 1838, *et. seq.*; Stock.

COATES, ISAAC (1839-1932) was born near Richmond, Yorkshire, educated there and brought up to farming. He came to Lyttelton in the *Lancashire Witch* in 1867 and moved to Auckland in 1868. He spent one year on the Thames goldfield before settling in Waikato, as one of the earliest purchasers of land near

## COATES

Hamilton. He took a number of important contracts for drainage, railways and other works and was engaged in flaxmilling, being interested in several mills. As a farmer he was one of the first to introduce agricultural machinery into the Waikato. Coates was a member of the first borough council in Hamilton and mayor of the town for five years to 1892. He also sat on the Waikato hospital board and charitable aid board and the Waikato county council and was chairman of the Kirikiriroa road board for three years. He died on 1 May 1932.

*N.Z. Herald*, 2 May 1932.

COATES, SIR JAMES HUGH BUCHANAN (1851-1935) was born at Auckland, the son of James Coates (1815-54), who was born in Jamaica and came to New Zealand in Jul 1841. James Coates was gazetted sheriff on 3 May 1841 and appointed clerk to the Legislative Council. He married in 1841 Sarah Anne (1819-92), only daughter of G. H. Bendall, of Somersetshire, who arrived in the *Chelydra* from New South Wales. In 1846 Coates was appointed chief clerk in the Colonial Secretary's office; in 1853 clerk to the Auckland Provincial Council and in 1854 clerk to the House of Representatives, but he did not live to assume the last post.

The son James was educated at the Church of England Grammar School (under Kinder) and joined the Bank of New South Wales in 1868. On the establishment of the National Bank of New Zealand in 1873 he joined its staff, and in 1893 became general manager. The head office was then in Dunedin. After a visit to London Coates moved the headquarters to Wellington (1894). He retired on pension in 1914 and joined the London directorate. Coates was one of the Wellington commissioners for the visit to New Zealand of the Duke and Duchess of Cornwall and York in 1901. In that year he was appointed by the London debenture holders of the Midland Railway Co. as their receiver in the settlement with the New Zealand government. A Liberal in politics, he frequently advised the Seddon and Ward administrations, and he was offered the post of president of the Bank of New Zealand under the legislation of the nineties. During the war of 1914-18 Coates rendered valuable service to New Zealand organisations in England. He was

## COCKAYNE

knighted in 1922. His death occurred on 11 Oct 1935.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908-32; *N.Z. Gaz.*, 1841-54.; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Scholefield, *Hobson; N.Z. Herald* and *Evening Post*, 11 Oct 1935; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Jan 1922.

COCK, RICHARD (1851-1936) was born at New Plymouth, the son of Richard Cock (1820-85), and educated at Crompton's school. At an early age he was apprenticed for seven years as a chemist under Dr E. L. Humphries, who also managed a wine and spirit business. During this period (1864) he accompanied the 43rd Regiment into the field on active service. He commenced volunteering in 1868 and was a keen soldier throughout, being colour-sergeant to the left half-company at Parihaka (1881).

In 1875 he went into business as a wine and spirit merchant. For many years he took a leading part in local government. He was a borough councillor (1881-85, 1889-91) and was mayor (1903-06); a member of the harbour board (sometime chairman) and a sinking fund commissioner; a trustee of the New Plymouth Savings Banks from 1893 (chairman 1921-36); chairman of the hospital board; chairman of the school commissioners until their abolition; a director of the Taranaki Building Society from 1884 (chairman 1892-1936) and a founder of the Taranaki chamber of commerce. He was one of the promoters of the Crown Dairy Co., a director of the New Plymouth Sash and Door Co.; chairman of the Petroleum Co. in the eighties; one of the first directors of the Moturoa Freezing Co., and a director of several of the ironsand companies during the manager-ship of E. M. Smith and D. Atkinson. He was president of the Industrial Exhibition (1904-05).

Cock was a prominent freemason and an officebearer of the M.U.I.O.O.F. He married (1876) Alice Maud, daughter of James Taylor (Wellington). He died on 28 May 1936.

Philpott; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 28 May 1936.

COCKAYNE, LEONARD (1855-1934) was born at Norton Lees, Derbyshire, the son of a merchant, and was educated at private schools, at Wesley College, Sheffield, and at Owens College, Manchester. He emigrated to Australia in 1876 and spent several years teaching. There

## COCKAYNE

he married (1881) Maria Maude Blakeley, of Harcourt, Victoria. In 1880 Cockayne came to New Zealand, and was employed for a year on the staff of the Tokomairiro Grammar School. Having a bent for botany and natural history, he became interested in New Zealand plant life, and when he took up farming in Canterbury, he devoted much attention to the cultivation of trees and shrubs and the reclamation of sand dunes. Between 1887 and 1903 he conducted a private experimental station for research in the flora of New Zealand, and made botanical explorations of various parts of the Dominion and the Antarctic and Chatham islands. From 1906 he was engaged by the Lands Department making reports on the reclamation of sand dunes, on Kapiti island, the Waipoua forest, Tongariro National Park and Stewart island.

As early as 1903 Cockayne's work attracted the recognition of learned societies abroad. In that year he received the honorary doctorate of philosophy of Munich University. In 1905 he was elected honorary corresponding member of the Botanic Society of Edinburgh, in 1910 a fellow of the Linnaean Society, and in 1912 of the Royal Society. He received the Hector medal and prize for botany in 1912 and the Hutton medal in 1914; was president of the New Zealand Institute (1918-19) and an original fellow (1919); and the first honorary member of the Philosophical Institute of Canterbury (1923). Cockayne was a member of the royal commission on forestry (1913); of the Cawthron commission (1919); of the pastoral commission (1920); of the Kapiti island board and the Christchurch domain board, and a governor of the Cawthron Institute and of the New Zealand Institute.

In 1916 he was appointed to carry out researches regarding mountain pastures, and in the following year he investigated the causes of yellow leaf in flax. From 1922 he was engaged in an economic study of forests. His contributions to the study of ecology were recognised abroad by honorary membership of such bodies as the Plant-Geographical Society of Sweden (1927), the Botanical Society of America (1927) and the Forestry Society of Finland (1926). The Royal Society in 1928 awarded him the Darwin medal, the first to be awarded to a scientist in the Southern hemis-

## COHEN

phere. Cockayne received the Mueller medal from the Australasian Association for the Advancement of Science. He placed the city of Wellington under a debt of gratitude to him by the creation of the Otari plant reserve. In 1929 he was awarded the C.M.G. Cockayne's publications include: *New Zealand Plants and their Story* (1910); *The Vegetation of New Zealand* (1921); *The Cultivation of New Zealand Plants* (1923); numerous official reports, and about 120 shorter papers and memoirs on floristic, ecological and economic botany, experimental morphology of plants, evolution, plant distribution and life history. He collaborated with E. Phillips Turner in *New Zealand Trees* (1928).

Cockayne died on 8 Jul 1934 and was interred in the Otari reserve. His son, ALFRED HYDE COCKAYNE (1880 -) became Director of Agriculture.

*App. H.R., pass.; Trans. N.Z. Inst.; Cockayne, op. cit.; The Dominion and Evening Post, 9 Jul 1934.*

COCKER, JAMES (1862-1935) was born at Calver, Devonshire, and educated there and at Hartley College, Manchester, and ordained in the Methodist ministry in 1890. He was nine years at Buxton works and one year at Ashton-under-Lyme Primitive Methodist church before coming to New Zealand (in 1890). He held many charges here but was notable for his work in the temperance movement and in journalism as editor of the *N.Z. Primitive Methodist* (1905-13), associate editor of the *New Zealand Methodist Times* (1915-19) and editor of the *Vanguard*. He was a member of licensing committees in four cities. Cocker published a number of books on Biblical and social topics. He married (1892) Sarah A. Holles (of Calver). His death occurred on 6 Mar 1935.

*Who's Who N.Z., 1932.*

COHEN, MARK (1849-1928) was born in London, came to Victoria with his parents at the age of seven, and was educated at Pope's and Mitchell's schools at Ballarat and at the Jewish school in Melbourne.

In 1863 he came to Otago, and was apprenticed to a signwriter and painter, but left this for a legal office, where he began to study law. In 1865 he joined the *Otago Daily Times* staff as a junior, and in 1866 went over to the *Evening Star*. Except for a short time on the

## COHEN

*Independent* and the *Sun* in 1869, Cohen spent the rest of his life in association with the *Star*. He was in succession reporter, sub-editor and associate editor, and in 1893 became editor. A very capable journalist and forceful writer, he had also a knack of choosing brilliant men to write for the *Star*, notably M. J. S. Mackenzie, Rutherford Waddell, H. D. Bedford and P. W. Fairclough.

Cohen was a member of the Dunedin City Council (1888, 1890-93) and in 1891 contested the mayoralty against C. R. Chapman. He took a great interest in every class of education. For some years he was a member of the Union Street school committee, and he helped to organise the Dunedin and Suburban schools association, of which he was chairman. He was a member also of the technical classes association in Dunedin and of the Otago education board (from 1896, and chairman 1898-99). For some years he was honorary secretary of the Dunedin free public library, and he was one of the founders of the New Zealand Library Association. Cohen was also a founder (in 1881) of the Dunedin Free Kindergarten Association, of which he was elected a life member, and he helped to establish the Prince Edward convalescent home at Forbury.

He attended the World press congress in 1907 and the first Empire Press Union conference in 1909. In 1920 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 3 Mar 1928). Cohen married (1876) Sara, daughter of Woolf Isaacs.

*N.Z.P.D., pass.* (notably 3 Jul 1928); Scholefield, *Union Catalogue; Otago Daily Times and Evening Star, 5 Mar 1928* (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

COHEN, MAURICE (1862-1934) was born at Cooma, New South Wales, the son of Sigismund Cohen, and came to New Zealand with his parents as a child. He was educated partly at Christ's College and at the New Zealand University and commenced mercantile life in 1878 with Mason Struthers and Co., Christchurch. In 1881 he joined J. Nathan and Co., Wellington, and shortly afterwards was appointed manager of the Palmerston North branch. On the incorporation of the Manawatu Farmers' Co-operative Association, he was appointed general manager, and in 1895 he became manager in Palmerston North of the United Farmers' Co-

## COLEMAN

operative Association. He retired in 1920.

Cohen was mayor of Palmerston North (1905-07), a member of the Wellington harbour board (1908-32), president of the Palmerston North chamber of commerce (1899) and of the Manawatu A. and P. association (1906). He was keenly interested in music. In Sydney he was a member of the Musical Union and in Palmerston he was for 20 years conductor of the Orchestral Society. Cohen was an advocate of the separation of Palmerston North from Wanganui in hospital administration. He was a prominent freemason and held office in many sports bodies. He died on 8 Jul 1934.

*Who's Who N.Z., 1924, 1932; Cycl. N.Z., i* (P).

COLBECK, WILLIAM HENRY (1829-1901) was born in Yorkshire, educated there and brought up to the woollen trade. Coming to New Zealand in 1877, he lived for seven years in the north of Auckland, where he purchased a large block of land in the Kaipara district and laid out the town of Batley with the intention of settling English immigrants upon it. He was M.H.R. for Marsden (1879-81) and was one of the four Auckland members who crossed the House to support the Hall ministry. In 1884 he settled in Auckland, becoming interested in many companies and the chamber of commerce, and being for a while president of the Bank of New Zealand and of the Auckland Club. He stood for Rodney in 1887 but was defeated. Colbeck died on 25 Jun 1901.

*Saunders, ii; Auckland Star, 26 Jun 1901.*

COLEMAN, WILLIAM (1830-89) was born in county Waterford, Ireland; educated at the seminary of the Vincentian brothers in Cork and at Maynooth, and held several curacies in the diocese of Cloyne. At Ballymacada, county Cork, he was parish priest when Dr. Moran was appointed Bishop of Dunedin and he volunteered to come with him (1871). He was appointed vicar-general almost immediately, did much of the work of organisation and in 1874 visited Ireland to procure young priests and nuns of the teaching order. In 1876 he was appointed to charge of the Oamaru district and in 1882 became archdeacon of the diocese. He was later advanced to the dignity of a monsignor and domestic chaplain to the Pope. He died on 15 Dec 1889.

*Otago Daily Times, 22 Jan 1890.*

COLENZO

COLENZO, WILLIAM (1811-99) was born at Penzance, Cornwall, a son of Samuel May Colenso and first cousin of John William Colenso, Bishop of Natal. Educated privately in Penzance, he was apprenticed to printing and bookbinding there and afterwards worked as a compositor in London.

In 1833 the C.M.S. appealed for a mission press to be established in New Zealand. The S.P.C.K. responded, and Colenso was engaged as a catechist and printer. He landed at Paihia on 30 Dec 1834. Though lacking much of the requisite equipment, he produced on 17 Feb 1835 the first proofs of the first book printed in New Zealand, the epistles to the Ephesians and the Philippians (in Maori). In Dec 1837 he completed his new testament, an octavo volume in small pica type, of which 6,000 copies were printed. In Jan 1838 he accompanied W. Williams on a visit to the East Coast. When Captain Hobson arrived Colenso carried out most of the printing in connection with the treaty of Waitangi (of which he published in 1890 an authentic narrative based on his diary). From this time Colenso devoted himself to missionary work. He travelled a great deal in the north, the East Coast and Waikato in 1841-42, and in Oct 1843 sailed with Henry Williams for Port Nicholson. Landing at Castle Point, they walked overland to Hawkes Bay, where a site was chosen at Ngaruroro for a station to be opened by him.

Having completed two years at St John's College, Colenso was ordained deacon (Sep 1844) and four months later he took up his station. For some years he had charge of a very wide district, involving a great deal of travelling and affording opportunities of study in Maori language and lore and the natural sciences. He devoted much study to Maori arts, antiquities, myths and legends, and had a high reputation among scientists. In 1842 he published in the *Tasmanian Journal of Science* papers on New Zealand ferns and in 1843 a paper on fossil remains of the moa (discovered by W. Williams in 1838). In 1845 he traversed the Ruataniwha plains and travelled by inland Patea to Rangitikei. In 1844 he published in Tasmania an account of his explorations in 1841-42 and in 1845 a classification and description of some of the ferns he discovered. In 1847 he made a journey across the Ruahine

COLUER

range and thence by Onetapu and Roto-aira to the headwaters of the Mowhango. His authority on Maori subjects and the natural history of New Zealand was unquestioned. In 1851 (with Sir G. Grey) he founded the New Zealand Society for the Furtherance of Scientific Research, and in 1868 he was one of the most active members of the New Zealand Institute. He was a founder of the Hawkes Bay Philosophical Society (of which he was president) and a constant contributor to the transactions of the Institute. Abroad he was a fellow of the Linnæan Society and the Royal Society. In 1865 he wrote for the Dunedin Exhibition papers on the botany of New Zealand and the Maori race, and in 1871 a plea for Kereopa (*Fiat Justitia*); in 1888 *Fifty Years Ago in New Zealand*; in 1889 *Ancient Tide-lore and Tales of the Sea*; and in 1898 the first section of his *Maori-English Lexicon*, the dimensions of which have prohibited its continuation.

On the separation of Hawkes Bay from Wellington Colenso was elected to the Provincial Council for Napier Town (1859-67, 1871-75). He was acting-speaker for a while in 1871. In the Parliament of 1861 he represented Napier, but lost his seat to D. McLean (146 votes to 32). He was for many years inspector of schools for Hawkes Bay. He died on 10 Feb 1899. Colenso married Elizabeth (1821-1904), daughter of W. T. Fairburn.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; Colenso, *op. cit.*; Bul-ler; J. G. Wilson; Dunedin Indust. Exhibition (1881) catalogue (containing a list of Colenso's publications 1835-40); *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vol 31, *et pass.*; Dinwiddie; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 11 Feb 1899; *Evening Post*, 7 Sep 1904; *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 11 Feb 1899, 26 Nov 1924.

COLLIER, JAMES (1847-1925) was born at Dunfermline, Scotland, and educated at St Andrew's and Edinburgh University, but did not graduate. Herbert Spencer found him fully qualified to do the compilation and tabulation required in his *Descriptive Sociology*, and Collier appeared as collaborator in the third division of that work. In 1876 Spencer relieved him of the heavier and more mechanical portion of the work and employed him as his culture and powers suggested. He was a candidate for a professorship, but anxiety and extra work led to a breakdown in health late in 1876. In 1881 he was still fit for only an hour's work in a day.

COLUNS

Shortly afterwards he came to New Zealand for his health, and became private tutor in the family of Judge T. B. Gillies (q.v.).

In 1885 Collier was appointed parliamentary librarian, and four years later he published his bibliography, *The Literature Relating to New Zealand*, which set a standard and form for more important bibliographies since published. It is particularly rich in periodical references (especially German). He also published *Sir George Grey . . . and Historical Biography* (1909) and an account of the English Colony in New South Wales (1910) and *The Pastoral Age in Australia* (1911). He lived for 30 years in Australia and died on 21 Jun 1925.

Hocken, *Bibliog.*; H. Spencer, *Autobiography* (1904); David Duncan, *Life and Letters of Herbert Spencer* (1908); Collier, *op. cit.*; Josiah Roberts, *Herbert Spencer* (1904, chapter of reminiscences by Collier).

COLLINS, ANDREW (1850-1937) was born at Egham, near Windsor, England, and left school at the age of nine to earn a living bird-scaring. He was later apprenticed to a baker in London. In 1870 he came to Napier as steward in the *Ballarat*, and after another voyage in the *Hal-cione* (1872) settled in Wellington and worked at his trade. He helped to establish a bread bakers' union, four previous attempts having failed. This union first achieved permanence in 1888, and Collins was president for several years, during which the union entered into an agreement with the employers. He was secretary of the bakers' union for 45 years, and held office also in the sawmillers' union and the gardeners' union, and was president of the tailoresses' and pressers' union. He assisted to form the Wellington Trades and Labour Council (1888) and did much organising work throughout the colony. He was president of the Eight Hours demonstration committee for some years and was a director of the *New Zealand Times*, appointed to guard the interests of the workers. An ardent believer in trades unionism and conciliation, Collins was for 16 years a member of the conciliation board in Wellington. He retired from trades unionism in 1930 and died on 11 Nov 1937. He married (1874) Catherine L. Hutchison (Wellington).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Post*, 12 Nov 1937.

COLLINS, ARTHUR SHUCKBURGH (1832-

COLUNS

1911) was born in Devonshire and came to New Zealand in the *Pekin* (1849). In 1868 he was gazetted a justice of the peace and elected a member of the Nelson Provincial Council for Nelson (which he represented till 1872). He was a member of the executive in 1870. He represented Collingwood in Parliament (1868-73) and Nelson Suburbs north (1880-81).

Collins did much exploring in the province. In 1869, with A. Mackay, he crossed the mount Arthur range to fix a feasible track to Karamea. In 1872 he blazed the track across the Rai saddle, which had been discovered by Mackay; and afterwards with provincial funds opened out a horse track. As chairman of the Waka-puaka road board he laid out the track from Wakapuaka to the Saddle and afterwards induced the General Government to construct the Rai road. In 1887 Collins returned to reside in Nelson. He was a governor of Nelson College (1880), a member of the Marlborough land board, chairman of the Kaikoura county council (1887) and a member of the Nelson diocesan synod and the general synod. He died on 27 Sep 1911.

*Cycl. N.z.*, v (p); *The Colonist*, 28 Sep 1911. Portrait: Parliament House.

C(OLLINS, JAMES FRANCIS (1833-1909) was born in Cavan, Ireland, the son of the Rev Dr Collins, dean of Killala. Educated for the army at the Royal school in Cavan, he entered the Provincial Bank of Ireland at Monaghan, and in 1853 left for T.ictoria. In the following year he entered the post office at Bendigo, and after mining for some years at Castlemaine, returned to Ireland and married. In 1859 he arrived in Canterbury and in 1860 he moved to New River, Southland, where he farmed till 1888. Collins represented Waianiwa in the Southland Provincial Council (1864-65) and was on various local bodies, including the road board. He was a promoter of the Southland Frozen Meat Co. and of the acclimatisation society. He died on 29 Jul 1909.

*Southland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Southland Times*, 30 Jul 1909.

COLLINS, ROBERT JOSEPH (1848-1924) was born at Cavan, Ireland, the son of Captain Robert Collins, of the 57th regiment. Educated in Ireland, India and New Zealand, he became a clerk in the militia pay office at Taranaki in 1865, five years later was inspector of stores in

## COLUNS

the Public Works Department and, transferring to the Treasury, he became accountant in 1890. In 1903 he was assistant-secretary; 1906 Secretary and Paymaster-general; and in 1910 Controller and Auditor-general. At the age of 15 Collins joined the Taranaki militia and in 1899 he assumed command of the 1st battalion Wellington rifles. In 1896 he was appointed to the council of defence. He won the Taranaki rifle-shooting championship in 1874 and 1875; was for many years president of the Wellington Rifle Association and was commandant of the New Zealand rifle team at the inauguration of the Australian Commonwealth (1901). He was chief executive officer of the Dominion Rifle Association from 1904 and commandant of the team which won the Kolapore cup at Bisley in that year. He received the long and efficient service medal (1893), the Imperial volunteer medal (1902), the I.S.O. (1909); and was created C.M.G. (1911).

Collins married (1875) Annie, daughter of Richard Cock (New Plymouth). He died on 1 Dec 1924.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Evening Post*, 2 Dec 1924.

COLLINS, WILLIAM EDWARD (1853-1934) was born at Darjeeling, India, the son of J. G. Collins, M.D., I.M.S. Educated at Cheltenham College, England, and London University, he qualified at St George's Hospital, London (F.R.C.S. 1876, M.B. 1877). He played Rugby football, representing England for several years against Scotland and Ireland. After gaining experience in London, Collins came to New Zealand, and settled in Wellington. He was for 30 years honorary surgeon to the Wellington hospital; was interested in ambulance work, and held the rank of lieutenant-colonel in the volunteer medical service. He was chairman of the residential nursery from its inception in 1920, and was five years chairman of council of the British Medical Association, and twice president (1904, 1916).

Collins was called to the Legislative Council in 1914, and was a member until his death (on 11 Aug 1934). He served in a hospital ship during the war of 1914-18 and was afterwards chairman of the New Zealand executive of the Red Cross Society, which he represented at conferences at Geneva (1926) and the Hague (1928). To him is due the Junior Red Cross

## COLQUHOUN

movement, and he inaugurated a 'disaster fund' to be released immediately upon the occurrence of any national disaster in New Zealand. Collins was on the senate of the University of New Zealand (1904-30). He married Isabel Georgiana, daughter of David Warren (Melbourne).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; Studholme; *Evening Post*, 11 Aug 1934. Portrait: Parliament House.

COLLINS, WILLIAM WALTERHOUSE (1855-1923) was born at Harboume, Staffordshire, with a strong radical inheritance from his father, who had been a Chartist prisoner. Educated at a private school, at Midlaw institute and Mason College, Birmingham, he intended qualifying for the Baptist Ministry.

While studying in the science and art department at South Kensington Collins became associated with the Secularists, and made the acquaintance of Charles Bradlaugh and Mrs. Besant. Having obtained his diploma as a lecturer of the National Secular Society, he left for Sydney in 1885 under engagement to the Freethought Association. During five years there, lecturing and organising, and a similar period in Tasmania he obtained a wide knowledge of the colonies. In 1890 he settled in Christchurch, where he established the Lyceum and was leader of the Canterbury Freethought Association (afterwards the New Zealand Rationalist Association). In 1907 he established a Rationalist paper, *The Examiner*, which he carried on till ill-health compelled him to return to Sydney (1917).

In 1893 Collins was induced to contest a parliamentary seat for the City of Christchurch, which he won. He represented that electorate in 1893-96 and again 1899-1902. In 1896 he was narrowly defeated, but in 1899 he was re-elected as senior member in the triple electorate. Having lost his seat in 1902, he contested Christchurch East in 1905.

Collins married a daughter of E. Skinner, president of the Freethought Association in New South Wales. He died on 12 Apr 1923.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 15 Jun 1923; H. H. Pearce (information); *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Sydney Morning Herald*, 14 Apr 1923. Portrait: Parliament House.

COLQUHOUN, DANIEL (1849-1935) was born at Glasgow, Scotland, where he received

## COLVIN

his early education. He studied medicine at Charing Cross Hospital, London (M.R.C.S., England, 1877; M.D., M.R.C.P. 1880). He was afterwards assistant physician and one of the lecturers at this hospital and conducted a private practice until 1883, when he came to New Zealand. He practised with distinction in Dunedin for 40 years. In 1883 Colquhoun was appointed lecturer on the practice of medicine at Otago University, and later professor (F.R.C.S., London, 1907). He went to the war of 1914-18 with the New Zealand Expeditionary Force-(Lieut.-colonel; D.S.O.)-and afterwards lived in retirement in England, where he acted as representative of the New Zealand Red Cross society. Colquhoun died on 17 Feb 1935.

Studholme; *Otago University Calendar*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 18 Feb 1935.

COLVIN, JAMES (1844-1919) was born in county Donegal, educated there and emigrated to Victoria in 1861. He was engaged goldmining at Creswick Creek and Daylesford, and in 1862 came to Otago, where he followed the rushes to Dunstan, Wakatipu and Wakamarina, eventually opening a store at the last-named place. He moved later as storekeeper to Waimea, Hokitika, Grey Valley, Addison's Flat and Westport (1872).

Colvin was a member of the Buller county council (1885-89), chairman of the Westport harbour board (1890), a member of the Nelson education and harbour boards and mayor of Westport (1898-1900). In 1899, as a supporter of Seddon, he defeated O'Regan for Buller, which he represented in Parliament till his death (on 29 Oct 1919). He was senior government whip in 1906, chairman of committees in 1910, and held office as Minister of Mines in the Mackenzie government (1912).

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.* (notably 30 Oct 1919); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 30 Oct. Portrait: Parliament House.

CONGREVE, SIR WILLIAM AUGUSTUS (1826-1960), 3rd baronet, was the son of the second baronet (who invented the Congreve rocket). He came to New Zealand in the *Bernicia* (1848), and a year or two later took up the Ugbrooke flats in Marlborough. His sheep becoming badly infected with scab, he abandoned his run (which was taken over by the Redwoods). Congreve was appointed a

## CONNETT

magistrate of the territory in New Munster (23 Apr 1849). A keen sportsman, he did not succeed on the land though he had a wide colonial experience. After his failure at Ugbrooke he moved to Canterbury, where he took up a run, on the Rakaia. He was appointed inspector of sheep and registrar of brands under the provincial government in 1854, but relinquished the post in 1858. Congreve witnessed the purchase of the Kaiapoi block by W. J. W. Hamilton (q.v.) in 1857. He had a fund of information concerning the Ngai-Tahu. He was last heard of in New South Wales in 1860, when he was intending to settle in Fiji.

*Canterbury Gaz.* 1854-59; Mackay, ii, 22; Arnold; Aeland; Debrett, 1880; Buick, *Marlborough; Lyttelton Times*, 10 Jun 1854.

CONNELL, JOHN AITKEN (1841-91) was born in Ayrshire and educated in Glasgow, and arrived in Auckland in 1858. A few years later he went to Dunedin, where for 20 years he was in business as a land agent and surveyor. In partnership with T. Moodie, he carried out extensive contracts for the provincial government. In 1884 they sold the business to the Perpetual Trustees, Estate and Agency Co., in which he had an interest till 1887, when he returned to Auckland. Connell read papers on land tenure as early as 1876. In 1873 he published *The Otago Waste Lands Act 1872* (with analytical index). In Auckland he founded the New Zealand Political Association (1887) and in that year contested the Eden parliamentary seat against Mitchelson. Connell died on 21 Aug 1891.

*N.Z. Herald*, 23, 26 Jul, 2, 3 Aug 1887, 22 Aug 1891; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Jun 1876.

CONNETT, JAMES BAXTER (1843-1919) was born at Exeter, Devon, educated at King's College there, and married (1864) Miss Lavinia Snell. He arrived in Queensland in 1865; managed a cattle run for two years and moved to Taranaki (1867), taking up land at Bell Block.

Connett took an immediate and prominent part in the affairs of the province. In 1872 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell, which he represented until the abolition. From 1872-74 he was honorary secretary of the Agricultural Society. He was a member of the harbour board for many years (1875-78, 1885-95, 1897-1917) and chairman (1902-17).

CONNOLLY

He was chairman of the New Plymouth Co-operative Society (1891-1904), the Taranaki Freezing Co. (1895-1901), and the Taranaki Producers' Freezing Co. (1901-07); and during the same period was a director of the New Plymouth Investment and Loan Society (1882-1919) and chairman (1904-19); director of the New Plymouth Sash and Door Factory (1885-1907), the New Plymouth Gas Co. (1893-97), and the Stratford Bacon Co. (1898-1906). In local government he was chairman of the Waitara West road board (1883-84), a member of the Taranaki county council, chairman of the Bell Block school committee (1894-95), member of the Taranaki charitable aid board (1894-96), the New Plymouth borough council and the Taranaki land board (1902-11) and a member of the executive of the harbour boards association (1904-16). He contested the Grey and Bell seat in Parliament against F. A. Carrington.

Connett died on 29 Mar 1919 and his widow on 23 Jun 1926.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc.; Taranaki Herald, 29 Mar 1919; Who's Who N.Z., 1908; Parltory Record.*

CONNOLLY, JEREMIAH (1875-1935) was born in Geraldine and educated at the Hilton school. At the age of 18 he took charge of his father's farm. In 1902 he purchased the Raukapuka estate, which he sold in 1919, and purchased Langley estate, Rakaia. He was a member of the national efficiency board in the war of 1914-18, and of patriotic societies. *Mter* contesting Ellesmere (1925) and Mid-Canterbury (1928) he was elected to Parliament as an Independent Liberal in 1931, defeating D. Jones. Connolly died on 2 Oct 1935.

CONOLLY, EDWARD TENNYSON (1822-1908) was the son of Dr John Conolly, an eminent authority on the treatment of the insane. Intended for the medical profession, he preferred law and, having passed some years in the office of a solicitor and parliamentary agent, he was called to the bar of the Inner Temple in 1852. He practised for 13 years as a member of the Home Circuit and Sussex sessions.

In 1865 he came to New Zealand, was admitted to the bar and commenced practice at Picton. Taking an active interest in public affairs, Conolly was elected in 1867 to represent Picton in the Marlborough Provincial Council

COOK

and remained a member until the provinces were abolished. In 1870-71 he was a member of the provincial executive. In 1881 he was elected to represent Picton in Parliament, and late in 1882 he was appointed Minister of Justice in the Whitaker administration, a post that he retained, with the addition of the attorney-generalship, when Atkinson reconstructed the ministry in 1883. From 1884 he was in opposition until he retired in 1887. In 1889 Conolly was appointed judge of the supreme court and stationed at Auckland. He retired in 1903 and died on Nov 8 1908.

*Buick, Marlborough; Who's Who N.Z., 1908; N.Z. Herald, 9 Sep 1889.*

COOK, CHARLES HENRY HERBERT (1844-1910), born in London, went to Australia as a boy, and after being taught privately, entered Melbourne University. Proceeding to St John's College, Cambridge, he took the mathematical tripos in 1872, and was elected a fellow of the College. In 1875 he was appointed professor of mathematics and natural philosophy at Canterbury College. He served on the university royal commission in 1879, and from 1884 to 1900 on the New Zealand University senate. He was a fellow of Christ's College, Christchurch, and a founder of the Christchurch Musical Union and the Canterbury Society of Arts. *Retiring* in 1908, Cook was created professor emeritus in 1909. After his death (in May 1910) the Cook memorial prize in mathematics was established.

*Cycl. N.Z., iii (p); Who's Who N.Z., 1908; Hight and Candy.*

COOK, JAMES (1728-1779) was born at Cleveland, Yorkshire, the son of a day labourer of Marton. Mrs Mary Walker, the wife of a respectable yeoman, taught him a little reading and writing while he worked on their farm, watering stock and doing other tasks. When he was eight years old his father removed to Ayton as bailiff of Skottowe, and James continued his schooling at High Green, where he showed considerable aptitude at arithmetic and writing.

At 13 he was apprenticed to a grocer and haberdasher at Staithes, 10 miles from Whitby, and after 18 months there he was bound to John Walker, a coal and shipping owner of Whitby. He made several voyages in the *Free-love* and the *Three Brothers*, carrying coal in

COOK

the North Sea and to Liverpool and Dublin. In 1749 Cook went to sea before the mast for three years, and in 1752 became mate of one of Walker's ships, the *Friendship*. On the outbreak of war with France in 1755 he entered as a volunteer seaman in H.M.S. *Eagle*, 60 guns, in which he was rated as master's mate a month later. In her he saw his first naval engagement (with the French Indiaman *Due d'Aquitaine*, 50 guns, which was captured). In 1757 he was master of the *Solebay*, and a few months later of the *Pembroke*, in which he saw service again at the reduction of Louisburg in Canada by naval and military forces under Admiral Boscawen and Major-general Amherst. *Mter* that the fleet moved to the St Lawrence to harry the French forces in Canada. Cook wintered at the He aux Coudres, where he was engaged for many weeks in the boats of the fleet sounding and charting the waternway for the forthcoming operations. The excellence of his charts attracted the attention of his commander, and subsequently the senior officer, Lord Colville, appointed him master of the flag ship *Northumberland*. Wintering in Halifax the following year, Cook spent some time studying mathematics and obtaining a sound knowledge of astronomical navigation. *Mter* carrying out a survey of Placentia harbour he was in 1763 appointed marine surveyor of the coast of Newfoundland and Labrador, with command of the *Gl'enville* schooner. He held this position until 1767, and published his results as volumes of sailing directions which still retain a reputation for accuracy.

When in the following year the Admiralty prepared an expedition to observe the transit of Venus in the Pacific, Cook was given command, and raised to the rank of lieutenant. He sailed in the *Endeavour* (370 tons) on 26 Aug 1768, and arrived at Tahiti in Apr 1769 by way of Cape Horn. The transit was successfully observed in Jun. On the way home (on 7 Oct) New Zealand, which was believed to be part of the southern continent, was sighted. On 9 Oct Cook anchored at Turanganui. Six months were spent on the coasts of this country, which was for the first time circumnavigated, examined and charted with some approach to accuracy. Cook had several encounters with the Maori, whom he considered intelligent and comparatively civilized. Though he desired to

COOK

make friends they were often hostile, and fire-arms had at times to be used to compel them to observe fairness in trading or to desist from aggression. Many points on the coast were named during this voyage (including Poverty Bay, Cape Kidnappers, and Cape Palliser) and the scientists, Joseph Banks and Dr Solandel, made valuable collections of new plants. On 15 Nov he took possession of Mercury Bay, and on 31 Jan 1770 of Queen Charlotte Sound, where he had careened his ship for cleaning. *Mter* circumnavigating the South Island, Cook made his departure from Cape Farewell on 31 Mar and proceeded to examine the north-east coast of Australia. *Mter* two months at Batavia, the *Endeavour* reached England by way of South Africa on 12 Jun 1771.

The success of the voyage and the importance of the discoveries being recognised, Cook was promoted to the rank of commander and given command of a new expedition for the exploration of the Pacific. This expedition, which sailed from Plymouth on 13 Apr 1772, consisted of two ships, the *Resolution* (460 tons) commanded by Cook, and the *Adventure* (330 tons) commanded by Tobias Furneaux, with a staff of competent astronomers, naturalists and artists. Proceeding by way of the Cape of Good Hope, and following a southerly route in the hope of sighting the southern continent, the *Resolution* arrived at New Zealand alone and anchored at Dusky Bay on 26 Mar 1773. On 18 May the two ships met in Queen Charlotte sound, where friendly relations with the Maori were established, provisions taken on board, and pigs and goats liberated. On 7 Jun the ships left. *Mter* a visit to Tahiti and the Friendly Islands, on which the position of numerous islands was noted or rectified, the two ships returned to New Zealand on 21 Oct. On 2 Nov Cook discovered the entrance of Port Nicholson and anchored off it, but did not enter. He spent some time in Ship Cove refitting and sailed on 25 Nov for the far south. He reached the latitude of 62° 10" south and explored many leagues of the Antarctic, afterwards sailing north to the New Hebrides and discovering New Caledonia. On 17 Oct 1774 he again saw mount Egmont. He overhauled his vessel in Ship Cove and, having waited in vain for the *Adventure*, he sailed on 10 Nov for England. Proceeding by way of Cape Horn,

## COOK

he discovered South Georgia and reached England on 29 Jul 1775, the *Adventure* having arrived more than a year earlier. She had had a fatal experience in Grass Cove (Wharehunga Bay), Queen Charlotte Sound, where a boat's crew was massacred and eaten.

Cook was promoted to captain and appointed to the Greenwich Hospital. He was given permission to publish his account of the voyage, which besides being important from the point of view of discoveries was remarkable for the high standard of health of the crew and the absence of scurvy. In the following year Cook was given command of a third expedition which was sent out to investigate the North West Passage. It consisted of the *Resolution* and the *Discovery* (commanded by Captain Charles Clerke). The expedition, with a large supply of livestock, sailed on 12 Jul 1776 and reached New Zealand by way of South Africa on 10 Feb 1777. Some of the animals were landed at Queen Charlotte Sound, and on 23 Feb Cook sailed for Tahiti (where the rest of the stock was landed). After visiting other Pacific islands they sailed to the west coast of North America, which was followed northward as far as Icy Cape, in Behring Strait. In Jan 1779 Cook anchored at Karakakoa Bay, Hawaii. There the natives, with whom he always tried to deal fairly, were friendly but dishonest, and in a scuffle which occurred as a result of thieving Cook was killed (on 14 Feb 1779). Portions of his body were given up by the natives and buried at sea.

In Dec 1762 Cook married Miss Batts, of Barking, by whom he had six children, all of whom died fairly young.

Cook's life was written by Arthur Kitson (1907) and good articles appear in the *Dictionary of National Biography* and the *Encyclopedia Britannica*. The earliest *Life*, by Andrew Kippis (1778) is of little biographical value. Many editions of his voyages have been published, notably the narrative of the first voyage (edited by Hawkesworth, 1773); of the second voyage (1777); and the third voyage (1784). Cook's own journal of his first voyage, much garbled by Hawkesworth, was published by Wharton in 1893. The fullest bibliography, based on material in Australian libraries, was published by the Public Library of New South Wales in 1928. There is also a short critical bibliography by

## COOPER

Maurice Holmes (1936). The most important portraits are by Nathaniel Dance (1776) now in Greenwich Hospital, and frequently reproduced, and by William Hodges.

COOKSON, ISAAC THOMAS (1817-81) was born in England. He came to Canterbury with the first settlers and established himself in business with William Bowler as merchants and shipping agents. He represented Lyttelton in the Provincial Council (1853-61) and City of Christchurch (1861-62). In 1860 he was elected to Parliament for Christchurch Country and in the following year for Kaiapoi (which he represented till 1863). He was the first president of the Canterbury chamber of commerce (1859). Cookson married Jannetta Maria (1812-54), daughter of Sir Matthew Ridley. He died in 1881.

Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 15 Dec 1900.

COOLAHAN, HUGH (1800-72). Born at Strabane, county Tyrone, Ireland, Coolahan learned baking and carried on a successful business in his native town before emigrating. Arriving in Sydney at the end of 1840, he crossed to Auckland, spent a few months at Bay of Islands, but returned when Auckland was made the capital and conducted a successful bakery there for some years. He selected valuable city sections, including that on which some years later he erected the 'Waitemata Hotel. A man of untiring energy, shrewd commonsense and high integrity, he was able to let his hotel to a tenant and was living in Parnell when the great fire in Queen street (1866) destroyed most of his property and his financial prosperity. To retrieve his fortunes he moved to Thames (1867) and had built up a lucrative bakery when he died 25 Jun 1872.

Coolahan took an early interest in the politics of Auckland, to which he devoted much time. He was a zealous adherent of John Williamson, whom he supported throughout his provincial career. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Suburbs in 1857 and again 1859-61 and for Auckland West from 1864 until his resignation in Nov 1867.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Thames Advertiser*, 28 Jun 1872.

COOPER, GEORGE SISSON (1825-98) was born in Ireland, the son of George Cooper (of

## COOPER

the controller's office, New South Wales, who was appointed collector in New Zealand 9 Feb 1840; and was treasurer and receiver-general to 1844). Cooper came to New Zealand with his father and was appointed a junior clerk in the Colonial Secretary's office (1841). Showing aptitude and capacity, he was appointed private secretary to Governor FitzRoy (1844) and to Grey (1846). In 1852 he succeeded McLean as inspector of police at New Plymouth and native officer. In Feb 1854 he became sub-commissioner for the purchase of native lands in Taranaki, and later in the year district commissioner for Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay in the land purchase department (constituted by McLean). For a short time he was magistrate at Waipukurau. In 1868 he was appointed under-secretary of the native department, and in 1869 of defence also. In 1870 Cooper was appointed Colonial Under-secretary. In 1892 he retired on pension. Cooper married (1858) Ellen Chaffers (1840-1928), daughter of Daniel Riddiford. He was a fine type of civil servant, who owed much to his first appointment under Dr Sinclair. He died on 16 Aug 1898. Cooper wrote an interesting journal of Grey's expedition overland from Auckland to Taranaki (1849-50).

*N.Z. Gaz.*; Cooper, *op. cit.*; *Sinclair papers*; *App. H.R.*, 1867 A 15, 15A; *Evening Post*, 16 Aug 1898; *Public Service Journal*, 1892; *N.Z. Times*, 14 Apr 1892, 17 Aug 1898. Portrait: Department of Internal Affairs.

COOPER, ISAAC RHODES (?-1889) entered the army as an ensign in the 58th Regiment (1839) and became a captain (1851). He came to New South Wales with the regiment and remained there in charge of the mounted police when the headquarters came to Auckland under Colonel Wynyard (1845). He came to New Zealand in 1847, and was adjutant to the regiment until being promoted captain, when he sold his commission and engaged in farming at North Shore.

Cooper was M.P.C. for the Northern Division (1857-61 and 1865-69). In 1861 he stood for Parliament unsuccessfully, being defeated by Henderson and O'Neill. In 1868 he was gazetted major in the militia. The same year he moved in the Provincial Council to petition the Queen to resume control of the militia and volunteers in New Zealand. For a short time he

## COOPER

held an official appointment at Thames. He died in Sydney on 6 Oct 1889.

*Army List*, 1840; *Auckland Star*, 4 Nov 1889.

COOPER, SIR THEOPHILUS (1851-1925) was born in Newington, South London, the son of Theophilus Cooper (1813-92), who worked for London newspapers before coming to New Zealand with the Albertland settlers by the *Gertrude* (1863). Disliking the rough conditions in Albertland, his father moved to Auckland (1866) and was connected with the publishing departments of the *Southern Cross* and the *New Zealand Herald*. He was choirmaster of the Wellesley street Baptist Church. The elder Cooper died on 22 Jun 1892.

His son was educated at a private school in London. After residing for two years at Port Albert, Kaipara (where he held a position on the composing staff of the *Albertland Gazette*) he removed to Auckland with his father and obtained employment as a compositor on the *Southern Cross* (1865). Four years later he entered the office of J. B. Russell as a law clerk. He soon rose to be accountant, but resigned to study law, serving his articles to Russell. He was admitted a barrister and solicitor on 20 Jun 1878. His employers then took him into partnership under the name of Russell, Devore and Cooper, the partnership subsisting until 1883 when Russell retired. Cooper was leading counsel for the Bank of New Zealand in the proceedings before the banking commission in 1897. He appeared (with Chapman and Harper) to oppose the Attorney-General's application to the Court of Appeal for the cancellation of the first appointment of Mr Justice Edwards (an appointment which the Privy Council held the Government had no power to make); and represented the Midland Railway Co. in the arbitration proceedings before the Hon. Edward Blake, M.P. He was for many years a member of the council of law reporting in New Zealand and of the council of the New Zealand Law Society. Cooper was a member of the Auckland education board (1883-1901) and did much useful work in this capacity; but lack of leisure compelled him to decline the chairmanship. He was a governor of Auckland College and Grammar School and for ten years deputy-inspector of lunatic asylums. For very many years he gave valuable assistance at Sunday afternoon services

## COOTE

held in Auckland under the auspices of the Y.M.C.A. and in other ways contributed to the welfare of the city.

On 14 Feb 1901 Cooper was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court and president of the Arbitration Court. He presided over the Arbitration Court till Sep 1903, and thereafter assisted the Chief Justice in the Wellington judicial district. He retired from the bench in 1921 (in which year he was knighted) and lived at Eltham. His death occurred on 18 May 1925. Cooper married (1888) Bessie, daughter of A. A. Alexander (Auckland). J-H.B.S.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; Brett, *Albertlanders*; *Butterworth's Fortnightly Notes*, 26 May 1925 (p); *N.I. Herald*, 23 Jun 1892, 19 May 1925.

COOTE, HENRY JOSEPH (1819-67). Born in London on 9 Jun 1819, Coote entered the Royal Military College in 1834, and received his ensigncy in the 22nd Foot (1836) with which he proceeded to India. As a lieutenant he served under Sir Charles Napier in the conquest of Scinde and was his aide-de-camp on the desert expedition to Emaunghur. He was at the battle of Meanee (1843) and acted as engineer in forming the line at Hyderabad, where he was the first man to enter the enemy's position and captured the first colour. 'The intrepid Coote' (as Napier described him) was severely wounded while leading his men out of a nullab. Promoted captain in 1844, he returned to England suffering from his wounds. He exchanged in 1848 into the 28th and later into the 36th Regiment, with which he saw service in the Ionian islands (1849-51). In the insurrection in Cephalonia in command of a company of the reserve battalion he defeated the enemy three times, and was mentioned by Sir Henry Ward for his energy and gallantry.

Returning to England, Coote came to New Zealand as brigade-major at Wellington, where he arrived by the *Northfleet* (1852). Promoted major, he returned to England and retired in 1859. Having decided to come to New Zealand he sought sanction of the War Office to raise and train a special force for bush service. The matter being delayed, he sailed for New Zealand and bought the Carleton run, near Oxford, Canterbury, where he spent two or three years. He then sold out (1864) and purchased a property near Masterton, where he built a

## COPLAND

homestead. His health again failed and he had to give up farming. Coote was called to the Legislative Council by Weld (Jul 1865). In his first session, moving the address-in-reply, he expressed constructive views on the amalgamation of the pakeha and Maori races. He died at Wellington on 25 Mar 1867. He married in 1844 Rhoda Carlton Holmes, of Leominster, Sussex.

*N.I.P.D.*, 28 Jul 1865; R. Cannon, *Hist. Records of 36th Foot*, 1853; *Wellington Independent*, 28 Mar 1867.

COPLAND, JAMES (1837-1902) was born at Edinburgh and educated at the High School and University. He graduated M.A. in 1854, and Ph.D. at Heidelberg in 1858. He had meanwhile been attending the Theological Hall of the United Presbyterian Church and was licensed to preach in 1858. Intending to go to China as a medical missionary, he proceeded to Aberdeen University, where he graduated M.D. in 1864.

Then he came to New Zealand as surgeon in the *E. P. Bouverie*, was received by the presbytery of Dunedin, and in 1865 called to the pastoral charge of Lawrence, where he spent six years. He was the first settled minister on the Otago goldfields and besides his ecclesiastical duties he gave medical attention where necessary. In Lawrence he started in 1869 a church paper, *The Evangelist* (merged in *The Presbyterian* 1874). In 1871 Copland was called to North Dunedin, then just organised. There he spent 10 years, resigning in 1881 to practise medicine at Dunedin and from 1888 at Gore. He was a member of the Gore borough council and once mayor, and did duty also on the Gore school committee, the Southland education board and the charitable aid board. He was clerk of the Mataura presbytery from its inception, convenor of the Bible in schools committee and of the missions committee. Besides lecturing on social and religious topics he gave some of the earliest lectures in New Zealand on socialism. In the late seventies he published pamphlets on the doctrines of the French and German socialists. In 1874 he published in Edinburgh *The Testimony Attested*, and in 1885 *The Origin and Spiritual Nature of Man* (a rebuttal of Darwinian evolution). He wrote a great deal to the press.

## CORBETT

Copland married, first, Miss Anderson, daughter of a city missionary, and, second, a daughter of Dr Gillies, Dunedin. He died on 9 Nov 1902.

*Cycl. N.I.*, iv; Ross; Don; Chisholm; Fulton (P); *Evening Star* and *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Nov 1902.

CORBETT, JOHN GLASFURD (1830-89) was a son of Maj-General Sir Stuart Corbett (of the Bengal army), and was educated for the East India service. He came to Taranaki in the late forties, bringing two English farm labourers to assist on his bush farm. After four years there he sold out and went to the Australian diggings, where he was employed bullock-driving, timber-felling, stock-riding and gold digging. He was about to join the expedition of Burke and Wills when the opportunity occurred of bringing a cargo of horses to Otago. While there hostilities broke out in Taranaki, and Corbett hastened there and volunteered. In 1861 he was commissioned as ensign, in 1862 was promoted lieutenant and in 1863 gained his company in the Military Settlers. He was present at Mahoetahi and other engagements. With eighty men he made a night attack on the right Hank of the enemy position at Kaitake, which he captured and held throughout the engagement next day (25 Mar 1864). For this service he received the thanks of General Cameron, and was offered a recommendation for a commission in the army. Later, with the same men, he made another night march and turned the enemy's Hank at Waikoukou, for which he received the thanks of General Chute. Corbett died on 16 Apr 1889.

*Gudgeon* (p); Cowan.

CORFE, CHARLES CARTERET (1847-1935) was the son of the Rev Arthur T. Corle, M.A. (Oxford), principal of Elizabeth College, Guernsey. Educated at Elizabeth College, he was champion athlete and captain of the eleven (1865). He proceeded to Jesus College, Cambridge, and graduated B.A. with distinction in mathematics (1870). Corfe had a brilliant athletic career, representing the University for three years in sprints and hurdles and weight-throwing and at cricket, and being president of the athletic club (1868-69).

After a year or two as a private tutor and master at Rossall School, Lancashire, Corfe was appointed mathematics master at Christ's College, Christchurch (1871). In the following year

## CORRIGAN

he was acting headmaster, and on the retirement of Archdeacon Harris he became head, a position he occupied with great success until 1888. Corfe was one of the founders of the United cricket club in Christchurch and captained the Canterbury eighteen against JuPP's English team (1877) and the Canterbury fifteen which defeated Australia. He was a founder of the Canterbury athletic club and competed in weight-throwing events. On retiring from the headmastership of the College in 1888 he proceeded to England.

In 1889 he came to Australia as headmaster of the Toowoomba Grammar School, and in 1907 was appointed headmaster of the Church of England Grammar School in Sydney. About 1913 he retired from teaching, but during the war of 1914-18 he relieved at Wanganui College. He died on 27 Jun 1935. Corfe married a daughter of Commander J. C. Evison (Tasmania). A son, ARTHUR CECIL CORFE, distinguished himself in the South African war and the war of 1914-18 (Lieut-col.; D.S.O.; Croix de Guerre). He was a member of the League of Nations commission for repatriation in Greece and Bulgaria.

*Christ's Coll. List* (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Sep 1888; *The Press*, 28 Jun 1935.

CORRIGAN, JAMES RANDALL (1865-1935) was born at Woodend, Canterbury, and at the age of 10 commenced working on a farm. He received some of his training at Longbeach. About 1895 he acquired a farm at Hawera, where he was a well-known breeder of pedigree Jersey cattle and the owner of a large dairy herd. Corrigan was a member of the Patea harbour board, chairman of the Hawera Dairy Co., the Winter Show, the West Coast Refrigerating Co. and the South Taranaki Shipping Co. He was chairman of the Farmers' Union and represented Patea in Parliament (1922-25). From 1926 to 1932 Corrigan was a member of the dairy control board. He was a keen judge of sheep dogs, owned many valuable animals, and was on the executive of the New Zealand Sheep Dog Association. He was also a breeder and owner of trotting horses. He died on 19 Mar 1935.

*N.I.P.D.*, 20 Mar 1933; *Who's Who N.I.*, 1932; *Taranaki Herald*, 19 Mar 1935. Portrait: Parliament House.

## COSTER

COSTER, JOHN LEWIS (1838-86) was born at Exeter, Devon, the son of a medical practitioner; educated there and came to Sydney at the age of 16. There he entered into commercial life and showed a striking faculty for business. In 1859 he was sent by the Union Bank of Australia as its agent at Lyttelton, and he was shortly afterwards appointed manager of the branch at Christchurch. His enterprise, boldness and tact soon placed the business of the bank in Canterbury on a flourishing basis. In particular Coster negotiated important loans for the Provincial Council. He was also associated in the management of the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co., especially in their shipping department, and thus conceived the project of founding the New Zealand Shipping Co., which he successfully carried through (1873). He was chairman of directors from the commencement and in 1881 resigned from the Bank to accept the dual position of chairman and managing director. In 1883 he proceeded to England to inaugurate the new services of the company. On his return to the Colony in 1884 he was elected M.H.R. for Heathcote. Coster died on 17 Dec 1886.

*Lyttelton Times*, 18 Dec 1886. Portrait: Parliament House.

COSTLEY, EDWARD (1794-1883) was born and brought up in Ireland and seems to have left for Australia in 1833. He apparently spent some time at Cape of Good Hope and Tasmania, and arrived at Bay of Islands in the early forties. Costley made careful investments in the early days of the colony, lived very frugally and never married. On his death (18 Apr 1883) he left a fortune of £135,000 for charities and public purposes in the city of Auckland.

*N.Z. Herald*, 19 Apr 1883.

COWAN, CUTHBERT (1835-1927) was born at Ayr, Scotland, and educated at Ayr Academy and at Glasgow University. He joined the staff of the Union Bank of Scotland in his native town and afterwards spent several years in Glasgow. He came to New Zealand by the *Burma* in 1857 and, in partnership with Macandrew, purchased the Okaiterua run (Hokonui). Having disposed of this property, Cowan bought a farm of 2,400 acres (1876) on which he combined agriculture and breeding Romney sheep.

## COWELL

In 1863 he became a member of the Southland Provincial Council for Oreti, which he represented 1863-64 and 1866-67. He was a member of the executive in three administrations (1863-64). In 1869 he was elected to Parliament for Wallace, sitting for a few months. He contested the Hokonui seat in 1881; won in 1884 and held it until 1890. He was a consistent opponent of the Liberal party, and contested Awarua against Ward in 1896. A strenuous advocate of Southland rights, he strongly supported the legislation under which the government purchased the Waimea plains and other local railways. He also supported the revaluation of land act which saved many deferred payment settlers from abandoning their holdings. He was a member of the first Southland county council, and for many years of the land board.

Cowan took a great interest in refrigeration and was an original director and chairman of the Southland Frozen Meat Co. (1882-1922). He represented New Zealand at the inter-colonial stock conference in Melbourne in 1889. He married (1869) a daughter of the Rev George Wallace (Dumfries). His death occurred on 4 Apr 1927.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Hansard, 24 Jun 1927; *Southland Times*, 17 May 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

COWELL, JOHN (1813-80) was a twine spinner by trade and was brought to New South Wales in the *Saracen* (1819) to join the New Zealand mission. He showed no enthusiasm, and only proceeded to his post at Rangihoua after many admonitions from Marsden. In 1823 Marsden removed him from the mission and took him and his family back to Sydney in the *Dragon*. He afterwards went as supercargo in trading vessels from Sydney, and made frequent journeys into the interior negotiating purchases of flax and other native produce. Marmon says he acted as interpreter for the captain of the *Elizabeth* when Te Rauparaha trapped Tamaiharanui (1829). He was friendly with the northern tribes in 1823-26 and was present when Hongi returned from his devastating expedition to the Waikato (1823). Travelling from Waihopuhopu (on the Hauraki gulf) to Mahurangi in 1832, Cowell saw no signs of life; the local tribes had fled from the wrath of Hongi.

## COWIE

Seeing the chance of profit by supplying the Waikato with arms to resist Ngapuhi, Cowell settled for some years at Kawhia. He was there when Te Wherowhero and Kati returned from their expedition against Taranaki. Later Cowell resided at Awhitu, near Manukau. In 1869 he gave important evidence in the Orakei case. He was an accomplished Maori scholar and had a profound knowledge of Maori history and lore. He died on 12 Jul 1880.

Marsden, L. and J.; do. *Lieutenants*; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Aug, 11 Dec 1880.

COWM, WILLIAM GARDEN (1831-1902) was born in London, the son of Alexander Cowie, of Auchterless, Aberdeenshire. Educated at Trinity Hall, Cambridge, he graduated B.A. in 1855, was a scholar of his College and was in the first class of the civil law tripos and the theological examination.

After holding curacies in Cambridge and Suffolk, he was appointed in 1857 chaplain to Sir Colin Campbell's army advancing to the siege of Lucknow. He crossed the Gumti with Outram's column, with which he remained until Lucknow fell, when he accompanied Sir Hope Grant's flying column, which defeated the enemy at Kursi. In 1858 he was present at the assault at Ruyah, the battle of Aligunj and the capture of Bareilly. In 1863 he was chaplain to the Viceroy's camp, and after Lord Elgin's death he served with Sir Neville Chamberlain's column in Afghanistan. During the next three years he was resident and examining chaplain to Bishop Cotton of Calcutta, the metropolitan of India.

In 1867 he was presented to the rectory of St Mary's, Stafford, and on 29 Jun 1869 he was consecrated Bishop of Auckland by Archbishop Tait and others (including Selwyn, who had been entrusted with the task of selecting his own successor). Having married Eliza, daughter of Dr W. Webber (Moulton, Suffolk) he sailed for New Zealand, arriving early in 1870. During the 32 years of his episcopate the number of churches in the Auckland diocese increased from 28 to 85. Bishop Cowie visited every corner of the district and opened many churches in new settlements. He was practically the founder of the Sailors' Home, which was endowed by a large bequest made out of respect to Cowie himself (1883). The Institute for the

## COX

Blind received much of his attention from 1889 and he crowned the work of Lady Martin when he opened the Women's Home in Auckland. He was a member of the New Zealand University senate from 1879 and of the Auckland University College council from 1883. In 1888 and 1897 Cowie attended the Lambeth conference. In 1895 he was elected by the general synod to be primate of New Zealand.

His publications include *Notes on the Temples of Cashmere, A Visit to Norfolk Island and Our Last Year in New Zealand* (1888). He died on 26 Jun 1902 and his widow on 18 Aug.

Cowie, *op. cit.*; *Proc. of General Synod of N.Z. and Auckland Diocesan Synod*, 1870-1902; Jacobs; Morton; *N.Z. Herald*, 30 Jun 1892, 27 Jun 1902 (p).

COWLISHAW, WILLIAM PATTEN (1839-1903) was born in Sydney and educated there, graduating M.A. at the University of Sydney. He served his articles with Rowley, Holdsworth and Garrick, and was admitted to the bar in 1863. In the same year he came to Canterbury and entered into partnership with E. F. Harston, but in 1864 Garrick (q.v.) came into the partnership in place of Harston. They continued to practise together for many years, with the addition in 1883 of J. B. Fisher (q.v.). In 1865 Cowlshaw married Helen, daughter of John Bossley, Edensor Park, New South Wales.

Cowlshaw was the first solicitor to the board of governors of Canterbury College and was at different times solicitor to the education board, the City of Christchurch and the drainage board. He was a member of the Canterbury Provincial Council (for Avon 1865-66; for Heathcote 1870-74) and was provincial solicitor and a member of the executive (1864-66 and 1871-74). He was a fine debater and once contested the Stanmore seat in Parliament (against Pilliet). Cowlshaw was a director of the Christchurch Gas Co., the Press Co., and Ashby Bergh and Co., and some time chairman of Manning and Co. He died on 27 Mar 1903.

*The Press*, 28 Mar 1903.

COX, ALFRED (1825-1911), was born at Clarendon, New South Wales, the son of William Cox, who came to the Mother Colony in 1788 as a captain in the 102nd Regiment, retired from the army and became a prosperous settler. Alfred received his education at the King's

## COX

School at Parramatta. As a pupil he was present at the funeral of Samuel Marsden (1837). Cox records that he was taught music by Samuel Wallace, bandmaster of the 17th Regiment, and father of William Vincent Wallace (q.v.). At the first concert that he attended young Wallace played on both piano and violin. Cox became an accomplished musician. In 1844, with the consent of his guardians, he paid a visit to England and to improve his knowledge of farming he stayed on a farm in Northamptonshire. In Ireland he saw the intense distress of the peasantry during the potato famine (1846).

Returning to Melbourne (1847) Cox found many Tasmanians taking up the cheap runs offering in the Western District. On 26 Nov he married a daughter of Lieut-colonel Macpherson, of the 99th Regiment. Being now settled on the property in New South Wales, he made many trips out west. In 1854, at Newcastle, he met John Sidey, who was making large profits by shipping stock from Australia to New Zealand and selling to the owners of the new stations in Canterbury. Cox later met in Sydney one of the firm of Francis and Muter, from whom he purchased licenses to occupy two grazing runs, then unstocked. Getting together a quantity of stock, he took his passage in the *Admiral Grenfell* (1854), arranged temporary grazing near Christchurch and made another trip. He now had 3,000 sheep, 350 cattle and 40 or 50 horses. In company with Healey and W. Du Moulin he drove to the run, which he named Raukapuka, left Du Moulin in charge and returned to Australia, where he witnessed the first session of the General Assembly. It was three years before Cox saw his property again. In 1854 he was returned as having 826 sheep on 20,000 acres; three years later he had 2,600 on 60,000 acres.

In 1855 Cox and his family paid a visit to England and on returning to New Zealand he decided to stay in the colony. The homestead was built in 1860 at the foot of the Raukapuka bush. At the first stock show (1859) Cox won commendation for his fine-woolled sheep. Eventually he freeholded 1,500 acres at IOs an acre and, having made an excellent profit by fattening 2,000 merinos in time for the Otago diggings, he purchased another 2,000 acres at 12s 6d an acre.

As a public man the treatment meted out to

## CRAIGIE

the settlers of south Canterbury brought him into prominence. In 1862 he was elected for the Geraldine seat in the Provincial Council. Though he hated the idea of separation, it seemed to him the only way open to the Timaru settlers to get control of their own money. In 1863 he was elected to the General Assembly for Heathcote. In Feb 1864 he was elected a member and chairman of the first Geraldine road board. His parliamentary duties increasing, he resigned in 1865 from the Provincial Council and in 1866 was elected to the General Assembly for Timaru. In 1866 and 1867 he presented three petitions asking for self-government, and at length got a favourable recommendation from the House. In Sep 1867 he obtained the passage of a bill for the establishment of the Timaru and Gladstone board of works, and a month later he was elected a member of the first board.

Meanwhile Cox had become interested in the prospects of settlement in the North Island. During 1867 he paid a visit by way of Hawkes Bay to the native land in the interior. In 1869, having accomplished his main task in Parliament, he resigned the Timaru seat, and next year he sold a large portion of his property. During 1870-71 he was again in the Provincial Council as member for Papanui. In 1873, in company with James Williamson (Auckland), he visited Waikato to inspect a property which Williamson had purchased through the government. He invested a large amount in land in the Thames district which called for much outlay on draining, and he resided in the Waikato for the next seven years. In 1876-78 he was again in Parliament as member for Waipa. His land venture turned out a costly failure and in 1882 he sold out and returned to Christchurch, where he passed his remaining years. He contested the Geraldine seat in 1884.

In 1884 Cox published an interesting volume of *Recollections* and two years later a biographical dictionary entitled *Men of Mark in New Zealand*. Cox died in St Albans on 23 May 1911.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Hansard, *pass.*; Cox, *op. cit.*; Godley, *Letters*; Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 24 May 1911; *The Press*, 11 Oct 1930 (P). Portrait: Parliament House.

CRAIGIE, JAMES (1851-1935) was born at Cupar Angus, Perthshire. At the age of 15 he

## CRAWFORD

came to New Zealand with his parents and, having tried Christchurch and Timaru, was apprenticed at Dunedin to a painter and paperhanger. At the age of 21 he entered into business in Timaru and prospered.

In public life he was first chairman of the Kingsdown school committee and a member of the South Canterbury hospital board (eight years). He was elected chairman of the Timaru harbour board on the day he first sat as a member, and was chairman for four years. He was only a few months in the borough council when he was elected mayor, a position which he held for ten years (1902-12). In 1905 he inaugurated the free public library with the assistance of a grant of £3,000 which he obtained from Andrew Carnegie, supplemented later by £1,500. He promoted electric lighting of the streets and the Coleridge supply of hydro-electricity for the town, and developed Caroline Bay.

Craigie represented Timaru in the House of Representatives (1908-22) and was in the Legislative Council (1922-29). Amongst his gifts to Timaru were a statue of Burns and an avenue of trees. Craigie was one of the foremost Burns authorities in New Zealand and had also a comprehensive knowledge of Byron, Shakespeare, Emerson and the Bible. He was for many years a freemason in lodge St John, E.C.

He married (1875) a daughter of Alexander Orr, of county Donegal. His death occurred on 17 Aug 1935.

*NZ.P.D.*, 30 Aug 1935; *Who's Who NZ.*, 1932; *Timaru Herald*, 19 Aug 1935 (P). Portrait: Parliament House.

CRAWFORD, GEORGE (1810-80) arrived in Wellington by the *Bengal Merchant* from Scotland (1840) and took employment first as clerk to J. Telford, merchant, at Petone. After serving Willis and Co. and Bethune and Hunter in the same capacity he went into partnership with A. Yule as merchants. Their premises on Customhouse quay were destroyed by fire (1856). Crawford was member of the Provincial Council for Wellington City (1861-69 and 1871-75). He took a keen interest in sports and the Basin reserve, and was president of the Caledonian society and a generous supporter of charities. Crawford was a good rifle shot and won many prizes. He married (1845) Miss Gosling. His death occurred on 21 Dec 1880.

## CRAWFORD

*Parltry Record*; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 22 Dec 1880.

CRAWFORD, JAMES COUTI'S (1817-89) came of a naval family and was the son of a captain in the Royal Navy, and the grandson of an admiral. He was sent to the Royal Naval College at Portsmouth (where he won the gold medal), and was posted to the *Prince Regent*, 120 guns (Rear-Admiral Sir William Parker). He saw service on both coasts of South America; in Spanish waters during the Carlist war, and in the *Sapphire* at Corfu (1836). Here he received the Royal Humane Society's medal for life-saving. In 1837 he was promoted sub-lieutenant, but seeing no likelihood of further promotion resigned and came to Sydney in the *Coramandel* (1838).

Crawford bought a herd of cattle and drove them overland from Braidworth to Adelaide. Late in 1839 he came to New Zealand in the schooner *Success*, landing at Titahi bay and walking across to Port Nicholson. Chartering the cutter *Harriett* from the whaler *Toms*, he did some exploring in the northern bays of the South Island. While camped on the beach at Pito-one he bought from Henry Moreing five of the New Zealand Company's land orders, entitling him to five town acres and 500 country. He acquired a tract of land on Watt's Peninsula, where he established the Glendavar cattle farm (north of Burnham lake). Some years later, in order to drain the lake, he had a tunnel 100 yards long cut through the hill to Evans Bay. This is said to have been the first tunnel made in New Zealand, and is still being used for sewerage and for oil pipelines. The name Miramar was given to the estate by Crawford's brother-in-law, Major McBarnett. After acquiring his land Crawford returned to Sydney by way of Bay of Islands, and brought back cattle. In that year (1840) he made an overland journey to Auckland, and then left for England by way of the Philippines and India.

In 1846 he returned to New Zealand and was present in H.M.S. *Driver* with Sir George Grey at the apprehension of Te Rauparaha. Next year he made a journey on foot with Clifford and Stafford to reconnoitre the Wairarapa, and was much struck by the remarkable sense of locality that Stafford possessed; the future premier readily recognised from the reverse side

## CRAWFORD

trees and natural features that they had passed on their outward journey. Later Crawford visited in H.M.S. *Inflexible* the settlements at Nelson and Taranaki. As a geologist he rendered great service both to the General Government and the province of Wellington. In 1861 he rode overland to the upper Wanganui to inspect the coal measures of the Tangarakau river. Next year he accompanied the Superintendent (Featherston) to Waitotara. He explored the Tararua range, portion of north Auckland, and finally (1864) the Waikato basin. In 1841 he started a flax dressing company in Wellington. He was a member of the Geological Society of Edinburgh and of the Imperial and Royal Geographical Society of Austria. He was president of the Wellington Philosophical Society and a governor of the New Zealand Institute, in whose transactions appear many papers recording his observations. In 1880 he published in London *Recollections Of Travel in New Zealand and Australia*, and in 1883 *The Reform Of English Spelling*.

Crawford was a member of the Legislative Council (1859-67), resigning on accepting the post of resident magistrate and sheriff at Wellington, which he held until 1882. He was a captain in the New Zealand militia and also in the Lanarkshire militia in Scotland. He married (1843) Sophia (d. 1852), daughter of Sir James W. D. Dundas, G.C.B. In 1857 he married Jessie (d. 1880), daughter of Alexander McBarnett, of Torridon and Attadale, Ross-shire, Scotland. Crawford died in England on 8 Apr 1889.

G.B.O.P., 1844/556; *Col. Gent.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1859-67; Ward; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); E. J. Wakefield; Crawford, *op. cit.*; *Wellington Independent*, 8 Nov 1861; *Evening Post*, 5 Oct 1929 (P).

CRAWFORD, WILLIAM FITZGERALD (1843-1927) was born at Templemore, Tipperary, Ireland. Educated in Ireland, he came to New Zealand in the *Statesman* (1863) and spent two years in the employ of Robert Cashman, gum-digging at Awhitu, and in a grocery establishment in Auckland which was furnishing provisions to the troops. Attracted to the West Coast goldfields, he was manager of stores at Hokitika and Ross. Then he visited the diggings at Terawhiti, worked on a reclamation contract in Wellington and on the survey in

## CREED

Wairarapa, and eventually moved to the Thames goldfields, where he was storeman to C. Petschler at Shortland. Crawford prospected at Ohinemuri and Waitekauri, struck gold on Hapu creek and engaged in sharebroking. He married about this time and was then employed by the Albert brewery in Auckland (1871) and storekeeping at Onehunga. In 1874 he went to Gisborne in the *Pl'etty Jane* with the engine for the South Pacific Oil Co., which was set up at Waiongaromia. In 1875 he took charge of the brewery at Gisborne and when a company was formed in 1895 he became manager.

Crawford was the first mayor of Gisborne (1877-78) and was a member of the harbour board. He was a keen amateur photographer.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Gisborne Jubilee*.

CREED, CHARLES (1812-79), who was born in Somersetshire, was a man of great physical strength and determination. He entered the Wesleyan ministry in 1837, was accepted for the mission field and sailed from Gravesend on 20 Sep 1838 with five others in the ship *James*. After touching at Hobart they reached Hokianga in Feb 1839.

Creed had two years' experience at Hokianga and Kaipara and then went with a mission party in the brig *Triton* to Taranaki. This landing on the beach at Ngamotu under the superintendence of Waterhouse (14 Jan 1841) is pictured in Baxter's famous print. They were the first resident missionaries in Taranaki and Mrs Creed was the first European woman to settle there. In Mar the missionaries met on the beach their fellow *West-Countrymen* of Cornwall and Devon coming to settle the province. Creed spent three years in charge of the Maori population between Cook strait and Waikato. In 1844 the conference sent him to succeed Watkin (q.v.) in Otago, a charge which extended from Stewart island in the south to Kaikoura. His supply of literature was in the Waikato dialect but, being a good Maori linguist, he was able to overcome the difficulty of the Ngai-Tahu variations. He was a tireless traveller, whether on foot, by canoe or on horseback. In Sep 1845 he tramped all over Banks peninsula visiting Maori settlements; explored the site afterwards occupied by the city of Christchurch and returned by way of lake Ellesmere and Temuka to Waikouaiti. He

## CREIGHTON.

was the first white preacher of any denomination to hold a service on the site of Dunedin.

In Feb 1846 Kettle (q.v.) arrived to carry out the survey, and a firm friendship sprang up between the two men. The infant son of Robert Park (q.v.), which was born at Akaroa, was baptised by Creed on 29 Oct, the first European child to be baptised at Dunedin. He also baptised the first white boy (John Anderson) and the first white girl (Elizabeth Kettle) born in Dunedin. He held a service in the immigration barracks on 13 Apr 1848, a few weeks after the arrival of the *John Wickliffe*. Dr Bums found him 'an excellent devoted man,' but Cargill resented his influence with the Anglicans and charged him with deserting his own flock and intruding upon the field of another pastor. Creed replied establishing his priority in the field and he continued his work until the arrival of the first Anglican minister (Rev J. A. Fenton) early in 1852. Creed's missionary work amongst the natives was much hampered by the extent of his circuit, and the lack of native teachers. On this account he entrusted the care of those at Otakou to Thomas Ferens, a Durham Methodist. In 1852 he was transferred to the North Island, where he was a colleague of Buller at Hutt (1854). He died in New South Wales on 19 Feb 1879.

Buller; Morley; Hocken, *Otago*; M. A. R. Pratt (information); G. Smales in *N.Z. Herald*, 6 Jan 1894.

CREIGHTON, ROBERT JAMES (1835-93) was born in the north of Ireland and apprenticed to the printing trade in Belfast. He graduated to be a reporter and eventually to an editorial staff in Londonderry.

In 1861 he arrived in Auckland and in May 1862 joined with Scales and Tohill in the control of the *Southern Cross*, which they acquired from Brown and Campbell and turned into the first daily paper in the province, reducing the price from sixpence to threepence. Creighton succeeded McCabe as editor and by the withdrawal of Tohill (in 1863) and Scales (in 1867) he became sole proprietor. He was a vigorous writer and a sound political commentator, and the paper was very successful while the province prospered. During the Waikato war Creighton went into the field as a correspondent. He sent interesting despatches

## CREWES

from all the fronts, including the East Coast and Gate Pa, and his brilliant descriptions of the fighting were copied by the London *Times*. Creighton was member of the Auckland Provincial Council for Newton (1865-69 and 1870-73) and was provincial secretary on two occasions (1868-69 and 1870). He was three times in Parliament (for Parnell 1865-66, Newton 1869-70, Eden 1871-75).

In 1868 Vogel purchased the *Southern Cross* and Creighton with some of his staff established the *Auckland Free Press* (May 1868), but it soon succumbed in the financial depression following the withdrawal of the troops from New Zealand. He then went to Dunedin where he managed and edited the *Otago Guardian* from its beginning (Jul 1873) till Oct 1874, when he became manager of the *New Zealand Times*, which had just absorbed the *Independent*. He later returned to Auckland to the editorial chair of the *New Zealand Herald*. Anxious to see more of the world, Creighton left for San Francisco, where he obtained an appointment on the *Post* and acted as American correspondent of the *Otago Daily Times*. He was mail agent for New Zealand in San Francisco and acted for the New Zealand government in various capacities. In 1880 he was instrumental in introducing Ligurian bees from California to New Zealand. For some time in the eighties he was in Honolulu, where he edited the Honolulu *Commercial Advertiser*.

In 1891 Creighton visited New Zealand in connection with the mail services, and two years later he died in California (22 May 1893).

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii (P); Morton; *N.z. Herald*, 28 Aug 1880, 26 May 1893; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Oct 1874; Creighton on federation in *Victorian Review*, vol 5, p. 719.

CREWES, JOHN (1847-1925) was born at Grampond, Cornwall, and educated in London for the Methodist ministry. As a young man he was closely associated with city missions. He came to Christchurch in 1879 to take charge of the Bible Christians, for whom he erected a church in High street. He was greatly interested in prison-gate and other social work.

Crewes stood against Vogel for Christchurch North in 1884 and against R. M. Taylor for Sydenham in 1887. While in Christchurch he

## CREYKE

published and edited the *Liberal Herald* to support that party's social legislation. A sermon which he preached in 1889 on sweating in Christchurch aroused deep interest. About 1890 he moved to Wellington, where he engaged in preaching, lecturing and journalism. He was a justice of the peace and gave evidence before the police commission in 1898. He was also chairman of the conciliation board in Wellington. He founded the Zoological Society (1900) and was editor of the *Zoo Standard*. His death occurred on 30 Dec 1925.

*App. H.R.*, 1898, H2; Saunders, ii; *The Press*, 18 Jun 1889; *Evening Post*, 30 Dec 1925.

**CREYKE, ALFRED RICHARD** (1828-93), a son of the vicar of Okeover, England, arrived in Canterbury in 1851. He took up land, including Racecourse Hill, and in 1853 took up an additional 15,000 acres. J. C. Watts Russell and Creyke worked these properties together, Creyke's homestead being on the Waimakariri. Shortly after 1860 he sold out and lived in Christchurch. He represented Avon in Parliament from 1861 till the middle of 1862, when he retired. Creyke married the widow of Watts-Russell.

Acland; *eycl. N.Z.*, iii.

**CROKE, THOMAS WILLIAM** (1824-1902) was born at Mallow, county Cork, and educated at the Charleville endowed school, at the Irish College in Paris and the college of Menin, Belgium, and the Irish College in Rome, where he won the gold and silver medals. In 1847 he graduated as doctor of divinity and was ordained. For nine years (1849-58) he was a missionary priest in the diocese of Cloyne.

An intensely human man, athletic himself and with an ardent interest in the sports and daily life of his people, Croke had a passionate enthusiasm for Irish nationalism. He held great hopes of something being achieved during the revolutionary movement in Europe in 1848 and he became a leading member of the party of organised opposition. When that hope failed he withdrew from the movement and stood aloof. He was president of St Colman's College, Fermoy (1858-65), and parish priest of Doneraile and chancellor of the diocese of Cloyne (1865-70). From that post he was consecrated as Bishop of Auckland (1870). He had

## CROMPTON

only been four years in New Zealand when he was chosen as Archbishop of Cashel, Ireland.

Shortly after taking up his residence in the palace of Thurles Croke was waited upon by Parnell, who implored him to give his countenance to the Irish Land League, round which the best brains of the Irish movement were now rallying. Stead says that Parnell, though a Protestant, valued so highly the influence of Croke that he threw himself on his knees before the Archbishop and begged his assent. Croke finally yielded and flung himself heart and soul into the League. He resisted firmly the no-rent manifesto, which he considered immoral and unjustifiable and shattered with his condemnation. He later proposed a great testimonial to Parnell, but it was banned by the Pope. Croke disapproved the plan of campaign which followed the rejection of the first home rule bill. After the fall of Parnell he again withdrew from the movement, waiting for the appearance of a leader around whom Irishmen could really unite. He believed that if a good land bill were passed which would make the Irish farmers independent their innate conservatism would bring to an end the demand for separation from England. Croke died on 22 Feb 1902.

*D.N.B.*; W. T. Stead in *Reviews of Reviews*, 1895; *The Times*, 23 Feb 1902.

**CROKER, EDWARD** (1821-92) was an officer of the 17th Regiment who served in Cashmere and other parts of India, attaining his brevet-majority. He was aide-de-camp to Lieut-general Sir John Littler, deputy-governor of Bengal, whose daughter Marion (then the wife of Major Ling, of the 4th Dragoons), he afterwards married. Selling his commission in 1858, Croker came to New Zealand and took up a farm at Tokomairiro in Otago. He was appointed commissioner of the Tuapeka goldfields (Oct 1861) and later warden at Lawrence. Retiring in 1867, he spent some years in Australia and eventually returned to England, where he died in 1892.

*D.N.B.* (Littler); pyke; *Otago Daily Times*, 29 Jul 1878; *N.Z. Herald*, 4 Jul 1878.

**CROMPTON, WILLIAM MORGAN** (1811-86) was born in Birmingham, the son of a Brazil merchant; and was educated at Dr Carpenter's academy in Bristol when Dr James Martineau was on the staff. During a period of several

## CROSSLEY

years when he was teaching at a college in the north of France he accepted the Roman Catholic religion. In 1851 he came to Taranaki in the *Lord William Bentinck* (arriving in Jan 1852) and at once took up land at Ornata, where he built his home. On the *Taranaki Herald* being established (Aug 1852) Crompton became editor, but he resigned after the ninth issue owing to a difference of opinion with the proprietors. During the war he served in the commissariat and his home and property were destroyed. He started a school in New Plymouth at which many of the children of leading colonists received their education.

Always actively interested in politics, Crompton was elected in Aug 1853 to represent Ornata in the first Parliament (1853-55). He was a member of the Provincial Council for Ornata from 1862 until the abolition and Speaker throughout; and on many occasions he acted as deputy for the Superintendent of the province. Crompton was an early justice of the peace and visiting justice and deputy-sheriff; a member and chairman of the New Plymouth town board, and a member of the land board, the cemetery board and court Waireka, A.O.F., and a trustee of the New Plymouth Savings Bank. On the passing of the education act in 1877 he became inspector of schools for Taranaki, a position he held with great efficiency until ill-health caused him to retire (1884). Crompton died on 27 Dec 1886.

*N.z.P.D.*, 9 Sep 1854; *Taranaki p.e. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 4 Feb 1884, 28 Dec 1886.

**CROSSLEY, OWEN THOMAS LLOYD** (1860-1926) was educated at Trinity College, Dublin. He was curate of St John, Birkenhead (1888), vicar of Egremont (1892), and other parishes; lecturer at St Aidan's, Birkenhead (1900), archdeacon of Geelong (1904-11) and incumbent of All Saints, St Kilda (1905-11). In 1911 he was appointed Bishop of Auckland, a position which two years later he resigned to become chaplain to the Archbishop of Melbourne. In 1914 he was appointed rector of St Andrew's Major, Dinas Powis, Cardiff, where he died on 3 Mar 1926.

*Who was Who*; Crockford.

**CROWTHER, WILLIAM** (1834-1900) was born in Lancashire. At the age of 19 he emi-

## CULLING

grated to Australia and worked on the Victorian diggings, mining and contracting. About 1862 he came to Otago and had several teams carrying to the Dunstan fields. The war attracted him to Auckland, where he took up army contracts and imported horses from Otago and Australia for army purposes. After the war he purchased in Melbourne ten buses with which he initiated services in the vicinity of Auckland, and eventually established the Victoria stables in Wellesley street. Retiring with a competence after twelve years, he devoted his attention to public service. He was a member of the City Council (1878-94) and mayor (1891-92), a governor of the Auckland College and Grammar School and a member of the council of Auckland University College, the city schools committee, the charitable aid board and the sailors' home. He was a member of the harbour board and for one term chairman. In 1893 Crowther was elected to Parliament for Auckland City, which he represented till his death (15 Mar 1900).

Russell; Morton, p. 21; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Mar 1900; *N.z.P.D.*, 22 Jun 1900. Portrait: Parliament House.

**CRUISE, RICHARD ALEXANDER** (?1784-1832) belonged to a county Meath family. He received his commission as ensign in the 44th Foot (1804), was promoted lieutenant (1807), transferred to the 84th Foot (1808) and promoted captain (1819), and major (1823), retiring as lieutenant-colonel (1826). He served in the Peninsula and was wounded at the passage of the Nive (Basses Pyrenees) in 1813. In Jul 1819 Cruise sailed in H.M.S. *Dromedary* for New South Wales, with a guard of the 84th Regiment (including Ensign McCrea). He spent 10 months in New Zealand (Feb-Dec 1820) and published in 1823 one of the most important of the early works on the country and people, *Journal of a Ten Months Residence in New Zealand*. Cruise died on 6 May 1832.

Family information from C. J. O'Keefe; Cruise, *op. cit.*; Thomson.

**CULLING, THOMAS** (1832-1901) was born in England and brought up to the printing trade. He came to Otago in the *Ajax* (1849) and was employed successively on the *Otago News* to Dec 1850, on the *Lyttelton Times* (1851-54), the *Otago Witness* and *The Colonist*, eventually

## CURLING

retiring to go on the land in Taieri. He was chairman of the East Taieri road board, contested two provincial council elections and one parliamentary election. He then joined Coull brothers as printers and papermakers and eventually bought the Mataura paper mills. Culling was chairman of the Mataura town board for four years and first mayor. He died on 23 Mar 1901.

*Otago Daily Times*, 25 Mar 1901.

CURLING, EDWARD SPENCER (1815-68) was one of the earliest settlers in Hawkes Bay and was an original member of the Settlers' Association (1856) and of the A. and P. Association (1858). In 1859 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Te Aute, and he sat for that district to 1862 and for Waimarama (1863-66). He was a lieutenant of the Napier militia (1863). Curling died on 3 Jan 1868.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; Hawkes Bay Herald*, 4, 14, 21 Jan 1868.

CURLING, JOHN was sheep farming in Hawkes Bay in the early fifties. In 1856 he was gazetted a J.P. and in the same year was one of the original members of the Ahuriri Settlers' Association. In 1857 he was called to the Legislative Council, and on the same date was appointed resident magistrate at Napier. He presented in Parliament (20 Apr 1858) the petition of Hawkes Bay for separation from Wellington. Speaking on the New Provinces bill (16 Aug), he expressed the hope that the Superintendent of Hawkes Bay would sit in council and do away with ceremonial inasmuch as a plain sheepfarmer, who might be superintendent, would object to ceremony: In Nov 1858 Curling was appointed receiver of land revenue for the district. He resigned from the Legislative Council in 1861. In 1863 he was appointed captain in the Napier militia (unattached from May 1864). He retired in 1869 and was afterwards for some years a schoolmaster.

*Parltry Record; Cycl. N.Z.*, vi.

CURTIS, GEORGE (1816-94) was born in Newington Common, Hackney, London, educated in the city and brought up to commercial life. For some years he was in business with his father and brothers in Hackney. In 1850 he came to New Zealand in the *Pekin*, landing at Wellington and walking overland to Wanganui

## CURTIS

with S. Percy Smith and others. Settling in New Plymouth, he engaged in business (with I. N. Watt) as importers and took up land at Ornata. His homestead was destroyed in the war. As a member of the militia, in which he served for two years, Curtis was concerned in the construction and defence of the Ornata stockade and took part in the fighting at Ratapihipihi and Waireka. He afterwards returned to his farm. Curtis first stood for the Provincial Council in 1855 and was a member (for Omata) in 1861-62, being part of the time provincial treasurer. He was a member of the first harbour board (1875). Curtis died on 9 Jun 1894. His sons, G. N. and H. B. CURTIS, were pioneers of Stratford (1877).

*Taranaki P.C. minutes and Gaz.; Taranaki Herald* 11 Jun 1894. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

CURTIS, HERBERT EVELYN (1818-90) was born in England and came to New Zealand with his younger brother (O, Curtis, q.v.) in the *Mohammed Shah* (1853). She was burned off Tasmania and the passengers landed there. Curtis was the senior partner in a Nelson firm of merchants for many years. He was provincial auditor in the later period of the provinces, but did not enter the Council. In 1856 he was elected to Parliament, in which he represented Motueka and Massacre Bay (1856-60) and Motueka (1861-66). He then retired and his brother entered Parliament. Curtis died on 10 Aug 1890.

Saunders; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *The Colonist*, 11 Aug 1890.

CURTIS, OSWALD (1821-1902) was the son of Stephen Curtis, a London merchant, and was educated at private schools and Hackney Grammar School, matriculating at the University of London. He went into commercial life and in 1853 came to New Zealand and entered into business at Nelson with his brother, H. E. Curtis (q.v.) as merchants.

Curtis was M.P.C. for Nelson (1857-67) and in 1866 he was elected to Parliament for the same constituency, which he represented till 1879. Early in 1867 the Superintendency of Nelson became vacant owing to the resignation of Saunders, and Curtis was elected to the position, which he held until the abolition of the provinces. In 1872 he was Postmaster-general and Commissioner of Customs for four weeks in

## CUTFIELD

the Stafford ministry. He had been a consistent opponent of Stafford in his earlier political life. Curtis retired from Parliament in 1879 and a few months later was appointed chairman of the royal commission on railways. He was afterwards a resident magistrate and acted on several commissions of inquiry, notably that in connection with the Dunedin gaol (1883). He was a governor of Nelson College (1874), a trustee of the Nelson Savings Bank, and a member of the New Zealand University senate (1870-87). He died on 1 Mar 1902.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); Saunders; *The Colonist*, 3 Mar 1902. Portrait: Parliament House.

CUTFIELD, GEORGE (1799-1879) was born at Deal and was a naval architect in the naval dockyard at Devonport. He was in charge of the expedition of the Plymouth Company in the *William Bryan*, which sailed from Plymouth Sound on 19 Nov 1840. After calling at Cloudy bay and Port Nicholson they arrived off the Sugar Loaves on 30 Mar 1841. Cutfield's report to the directors (2 May 1841) shows that Carrington had already selected the site for the town. Cutfield took energetic measures to carry out his mission. While acting as storekeeper and immigration agent (until 1843) he was also a justice of the peace. In 1847 he endeavoured, with his brother-in-law (Henry King) to lease the Tataraimaka block, but being unsuccessful they farmed together at Brooklands.

In 1851 he was appointed to the Legislative Council of New Zealand and in 1853 he was elected to represent Grey and Bell in the Taranaki Provincial Council, in which he sat until the end of 1856. In 1853 also he was called to the new Legislative Council, from which he retired a few months later. Early in 1857 Cutfield was elected Superintendent of the province. During his term of office hostilities broke out over the Waitara purchase. Though warned by his executive (J. C. Richmond and T. King) against the grave results that were likely to ensue, he pledged the province to assist in carrying out the government's policy. On the completion of his term as Superintendent (Jul 1861) he withdrew from the election and allowed C. Brown to be returned for another term. In 1858 Cutfield was recalled to the Legislative Council and he was a member until

## CUTHBERTSON

his resignation in 1867. He assisted the government in obtaining the Tataraimaka block, upon which for many years he had a large cattle run. He acted as deputy-Superintendent in 1870. Cutfield did much to introduce English garden seeds into Taranaki. In later years he was a warm patron of the turf. He died on 22 Jan 1879...

*Taranaki P.C. minutes; Taranaki Herald and Budget*, 18 Dec 1926 (p); *Taranaki News*, 25 Jan 1879. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

CUTHBERTSON, JOHN ROBERT (1834-82) was born in Glasgow, educated at the Academy and University there and entered commercial life. In 1854 he came to Melbourne and in 1860 to Southland, where he took up land at Waiiau. In the following year he was joined by his brother, R. F. Cuthbertson (q.v.), with whom he carried on as sheepfarmers till 1876. In 1876 Cuthbertson became a member of the firm of Macrorie and Cuthbertson, auctioneers and land agents.

He was a member of the Southland Provincial Council, representing Longwood (1865-67) and Oreti (1867) and was a member of the executive in 1866, as secretary for works. He was deputy-superintendent on one occasion. The provincial finances being in a highly precarious condition, creditors sought to put the bailiffs into the offices, but Cuthbertson had the windows barricaded and eventually compounded by issuing land orders in settlement of the debts. He represented Invercargill in Parliament (1873-75). Cuthbertson was for some time editor of the *Southland Times*, for which he wrote with considerable effect. He died on 9 Oct 1882.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Southland P.C. Proc.; Southland Times*, 10 Oct 1882.

CUTHBERTSON, ROBERT FERGUSON (1840-1913) was born on the Clyde and educated at the Glasgow Academy and Edinburgh University. Trained as an accountant in Liverpool, he was engaged in business there till 1860, when he came to New Zealand and joined his brother sheepfarming in Southland.

After being almost ruined by the ravages of rabbits, he practised his profession in Invercargill, where he was a foundation member of the New Zealand Institute of Accountants. Cuthbertson was a member of the Southland

## CUTTEN

Provincial Council for Waiau (1864-65 and 1868), and was in the executive in 1865. He was afterwards a member of the first Wallace county council, secretary of the Southland Agricultural and Pastoral Association, a visiting justice and agent for the public trustee. He married a daughter of Thomas Denniston (q.v.) He died on 1 Jun 1913.

*Southland P.G. Pmc.; Gycl. N.Z., iv (p); Who's Who N.Z., 1908; Ross; Southland Times, 2 Jun 1913.*

CUTTEN, WILLIAM HENRY (1822-83) was born in London. After receiving a good education he studied law, and in a few years received a post in the department of the commissioner of bankruptcy.

At the age of 26 Cutten emigrated to New Zealand in the *John Wickliffe*, and established himself as a merchant and auctioneer in Dunedin. In 1849 he was appointed emigration agent, and he was also a land claims commissioner. He took a prominent part in the Otago Settlers' Association, which worked for full self-government, and was one of the founders of the Mechanics' Institute in Dunedin. The first newspaper in the settlement, the *Otago News*, came to an end in Dec 1850. A group of business men financed the *Otago Witness*, which made its first appearance in Feb 1851. It was intended that they should take week about editing the journal, but before long Cutten was appointed editor at £1 a week. In Oct 1851 the proprietors presented the property to him. Soon afterwards the plant was transferred to Cutten's auction rooms, whence the paper issued for some years. On the outbreak of the diggings (1861) Cutten and his associates established the *Otago Daily Times*, and engaged Vogel as editor of both papers. B. L. Farjeon took charge of the mechanical side. Cutten found his temperament unsuited to the hurly-burly of journalism, and before long he parted with his interest in the company.

In the first Provincial Council he was one of the members for the City of Dunedin (1853-63).

## CUTTEN

During most of that time he was a member of the executive, often as provincial treasurer, and he held from the General Government the post of commissioner of crown lands for the province. These combined offices caused embarrassment, and he had to choose between the service of the province and that of the Colony. A rule had been passed by the Provincial Council forbidding its members holding office under the General Government. Cutten retired from the Council and continued in the office of commissioner of crown lands until 1867, when it was combined with that of chief surveyor, and J. T. Thomson assumed the post.

Cutten was elected in 1853 as member for Dunedin Country district in Parliament. The long journeys to Auckland made it impossible for him to leave his business for so long, and he resigned in 1855. In that year he was elected a member of the Dunedin town board (which preceded the City Council). In 1863 Cutten tried again to enter Parliament, but was defeated for Dunedin and Suburbs by Reynolds and Vogel. Having resigned his General Government appointments, he was free in the early seventies to take public office, and he returned to the Provincial Council as member for Dunedin. He was for 18 months a member of Donald Reid's executive, and he foreshadowed the Liberal land measures of Rolleston by introducing resolutions in the Council providing for the system of land purchase by deferred payment. Having retired from the Council, Cutten in 1873 paid a visit of two years to the Old Country.

On returning he was again elected M.H.R. (for Taieri, which he represented from 1878-79). In 1881 he tried to get himself elected for Peninsula, but without success. He was a member of the Otago University council 1871-83.

Cutten married (1850) a daughter of Cargill. He died on 30 Jun 1883.

*Otago P.G. Pmc.; Hocken; Arnold; Otago News, pass.; Otago Daily Times, 1 Jul 1883, 4 Jul 1930 (p) •*

## D

DACRE, HENRY (1840-80) lived for 25 years in the province of Auckland. He started a cattle station on the Okura river, where he was the only settler for some time. He was a member of the Provincial Council for the Northland Division (1867-68). He was appointed inspector of sheep shortly before his death (on 27 Aug 1880).

*NZ. Herald, 13 Sep 1880.*

DACRE, RANULPH (1795-1882) was born at Marwell Hall, Hampshire, a son of Col. Dacre, of the Hampshire Light Fencibles, high sheriff of the county. He joined the Royal Navy as a midshipman at the age of 12 and served in the American war (1812). Soon afterwards he resigned and joined the mercantile marine, having exciting experiences with privateers in the West Indies.

About 1820 Dacre first visited New Zealand. He was at Whangaroa in 1824 in his own schooner, the *Endeavour*, which brought the Quaker missionaries Fryer and Bennett on a visit to many of the South Sea islands. He then traded between London and Sydney in command of ships belonging to Robert Brookes. In one of these, the *Surrey*, in which he had a part interest, he called at Hokianga, Mercury Bay and Whangaroa in search of spars. Later in his own vessel, the *Mary Ann*, he established at Mercury Bay an agent (Gordon) to supervise the cutting of spars for fulfilling contracts with the Admiralty. Dacre took his first cargo of spars out of Hokianga in 1827. He was there again in 1832 and gradually opened up a large trade. He left the sea about 1838 and established the firm of Dacre and Wilks, shipping agents, in Sydney. The partnership was soon dissolved and Dacre carried on as agent for Brookes, running a regular line between Syd-

ney and London. He was a director of the Union Bank of Australia and of the Alliance Insurance Co. and was largely interested in whaling ventures, including the voyages of the ships *Porteous*, *Governor Hallett*, *Lucy Ann* and *Arabian*. He also opened up a large trade in sandalwood between the South Sea islands and the Far East, for which he fitted out the brig *Alfred* and the schooner *Wave*. Greenstone for the Chinese market seemed a profitable speculation, and he sent the schooner *Royal Mail* to Nelson and Milford Sound and obtained about two tons of stone of high quality, but so hard that the tools were not equal to working it. Owing to the imminence of war between Britain and China this cargo remained at Manila and Dacre lost heavily upon it. He had the brig *Julian* engaged in the trade with Tahiti and Sandwich islands. In 1841 Dacre began an extensive voyage to New Zealand and the islands to liquidate his liabilities. He had taken up land in Victoria at the first sale by the government and he was also deeply involved in a station carrying 50,000 sheep on the Gammon plain. In the slump of 1843 he was glad to cut his losses, and he removed with his family to Hexham, on the Hunter river.

In 1842 he visited New Zealand in the clipper schooner *Diana* (which he owned) and two years later he visited Tahiti in the *Rambler*. He now engaged in business in Auckland with J. Macky until 1854, when he went into partnership with Thomas Macky.

Dacre was greatly interested in St Paul's Church, Auckland, and was a member of the Diocesan synod. He was also a benefactor of the orphans' home. He died in 1882.

*Gycl. N.Z., ii (p); Sherrin and Wallace; Montgomery; Darroch; NZ. Herald, II Oct 1884.*

## DALDY

DALDY, WILLIAM CRUSH (1816-1903) was born at Rainham, Essex, educated there, and went to sea in one of his father's colliers, the *Mayflower*. His father died in 1832 and he obtained a post as third mate in the transport *Briton*, sailing for Ceylon. He then tried a shore post, but found it advisable to return to the sea. For some time he commanded the schooner *Shamrock*, 85 tons, trading to Newfoundland and the Baltic.

In Dec 1840 he left Liverpool for Tasmania and he arrived in the Waitemata on 1 Jul 1841, the day on which the first customhouse was opened at Auckland. For three years he traded between Auckland and Sydney, varied by a voyage to Tahiti for cattle and an arrest there for using political language. In 1845 Daldy commanded the *Bolina*, taking home the first cargo of New Zealand produce, in the interest of Brown, Campbell and Co. Two years later he bought land near Auckland and started to work a timber station, for which there was a good market in Auckland. In 1849 the firm of Combes and Daldy, wholesale and shipping agents, was established. His partner died in 1869 and thereafter Daldy carried on alone.

In 1855 he contested the Northern Division seat in the Provincial Council without success, but in the same year he was elected to Parliament for City of Auckland, which he represented until 1860. Shortly after making his appearance in Parliament he was appointed a member of Fox's short-lived government (May-Jun 1856). In 1857 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Suburbs, but he lost his seat a few months later when the Council was dissolved. In 1861 he was again elected, for Auckland West, and he sat until early in 1864. During this time Daldy was an active advocate of the interests of the city, and in Dec 1862 he succeeded Pollen as provincial secretary. He carried through the Council the half million loan bill and the first fencing bill. When he visited England in 1865 he acted as emigration agent for the province, sending out some thousands of settlers, and he also purchased the first railway plant for Auckland and managed the provincial funds in London during the Overend Gurney smash in a most advantageous manner. He was a member of the harbour board (being chairman for the first seven years), captain of the fire brigade and for 30 years a justice of the

## DALRYMPLE

peace (a post which he resigned in 1886).

Daldy was one of the promoters of the New Zealand Insurance Co., chairman of the South British Insurance Co., an auditor of the Bank of New Zealand and a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. He was one of the first volunteers sworn in in New Zealand, being lieutenant of the Coastguards. During the Waikato war they were on duty at Miranda and Drury, and Daldy was under fire in carrying despatches to the head chief at Wairoa. From 1874 to 1876 he was a member of the City Council.

Daldy was a staunch Congregationalist and held many offices in that denomination from 1851 (including those of treasurer and Sunday school superintendent). He took an interest in many philanthropic movements. He married first (1841) the daughter of Captain Pulliam (Launceston). After her death (1877) he married Miss Hamerton (who was a leader in social and feminist movements, being a member of the New Zealand Women's National Council). Daldy died on 5 Oct 1903.

*Parltry Recol'd; Auckland P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; Darroch; Cycl. N.Z., i, ii (p); Cowan, i; Morton; N.Z. Herald, 2 Jul 1881, 6 Oct 1903; N.Z. Graphic, 23 Jul 1892 (p).*

DALRYMPLE, JOHN TAYLOR (1839-1904) came to New Zealand in the sixties and settled on the west coast of the North Island about 1868. He represented Manawatu in the Wellington Provincial Council (1873-75). He died on 12 May 1904.

DALRYMPLE, PETER (1813-1901) was born in Galloway, educated in the parish school and reared on the farm at Newluce. As a young man he went to Manchester, where he engaged in the drapery trade with considerable success until 1853. During this time he was deeply interested in Liberal politics, took a part in the activities of the Anti-Corn Law League and saw something of Bright and Cobden.

In 1853 he purchased 60 portable houses constructed at Liverpool and shipped with them to Melbourne, where he sold them at a good profit. After two years in Australia he shipped as supercargo in the schooner *Caledonia*, bound for Port Chalmers and the Chatham islands. Enamoured of Otago, he finished his engagement at Melbourne and came to settle in New Zealand (Nov 1855). From Dunedin he walked

## DALZIELL

to Bluff, taking 19 days on the journey. In Apr 1856 he took up a 100-acre section which he named Appleby after a Wigtownshire village, erected one of his houses upon it and lived and farmed there for the remainder of his life.

A Manchester Liberal by upbringing, Dalrymple was a progressive in politics and as a member of the Southland Provincial Council (Oreti 1867-69, Roslyn 1869-70), he voiced advanced opinions on many subjects. He was a strong advocate of the Seaward Bush railway, and in his later years, incapacitated from work, interested himself in the establishment of a woollen mill in Southland, an object which he saw achieved, though not in his way. Dalrymple died on 17 Sep 1901.

*Parltry Record; Kinross; Southland Times, 15 Sep 1901.*

DALZIELL, FREDERICK GEORGE (1865-1931) was born at Auckland, the son of William Dalziell (Leith, Scotland), and educated at Ellis's private school, New Plymouth. There he entered the civil service in the Deeds Registry Department. Being transferred to Dunedin, he began to study law, and was admitted to the bar in 1892. Entering the office of Stout and Mondy, he was invited in 1894 by J. G. Findlay (q.v.) to take charge of his practice at Palmerston. Thereafter he practised on his own account in Lawrence. As a young man he was a keen cricketer, footballer and tennis player (being champion of Otago on one occasion).

In 1899, on the appointment of Stout to be chief justice, he joined Findlay in his Wellington practice and continued in that partnership for many years. He was a recognised authority on company law and was a director of the New Zealand Times Co. and managing director of the Taupo-Totara Timber Co.

Dalziell was a serious student of philosophy and social politics, and from 1919 published many pamphlets on current politics and expounding his theory that most of the ills of civilisation would yield to recognition of certain fundamental rules of life and a simplified system of living. In 1919 he published *The Truth of Life, as Disclosed in Half a Century of the National Life of New Zealand*, and thereafter about 18 pamphlets on various phases of social organisation and Christianity. For some years in succession he petitioned Parliament seeking re-

## DANIEL

cognition of his "truth of life" statement. The petitions were referred to parliamentary committees and were the subject of debates in the House of Representatives. Dalziell married (1906) Pearl, daughter of Dr M. S. Grace (q.v.). He died on 14 Apr 1931.

*Hansard, 30 Jul 1926, 11 Sep 1930; Who's Who N.Z., 1924; Evening Post, 15 Apr 1931.*

DAMPIER, CHRISTOPHER EDWARD was an English solicitor, of Lincoln's Inn Fields, and arrived in Lyttelton by the *Phoebe Dunbar* in 1850 with the documents of the Canterbury Association, of which he was the solicitor. He was admitted to the bar in that year. Dampier represented Lyttelton in the Provincial Council (1853-57). In 1859 he took up Esk Head station on the Hurunui, which was managed by his son, C. E. Dampier-Crossley. He died in 1905.

*Cant. P.C. Proc. and Gaz. (notably vol. xiii, 13); Acland.*

DANIEL, THEOPHILUS A. J. B. (1817-93) was born at Hastings, Sussex, and at the age of 19 landed in Australia from the ship *Hercules*, of which his brother was captain. After gaining some experience of station life, he was sent by a Sydney firm with 1,200 head of cattle to establish a run in the Riverina. Later, with his brother Sylvanus, he squatted in the same district.

Having sold his interest in the station, he left to visit England, but the ship in which he travelled went ashore at Farewell Spit and was got off and taken to Wellington by Captain Howell. As a result of this meeting Daniel decided to make his home in Southland. He took charge of 500 sheep for Howell from Sydney, and in partnership with Howell and Stevens engaged in whaling and trading. When the agreement was dissolved he ran a store in Riverton and farmed in the neighbourhood. Daniel was mayor of Riverton on several occasions (1879, 1880-81). He acquired considerable property, and was a strong advocate of railway construction in the western district of Southland. He was a member of the Southland Provincial Council (for Longwood) from 1867-69, and after the reunion with Otago sat in the Otago Council for Riverton (1871-75). He also represented the district of Wallace in Parliament (1881-84).

## DANIELL

Daniel married a sister of Captain Stevens (who had been at Jacobs river since 1842). He died on 22 Mar 1893.

*Southland and Otago P.C. Proc.; Riverton Rec.* (p); Beattie, ii; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Southland Times*, 24 Mar 1893. Portrait: Parliament House.

DANIELL, CHARLES EDWARD (1856-1939) was born at Malvern, Worcestershire. Brought up to the building trade, at the age of 18 he was employing 20 men. In 1880 he came to New Zealand and established a business in Masterton as a builder and contractor. Daniell took part in the establishment of the Masterton Technical School, of which he was a governor and chairman for many years; and was a governor of the Wairarapa High School and of Solway Girls' College, and a member and chairman of the Wairarapa secondary education board. For 30 years he was a member (and for 14 years chairman) of the Masterton Trust Lands Trust. He was for some time on the borough council and the licensing committee and was a member of the Wellington harbour board from 1903-23 (including four years as chairman). For 50 years he was superintendent of the Methodist Sunday school, and for some years chairman of the Methodist children's home.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Wairarapa Times-Age*, 12 Jul 1939.

DANIELL, EDWARD (1802-66) was the son of Ralph Allen Daniell, of Cornwall. He served in the army in the 75th (Gordon Highlanders) and having attained the rank of captain and adjutant, sold his commission and invested in the lands of the New Zealand Company. He was one of the first committee of settlers. Arriving by the *Adelaide* in Mar 1840, he was a member of the provisional committee of government.

He had bought 1,100 acres from the Company, but being unable to gain possession of it he lived in Wellington for 10 years. Meanwhile he found a suitable piece of land for a farm at Ngaio, which he called Trelissick, and he constructed a road up to it which was afterwards widened and continued through to Porirua (1845). At the request of Colonel Wakefield Daniell and Duppa visited the South Island in 1848 to report on its suitability for the Canterbury settlement. In 1849 he was allowed

## DARGAVILLE

to select 250 acres for every 100 that he had bought, and he picked 2,500 acres of very good land at Bulls, where (after visiting England in 1855) he erected his Killeymoon homestead. A portion of his land he cut up in 1866 for the town of Bulls.

Daniell bred fine horses at his run at Hikunгарara. He represented Wanganui and Rangitikei in the Wellington Provincial Council (1853-55). He died on 5 Aug 1866.

E. J. Wakefield; Ward; J. G. Wilson.

DARGAVILLE, JOSEPH McMULLEN (1837-96) belonged to a Huguenot family and was born at Cork, his father being a physician. Educated at Fermoy College, he left for Australia as a young man and after some experience in Victoria entered the service of the Union Bank in Sydney as a junior clerk. In five years, when only 25 years of age, he was a branch manager; and two years later he came to New Zealand as branch inspector on the West Coast. In 1868 he became manager at Auckland, and in 1869 he resigned from the bank and started in business as a wholesale merchant (under the title of Must and Co.). Later he entered the timber and kauri gum trade in northern Wairoa, where he acquired land and laid out the town which bears his name.

Dargaville was a member of the Auckland City Council (1871-84). While M.P.C. for City East (1873-75) he carried through the Provincial Council a water scheme for the city, but it was reversed during his absence. He contested the Superintendency with John Williamson and H. H. Lusk (1873), and came forward again in 1875, but retired in favour of Sir G. Grey. In 1881 he was elected M.H.R. for Auckland City 'Vest, and in 1884 was re-elected as a supporter of the Stout-Vogel government. In 1887 he was defeated for Marsden; in 1890 for Bay of Islands (by Houston), and in 1893 for Eden (by Mitchelson). He was a promoter of the Kalliu railway, a member of the Auckland harbour board and chairman of the Parnell road board; captain of the Auckland City engineers and of the Dargaville rifles and president of the rifle club; grand master of the Orange Lodge of New Zealand; a prominent freemason, and consul for the United States. Dargaville died on 27 Oct 1896.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.z. Herald*, 28 Oct 1896. Portrait: Parliament House.

## DART

DART, JOHN RAYNOR (1855-1935). Born at Toorak, Melbourne, he came to New Zealand in 1865 and was educated at the public school at Picton. He joined the service of the Post and Telegraph Department as a cadet in 1874, became telegraphist at Blenheim in 1881 and senior clerk in 1882, from which position he retired in 1883. He then spent seven years in a legal office and three in a mercantile office.

Meanwhile he took a very active part in Anglican Church matters, first in 1884 as vicar's churchwarden at the Church of the Nativity in Blenheim; as lay member of the synod (1885) and lay secretary for several years. Following the parochial mission of the Rev G. C. Grubb (1890) he decided to read for holy orders, and after the necessary term of study at Bishopdale, Nelson, was ordained by Bishop Mules (28 Dec 1894) and appointed curate of Brunner and Grey Valley. Next year he became vicar of Reefton. A man of splendid physique, he threw himself with great energy into the difficult work of his parish and distinguished himself at the disaster at the Brunner mine (26 Mar 1896), to which he hastened on foot and by bicycle. In 1895 he became clerical secretary to the synod, a position he held until his retirement in 1931. In 1901 he became vicar of Westport and in 1913 of Wakefield. On the formation of the cathedral chapter in 1916 he was appointed one of the first canons. At the outbreak of the Great War he offered his services to the government as a telegraphist as being more useful than in the capacity of a chaplain. Following the death in action of the diocesan secretary (A. E. Hedges), Dart carried on the diocesan office in addition to his great burden of parochial and cathedral work. He was for many years a military chaplain and received the military decoration. In 1925 he became vicar of All Saints, Nelson, and in 1926 Archdeacon of Waimea. His retirement in 1931 was necessitated by failing health, largely due to unceasing church work over a period of nearly fifty years. He had been vicar-general, lay and clerical secretary to the synod, diocesan secretary and registrar, member of the standing committee, and of the diocesan trust board; chairman of St Andrew's Orphanage, clerical secretary of the N.Z. Church Missionary Society and a member of the executive of the N.Z. board of missions; and a director of the Y.M.C.A. His social work

## DAVIDSON

was noteworthy. He died on 27 May 1935. Dart married (1901) a daughter of W. H. Boase, Greymouth.

*Nelson Evening Mail*, 5 Oct 1926, 27 May 1935; *The Witness* (Nelson diocesan journal), Jun 1935; *Cycl. of N.Z.*, v., 174.

DAVEY, THOMAS HENRY (1856-1934) was born at Liskeard, Cornwall, and educated at Uxbridge, Middlesex. He came to New Zealand in the *Douglas* in 1874 and settled at Feilding, where he obtained employment in the *Star* office. He afterwards moved to Christchurch and was employed by the *Lyttelton Times* as printer. There he took an interest in trade unionism, being president of the typographical union and vice-president of the Trades and Labour Council. He was mayor of St Albans in 1897.

In 1902 Davey was elected as one of the members of Parliament for Christchurch City, which he represented till 1905. Thereafter he sat for Christchurch East, defeating successively Collins, McCombs and Thacker, and retiring in 1914. He was at different times a member of the hospital and charitable aid board, the drainage board, the boards of governors of Canterbury College and the Technical College, and of the licensing committee. For many years before his death (on 5 Apr 1934) he was chief stipendiary steward of the New Zealand Trotting Conference.

Hansard, 29 Jun 1934; *Star-Sun*, 5 Apr 1934 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

DAVIDSON, JAMES (1829-98) was born at Aberdeen. He went to sea, and after serving his time in ships running to Baltic ports, he joined the expedition sent by Lady Franklin in search of her husband (Sir John Franklin). He was a member of the crew of the *Lady Franklin*, which was accompanied by the *Sophia*. Dr Peter C. Sutherland, surgeon to the expedition and doctor of the *Sophia*, published a narrative of the expedition. Davidson reached IHelbourne in 1852 and spent some years on the Victorian goldfields, subsequently returning to the sea and coming to New Zealand in 1857 in the schooner *Maraquetta* (owned and sailed by Captain George Gray, and later chartered by George Hunter, q.v., of Wellington). Davidson took charge of the schooner *Randolph*, which he subsequently purchased and ran in the

## DAVIDSON

coastal trade between Kaikoura, Wellington, Lyttelton and Napier. After selling her he purchased (1860) the schooner *Caroline*, which was the second armed vessel owned by the New Zealand government. In Davidson's service she was called the *Ruby* (her original name), and she included Salt-water creek and the Heathcote river among the ports of call. Davidson settled in Kaikoura in 1867 and opened a general store, which he carried on successfully until his death (on 15 Apr 1898). He was a member of the Kaikoura road board (subsequently merged in the county council) and of the school committee. He represented Clarence in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1871-74). The journey to and from the sessions in Blenheim was an arduous one with many dangerous rivers to ford. Davidson was a justice of the peace for many years.

Family information from James Davidson, J.P.; *Marlborough P.C. minutes; Press Association*, 15 Apr 1898.

DAVIDSON, JAMES (b. 1836), a native of Canonbie, Dumfriesshire, was educated in the parish school. He came to New Zealand by the *Mallard* (1865) and was for six years in the store of Franklyn and Hirst, at Turakina. He then started for himself in Hawera and sold out in 1897. Davidson was first chairman of the Hawera town board (1875-79) and four years mayor of the borough (1889-92). He served also on the Patea county council, the Taranaki charitable aid board, the Hawera licensing committee (chairman for several years), the Hawera county council and the Patea harbour board. As a sportsman he was chairman of the Egmont Racing Club and the Hawera Trotting Club. He was president of the Hawera branch of the Farmers' Union, of the Agricultural and Pastoral association (1896) and the Caledonian society.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p).

DAVIES, ARTHUR WILLIAM OSWALD (1875-1928), one of a family of 22, was a son of D. P. Davies, of Carmarthenshire, Wales. He learned the game of chess when he was 21, belonging to the London Polytechnic Club before coming to New Zealand (in '1902). An accountant by profession, Davies settled in Wellington, where he became a prominent member of the Wellington Chess Club. He won the New Zealand

## DAVIES

land championship four times—in 1905, 1908, 1927—and on the last occasion a fortnight before his death (which occurred on 16 Jan 1928). He was runner-up three times, and was the only New Zealander to defeat the European champion, Kositch. Davies was one of the best players of the Dominion has produced. He wrote chess columns in the Wellington newspapers.

*N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922 (p); *Evening Post and The Dominion*, 17 Jan 1928.

DAVIES, RICHARD HUTTON (1862-1918) was born in London and came to New Zealand in early life. Trained as a surveyor, he took an interest in volunteering, and joined the Hawera mounted rifles, in which he became captain. He went to the South African war as captain in the North Island company (1899); served there in five contingents and commanded the 3rd, 4th and 8th and a composite column. (C.B. 1900; brevet lieutenant-colonel 1902).

Davies commanded the Auckland district in 1901 and was appointed Inspector-general of the Forces in 1906 and third member of the Military Council. He passed the staff college in England and was attached to the British army for training, with the command of an infantry brigade. When the war of 1914-18 broke out he went to France in command of the 6th brigade, with which he served with distinction in the retreat from Mons. Promoted major-general, he commanded the 20th division in training and in France (1916), but was again invalided and eventually retired from the service. He died on 9 May 1918. Davies married a sister of Commander N. Cornwall, R.N.R.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Times* (London), 16 May 1918.

DAVIES, WILLIAM (1824-82) arrived in New Zealand in the early forties and settled at Manukau. In 1863, in partnership with Thomas Williamson, he contracted for the carriage of commissariat stores during the Waikato war. He was afterwards for some years in business at Onehunga as a ship chandler and commission agent, also owning several small coasting vessels. On the opening of the Thames goldfield he established himself as a storekeeper at Grahams-town. He was chairman of the road board and afterwards mayor of Thames. In 1875 he defeated Rowe for the Provincial Council seat, which he held until the abolition. He was

## DAVIS

afterwards harbourmaster until his death on 29 Dec 1882.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Thames Advertiser*, 30 Dec 1882.

DAVIS, CHARLES OLIVER BOND (1817-87) was born in Sydney, the son of an Irish stone-cutter with strong national sympathies. He was educated in Sydney and, having come into contact with Maori who were visiting there, he became interested in New Zealand.

About 1830 he arrived in north Auckland, and while acting as tutor to the Wesleyan missionary children he taught himself Maori and gained a deep knowledge of the people, their traditions and customs. Davis attended the meeting held at Hokianga in connection with the treaty of Waitangi (1840) and attracted attention "by his competent interpretation. When the native office was established he was appointed an interpreter, and he later became chief translator to the government. For many years he acted in this capacity in delicate relations between the government and the Maori chiefs.

After he left the government service (1857) native chiefs continued to come to him for advice and at the time of the King movement he came under suspicion of having instigated it by some remarks he was reported to have made to Wiremu Tamihana te vVaharoa (q.v.). Giving evidence before a select committee in 1860 Davis admitted having suggested, in answer to a proposition put forward by them, that they should have a species of 'assembly' to manage native affairs. He attended the meeting at Ihumata to solicit subscriptions for the purchase of a printing press with which to produce books and a newspaper. It was to him also that Wi Tamihana came to ask advice when his application for money for a flourmill was rejected. Amongst Davis's friends were Taiporutu, Putini, Rewi, Ngapora and Te Whero-where. In 1865 he was prosecuted by the government for publishing a seditious libel in the Maori language, the charge being based on the fact that he had been implicated in the printing of a Ngaiterangi satire upon the capture of Tupaea by Arawa. Amongst the witnesses were Archdeacon Maunsell and Bishop Selwyn. Davis was unanimously acquitted.

He was subsequently for some years in the employ of the Native Land Purchase Office

## DAVIS

(particularly in connection with the Arawa lands). His great ability as a Maori scholar is evidenced by his publications, which include: *Maori Mementoes* (1855), *The Renowned Chief Kawiti and other New Zealand Warriors* (1855), *Temperance Songs for the Maori* (1873), *Maori Lesson Book* (1874), *The Life and Times of Patuone* (1876). Davis contributed much to the *Maori Messenger*, of which he was for a time editor. In his later years he continued to act as a licensed interpreter, but was much occupied with work amongst the poor of Auckland and was attracted to the Salvation Army on this account. Davis died on 28 Jun 1887.

*App. H.R.*, 1860; Davis, *op. cit.*; *Southern Cross*, 14-17 Sep 1865; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Jul 1887.

DAVIS, MOSS (1847-1933) was born in London. After some years in Australia with his parents he returned to England (1855), where he entered Dr Vickers' school in Lombard street. In 1861 he came to New Zealand and entered business first with his uncle in Lyttelton and later with his father, a merchant in Nelson. He married (1867) Leah Jacobs (of Melbourne). In 1871 he took over the business, from which he was soon able to retire, and in 1885 he joined the firm of Hancock and Co., brewers, Auckland, of which he became the sole owner on the death of his partner, Samuel Jagger. Davis retired and took up his residence in London in 1908. He made valuable gifts to the Auckland Art Gallery and Public Library, and served as commissioner in London for the Auckland Art Exhibition (1913-14). He was a member of the New Zealand War Contingent Association (1915-20). His death occurred on 1 Jan 1933. A son, ERNEST HYAM DAVIS (1872- ), became mayor of Auckland (1935) and was knighted (1937).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *The Dominion and N.Z. Herald*, 2 Jan 1933 (P).

DAVIS, RICHARD (1790-1863) was born in the village of Piddletrent, Dorsetshire. As a boy he assisted his father on the family farm at Sturminster-Newton and he received the poor education which was usual with the sons of tenant farmers. This he gradually remedied by reading and study which extended to the Scriptures in Hebrew, geology, mechanics, mathematics and surveying.

## DAVIS

At the age of 20 Davis was led to consider his way of life and by the time of his marriage to Mary Crocker (in 1812) he was thoroughly established in religious observance. He became an overseer of the poor in the parish of Stour-Lon Candle, Dorset. In association with the Rev John Noble Coleman, M.A., he spent some years teaching the parish school and in other activities of a semi-religious character. The Church Missionary Society wished to find a pious agriculturist to send to the mission in New Zealand. The regulations precluding his appointment, Coleman organised a missionary association at Bridgewater for the express purpose of getting him recommended. He was eventually accepted and with his family left for New Zealand in *The Brothers* on 26 Nov 1823. After spending a few weeks at Parramatta with Marsden, the family crossed to New Zealand in the *Governor Macquarie* (Aug 1824). After spending a week with the Williams family at Paihia, Davis proceeded to Gloucester Town, Kerikeri, where he found Kemp growing wheat, barley and oats on land that had been broken up seven years. He fixed on a spot 20 miles inland that would be suitable for farming, but for the first few years he remained at Paihia. In 1827 he was sent to Sydney to confer with the committee and to see through the press portion of the Scriptures which had been translated into Maori. At Paihia Davis created a valuable garden in which he grew most vegetables and English trees. He shared in the alarms and dangers of the mission from warring tribes, especially after the death of Hongi, which removed the greatest restraint that had existed in favour of the missions. At length in 1831 Davis moved to Waimate, where he established a farm which was the admiration of Darwin and other visitors.

After the arrival of Bishop Selwyn (1842) Davis was recommended for ordination (which occurred in 1843). He was now appointed to the charge of Kaikohe, which involved a good deal of travelling. In 1852 Davis was ordained priest. His death occurred on 28 May 1863. Davis was married three times. Several of his daughters married missionaries. (See JOSEPH MATTHEWS, W. PUCKEY, HENRY BURR, E. M. WILLIAMS and JAMES KEMP). Charles Davis, who accompanied Davis to New Zealand and remained for two or three years, was not a

## DAVY

relative. He returned to England and, having married, came back to New Zealand but, with his wife, was lost in the brig *Haweis*, in which they sailed from New South Wales late in 1829.

Carleton; Marsden, L. and J. and Lieuts; J. N. Coleman, *A Memoir of the Rev Richard Davy*, 1865; Ramsden; Stock; Sherrin and Wallace.

DAVIS, ROWLAND (1809-79) was working at his trade in London in 1829 and took a keen interest in social politics. He was president of the engineers, smiths and machinists of the western district of London and a member of the national union formed to promote the reform bill, anti-slavery and Catholic emancipation. As a member of the Bridge Ward inquest, he defeated an attempt to hand over certain poor families to the court of aldermen for prosecution on charges of unlawfully selling milk. Davis came to Port Nicholson in the *Aurora* (1840) and erected the Aurora tavern with the theatre attached and the Britannia saloon. With John Wade he collected evidence of the ill-treatment of emigrants. He was a member of the Constitutional Association, a founder of the first lodge of oddfellows and was on the committee of the Working Men's Association. Davis afterwards settled in Canterbury. He contested the Lyttelton seat in the Canterbury Provincial Council, in which he represented Akaroa (1856-57) and Lyttelton (1857-64). He died on 27 Feb 1879.

Ward; *Evening Press*, 26 Aug 1886; *N.Z. Mail*, 3 Sep 1886; *N.Z. Times*, 28 Mar 1879; *Lyttelton Times*, 4 Jun 1853.

DAVY, GEORGE BOUTFLOWER (1836-1929) was born in London, the son of Dr Edward Davy (1806-85), the inventor of the Davy blowpipe and of the relay or electrical renewer, and a pioneer in the development of electric telegraphy. G. B. Davy came to South Australia with his father (1839), finished his education there and began life on a sugar plantation and cattle station in Jamaica. He then returned to England, qualified for law and came to New Zealand in the *Indian Empire* (1862).

After acquiring land at Whangarei he was admitted a solicitor (1863) and practised his profession for some years there and in Auckland. He represented Auckland West in the Auckland Provincial Council (1867-68) and was for a short time in the executive. In 1869

## DAWSON

he was appointed warden and resident magistrate for Hauraki and in 1871 was selected to inaugurate the land transfer system in Auckland province. In 1875 he succeeded J. S. Williams (q.v.) as Registrar-general, which position he held until his retirement in 1904. Davy was also for a time judge of the district court in Wellington and Wairarapa, New Zealand Company's land claims commissioner and a judge of the native land court. He married (1863) Margaret Liddell. Davy died on 31 Aug 1929.

*D.N.B.*; *Parlt.'s Record*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924.

DAWSON, JOHN (1859-1925) was born at Keighley, Yorkshire. Being left fatherless he went to work at an early age, and was thus denied scholastic advantages. He attached himself to the Primitive Methodist church and at 17 years of age he became a local preacher and at 21 years a lay evangelist. In this capacity he served for five years. He married (1883) Miss Nancy Hoyle (Keighley).

Seeking better equipment for his work he, as a married student, entered the Grattan Guinness Missionary Institute, now known as Cliff College, near Calver, Derbyshire. In 1888, under the direction of the Primitive Methodist conference of Great Britain, he came to New Zealand as a probationer for its ministry. His first charge was at the Thames, after which he served in Christchurch and in 1897 was appointed to Wellington, where he served for twelve years. For 10 years he was chairman of the executive committee of the New Zealand Alliance. He had an encyclopaedic knowledge of temperance matters and of licensing legislation. He represented New Zealand on two occasions in America and once in Switzerland at the world congress dealing with alcohol. Few men have done so much as he in seeking to promote the prohibition cause in the Dominion. In 1909 he was chosen to succeed Isitt as general secretary of the Alliance, and for 16 years he laboured strenuously in his advocacy of total abstinence for the individual and prohibition of liquor for the state. He held many important offices in the Primitive Methodist church and was president in 1898. He was an ardent advocate for Methodist union in New Zealand and was elected president of the united church in 1915. He was a practical preacher, a sympathetic pastor, a tactful ad-

## DEANS

vocate and a capable organiser. He was superannuated in Apr 1925 and died on 13 Sep.

M.A.R.P.

DAWSON, WILLIAM (1852-1923) was born in Aberdeen and educated at Montrose. His father was a brewer in Aberdeen and afterwards moved to Bishop Middleham, Durham. There the son learned the trade and in 1892 went to Burton-an-Trent to complete his studies. He was for some time with W. Younger and Co. in Edinburgh. Dawson was a member of the Dunedin City Council in 1885. In 1887 he was elected mayor and he again became a councillor in 1892. He represented the suburbs of Dunedin in Parliament (1890-93). He was a member of the hospital board and of the harbour board. He died on 27 Jul 1923.

*N.Z.P.D.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (P).

DAY, RICHARD (1805-79) was born in county Cork, of an Irish Methodist family. He qualified as a doctor, but his health was not robust and he came on a voyage to New Zealand. During his stay at Mangungu with the Rev N. Turner (q.v.) he was so impressed by the New Zealand climate that he decided to remain, and he became an unofficial member of the mission staff, rendering medical service to both missionaries and natives on the Hokianga.

Day persuaded other Irish families to emigrate, and with Turner selected land for them in the Kaihu valley, which they purchased through the chief Parore. Four families (the Salters, Wilkinsons, Stannards and Stewarts) arrived in Auckland and chartered the schooner *Sophia Pate* to take them to Kaipara. Stewart and Stannard left the ship at Bay of Islands to travel overland. When the *Sophia Pate* reached Kaipara heads she was totally wrecked and only one child (Wilkinson) was saved (Sep 1841). Day was much attached to the Rev John Hobbs and acted as tutor to his family. He moved to Auckland with them and there took up the practice of his profession. He died in 1879.

Buller; Morley; A. Strachan, *Life of Samuel Leigh*; W. J. Williams; M. A. R. Pratt (information).

DEANS, WILLIAM (1817-51) was the son of John Deans, of Kirkstyle, in the parish of Riccarton, Ayrshire, and was educated at the Kilmarnock Academy and at Mr Jamieson's school

## DEANS

at Colmonell. He and his brother JOHN (1820-54) were intended for the law and had already entered their father's office when they became interested in New Zealand. Both accordingly were placed as cadets on good Scots farms to prepare for their colonial life.

William purchased his land orders from the New Zealand Company as soon as they were available (1839) and sailed in the *Aurora* on 18 Sep to take up his land in the Wellington settlement. He brought several agricultural labourers under engagement to work for him. The *Aurora* reached Wellington on 21 Jan 1840, beating into the harbour in company with the Sydney schooner *Eleanor* (Captain W. B. Rhodes). Deans's sections in the town were in St Hill street and in *Wharepouri* street, but to his mortification he found that the country sections could not be allotted owing to the land purchases not having been completed. Unwilling to waste time in waiting for the removal of doubts of this kind, Deans first joined Jerningham Wakefield and Heaphy in the official exploration overland to Taranaki. He also visited the Wairarapa, but finding no land yet available took contracts for cutting survey lines. Disappointed in this direction, he went with Captain Daniell and others in a small schooner to prospect the South Island. Mter proceeding as far south as the Bluff, Deans came back determined, if his brother would join him, to establish himself on the plains at the back of Port Cooper.

John arrived at Nelson in the *Thomas Harrison* on 25 Oct 1842 and, having seen his section there, readily fell in with William's suggestion, trusting to be able later to exchange their Wellington and Nelson land orders for a similar area in Canterbury. William left Wellington 11 Feb 1843 (having obtained the consent of the Governor to his plan) in Sinclair's schooner *Richmond*. He was accompanied by Samuel Manson and John Gebbie with their families, some live stock and provisions, and timbers prepared for a house. Most of the company disembarked at Port Levy, while Deans, with Manson and a few others, took a whaleboat up the river Avon to a spot where later settlers landed their bricks. In a small canoe they penetrated some distance farther up the river and its tributaries. They landed near the point where the gully crosses Riccarton

## DEANS

road, and completed the journey to Riccarton, or Pataringamotu, on foot. There the party made their own bricks and sawed the timber for a house of three rooms, one for the Gebbies, one for the Mansons, and the sitting-room for the Deans brothers. The house was finished in May and the rest of the party were brought across from Port Levy. John meanwhile took passage to Sydney to purchase stock, and on 17 Jun came into Port Cooper in the *Princess Royal* with 61 head of cattle, three mares, and 43 sheep, which with great difficulty were driven to Riccarton.

Within the year the Deans brothers erected two other houses on their property. Other shipments of stock were imported (1847 and 1850). For the rest of the forties the brothers steadily improved their holding. In 1844 they were milking a score of cows and making cheese and butter for a good market in Sydney. They had also vegetable gardens and an orchard, raised oats, barley and wheat, threshed with flails, and ground wheat into flour for their own needs in a small hand flourmill purchased in Wellington. In 1845 they clipped 130 pounds of wool, which brought 10d a pound. In 1846 Riccarton produced a crop of wheat, 60 to 70 bushels to the acre, and over 30 tons of potatoes from two and a half acres of ground. In 1846 the brothers got leave from the government to lease land from the natives. Year by year the estate was consolidated.

In 1848 the New Zealand Company having purchased most of the surrounding land from the natives for the Canterbury settlement, the Deanses were able to exchange their land orders for land in their own district, and thus obtained a total of 400 acres in Riccarton. In 1849 Sir George and Lady Grey spent a few days with them. By 1850 the brothers were selling 14 bales of wool in London. At the end of the year the first four ships arrived with Canterbury settlers. Meanwhile the Deans brothers were troubled by a misunderstanding with Godley as to their title and they had to dispose of part of their property to obtain money to defend themselves in the courts. Fortunately the Governor used his influence and the dispute was settled.

In Apr 1851 Grey offered William a seat in the Legislative Council, but he declined it as being 'quite out of the way.' In 1851 William

## DE CASTRO

Deans left for Sydney in the schooner *MaTia* to obtain more stock. She was wrecked on Tera-whiti and he was drowned. In consequence John hurried his visit to his father in Scotland leaving early in 1852. While there he married Jane, daughter of James McIlraith, of Auchenflower, Ayrshire, and they sailed on their return to New Zealand in the *Minerva*, arriving in Feb 1853.

John now took the lead in the settlement. He, too, was pressed in 1853 to stand for Parliament, but preferred to devote his whole attention to his affairs. He died on 23 Jun 1854, leaving a widow and one son. For many years the estate was worked in trust, until the boy came of age, when he was able to take it over intact.

N.Z. Archives; N.Z.C.; *Cant. O.N.*; Deans (p); Acland; Wigram; Godley, *Letters*; Shortland, 262; E. J. Wakefield; Guthrie Hay; *The Press*, 20 Jun 1902, 20 Jan 1911, 18 Jan 1930.

A son, JOHN DEANS (1853-1902), was born at Riccarton and educated at the Lincoln Road High School (now West Christchurch). He served his articles with Duncan and Williams, solicitors, but did not go on with law. On attaining his majority he took over the management of the estate. Deans was president of the Canterbury A. and P. association, chairman of the Christchurch drainage board and the Riccarton road board, and a governor of Canterbury College. He was a progressive farmer and stock owner, and constantly improved his flocks and herds by importations. His Shorthorn cattle had a very high reputation. Deans married (1879) Catherine Edith, daughter of Robert Park (q.v.).

Deans (p); *The Press*, 20 Jun 1902.

DE CASTRO, CHARLES DANIELL (1832-98) was born in London and educated in England and France and at the Royal Agricultural College, Cirencester. In 1853 he came to New Zealand in the *Comwall* and after teaching a school took up a farm at Porirua. He represented Wellington Country in the Provincial Council (1863-65). In 1867 he was secretary to the colonial commissioner of Imperial claims and in 1868 he joined the civil service, serving in the Treasury and the Public Trust office to 1892. In 1875 de Castro took holy orders as a deacon and he officiated in Wellington and

## DE LA PERRELLE

Nelson as required. He died on 23 Jun 1898. *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *N.Z. Times*, 24 Jun 1898.

DEIGHTON, SAMUEL (1822-1900) was born in England and came to New Zealand in the *Aurora* (Jan 1840). Soon acquiring a knowledge of Maori, he was clerk and interpreter to the resident magistrate at Wanganui in 1846 and was elected captain of the first Wanganui company of volunteers (1860). He soon retired and, being fond of sport and horse-racing, spent much time with Maj. Trafford in Rangitikei.

During the war he was an inspector in the Colonial Defence Force and captain in the Militia. He saw service on both coasts and notably against Te Kooti in Poverty Bay and Wairoa. Mterwards he was in the Native Land Purchase department and magistrate at Wairoa (1865) and finally at Chatham islands (1883). He compiled a Moriori vocabulary which was published in 1889. Retiring in 1898, he died on 9 Nov 1900.

His elder brother RICHARD DEIGHTON (b. 1819) arrived in Wellington in the *Cuba* on 22 Jan 1840, and was engaged on the survey. After the 'Wairau affray he had a stormy encounter with Te Rangihaeata (1843). Being at Wanganui in 1846 when a war party was about to start to join the disaffected natives at the Hutt, he volunteered to carry a letter to the Governor. This he achieved at great risk by joining the war party and eluding it on the Journey. Grey was thus enabled to see Wi Kingi te Rangitake and Tamihana te Ranparaha and to prevent the recruits joining Rangihaeata. Deighton served in several engagements in the later Maori wars.

*App. H.R.* 1883 J4; 1889 G5; Gascoyne; Ward; J. G. Wilson; Cowan; McKillop; *Lyttelton Times*, 11 Nov 1900.

DELAMAIN, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1835-1910) was born at Heavitree, Exeter, a son of Colonel Delamain, C.B. He came to Canterbury in 1854 and squatted on the Alford run, with the Kennaways. He was a successful racing owner. Delamain represented Riccarton in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1866-74). He died in 1910.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Acland.

DE LA PERRELLE, PHILIP ALDBOROUGH (1872-1935) was born at Arrowtown, a son

## DE LAUTOUR

of E. de la Perrelle. Educated at the Arrowtown school, he served his apprenticeship in the office of the *Lake County Press* (Queens-town), which he purchased in 1895 and conducted till 1912, when he bought the *Winton Rec01-d*. He was for some years on the Southland hospital board and education board (of which he was chairman); a member of the Queenstown borough council and the Awarua licensing committee and a justice of the peace (1899). He was captain of the Wakatipu and the Southland Mounted Rifles.

De la Perrelle married (1902) Annie Louisa, daughter of F. Grant (Milton). He was member of Parliament for Awarua (1922-25, 1928-35) and was Minister of Internal Affairs in the Ward and Forbes cabinets (1928-31). His death occurred on 7 Dec 1935.

*Who's Who N.I.*, 1932; *Cycl. N.I.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 9 Dec 1935. Portrait: Parliament House.

DE LAUTOUR, CECIL ALBERT (1845-1930) was a son of a judge of the high court in Calcutta, where he was born. Educated at Cheltenham College, he was intended for the army and was nominated for the East India Company's military college (Addiscombe). 'When the Company's forces were amalgamated with the British army he decided to come to New Zealand, to which he was attracted by Hursthouse's book, *The Bl'itain of the South*.

Landing at Auckland from the *War Spirit* in 1863, he found no openings there and moved to Otago. There he was engaged for some years in pastoral pursuits at Mount Ida, where he took a great interest in the youth work of the Presbyterian church. Having been disabled by an accident he purchased a part interest in the *Mt Ida Chronicle*, of which he was editor for some years. He contested the Mt Ida seat in the Provincial Council and was elected (1873). After the abolition of the provinces he was elected M.H.R. for Mt Ida and represented the district 1876-84. About 1879, on the advice of Wilson Gray (q.v.), de Lautour decided to qualify for the bar, and he moved to Napier and was articled to W. L. Rees (q.v.). When, three years later, he applied for admission to the bar he was refused on the ground that attendance to parliamentary duties was inconsistent with the work of an articled clerk.

200

## DENNISTON

Partly in consequence of this incident the law practitioners act of 1882 was passed, its retrospective action admitting de Lautour to the bar. He practised at Gisborne in partnership with William Sievwright, retiring in 1910. Having been several years away from Otago he retired from the representation of Mt Ida, and at the request of the Liberal party contested the Newton (Auckland) seat. In 1893 he contested Waiapu against Carroll. He was one of the small coterie in Parliament who formed the Young New Zealand party in 1879.

De Lautour was always prominent in public affairs. He was a member of the first education board in Otago (1878) and was mayor of Naseby. In Gisborne he was a member of the borough council for many years and twice mayor, besides being on the harbour board and other public bodies, and a member of the Anglican synod. He was 25 years on the Gisborne High School board (some time chairman); was chairman of the Gisborne Farmers' Meat Co. (1902-23), and president of the North Island Freezing Companies' Association.

De Lautour married (1872) Sarah Ann, daughter of Robert Bust (Melbourne). He died on 15 Dec 1930.

*Cycl. N.I.*, ii; *Who's Who N.I.*, 1924; *Otago P.C. Pmc.*; Hansard, 30 Jun 1930.

DENNISTON, GEORGE LYON (1846-1934), a brother of Sir John Denniston, was born in Glasgow, and educated at the Glasgow, Greenock and Blair Lodge Academies. In 1862 he arrived in New Zealand, where he was engaged in farming till 1867, when he entered business in Dunedin. After being for 11 years managing director of Neill and Co. (1882-93), he established a business of his own. In 1884 he became Doyds agent in Dunedin, and in 1899 consul for Belgium in Otago, for which he was created a chevalier of the Order of the Crown of Belgium. He was a member of the Dunedin City Council (1897-1900) and mayor during the Royal visit (1901-02).

Denniston was several times president of the chamber of commerce, a director of the Westport Coal Co. and of the Otago Daily Times Co., president of the Dunedin Savings Bank, and commissioner of the Dunedin sinking funds. In sport he was a member of the first Otago interprovincial football team, and for a

## DENNISTON

time president of the Dunedin athletic club. He married (1878) the eldest daughter of W. H. Reynolds (q.v.). Denniston died on 12 Jul 1934.

*Cycl. N.I.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.I.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion* and *Otago Daily Times*, 13 Jul 1934.

DENNISTON, SIR JOHN EDWARD (1845-1919) was born at Bishopton, Renfrewshire, Scotland, the son of Thomas Denniston (q.v.), and received the usual public school education at Greenock Academy and Blair Lodge. Matriculating at Glasgow University and winning an entrance scholarship, he came to Otago with his parents in 1862 and followed various occupations, including those of civil servant and a clerk in the Bank of New South Wales. He then became a law clerk with W. Downie Stewart in Dunedin, and in 1874 was admitted to the bar. After practising for a few months in Wanganui he became a partner with Stewart, and for many years conducted the court work of the firm of Stewart, Holmes and Denniston. In 1889 Denniston was appointed to the Supreme Court bench. In 1919 he was chairman of the epidemic commission. He married (1877) Mary Helen, daughter of John Bathgate. He was knighted in 1917 and was senior judge at the time of his death. He was associated with the Canterbury Caledonian Society, the Society of Arts, and the Savage Club. Denniston died on 22 Jul 1919.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *The Press*, 22, 23 Jul 1919.

DENNISTON, THOMAS (1821-97) was born at Greenock, Scotland, and educated at Greenock Academy and Glasgow University. He spent some time travelling in Europe and then became a partner with a sugar merchant. He was much influenced by the religious movement in 1843 and gave his full support to the Free Church. He married early and his wife died in 1855.

In 1862 Denniston came to New Zealand in the *Nelson* and took up a run at Hillend, to which he walked with his sons. It did not pay, and he exchanged it for a smaller run in the Oteramika district, Southland. A man of deep culture, with a graceful literary style, he drifted naturally away from country life towards journalism. For many years he was literary editor

## DE QUINCEY

of the *Southland Times*, of which he was editor (1879-85) and a director. He contested the Oteramika seat in the Provincial Council against F. D. Bell (1871), but made no later advance towards political life. He was for many years a justice of the peace both in Renfrewshire and in New Zealand, and was a member of the Southland land board, the Otago school commissioners and the Southland education board. He founded the paper mill at Mataura. A conservative Christian, he was an elder-elect of the Free Church of Scotland (of Dr Buchanan's congregation) but declined ordination. He was, however, a deacon of First Church, Invercargill. Denniston lived for a short time at Duvauchelles, Banks Peninsula, returning to Southland, where he died on 14 Sep 1897. (See J. E. DENNISTON, R. F. CUTHBERTSON).

Ross; *Southland Times*, 15 Sep 1897, 12 Nov 1912; *Weekly Press*, 22 Sep 1897.

DE QUINCEY, PAUL FREDERICK (1828-94), the son of Thomas de Quincey, the English writer, was born at Grasmere, Westmoreland, and educated at the High School, Edinburgh, and at Lasswade School. In 1845 he gained his ensigncy in the 70th Regiment, with which he served in India (1846-60), being present at Sobraon and other battles as captain and major of brigade. He was on the permanent staff of the Bengal presidency, but rejoined his regiment for New Zealand (arriving here in May 1861). He commanded the 1st company of the Transport Corps.

When the regiment was about to return to India de Quincey sold out and commenced farming. On the outbreak of the Waikato war he was appointed to command the left wing of the 3rd battalion artillery, with which he served without pay. He was afterwards military secretary to Maj-general Galloway (commanding the colonial forces) with the rank of major, being promoted later lieutenant-colonel. This appointment he held also under Haultain. After the war he lived in this country and represented Pensioner Settlements in Parliament (1866-67), and in the Provincial Council (1865-69). In 1889 he was appointed sergeant-at-arms of the House of Representatives. He was a justice of the peace and a visiting justice at the Auckland asylum. De Quincey died on 15 Apr 1894.

201

## DERROM

*Parltry Record*; J. Hogg, *De Quincey and His Friends*, 1895; *NZ. Herald*, 20 Apr 1894. Portrait: Parliament House.

DERROM, JAMES (1818-98) was born at Corfu while his father was serving with the army of occupation in the board of ordnance. In 1824 he went to England. He was educated at a private school at Plymouth and the Grammar School at Glasgow and eventually at Deal, where he studied military engineering.

His father having been appointed barrack-master at Auckland, Derrom came with him in the *Tyne* (1841) and entered into business as an architect and builder. He was clerk of works for the building of the district hospital and the Avondale asylum. In 1853 Derrom was selected, at a meeting of the operative and working classes held at the White Hart hotel, as a suitable candidate for the Provincial Council, and he was duly elected to represent the City of Auckland (1853-55). In 1860 Derrom raised the Victoria Company of the Auckland Volunteer Rifles, of which he was lieutenant (1860) and captain (1862). He aftern'ards commanded the first rifle battalion. He was also captain of the first volunteer fire brigade. Derrom died on 26 Dec 1898.

*N.Z. Herald*, 28 Dec 1898.

DE THIERRY, CHARLES PHILIP HIPPOLYTUS (1793-1864) was born in England, the son of a French emigre. Teaching music as a profession, and being engaged to teach the children of Archdeacon Rudge he fell in love with a daughter, with whom he eloped. Though their marriage was condoned they were unprovided for and it was decided that de Thierry should prepare himself for ordination, but he was unable to qualify to the satisfaction of the Bishop of Nonvich. Friends obtained for him an appointment to a Portuguese embassy and he attended the congress of Vienna, where he distinguished himself as an amateur musician. De Thierry is said to have been for some time an officer in a British cavalry regiment.

Meeting at Cambridge the chiefs Hongi and Waikato, he negotiated with them through Kendall (q.v.) for the purchase of an estate of 4,000 acres in New Zealand. He claimed that this land was purchased for him on 7 Aug 1822, copies of the deed being sent to England through the Church Missionary Society and to

## DE THIERRY

the foreign offices of Britain and France. About 1834 de Thierry sailed for New South Wales with his family, writing en route to apprise Busby, the British Resident, of his intention to establish an independent sovereignty in New Zealand in his own person. In this document, dated from Tahiti, de Thierry described himself as 'sovereign chief of New Zealand, King of Nukuheva,' and said that he was awaiting an armed ship from Panama to escort him to his domain. Alarmed at this intimation, Busby advised the Maori and pakeha residents to take steps to assert their independence of France.

Governor Bourke refused to recognise his claims on 23 Oct 1837. De Thierry proceeded to New Zealand in the *Nimrod* with 93 retainers. On landing at Hokianga he announced to the assembled people of both races his intention to establish a proper form of government with himself as sovereign if he should be acceptable to them. It would be a productive government, with open ports, free trade and no taxation, and he anticipated earning £50,000 per annum from the government farm of 5,000 acres. He expended what money he had in building houses and the beginning of a carriage road to Bay of Islands. When the money was exhausted the scheme collapsed and de Thierry was glad to accept the compassionate offer of Tamati Waka Nene and Taonui of 300 acres of land, on which he lived with his family, making a livelihood from a sawpit. They afterwards removed to Auckland, where he made a living by teaching music, diversified by an unsuccessful visit to the goldfields of California. For years he prosecuted his claims against the government. He experimented in later years in the preparation of flax, and in 1857 attempted to float a flax company. De Thierry died in Auckland on 8 Jul 1864.

The significance of de Thierry in the history of New Zealand is due to the impetus his scheme gave to Busby, to the government of New South Wales and to the missionary body in New Zealand to organise British interests in the country towards the declaration of sovereignty. His scheme in itself was without importance.

*Hist. Rec. Aust.*; Polack; Martin; Joubert; Marsden, L. and J. and *Lieuts*; Sherrin and Wallace (p); Ramsden; Rusden; Thomson; Buller; Hocken; Taylor, *Past and Present*; Turner; Web-

## DEVENISH

ster; Busby's statement at bar of House of Representatives, 30 Jul 1869; *NZ. Herald*, 1 Feb 1890, 30 Nov 1933; *Taranaki News*, 18 Jan 1872.

DEVENISH, WILLIAM (1819-66) was born at Sydling, St Nicholas, Dorset, and came to New Zealand in the *Timandra* (1842) with his brother-in-law, Josiah Flight (q.v.). They farmed at Mangaoraka until they had to move by order of Governor FitzRoy, and then took up land at Mangorei. They brought some valuable Southdown sheep from England and at a later date introduced stock from England and Australia. Devenish married (1855) Mary (1830-1917), daughter of Thomas Hirst (q.v.). He was member of the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell for a few months before his death, which took place on 13 Nov 1866.

*Taranaki p.e. minutes and Gaz.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 17 Nov 1866. Portrait: *Taranaki Hist. Coll.*

DEVORE, ALBERT EDWARD TYRRELL (1843-1916) was born at Devizes, Wiltshire, and educated at Marlborough College: Arriving in Melbourne in 1859 he commenced the study of law. In 1862 he came to Dunedin, where after a few months on the diggings he entered the office of Howorth and Graham. In 1866 he was associated with W. L. Rees in Hokitika, where he was afterwards manager for Rees and Tyler. He was admitted to practise in 1871 and moved to Auckland a few years later. He entered into partnership with J. B. Russell and later was associated with T. Cooper (q.v.).

Devore was a member of the City Council (1882-86) and mayor of Auckland (1886-89). During his term of office the public library and the art gallery were opened officially. He was for many years a member of the harbour board, chairman of the Ponsonby school committee and a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. In Otago he was a prominent freemason.

*N.Z. Herald*, 29 Jan 1890 (p).

DEWE, JOHN (1818-80) was born at Alston Field vicarage, England, and was educated for the Church of England but not ordained. He was a stationer before coming to Otago with his wife and family in the *Blundell* (1848). He farmed his country section at Pelichet Bay and then at Tokomairiro. While there he represented the district in the Provincial Council (1863-64). He was resident magistrate and

## DICK

coroner at Tokomairiro (1863-70) and then took holy orders, being ordained by Bishop Nevill and appointed successively to the parishes of Roxburgh, Clyde (1872) and Gladstone. He died on 6 Sep 1880,

*Otago p.e. Proc.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 23 Aug 1871, 10 Mar 1873, 8 Oct 1880.

DEWSBURY, HENRY ROHAN (1849-1926) was born at Alloa, Scotland, educated at Alloa school, and came to New Zealand in 1863 with his parents.

While he was serving his articles to Bury and Mountfort, architects, Christchurch, he attended a mission conducted by Bishop Taylor, of the Methodist Episcopal Church, and decided to dedicate his life to Christian service. As a local preacher he showed evidence of oratorical gifts which in later years gave him pre-eminence as a preacher. In 1864 he was accepted as a candidate for the Methodist ministry and studied under the Revs A. R. Fitchett and Alexander Reid. A wide reader with a retentive memory, he made himself familiar with the masters of English prose and verse. He enjoyed the reputation of being the most eloquent preacher in a strong preaching denomination. Dewsbury began his ministry at Hokitika (1871), and subsequently served as superintendent minister of circuits in Auckland, Wellington, Christchurch, Wanganui, Oamaru and Cambridge.

In 1876 he married Elizabeth Boyd Parnell. In 1888 he visited England, where his broad views, catholic spirit and social aptitudes made him welcome in wide circles. He was for many years a military chaplain, and served his Church in secretarial positions and as chairman of several synods. In 1891 he was elected president. He was superannuated in 1911, and died on 8 Jun 1926. M.A.R.P.

DICK, THOMAS (1823-1900) was born at Edinburgh. A few years later his parents removed to London, but as soon as he was old enough Dick returned to his native city, where he remained until the age of 15. He then entered the office of John Roberts, merchant, of London. When he had been 12 years with this firm he was sent to St Helena as agent for the Fenchurch street firm of James Morrison and Co. There he married (1850) Miss Darling.

## DICK

Throughout life Dick revelled in religious movements and work amongst the poor. In London he worked earnestly in the slums, especially in connection with the ragged schools in Stepney and in Sunday school work. At St Helena, where he spent seven years, he joined the Baptist congregation and he remained a Baptist throughout, though for many years he was a pillar of the Presbyterian Church in Dunedin. In the little island also he took a great interest in evangelical work and in the Sunday school movement, and in later years in Dunedin he spent many a Sunday afternoon in company with Dr Stuart, distributing tracts amongst miners.

In 1857, with his wife and young children, Dick arrived in Dunedin by the ship *Bosworth*, primarily as the agent for Morrisons. Before long he established himself as an auctioneer in Dunedin and when the goldfields opened the business expanded into a general agency. Although he arrived in Dunedin late in 1857 he was elected unopposed only a year later to a seat in the Provincial Council for Dunedin City. In 1859 he became a member of Reynolds's executive. At the general election in 1860 he was returned at the head of the poll for Dunedin, and he was again in the executive for a few months that year. One of his first acts in the Provincial Council was to secure a vote of £1,000 for the Athenaeum and Mechanics' Institute. In Apr 1862 he moved a vote of no-confidence in the Cutten-Walker administration, and took office himself as provincial secretary. At the general election in 1863 he was again at the head of the poll, but he resigned his portfolio shortly after the meeting of the Council. He was again in the executive in 1863-64 and in 1865. In Aug 1865 Harris resigned the superintendency and Dick stood against E. McGlashan, whom he defeated by 990 to 565. It was not altogether a happy experience. There was lack of harmony between Superintendent and Council, and a good deal of friction between the central and provincial authorities.

Meanwhile Dick also represented his fellow citizens in the General Assembly. Reluctant to enter Parliament, he had a habit of resigning his seat on the slightest indication of lack of confidence, but he was almost invariably re-elected. First elected for Dunedin at the end

## DICK

of 1860, he resigned in 1862; was elected again and resigned in 1863. Elected for Port Chalmers (Mar 1866) he took a strong stand in Parliament against the attempt to filch certain license fees from the municipality of Dunedin. When the members representing Otago returned from Wellington (Oct 1866) there was a strong feeling that they had not done what they might have done to protect the interests of the province. A public meeting in Dunedin called upon them to resign. Two of the fifteen did so—Dick and Reynolds. Dick was returned unopposed, but resigned a few months later. In the meantime his term as Superintendent had come to a close, and in Feb 1867 he was defeated by Macandrew by 2259 votes to 1392.

Retiring from Parliament in Jul, he remained out of political life for a few years. Mrs Dick having died in 1869, Dick married the widow of Frederick Walker (q.v.) who had been a fellow passenger in the *BOSWORTH*. In 1879 he again went into Parliament (as a member for Dunedin City, with R. Oliver and W. Downie Stewart as colleagues). In Mar 1880 he joined the Hall ministry as Colonial Secretary, and later assumed also the portfolios of Education and Justice. At the general election (Dec 1881) he was elected for Dunedin West (defeating Downie Stewart by 459 to 451 votes). He continued to administer his old departments in the Whitaker ministry, taking in addition the Postmaster-generalship (1882). When Atkinson came into office (Sep 1883) he retained the services of Dick as Colonial Secretary and Minister of Education until the general election in 1884, when Dick was defeated by Stewart by 504 votes to 480. At the election of 1887 he was again defeated by Stewart (by 708 votes to 695).

There he chose to terminate his political life, declining a seat in the upper house, and confining his attention to local affairs. He was for some years a member of the Otago education board, and from 1860 of the waste land board. From 1858-60 he was on the Dunedin town board. He was secretary of the Dunedin Watenvorks Co. from its formation, and for many years was treasurer of the Dempsey Trust.

When Dick came to Dunedin there was no Baptist congregation, so he became an active member of First Church and a teacher in the

## DICKIE

Sunday school. He was a promoter of Knox Church, and a member of the first board of trustees, but (not being a Presbyterian) declined to take office. In 1863 the Baptist Church in Hanover street was opened by the Rev J. L. Parsons as first pastor. Dick was a trustee. He began a Sunday school in the Planet sawmill, and was its superintendent until his death. He was one of the founders, and the first secretary, of the Otago Bible Society (1864), and he was vice-president of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals when it was founded (1882). From 1860 he was on the visiting committee of the hospital.

Dick for some years lived a retired life owing to persistent ill-health. He died on 5 Feb 1900.

*Otago P.C. Pmc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken; McIndoe; Cox, *Men of Mark*; *Otago Daily Times*, 6 Feb 1900, 23 May 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

**DICKIE, WILLIAM JAMES (1870-1921)** was born at Cobden and educated on the Coast. For some time he was employed in Greymouth and thereafter in business with his father. Owing to ill-health he turned to farming and after some years' experience in Westland bought a property near Rakaia. He farmed also at Methven. Dickie took a great interest in public affairs, being for many years a member of the Ashburton county council and hospital board and of the Ashburton and Methven A. and P. association. Defeating C. A. C. Hardy in 1911, he represented Selwyn in Parliament till 1919, when he was defeated by Sir William Nosworthy. Dickie died on 24 Jun 1921. He married a niece of James Peryman (Greymouth).

Hansard, 23 Sep 1921; *G'ey River Argus*, 25 JUL 1921. Portrait: Parliament House.

**DICKSON, JAMES McCOLL (1854-1937)** was born in Victoria and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1863. After finishing his education at public schools in Otago he commenced sawmilling with his brothers at Catlins, but shortly relinquished this to farm at Portobello. Here he spent 40 years, having considerable success in raising stock.

He was a member (and chairman 1904-16) of the Portobello road board; of the school committee (also chairman); and of the Otago

## DIEFFENBACH

harbour board 1911-35 (chairman 1915-16, 1926-27, 1927-28). In early manhood he was a keen cricketer and for many years he was a leading rifle shot, being president of the Peninsula Rifle Association, captain of the Peninsula Club and a member of the New Zealand rifle team at the Melbourne Exhibition. Dickson contested a seat in Parliament in the Reform interest in 1911, being defeated by E. H. Clark (q.v.); was elected in 1914 and represented Chalmers continuously until his retirement in 1928. He was some time chairman of the public petitions committee (M to Z). Dickson died on 16 Mar 1937.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Star*, 17 Mar 1937. Portrait: Parliament House.

**DIDSBURY, GEORGE (1839-93)** was born at Windsor, New South Wales, and came to Kororaraka with his father, who held an official position. Leaving the Bay during Heke's war, they settled in Auckland, where Didsbury was educated and apprenticed to the *New Zealander* office. There he was soon employed in the printing of official documents. In 1861 the *Southern Cross* received the contract for printing and Didsbury went over to that employ. When the Government Printing Office was established he was second in control and on the removal of the government to Wellington he became Government Printer (at the age of 26). He held that position until his death on 20 Apr 1893. Didsbury was a director of the Palmerston North Gas Co. and the Gear Meat Co. He was a vestryman and churchwarden of St Peter's, Wellington.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 21 Apr 1893.

**DIEFFENBACH, ERNST (1811-55)** was the son of a Lutheran clergyman and professor, and was born at Giessen in Germany. Educated there, he entered upon a medical course but became involved in students' political demonstrations and fled to Zurich, in Switzerland. There he graduated M.D. in 1835. Shortly afterwards, owing to pressure from the Austrian government, he had to leave Switzerland and take refuge in London. He made a rather precarious living for some years, contributing to medical and scientific journals, teaching German and acting as a prosector in Guy's Hospital, and for a while as doctor to a factory in London.

## DIGNAN

In 1837, through the instrumentality of Liebig, Dieffenbach's prosecution was struck out. Licensed to return to Germany for a limited period, he maintained himself by translating English works into German for publication. In 1839 he was appointed surgeon and naturalist to the New Zealand Company, and sailed in the *Tory* for this country. Dieffenbach made some important journeys into the interior, including one to Tongariro, Taupo, Waikato and Whaingaroa, and he made the first ascent of Mount Egmont. He also visited the Chatham islands. With his reports to the New Zealand Company he sent full collections in all branches of natural history. His work for the Company being completed in 1840, he offered his services to the Government to make a scientific exploration of both islands, receiving only his travelling expenses. Governor Gipps was unable to sanction the expenditure from the revenues of New South Wales, and Dieffenbach returned in Oct 1841 to England, where he published his report on the Chatham islands in the *New Zealand Journal*. His report on natural history and the natives appeared in John Ward's supplementary information; and his book *Travel in New Zealand* was published in 1843. He also contributed to the British Association in 1845 a report on New Zealand geology. In 1843 he returned to Giessen, and two years later he was sent to England by Liebig to advertise the use of artificial manure. On this occasion he had an interview with Lord Stanley in the hope of getting further employment in New Zealand. He was offered a scientific exploration on the west coast of South America, but declined for family reasons.

After the revolution of 1848 Dieffenbach edited a Liberal newspaper and was offered a seat in the German parliament, but declined. In 1849 he was licensed to teach at Giessen, and in the following year appointed supernumerary professor of geology. He died at Giessen in Oct 1855.

G.B.O.P. 1842/569; N.Z.C., reports; E. J. Wakefield; Dieffenbach, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Gazette* (newspaper), Aug 1840; *Ausland* 1874, No. 4 (*Ernst Dieffenbach der Erforscher Neu-Seelands*); *Allgemeine Deutsche Biographie*, vol v, 120.

DIGNAN, PATRICK (1814-94) was born at Loughrea, county Galway, Ireland. In 1839 he

## DIGNAN

emigrated to New South Wales, and two years later came to New Zealand in the *Sophia Pate* (Oun 1841). Settling in Auckland he kept one of the leading hotels in the city.

Dignan's high standing in the community was evidenced by his election as one of the first aldermen of the city (Nov 1851). Courteous, generous and warm-hearted, he was a strong Liberal in the early days of politics. In 1852 he was elected by the Pensioner Settlements to the Legislative Council of New Ulster (which never met). In 1853 he was returned to the first Provincial Council, and he was almost continuously a member (for Northern division 1853-57; City of Auckland 1857-61; Auckland West 1865-75). For four years (1865-69) and again in 1873 he was a member of the provincial executive under the superintendency of Whitaker and Williamson, and finally under Grey. He suffered defeat in 1855 in the contest for the City seat in Parliament. Dignan first entered Parliament in 1867 for City West, which he represented from that date until 1870 and again from 1875-79. In early years he was an active member of the Constitutional Association which brought Whitaker out for the Superintendency (1855). Later he was an ardent supporter of the provincial system and took a leading part in inducing Grey to re-enter the arena in its defence. In 1879 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a painstaking and conscientious member until his death.

Dignan was a member of the Auckland harbour commissioners for many years, a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank, one of the largest original shareholders of the Bank of New Zealand, and a director of the Auckland Gas Co. He died on 20 Oct 1894.

His eldest son, PETER DIGNAN, was born in Auckland (1847) and educated at St Peter's school and afterwards under the Franciscan monks. After serving his articles to L. O'Brien he was admitted to the bar (1868). He was for 12 years a member of the City Council and was twice mayor (1897-99). He was also a member of the harbour board, chairman of the hospital board, a governor of the Auckland University College and Grammar School, and a commissioner of the Auckland Exhibition. He was for 23 years president of the Christian Doctrine Society and a leading member of the Catholic

## DILLON

Literary Institute. As a volunteer he was colonel of the 2nd Auckland battalion.

Hansard, 20 Oct 1894; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 22 Oct 1894. Portrait: Parliament House.

DILLON, ALFRED (1847-1915) was born in Wales and came to Hawkes Bay in the *South-ern Cross* 1857. He was first employed as a cowboy by H. S. Tiffen at Homewood, and then went to Tamumu. He became a bullock driver, and in partnership with C. Clark, carried between Napier and Waipawa, Patangata and Tamumu for 14 years. He then commenced sheep-farming at Homewood and afterwards moved to Patangata. Dillon devoted much time to local body work, being chairman of the Waipawa county council, the Patangata road board, the Waipawa river board and the Waipukurau hospital board, and a member of the Napier harbour board, and six years a governor of the Napier High Schools. He defeated Sir W. Russell for Hawkes Bay in 1905 and 1908 (offering the seat on the latter occasion to R. McNab, q.v.); and retired in 1911. He married a daughter of S. Collins and died on 14 Nov 1915.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 10 May 1916; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *H.B. Herald*, 15 Nov 1915. Portrait: Parliament House.

DILLON, CONSTANTINE AUGUSTUS (1813-53), fourth son of the 13th Viscount Dillon, served in the Royal Navy, the 7th Dragoon Guards and the 17th Lancers. He was aide-de-camp to Lord Durham in Canada and to Lord Ebrington, lord-lieutenant of Ireland. He married on 10 Feb 1842 Fanny, daughter of P. L. Story.

Dillon arrived in Wellington in the *George Fyfe* on 7 Nov 1842 on his way to Nelson. In 1843 he became a magistrate of the territory, and he drilled the Nelson volunteers after Wairau and was a recognised leader in the affairs of the province. It was he who proposed the resolution demanding the recall of Governor FitzRoy (1845). Dillon's land holdings were in the Waimea and more extensively in the Wairau, where he owned the Delta Dairy, the first farm of its kind in Marlborough. He was one of the first sheep owners (in partnership with W. O. Cautley). In May 1848 he was appointed military and civil secretary to the Governor (Sir George Grey) and removed to Auckland. Early in 1851 he returned to Nelson on his appointment as commissioner of crown

## DILLON

lands there and later in the year he was appointed also a commissioner for land claims. On 3 Jun he was called to the Legislative Council of New Zealand and he took the oath and his seat that day.

Dillon was drowned while crossing the Wairau river on 16 Apr 1853.

'Burke, *Peerage*, 1935; *Dillon Letters*, 1848-51; *Nelson Examiner*, Apr 1852.

DILLON, PETER (1785-1847) went to sea as a young man. Tall and strong, he saw a great deal of life in the South Sea islands in the early years of the nineteenth century. He seems to have visited the Friendly islands (Tonga) as early as 1809 and in the next 20 years was almost constantly trading to the East and the Pacific Islands, forming friendships which were of great service to his employers.

In 1813 he was chief officer of the barque *Huntel*, of Calcutta, and had a narrow escape at Fiji in attempting to seize sandalwood which he claimed to have paid for. Calling at Tikopia later, the *Hunter* landed a Prussian, Martin Buchert, and his Fiji wife. In 1814 Dillon commanded the *Active* on her voyage to land Marsden's first missionaries at Bay of Islands. He claimed during these years to have lived 14 months at Tahiti and a considerable time at Bau (Fiji), and his friendship with the chief Mafanga, of Tongatabu, was a long-standing one. In 1823 when he was commanding the brig *Calder*, he reported to Marsden at Hokianga having discovered stowaway convicts on board and suggested greater strictness in the inspection of vessels at Port Jackson in order to protect New Zealand from the influx of such characters.

In 1825 Dillon lost the *Calder* at Valparaiso, but acquired instead the *St Patrick*, 450 tons, a Paraguay-built ship which had taken part in the Chilian wars and had already visited New Zealand for spars. Arriving off Cape Colville on 31 Dec, the vessel was boarded by Hinaki, who reported that the local tribe had retreated to the interior to evade Hongi. Pomare also visited Dillon, who suspected that he premeditated attacking the ship. When about to leave New Zealand after a stay of three months bartering muskets for spars, Dillon took on board two sons of the Thames chief Tukuruu. At Tikopia Buchert showed Dillon a sword guard

## DILLON

and other articles which had been brought from Vanikoro (Santa Cruz) and which were believed to have belonged to La Perouse, whose ships were reported to have been cast away in a storm.

On reaching Calcutta (Aug 1826) Dillon introduced the young chiefs to Lord Combermere and exhibited to the Asiatic Society of Bengal the relics of La Perouse. The East India Company consented to prosecute the search, and gave Dillon command of the *Research*, which left Calcutta in Jan 1827. Reaching New Zealand in Jul, Dillon declined to land the young chiefs at Bay of Islands for fear of the vengeance of Pomare, but they and their father were all killed in a battle with Hongi shortly after they reached their home.

Disappointed in his hope of meeting D'Urville in New Zealand or Tonga, Dillon proceeded to Vanikoro (7 Sep) and gathered conclusive evidence of the fate of La Perouse, with which he returned to Calcutta (Apr 1828). When he reached Paris in 1829, his services were liberally rewarded. He was made a chevalier of the Legion of Honour and a member of the Geographical Society of Paris, and was voted an annuity of 4,000 francs a year. His *Narrative of the Successful Result of a Voyage in the South Seas* was published in 1829.

Dillon at this time saw much of the rector of the Irish College in Paris. At his instigation he wrote to the Vicar-general of the diocese of Pamier (the Ven H. de Solages) who had just been appointed prefect-apostolic of the Isle of Bourbon, urging that the Catholic Church should establish a mission with the help of the naval ship which went annually to Valparaiso with supplies for French naval units in the Pacific. The Ministry of Marine having acceded to this request, the scheme was submitted to the Congregation for the Propagation of the Faith and approved. In 1830 a decree was made creating a prefecture apostolic, and in 1833 two vicariates were created in the Pacific, New Zealand being included in that of Western Oceania. News having meanwhile arrived of the death of de Solages (on 8 Dec 1832), it became necessary to seek for a successor, and the choice fell on Jean B. F. Pompallier (q.v., 23 Dec 1835).

In 1832 Dillon's letter to an influential person in London setting forth the advantages of

## DINGLE

settling New Zealand was published. He was appointed French consul in the South Seas, and lived for a few years there, but resigned in 1838 and resided in Ireland until his death on 9 Feb 1847.

Dillon, *op. cit.*; Marsden; Bayly; Thierry, *Reminiscences*; D. D'Urville, *Voyage Pittoresque autour du Monde*, 1834; *Zealandia*, 24 Feb 1938.

DILWORTH, JAMES (1815-94) was born at Dungannon, county Tyrone, Ireland, and educated at the Royal School there under Dr Darney (afterwards bishop of Kilmore). For some years he assisted on his father's farm, and about 1839 emigrated to Australia. He lived for some time at Parramatta, New South Wales, but finding the heat excessive he came to New Zealand about 1841.

In Auckland he was interested first in the New Zealand Banking Company and acquired considerable property at Mount Hobson. During the war he contracted (in partnership with Williams, of Bay of Islands) to supply meat to the troops. He represented Southern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council (1853-60). Dilworth was a strong supporter of the Church of England and a member of the diocesan trust board. To the Young Men's Christian Association and the Auckland Jubilee Kindergarten he made annual contributions of £100 each. He was for some years on the Auckland University College council. Dilworth was largely interested in the Thames Valley Land Co. and was a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. He left a large estate out of which a handsome endowment was bequeathed for educational purposes (notably the Dilworth Ulster Institute). He died on 23 Dec 1894.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 24, 27 Dec 1894.

DINGLE, JAMES (1818-96) was born in England. Engaging for service on the survey staff of the New Zealand Company, he arrived in Wellington by the *Slains Castle* early in 1841 and was one of the first party sent under Carrington to layout the Taranaki settlement. He settled in Taranaki, took up land at Omata and married Hannah, daughter of T. Veale, senior. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell (1869-73) and of the New Plymouth harbour board. He died on 23 Oct 1896.

## DINWIDDIE

*Taranaki P.C. minutes and Gaz.; Taranaki Herald*, 20 Nov 1886, 24 Oct 1896. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Call.

DINWIDDIE, WILLIAM (1863-1937) was born in London, the son of the Rev W. Dinwiddie, and was educated at the University College School. He afterwards studied law, and on coming to New Zealand was admitted a barrister and solicitor (1889) and commenced to practise in Napier. In 1901 he became editor of the *Hawkes Bay Herald*, which he controlled till shortly before his death (on 3 Jun 1937). Dinwiddie was a profound scholar and was deeply interested in education and cultural movements. He was a member of the Napier High School board (1918-25 and 1929-31), and chairman of this and the combined high school and technical schools board (1931-36). He was for 26 years a trustee of the Hawkes Bay children's home and was a vice-president of the Royal Society and of the Hawkes Bay Arts and Crafts Society. Dinwiddie published a short history of early Hawkes Bay in two parts (1916, 1921).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 3 Jun 1937.

DIVE, WILLIAM EVANS (1831-1928) was born at Rye, Sussex, England, and came to New Zealand in the *Sir Edward Paget* (1850). He was for many years farming and sawmilling in Marlborough and Taranaki. In 1874-75 he represented Queen Charlotte Sound in the Marlborough Provincial Council, and was a member of the executive. Dive lived for 20 years in Auckland, where his death occurred on 13 Jul 1928.

A son, BRADSHAW DIVE (1865-), was mayor of Eltham and of Tauranga (1919-25), and M.H.R. for Egmont (1908-11).

*Marlborough P.C. Proc.; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932.

DIXON, MARMADUKE (1828-95) was born at Caistor, Lincolnshire, the third son of James Green Dixon, and grandson of Thomas Dixon, a well-known sheep-breeder of Holton Park. Educated at Caistor Grammar School, Dixon was rather delicate. He was apprenticed at the age of 14 to the shipping firm of Robert Brooks and Co., and he sailed in their ships the whole of the time he was at sea. On one of his early voyages he was wrecked on the coast of Brazil, and spent six weeks at Pernambuco before get-

## DIXON

ting a passage to England in the ship *SWOLD-fish*.

Dixon made several voyages to Australia in the *Senator*, and about 1844 or 1845 he visited New Zealand. When he was first mate his ship arrived in Port Phillip to find 400 vessels lying idle, their crews having deserted to try the gold-fields. Dixon managed to keep his men together to discharge the cargo and get to sea. He was due for command of a ship and had been offered by Bishop Selwyn command of the mission yacht, but on the advice of John Murphy, an Australian squatter, who had taken up a run near Cust, he decided to settle in New Zealand. He accordingly left the sea (1851) and took his passage in the *Samarang* (in which Sir John Hall was a fellow-passenger), landing in Canterbury early in 1852.

Dixon took up 6,000 acres on the Waimakariri river and for the first five years lived in a hut in the manuka. In 1854 The Hermitage was running 3,000 sheep. Other runs were added from time to time until in 1889 the land was granted to the Midland Railway Co. in consideration of the construction of the line. The company gave the tenants the first right of acquiring the freehold, and Dixon purchased for 15s an acre his own run and two others. Of a practical turn of mind, Dixon resorted to ingenious means of getting the work done, and in later years led the settlers in the adoption of modern appliances. His property being poorly supplied with water, he moved his camp to the site of the present homestead, where water was abundant. By 1860 there was a good well, and bullock teams from the stations to the westward and timber wagons from mount Oxford made it a stopping-place. Dixon had great confidence in manuka land. He spent much money in crushing the scrub with rollers and burning off preparatory to sowing tussock seed on the bare soil, as a protection for the finer varieties of grass which were to follow. He was one of the first to use three-furrow ploughs, of which he imported a dozen (1866). He was an advocate of the Australian soil scoop for roadmaking and imported some to demonstrate their efficacy. In 1868 he imported a threshing machine and used straw elevators and slippgates for drafting sheep. Dixon is believed to have been the first to ship wheat in bags from Canterbury to England. Perhaps he served

the province best by his courageous fight for irrigation. In 1887 he started an irrigation farm near the Waimakariri, and when he died he had 1,200 acres watered. He and his son engineered the intake from the 'Vaimakariri for the Ashley-Waimakariri system. A flood after the hard winter of 1895 carried it away, but a year after Dixon's death Seddon officially opened the system which he devised.

Dixon was first chairman of the Mandeville and Rangiora, Cust, and East and West Eyreton road boards. For five years he was a member of all these boards. Dixon was elected to the Provincial Council for Mandeville, which he represented from 1865 until the abolition. He was an earnest supporter of education, and a promoter of the North Canterbury A. and P. association, of which he was a vice-president. When the Canterbury Frozen Meat Co. was formed he sent to London 25 carcasses of lamb, of which the Duke of Edinburgh accepted five and London editors smaller lots. A great reader and thinker, Dixon devoted much study to natural science. He believed that the atmosphere 'of the earth was affected by spots on the sun.

In 1859 Dixon married Eliza Agnes, daughter of the Rev Dr James Suttell Wood, of Wensleydale, Yorkshire, and sometime rector of Cranfield, Bedfordshire. He died on 15 Nov 1895.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Acland; *Col. Gent.*; *The Press*, 4 Oct 1930 (p).

DIXON, MARMADUKE JOHN (1832-1918) was a son of Marmaduke Dixon (q.v.), and was educated at Christ's College, Christchurch. He was a successful farmer and a firm advocate of irrigation, being for some years chairman of the Waimakariri-Ashley water supply board. Between 1885 and 1890, in response to the stimulus given to mountaineering in New Zealand by the visit of the Rev W. S. Green, Dixon accompanied G. E. Mannerling on adventurous work in the Southern Alps, including several attempts on the virgin Mount Cook, which he ascended to within 100 feet of the summit. In 1890 they canoed down the Tasman river and Lake Pukaki into the Waitaki. He was one of the founders of the New Zealand Alpine Club in 1891. Dixon married in 1897 Mabel Courage (Amberley). He died on 31 Jul 1918.

J.D.P.

G. E. Mannerling, *With Axe and Rope in the New Zealand Alps* (1891); *Christ's Coll. List*; *Lyttelton Times*, 1 Aug 1918.

DIXON, WILLIAM GRAY (1854-1928) was born at Paisley, Scotland, the son of a Free Kirk minister. Educated at the Neilson Institution there and at Ayr Academy (dux 1871), he graduated M.A. at Glasgow after a distinguished career (1876) and was appointed professor of English at the Imperial College of Engineering, Tokyo, Japan. He was the first secretary of the original Christian Association there and recording secretary and life member of the Asiatic Society of Japan.

Returning to Scotland in 1880, he entered New College to study for the ministry of the Free Church. Gaining his exit with first-class honours (1884) he was licensed as a minister and appointed an assistant at Scotch College, Melbourne, and a year later minister at Fitzroy. He was in charge of St John's, Warrnambool (1887-89), and in 1894 (having been admitted M.A. ad eundem at Melbourne University) he was appointed examiner in apologetics at Ormond Theological College.

In 1900 Dixon came to New Zealand, where he had charge of St David's, Auckland, for 10 years. He was president in that time of the ministers' association and editor of *The Burning Bush*. He was minister of Roslyn (Dunedin) 1910-21. In 1919 he was moderator of the General Assembly. Retiring in 1921 owing to ill-health, he was appointed minister emeritus. Dixon was held in high esteem for his zeal, fidelity and spiritual discernment, his ability as preacher and writer, and his championship of civic righteousness. Two months before his death he received the honour of doctor of divinity of Edinburgh University. He published *The Land of the Morning, Romance of the Catholic Presbyterian Church, John Calvin and the Modern World*, and *The Church for our Day*.

Dixon married (1900) Elizabeth Aitken, daughter of John Glen (Glasgow). He died on 4 Sep 1928.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Sep 1928 (p).

DOBSON, SIR ARTHUR DUDLEY (1841-1934). The son of Edward Dobson (q.v.), Arthur was born in London. His education,

commenced in Nottingham and London, was interrupted when the family migrated to New Zealand in the *Cressy* (1850). In 1851 Arthur and his brother were sent to Tasmania in the brig *Gazelle* to the care of an uncle, the Rev C. Dobson, vicar of Buckland. Two years later, their mother having arrived in New Zealand, the boys returned and continued their education as boarders under the Rev G. Cotterill at Lyttelton and Christ's College.

As a young Arthur commenced surveying and engineering under his father. In 1860 he surveyed Lyttelton harbour and measured the depth of the mud. The laying out of roads to Kaiapoi and Rangiora, draining the Rangiora swamp, surveying the upper Hurunui and lake Sumner and marking out the road from Riccarton to the Rangitata kept him employed for a few years. Under the provincial government from 1861 he prospected for coal at Kowai and Mt Torlesse and explored the range as far as the Rakaia; carried out topographical surveys (under von Haast) in the Port Hills and the Mackenzie country (1862) and worked quarries to supply stone for provincial buildings. In 1863 Dobson accepted a contract for the survey of a block of land in west Canterbury from the Grey river to Abut head (including lake Brunner and the Teremakau to the main ridge). Chartering the schooner *Gipsy* in Nelson, he took his party south and penetrated as far overland as the Hokitika river, which he crossed on 1 Jan 1864. The white surveyors being discouraged by frequent fatal accidents in the rivers, Dobson relied upon Maori help and used native huts for shelters.

Returning to Christchurch overland he started for the coast again, hoping to bring horses across the Alps. In Mar he discovered Arthur's Pass (named after him some months later) but had to use the Hurunui saddle to get his animals across. Owing to the advent of the diggers, the tracks had to be widened into roads and Arthur's Pass became the main route from Christchurch to the west. His work in Westland being completed (1864), Dobson was associated with Travers (q.v.) in opening up a goldfield in the Appoo gully, Collingwood, but after some months it was found to have been worked over previously. He then undertook survey work for Nelson province, trying to find

routes over the ranges to the goldfields. While he was thus engaged his brother George was murdered (24 May 1866). Arthur was appointed in 1869 district engineer for the Nelson West Coast goldfields, with headquarters at Westport, and later also chief surveyor. He resigned from the provincial service to become district engineer under the General Government, in charge of railway construction, where he remained until 1878, when he rejoined his father in Christchurch. In 1880 they took the contract for the Timaru harbour works, which they completed in two years.

Dobson made surveys of various railway routes over the Alps, mainly Arthur's Pass and Hurunui. In 1884 the former was decided upon, a preliminary company was formed to obtain capital, and Dobson as engineer went to London (with Alan Scott and Charles Fell). As a result the Midland Railway Co. was formed. During his visit to England Dobson made many interesting contacts with botanists, geologists and other scientists, attended meetings of learned societies and heard much music, in which he was greatly interested. He took flute lessons from a prominent master. On his return to New Zealand (Sep 1885) he found conditions so depressed that he went to Melbourne in search of employment. In partnership with John Bowen Mackenzie and Robert Reed he tendered for the Warrnambool harbour works (£150,000), which he carried out successfully. He then undertook alone the building of a suspension bridge (span 500 feet) over the Merri river and other engineering works which he serviced from his workshops in Warrnambool. Suffering severe losses in the financial crisis in Victoria, Dobson returned to New Zealand (Apr 1898) and took over the business from which his father was about to retire. He carried out important irrigation works in the Rakaia district and reported on the Waimakariri power scheme. As city engineer in Christchurch (1901-21) he carried out the Sydenham waterworks, the city waterworks with reservoir in Cashmere hills and many important street works.

Dobson was knighted in 1931 and died on 5 Mar 1934. He married (1866) Eleanor (d. 1933), daughter of Henry Lewis, Nelson.

*Cf. N.Z.*, iii; A. D. Dobson, *Reminiscences*, 1930 (p); *The Press*, 13 Jul 1909.

## DOBSON

DOBSON, EDWARD (1816-1908) was born in London, the son of a Mediterranean merchant. He was educated in London and articled to a well-known architect and surveyor (Herring) from whom he learned the practical side of his profession as a civil engineer. He studied also at University College, London, under Professor Vignoles, and spent several months in a continental tour studying architecture. In 1842-43 he won his first certificate in architecture as a fine art, and in architecture as a science. For two years in succession his drawings were exhibited in the Royal Academy.

In 1844 Dobson joined the firm of John Rastrick, railway engineers, and he had several years' experience in railway construction throughout England. Dobson was one of the original purchasers of land under the Canterbury Association and left for New Zealand by the *Cressy* in 1850 with his two eldest sons. He selected 50 acres of land at Sumner, and built there and in Christchurch. Mrs Dobson followed a year afterwards with the remainder of the family in the *Fatima*. In 1854, when the provincial government was fully established, Fitzgerald appointed Dobson provincial engineer, a position which he occupied for the next fourteen years. He not only designed and carried out many of the more important public works in the province, but undertook explorations, especially in the effort to establish communications with the western seaboard, which on the discovery of gold was being visited by ships direct from overseas. First was the track from the plains to Purau, at the head of Akaroa harbour. The tunnel through the hills, and the railway to Lyttelton were impressive works for a colony at such an early stage of its development. At Lyttelton Dobson constructed the breakwater from Officer's Point, which made the inner harbour safe for shipping. He planned the system of railways for the province and before he retired the Lyttelton line was completed, and the southern line had advanced 29 miles (to the Selwyn river). Another important work was the draining of the low-lying land about Rangiora, of which he reclaimed 10,000 acres. His advice was sought also by the province of Otago, which appointed him to make a report on the harbours of Moeraki, Waikouaiti and Oamaru (1865).

In Sep 1857 Dobson investigated a Maori

## DOBSON

track through the pass of the Hurunui river at Mount Noble, and cut a track for horses to a higher plateau, where they found flat land of superior quality with several lakes through which the Hurunui flowed. Along this track (nowhere more than 1600 feet in height) he laid out the road which eight years later was the first thoroughfare to the west. When the diggings broke out in 1865 Dobson (accompanied by Hall) laid out the road through the Otira, and set gangs to work in the severest weather in order to open a road for the diggers to get through. He named the pass after his son Arthur (q.v.). Another son, George, was murdered by the Burgess and Kelly gang in 1866.

Dobson was afterwards city engineer in Christchurch. In 1869 he became engineer to the Melbourne and Hobson's Bay United Railway Co. Two years later the company's lines were purchased by the Victorian government, under which Dobson took service and (until 1876) carried through the water supply scheme and built the Anakies dam and the Malmesbury reservoir. He was resident engineer at Geelong, and for a while acting-chief engineer of the department.

In 1876 Dobson returned to Canterbury and in private practice with his son constructed the Timaru waterworks; surveyed the railway line from Waikari through the Hurunui pass to lake Brunner, erected many bridges, and constructed irrigation races and river protection works. Dobson was lecturer in engineering at Canterbury College (1887-92), and was for some years on the board of governors of Christ's College. He was in 1887 one of the electoral boundaries commissioners. In 1842 Dobson was elected a life member of the Oxford Architectural Society, and an associate member of the Institute of Civil Engineers (of which he became a full member in 1881). The institute awarded him the Telford Medal for a paper on the engineering works of the Canterbury provincial government. In 1843 he was elected an A.R.I.B.A. He wrote many other professional papers, notably those on *Foundation and Concrete*, *The Railways of Belgium*, *Pioneer Engineering*, *The Art of Building*, *Museums and Stone-cutting*, and *Bricks and Tiles*. He was a member of the Canterbury Philosophical Institute, and president in 1866. Dobson was the first

## DOCHERTY

man enrolled in the Heathcote Volunteers in 1861, and subsequently transferred to the engineers. He died on 19 Apr 1908.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Cant. O.N.*; Cox; Dobson; *Lyttelton Times*, 14 Oct 1857; *The Press*, 19 Apr 1908, 8 Feb 1930 (P); *N.Z. Surveyor*, Jun 1908.

DOCHERTY, WILLIAM (?1846-96) was born in Glasgow. Coming to New Zealand as a young man, he spent much of his time prospecting and exploring in the western districts and fiords of Otago. For some years he lived at Dusky Sound where in 1878 he discovered a copper lode which he hoped to develop. He found coal on Coal island in Preservation Inlet, but not a considerable reef, and he brought specimens of asbestos from the fiords, but again the quantity was not sufficient. In company with George Hassing (schoolmaster, of Heddon Bush), Docherty once crossed the Southern Alps in northern Otago to the West Coast. He received some government assistance as the result of a recommendation by the goldfields committee of Parliament. He died on 20 Mar 1896 at Cromarty, Preservation Inlet.

Hansard, 28 Oct 1884; *Southland Times*, 23 Mar 1896; *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Jun 1878, 10 Jan 1885.

DODSON, GEORGE (1821-1905) was born at Malmesbury, Wiltshire. As a youth he went to Nova Scotia but, disliking the cold, he returned to England, and in 1842 landed in Nelson from the *Fiteshire*. He joined the New Zealand Company's survey staff under Budge, and after working in the Nelson district went in 1844 with F. Tuckett to explore Otago. The operations of the New Zealand Company being suspended, Dodson remained at Otakou in charge of the survey material. He returned to farm in Nelson, and in 1854 bought land in the Spring Creek district of Marlborough. As chairman of the Spring Creek river board for 25 years and a member of the Marlborough Provincial Council (in which he sat for Tuamarina, 1869-74), he exerted every effort to cope with the flooding of the rivers. He first had a dairy farm and then went in for agriculture, keeping abreast of the times with the latest machinery. He was one of the foremost advocates of separation from Nelson. Dodson was also on the Nelson land board for six years.

*Cycl. N.z.*, v (p).

## DOLBEL

DODSON, HENRY (1830-92) was born in England, his father being an army officer. As a young man he went to Canada. He then spent some years on the Ballarat goldfields and in the fifties came to Marlborough, settling at Blenheim, where he established a brewery.

Dodson was in the Provincial Council (for Lower Wairau 1860-62; Pelorus 1862-63; Blenheim 1866-70, and Lower Wairau 1874-75). He led the Blenheim faction for some years. Having been a member of the Blenheim town board, he moved to have a borough created and was in the first borough council. In the following year (1869) he was elected mayor by popular vote and held office on four occasions (1870-72, 1883, 1884). Holding Liberal views, he represented Blenheim in Parliament (1881-90), defeating A. P. Seymour (1881), and J. Ward (1884). He retired in 1890 and died on 7 May 1892.

*Marlborough P.C. minutes*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Buick, *Marlborough* (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

DODSON, JOSEPH REID (1813-90) came to Nelson from Australia in the brig *Return* (1854) and purchased an interest in a brewery, which he operated until his death. In 1858 he was elected to the board of works. He lived in England 1860-66. In 1874 he was elected first mayor of Nelson and he held that position again in 1877-81. He was a liberal supporter of all charities. Dodson died on 12 Oct 1890.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *The Colonist*, 13 Oct 1890.

DODSON, THOMAS (1807-98) arrived in Nelson by the *Will Watch* (1841), spent some years in the town and then took up land at W'akapuaka, where he farmed for the rest of his life. He represented Suburbs North in the Nelson Provincial Council (1857-67). Dodson was one of the first members of the Nelson lodge of oddfellows. He died on 26 Aug 1898.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *The Colonist*, 27 Aug 1898.

DOLBEL, PHILIP (1827-1901) was born in Jersey, Channel islands, and brought up to the sea. He owned a small vessel (the *Heartly*) trading on the English coast. In 1855 he came to New Zealand from Melbourne in the brig *Onkaparinga*, and for 12 months was engaged on bridge building and other public works at the Hutt. Then he went to Clive, Hawkes Bay, where he lived for 12 years. In 1865 he bought

900 acres at Springfield and later a run of 24,000 acres at Petane. He represented Mohaka in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1861-75), was on the Hawkes Bay county council for some years and the Napier harbour board and a director of the Hawkes Bay Farmers' Co-operative Association. Dolbel was twice burned out by Hauhau when running a sheep station at Mangaharuru, and had several narrow escapes. He died on 28 Oct 1901.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 29 Oct 1901.

DOMETT, ALFRED (1811-87) was born at Cambenvell Grove, Surrey, the son of Nathaniel Domett, a naval officer. He received his education at a public school at Stockwell and proceeded to St John's College, Cambridge (1829). Much interested in literature, he made many literary friends, wrote verse and prose, travelled a good deal and left the University in 1833 without taking a degree. In the same year he published his first small volume of verse.

Domett spent the next two years travelling in North America and the West Indies, and on returning to England entered at the Middle Temple (Nov 1835). His law studies did not hold him very closely and he passed most of this period of his life in a dilettante manner, literary interests being predominant. He had many poems in Blackwood's in the period 1837-39, of which *A Christmas Hymn* attracted attention. His life for the most part was one of aimless leisure, diversified by tours on the continent, in the course of which he did a certain amount of sketching. In 1839 his second volume of verse appeared, a long poem on Venice. In 1840, if not before, he met Robert Browning, to whom he became closely attached and with whom he made some of his tours. Having been called at the Middle Temple on 13 Nov 1841, he shared chambers for a while with Joseph Arnould (afterwards chief justice of Bombay), but he never took seriously to law.

In May 1842 Domett purchased land in the Nelson settlement of the New Zealand Company, and sailed in the *Sir Charles Forbes*, arriving in Nelson in Aug 1842. He soon took a leading position in the settlement. Within a year of his arrival a fatal clash occurred with the Maori owners of the Wairau plain (Jun 1843). Every man in the settlement was in-

involved either in the tragedy itself or in the measures taken immediately after it to protect the settlement. Domett shouldered a rifle in the mobilisation of the Nelson militia. Almost from the time of his arrival in the colony he was a contributor to the *Nelson Examiner*. He wrote vigorously in defence of the colonists, demanding that the government should take firm measures to punish the natives and ensure that there should be no recurrence of such incidents. He compiled from the depositions taken a careful and effective narrative of the Wairau tragedy and was deputed (with Dr Monro) to proceed to Auckland to lay the case of the settlers before the government. He had the principal part in the correspondence with the Administrator (Shortland) and found himself in strong opposition to the policy of both Shortland and FitzRoy, which he considered pusillanimous in the extreme.

In Feb 1845 he was chosen by the leaders of the settlement, and strongly importuned by C. A. Dillon and E. W. Stafford, to accept a seat in the Legislative Council, but declined firmly on public grounds. As editor of the *Examiner* (1844-46) Domett was now the recognised protagonist of the settlers and the Company's land purchasers and of the demand for self-government. He was practically the sole author of the petition drawn up in Nov 1845 demanding the recall of the Governor. This masterful document gained the warm approval of the directors of the New Zealand Company, who recommended Colonel Wakefield to find Domett employment, possibly as resident agent at New Plymouth (20 May 1846). Domett's 'utter and perfect straightforwardness and fearlessness' appealed to his fellow settlers, who at a public dinner on 11 Dec 1845 thanked him for his services to the settlements. He acted as arbitrator on behalf of the Company in deciding the claims of the disappointed land purchasers, a duty in which he showed firmness and discretion. In 1846 he accepted from Governor Grey a seat in the Legislative Council, and on the inauguration of Grey's constitution he was appointed Colonial Secretary for New Munster (14 Feb 1848). Three months later (II Nov 1851) he was made Civil Secretary for the colony, holding these two posts together. Grey was much impressed by his zealous administration, which included the correspondence with

the Otago and Canterbury Associations in connection with the new settlements at Otago and Canterbury.

In 1850 Domett published a useful classified compilation of the ordinances of New Zealand and New Munster. Having assisted in devising the new constitution and fixing the proposed boundaries of Nelson, Canterbury and Otago, he resigned to make way for the inauguration of the new machinery of government (Jan 1854). He accepted the office of commissioner of crown lands for Hawkes Bay, with which were combined the duties of resident magistrate. From that date, till the middle of 1856 he was the sole official of any standing in the Ahuriri district. He established the machinery of government, which he worked himself, controlling the surveys, the making of roads and the laying out of towns. The street names of Napier bear witness to his devotion to the muse of poetry. In Hawkes Bay Domett had no difficulty with the Maori, possibly because white settlers were not yet clamouring for the acquisition of land.

While there he was elected to represent Nelson in Parliament (1855). He returned to Nelson as commissioner of crown lands in 1856 and he was chairman of the waste lands committee for the period 1856-71. In 1857 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Nelson, which he represented till 1863. During the whole of that time he was provincial secretary and a member of the executive. He reformed the survey maps of the province and devoted much attention to public works and to education. He was one of the governors of Nelson College under the act of 1858. At the parliamentary election of 1860 Domett was again returned for Nelson City (defeating J. P. Robinson). During this Parliament native affairs came to a crisis. Sir George Grey, who had succeeded Browne as governor, was working in reasonable harmony with Fox (who became premier in 1861), when a no-confidence motion was carried against the government by the casting vote of the Speaker (Monro). Stafford was sent for, but declined to form a government and in turn proposed FitzGerald, as one with a strong sympathy for the natives and not too prominently associated with recent party disputes. FitzGerald also declined, but took the liberty of proposing Domett in the belief, he

said, that it would not be difficult to form a ministry which would include both Domett and Fox. Domett accepted the task without consulting Fox, who declined thereafter to accept office.

Thus Domett became on 6 Aug 1862 the leader of a government comprising T. B. Gillies (Attorney-general), Bell (Native Minister), Mantell (Lands), and Tancred and T. Russell (both without portfolio). The prospect for peace became somewhat gloomy. As Thomas Arnold divined, Domett looked upon the natives of New Zealand with Roman rather than with Christian eyes. With Russell as a colleague his attitude was not likely to be any less Roman. Gillies retired a week or two later and Domett invited into his team Reader Wood (as Treasurer), Crosbie Ward (Postmaster-general) and Sewell (Attorney-general). It was soon clear that the ministry was still not well disposed towards the natives. It cold-shouldered FitzGerald's suggestion that the Maori should have representation in Parliament, and only with the greatest reluctance accepted Grey's proposal that the Waitara purchase should be abandoned. The necessary proclamation (gazetted on II May 1863) was unfortunately preceded by the occupation of the Tataraimaka block, thereby making the renewal of war in Taranaki and Waikato certain. Domett's premiership was never very real. Compelled by certain sinister influences to take Russell into his cabinet, he had not the strength to accept Grey's suggestion and assume full responsibility for native affairs, which the Home government now insisted should be borne by the colonial ministers. The government, obviously tottering to its fall, insisted that Grey should entirely manage native affairs. War being inevitable, Russell became Minister of Defence (22 Jul 1863). On the meeting of Parliament in Oct Domett did at length recommend the assumption of responsibility by the cabinet, and put forward a policy which was generally attributed to Russell and Whitaker, of hard war and confiscation. Without waiting to be defeated the ministry adjourned Parliament for a short time and then resigned office (30 Oct 1863).

Grey consulted Fox and a species of coalition was formed under Whitaker, with Fox as Colonial Secretary, Wood as Treasurer, Gillies as

## DOMETT

Postmaster-general and Secretary for Crown Lands, and Russell again as Minister of Defence. Though Domett's premiership was little more than nominal, he did during his term of office make proposals of a constructive character which originated entirely with himself. In the schemes of Vogel some years later are evident the broad outlines of Domett's programme of settlement and self-defence, involving the introduction of 20,000 immigrants and the borrowing of £4,000,000 to settle them in frontier districts and provide access. He also proposed the establishment of land courts to fulfil the promises that had been made of grants of land for the natives.

On the resignation of his ministry Domett, having retired from provincial politics (Feb 1863), was appointed Secretary for Lands (24 Dec). On 13 Jan 1864, when the post was provided for in the civil service estimates, he was confirmed in it. He acted as a commissioner of land claims (1863-70); was appointed in addition Registrar-general of lands (1865), and in 1870 undertook the administration of the confiscated lands. He retired on pension on 1 Sep 1871. Meanwhile he had been for some years a member of the Legislative Council, to which he was called on 19 Jun 1866. Owing to his unique qualifications for official duty he was specially excepted in the disqualification act of 1870, which allowed him to remain in Parliament, and he was a member of the Council till 1874.

In 1871 Domett returned to live in England, where for the remainder of his life he quietly devoted himself to his interrupted muse. In 1872 he published his classic, *Ranolf and Amohia*; in 1873 *Roots, a plea for Tolerance*; in 1877 *Flotsam and Jetsam: Rhymes Old and New*. His interests were always literary, and he had throughout life a definite disinclination for public affairs. Gisborne's appraisal of Domett is searching and discriminating: 'He abounded in imaginative' and creative power, in tender sensibility, in fine taste, in great aims and in affluence of expression. . . . He was a hero-worshipper and admired splendid autocracy. . . . The seamy side of political life was not congenial to his taste, and he was not fitted to work out what he regarded as a lower level of public service. . . . Left to himself he did great and good work. . . . As prime

## DON

minister in 1863 he devised and embodied, alone and unassisted, a large scheme for the settlement and self-defence of New Zealand. Its statesmanlike character is unimpeachable.' His mind was one of great intellectual capacity and high culture, and imbued with poetic genius. His nature was thoroughWy genuine and had a refreshing ring which proclaimed the sterling coin. But in political life Domett was never a leader of men. 'He conceived great ideas but loved to brood over them in poetic solitude until his mind bodied them forth and launched them living into the world, but he had not the faculty of equally inspiring other men. He was in, but not of, the world of politics.' Gisborne's contribution on Domett to *The Poets and The Poetry of the Century* (edited by A. N. Miles) is also noteworthy. Longfellow used some of Domett's verse in his *Poems of Places* and regretted that it was too late to make use of others. Domett translated into excellent verse some Maori songs which appear in Grey's *Polynesian Mythology*.

One of Domett's monuments in New Zealand is the General Assembly Library. He was on the committee which established it in 1858 and took a delight in laying the foundations of the fine classical collection which that institution possesses. For some years he acted as librarian (1866) and he was chairman in (1868-69). He refers to that episode as 'an amusement and an occupation which I relinquished with great regret.'

Domett received the C.M.G. in 1880. He died on 2 Nov 1887. He married (1856) Mrs Mary George, a widow, who with her husband had kept a small school in Wellington. (See F. N. GEORGE and JOHN C. ST GEORGE.)

*Parltry Record, Nelson P.C. Proc. and Gaz.; N.Z. Gaz.; New Munster Gaz.; N.Z. Archives, N.Z.C.; G.B.O.P. 1844; N.Z.P.D., 1854-70 and 8 Nov 1887 Sinclair papers; D.N.B.; thesis by V. M. Thomson, M.A.; unpublished MS. by C. Stuart Perry; Arnold; Hocken; Ward; Macmorran; Gisborne (p); Saunders; Rusden; Domett, op cit.; Nelson Examiner, pass.; N.Z. Times, 7 Nov 1887; N.Z. Herald do; The Times (London), 28 Jul 1934; Otago Daily Times, II Jan 1930, 28 May 1931. Portrait: Parliament House.*

DON, ALEXANDER (1857-1934) was born at Ballarat, Victoria, the son of John Don. Educated at public schools, he left at the age of 10

## DON

(having passed the sixth standard) and took odd jobs in the mining industry at Bendigo (1866-72). His Bible class teacher advised him to qualify for teaching, and at 15 he passed the entrance examination and commenced as a pupil teacher. During his employment in that profession (1873-79) he devoted himself to entomology, taught in the Sunday school and was precentor in the church, a member of the board of management of the Y.M.C.A. and later corresponding secretary.

Hearing Dr John G. Paton speaking on the New Hebrides mission (1877), Don offered his services and was advised to come to Otago. After some correspondence he was appointed second assistant at the Port Chalmers school (1879). He took part in cricket and football, sprinting and other field sports, taught music at school, and wrote regular articles on New Zealand for the Australian press. A young man being required for the Presbyterian mission at Canton, Don studied Chinese as well as he could in New Zealand and left for China. In 16 months he had fully mastered the language. Having suffered a severe attack of yellow fever, he returned to New Zealand, entered Theological Hall and was sent to labour at River-ton (1882). In 1883 he married Amelia, daughter of Francis Warne (Bendigo) and in 1886 moved to Lawrence, where there was a larger Chinese community scattered between Waitahuna, Glenore and Waipori. He toured the goldfields regularly, mainly on foot or driving. In 18 tours he walked 16,000 miles.

In 1889 the missionary centre was changed to Dunedin, a Chinese church was opened and Don contemplated the Otago church establishing its own mission among the villages and market towns north of Canton. He visited that field in 1898, and in 1901 the mission was opened, G. H. McNeur being the first missionary. In his address as moderator of the Assembly in 1907 Don proposed opening a mission in India. He launched an appeal for relief for sufferers from the famine in China, and as a token of gratitude received from the Chinese government the seventh council insignia of the Excellent Crop. In 1913 he moved his headquarters to Palmerston North, but a year later returned to Dunedin to become organising secretary of foreign missions. In 1922 he again visited the mission field and in

## DONALD

1923 he retired to live at Ophir.

Don continued his interest in the Sunday school and the P.W.M.U., and for the jubilee of the Otago presbytery compiled a volume of recollections, *Memoirs of the Golden Road* (1931). He wrote regularly to the *Outlook* and published a number of books, including *Under Six Flags, Light in Dark Isles*, and *Peter Milne of Nguna*. He died on 2 Nov 1934.

Proc. General Assembly of New Zealand, 1879-1934; *The Outlook, pass;* Don, *op. cit.* (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 3 Nov 1934.

DON, JOHN ROBERT (1860-1919) was born in Gisborne, Victoria, the son of John Don, and educated in Victoria. He came to New Zealand in 1880 and received an appointment on the staff of the Oamaru south school, from which he moved in turn to Forbury, the Normal School (Dunedin) and as first assistant to Macandrew road (1884). At Otago University he graduated B.A. (1886) and M.A. (1887), with honours in chemistry. In 1887 he became first assistant at the Normal School. In 1889 he graduated B.Sc., and in 1896 D.Sc.; in 1898 he was elected a fellow of the Chemical Society and in 1900 of the Geological Society. He was demonstrator in chemistry and lecturer in geology at the University. In 1895 Don was appointed vice-principal of the Training College, and two years later rector of the Waitaki Boys' High School. His influence there was very marked, changing the character of the school from ultra-classical to ultra-scientific. As in previous appointments, he had considerable success in examination and scholarship results. He paid great attention to school sports and in 1906 opened, a preparatory department. Following the death of his wife in 1906 his health broke down, and he resigned. On returning to New Zealand from a trip abroad (1909) he was appointed inspector of schools under the Otago board. Don died on 23 Mar 1919.

K. C. McDonald (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Mar 1919.

DONALD, WILLIAM (1815-84) was born in London of Scottish origin, and after receiving his medical training and some years of practical experience at Southwark and in France, he became surgeon to a railway construction company, first in France and later in Wales. Arriving in New Zealand in 1849, he was ap-

## DONNELLY

pointed medical officer in Canterbury. For 20 years (1861-81) he was resident magistrate at the port of Lyttelton. He represented Lyttelton in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1855-57), and for three years (1862-65) was chairman of the municipal council. A prominent freemason, Donald was one of the founders in 1857 of the Lyttelton lodge, and from 1868 until a few weeks before his death on 29 Jun 1884, he was provincial grand master.

Barclay; Cox; *Lyttelton Times*, 1 Jul 1884.

DONNELLY, GEORGE PRIOR (1847-1917) was born in county Tipperary, the son of a landed proprietor, and educated at Doom, county Limerick. His father having died in 1861, he came to New Zealand with his mother (1863). While living at Wairoa South, he was a member of the Auckland Cavalry (1864) and he rode his first race at Tamaki in the garrison hunt steeplechase. In 1867 Donnelly moved to Hawkes Bay, where he became manager for Major Carlyon. He soon took up land for himself and was very successful, becoming the owner of Crissoge, Waimarama, Mangaohane and Okurukuru. He took his part in local government, and was a successful racing owner and a breeder of blood horses and cattle. He died in Jun 1917.

Donnelly married (1877) AIRINI, daughter of the Ngati-Kahungunu chief Karauria Pupu (who was killed fighting for the Queen at Makaretu, Nov 1868), and a descendant of Tiaki-tai. She died on 6 Jun 1909.

Privy Council reports, *Donnelly v. Broughton*, 4 Jul 1891; *Cycl.* vi; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Cowan; *The Press*, 7 Jun 1909; *O.D. Times*, 21 Jun 1909.

DONOVAN, PATRICK (1812-98) was born in Ireland, and came to New Zealand in 1838, settling at Bay of Islands, and at Auckland in 1840. He was engaged in business for many years and was prominent in public life, being a member of the Provincial Council for Northern Division (1853-55). Owing to injuries sustained in an accident he was many years in retirement. Donovan died on 30 Oct 1898.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 31 Oct 1898.

DORSET, JOHN (1807-56) was born in London and completed his medical education at Westminster Hospital. He then enlisted as an assistant surgeon in the British Auxiliary

## DOUGLAS

Legion in Portugal, defending the constitutional government of Dom Pedro. He was present at most of the engagements and the siege of Oporto. After recovering from typhus, he took the field under Bernardo da Sa (who had served under Wellington). At the battle of Sao Bartolomeo, when the Constitutional forces had broken, da Sa and Dorset retrieved the day by leading a cavalry charge, and Dorset, the only officer unhurt, commanded the rearguard operations of the cavalry. He was promoted cavalry commander in recognition of his gallantry. Dorset went to England at the end of this campaign and at once enlisted as surgeon in the Legion for Spain. He was placed in charge of the hospital at Vittoria during a severe winter marked by outbreaks of disease in the army and then joined the staff of de Lacy Evans. On the disbandment of the Legion he immediately enlisted for another term of service in the auxiliary brigade.

Returning to England in 1839 he met his fellow legionnaire, Colonel Wakefield, by whose influence he was appointed principal surgeon to the New Zealand Company. He came to New Zealand in the *Tory*. In Wellington Dorset took a leading part in the constitutional movement. In 1853-56 he represented Wellington City in the Provincial Council, and in 1854 he was appointed provincial surgeon. He died on 2 Oct 1856, and was succeeded as M.P.C. by his brother, WILLIAM DORSET (1802-77, arrived in Wellington 1841), who sat till the following year.

*N.Z.C.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, 271; Ward; Grimstone; E. J. Wakefield; Wakelin; *Wellington Independent*, 22, 25 Oct 1856.

DOUGLAS, JOHN (1829-1903) was born in Perthshire, the son of a Strathmore farmer. He gained some knowledge of business and estate management in a lawyer's and factor's office and after a short experience in a commercial office came to New Zealand in 1862 as managing partner for certain investors and agent for others. In partnership with F. G. Alderson he acquired Mount Royal and Waihao Downs and many other estates, including Clydevale, Edendale, Kurow, Kawarau, Deep Dell and Hakataramea. Several of these were taken over in 1867 by the New Zealand and Australian Land Co., of which he was agent and manager

## DOUGLAS

till 1870, after which he carried on his own estates. In 1874 he took up land between Carnarvon and Oroua, in the North Island.

Douglas was a progressive farmer who introduced machinery whenever possible and paid great attention to his stock and pastures. He was a pioneer of the frozen meat industry. In 1871 he contested the Waihemo seat in the Provincial Council against J. McKenzie (q.v.), but he took no further part in politics. In 1863 Douglas married a daughter (d. 1864) of Thomas Rattray, of Brewlands, Perthshire, and later a daughter of David Stark, of Dunedin. He died on 12 Aug 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); J. G. Wilson; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Aug 1903.

DOUGLAS, SIR ROBERT ANDREWS MACKENZIE (1837-84), 3rd baronet, son of the second baronet, was educated in Jersey and Hampshire and gazetted ensign in the 57th Regiment (1854), in which he served at the storming of Sebastopol and the capture of Kinburn. He later served against the Arabs at Aden (being present at the capture of Sheikh Othman), and in the Indian Mutiny. Coming with the 57th to New Zealand, he served through the West Coast campaign under General Cameron, and was present at several skirmishes, including Nukumaru.

Douglas commanded a company for 10 years before selling out to settle at Whangarei. There he took a keen interest in public affairs. He was a member of the Provincial Council for Whangarei (1873 to abolition) and represented Marsden in Parliament (1876-79). In 1880 he was a member of the civil service commission. Douglas married in 1866 Eleanor Louisa (d. 1919), daughter of T. H. Liffiton. He died on 28 Feb 1884.

*ParUr.* Record; Burke, *Peerage*, 1935; Gudgeon; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*

DOUSLIN, WILLIAM, was an architect by profession and a man of some inventive genius. He came to New Zealand from Tasmania at the time of the Wakamarina 'rush' and settled in Marlborough, first at Havelock and later in Blenheim, where he was mayor in 1887. He represented Pelorus in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1865-75) and was in the executive in 1865-66. Douslin afterwards went to

## DRANSFIELD

South Africa, and was employed by the Chartered Company in Rhodesia.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Buick, *Marlborough*, 452.

DOWNES, THOMAS WILLIAM (1868-1938) was born in Wellington (his father being a surveyor), and brought up in Bulls, where he became interested in the history of the Ngati-Apa tribe. In 1898 he entered into business in Wanganui and in 1913 became superintendent for the Wanganui river trust. He was a deep student of Maori history, on which he wrote many papers for the Polynesian Society. He published *Old Whanganui* (1915) and a history and guide to the river (1921, 1923). Downes made many gifts to the Wanganui Museum. He married (1890) Margaret, daughter of Andrew Thomson. His death occurred on 6 Aug 1938.

*Polynesian Journal*, Sep 1938; *Wallga71ui Chronicle*, 8 Aug 1938.

DOWNEY, JOHN CUTHBERT (1832-95) was born in Liverpool and in 1848 entered the Benedictine order. Ordained priest at Rome in 1855, he returned to England and in conjunction with Lord Abbot Alcock (who came with the Benedictines to New Zealand) he founded a branch of the order at Ramsgate. In 1868 he was appointed prior of the monastery of Tenterden, at Ashford, Kent. After filling the position of Vicar-apostolic at Decca, Bengal, for three years he came to New Zealand with Bishop Steins in 1879 and established a Benedictine mission at Newton. Downey died on 21 May 1895.

DRANSFIELD, JOSEPH (1827-1906) was born at Huddersfield, Yorkshire, where his father owned a woollen mill. He was educated at the local school; as a young man sailed for Australia in the *Falcon*, and spent five years in and around Sydney. In 1857 he crossed to Wellington, where his brother, C. E. Dransfield, had established a merchant's business. They worked together for a while and did well. In 1860 Dransfield was a coal merchant, carrying out considerable contracts for the New Zealand Steam Navigation Co. and McMeckan Blackwoods. He widened his interests and in 1888 sold to the United Importers Co.

Dransfield was a member of the Provincial Council (representing Wellington City 1863-

## DREYER

67, and 1869-73). Twice during that time he was a member of the executive. He was chairman of the town board which preceded the City Council, and was mayor of the City (1870-74). Dransfield took the first steps towards the reclamation of land from the harbour. He was again mayor in 1878, and had been re-elected when financial embarrassment led to his resignation. He was chairman of the Wellington chamber of commerce (1878-79) and a director of the New Zealand Steam Navigation Co. Dransfield died on 21 Sep 1906.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, i; 'Ward; *Evening Post*, 3 Oct 1929 (p).

DREYER, ALEXANDER SVEND (1820-1905) was the son of an officer in the Danish army. Owing to political troubles he came to New Zealand in the sixties. In 1866 he bought land in the Mount Patriarch run (Marlborough), but was refused a crown grant on the grounds of failure to improve. Dreyer then moved to the West Coast, where he represented Grey in the Nelson Provincial Council (1867-69). On the inauguration of Scandinavian immigration he was appointed by the Wellington provincial government as interpreter and store-keeper at the camp north of Masterton, on the edge of the Forty-Mile Bush (1871). He was responsible also for reception of the immigrants from Scandinavia, and accompanied many of them to their destinations. Dreyer settled near Kopuaranga, the township being named after him 'Dreyer's Rock' and later 'Dreyerton'. He died on 4 Aug 1905.

*Kopuaranga School Jubilee Souvenir*, 1935; *Wellington Independent*, 6 Nov 1871; *Wairarapa Observer*, 5 Aug 1905.

DRIVER, HENRY (1831-93) was born in the United States, came to the Victorian goldfields when a young man, and went into business in Melbourne, where he was a partner in Lord and Co., importers. A few years later he became a partner in a station on the Murray. In 1861 he came to Dunedin following the discoveries at Gabriels Gully, and established himself as a merchant and stock agent under the style of Driver, McLean and Co. When this business was merged in the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co. he became manager of that firm and later of the Mutual Agency Co. He interested himself early in the

## DUDLEY

telegraph line from Dunedin to Port Chalmers, for which he had the contract, in the New Zealand Agricultural Co. and the Waimea Plains railway.

Driver had a run at Horseshoe Bush, near Clarendon. He first entered public life as a member of the Dunedin City Council (1865-69), being elected at the head of the poll. In 1866 he entered the Otago Provincial Council, in which he sat for many years (for Taieri 1866-67; Wakari 1867-71, 1872-75). He was elected to Parliament for Roslyn, which he represented for one year, and in 1881 he was returned for Hokonui. At the general election in 1884 he stood for Bruce but was defeated by Gillies, and he refused to stand again when a vacancy occurred. He died on 23 Jan 1893. For some time Driver was consul for the United States. He was a prominent member of the Dunedin Jockey Club, and was responsible for laying out the course at Forbury (1877). In 1879-80 he was president and subsequently starter.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Barclay; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Jan 1893. Portrait: Parliament House.

DUDLEY, BENJAMIN THORNTON (1838-1901) was born at Ticehurst, Sussex, the son of the Very Rev Benjamin Woolley Dudley (q.v.). Educated first at Marlborough College, England, he came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Cressy* (1850) and finished at Christ's College (1852-56), where he was head of the school and Rowley scholar. He joined the Melanesian Mission under Bishop J. R. Selwyn (1857), was ordained by Bishop Patteson (1861) but owing to ill-health had to retire from the mission (of which he was secretary from 1883). He was appointed curate of St Mary's, Parnell (1864) and vicar of Holy Sepulchre, Auckland (1865-97). In 1883 he was appointed archdeacon of Auckland and secretary to the Melanesian Mission, and in 1887 and 1897 he acted as commissary for the bishop. He was a member of the general synod for many years, and a governor of St John's College and was interested in the establishment of a college for Maori girls. He received the honorary degree of LL.D. from the Archbishop of Canterbury.

Dudley married (1862) Marion, daughter of the Rev J. F. Churton (q.v.). He died on 24 Apr 1901.

## DUDLEY

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Christ's Coll. List; Auckland Star*, 24 Apr 1901.

DUDLEY, BENJAMIN WOOLLEY (1805-92) was born at Dudley, Staffordshire, the son of a merchant, whose evangelical leanings prompted the son to turn from business to the Church. He entered at St Catherine's Hall, Cambridge, where he graduated (B.A. 1837; M.A. 1840). Ordained priest, he was appointed curate of EarDley, Chichester, and in 1838 of Ticehurst, Sussex.

In 1850 he came to Canterbury in the *Cressy* and was appointed incumbent of Lyttelton. In 1859 he moved to Auckland, where he had charge of St John's College and Panmure. In 1860 he was appointed incumbent of Rangiora, becoming a rural dean and canon (1866) and archdeacon 1876. He retired in 1888 and died on 28 Aug 1892. Dudley was a fellow of Christ's College, Christchurch (1864-88), where he established a scholarship. He endowed the church at West Lyttelton. He was a coadjutor of Fox in the Temperance Movement and president of the Blue Ribbon Society and the North Canterbury Political Temperance Union.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 29 Aug 1892.

DUNCAN, ANDREW (1834-80) was born in the west of Scotland and came to Canterbury with his parents in 1858. After working for a while he established himself in business as a nurseryman and seedsman. He represented Heathcote in the Provincial Council (1867-70 and 1871-73) and was on the executive in 1869 and 1872. In 1870 he was mayor of Christchurch. He once contested a Parliamentary seat against E. J. Wakefield. Duncan was a member of the education board (sometime chairman), the waste lands board, and the South Waimakariri board of conservators. He acted for a while as emigration agent in London for the province. He died on 10 Dec 1880.

*N.Z. Country Jour.* vol 5; Cox, *Men of Mark; Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 11 Dec 1880.

DUNCAN, GEORGE (1826-79) was born in Scotland and educated there. He arrived in Otago by the *Mooltan* (1849) and was a progressive and successful farmer and business man. He erected a flourmill at Water of Leith (1859) and brought out modern machinery for it in 1866. He also at that time established a successful brewery in Dunedin

## DUNCAN

Duncan was a member of the town board (1860). He was elected to represent North Harbour in the Provincial Council in 1863 and was a member of the executive in that year. He retired early the following year to visit Scotland. Returning in 1866 Duncan was elected in 1867 to represent the City of Dunedin and he was in the executive in 1867-68, 1869-71 and 1871. Part of the time he was secretary for public works and part provincial treasurer. He was for six years a member of the administration and was the leading spirit in the exploration of the West Coast of Otago.

In 1873 he resigned to live in California, where his death occurred on 13 Jan 1879.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Otago Daily Times*, 12 Jul 1873, 19 Feb 1879.

DUNCAN, JOHN (1848-1924) was born at Dundee, the son of Alexander Scott Duncan (d. 1886), an early settler of Marlborough, who established a sawmill at the Grove (1861), had a sheep run and represented Queen Charlotte Sound in the Provincial Council (1869-70). He introduced the first steam sawmilling plant in Marlborough.

John Duncan came to Australia with his parents in 1851 and to Nelson in 1858, where he completed his education at Nelson College (1863-64). He worked at the Grove for some years, but later established a sash and door factory in Wanganui. Returning to the Grove on his father's retirement, he finished milling the bush and then started sheep farming. Duncan was chairman of the Pelorus road board, the Marlborough land board, the Picton hospital and charitable aid board, the Marlborough Land and Railway League and the Cook memorial committee. He was chairman also of the Marlborough education board and an original governor of the Marlborough College. In 1905 he contested the Wairau seat against C. H. Mills (1905). He was elected in 1908, but defeated by R. McCallum at the following election. Duncan was a fine oarsman and president of the Marlborough Rowing Association. He died on 2 Feb 1924.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Jul 1924; *Marlborough Express*, 4 Feb 1924.

DUNCAN, RICHARD JOHN (1823-94), an early colonist of Wellington, was many years in business as a merchant there, and had land in-

## DUNCAN

terests in Hawkes Bay. A Liberal in politics and an impulsive advocate of the rights of the working class, he sat in the Provincial Council of Wellington for Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay (1856-57), and for Wellington City (1861-65). He was sometime clerk of the Council and was managing director of the New Zealand Steam Navigation Co. Duncan died on 21 Sep 1894.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward.

DUNCAN, THOMAS SMITH (1821-84) was born in Perth, Scotland, the son of the procurator-fiscal. He was educated for law and practised for a short time in Scotland. In 1850 he arrived in Canterbury in the *Randolph* and took up land at Decanter Bay, where he spent five years. His strength being unequal to farming, he began to practise law in Lyttelton, and shortly afterwards moved into Christchurch. For some years J. S. Williams (q.v.) was his partner.

Duncan was a member of the Provincial Council of Canterbury (for Akaroa 1857-59; City of Christchurch 1860-61; Avon 1861-66; Papanui 1866-70). In 1858 he was appointed to the executive as provincial solicitor, a position he held twice (1858-63 and 1866-67). He was then appointed crown prosecutor and held that position until his death on 22 Dec 1884. He was president of the Canterbury Law Society from its formation in 1868. Duncan married Miss Hunter.

Cox, *Men of Mark*; Guthrie Hay; *Lyttelton Times*, 23 Dec 1884.

DUNCAN, THOMAS YOUNG (1836-1914) was born at Plumbridge, county Tyrone, Ireland, educated at the Castledamph national school, and brought up to farming. In 1858 he arrived in Victoria, where he worked on the goldfields successively at Bendigo, Back Creek, Daisy Hill, Lamplow, Charlton and Fieri Creek. With a party of northern English, Welsh and Scots he started a deep claim with an engine. In 1862 the Dunstan rush attracted him to Otago, and after working on the fields for two years without marked success he took up a farm at Pukeuri (1864) where he remained for the rest of his life.

Duncan was a member of the school committee and the first road board, was on the Waitaki county council for nine years from its formation and on the Oamaru harbour board. He was returned to the House of Representatives

## DURIE

for Waitaki in 1881, 1884 and 1887, and thereafter for Oamaru, which he represented till 1911. He was a staunch Liberal and in 1900 became a member of the Seddon ministry (as Minister for Lands and Agriculture). He was not included in the Ward reconstruction in 1906, and retired from the elective house in 1911. In the following year he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 18 Aug 1914). Duncan married a daughter of J. Begg, of Ballater, near Balmoral.

*N.Z.P.D.* (notably 26 Aug 1914); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 19 Aug 1914. Portrait: Parliament House.

DUPPA, GEORGE, was a younger brother of Bryan Duppa of Hollingbourne, Kent, who originally suggested the formation of the Nelson Company, and was descended from Bishop Duppa. He came to New Zealand in 1840 and was a member of the provisional committee in Wellington. Then he settled in Nelson, and brought cattle from Australia for his places at Waimea and upper Motueka. Duppa was one of the most enterprising explorers in New Zealand, with a remarkable eye for country. It was he who advised the McRae's to take up land in Marlborough, and he took up the vast St Leonards run, which he sold to Rhodes and Wilkin.

At the request of Colonel Wakefield he reported on the suitability of Nelson for the second settlement and with Captain Daniell he reported on Canterbury before Captain Thomas was sent down to prepare the way for the settlement. Duppa warmly recommended the Canterbury plains. In 1856 he made an important exploration for a practicable route between Nelson and Canterbury. In 1843 he resided in Wellington, where he had a residence at Oriental Bay. Duppa is said to have been the first man to make a fortune in New Zealand. He returned to England and married (1870) Alice, daughter of P. J. Miles, of Leigh court, Somerset.

*N.Z.C.*, 31; John Wood, *Twelve Months in Wellington, Port Nicholson*, 1843; Acland; Woodhouse; Cox; Ward; Roberts, *Southland*; Arnold; *N.Z. Spectator*, 18 Jun 1856.

DURIE, DAVID STARK (1804-74) was born in England and held a commission as ensign

## DUTHIE

in the Scottish Fusiliers. He served under Sir Charles Shaw at the siege of Oporto in Portugal and was severely wounded while charging the heights of Antas in 1833. He later joined the British Legion for service in Spain (under Sir de Lacy Evans) and was again wounded at the battle of San Sebastian (1836). He gained his company in an infantry regiment commanded by the German Baron Rollenbach and was present at the storming of Irun in 1837. Durie received the order of Ferdinand (1st class).

Owing to his intimacy with other officers of the Legion, notably Colonel Wakefield and Dr Dorset, he joined the New Zealand Company and came to Wellington in the *Adelaide* (which arrived on 7 Mar 1840). Durie was appointed a captain in the Wellington militia in 1845, and served against Rangihaeata in 1846, being stationed afterwards at vVaikanae. In 1851 he was appointed resident magistrate and (sub-collector of customs at Wanganui and commissioner of crown lands for the Wanganui hundred. He retired from his official positions in 1868, and died on 26 Sep 1874.

Grimstone; E. J. Wakefield; Ward; *Wellington Independent*, 11 Jul 1868; *N.Z. Times*, 2 Nov 1868.

DUTHIE, JOHN (1841-1915) was born at Kintore, Aberdeenshire, and educated at the Aberdeen Grammar School. He was apprenticed to the ironmongery trade and travelled for some years for a Sheffield house. In 1863 he came to New Zealand by the *Helvell*'n and, after acting for a short time as traveller for an Auckland firm, he started in business in New Plymouth. Opening a branch in Wanganui two years later, he moved there and built up a good business. In 1879 he established the firm of John Duthie and Co. in Wellington.

Duthie took a prominent part in public affairs. In Wanganui he was chairman of the harbour board. He was a member of the Wellington harbour board (1883-89) and chairman (1887-88); and in 1889 he was mayor of the city. He was president of the chamber of commerce and sometime chairman of directors of the Gear Meat and other companies. He represented the City of Wellington in Parliament (1890-96, 1898-99 and 1903-05). Being defeated in 1905 by C. H. Izard, he did not again contest a seat. In 1913 he was called to the Legis-

## DYER

lative Council by the Massey government, and he remained a member till his death (on 14 Oct 1915). Duthie in his early public life had Liberal leanings, which were evident in the debates on the arbitration and conciliation bill, but in later years he was a staunch Conservative.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 19 May 1916; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Beauchamp*; *Taranaki News*, 9 Dec 1890; *Wanganui Weekly Herald*, 29 Jun 1872.

DUTHIE, JOHN ALEXANDER (1853-1933) was the first white child born in the Tokomairiro district of Otago. He was educated at the Tokomairiro Grammar School, at Nelson College (1863-64) and Otago Boys' High School (1865-66). He entered the service of the Bank of Otago, transferred to the National Bank of New Zealand and at the age of 19 (in partnership with R. W. Capstick) established a land, stock and auctioneering business in Milton. On the dissolution of the partnership (1878) he continued in his own name. In 1917 he leased his premises to the National Mortgage and Agency Co., to which he afterwards sold. Duthie was a member of the Milton borough council for some years and mayor (1883-86 and 1908-10). He assisted to promote and was a director of the Fortification Coal Co., the Bruce Woollen Co. (1896), and the South Otago Freezing Co., and was for 30 years president of the Bruce Property Investment and Building Society. He was president of the Tokomairiro Farmers' Club (1876-77). Duthie died on 5 May 1933.

*Bruce Herald*, 13 Apr 1931, 8 May 1933.

DYER, ROBERT COATES (1834-1912) was born in India, his father being in the service of the H.E.I.C.S., and was educated at Cheltenham College, England. He came to Auckland by the *Joseph Fletcher* in 1853 and farmed for some years in the Mahurangi district. Dyer represented Northern Division in the Provincial Council (1870-73). Later he was teaching under the Auckland education board, at Maungatawhiri (1880), Coromandel (1881), Ponsonby (1883) and head teacher at Cambridge (1889). Retiring in 1901, he was afterwards in charge at Kaitia (1904-06). Dyer died on 1 Aug 1912.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Secretary, Auckland Education Board (information).

## DYER

DYER, WILLIAM JOHN, was in Sydney before coming to New Zealand in 1857, when he opened a store at the Bluff. He lived in Tokomairiro for many years and during that time he was several times mayor of Milton and rep-

## DYER

resented the district in the Otago Provincial Council (1864-66). He contested the parliamentary seat without success.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; ROberts, *Southland*; C)cl. *N.Z.*, iv, 845, 965, 1014.

---

# E

---

EARLE, AUGUSTUS (b. 1798) was an Englishman and was educated as an artist. Imbued from his youth with a love of travel, he persuaded the Admiralty to allow him in 1815 to live in his brother's gunboat on the Mediterranean station. There he witnessed the operations of Lord Exmouth against the Barbary States and afterwards, with the help of the Dey of Algiers, he made many sketches of the ruins of Carthage and other places. It was the middle of 1817 before he returned to England with many beautiful sketches of the Mediterranean.

In Mar 1818 he left for the United States, where he spent two years, then proceeded to South America, practising as an artist with considerable success for six months in Lima and working his way back to Rio in the hope of finding a passage to India. The hoy in which he sailed was driven into Tristan d'Acunha where he had to remain some months before the *Admiral Cockbum* arrived, bound for Van Diemen's Land. Earle sketched with great profit in the Australian colonies and on 30 Oct 1827 landed in Hokianga from the *Governor Macquarie*. He spent six months sketching and studying the manners of the Maori people from his headquarters at Kororareka.

By roundabout routes he found his way to Madras, where also he made sketches for use in Burford's panorama in Leicester square, London. Eventually he reached England again in the trader *Resource*. His journals were published in 1832 as *The Narrative of a Nine Months Residence in New Zealand*. By this time Earle was again at sea as draughtsman in H.M. surveying ship *Beagle*. This brought him again to New Zealand and he made further sketches, some of which were reproduced in

the New Zealand Association's portfolio in 1838.

Earle, *op. cit.* (biographical introduction); Hoc-ken, *Bibliog.*

EARNSHAW, WILLIAM (1852-1931) was born at Manchester, England, and educated there. He displayed considerable ability at school and was apprenticed to an engineering firm with which he was trained as an all-round mechanic. At the age of 21 he went to the United States, where he spent two years. After visiting Australia and New Zealand Earnshaw settled in Christchurch (1878) and was employed at the Addington workshops. In 1881 he removed to Dunedin, where he was engaged as a brassfounder at Anderson and Morrisons.

In 1890 he was elected to the House of Representatives for Peninsula, being one of the first batch of labour members returned to Parliament. He represented that constituency for three years, and the City of Dunedin in the next Parliament, and was defeated in 1896 (under the triple-electorate system). In 1900 he stood for Wellington (unsuccessfully). Earnshaw then lived in Westland, where he was engaged in a beach dredging property at Gillespie's. He was afterwards employed by the Wellington harbour board. In 1913 he was called to the Legislative Council by the Massey government, and he remained a member till his death, on 29 Dec 1931.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Feb 1932; *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Dec 1931; *Taranaki News*, 10 Dec 1890. Portrait: Parliament House.

EARP, GEORGE BUTLER, was in business in Liverpool before coming to New Zealand in the *Martha Ridgway* (1840) to establish branches of the firm of Guyton and Earp in Wellington and Wanganui. He was appointed

to the Legislative Council by Governor Hobson and a magistrate of the territory (1841). He returned to England in 1842 and gave evidence before the select committee on New Zealand in 1844.

G.B.O.P., 1844/556; L.C. of N.Z., 1842; *Wellington Independent*, 11 Jan 1861; *N.Z. Herald*, 2 Mar 1842, 1 Jun 1895.

EAST, ALFRED WILLIAM, an early Taranaki settler, was farming at Barrett road. He was M.H.R. for Omata 1855-60 and member of the Provincial Council for the same constituency 1855-56. He resigned from Parliament on accepting a government appointment in 1860, and for many years was a mail agent between New Zealand, Australia and San Francisco.

ECCLES, ALFRED (1821-1904) was born at Kennington, Surrey, the son of John Henry Eccles, merchant, of Broad street. His parents removing to Plymouth, he spent his early life there, but at the age of 10 was admitted as a pupil at Christ's Hospital, London, whose quaint dress he wore for the next three years and a half. There he developed a desire for the career of medicine, and on leaving school he apprenticed himself for five years to Samuel Millard, M.R.C.S.L., resident proprietor of the Whitchurch asylum for the insane, near Ross, Herefordshire. The five years that Eccles spent in the valley of the Wye and in Devonshire had a profound influence upon his artistic tastes.

Having completed his articles, Eccles entered St Bartholomew's Hospital (1842) and, according to Luther Holden (afterwards president of the Royal College of Surgeons), was 'one of the most distinguished students of his day.' In 1843, he took his degree as member of the Royal College of Surgeons, and in 1844 gained the diploma of licentiate of the Society of Apothecaries. He returned for a short time to Whitchurch, and then practised from chambers in London. By 1848 he had established himself also in practice at Tunbridge Wells. In 1848 he married Alice Elizabeth (d. 1852), daughter of T. S. Withington, of Dulwich. They travelled on the continent, and Eccles did research work in Malta and Egypt. Eccles did further post graduate work at St Bartholomew's and practised in London. He married (1853) Maria, daughter of Sir James Caleb Anderson, of

Fermoy, county Cork. In 1858, Eccles was honoured by election to the fellowship of the Royal College. He had a prosperous practice in London and Tunbridge Wells when he decided (1861) to emigrate to New Zealand. He sailed as surgeon in the ship *Chile* on 31 Aug. Mrs Eccles died at sea.

Eccles was the first fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons in Otago, and he soon had a practice which took him far afield and paid handsomely. In 1864 he was appointed by the provincial government to a commission to recommend measures to improve the sanitation of the city. He acted as secretary to the commission, and next year was appointed a member of the Otago medical board. In less than a year after his arrival Eccles was an accepted leader in the public affairs of Dunedin. He was one of the leading promoters of the building of St Paul's Cathedral, and a chief organiser of the bazaar in 1862 at which a large portion of the money was obtained. The small industrial exhibition, which was a feature of the bazaar, was most popular, and Eccles conceived the idea of an industrial exhibition on a large scale, which would demonstrate the economic progress of the colony. In 1863 a preliminary committee was set up, and by Nov 1864 a fine block of buildings, which had cost the provincial government £18,000, was handed over to the regular commission. Here in Jan 1865, was opened the first New Zealand exhibition. Eccles was honorary secretary and the main driving force of the committee, and when the exhibition closed the committee voted that he be made a special award of a gold medal' as a recognition of his indefatigable labours in originating and furthering the first New Zealand exhibition.' The exhibition building is now the administrative block of the Dunedin hospital.

A lifelong lover of art, Eccles assisted at the initiation of the Otago Fine Arts exhibition (1869). In the same year he was one of the founders and a first vice-president with Arthur Beverly of the Otago Institute.

In 1869 Eccles married Mary (d. 1886), daughter of John Jones and widow of Dr Henry Nelson. Two years later, to give his family an English education, he sailed for the Old Country and settled in Devonshire. Eccles died at Plymouth on 11 Mar 1904.

Hocken; Fulton; *Otago Daily Times*, 29 Aug 1930 (P).

EDGER, SAMUEL (1823-82) was born at Pixton, East Grinstead, Sussex, of devout and pious parents. He graduated B.A. at the University of London and entered the ministry of the Baptist Church, accepting charge of a congregation in Birmingham, and later at Kimbolton (Huntingdonshire) and Abingdon, Berkshire.

As early as 1850 Edger came to the conviction that sectarianism or denominationalism was a sin against the New Testament, and when the Albertland Special Settlement Association invited applications for a minister to accompany their emigrants (1861) he believed it would be an excellent opportunity for putting his convictions into practice. With his wife and family he sailed in the *Matilda Wattenbach* (Sep 1862). On arriving in Albertland, they encountered great difficulties, but, having anticipated farming, Edger had brought with him a party of agriculturists with whose help his farm was soon working on co-operative lines with every prospect of success. There was no church at Port Albert and he held unsectarian services both there and at Te Arai for several years, making provision for Church of England requirements as well as those of the Nonconformists. While in Port Albert he contributed regularly to the *Gazette*.

At the end of 1865, on the retirement of the Rev T. Hamer, Edger went to Auckland to supply his place for eight months. He returned to his post at Port Albert, but losing his house by fire (Aug 1866) he shortly afterwards moved into Auckland and for many years preached there, at first in the Parnell Hall and afterwards in the Oddfellows' hall and other places. Though holding forward views, his style of preaching was rather deep and scholarly for the ordinary church-goer. Edger was a prominent supporter of the temperance movement and had a deep interest in music and art, being a Vice-president of the Auckland Choral society and a committeeman of the Artists' society. He died on 30 Sep 1882.

Two of his works, *The Problem Of Life* (1884) and *Autobiographical Notes and Lectures*, were edited by his daughters, Mrs K. M. Evans (q.v.) and Lilian Edger. A son, HERBERT FRANK EDGER (1854-1909), was a judge of the

native land court and Undersecretary for Native Affairs.

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1932; Edger, *op. cit.* (p); Brett, *Albertlanders* (p); *Auckland Star*, 6 Oct 1882; *Albertland Gazette*; *N.Z. Herald*, 6 Sep 1884, 12, 19 Feb 1887.

EDIE, JOHN (1856-1928) was born in Newcastle, New South Wales, and came to New Zealand with his parents a few years later. He was educated at Lawrence and in 1873 joined the Survey department. He commenced field work in the Catlins river district, where he surveyed the Tawanui bush before the railway was constructed.

In 1885 he became engineer to the Tuapeka county council, a position he held till 1919, when he resigned to contest the Bruce seat against J. Allen. He won the seat the following year at a bye-election, and held it at the following election against A. S. Malcolm. Standing in 1925 as a supporter of the National Party, he was defeated by F. Waite.

Edie farmed for many years in Tuapeka and was interested in a goldmining claim at Island Block. He was a member of the Lawrence borough council and for one term mayor, and was a member of the domain board and an elder of the Presbyterian church. For some years he was captain of the Tuapeka Mounted Rifles. He died on 7 Jun 1928.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 3 Jul 1928; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 Jun 1928. Portrait: Parliament House.

EDWARDS, GEORGE (1798-1865) settled in Wellington about 1845. He was member of the Provincial Council for Wellington City (1856-57). Edwards was a keen horticulturist and contributed to the gardeners' calendar. He died on 10 Nov 1865.

*Wellington Independent*, 11 Nov 1865.

EDWARDS, NATHANIEL (1822-80) was born in England and arrived in New Zealand by the *Slains Castle* in 1845. He was for some time engaged on the government survey staff in the Awatere and also in managing a flaxmill. The failure of the mill threw him on his own resources and he took employment as accountant for Fell and Seymour. In 1857, with George Bennett, he acquired the business. The firm purchased a fleet of small steamers, with which they founded the Anchor line (1862). Edwards

## EDWARDS

sold out to his partners in 1866, but soon re-entered business as general merchants in Christchurch in partnership with Bennett, Aiken and Connell. After four years there he retired with a competence and lived in Nelson.

Edwards took little part in public affairs and had no aspirations in political life. He represented Nelson in the Provincial Council (1868-69, and 1875-76), being a member of the executive in the last few months. He also represented Nelson City in Parliament (1869-70) and two years later was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat until his death (on 15 Jul 1880).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *The Colonist*, 17 Jul 1880; *N.Z. Times*, 13 Aug 1880. Portrait: Parliament House.

EDWARDS, SIR WORLEY BASSETT (1850-1927) was born in London, the son of C. S. W. Edwards. He arrived at Port Chalmers in 1855 and received his education at the Boys' High School, Dunedin, where he gained special prizes for English essays (1864-65). In 1871 he returned to England to complete his education and spent three years travelling in Europe.

In 1874 Edwards was articled to Julius and O'Meagher, Oamaru, and, becoming a barrister in 1875, he joined W. S. Moorhouse in partnership. He practised in Wellington (1877-90), for the first eight years in partnership with Charles W. Cutten. He contested the Wellington South Seat in 1881. In 1890 he was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court and native commissioner, but in 1892 he left the bench, his appointment being declared invalid by a decision of the Privy Council (14 Jul 1892) on the ground that the law provided for only five judges. The government intended to bring down legislation to legalise the appointment, but was defeated and the succeeding government refused to fulfil the promise. He accordingly retired to private practice until 1896, when he was again appointed a judge, and later became president of the Arbitration Court (1898-1900). He was created a knight bachelor in 1919, and retired from the bench as senior judge in 1920.

Edwards married in 1886 Mrs Cutten. He died on 2 Jun 1927. J.H.B.S.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Butterworth's Fortnightly Notes*, 2 Jun 1927; *Evening Post*, 3 Jun 1927; *N.Z. Graphic*, 1 Oct 1892 (p).

## ELIOTT

EDWIN, ROBERT ATHERTON (1840-1911) was born in England. As a midshipman he served in the *Albion* before Sebastopol (1854); in the *Elk* at Canton, and in the Maori war. He joined the civil service in New Zealand in 1871, and in 1874 was appointed weather reporter and examiner of masters and mates. In 1907 he became the first director of the meteorological service. In that position, which he held until his retirement in 1907, he created the nucleus of the weather-forecasting service for the Dominion. Edwin married a daughter of Commissary-general Bridgen.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *N.Z. Times*, 17 Jul 1911.

ELAM, JOHN EDWARD (1823-88) was born at Leeds, England, educated there and qualified M.D. He had already made a competence at his profession when he came to New Zealand in the early sixties. He did not practise here but for 25 years he lived at West Tamaki. On his death (on 25 Jun 1888) Dr Elam left a legacy valued at about £6,500 for the establishment in Auckland of a school of art and design where pupils should be taught free of charge.

*N.Z. Herald*, 29 Jun 1888.

ELIOTT, GEORGE ELIOT (1817-1901) came to New Zealand with his parents in 1840 from Sydney, and in Mar 1841 entered the civil service at Auckland as a clerk in the Colonial Secretary's office. In 1843 he became record clerk and in 1856 chief clerk. In Sep 1862 he was appointed Secretary to the General Post Office at Auckland. In 1863 Elliott was sent to Sydney to recruit volunteers for the military settlements in Auckland, a task which he accomplished with great credit. He moved to Wellington with the Government in 1864 and retired in 1873, going to live in England. In 1876 he returned to New Zealand and lived in Dunedin, where he took a great interest in church affairs (as a lay reader) and in local government (as a member of the Dunedin City Council). Elliott married first in 1841. His first wife having died (1883) he married in 1884 Mrs Levien (Nelson). He died on 17 Sep 1901.

HUNTLY JOHN HARRY ELIOTI, son of the above, was born in Auckland in 1843 and educated there. He joined the Colonial Secretary's department in 1858, became chief clerk in

## ELL

the Public Works department 1870, and in 1877 Under-Secretary for Lands and Immigration. He was Under-Secretary for Mines when he retired (1905). Subsequently he acted on several royal commissions. A son, Gordon Elliott, was M.P. for Oroua (1925-28).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; D. Robertson, *Early Hist. of N.Z. Post Office* (1905); *Otago Daily Times*, 20 Mar 1883, 18 Sep 1901; *N.Z. Herald*, 5, 19 Nov, 17 Dec 1892.

ELL, HENRY GEORGE (1862-1934) was born at Christchurch and educated at the West Christchurch school and a private school. He was a junior attendant at the Canterbury Museum and was then for a year or two on survey work and sheep stations and in wool scouring works. He served for three and a half years in the Armed Constabulary at Parihaka and elsewhere. For four years he was printing and stereotyping; for five years he was in a warehouse in Christchurch and finally with a manufacturing stationer.

Always interested in labour politics, Ell became a member of the Knights of Labour and of the Canterbury Liberal Association, and was three years secretary, and some time president, of the Progressive Liberal Association. The last post he resigned to contest the Christchurch election, for which he was nominated by the Canterbury Women's Institute. He came fifth (with 4,705 votes). At the following election (1909) he was returned as the junior member for Christchurch City (with W. W. Collins and C. Lewis), and in 1902 he was second (with T. E. Taylor and Davey as his colleagues). He represented Christchurch South continuously from 1905-19. He was defeated in 1919 and at the three following elections. Ell was a strong prohibitionist and an advocate of state banking and the referendum with initiative. He was Postmaster-general in the Mackenzie cabinet (1912). After his retirement from Parliament he continued to take an interest in social movements and in beautifying. He was at different times a member of the Spreydon road board, the Addington school committee, the Canterbury College board of governors and the Canterbury Children's Aid Society. He married (1892) Adelaide Eleanor, daughter of Alfred Gee. His death occurred on 27 Jun 1934.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1934; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *The Press and Christchurch Times*, 28 Jun 1934.

## ELLIOTT

ELLES, ANDREW JAMFFISON (1816-86) was the son of a Secession minister at Saltcoats, Scotland. Brought up to the sea, he traded to the West Indies and had his first command at the age of 21.

Elles came to New Zealand as captain of the *Philip Laing* (1848) and subsequently made another voyage in that vessel. He then became owner and captain of the *Pioneer*, which he ran for some time in the coastal and intercolonial trade. In 1862 he married Clementina, daughter of the Rev Dr Burns (q.v.) In 1856 Elles was appointed sub-collector of customs at Invercargill, and he continued to hold that and other posts, including the receivership of land revenue (1858), and the collectorship (1861). He was commissioner of the waste lands board (1861) and resident magistrate for many years until retiring in 1880. He was a member of the Bluff harbour board. Elles died on 4 Sep 1886.

Roberts, *Southland*; Beanie, ii; Hocken, *Otago; Otago Daily Times and Southland Times*, 6 Sep 1886; *Evening Star*, 7 Sep 1886

ELLIOT, PETER (1817-83) was born at Marchamchurch, Cornwall, and came to Taranaki with his wife and family in the *Amelia Thompson* (1841). Taking up land near the town, he was the first to establish a dairy in New Plymouth to supply the town with milk and fresh butter. In 1843 he had a cart drawn by bullocks for farm purposes. A progressive farmer, he soon succeeded in making his land freehold.

Elliott represented Grey and Bell in the Provincial Council (1853-56, 1857-61, 1866-69 and 1873-75) and was a member of the executive for two years (1867-69). During the war in Taranaki he had sole charge of the commissariat transport department, which he administered with great success. He afterwards returned to his farm and eventually retired to live in New Plymouth, where he died on 16 Sep 1883, his wife having predeceased him on 24 Oct 1882.

*Taranaki News*, 22 Oct 1883. Portrait; Taranaki Hist. Call.

ELLIOTT, CHARLES (1811-76) with his brother James (1809-64) came to Nelson in the *Mary Jane* (1841), and in Mar 1842 established the *Nelson Examiner*, which was for many years a very influential paper. He was also interested in land, including the Upcott station, in the

## ELLIOTT

Awatere valley. He represented Wairau in the Nelson Provincial Council (1853-59), Amuri (1860-61) and Nelson (1863-64). He also sat in the Marlborough Council for part of the time (1860-61) as representative of Awatere. Elliott was a member of Parliament (for Waima) from 1855-58. He was appointed immigration officer for Nelson in 1874. While controlling the *Examiner* Elliott published many of the earliest writings of Mrs Mary Muller (q.v.) advocating women's rights, and also a pamphlet on the subject (1869). He was the publisher and editor of the *New Zealand Stud Book*.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v, 33, 411 (p); W. S. Smith; *The Colonist*, 6 Jul 1876, and *Jubilee Souvenir*.

ELLIOTT, JAMES KENNEDY (1845-1929) was born at Belfast and educated at the Belfast Academy and Queen's College (where he graduated B.A.) Ordained in the Presbyterian ministry in 1872, he was in charge of congregations at Randalstown and Magherafelt. He married Margaret (d. 1887), daughter of Robert Dickson; and on account of her health came to New Zealand in 1884 and took charge of St James's Church, Newtown.

With the permission of the Presbytery, Elliott arranged to hold his services in the Lyceum hall, in Tory street, and his Sunday school in the Mount Cook boys' school. He was an eloquent preacher, humorous, broadly tolerant and erudite, and before long his congregation decided upon the erection of the church in Kent terrace. He accordingly resigned St James's in 1886. His personal benevolence was widespread and he served for many years as member and chairman of the Wellington benevolent trustees and of the hospital and charitable aid board. He was moderator of the North Island Assembly of the church in the year before the merger with the south, which he did much to bring about.

On a visit to Ireland in 1912 Elliott had conferred upon him by the Royal College of Belfast the honorary degree of doctor of divinity. He was one of the first governors of Scots College. He died on 5 May 1929.

General Assembly of the Presbyterian Church of N.Z., reports; Dickson (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Dominion*, 6 May 1929 (P).

ELLIS, HENRY (1828-79) was born at Bundoran, county Donegal, Ireland, and arrived in

## ELLiSON

New Zealand from New South Wales in 1850. He was for some years in business (at first with his father) in Shortland street, Auckland, as auctioneers and general merchants, and he erected the Ellis buildings.

Ellis was an eloquent, forceful speaker and a good writer. In 1869 he entered the contest for the Superintendency of Auckland, but retired in favour of Gillies. He represented Auckland East (1870-73) in the Provincial Council and was afterwards for some time an immigration agent for the province, being interested in the promotion of the Katikati settlement. About 1876 Ellis was accepted as a probationer for the Methodist ministry, and he held charges at Waimate, Timaru and Woodend. He died on 17 Jun 1879.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.z.*, ii (P); *N.z. Herald*, 23 Jun 1879.

ELLISON, THOMAS RANGIWAHIA (1866-1904) was born at Otakou, the son of Daniel Ellison, and was descended from leaders of the Ngati-Awa tribe of Taranaki, and from Taiaroa and Hinewhareua, the sister of Karetai. He was educated at the Otakou native school, and at Te Aute College, where he matriculated. He studied law in the office of Brandon and Hislop (Wellington) and, having been admitted to the bar, commenced practice.

Ellison played Rugby football at Te Aute and on moving to Wellington he played for Ponake (from 1885). He represented Wellington province in 23 matches, the first time when he was only 16 years of age. He played against Stoddart's team in 1888, and was a member of the native team to England (1888-89). On this tour he scored 23 tries in matches in the United Kingdom, and 19 in Australia and New Zealand. In 1893 he captained the New Zealand team in Australia, which won nine out of ten matches. During his last few seasons Ellison captained the Wellington representative team. In 1894, owing to an injured knee, he retired. He was one of the finest forwards New Zealand ever produced. It was he who originated the position of wing forward by taking two forwards out of the scrum to protect his half back, who was being roughly handled. Ellison acted as selector for Wellington and New Zealand. He published in 1903 a book on the game, *The Art of Rugby Football*.

## ELMSLIE

Ellison took some interest in politics and three times contested the Southern Maori seat against Parata (1887, 1896 and 1899). He petitioned Parliament in 1901 asking for consideration of the claims of Ngati-Tahu, but without success at the time.

A. F. Wiren and E. P. Ellison (information).

ELMSLIE, JOHN (1831-1907) was born in Aberdeenshire, educated in the parish and at the grammar school and King's College and Aberdeen University, where he graduated M.A. in 1857. He was five years in charge of the Free Church at Kennethmont and in 1867 came to take charge of the Presbyterian Church at Wanganui. In 1876 he received a call to St Paul's, Christchurch, where he remained until failing health prompted his retirement (1903). In 1890 he received the D.D. of his University. He lectured for two years at Canterbury College in connection with the Students' Christian Union and was twice moderator of the General Assembly of the church. Elmslie married first a daughter of George Mitchell (Auchragathel, Aberdeenshire) and second Jean (1854-1936), daughter of John Anderson (Christchurch). He died on 21 Jul 1907 and his widow on 6 Mar 1936.

*Cycl. N.z.*, iii; *The Press*, 22 Jul 1907; 7 Mar 1936.

EMERSON, JOHN (1825-99) was born in Ireland, joined the Royal Irish Constabulary (1847), and was one of a special draft from that force for service in the Crimea. As a subaltern in the commissariat he distinguished himself at Sebastopol, where he was wounded.

Returning to Ireland, he emigrated in 1857 to Australia, his discharge from the force certifying to his good conduct and personal bravery, to six awards for meritorious service and a badge for life-saving. Joining the Victorian police Emerson was for some years engaged in escort duty from the goldfields and in 1864 he came to New Zealand as a mounted constable. In 1865 he was a first-class sergeant in charge at Picton and he received the Humane Society's medal for saving life. In 1868 he was a first-class inspector, and he was afterwards successively in charge of various districts. In 1880 he stopped a serious Maori dispute at Rotorua; in 1891, with 24 men, he disarmed 400 Maori land disputants at Waipiro; in 1892 he assisted

## ENYS

at the arrest of Mahuki and his followers at Te Kuiti; and in the dispute in the Urewera he commanded an armed force at Te Whaiti. He retired while in charge of Napier and East Coast. Emerson died on 3 Apr 1899.

*Hawkes Bay Herald*, 4 Apr 1899.

EMPSON, WALTER (1856-1934) was born in Northamptonshire, a son of the Rev Arthur Empson, vicar of Eydon, and was educated at Charterhouse School. Weak eyesight prevented his taking a commission in the army and he went to Trinity College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A.

In 1877 he came to New Zealand and commenced farming at Rangitata. Shortly afterwards he gave up this occupation and spent some time travelling amongst the Pacific islands; in 1883 he was appointed second master at Wanganui Collegiate School and on the death of the headmaster (Dr Harvey) four years later he was appointed to succeed him. During his headmastership Empson greatly raised the standard of the school. To encourage self-reliance he developed the prefectorial system and appointed pupils as officers of the cadet companies instead of masters. *The Collegian* was also handed over to a committee of the boys, who selected the editor. Empson was the first to introduce in New Zealand the Scottish style of uniform for school boys, grey Hannel shirt and blue shorts. When he retired after 21 years' service as head he had trained over 1,000 boys in the school, and he left a firm tradition for the future by making the boys the judges and masters of their own actions. Empson died on 14 Jun 1934. He married (1885) Agnes Dyke, daughter of J. B. Acland (q.v.).

*Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Dominion*, 16 Jun 1934.

ENYS, JOHN DAVIES GILBERT (1837-1912) was born near Falmouth, Cornwall, where the family lived for many generations. He came to New Zealand in 1861 and took up Castle Hill station, Canterbury. For a short time also he owned Orari Gorge, which he sold back to the Tripps in 1864.

Enys was a keen naturalist and was the earliest authority in New Zealand on moths and butterflies. He represented Rakaia in the Provincial Council (1872-74), and in 1881 he contested the Coleridge seat in Parliament against

## EPALLE

D. Macmillan. Having inherited the family seat of Enys, in Cornwall, in 1890, he went to live there and died in 1912.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Cox; Acland; *Natural Hist. of Canterbury*.

EPALLE, JEAN BAPTISTE (1811-45), a French priest of the Society of Mary at Lyons, came to New Zealand in Jun 1839 in the schooner *Reine de Paix*. To acquire the Maori language he was appointed to Kororareka and the surrounding district. Early in 1840 a mission was established under him at Whangaroa.

In 1843 Bishop Pompallier appointed him pro-vicar to proceed to Rome. While he was in France in the following year the Holy See decided to establish a vicariate of Melanesia and Micronesia and the superior of the Society of Mary nominated Epalle, who pleaded against being selected for the post. Consecrated at Rome, he sailed from London early in 1845 with 13 missionaries. They landed at Isabella island, in the SolomOIs, early in Dec, and Bishop Epalle was murdered by natives four days later (19 Dec 1845).

*Catholic Cye!..* Larousse; Pompallier; *Marist Year Book*, 1927, 172 (p).

ERRINGTON, WILLIAM (1832-94) was born at South Shields, Durham, and served his articles to engineering with Richardson and Co. In 1854 he emigrated to Australia and in the sixties was associated with a large foundry in Ballarat, which built one of the first locomotives (the Lady Barkly) and erected the principal mining plants on the field. About 1871 C. J. Stone and A. Dewar interviewed him regarding machinery for the Big pump at Thames. Errington prepared the plans, supplied the machinery, and came to Thames, where he managed the pump for some years. He was engaged by the Auckland harbour board to design the graving dock and superintend its construction; and he advised the City Council on its water supply and constructed the reservoir at Western Springs. Later he designed and constructed the Calliope dock. Errington died on 16 Dec 1894.

*N.Z. Herald*, 17 Dec 1894.

ESCOTT, JAMES HENRY (1872-1916) was born at Orepuki, Southland, and educated there. Brought up on his father's farm, he moved to the North Island in 1890 and farmed at Wood-

## EVANS

ville from 1896. In the Boer war he served in the 2nd New Zealand Contingent. Escott was a member of the Woodville county council and secretary of the Agricultural and Pastoral association and was a strong supporter of the temperance movement. He represented Pahiatua in Parliament (1911-16) as a supporter of the Reform party and was chairman of the A to L petitions committee. He died on 28 Jul 1916.

*N.Z.P.D.* and *Evening Post*, 28 Jul 1916. Portrait: Parliament House.

EVANS, GEORGE SAMUEL (1800-68) was born at Streatley, Berkshire, the son of the rector, and the eldest of a very large family. (His parentage is not fully established, inasmuch as he was entered at Lincoln's Inn in 1832 as the son of George Evans, of Stepney, gentleman.) Educated at the Merdlant Taylors' School in London, he is said to have proceeded to Cambridge and to have taken high honours there in Sanskrit with a view to practising in India. He had a good knowledge of Latin and Greek. The next record is his appointment as headmaster of Mill Hill School, London (where he is recorded as an M.A. of Glasgow University and as having been ordained a minister in 1827-28). On leaving Mill Hill he entered at Lincoln's Inn (1832). He was called to the bar in 1837 and had a fair practice on the western circuit and at Bristol.

Evans was already interested in the New Zealand Association, and shared with E. G. Wakefield the expense of trying to get an empowering bill passed. He also gave hospitality to Te Aki (jackey), the Maori youth whom Wakefield had befriended, and learned something of Maori from him. When Wakefield went to Canada with Durham Evans took up the running. He was one of the deputation of three that waited on Dandeson Coates, and was told quite bluntly that, however respectable the New Zealand Association might be, the C.M.S. would resist the colonisation of New Zealand on any plan whatever.

Evans was designated as judge for the New Zealand Company's first settlement and he sailed for New Zealand with his family in the *Adelaide*. The voyage was marked by bitter quarrels amongst the cabin passengers, culminating in an unnecessary call at Capetown to enable a series of duels to be fought. The dis-

## EVANS

putants were bound over to keep the peace and the voyage was continued. Evans's part in the trouble was not a promising prelude to his duties as a judge in a new community. When the *Adelaide* arrived at Port Nicholson (7 Mar 1840) the town of Britannia was being laid out by the surveyors near Petone and Colonel Wakefield was absent in the north. It was already clear that the site chosen was not the best, and Evans took the lead in attempting to get the decision altered. Heated meetings of land purchasers were held and it was eventually decided to abandon Britannia and establish the town at Lambton.

Though he was not destined to be a judge, Evans occupied a semi-official commission as advocate for the Company and for the interests of the settlers. Under the provisional constitution, which the settlers agreed to before they left England, Wakefield was president of the councilor committee through which they agreed to govern themselves, and Evans was the 'umpire,' whose function was that of dispensing law. Governor Hobson declared this constitution illegal, but the directors in England had already abandoned it. Nevertheless there was much that Evans was called upon to do for the settlers for which he was specially qualified.

At a public meeting in Wellington on 1 Jul 1840, after British sovereignty was established throughout the North Island, he moved the address of loyalty to the Crown and advocated the claims of Wellington to be the capital. In Aug he was appointed (with Hanson and Moreing) to proceed to Sydney to lay before the Government of the Mother Country the claims of the New Zealand Company and its settlers, which were threatened by the land claims bill then before the Legislative Council. In the following year he led a deputation for a charter of incorporation. At the first court of quarter sessions in Wellington he voluntarily defended a Maori charged with theft. First he pleaded that the treaty of Waitangi, in which he did not believe, reserved to the chiefs the function of judging the offences of their own people. Then he claimed that half of the jury should be natives. In both demands he failed, but he got the native off with a week's imprisonment, whereas a European charged at the same sitting with a similar offence got three months. Evans represented the Company before the

## EVANS

court of land claims, but withdrew owing to the hostility of the crown prosecutor. Later in 1842 he agreed to defend Rangihaeata on a charge of illegally burning buildings at Porirua. The Chief Justice discreetly declined to issue the warrant for his arrest.

When the news arrived of the affray at Wairau (Jun 1843) Evans, who was now on the commission of the peace, proceeded with his fellow magistrates to Cloudy Bay to take the depositions; and after attending public meetings in Port Nicholson proceeded to Auckland to lay before the acting-governor the whole of the circumstances. Evans returned to England shortly after this and spent some years there, writing for the press, doing a little legal work, renewing his acquaintance with Brougham and Dr Black, and demanding the recall of Governor FitzRoy.

In 1852 he again came to New Zealand in the *Stag*, but left a few months later for Victoria, where he was admitted to the bar in 1853 and was just in time to take part in the campaign for representative government. From 1855 to 1858 he edited the *Herald* and in 1856 he was member for Richmond in the first Legislative Council. He was Postmaster-General in the O'Shanassy Government (1856-59) and held the portfolio of Lands when Sir Gavan Duffy retired (Mar 1859). Defeated on seeking re-election with this portfolio, he was elected for Avoca. He was defeated at the election (1861) for Richmond, but was elected for Marlborough and in the third O'Shanassy Government (1861-63) he was again Postmaster-General. At the election in 1864 he failed to gain a seat and applied unsuccessfully for the pension granted to ex-ministers. While in Melbourne Evans contributed much to the press. He came back to New Zealand in ill-health in 1865 and died on 23 Sep 1868. Evans's first wife having died, he married Harriet Strother, widow of D. Riddiford. She died on 31 Mar 1866.

G.B.O.P., 1838/680, 1845/378; *N.Z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1868; N.Z.C.; Ward; Wakefield; WakeHn; Menell; *Wellington Independent*, 24 Sep 1868; *Melbourn Herald*, 12 Oct 1908; *Evening Post*, 16 Jul 1927, 9 Sep 1929 (P).

EVANS, KATE- MILLIGAN (1857-1935) was the daughter of the Rev Samuel Edger (q.v.) and came to New Zealand with her parents to

## EVANS

the Albertland settlement (1862). Taking advantage of facilities offered by the headmaster of the Auckland Boys' College and Grammar School, she graduated B.A. in 1877 (the first woman in the British Empire to take that degree).

Being appointed to the staff of the Girls' High School in Christchurch, she proceeded to her M.A. at Canterbury College (1881), and two years later was appointed first principal of the Nelson Girls' College, which post she resigned shortly after her marriage to the Rev W. A. Evans (1890). She continued to coach students and for a while had a private school in Wellington. She was prominent in the Forward Movement, the Women's Christian Temperance Union (of which she was Dominion recording secretary 1913-28) and the League of Nations Union (some years Dominion secretary). Mrs Evans was also for a while editor of the *White Ribbon*. She died on 11 May 1935. With her sister (Lilian Edger) she edited two volumes of her father's works.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; Brett, *Albertlanders*; (Hight and Candy (p)); *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Aug 1884; *The Dominion*, May 1935 (p), 19 Jul 1938.

EVANS, WILLIAM ALBERT (1857-1921) was the son of James Evans, Llanelly, Wales. Educated at Ammanford Academy, Spring Hill College, Birmingham, and Cardiff University, he was ordained a minister of the Congregational Church and had charge of the Bridge End church, Glamorgan, and afterwards of the Ryan church in Bradford (1887).

While at Cardiff he studied biology and philosophy at the university. For the sake of his health he came to New Zealand in 1888 and was in temporary charge of the Moray Place Church in Dunedin. In 1889 he went to Nelson and there married (1890) Kate Milligan (Mrs Evans, q.v.).

In 1893 Evans relinquished his pulpit and settled in Wellington to carry on religious and philanthropic work under the style of the Forward Movement. The movement included many lectures on the lines of university extension classes in which Stout, A. R. Atkinson and Hogen assisted Evans and his wife. He initiated slum work and at the request of the Wellington charitable aid board inaugurated methods of administration which have since been con-

## EYES

tinued. He advocated the foundation of a university college and when eventually Victoria College was established he was a member of the council (1898-1921) and chairman (1902-03). He was a member of the Wellington City Council, the technical education board and the benevolent trustees. The 'Forward' Movement having achieved its main object, Evans was again appointed to a church in Wellington. He died in 1921.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *The Dominion*, 19 Jul 1938.

EWART, JOHN (1858-1939) was born at Ecclefechan, Dumfriesshire, Scotland, and educated at Annan Academy and Edinburgh University. (M.B., Ch.M., 1880; M.D., 1885.) After holding several hospital appointments he became assistant at Aberdare. In 1887 he came to New Zealand, his family having settled in Nelson in 1885. He was at first superintendent of the Timaru hospital and in 1889 was appointed to the same position at Wellington Hospital, which he controlled until 1909. He then retired and entered into private practice as a surgeon in Wellington. Ewart married (1889) Grace, daughter of Richard Brandon (Kent). He died on 5 Aug 1939.

*Evening Post*, 5 Aug 1939 (p); *The Dominion*, 7 Aug.

EWART, MARY (1840-1930) was born in Ireland, and trained at the Royal Hospital, Belfast, in every branch of the nursing profession. For 11 years she was nurse for St Ann's district in Belfast (1875-86). Resigning on account of ill-health, she came to New Zealand and in 1887 was appointed a charge nurse at Christchurch Hospital where in 1898 she became matron. In 1908 she retired to take up private nursing, and for some years before her death, on 22 Jul 1930, she had been living privately.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *The Press*, 23 Jul 1930; *The Dominion*, 28 Jul 1930.

EYES, WILLIAM HENRY (1819-1907) was born in Liverpool and educated near Knutsford, Cheshire, after which he was in the office in Liverpool of Gladstone and Sergeantson, cotton brokers. He then sailed for Australia in the *Bishop Heber*, arriving early in 1839. In 1841 he made a four months' journey overland with cattle and horses to Melbourne, and then

## EYRE

entered into partnership with Lord in a cattle station near Bateman's Bay.

Shortly afterwards Eyes was induced by his cousin the Rev C. L. Reay to come to Nelson in the schooner *Star of China* (1845). For seven years he managed a station for George Duppa; was then manager of Richmond Brook and was for some years associated with Charles Empson in the Meadowbank station, which did not flourish. Eyes was member of the Provincial Council for Lower Wairau (1860-71). In 1862 he was illegally elected Superintendent and in 1865 he gained that post in due form, holding it for a little more than four years. While Superintendent he moved the seat of government from Picton to Blenheim. Thereafter he was on the executive from 1871 to 1873. Six years before the provinces were abolished he passed a resolution in the Council calling for their overthrow. Defeating Weld in a parliamentary election, Eyes was M.H.R. for Wairau (1861-71), resigning to become commissioner of lands for the province, a post which he held for two years. He was at different times resident magistrate, coroner, sheriff, receiver of land revenue and returning officer. He died on 12 Apr 1907.

*Marlborough P.C. Minutes and Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Marlborough Express*, 13 Apr 1907.

EYRE, EDWARD JOHN (1815-1901) was born at Hornsea, Yorkshire, the third son of the Rev A. W. Eyre and his wife Sarah, daughter of Dr Mapleton, of Bath. Educated at Thorp Arch, at Grantham, at Louth and at Sedbergh, Eyre was fond of handicrafts and fishing. He was disappointed in his hope of obtaining a commission in the army and consequently sailed for Australia at the age of 17 with £400 capital.

After obtaining a little experience as cadet on a station on the Hunter river, dealing and farming on his own account, Eyre conceived the idea of driving sheep overland, first to Port Philip and then to South Australia. His first drive of 1,000 sheep and 600 cattle to Adelaide by way of the Murray river (1836) was hailed with delight in the latter colony. Early in 1838 he left the Port Philip settlement for Adelaide in the hope of discovering a shorter route than that by the Murray river. From Mitchell's farthest point he followed the Wimmera in a north-west direction until it was

## EYRE

lost in a swampy lake, to which he gave the name of Hindmarsh. Leaving the cattle, he went with two men in search of the Murray, but the loss of his horses compelled him to fall back on Hawdon's route by the Murray river. (See J. HAWDON.)

His next journey, northward from Adelaide (1839), took him as far as Mount Arden, within sight of lake Torrens. In Aug 1839 Eyre started again westward from Port Lincoln with four men and two natives. With his company reduced to one black boy he penetrated as far as the border of South Australia. Then he journeyed east from the depot at Streaky bay to the head of Spencer's Gulf. Reaching Arden and lake Torrens again, he retraced his steps. Convinced by these attempts that it was impracticable to take stock round the Bight, he then recommended exploring to the northward, and raised two-thirds of the funds by public subscription. Going by sea to West Australia, he drove stock overland from Albany to Perth early in 1840. Returning to Adelaide, he started again on 18 Jun and proceeded to mount Arden, hoping that the Flinders range would form a stepping stone into the interior. The limits of his two abortive attempts in this direction he distinguished by the names Mt Deception and Mt Hopeless. Finding his progress barred by a lake, he abandoned his northern search and sent the overseer to form a base at Streaky bay, whither he proceeded by sea. After advancing with one black boy round the Bight until grass and water failed, he tried again with the dray, lost three horses and returned to Fowler's bay.

While the cutter was going back for supplies, Eyre made another effort to advance on horseback, but returned to the bay on 20 Jan 1841. Then he formed the resolve (described by Favenc as 'foolish and inexcusable') to go on alone. On 31 Jan, with the overseer and three native boys, he started on a journey of 800 miles across the desert. After six days without water the horses knocked up. Eyre persisted, but the natives became discouraged, and when still 600 miles from the goal two of them shot the overseer and went off with guns, bread and water. Almost at the end of his resources, Eyre found the ship *Mississippi* at anchor in Thistle Cove (2 Jun). For 10 days he recuperated his strength prior to renewing the effort. Finally

## EYRE

he reached King George's Sound on 7 Jul, and was back in Adelaide on the 26th.

Eyre was then appointed resident magistrate on the Murray and protector of aborigines, a post he held until 1844. In 1843 he received the founder's medal of the Royal Geographical Society in recognition of his explorations. Undismayed by his previous sufferings or by the criticism to which he was subjected, he offered twice in 1844 to lead an expedition from Moreton Bay (Queensland) to the new settlement at Port Essington (on the north coast), but Governor Gipps considered that Mitchell had a prior claim. Accordingly Eyre accompanied Sturt on the early part of his expedition from the Murray to lake Victoria (1844). Eyre was distinguished for his humanity towards the blacks and his advocacy of their rights against an overbearing white population. It was in this connection that he came in contact with the Governor (George Grey, q.v.), whose good opinion he gained both by his intrepidity as an explorer and by his kind and judicious treatment of the natives.

Eyre returned to England in 1845, taking with him two blacks (with whom he was introduced to Queen Victoria). He now published the journals of his expeditions. The Colonial Office appreciated his services, and in 1846 Earl Grey appointed him to be one of the Lieutenant-governors in New Zealand under the new constitution, Grey being the Governor-in-chief. Eyre arrived in Auckland by the ship *Pestonjee Bomanjee* (10 Jul 1847) and conferred there with Grey, but did not take his oath of office. He arrived at Wellington, in his own province of New Munster, on 7 Aug, and forthwith proceeded to inspect the Wairarapa, which was just being brought into occupation. He took the oaths on 28 Jan 1848.

Evidence was soon forthcoming of a coolness between Grey and his lieutenant. It may have originated in a despatch which Eyre sent to the Colonial Office without reference to his superior. The difference was obvious when Eyre opposed Grey's provincial councils bill in the Legislative Council. Thereafter Grey would not allow him to exercise any real authority and lost no opportunity of belittling him in public. His action in residing in Wellington for eighteen months and thus rendering Eyre's commission dormant placed his subordinate in an absurd

## EYRE

and intolerable position. They were temperaments which could not work well together. Grey was autocratic and overbearing. Eyre was impulsive, fussy and obstinate, and much too fond of writing. He was keenly interested in education and religion for the colonists and in the welfare of the natives. As occasion arose he did not fail to display his energy in action. When Wellington was shaken by a severe earthquake in 1848 he took prompt and effective steps to cope with the emergency, turning Government House into relief barracks for the injured and homeless and taking steps to prevent people from leaving the settlement.

In the purchase of native lands in the South Island he was energetic and judicious. He made many little explorations, including a hazardous ascent of the South Island peak Tapuae-nuku (9,460 ft). Although one of the Maori guides met his death by losing his footing on the frozen slopes Eyre claimed to have reached the summit himself. After this mishap the natives refused to accompany him on his proposed journey to Canterbury. On 3 Apr 1850 Eyre was married at Auckland to Adelaide Fanny, daughter of Captain Ormond, R.N., and sister of J. D. Ormond (q.v.).

On the inauguration of the New Zealand constitution early in 1853 Eyre relinquished his post, and sailed from Wellington with his family (22 Apr), revisiting the Australian colonies on his way to England. After a year's leave he was appointed to the governorship of St Vincent, which he administered satisfactorily (1854-60). He was also for part of a year acting Governor-in-chief of the Leeward islands. He then returned to England and in 1862 was appointed by Newcastle as acting-governor of Jamaica. Darling, the Governor, did not return, and in 1864 Eyre was confirmed in the post.

Jamaica was suffering from severe economic depression due to the civil war in the United States. In spite of his sympathetic disposition towards native races, Eyre was soon at loggerheads with the native members of his Legislative Council. One of these, George William Gordon, a man of education and standing, was accused of complicity in a riot which broke out at Morant Bay on 11 Oct 1865 and became so serious as to call for the proclamation of martial law. The suppression of the rising was marked by excesses of a ferocious character.

## EYRE

Commissioners sent out to investigate found that while Eyre had shown praiseworthy skill, promptitude and vigour in suppressing the revolt, yet he had condoned acts of punishment and vengeance against persons (including Gordon) who were not even proved to be guilty. Some blacks were hanged without trial or even accusation and many dwellings were burned. Altogether 354 persons were executed by order of courts-martial; 50 were hanged or shot without trial, 25 were shot by Maroons assisting the Government forces, and 600 were flogged. The infliction of the death penalty was unnecessarily frequent; the floggings reckless and barbarous, the burnings wanton and cruel. Public opinion in England was shocked at the disclosures. John Stuart Mill, Huxley and Spencer associated themselves with a public demand that Eyre be brought to trial. Carlyle, Ruskin and Tennyson sided with the Jamaica committee in his defence. Eyre was recalled and succeeded by Sir Henry Storks, who had been chairman of the commission of inquiry. Together with General Nelson and other officers who had been associated with the courts-martial, he was brought to England for trial. The grand jury threw out the bills, but prosecutions from various sources did not cease until 1869.

Eyre went into a dignified retirement, and

## EYRE

in 1872 Parliament paid the expenses he had incurred in his defence. In 1874 he received a pension, upon which he lived uneventfully until 30 Nov 1901, when his death occurred at Walreddon Manor, Tavistock.

Eyre was ambitious and full of energy, but his abilities were not of a high order. He had courage to the extent of rashness, but was lacking in judgment and obstinately pushed forward to a goal when the fruits of success were not worthy of the effort expended. Lord Olivier remarks, with some grounds: 'The trouble with Eyre was that he was a morose introvert, self-centred, headstrong, unteachable; whose injustices and misdeeds might be absolved on a contrite plea of invincible ignorance, but could not possibly be condoned administratively by any statesman responsible for the proper staffing of a system of colonial government. His tragedy is that of Ajax mad, blindly slaughtering cattle and sheep in the conviction that they were malignant enemies.'

G.B.O.P.; *New Munster Gaz.*; *N.Z. Gaz.*; Sinclair papers; *D.N.B.*; Buick, *Marlborough*; Eyre, *op. cit.*; Davis; Thomson; Godley, *Letters*; Favenc; Grey, *Journals*; Rusden; Saunders; Olivier (p); Gisborne; Wakelin; Hume (p); Mathieson, *The Sugar Colonies and Governor Eyre*; Sir Henry Taylor, *Autobiography*, vol. ii, chapter xix; *N.Z. Herald*, 7 Nov 1931; *Evening Post*, 8 Sep 1934 (p).

---

---

# F

---

---

FAGAN, STEPHEN (1816-95) was a shoemaker by trade and a passenger to Port Nicholson by the *Katherine Stewart Forbes* in 1841. He lived for some years at the Hutt and was a member of the Provincial Council for that constituency (1865-73). He was treasurer of the Hutt Special Settlement Association in 1868.

Fagan afterwards moved to Bulls, where he was in business as a bookseller. He was the first chairman of the town board and was a Wesleyan local preacher. He died on 21 Oct 1895.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; J. G. Wilson; *Rangitikei Advocate*, 8 Jan 1893, 22 Oct 1895.

FAIRBURN, EDWIN (1827-1911) was born at Paihia, Bay of Islands, a son of W. T. Fairburn, of the Church Missionary Society. Educated at the mission school at Waimate, he entered the deeds registry office in Auckland. From this he transferred in 1847 to the Survey department, being its first cadet under C. W. Ligar. As a youth he went to Germany to complete his education, studying the language and engineering. He also spent some time in the deeds registry office in Sydney, and published a pamphlet on land registration in which he adumbrated some of the features of the Torrens and the New Zealand land transfer systems.

In later years Fairburn was engaged in laying out the town of Oamaru and was employed under Heale in the triangulation of lower Waikato. Having measured the baseline at Ngaruahia with the old-fashioned standard chain, he adopted for the first time in New Zealand the continuous steel band, the use of which he urged upon both Heale and Percy Smith. In 1877 he was transferred to the new Surveyor-General's department and became a district sur-

veyor in north Auckland. There he practically introduced the system of graded roads and in a few years replaced the old bullock dray tracks by a graded highway of 200 miles stretching to Mangonui.

Fairburn retired from the service in 1892 and died on 9 Dec 1911. He was a fine Maori scholar and published some papers on the language in the *Transactions* of the New Zealand Institute. Incidentally he studied shipbuilding and introduced some original ideas into his novel *The Ships of Tarshish*. He wrote also on the preservation of the mammoth in Siberia and an astronomical explanation of the Hood in *Genesis*. He was a foundation member of the Auckland Choral society and the first secretary of the original Agricultural association (of which he was a life member).

*N.Z. Surveyor*, Dec 1911.

FAIRCHILD, JOHN (1835-98) was born near Plymouth, England, and brought up with his parents on a small farm in Prince Edward island, Canada. He left home in his teens and engaged in fur trapping, went to sea as a carpenter and, leaving the *Joseph Hensley* at Liverpool (1858) took his passage to Australia in the *Florence Nightingale*. For some time, with a mate, he made handcart wheels to meet a demand created by the goldfields. As carpenter in a brig from Sydney he was wrecked near Manukau. He then engaged in the coastal service and in 1861 purchased the cutter *Thistle*, which he ran between Onehunga and Kawhia. He afterwards commanded the cutter *Abeona* in the same trade. Fairchild piloted warships operating on the coast during the Waikato war including the transport *Prince Alfred*, which was urgently needed with reinforcements. In 1864 he joined the Government service as cap-

## FAIRCLOUGH

tain of the *Sturt*, and he afterwards commanded the *Luna*, the *Hinemoa* and the *Tutanekai*. He died on 4 Jul 1898.

Cowan; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Gisborne (p); *Evening Post*, 26 Dec 1936, 2 Jan 1937 (p).

FAIRCLOUGH, PAUL WYNYARD (1852-1917) was born in South Australia. He came to the West Coast of the South Island at the time of the gold rush. At Staffordtown he became a Methodist local preacher and in 1871 was accepted as a candidate for the ministry. He studied under the Rev A. R. Fitchett and subsequently under Principal J. H. Fletcher at Newington College, Sydney.

Fairclough began his ministry at Timaru in 1874. He was a deep thinker and a courageous expositor of truth, a student who did not allow the claims of scholarship to transform him into a recluse, but whose brotherliness was as marked as his intellectual brilliance. For many years he contributed astronomical notes to the daily press and he was elected a fellow of the Royal Astronomical Society. A public lecture on Halley's Comet led to the formation of the Astronomical Society of Dunedin, of which he was a vice-president. For six years he rendered distinguished service as editor of his church paper. In 1902 he published a pamphlet *The Early History of Missions in Otago*.

In 1897 Fairclough was elected president of the conference and on several occasions he represented New Zealand in the general conference of Australasia. He frequently served as chairman of synods and filled many other positions. He was a chaplain to the forces and an ardent imperialist. He took a prominent part in the agitation for women's franchise and for temperance reform. He died on 17 Apr 1917.

M.A.R.P.

FALCONER, JOHN (1834-86) was born in Edinburgh, educated there and trained as a gardener. Before coming to New Zealand (1858) he had been head gardener at Lauriston Castle. He first settled in the Taieri as a farmer, but soon moved to Nelson, where he practised his own calling. He came to Oamaru in 1861 and had a prosperous career, making a comfortable living and taking his part in the public affairs of the young town. He was a member of the municipal council in 1871 and contested the mayoralty against W. J. Steward. In 1883

## FANTHAM

he was elected to the borough council and in 1884 he became mayor, a member of the harbour board, a governor of the Waitaki High school and chairman of the charitable aid board. He was a founder of the Presbyterian Church in Oamaru and for many years superintendent of the Sunday school. Falconer was keenly interested in the Horticultural society and in the North Otago Agricultural and Pastoral association, of which he was president in 1885 and afterwards treasurer. He died on 11 Sep 1886.

*North Otago Times*, 13 Sep 1886.

FANNIN, GEORGE THOMAS (1830-1908) was the son of William Fannin, of county Westmeath, Ireland, and was educated in England and at Trinity College, Ireland. Coming to New Zealand with his parents in the *William Scott* (1853), they landed in Nelson but left shortly afterwards for Hawkes Bay and settled on a run in the Ruataniwha plain.

In 1858 Fannin was appointed clerk to the Provincial Council, and he retained that position until the abolition. During the Maori wars he was secretary to McLean and Ormond when they represented the General Government on the East Coast. After the abolition Fannin was clerk to the Hawkes Bay county council and secretary to the education board until his retirement in 1906. He died on 3 Dec 1908.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 3 Dec 1908.

FANTHAM, ARTHUR ALBERT (1842-1904) was a native of Buckinghamshire and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Duke of Portland* (1852). They settled in Canterbury and the son was educated at the Boys High School and the Commercial School. He became a farmer, having a property near Christchurch on which he established his pedigree herd of shorthorn cattle.

In 1877 Fantham moved to Cambridge. There he took a leading part, as a member of the South Auckland cattle board, in devising and enforcing measures to combat pleuro-pneumonia. In 1880 he received a presentation in Auckland in recognition of his public spirit and disinterestedness. In 1882 he removed to Hawera, where later he was manager of the Egmont Farmers' Union. In Canterbury he was a member of the Spreydon road board and

FARJEON

at Cambridge he" was on several road boards and the cattle board. He was chairman of the Hawera road board and later of the county council.

Fantham married a daughter of John McWilliam (Canterbury). His death occurred on 16 Jan 1904.

*eye!* N.z., vi (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Nov 1880; *Taranaki Herald*, Jan 1904.

FARJEON, BENJAMIN LEOPOLD (1838-1903) was of Jewish parents, and was born in the East End of London in 1838. Brought up humbly in Whitechapel, he was first employed at the age of 13 as devil in the *Nonconformist* newspaper office, where he spent more than three years. At 13 he wrote verse. He had a passion for books, and studied at a night school.

At the age of 16 Farjeon differed with his father on religion and, assisted by an uncle, he sailed for Victoria in the *Ocean Wave* (1854). On the voyage he produced two handwritten copies of *The Ocean Record* and, being transferred to the cabin on the invitation of the captain, he published twelve more issues before the end of the voyage. Mter a few weeks in various employments in Melbourne, Farjeon found his way to the goldfields, where he spent several years, starting newspapers here and there, each of which contained his feature 'Salmagundi on the Goldfields: His experiences are recounted in some of his novels.

In 1861 he sailed for Otago (acting as correspondent of the *Melbourne Argus*) and he soon joined the staff of the *Otago Daily Times*, acting as manager and sub-editor under the editorship of the proprietor, Vogel (q.v.). In Dunedin Farjeon made the acquaintance of many artists who were attracted to the province by the goldfields. These included Joseph Jeffer-son, who arrived in 1864, and whose daughter Margaret he married in Jun 1877. In Nov 1864 he became a partner with Vogel in the ownership of the paper, following on the retirement of Cutten. At Christmas 1865 Farjeon published his first novel, *Shadows on the Snow* (which he dedicated to Charles Dickens and sent to him in the hope that he would reprint it in *All the Year Round*). In 1866 he published *Grif*, also from the office of his paper, and sent proofs to the same master. Dickens replied in May 1866 with a criticism which,

FARMER

while not flattering, at any rate induced Farjeon to put into effect his resolve of going to live in London. He accordingly retired from the management of the *Times*, and in Dec 1867 left the Colony. In London Farjeon lived a cheerful Bohemian life, meeting everybody and being seen" everywhere. He met Dickens in 1870, the year in which *Grif* was published. This was his greatest success, the sales totalling 300,000. *Blade o' Grass* followed in 1871 and its sequel, *Golden Grain*, ten years later, followed by *Joshua Marvel*, *London's Heart*, *Great Porter Square* (which was the Prince of Wales's favourite), *Set in a Silver Sea*, *The Sacl'ed Nugget*, *Bread and Cheese and Kisses*, *The King of Noland*, *Something Occurred*, *Aaron the Jew*, *A Secret Inheritance*, *The House of White Shadows*, *The Betrayal Of John FOL'dham*, *Miriam Rozella* (contributed to the *Daily Mail*), *The Mesmerists*, and *The Mystery of the Royal Mail*.

Farjeon had a strong dramatic interest. In Dunedin he assisted Vogel in the dramatisation of *Lady Audley's Secret* (1863), and he had half a dozen of his own plays produced (including *Grit*). He was one of the founders of the Garrick Club in Dunedin, and he wrote the prologue for its first production, *Money*, in which he himself took a part. He adopted the additional name 'Leopold' when he became an author.

Farjeon died on 23 Jul 1903. A daughter, Eleanor Farjeon, is the author of many works of fiction and an autobiographical work, *A Nursery in the Nineties* (1935).

Eleanor Farjeon, *op. cit.* (p) and personal information;" Paul; *Otago Witness*, *pass.* (notably 24 Nov 1866); *Otago Gazette*, Nov 1864.

FARMER, JAMES (1823-95) was born in Fifeshire, Scotland.. He arrived in Auckland by the *Louisa Campbell* in 1847, and became interested in land and commercial undertakings. He managed the One Tree Hill estate, near Onehunga, for the firm of Brown, Campbell and Co., but being a large shareholder in the Caledonian mine at Thames, he devoted his attention to mining and made a competence, on which he returned to live in England. Farmer stood for tile Provincial Council for the Pensioner Settlements in 1855, and for the parliamentary seat, but was defeated for both. In

FARNALL

1859 he was elected to Parliament for Marsden. Standing for Onehunga at the next election, he was defeated, but in 1867 he was returned for Raglan, which he represented till 1870. He was then called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat for three years before returning to England. He was elected to the Provincial Council for Franklin in 1861, and represented it till 1863. He later sat in the Council for Raglan (1867-69) and for Auckland West (1871-72). Farmer visited New Zealand again in the nineties. He died in 1895.

*N.z.P.D.*; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

FARNALL HARRY WARNER (1839-91) was born at Bath, England. Arriving in New Zealand in 1861, he took up land at Whangaparaoa, north AUckland. In 1868 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Northern Division, which he represented in 1868-69 and 1871-72. He sat for the same constituency in Parliament 1869-70 and for Rodney 1871-72.

Farnall resigned, to proceed to England as immigration agent. Featherston, as Agent-general, declined to recognise the appointment and Farnall proceeded to North Ireland on behalf of the Auckland provincial government. There he got into touch with G. Vesey Stewart and, "supported by the Superintendent (Williamson), negotiated the Kati Kati settlement and returned to New Zealand with the settlers in the *Carisbrooke Castle* (1875). Thereafter he identified himself with working-class politics, being secretary of trades unions and of the Trades and Labour Council for a period of more than 10 years. He had considerable literary attainments and wrote a pampWet, *The Industrial Depression in New Zealand; its Cause and its only CUL'e* (1890) and also conducted a paper, *The Watchman*, to advocate the cause of the masses.

Farnall established in Auckland the Knights of Labour (of which he was recording secretary). He contested the Waitemata and City seats several times as a Liberal. In 1887 he was prominent in the Radical Reform League. He lectured on Anglo-Israelism. His death occurred on 5 Jun 1891.

Gray; *N.Z. Herald*, 15 Nov 1890, 19 Jun 1891; *Auckland Star*, 6 Jun 1891. Portrait: Parliament House.

FEARON

FARR, SAMUEL COLERIDGE (1827-1918) was born at Baldock, Hertfordshire, and trained as an architect. He came to New Zealand in 1850 in the *Monarch*. His marriage to Miss Pavitt, a fellow passenger, was the first celebrated in Christchurch.

Farr's first occupation was the adjustment of Haylock's flourmill at Grehan valley, Maroa, the wheels 'of which had been incorrectly geared. He then (with Pavitt) erected several sawmills in different parts of the Peninsula. In 1862 he moved to Christchurch, where he designed many public buildings and churches, including St Paul's and the Presbyterian places of worship at Papanui, Lyttelton, Kaiapoi and Leeston. He was secretary for 22 years of the Canterbury Acclimatisation society and assisted to stock the rivers of the province with fish and to acclimatise the bumble bee. Farr opened a Sunday school at Akaroa immediately after his arrival, and established in Christchurch the first Sunday school union, of which he was president for seven years. He died in July 1918.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Cant. O.N.*; *The Press*, 16 Dec 1909.

FEARON, EDWARD (1814-69) was born at Bath, England. As a youth he ran from school to sea and eventually rose to command ships trading to North and South America, Cape Colony and Australia. He married (1840) Elizabeth Ward (Devonshire) and proceeded at once to take command of the *City of Edinburgh*, sailing from Gravesend to Australia. She was wrecked in Bass Strait (10 Jul) and, after living on Flinders island for a while, they got to Sydney and returned to England in the *John Renwick*.

Touching at Bay of Islands they decided to settle in New Zealand, for which they sailed later in the *Thomas Sparks*. Once more they suffered shipwreck (near Capetown) and lost all their belongings, but continuing their voyage they reached Nelson before the end of the year. Fearon took up land at Motueka, and represented Motueka and Massacre Bay in the Provincial Council (1855-57). The first carriage in Motueka was his wagonette, built for the 1851 Exhibition and still in good repair. Fearon was a strong supporter of the Church of England, a member of the diocesan synod and of the general synod (1859). He died on 21 Nov

## FEATHERSTON

1869. (See J. C. CHAYTOR and RICHMOND HURSTHOUSE.)

Family information Miss B. E. Chaytor; *Nelson P.C. Pmc.*; *Nelson Examiner*, 24, 27 Nov 1869. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

FEATHERSTON, ISAAC EARL (1813-76) was born at Newcastle-on-Tyne on 21 Mar 1813, the fourth son of Thomas Featherston, of Blackdean, Weardale, and of Cotfield House, county Durham. Delicate in health from infancy, he went to a private school in Tamworth and then to Italy, partly for his education, but mainly for his health. Returning to Edinburgh, he graduated M.D. in 1836. Three years later he married Bethia Campbell (who died on 16 Mar 1864), daughter of A. Scott (Edinburgh).

Still anxious about his health, Featherston decided to emigrate to New Zealand. He applied for a surgeoncy in the New Zealand Company's ships, and in Dec 1840, sailed for Wellington as surgeon-superintendent of the *Olympus* on her first voyage. Though he entered at once upon the practise of his profession, Featherston was not to remain long outside the vortex of public affairs. He does not appear to have taken any position in the community until the demand for self-government crystallised in the formation of the Settlers' Constitutional Association. He was not in any of the abortive Legislative Councils or the town board. Jerningham Wakefield, writing in 1844, does not mention him, and he is rarely mentioned in the press of the decade 1840-50. But he was himself contributing to the press, and on the formation of the Constitutional Association he at once took a leading position publicly. In 1851 he was presented with a service of plate by the Company's land purchasers for the part he took in getting their claims considered by the Government.

When the new constitution came into force (1853) Featherston was elected Superintendent without opposition. The story of his Superintendency is that of Wellington province from 1853 to 1871, and is embodied in the records - at times dignified and more often stormy - of the Provincial Council. Jerningham Wakefield (q.v.) led the opposition in an embittered political struggle, culminating in a series of constitutional crises. Featherston was four times

## FEATHERSTON

elected Superintendent. He was a member of Parliament continuously from 1853 to 1870. He first represented Wanganui and Rangitikei (1853-55), and was returned with Clifford and Fitzherbert in 1855 for Wellington City, which he represented until retiring at the end of 1870. Each time he was at the head of the poll.

A fine testimonial to Featherston's constructive work and his whole-souled devotion to the interests of the province is embodied in Fitzherbert's panegyric at the abolition of the province. Nor was Featherston allowed to restrict his services to his own province even if he had wished to do so. In the interests of the province he went to Australia and concluded a mail steamer agreement by which New Zealand and Australia became linked with England through Panama. A few years later (1869) he was sent to Australia on behalf of the General Government to persuade General Chute to assume the responsibility of keeping the Imperial troops in New Zealand until further reference to the British Government. Then he was sent to England (with Sir Francis Bell) to urge the retention of the troops in the Colony. In that they failed, but they succeeded in persuading the British Government to guarantee a loan of one million for roading native districts as a measure of security against further wars.

When the Hauhau rising was at its worst Featherston put Wellington under a heavy debt to him. Though never robust in health and often suffering intensely, he took the field repeatedly with the troops. The Native levies refused to move without him. By his great influence over them and his unwavering personal courage he inspired the soldiers of both races in the most depressing hours. While he was meeting the Hauhau partisans in the Wairarapa alone and singlehanded, and daring them to open hostilities, he sent a mailman to Wellington to bring up arms for the local volunteers. When Chute was preparing for his march to New Plymouth behind the mountain, the Native friendlies refused to go until Featherston, who was scarcely able to sit his horse, cheerfully undertook the arduous adventure. Of this service General Chute wrote in a dispatch: 'I now consider it my imperative duty to recommend this officer in the highest terms for the distinctive decoration of the New Zealand Cross, in recognition of his meritorious and

## FEATHERSTON

intrepid services during the period referred to, and more particularly at the storming and capture of that formidable pa, Otapawa, where Dr Featherston so exposed himself in the service of the Queen and country as to become, as it were, a target for the enemy's fire, thus by his noble example stimulating and encouraging the Native allies.'

Though Featherston coveted the New Zealand Cross (which was eventually awarded to him), he declined a knighthood, and always refrained from accepting cabinet office. He did on one occasion (Jul-Aug 1861) join Fox for a few weeks to meet an emergency, and again he was in the executive without portfolio in Fox's last ministry (1869-71). He was M.H.R. for Wanganui and Rangitikei (1853-55), and for City of Wellington (1855-70).

Featherston had no sooner returned from his mission to England in 1871 than he was offered the post of Agent-general, which he accepted, to the general regret of the people of Wellington. He died in London on 21 Jun 1876. His services were inadequately commemorated by a vote of £3,000 granted to his family and the naming of a street in Wellington and a small town in the Wairarapa. Several institutions, such as the Savings Bank and the Mechanics' Institute, owed their beginnings to him. He saw his beloved provincial institutions doomed, but was spared by a few months witnessing their final extinction. Gisborne says: 'Like most men with strong wills, he was naturally autocratic, but he had sense enough to see that in a democratic country he must have, public opinion on his side. Accordingly, he was despotic through, and not in spite of, the people. But he was no vulgar demagogue. He was a refined and highly educated gentleman, somewhat reserved in his general manner, and not at all given to hunting for popularity. His influence over men was almost magnetic, and his party was ever faithful and devoted. Another characteristic feature about him was his thorough unselfishness, in the lower sense of the term; there was nothing mean or mercenary about him. He was fond of power, but his sole aim was to use it for what he thought was the public good; and in that cause the object of his life was to spend and be spent.'

*N.Z.P.D., pass.*; *Wellington P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; Saunders (p); Gorton; Carter; Ward (p); Cowan,

## FELDWICK

ii; Whitmore; Gisborne (p); Rusden; Gudgeon (p); Wakelin; *Wellington Almanac*, 1877 (P); *Independent*, 13 Mar 1866; *Otago Daily Times*, 31 Jul 1876; *N.Z. Times*, 27 Jun 1876 (p), 21 Sep 1876; *Evening Post*, 27 Aug 1929 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

FEDARB, JAMES WILLIAMSON (1817-90) was born in Kent. He arrived in north Auckland before 1840 and was connected for many years with mission work amongst the Maori. He secured some signatures of chiefs to the treaty of Waitangi. Fedarb was an excellent Maori scholar. He died on 17 Sep 1890.

*N.Z. Herald*, 18 Sep 1890.

FEILDING, WILLIAM HENRY ADELBERT (1836-95) was the son of the 7th Earl of Denbigh. Entering the army in 1852, he became lieutenant-colonel in 1860 and was assistant adjutant-general in Dublin (1864-69). After seeing service in the Franco-Prussian war as *attache* at French headquarters (1870-71), Feilding visited Australia and New Zealand on behalf of the Colonists' Land and Loan Corporation to select 100,000 acres of land on which to settle colonists. He chose the Manchester block in Rangitikei, which was named after the chairman, the Duke of Manchester. The town was called Feilding after himself. The agreement was to settle 2,000 immigrants by 1877. Feilding commanded the 1st battalion Coldstream Guards (1874-77) and was promoted lieutenant-general in 1893. He visited Australia and New Zealand in 1894 and died at Bangkok, Siam, on 24 Mar 1895.

Burke; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *The Times* (London), 26 Mar 1895.

FELDWICK, HENRY (1844-1908) was born at Norwood, Surrey, and in 1858 came to New Zealand with his father, for whom he worked for some years on his farm at Kaiapoi. There he became local correspondent of the *Lyttelton Times*, and two years later was appointed sub-editor of the *Timaru Herald*. In 1871 he returned to Christchurch to take charge of the *Star* and *Canterbury Times*, and in 1876 he became a partner in the *Southland Daily News*.

Feldwick was for three years on the Southland education board; was several times mayor of Avenal; was a volunteer for 22 years (retiring as colonel in 1903) and a prominent freemason (S.C.). He represented Invercargill in

## FELL

Parliament 1878-79, being defeated in 1879 by Wakefield for Geraldine and by Bain for Invercargill. He was afterwards member for Invercargill (1881-84 and 1887-90). In 1892 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death on 3 Aug 1908.

*Parltry Record; N.Z.P.D.*, 9 Aug 1908; *No2. Times*, 17 Oct 1892; *Southland Times*, 4 Aug 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

FELL, ALFRED GEORGE (1848-1917) was born in Nelson, the son of Alfred Fell, who arrived in the *Lord Auckland* (1842) and founded the firm of Cock and Co. Educated in London, where he lived for 12 years, he returned to New Zealand in 1871 and entered into business in Blenheim. A few years later he sold out to Levin and Co. and opened in Picton an extensive malthouse. He represented Blenheim in the Provincial Council (1874-75), was a member of the Blenheim and Picton borough councils for some years and of the Marlborough education board and chairman of the Picton hospital and charitable aid board. He died on 6 Feb 1917.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Evening Post*, 7 Feb 1917; *Marlborough Express*, 8 Feb 1917.

FENTON, FRANCIS DART (1821-98) was born at Huddersfield, Yorkshire, in 1821 of an old Yorkshire family with a long legal record. His father, Francis Fenton, was a solicitor practising in London. Educated at Sheffield Collegiate School, he entered the law office of an uncle in Huddersfield where he spent some years and was admittea to practice.

His health being indifferent Fenton sailed for Canterbury in the *Barbara Gordon* in 1850, but disembarked at Auckland (Oct) and went to live with a cousin, James Armitage, on rented land on the south bank of the Waikato, opposite Tuakau. (Armitage was afterwards resident magistrate in Lower Waikato and was killed by King natives, 7 Sep 1863). Fenton was an accomplished musician, playing both violin and cello. While giving lessons at the Rev R. Maunsell's mission station at Maraetai, he attracted the attention of Sir George Grey, who gave him an appointment in the deeds office at Auckland (1852). In Feb 1854 he was resident magistrate at Kaipara. In 1856 he was Native Secretary. A disagreement in policy occurring between him and D. McLean (then land pur-

## FENTON

chase officer), the Governor decided that Fenton was subordinate and he resigned and became a magistrate at Whaingaroa (Jan 1857). Later in the year he was moved to Waikato. There he observed the growth of the King movement and pointed out repeatedly the unsettled state of native affairs and the dangers which might arise from their neglect. He rendered a carefully considered report on the wrongs and wishes of the Maori people, and suggested that they should be assisted to govern themselves. Villages should nominate native magistrates for appointment by the Governor, and officers should be appointed to assist them. Fenton was asked to draw up a Maori book of laws.

Owing to political intrigue he was recalled just as his schemes were beginning to offer some hope of averting war. His report was asked for by the House of Representatives and inquired into by the select committee on Waikato affairs (1860). The committee advised the winding up of the Native department as then constituted and considered Fenton well qualified to carry out the work in Waikato. His only error had been his failure to call on Potatau on his tour (1857). In 1858 Fenton became assistant law officer of the Crown and in 1862 a parliamentary agent. In 1865, on Parliament removing to Wellington, he resigned from the law office and became chief judge of the Native Land Court. In 1864 Native affairs were entrusted to responsible ministers and Fenton was recalled to suggest remedies. Finding the act of 1862 defective, he drafted the amending native lands act of 1865, under which great progress was made in the settlement of the country, and administered this and also the N.Z. settlements act (1869) and the national reserves act. Incidentally he distributed the vote of £200,000 granted for the restoration of Taranaki.

In 1869 Fenton was called to the Legislative Council, but with the passing of the disqualification act of 1870 he had to resign (15 Aug 1871). He was afterwards for two years a district judge in Auckland as well as chief judge of the Native Land Court. He retired in 1881, and a few years later took up land in the Kaipara district, where he planted choice vines in the belief that wine would be an important production in the future. About 1895 he returned to Auckland to live.

## FENTON

Fenton drafted the domain act (1861) and was chairman of the Auckland domain board for many years from 1865, and a member of the board of city improvement commissioners. He founded the Auckland Choral society, of which he was permanent president. The erection of the Choral hall was due to his inspiration and energy. Appointed to the Auckland Grammar School board by Sir George Grey in 1868, Fenton was afterwards elected by members of the General Assembly and remained a member until retiring voluntarily (1886). For 50 years he was a parishioner of St Paul's. Fenton's more noteworthy publications are: *Observations on the State of Aboriginal Inhabitants in New Zealand* (1859) and *Important Judgments of the Native Land Court*. His judgment in the Orakei case (1869) is an interesting document on the Maori history of Auckland peninsula. In 1885 he published *Suggestions for a History of the Origins and Migrations of the Maori People*. He died on 23 Apr 1898.

*App. H.R.* 1860, Elc; *N.Z.P.D.*, pass.; *Brett's Almanac*, 1879 (p); Fenton, *op. cit.*; Gorst; Gisborne; Rusden; Cox, *Men of Mark*; Stack; *Auckland Star*, 23 Apr 1898; *No2. Herald*, 13 May 1898, 4 May 1908.

FENTON, JOHN ALBERT (1821-98) was educated at the Sheffield Grammar School and Christ Church College, Cambridge, where he graduated (B.A. 1843; M.A. 1846). Ordained priest in 1845, he was curate of Norton, Derby, until 1851 when he came to Lyttelton as chaplain of the *Bangalore*. He was the first licensed clergyman of the Church of England in Otago and remained in Dunedin till 1859, when he became curate of Goodwood and Waikouaiti and rural dean of Otago and Southland. In 1863 he returned to England as commissary of the Bishop of Christchurch and remained there till 1881, when he was appointed archdeacon of Oamaru. He retired in 1896, and died on 28 Jun 1898. Fenton was a scholar and a poet. He composed several hymns which have been embodied in hymnals.

*Otago Daily Times*, 5 Jul 1898.

FENWICK, SIR GEORGE (1847-1929) was born at Sunderland, England, and came to Melbourne with his father, Robert Fenwick, in 1853. After a year or two on the diggings and in Melbourne, Fenwick was persuaded by W. H.

## FENWICK

Reynolds to come to Otago, and the family crossed in the schooner *Challenger* in 1856. George went to a school in lower High street and also to the Dunedin Academy, which had been opened by J. G. S. Grant at the end of 1855.

At the age of 12 he entered on his apprenticeship at the *Otago Witness* office (where he was engaged for five years, 1859-64). He went over to the *Otago Daily Times* under Vogel. In 1866 he returned to Australia and saw a good deal of his uncle, Captain George Turnbull Brown, master of the East Indiaman *Cornwallis*. He took a post on the *Cleveland Bay Express* (at Townsville) but disliked the climate and, on the death of his mother, came back to Otago in the schooner *Susannah Booth*. James Matthew offered him a partnership in the *Tuapeka Press* at Lawrence, but after 18 months they found the opposition of the *Tuapeka Times* too strong and they sold out. The last issue of the *Press* was reprinted with a new heading, *Cromwell Argus*, and Fenwick started off at once on horseback for Cromwell, which he had already visited and prospected, so that the *Argus* was first published on the day he reached there (Sep 1869).

Not satisfied with his prospect Fenwick handed over his share to his brother William and returned to Dunedin, where he joined John Mackay (q.v.) in a general printing business. The property of the *Otago Guardian* and its weekly the *Southern Mercury* being put up to auction, G. M. Reed and Fenwick acquired it and determined to make it pay, but finding again that the existence of opposition newspapers in the same town was uneconomic, they made up their mind to acquire the *Otago Daily Times* and *Witness*. This they achieved through the mediation of Reynolds. On the papers being amalgamated some of the old staff started a paper of their own, the *Morning Herald* (May 1877) which they issued at a penny. This complication and the failure of the City of Glasgow bank, with its repercussions in Otago, compelled Fenwick and his partner to look to their laurels. They hoisted a limited company to take over their papers, Reed being editor and Fenwick managing director, and after 18 months' strong competition the directors at length agreed to Fenwick's suggestion and reduced the price of the paper

## FENWICK'

to a penny. From that time its success was assured. The *Herald* became an evening paper in 1884 and ceased in 1890, being absorbed in *The Globe*. From 1883-90 R. E. N. Twopeny (q.v.) was editor and Fenwick managing director, but after 1890 Fenwick held the joint post continuously till 1909, when the editorship was entrusted to James Hutchison (now Sir James).

The depression of 1886 necessitated cuts in salaries throughout the staff and led to a strike by the Otago typographical association, which started a morning paper, the *Daily News* (only to live for two months). In the eighties Fenwick took a strong stand in the paper against industrial abuses in Dunedin. In 1888 he published a sermon by Dr Rutherford Waddell (q.v.), which was followed by a series of articles in 1889 disclosing the existence of sweating in Dunedin factories and home workshops. The *Otago Daily Times* took the lead in exposing these abuses and assisted in the formation of the tailoresses' union. Fenwick was personally thanked by the labour organisations for his services. He afterwards mediated in a wages dispute between the tailoresses and their employers. The papers were now thoroughly established. The *Times* had a colonial reputation and the *Witness* was not only a good farmers' weekly, but also a nursery of New Zealand literature.

Fenwick continued as managing director till his death but he was assisted from 1919 by W. Easton as manager. The paper gave its powerful assistance to cultural movements in Dunedin, notably in raising £10,000 for the endowment of Otago University; in raising money for a new wing to the museum to house the collection presented by Fenwick's friend Dr T. M. Hocken, and other public objects. Fenwick was a founder in Dunedin in 1885 of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals, of which he was president for many years. He was a vice-president of the Patients and Prisoners Aid Society and when the prisons board was formed he was appointed a Government member and continued to act till 1927. He was on the committee of the Hocken library and the Art Gallery (of which he was a life member) and was a trustee of the Young Men's Christian association. On principle he abstained from taking much part in public life, but he accepted nomination for the licensing committee on

## FENWICK

one occasion and was elected at the head of the poll. He was the first president of the Rotary Club in Dunedin.

Fenwick helped to organise the first press association in Dunedin and was in later years for a long period a director and sometime president of the United Press Association. He was a director also of the Newspaper Proprietors' Association, the New Zealand Master Printers' Association, the Dunedin Tramways Co. and the Perpetual Trustees, Estate and Agency Co. In 1909 he attended the Empire press conference in London and was chairman of the New Zealand delegation. He took the keenest interest in gardening and trees, was an ardent walker and wrote several noteworthy pamphlets on the beauties of western Otago.

Fenwick married (1874) Jane, daughter of David Proudfoot. He was knighted in 1919 and died on 23 Sep 1929.

*Who's Who* N.I., 1908, 1924; Paul; *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Sep 1929 (P).

FENWICK, WILLIAM (1851-1906) was born in England, came to Melbourne with his parents in 1853 and to Otago in 1856. Educated at the public schools and for a while at J. L. Schaw's Grammar School, he started life as apprentice in the jobbing room of the *Otago Daily Times* (1864) and before finishing his five years went into the office of his brother (G. Fenwick, q.v.), the *Tuapeka Press* at Lawrence. He continued with his brother when he founded the *Cromwell Argus* (1869), in which he became a partner when his brother went to Dunedin. For a few years he was overseer in the *Guardian* office in Dunedin, and in 1876, with J. H. Clayton, he bought the *Evening News*, the name of which they changed to *The Age*. In 1878 Fenwick became printer of the *Otago Witness* and he succeeded to the editorship on the death of Robert Wilson (1879).

During the 27 years of his editorship he developed the *Otago Witness* in a remarkable manner, making it not only the weekly of Otago, but the recognised organ for the encouragement of New Zealand talent in prose and verse. For some years he conducted 'Chats with the Farmers: and for II years the theatrical column. The 'Little Folks' page was inaugurated in 1886 and carried on by Fenwick

## FERARD

in person till his death (on 25 Sep 1906). Fenwick took no part in public life.

*Otago Witness*, *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Sep. 1906; *In Memory of William Fenwick*, 1906 (p).

FERARD, BINGHAM ARTHUR (born in 1830) was the son of Daniel Ferard, of Queens square, London. After graduating M.A. he read law at Lincoln's Inn from 1852. In 1859 he was appointed resident magistrate at Wellington. Ferard moved to Hawkes Bay, where he represented Napier Town in the Provincial Council (1868-71). Ferard in 1872 published two letters to the government advocating the undertaking of fire insurance by the state.

N.I.P.D., 12 Aug 1862; *Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*

FERGUS, THOMAS (1851-1914) was born at Ayr, Scotland, and emigrated to Victoria with his father, continuing his education there and finishing it at Otago University after their arrival here in 1869. Qualifying as a civil engineer, he joined the service of the Otago provincial government and was district engineer for the goldfields from 1872 till shortly before the extinction of the provincial system in 1876. Fergus then entered into partnership with D. Henderson as contractors and carried out the Mosgiel-Outram railway, the Patea line, the New Plymouth waterworks and the Bluff railway wharf. In 1886 he joined J. B. Blair and they constructed the Mersey-Deloraine railway in Tasmania and the Heidelberg-Alphington line in Victoria. In the nineties he gave up contracting and joined Donald Reid (whose daughter he married in 1878) as stock and station agents and grain merchants.

Fergus was invited to stand for the Wakatipu electorate in 1878, but declined for business reasons. He stood in 1881 and captured the seat, which he retained till 1893. He was Minister of Justice and Defence in the Atkinson Government (1887-89) and of Public Works and Mines (1889-91). He was a member of the Otago education board, vice-president and chairman of the Otago jubilee committee (1898) and treasurer of the Mechanics' Institute. Fergus was a director of the Kaitangata Coal Co., the Hartley and Riley dredg-Co., the Westport Coal Co., and the Bank of New Zealand (1914). He died on 30 Sep of that year.

## FERGUSON

*N.I.P.D.*, 30 Sep 1914; *Cycl. N.z.*, iv. (P); *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Oct 1914.

FERGUSON, DUGALD (1833-1920) was born in Argyllshire, on the shores of loch Fyne. At the age of 18 he sailed for Australia in the *Sussex* and was employed by an uncle on a sheep station in Wimmera. He spent about 10 years on sheep stations far up the Darling river and droving and dealing, and came to Otago in 1862. He had an interest in stations in Southland and at Tapanui and made a good deal of money selling cattle on the West Coast (1865).

Ferguson was fond of poetry and wrote much verse of good quality. His first small volume of poems appeared in the seventies, some of the verses being dated 1873. In 1883 appeared *Castle Gay and Other Poems*, a considerable collection, followed by *Poems of the Heart* (1897) and *Job and Other Poems* (1898). He was a sound versifier and wrote on a great variety of topics. He rarely used the Scots dialect. In 1893 he published in London *Bush Life in Australia and New Zealand*, an interesting story revealing many of his own experiences.

Ferguson, *op. cit.* (pp); Hocken, *Bibliog.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 31 Jan 1920.

FERGUSON, WILLIAM (1852-1935), who was born in London, was a son of William Ferguson, a scientific chemist of note. He was an elder brother of Sir Henry Lindo Ferguson. Educated privately and at the Burton-on-Trent Grammar School, he was apprenticed in 1867 to Courtenay and Stephens, mechanical engineers, Dublin, and after completing his articles he entered Trinity College, Dublin (1873), graduating B.A. and first respondent (1877), B.Eng. (1879) and M.A. (1881). In 1881 he became an associate of the Institute of Civil Engineers, and in 1893 a full member. He was a life member of the Royal Dublin Society.

In 1880 Ferguson was appointed assistant to the professor of engineering at the College and in 1883 he sailed for New Zealand. In 1884 he was appointed engineer-secretary and treasurer of the Wellington harbour board. In his 24 years' service there the port became one of the most efficient and well equipped in the Southern Hemisphere. In 1890 he reported on and carried out plans for the drainage of Wellington. In 1907 he retired from the harbour board, but continued as its consulting engineer until 1913.

## FERGUSON

Ferguson was managing director of the Wellington Gas Co. (1908-16) and chairman of the National Efficiency Board (1916-1920). A foundation member of the New Zealand Society of Civil Engineers, he was president in 1919-20. He married (1890) Mary Louisa, daughter of William Sefton Moorhouse (q.v.). He died on 20 Jun 1935.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 21 Jun 1935; *N.Z. Times*, 19 Oct 1907.

FERGUSON, JAMES BURNE was for some years a merchant in Auckland before taking a sheep run in Hawkes Bay. He was a vice-president of the Ahuriri Settlers' Association in 1858, working for separation from Wellington, and was elected to Parliament in succession to J. V. Smith as the representative of Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay (1858-60).

FERGUSON, SIR JAMES (1832-1907), 6th baronet of Kilkerran, was born in Edinburgh, the eldest son of Sir Charles Dalrymple Ferguson. Educated at Rugby and University College, Oxford, he succeeded to the baronetcy in 1851. He took up his ensigncy in the Grenadier Guards, with which he served throughout the Crimean war, being wounded at Inkermann.

In 1856 Ferguson retired from the army to enter politics, having been elected for Ayrshire while on service. Defeated in 1857, he was again returned in 1859. In 1866 he was Under-secretary for India and later for Home Affairs in the Derby Government. In 1868 he was made a Privy Councillor, and Governor of South Australia, where he assisted in the inauguration of the telegraph system.

On 14 Jun 1873 Ferguson took up the duties of Governor in New Zealand. His term was not marked by any event of importance. Though an energetic and capable politician, he showed the necessary restraint as governor of a self-governing colony in such a period. In 1874 he resigned and, leaving on 3 Dec, he hastened home and contested two elections without success. (K.C.M.G. 1875). In 1880 he was appointed Governor of Bombay. There he did useful administrative work, taking a great interest in native education and in the welfare of the peasantry, for whose benefit mainly he created the first agricultural department.

## FIELD

Returning to England in 1881, Fergusson received the G.C.S.I. and resumed his political career as member for North-East Manchester, which seat he retained until being defeated by the Labour candidate in 1906. He was Under-secretary to the Foreign Office and later Postmaster-general. On retiring from Parliament Fergusson was deputed by the Royal Mail Steam Packet Co., of which he was a director, to proceed to a conference at Jamaica. On the first day of the conference at Kingston, he was killed in the earthquake (14 Jan 1907). He was a director also of the Caledonian, the London and North Western and the Glasgow and South Western Railway Cos., the P. and O. steamship line and the National Telephone Co.

Fergusson married first (1859) Lady Edith Christian (d. 1871), daughter of the Earl of Dalhousie; second (1873) Olive (d. 1882), daughter of John Henry Richman, of South Australia; and third (1893) Isabella Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev Thomas Twyden and widow of Charles Hugh Hoare; He was succeeded in the title by his eldest son Lieut.-general Sir Charles Fergusson (1865 - ), who married Lady Alice, daughter of the 7th Earl of Glasgow (q.v.). He was Governor of New Zealand (1924-30).

*D.N.B.*, Burke, *Peerage*, Gisborne; *The Times*, 17 Jan 1907.

FERRALL, GEORGE (1806-63) was an early resident of the district south of Auckland. He represented Southern Division in the Auckland Provincial Council (1859-61) and died on 28 Apr 1863.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*, *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii, 633.

FIELD, HENRY AUGUSTUS (1852-99) was born in Wanganui, the son of Henry Claylands Field, C.E. (1825-1912), who arrived in the *Simla* (1851), practised as a civil engineer in Wanganui and published a book on New Zealand ferns (1890). He was educated by the Rev C. H. S. Nicholls. In 1868 he entered the Survey department as a cadet and in 1872 qualified as a surveyor. With his cousin, D. H. Monro, he undertook the survey of the Waimarino country just after the conclusion of the war, and spent two years in the difficult task of ascertaining the best lines for road and railway between the upper Whanganui river and

## FIELD

Taupo. The information gained in this period was of great service to the North Island main trunk commission, before which he gave evidence.

Field was an accomplished Maori linguist, an original thinker and a wide reader. In 1878 he was compelled for reasons of health to retire from the service and he settled at Waikanae, where he farmed and practised his profession for the remainder of his life. In 1896 he defeated Newman for the Otaki seat in Parliament and in 1899 retained the seat against C. B. Morison, but died a few weeks later (8 Dec). He was for some years a member of the Wellington land board and president of the New Zealand Institute of Surveyors. He married a daughter of Thomas Wilton (Waikanae).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Woon; *N.Z.P.D.*, 22 Jun 1900; *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Nov 1892; *N.Z. Surveyor*, Dec 1899; *N.Z. Times*, 11 Dec 1899, 1 Mar 1912. Portrait: Parliament House.

FIELD, THOMAS ANDREW HEMMING (1859-1937) was born in Victoria, the son of Thomas Field (1832-1918), who arrived in New Zealand in 1862 and settled in Nelson in 1878. Educated at Nelson College (1871-72), he succeeded his father as head of the firm of Wilkins and Field, hardware merchants, and was a director of Griffen and Sons, and chairman of Robertson Brothers. He took a prominent part in public life, being a member of the Nelson City Council from 1907, deputy-mayor in 1910 and mayor in 1911-13. He was also on the hospital board, president of the Chamber of Commerce, a trustee of the Cawthron institute and president of the Nelson Philosophical Society. He represented Nelson in Parliament, defeating H. Atmore in 1914, and being defeated by him in 1919. Field died on 27 Oct 1937. He was one of the first cyclists to ride from end to end of New Zealand (1885).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Nelson Coll. O.B. Reg.*

FINDLAY, SIR JOHN GEORGE (1862-1929) was the son of G. A. Findlay, merchant, and was born in Dunedin. Educated at Scott's Academy, Hokitika, he proceeded to Otago University, where he graduated LL.B. in 1886 and LL.D. in 1893. He distinguished himself in philosophy under Macgregor.

## FINDLAY

Admitted to the bar in 1887, he commenced to practise in Palmerston (Otago) in partnership with F. G. Dalziell (q.v.), and then moved to Dunedin where for one year (1893-94) he was lecturer in political economy at the University. In 1894 Findlay entered into partnership with Stout at Wellington, where he had a distinguished career at the bar. On the appointment of Stout to be Chief Justice (1899), he took Dalziell in as partner until 1914, and later, D. R. Hoggard, D. M. Findlay and J. C. Morison. Findlay's practice was a lucrative one and enabled him as the years passed to devote more of his time to the study of politics and literature, in both of which he took a keen delight. He wrote a great deal to the press on historical and literary subjects, lectured gracefully and fluently, and was a scholarly and forceful speaker. On the other hand he failed on the political platform and was never able to gain acceptance with the electors. When he first contested a seat (in Wellington City) in 1902 it was evident that his political addresses did not appeal to a democracy whose principles he so stoutly enunciated. Shortly afterwards, however, he was closely in the confidence of Seddon and assisting him in the promulgation of his manifestoes. Seddon was willing to give him a seat in the Legislative Council, but he preferred to gain admission to the elective chamber. He composed the election manifesto of 1905 with its exposition of Liberal humanitarianism.

When Sir Joseph Ward became Prime Minister he retained Pitt as Attorney-general, but his health failing before the end of the year he retired. Findlay was called to the Legislative Council (23 Nov 1906) and took the portfolio, together with that of Internal Affairs. As leader of the Government in the Legislative Council he was a marked success in spite of his lack of parliamentary experience. Tactful, hardworking, always abreast of political developments, he conducted the affairs of the Council in a manner which commanded general approval in a period which was admittedly one of the most brilliant from a debating point of view in the history of the Council. In Jun 1909, on the death of James McGowan, Findlay assumed also the portfolio of Justice. He was now

## FINDLAY

close in the confidence of Ward, and accompanied him to the Imperial Conference of 1911. There he appeared to some extent to dominate his leader, who put forward a plan for an empire parliament with every appearance of not having mastered it. The conference politely but firmly rejected the proposal. Findlay tells a little of the inside history of the Conference in his gracefully written volume *The Imperial Conference from Within*, which he published in the following year. He was knighted (K.C.M.G.) during his visit to England.

At the general election of 1911 Findlay resigned from the Council in the hope that he would be accepted as a democratic representative by gaining a seat in the House of Representatives. He stood for Parnell but was defeated by J. S. Dickson. (Dickson 3,585; Findlay, 2,971; M. J. Mack, 1,557. Second ballot: Dickson, 4,264; Findlay, 3,826.) While Attorney-general, Findlay created the office in New Zealand of King's Counsel, and was himself one of the first batch appointed (Jun 1907). He also endeavoured while in Parliament to reform the Court of Appeal procedure in New Zealand. His legislation during the six years he was Attorney-general was marked by many instances of his wisdom in legal reform.

Accepting the rebuff at the hands of the electors, Findlay retired from politics for a few years, devoting his time to his practice and to his passion for writing and literature. He was elected a member of the Victoria College council (1900-05, 1906-10) and was chairman in 1906.

During the war, with a coalition Cabinet in office, the opportunity presented itself to Findlay of fulfilling his wish by entering the elective chamber. On the death of McNab he contested the Hawkes Bay seat and was returned (3 Feb 1917). (Findlay, 2,641; Simson, 2,175; Fraser, II.) It was, however, to be a barren triumph. Owing partly to the years he had spent out of politics, but more to the special conditions of the war, he remained a private member until the next general election. The coalition had by then dissolved and he retired from politics for good. The part which he had played was unique. While still in private life he exercised what Bell described as 'a singular influence' over

## FINN

the legislation of the later days of Seddon, and eventually he gained a similar influence over Ward. While in office he carried through measures in law reform which expressed the views of the experienced lawyer rather than the politician; and in the wider sphere of Empire politics he took an outstanding, if not entirely successful, line at the Conference of 1911. On his subsequent withdrawal from politics he accepted philosophically the compensating opportunity which it gave for intellectual and social pastimes in which he delighted. He founded the Wellington Shakespeare Society and was president for some years.

Findlay's other publications were *Humbugs and Homilies* (1908), and many articles in reviews, and notably in *The Citizen*, the organ of the Forward Movement (1895).

Findlay married (1890) Josephine Emily, daughter of James Arkle (Lawrence). He died on 8 Dec 1929.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1907-11; 1917-19; *Parltry Record*; Findlay, *op. cit.*; *Butterworth's Fortnightly Notes*, 8 Dec 1925, 17 Dec 1929; *Evening Post*, 9, 11 Dec 1929; *The Dominion*, 10, 12 Dec 1929. Portrait: Parliament House.

FINN, HUGH JOSEPH (1847-1927) was born at Kilkenny, Ireland, educated to the age of 12 in his own home and then sent to the French College at Blackrock, Dublin, and finally to the Jesuit College at Amiens, France. He was for a few months a member of the Pontifical Zouaves in Rome.

Coming to Melbourne, he continued his education at the Church of England Grammar School, from which he passed on to the University. In 1869 he was articled to a barrister and solicitor in Melbourne, and in 1874 was admitted to practise. In that year he arrived in Dunedin and was admitted to the bar there. He started to practise in Queenstown. In 1877 he married Elizabeth, daughter of John McLean (q.v.). Two years later he successfully contested the Wakatipu seat in Parliament (defeating Mason and Manders). During the currency of that Parliament he visited Gisborne and, having decided to make his home there, he retired from Parliament in 1882. In politics he was a member of the Young New Zealand Party (1879) and he was partly responsible for bringing out J. Carroll. He was for a time in-

## FINNIMORE

terested in a shipping business in Gisborne but withdrew finally to devote his whole attention to law. He took no part in local politics.

Finn was a keen volunteer. In Victoria he was a lieutenant in the Sandridge volunteer artillery (1873); he was captain of the Queens-town Rifles (1876-78) and thereafter of the newly formed M battery of artillery (1879-82). Finn died on 18 Dec 1927.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.z.* ii (p); *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924; *N.Z.P.D.*, 3 Jul 1928. Portrait: Parliament House.

FINNIMORE, WILLIAM (1802-75), was born in England and is believed to have taken part of his medical course. He was engaged in teaching in a school at Kingston-on-Thames before sailing for Wellington in the *Lady Nugent* with his wife and son. Finnimore kept the Wellington Tavern for a few years, and about 1845 opened a school in Willis street. This he conducted with considerable success (with the help of his wife) for 20 years. He also for a few months conducted St Paul's school in Thorndon, and for another short period was farming in Karori. Besides the day school, Finnimore held evening classes, in the teaching of which he was assisted by

His son, WILLIAM FINNIMORE, born in 1838, left Wellington for Wanganui in the early sixties and was engaged there in the Bank of New South Wales. In 1864 he was a lieutenant in the Wanganui militia. In 1868 Finnimore raised in the town of Wanganui the larger of the two volunteer 'cavalry corps which did gallant service under Whitmore on the West Coast. The corps was composed mainly of the young men of the town, amongst whom John Ballance (q.v.) for a time held a cornet's commission. The two troops rendered efficient service against Titikowaru's forces, and effectively defended the district against the threatened incursion, of the enemy, who were almost at Kai-iwi. When the enemy took to the bush Finnimore's troop was released from further service. (Major, 1869). Finnimore was member of the Provincial Council for Wanganui (1869-72). In 1871 he contested the Superintendency of Wellington against Fitzherbert, who defeated him by 929 votes to 458. He retired from the Council in 1872. Finnimore undertook flax culture on a considerable scale.

## FIRTH

Maanorran; Cowan; Gudgeon, 325; Gorton; Whitmore; Ward; *Wellington Independent*, 21 Apr 1871.

FIRTH, JOSEPH (1859-1931) was the son of Aaron Firth and was born at Cobden, Westland. He proceeded to Nelson College as an education board scholar in 1873. Two years later he was appointed fourth master at the College, where he remained till 1881. He then accompanied Joseph Mackay to Wellington College as assistant master. In 1886 he accepted a similar appointment at Christ's College, Christchurch. While there he graduated B.A. at Canterbury College (1889), and two years later he was appointed headmaster of Wellington College in succession to Mackay. Firth represented Nelson province at Rugby football (1876) and played for Wellington against New South Wales in 1882. He was also a successful cricketer. While in charge of Wellington College (1891-1921) he led in all games and for years coached the first XI. He devoted his energies especially to the building of character by hard work and hard play. He was a fine administrator and an exceptional scholar, devoted to English language and literature. When he retired he left his mark upon the school in the expansion of the roll, the building of character and many improvements in buildings and grounds. Thereafter he assisted to bring about the erection of the hall as a war memorial, and devoted his energies to the Navy League (of which he was a vice-president), the National Defence League and the Community Club for territorial forces. He married (1889) Jessie, daughter of N. McRae (Marlborough). He died on 13 Apr 1931. (Firth adopted the second name 'Pentland' while he was at Nelson College.)

*Nelson Coll. O.B. Reg.*; *Christ's Coll. List* (p); J. S. Elliott, *Firth of Wellington*, 1937 (p); *The Dominion*, 14 Apr 1931 (p); *Evening Post*, 13 Apr 1931 (p).

FIRTH, JOSIAH CLIFTON (1826-97) was born in the West Riding of Yorkshire and to the age of 16 received from his father a good classical and commercial education, after which he went into mercantile offices. In the financial crash of 1847 his father lost his fortune and young Firth during the next three years paid close attention to agriculture and gained a good knowledge of farming. In 1850 he re-

## FIRTH

turned to commercial life as manager of an iron business. He took a great interest in mechanics' institutes and Sunday school education and held evening classes for historical and scientific studies.

Deciding to emigrate to New Zealand, Firth sailed in 1854, and after spending a short time in Victoria and New South Wales crossed to Auckland. He purchased a block of land in Cook street, where he established a brick-yard. Some years later he was joined by D. R. Thornton and W. B. Smith, and together they started the Wharf steam flour mills in Queen street, Firth being manager. In a few years the firm practically controlled the flour market in the north.

Firth took an interest in politics a few months after his arrival in New Zealand. He intervened in the general election as secretary of the Freedom of Religion Society, opposing any form of state grants for religion or religious education. When the war broke out in Taranaki Firth was a strenuous and outspoken advocate of a vigorous policy. He served as a private in the militia and the volunteers. He was persuaded to stand for Parliament and was elected for Auckland City West (Jan 1861) on the ground of a strong war policy for the maintenance of the Queen's authority and the compensation of the colony and settlers by the confiscation of the lands of the King tribes. He resigned in Jul 1862.

Always interested in the Maori race, Firth in 1865 availed himself of his friendship with Wi Tamihana to acquire an extensive leasehold in the upper Thames district, not far from Matamata. This enterprise, which eventually extended to 50,000 acres, was in tune with his pioneering spirit, and he entered into it wholeheartedly. There was no natural grass on the land, only fern with patches of bush. Heavy expenditure and many years of hard work were necessary to bring it into cultivation and grass land. To protect his men against the danger of native hostilities, Firth erected near Matamata a concrete loopholed keep of three stories, in which arms and ammunition were stored and to which the settlers could repair on an alarm. He snagged the Thames river for a distance of fifty miles to enable his steam launches to keep up communication with the sea, and planted 10,000 willows for river conservation. All

## FIRTH

through the troubles of the King movement Firth was on terms of close friendship with Wi Tamihana and on behalf of the Government discussed the terms of a settlement. He attended many native gatherings when no Government representative was present. In Jan 1870 when Te Kooti was still in the field with his guerillas, Firth met him alone at Tamihana's monument at Taurangamoana and received for communication to the Government Te Kooti's assurance that he would remain at peace if not disturbed but would not surrender on any terms.

Besides the heavy expenditure incurred in developing his estate Firth lost much money on the Thames goldfields. At considerable cost he established the Wild Missouri battery at Tararu, and when Hone Werekiko discovered the New Find at Te Aroha Firth embarked on a new undertaking at Waiorongomai. Both ventures failed; and he was embarrassed at the same time by the fall in prices of produce. As a result he lost his fine estate and the flour mills and had to commence life again.

Firth devoted much attention to invention, notably in the utilisation of pumice as insulating material for refrigerating chambers in place of charcoal. As a pioneer he had considerable vision and was resolute, enterprising and energetic; a tireless rider who travelled long distances between Waikato and Auckland winter and summer. He took part not only in the material development of the Colony, but in every phase of its social life. He was a forceful speaker; an interesting conversationalist, never tame or insipid; a keen advocate of education and of science in industry; a warm supporter of the volunteer movement. He was a member (and chairman) at different times of the chamber of commerce, of the Auckland harbour board and the waste lands board; president of the Auckland Institute and of the Acclimatisation Society. At his own expense he brought salmon ova from California (but without success). He sent 50,000 ova to Victoria and he placed 500,000 whitefish ova in the thermal lakes. In 1887-88 he installed electric lighting in Queen street, Auckland.

A prominent member of the Congregational Church, Firth maintained his interest in Sunday schools (being president of the Auckland Sunday Schools Union) and he was treasurer of

## FISH

the Auckland auxiliary of the British and Foreign Bible Society. He took an interest in various charities and in the Mechanics' Institute and believed in instilling the spirit of self-reliance into the youth of the country and settled many families on small farms. Firth's literary bent was evidenced in many contributions to the Auckland papers and in several books, notably *Lions in the Way and Luck* and *Nation Making* (1890). His death occurred on 11 Dec 1897.

*NZ.P.D.*, 1861-62; *App. H.R.*, 1869 A12; *Cycl. NZ.*, ii (p); *NZ. Herald*, 24 Sep 1872, 17 Sep 1881, 17 Feb 1885; 23, 28 Apr 1886; 18 Jul 1887; 14 Jan 1888; 13 Jul 1889; 12, 13 Dec 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

FISH, HENRY SMITH (1838-97) was born in a London suburb, where his father (who died in Dunedin) was a prosperous painter and glazier. Educated at Cave House School, Uxbridge, he sailed with his parents in 1849 for Melbourne, finished his education and training as an oil and colour merchant there, and in 1863 came to Otago. He married (1867) Jane, daughter of Captain Carr.

Fish was elected M.P.C. for Dunedin City 1870 and sat in the Council until the abolition, being provincial secretary in the executive of D. Reid (1875). He was first elected to Parliament (for Dunedin South) in 1881. In 1884 he was defeated by James Gore but he regained the seat in 1887, and retained it in the combined City electorate in 1890. In 1893 he was again defeated, but he was returned to Parliament again in 1896. He was a diligent legislator, a good speaker and a determined advocate. Fish's principal public service, however, was in the City Council, to which he gave nearly 30 years of conscientious, disinterested and far-seeing work. Elected to the Council first in 1868, he contested the mayoralty in 1869 against Birch (who won by 54 votes). In 1870 he was elected (defeating John Griffin) and in 1873 he retired and was defeated in the Council election (by Evan Prosser). In 1874 he re-entered the Council, but retired in 1875, was re-elected in 1876, resigned shortly afterwards to qualify for nomination to the Otago harbour board, and then regained his seat in the Council (1877). H. J. Walter defeated him for the mayoralty in 1878, and having turned the tables the following year, Fish was disqualified as a

## FISHER

council contractor. He was defeated in 1880 by A. H. Ross and in 1881 he retired from the Council for five years. He again contested the mayoralty (against Haynes) in 1892, and was elected in 1893 and 1894. In 1895 he was defeated by Wales. He resigned from the Council in 1897, having been six times mayor.

Fish exercised a determined and forceful influence on civic affairs, especially on the development of essential public works and finance. He was prominent also in friendly societies and other forms of working-class cooperation. He was 40 years a member of the M.U.I.O.O.F. (which he joined in Melbourne); in 1877 he was D.P.G.M. and 1878 P.G.M. In 1896 he was first chief of the Lodge Hope of Dunedin L.O.G.T. He was a director of the Otago Caledonian Society, and president in 1893-94. Throughout his life Fish was an active supporter of charities and sports societies. He died on 23 Sep 1897.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Dec 1890, 24 Sep 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

FISHER, FRANCIS, who was Attorney-general under Governor Hobson, left a good position in Cambridge in 1835 to come to New South Wales. He was crown solicitor at Sydney when he received the appointment (in Oct 1840) of land claims commissioner (with E. L. Godfrey and M. Richmond) to examine titles in New Zealand. Owing to ill-health he resigned this post and became Attorney-general (3 May 1841). In Aug he was appointed commissioner of the Auckland court of requests and a month later chairman of the court of quarter sessions, acting police magistrate and a member of the Legislative Council. Fisher shortly afterwards left New Zealand. His son was Professor W. R. Fisher, of Oxford.

FISHER, GEORGE (1843-1905) was born in Dublin of Scots parentage, and at the age of nine was employed in a printing office in Fetter Lane, London. In 1857 his parents moved to Melbourne and he became a reader boy in the Age office, later being apprenticed to Ferguson and Moore, printers. In 1863 he came to the Otago diggings, but soon drifted to journalism in Invercargill and in 1865 moved to Christchurch, where he was on the *Lyttelton Times* (1865-69). Then he joined the staff of the Government Printing Office. In 1872 he became

## FISHER

a reporter on the *Independent*, and thereafter was for 11 years on the staff of Hansard.

In 1877 Fisher was elected to the Wellington City Council, from which he resigned in 1887 and defeated the sitting mayor CW. Hutchison, q.v.). Fisher was mayor for three years (1881-84) and a member of the harbour board. He distinguished himself by his energetic administration and grasp of public affairs. In 1884 he was elected to Parliament for Wellington South and in 1887 for Wellington East. He was minister of Education and Commissioner of Customs in the Atkinson ministry (1887-89) but resigned owing to a difference of opinion. In 1890 he was returned at the head of the poll for Wellington City, but in 1893 he was defeated by H. D. Bell and John Duthie. In 1896 he came back as junior member for the City, and in that year was elected for the fifth time mayor of Wellington.

Fisher was one of the finest speakers in the New Zealand Parliament, lucid and trenchant; a vigorous personality, but impatient of control or cabinet responsibility. In his later years in Parliament he was almost alone as a 'Fourth Party': As mayor he helped to found the Home for the Aged and Needy, and promoted the building of the town hall and public library. He died on 14 Mar 1905.

Fisher married (1866) Laura Emma, daughter of James H. Tompkins (Christchurch). A son, FRANCIS MARION BATES FISHER (1877 - ) was M.P. for Wellington City (1905-14) and Minister of Trade and Customs (1912-15).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1905; Russell; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 15 Mar 1905. Portrait: Parliament House.

FISHER, JAMES BICKERTON (1843-1910) was born at Diss, Norfolk, the son of the Rev Thomas R. Fisher, and came to Wellington in the *Myrtle* (1857). He completed his education at Christ's College, Christchurch (1859-60); was articled to W. P. Cowlshaw (1863) and called to the bar (1868). He commenced to practise in Westport (1870) where he was later crown prosecutor. He represented Westport in the Nelson Provincial Council (1873-74) and in the House of Representatives (1879-81). He then retired from politics and returned to Christchurch to continue the practice of his profession as a partner in Garrick and Cowlshaw. Fisher

## FITCHETT

married a daughter of Andrew Brown (Victoria). He died on 23 Jan 1910.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii, vi; *Christ's Coll. List; Westport News*, 28 Dec 1926.

FISHER, JAMES TEMPLE (1828-1905) was born at St Margaret's, Kent, and educated there. At the age of 16 he entered the Royal Navy, serving for some years on the China station. He was in Australia and is said to have visited New Zealand first in the *Flying Childers* in 1846. He was back in England in 1849 and his term of service having concluded, he emigrated with the Canterbury Pilgrims in the *Charlotte Jane* (1850). Fisher selected land in the Heathcote valley and farmed successfully for many years. There he first took a part in public life as a member of the Heathcote road board (of which he was chairman), the Waimakariri river board and later the Sydenham school committee. He represented Heathcote in the Provincial Council from 1870 until the abolition. In 1876 he was elected to Parliament for Heathcote, representing the agricultural electors as distinguished from the squatters. He sat until the end of 1881, when he was defeated by Wynn Williams. Fisher was Postmaster-general and Commissioner of Telegraphs in the Grey ministry (1877-79). In Parliament also he represented the agricultural settlers rather than the squatters and cast in his lot with Sir George Grey. He died on 3 Jan 1905.

*Brett's Almanac*, 1879; *The Press and Lyttelton Times*, 5 Jan 1905. Portrait: Parliament House.

FISHER, JOHN (1837-1927) was born in Ayrshire, Scotland, and arrived in Auckland in 1856. He farmed at Tamaki till 1865, served in the Waikato war and took up land at Puke-rimu. He was chairman of the W'aipa county council, president of the Waikato central A. and P. association and a member of the Auckland harbour board. Fisher was called to the Legislative Council in 1914, and served one term (1914-21). He died on 13 Jan 1927.

*N.z.P.D.*, 3 Jul 1928; *N.Z. Herald*, 14 Jan 1927. Portrait: Parliament House.

FITCHETT, ALFRED ROBERTSON (1836-1929) was born at Grantham, Lincolnshire, emigrated to Victoria when a youth, and finished his education at Melbourne University. He was ordained in the Methodist ministry in 1863

## FITCHETT

and shortly afterwards came to New Zealand and took up work amongst the Europeans in Wanganui during the Maori war.

In 1867 he was appointed to Trinity Methodist Church in Dunedin, and while there erected the fine new church in Stuart street. For three years he was stationed in Christchurch, in charge of the Durham street church, and in 1878 he returned to Trinity in Dunedin.

Fitchett was a man of great versatility and outstanding ability and eloquence as a preacher. He edited the *Christian Observer* (1870-76) and was prominent in the government of the Church. He attended the first annual conference (1874), the Australasian conference in 1875 and the general conference in 1878. In 1878 he took his B.A. at the University of New Zealand. Feeling that he could no longer tolerate the itinerant law of the Church, which enforced the transfer of ministers every three years, he severed his association with the Methodist connection. In 1879 Fitchett was ordained in the Church of England. He at once took charge of All Saints Church in Dunedin, where he ministered for fifty years. (M.A., New Zealand, 1882; D.D., Toronto). He was appointed dean of St Paul's Cathedral in 1894 and acted as commissary for the Bishop in 1906, 1911, 1919 and 1921. For ten years (1886-95) he was a governor of the Boys' and Girls' High Schools and in 1894 chairman. Fitchett was a constant contributor to the *Otago Daily Times* and the author of several books, notably *Evolution and Ethics* and *Christian Ministry: Whence Derived*. He received the C.M.G. in 1928 and died on 19 Apr 1929. (See FREDERICK FITCHETT.)

*Otago Witness*, 15 May 1928; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Dec 1878, 20 Apr 1929.

FITCHETT, FREDERICK (1854-1930) was born at Grantham, Lincolnshire, and as a boy came to Victoria with his parents. His father having died, his mother maintained the family by keeping a store.

After leaving school Fitchett went to sea before the mast for two years. He then came to New Zealand and entered the service of the Bank of New Zealand. His University career was a brilliant one. He was a senior scholar at Canterbury College, where he graduated (BA 1879; M.A. 1880; LL.B. 1880; LL.D. 1887) and he won the Bowen prize in 1876.

## FITZGERALD

Admitted to the bar in 1881, he practised in Dunedin till 1894 (the firm being Fitchett and Thornton). He was a member of Parliament for Dunedin Central (1887-90) and was Liberal whip, but did not seek re-election. In 1894 he was appointed parliamentary law draughtsman; in 1900 crown law officer, and in 1901 Solicitor-general. In this capacity he went to London to discuss the New Hebrides convention with French and British delegates (1907) and the Webster claims (1909). With Sir R. Stout and L. G. Reid he consolidated the New Zealand statutes.

From 1910 to 1917 Fitchett was Public Trustee and on retiring he resumed practice in Auckland. He was a member of the University senate (1883-1915). (C.M.G. 1911). He died on 6 Oct 1930. (His brothers were A. R. FITCHETT (q.v.) and W. H. FITCHETT.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Hight and Candy; *Evening Post*, 6 Oct, 1930; *N.Z. Herald*, 6 Oct 1930.

FITZGERALD, GERARD GEORGE (1834-1904) was born in England and educated at the Grammar School at Bath, and came to New Zealand in the *Castle Eden* (1851). The gold diggings attracted him to Victoria, where he spent some years buying and driving cattle to the goldfields, digging and gold buying.

In the early sixties he returned to New Zealand and, on the suggestion of his brother (J. E. FitzGerald, q.v.), established a telegraph news agency for the colony. For a short period he was part owner of the *Southland Times*, which he gave up to visit the West Coast goldfields. There he renewed his acquaintance with G. S. Sale (q.v.), then Goldfields Commissioner, who got him appointed as magistrate, sheriff, warden and commissioner of crown lands (1867). With headquarters at Hokitika he did a great deal of travelling. In 1879 he contested the Hokitika seat in Parliament against S. George.

About 1880 FitzGerald returned to journalism, at first as the owner of a small paper in Blenheim and then as editor of the *Wanganui Chronicle*. While at Wanganui he was elected M.H.R. for Hokitika (1881), but after serving for one Parliament he was defeated by J. Bevan (1884). He became editor of the *New Zealand Times* (Wellington) but resigned a year later to take the editorship of the *Timaru Herald*,

FITZGERALD

which he controlled until his death (on 7 Jun 1904). He was a lucid writer with pronounced political opinions.

FitzGerald married in Westland Miss Kennedy (who was drowned in the *Taiaroa* in 1886).

*Parltry Record; Cycl. N.z., v; Harrop, Westland; Timaru Herald and Wanganui Chronicle, 8 Jun 1904. Portrait: Parliament House.*

**FITZGERALD, JAMES EDWARD** (1818-1896) was born at Bath and brought up in England. He was nevertheless an Irishman, the youngest son of Gerald FitzGerald, of Kilminchy, Queen's county, and his second wife Catherine, daughter of Sir L. O'Brien, baronet of Drumoland, county Clare. Educated in his native town, he passed on to Cambridge (entering at Christ's College in 1839), and graduated B.A. in 1842. His intention had been to go into the army, preferably the Royal Engineers, but his eyesight failed, and during the next year or two he took long walking tours in Great Britain and Ireland, and so became acquainted with the 'common people' from whom his life hitherto had been quite apart.

In 1844 FitzGerald obtained a post in the antiquities department of the British Museum. There his ability was quickly recognised, and he was promoted to the post of Under-secretary, which he held until its abolition in 1850. During these years he began to be interested in the question of colonisation. In 1847 he issued a circular in favour of founding a colony on Vancouver Island, which the Colonial Office was proposing to transfer to the Hudson Bay Company. In 1849 he published a book examining the charters of the Company and demonstrating that it had no right to be given control of the island. In the event, it did not acquire Vancouver, but it was not possible to carry out FitzGerald's proposal. He had then an idea that some parts of India could be colonised by white people, but his brother Robert (who was a captain in the 5th Punjab Cavalry) dissuaded him from this scheme and he turned his attention to New Zealand. He appears to have been associated with Wakefield's project early in 1849 and to have become impatient long before the psychological moment arrived. In Dec Wakefield wrote warning him not to go to New Zealand, as a man of his qualities would be lost there. Evidently FitzGerald was unhappy in his post at the Museum, for Wakefield ad-

FITZGERALD

vised him 'however disagreeable your position may be, it is one of independence for the present, and it gives you time to wait and watch.'

The Colonial Reform Society was formed and FitzGerald became its secretary. He had ambitions to be the leader of the first party to New Zealand, but Wakefield wrote to Hutt, a director of the Company (in Feb 1850) pointing out his disabilities for the post. 'He has uncommon abilities; is a very good fellow, and I like him very much. He has not position enough in this country. He is a younger brother without property and looking for a provision.' The following month he wrote: 'FitzGerald will make a very good emigration agent, and it is a great satisfaction to have so good and clever a fellow thoroughly enlisted as a Canterbury colonist.' He was a member of the Canterbury Association, and evidently drafted most of their important letters. Wakefield got him put on the committee of management. In the discussions as to the name of the capital FitzGerald was all for 'Christchurch' as against the alternative of 'Lyttelton,' then much in favour on account of the generous manner in which Lord Lyttelton had supported the Association. FitzGerald was given charge of the emigration agency, but a month or two later we find Wakefield complaining, from his partial seclusion at Reigate, that it was being neglected and that FitzGerald and Brittan were more concerned with the possible control of the colony after Godley's return to England. Wakefield sooner or later reached this point with many of his friends. He differed violently and could see all their defects at once. FitzGerald, he 'wrote, 'is all imagination and no action-an immense promise!', quite sincerely; ready to undertake everything, but for performance; except in writing or talking, singularly feeble and heedless.'

FitzGerald had just married Fanny Erskine (who died in 1900), daughter of George Draper, a London merchant, and had made up his mind to emigrate with the colonists. On 7 Sep 1850 he sailed in the *Charlotte Jane* as leader of the party. The expedition arrived at Lyttelton on 16 Dec and FitzGerald lost no time in getting himself installed ashore. Shrimpton's printing press was soon ready for work, and on 11 Jan 1851, FitzGerald (as editor) brought out the first issue of the *Lyttelton Times*, of which he remained in control for two years. At the

FITZGERALD

same time he held the dual official position of immigration agent and inspector of police. He joined Godley in the demand for self-government, which was mildly convulsing the whole colony.

Towards the end of 1852 Godley felt that his work in New Zealand was done, and instead of remaining to be Superintendent of Canterbury he returned home. As a matter of course FitzGerald was nominated for the superintendency (Jul 1853), and he accepted in one of those lofty speeches which characterised the great occasions of his whole career. He had two opponents, Colonel James Campbell and H. J. Tancred, the latter under suspicion of having been brought out to split the Campbell vote. FitzGerald polled 135 votes, Campbell 94 and Tancred 89. On 28 Sep, in a small building in Chester Street West, overlooking Cranmer square, FitzGerald met his first Council. His speech on that occasion reads like a piece of studied and polished prose. In the finest language and with faultless lucidity and logic, the principles that ought to guide Canterbury in founding her government are set forth. He was Superintendent for the whole term of the first Council, that is, until 1857, and the scanty history of that period shows how high were the motives that actuated him. His loyalty to religion and education were marked; yet he set his face sternly against the application of state funds in such a manner as to relieve the individual of responsibility for his own convictions and his children's instruction. He advocated the complete severance of the Canterbury Province from the Canterbury Association, on the ground that local self-government was essential to the success of the colony; but he persuaded the Provincial Council to assume responsibility for the whole expenditure of the association in establishing the settlement.

In Parliament, too, FitzGerald took a prominent part. Elected for Lyttelton on the day after his return as Superintendent, he was one of the leading constitutionalists in the first Assembly, and took a strong stand against sectarianism, and in favour of responsible government. When the latter principle had been affirmed by the House with scarcely a dissentient, FitzGerald became head of the first executive, with Sewell and Weld as colleagues;

FITZGERALD

but they resigned office when they found the Governor would not dispense with three colleagues, officials who had been appointed before the constitution, and were considered irremovable. His honorarium as a member of Parliament, £116, FitzGerald presented to the Lyttelton Colonists' Society to help to form a library. Indifferent health prompted him to retire from the superintendency and from Parliament in 1857, and he was appointed to act as emigration agent for the province of London. He sailed in a small schooner, the *Speedy*, by way of Australia, taking his wife and four children.

During his two years in England he received two offers of governorships-Queensland and British Columbia-but his health forbade his accepting. On returning to the Colony in 1860, he started farming on a property at Springs Station, which had been granted to him by the Provincial Council in recognition of his services. He was also in partnership with his brother-in-law (Draper) and Hunter-Brown.

In May 1861 appeared the first issue of *The Press*, of which FitzGerald was editor, and in Jun 1862, he became sole proprietor. Meanwhile he had entered again into both provincial and general politics. He sat in the Provincial Council (1861-62). In the middle of the latter year he was returned as M.H.R. for Ellesmere. In the ensuing session of Parliament he made several notable speeches on behalf of the Maori, by whose desperate condition he was deeply affected. In that of 8 Aug, which was particularly eloquent, he said: 'I appeal to you tonight, not only on behalf of that ancient race whose destinies are hanging in the balance, but on behalf of your own sons and daughters-for I venture to predict that in virtue of that mysterious law of our being by which great deeds once done become incorporated with the life and soul of a people, enriching the source from whence it flows through the ages, the inspiration to noble thoughts and the incitement to generous actions-I venture to predict that amongst the traditions of that great nation which will one day rule these islands and the foundations of which we are now laying, the most cherished and the most honoured will be that wise, bold and generous policy which gave the Magna Charta of their liberties to the Maori people.' The Government being defeated,

## FITZGERALD

FitzGerald was asked to form a ministry, but he proposed Domett. He tried to induce the Government to recognise the complete amalgamation of the two races by granting to the Maori full representation in Parliament. Most of his resolutions were adopted, but the Government balked at Maori representation, and FitzGerald withdrew his motion.

In the course of that Parliament he was for a few months Minister of Native Affairs (in the Weld ministry), but it was soon defeated and that practically ended his political life. He had represented Ellesmere (1862-66) and City of Christchurch (1866-67). Speaking at a farewell dinner in Christchurch, in Apr 1867, FitzGerald said: 'No public man in the Colony could look back on a career which yielded greater satisfaction. From the time at which the Colony received representative institutions up to 1865 no ministry has been found in which he had not either held, or in which he had not been urged to hold, a prominent position.' In Jan 1867, FitzGerald was appointed Controller-general, a title which a few years later was altered to Comptroller and Auditor-general, and he retained that post until his death in 1896.

Apart from his official life, FitzGerald always showed a keen interest in intellectual pursuits, and he was a leader of thought in whatever circle he moved. Some idea of his wide literary interests and advanced views may be gained from pamphlets, articles and books which he published, both before and after coming to New Zealand. His life of Godley, which appeared in *The Press* on 29 Jun 1862, is a noble tribute. He had sound ideas on the theory and practice of government, on literature, and on that field of thought which was generally designated as socialism. It was largely due to him that Wakefield's 'sufficient price' was applied in Canterbury. Gisborne says of him: 'His mind was imbued with large principles and was richly stored with information of various kinds. A thorough Irish gentleman, he was, like his countrymen, quick, impulsive, witty and winning in manner and conversation.'

In Wellington, where he spent the last 30 years of his life, FitzGerald was president of the Citizens' Institute and a member of the Union Debating society. He died on 2 Aug 1896, and his widow in 1900.

## FITZGERALD

N.Z.C. (Canterbury Association papers); *Cantel'bury P.C. Proc.*; Stout in *Who's Who NZ.*, 1908; FitzGerald, *op. cit.*; *N.I.P.D.* (notably 25 Jul 1862 and 18 Aug 1865); *Cant. O.N. Cycl. NZ.*, i, iii (p); Cox; Gisborne; Rusden; Godley, *Letters.. E. Wakefield, Stafford; Saunders; Lyttelton Times, 1851, pass.* and 26 Nov 1923; *The Press*, 25 May 1911, 1 Feb 1930 (P).

FITZGERALD, JOHN PATRICK (1815-97) was born at Carrickmacross, county Monaghan, Ireland, and educated at Dublin, where he graduated in medicine. (M.R.C.S., Eng.) He arrived in Wellington as surgeon in the *Oriental* in Jan 1840 and was a member of the Colonists' Committee of Control in the same year.

A pious Catholic, Fitzgerald was appointed by Bishop Pompallier as catechist at Port Nicholson and thus was the first representative of that Church there (Dec 1840). He was deeply interested in the natives and as Colonial Surgeon in charge of the hospital at Wellington paid much attention to their welfare. He was appointed coroner (1841) and had medical charge of the Wellington militia and Maori contingent on active service (1846). Trusted by Raurahapa, he acted as his guide and adviser when he came to Wellington to watch the trial of a Maori for theft. When the colonial hospital at Port Nicholson was opened in 1847 Fitzgerald was in charge. Governor Grey was much impressed by his enterprise and skill and the fine service he rendered to both races.

Fitzgerald married (1842) Eliza Sarah, daughter of Thomas Christian (Dublin). After her death (in 1854) he left New Zealand for the Cape, hoping again to work under Grey. This wish was gratified by his appointment early in 1856 as superintendent of the Grey hospital at King William's Town, where he placed his skill and enthusiasm at the disposal of both races for 35 years. He visited New Zealand in 1861, after opening his first hospitals in Kaffraria. Fitzgerald retired in 1891 and died at Ramsgate, England, in 1897. He published in 1885 a history of the native hospital at King William's Town. (See T. H. FITZGERALD.)

Fitzgerald, *op. cit.*; Hubner; Pompallier; Rees; Ward; Tucker; E. H. Brookes, *Hist. of Native Policy in S. Africa* (1927); *The Silver Star*, 1938; *Marist Messenger*, 1 Mar 1938; *Evening Post*, 29 Jan 1927; *N.I. Spectator*, 19 Jul, 16 Aug 1854; *Cape Mercury*, 2 Apr 1891.

## FITZGERALD

FITZGERALD, MICHAEL, was trained as a civil engineer and surveyor and had some experience in surveys and railway construction in Great Britain. He came to Wellington in the forties and in 1853 was appointed engineer-in-chief in the Survey department at Wellington, and later chief surveyor for Wellington and Hawkes Bay. He was afterwards surveyor to the Native Land Purchase Department until its abolition. Fitzgerald represented Waimarama in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1862) and Napier Town in 1863.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; Jourdain.

FITZGERALD, ROBERT APPELYARD was a planter in the West Indies. He came to New Zealand in 1840 and was appointed registrar of the Supreme Court and manager of intestate estates Uul 1841). In 1842 he was registrar of the county of Eden and a member of the board of audit. His daughter was married (1842) to Willoughby Shortland (q.v.). In 1844 Fitzgerald was appointed a commissioner to investigate land claims and registrar of deeds. He was an entertaining public speaker and took a prominent part in the affairs of Kororareka.

Later he was in business as a commission agent in Auckland for a few years and then returned to Australia. In 1849 he engaged in a costly expedition to New Caledonia to fish beche de mer, having under his command the schooners *Minerva* and *Sir John Franklin* and the sloop *Mary*. Having established a station on shore at Balade, he sailed for Sydney to arrange his finances. Returning in the schooner *Elizabeth*, he found that 200 natives had been killed in an attack on the station, and that Captain Rabey and the crew of the *Mary* had been massacred. Fitzgerald had great difficulty in fighting his way out of the reefs to the open sea. He returned to Sydney to face bankruptcy and re-establish himself.

*N.I. Gaz.*; Scholefield, *Henry Williams; Sydney Morning Herald*, 12, 24, 28 Jan 1850; *N.I. Herald* 8 Jun 1895.

FITZGERALD, THOMAS HENRY (1824-88), a brother of John P. Fitzgerald (q.v.) was born at Carrickmacross, county Monaghan, Ireland, arrived in New Zealand in the *George Fyfe* in 1842 as an assistant surveyor, and was one of the signatories of the Te Aro deed (1844). He

## FITZGERALD

remained in Wellington for some years. In 1847 he reported on the line of road to Wairarapa, and in 1853 he was appointed to survey native lands purchased in Hawkes Bay, amounting to over 600,000 acres. He suggested that the Nova Scottans who were seeking land in New Zealand should be settled near the harbour at Ahuriri.

Fitzgerald represented Ahuriri in the Wellington Provincial Council (1857-59) and took a leading part in the demand for separation from Wellington. When Hawkes Bay became a separate province he was elected first Superintendent because the Council was equally divided in favour of Captain Lambert and Captain Newman. He held office from 1859-61. He represented Napier Town in the Council (1859-61). During 1860 also he represented the 'County of Hawke' in Parliament.

In 1862 he went to Australia and entered the Queensland Government service as a surveyor, but resigned to start a large sugar plantation at Mackay, where he erected the first mill. He entered the Queensland Parliament in 1867 as member for Kennedy (being elected also for Mackay), and was Colonial Treasurer in the Lilley Government (1868-69). He again entered politics as member for Bowen (1873), resigning on account of insolvency in 1875. His plantations being unprofitable, he resumed the practice of his profession, explored the northern rivers and founded the sugar settlement of Innisfail, which was originally called 'Geraldton' in his honour. Retiring in 1885, Fitzgerald died on 10 Nov 1888. He married (1851) Jessie, daughter of James Wilson, Rangitikei. Fitzgerald's son, Charles Borromeo, was member for Mitchell in the Queensland Parliament (1896-1901).

*N.I.P.D.*, 1860; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.Z. Gaz.*, 7 Aug 1847; *Queensland Gaz.*; Ward; Carter; *Queenslander*, Nov. 1888; Public Library of Victoria. **Portrait**: Parliament House.

FITZGERALD, WILLIAM SANDERSON (1838-1920) was born and educated at Musselburgh, Scotland, and proceeded to the Moray House Free Church Training College in Edinburgh. He was first assistant at St John's Grammar School, Hamilton, when he was appointed by the colonial committee of the Free Church as teacher in the Pigeon Bay Academy. He

FITZHERBERT

sailed in the *Royal Stuart* (1861). Fitzgerald spent eight years at Pigeon Bay, receiving many boarders from Wellington and Otago. He then became rector of the Oamaru Grammar School, and was from 1876 principal of the Normal School in Dunedin and rector of the Training College. In 1894 he became inspector under the Otago education board. He was first president of the New Zealand Educational Institute.

Fitzgerald was an elder of the Presbyterian Church, a strong supporter of Sunday schools and helped to found St Margaret's College. He died on 27 Jan 1920.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Butchers; Ross; K. C. McDonald; *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Jan 1920.

FITZHERBERT, SIR WILUAM (1810-91) was the third son of the Rev Samuel Fitzherbert, of Buckshaw House, near Sherborne, Dorset, and rector of Houghton. Educated first at a dame school and then at Sherborne Grammar School, he proceeded to the Merchant Taylors' School and then to Queen's College, Cambridge, where he entered at the age of 18 and was tutored by his brother Herbert, then a professor at the University. Fitzherbert was a good scholar; senior optime in mathematics and Brown's University medallist; double first in classics. He graduated M.A. in 1832 and became a fellow of his College. He rowed No.7 in 'Queen Mab' when she was head of the river, and stroked the Cambridge eight selected to row against Oxford in 1832, when Oxford declined to row. He was an adept light-weight boxer and distinguished himself in the town-and-gown rows in the old town, notably when he rescued Hugh Carleton (q.v.) from the infuriated townsmen. After leaving the University Fitzherbert decided to study medicine, and went to the Ecole de Medicine, Paris, for that purpose, afterwards walking St George's Hospital in London. He graduated M.D. in Mar 1839 and commenced practice in Hanover square, London. He married in 1837, Sarah Jane Leigh, who died on 21 Aug 1886. Fitzherbert was early interested in New Zealand and invested some thousands of pounds in the New Zealand Company. In 1841 he determined to go to New Zealand to look after his interests, and he purchased the schooner *Lady Leigh*, 109 tons, and loaded her with merchandise. Four months later she reached Sydney, and on 15 Sep 1841 she dropped anchor in the harbour of Port

FITZHERBERT

Nicholson. Fitzherbert sent for his wife and family, and for some years they resided on the slope of Mount Victoria. He did not practise in New Zealand, but entered into business at once as a general merchant, auctioneer and buyer of whale oil and bone, keeping the *Lady Leigh* in commission and frequently going in her round the whaling stations in both islands. He carried on his business in Farish street, which he named after a son of Professor Farish. The earthquake of 1848 so affected the health of his wife that Fitzherbert determined to take her to Sydney, and for this purpose he chartered the barque *Sobraon*, which he loaded with whalebone and oil from his stations at Kapiti and Amuri Bluff. While beating out of the heads the *Sobraon* struck Barrett's reef and became a total wreck. Mrs Fitzherbert went by another vessel to Sydney, where her daughter was born, and shortly returned to Wellington in a new schooner built for his business and named the *William Alfred* after their eldest son. They resided in a house near the Colonial Museum until the *William Alfred* brought from Sydney a frame house built to Fitzherbert's order, which he had erected at the Hutt and called Tredenham. Fitzherbert was associated with Pharazyn in pastoral interests and on going to the Hutt to reside he practically relinquished business and devoted himself to public life. In 1843 he had been placed at the head of the commission of the peace, but he declined a seat in the Legislative Council. He was a prominent member of the Settlers' Constitutional Association (which included also Bell, Fox, Stafford, Featherston, Cargill, Richmond, Godley and Wakefield). When the constitution was obtained Fitzherbert had no difficulty in getting elected to the Wellington Provincial Council for Wellington City, which he represented until unseated in 1857 in the constitutional struggle which ended in the defeat of the Wakefield party. Two years later he was returned for Hutt, and he remained its member until 1869. Throughout he strongly supported Featherston, generally as a member of the executive, and occasionally as deputy-superintendent. When Featherston resigned the superintendency to go to England, Fitzherbert was elected to the post, and continued in it until the abolition. It was a hard task to follow such a man, but Fitzherbert well maintained the

FITZHERBERT

dignity of the position and when the time came for its demise gave a noble account of the achievements of the province.

In Parliament Fitzherbert always held a leading position. Elected in 1855 for City of Wellington, he transferred his services three years later to Hutt, which he represented until his resignation in 1879, to be elevated to the Legislative Council. He was Colonial Treasurer in the Weld ministry (1864-65) and in the succeeding Stafford ministry, and for one month in 1872 he was Stafford's Minister of Lands. From 1876 he was Speaker of the House and from 1879 was Speaker almost continuously of the Legislative Council until his death in 1891. Fitzherbert took an active part in the initiation of the self-reliant policy, and in the removal of the seat of government to Wellington. As Colonial Treasurer he went to England in connection with the claim of the Imperial Government for the payment of £750,000 for the services and supply of British troops employed in New Zealand during the Maori wars. He finally obtained remission of the debt and arranged the consolidation of the New Zealand public debt on advantageous terms. He received the C.M.G. in 1872, and was knighted in 1877.

After entering the Legislative Council Fitzherbert was frequently employed on important missions for the colony. At the Colonial Conference of 1887 in London the delegates were much impressed by his ability. The following year he represented New Zealand at the postal conference at Sydney, and he had been appointed to attend the Federal conference in Australia in 1891, but death intervened on 7 Feb.

Unlike Featherston, Fitzherbert never practised medicine in New Zealand. He found business and commercial ventures much more to his liking and lived throughout 'a life of high and stem exertion, distinguished from the first by acts of rare courage and uncommon quality of action.' He was for years a director of the Australian Mutual Provident Society. Of Fitzherbert as a parliamentarian, Gisborne says: 'Although distinguished for mental capacity and for political foresight, he had not the qualities which instinctively attract the sympathy and gain the goodwill of others. He was too shut up within himself; he neither gave nor asked for confidence. His influence, however, was great. Able and astute, he was the Ulysses of

FITZROY

statesmen; and, although openly he was not one of the leaders of men, he did much secretly to sway their action. No one could fail to recognise his intellectual power and the sagacity of his counsel. A great speech from Sir William Fitzherbert was an intellectual treat. During an exciting and critical debate, while opponents were violently attacking him, he would sit immovable, his eyes shut, and every muscle in his face as rigid as if it were cut in marble, apparently asleep. But when he rose to reply the whole scene was changed. Without a note, and trusting to his memory, which never failed him on such occasions, he would answer point by point every speech of his opponents, covering them with ridicule and discredit and apparently routing them by force of argument.'

Gisborne (p); Rusden; Reeves; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Wellington P.C. Proe.*; *N.Z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 21 Aug 1875, 29 Apr 1879); *N.Z. Times*, 9 Feb 1891, 3 Feb 1906; *Independent*, 7 Dec 1867; *Evening Post*, 31 Aug 1929 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

A son, HENRY SAMUEL FITZHERBERT (1851-1912) was educated at Christ's College, Christchurch, and at Melbourne University and admitted to the bar in 1875. He practised for some years in Wellington and was M.H.R. for Hutt (1884-90). He afterwards settled in Palmerston North, where he was solicitor to the borough council and crown solicitor. In 1907 Fitzherbert was appointed stipendiary magistrate at New Plymouth, where he died in 1912. He was a member of the diocesan and general synod.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

FITZROY, CECIL AUGUSTUS (1844-1917) was a son of the Rev F., T. W. C. Fitzroy, rector of Great Ringstead, Norfolk. Educated at Eton and Cambridge, he came to New Zealand in 1867 and for a while was cadet at Mesopotamia station. He spent 12 years in pastoral pursuits in Canterbury and represented Selwyn in Parliament (1876-79). In 1878 he married Susannah, daughter of William Beetham, of Taita, and, retiring from Parliament, lived thereafter at Hastings, of which he was mayor (1894-99). In 1896 and 1899 he contested Waiapu against Carroll (q.v.).

For many years Fitzroy was secretary of the Hawkes Bay Club and of the Hawkes Bay Acclimatisation society (1887-1907), and a mem-

ber of the education board (1897-1905) and the hospital board. He died on 13 Nov 1917.

*Col. Gent.; Acland; Who's Who N.Z., 1908.*

**FITZROY, ROBERT** (1805-65) was born at Ampton, Suffolk, the second son by a second marriage of Lord Charles FitzRoy. He was grandson of the third Duke of Grafton, and therefore descended from Charles II.

FitzRoy entered the Navy from the Royal Naval College in 1819 and was for two years in South America in the *Owen Glendower*. Mter serving in the *Hind* in the Mediterranean (lieut. 1824) and on the coast of South America in the *Thetis* frigate, he went into the *Ganges* as flag-lieutenant to Rear-admiral Sir Robert Otway, commanding-in-chief the South American station (1828). Later in the year, being appointed to command the brig *Beagle* on the death of Commander Stokes, he prosecuted the survey of the coasts of Patagonia, Tierra del Fuego and Magellan, on which that officer had been engaged under the orders of Commander P. P. King, in the *Adventure*. Hoping to institute measures for the conversion of the natives, FitzRoy took four natives of Tierra del Fuego with him when the two vessels returned to England (1830). They were introduced to the King and Queen and taken back to their homes with a missionary (Matthews, q.v.) when FitzRoy returned in the following summer to continue the same duty. The *Beagle* sailed again on 27 Dec 1831, with Charles Darwin on board as naturalist, and was five years abroad, surveying the coasts of South America and running a **chronometric** line round the world, thus fixing the **longitude** of many secondary meridians.

In Dec 1835 the *Beagle* spent 10 days in Bay of Islands. While Darwin was engaged in botanical work FitzRoy saw a good deal of the Church Missionary Society's stations, with which he was greatly impressed. His own religious **tendencies inclined** him to seek the society of the **Indians**, and in his evidence before the select committee of the House of Lords in 1838 he eulogised their character and work in the highest terms.

In July 1835 FitzRoy was advanced to post rank. In Oct 1836 he returned to England, where he spent the next few years reducing the observations of the voyages of the *Adventure* and *Beagle* between 1826 and 1836 and pub-

lishing the narrative, the third volume of which was by Darwin. FitzRoy's work as a **surveyor** was of a high standard and stood for many years. In 1837 he received the gold medal of the Royal Geographical Society. At the general election of 1841, by the influence of Lord Londonderry, he was elected to Parliament to represent Durham. This contest was marked by a **Violent** quarrel between him and a Mr Sheppard, who was also to have contested the seat in the Conservative interest, but withdrew without giving FitzRoy proper notice. FitzRoy challenged him to a duel, but Sheppard did not appear, saying that business took him to London. He afterwards encountered FitzRoy in London and was knocked down. A group of naval and military officers decided that FitzRoy could not give Sheppard a meeting, and the quarrel was continued by pamphlet.

In Sep 1842 FitzRoy was appointed conservator of the river Mersey, a position which he resigned in 1843, with that of an elder brother of Trinity House, on being appointed Governor of New Zealand. He arrived in Auckland in the *Bangalore* on 23 Dec 1843 and assumed office at once from Shortland (q.v.) who had been administrator since the death of Hobson (in Sep 1842) and whom he treated with little consideration.

FitzRoy found the country in a despondent condition and many of the settlers almost rebellious from their grievances against the New Zealand Company, the Government and the natives. The **affray** at Wairau, in which 22 Europeans had been killed while attempting to arrest a powerful chief, remained unpunished. FitzRoy had come over from Sydney with Dr Andrew Sinclair (q.v.), whom he immediately appointed Colonial Secretary in place of **Shortland**. Finding an empty exchequer, a disaffected European population, and natives who suspected the intentions of the Government and the good faith of the whites, FitzRoy approached the Europeans in a haughty and unconciliatory manner. He gratuitously offended some of their leaders and gave the Company's settlers at Wellington the impression that he thought more of native grievances than of their distress. Influenced by Exeter Hall opinions, he felt and said that the natives were his main care. Mter hearing the Maori version of the Wairau affair he concluded **that the**

blame lay chiefly on the Europeans and declined to take action against Rauparaha and Rangihaeata. In this course he was upheld by the Secretary of State (Nov 1844). At all of the settlements he paid marked deference to the leading chiefs, and commended the work of the missionaries. He did, however, assist Colonel Wakefield to complete purchases of land at Port Nicholson and he promised to expedite the work of the land claims commissioners. FitzRoy had only been a few months in the colony when he had to provide for the pressing financial needs of the government, which were far beyond its means. The floating debt at the beginning of the year was £24,000 and the revenue for the year was estimated at £20,000, which was not two-thirds of the authorised expenditure, even after drastic retrenchment had been carried out. The customs in 1843 yielded only £10,000, and cost £4,000 to collect. FitzRoy therefore, in Apr 1844, got the Legislative Council to pass an ordinance authorising the issue of negotiable debentures bearing interest at 5 per cent. He also increased the customs duties and imposed a tax on firearms. This infuriated the settlers and encouraged smuggling, which the excise officers were powerless to stop. To propitiate the Maori, who resented not being able to sell their lands in order to obtain money, a proclamation was issued waiving the pre-emptive right of the Crown over certain Maori lands and imposing a fee of ten shillings per acre on all purchases. In the condition of the colony this fee almost stopped sales.

While these **economic** measures were being initiated FitzRoy was harassed by troubles on all sides. The natives in Taranaki resisted the award of the land commissioner. At Bay of Islands Heke led a growing disaffection which had its origin in the loss of all authority and mana by the chiefs together with their sources of revenue, disreputable though some of them were. In Jul 1844 he cut down the flagstaff at Kororareka as a symbol of his defiance of British sovereignty, but **without** offering violence to the Europeans. FitzRoy promptly despatched a vessel to Bay of Islands with a subaltern and 30 men from the small force which was stationed in Auckland. He visited the Bay in H.M.S. *Hazard* and then proceeded to Taranaki, where he pacified the natives by saying that the award of Spain would not be put into force.

After visiting Wellington he returned to the Bay, where 150 men of the 99th Regiment had arrived with three guns. The troops were transported to Kerikeri for an advance inland against Heke's position at Okaihau. Nene and other friendly chiefs warned the Governor against such a dangerous adventure. They agreed that Heke had grievances, but undertook to prevent him from doing mischief if the troops were withdrawn. FitzRoy accordingly accepted 20 muskets and 20 tomahawks as a token of submission and withdrew the troops. Unfortunately they were sent back to Sydney, and the provocative flagstaff was re-erected. The Governor now hastened to redress some of the native grievances by reducing the fee on sales of land from 10s. to 1d. per acre and abolishing the customs duties, for which he substituted a property tax (28 Sep 1844). He also passed an ordinance authorising the issue of a new set of debentures of the value of five shillings upwards, a form of financing which was definitely forbidden in the instructions to colonial governors. These changes were greeted with enthusiasm in the north, but they were most objectionable to southern settlers, who evaded the new duties in every possible way. With the news of these events the Colonial Office received protests from Port Nicholson and Nelson against the Governor's administration, which it was contended had depreciated the value of landed property in the settlements.

The year 1845 opened inauspiciously. The Governor had already offered rewards for the apprehension of offending chiefs at Kawakawa when (on 10 Jan) Heke again cut down the flagstaff. Nene's men, who were in charge of it, made no physical resistance, believing that it was not right to shed blood for a piece of wood. FitzRoy offered a reward of £100 for the arrest of Heke, who now moved about the district with a body of armed and well-trained men. FitzRoy again sent to Sydney for troops, and meanwhile moved 50 men to the Bay of Islands and re-erected the flagstaff, the foot of which was strongly sheathed in iron, while a blockhouse was constructed to protect it. The *Hazard* remained on guard in the Bay. Indignant at having a price placed on his head, Heke threatened to attack Auckland itself. Excitement was high in all the settlements. The Governor, fearing to precipitate outbreaks between

the two races, refused to allow the volunteers to be embodied. Thereupon the justices of the peace in several of the southern settlements took it upon themselves to arm and drill their fellow citizens for self-defence. On 11 Mar, after having given the townspeople due warning, Heke made a concerted attack. On Kororareka, cutting down the flagstaff again after enticing the military guard to leave the blockhouse. Severe fighting took place between other divisions of the Maori force and the soldiers and marines. A store containing gunpowder was blown up by carelessness, causing many casualties, and at nightfall the civil population evacuated the town. The armed forces also re-embarked, leaving the place defenceless. No violence was offered to the white settlers but the property thus left unprotected was pillaged by natives and whites indiscriminately. Next day Selwyn and Archdeacon Henry Williams sought out and buried the dead. Some hundreds of refugees were embarked in the *Hazard*, the American corvette *St Louis* and the whaler *Matilda*, and sailed for Auckland, leaving Kororareka a smoking ruin. The English church and the Catholic bishop's house were spared.

Nene now took the field against Heke and Kawiti. On 26 Apr martial law was proclaimed at Bay of Islands, whither 300 troops were despatched under Colonel Hulme. Troops landed at Otuihu and arrested Pomare, who was sent to Auckland. The whole force, with naval brigade, disembarked at Onewhara beach whence, joined by a friendly contingent under Nene, it marched towards Kerikeri. On 8 May it advanced to attack Heke's pa at Okaihau, which was invested on three sides. After fighting all day and gaining several important positions around the pa, the troops were withdrawn at night, having suffered some losses. The British loss was 15 killed and 41 wounded. On the following day, with their wounded on litters, the force retreated to Kerikeri. The commander returned to Auckland to report the affair. To prevent arms reaching the natives FitzRoy now declared a blockade of the coast from Whangaroa to Whangarei. All intercourse with the natives was forbidden.

Though not driven out of their pa, the Maori leaders now looked for a better position, which they found at Ohaeawai and strongly fortified. Reinforcements having arrived under the com-

mand of Colonel Despard, a combined force of 520 soldiers, 30 sailors and 80 volunteers marched from Kerikeri and appeared before Ohaeawai on 25 Jun. Against the warnings of Nene Despard ordered an assault on 1 Jul. It ended in a disastrous repulse, with the loss of 107 dead and wounded. On 10 Jul the offensive was resumed, and on the following morning the defenders withdrew from the pa, which was occupied by the troops. After this success, the Governor had to await the arrival of more troops before attacking Heke's ally Kawiti at Raupekepeka.

Meanwhile discontent in the settlements increased and public meetings were held demanding the recall of FitzRoy. Native tribes throughout the country did not conceal their sympathy with Heke. In England a strong agitation had begun against FitzRoy's administration. In the House of Commons as early as Mar 1845 debates were held criticising his financial operations and the waiver of the government's right of pre-emption, both of which had been disallowed by the Colonial Secretary. The Company's influential friends in Parliament were as strongly hostile to FitzRoy as they had previously been to Hobson and were still to be to Grey. On 30 Apr the Secretary of State informed FitzRoy that it had been decided to supersede him and to send as his successor Captain George Grey (q.v.), whose work in South Australia had created a very favourable impression. Grey arrived in Auckland on 15 Nov and assumed the government on the 18th.

Gisborne weighs up very fairly the character and achievements of FitzRoy, concluding that with the best of intentions he had not the capability for his office in New Zealand. • Had he been endowed with very great abilities he would probably have failed; but unhappily his qualities were such as to make his failure certain and complete. He was rash and impulsive, weak and injudicious, and at the same time, paradoxical as it may seem, obstinate and self-confident. He was unskilful in the management of men, unversed in constitutional principles, and altogether ignorant of political economy. His official action was inconsistent and mischievous; he did much to set race against race and class against class: Yet it has to be remembered on the reverse side that FitzRoy was dominated by solicitude for the Maori people. His policy on

their behalf brought upon him the implacable hostility of a large and influential section of the white population. The colonists' petition to the House of Commons was a masterly document expressing clearly the inherent hostility between the Company's interests and those of the natives. The Company adopted it with whole-hearted approval and instructed its agents in New Zealand to reward the author (Domett) with some paid post which might become vacant. A greater and better balanced man than FitzRoy might have failed to govern a colony in which such passions were rife and such powerful interests opposed to his administration.

FitzRoy sailed for London in the *David Malcolm* on 10 Jan 1846. In 1848 he was appointed superintendent of the dockyard at Woolwich, and early in 1849 he took command of the screw frigate *Arrogant*, which had been fitted out under his supervision to carry out certain trials.

FitzRoy retired from the service in 1850. (Rear-admiral by seniority 1857; vice-admiral 1863.) In 1851 he was elected a fellow of the Royal Society. He served a few months as private secretary to his uncle, Lord Hardinge, then commander-in-chief of the army; and then, at the recommendation of the Royal Society, he was appointed chief of the meteorological department of the Board of Trade. His high standing as a meteorologist was enhanced by the popular work which he did in this office. He suggested the design of the FitzRoy barometer, and in the *Weather Book* (published in 1863) he inaugurated an advance in the study. He instituted storm warnings which afterwards developed into regular weather forecasts. He published *Remarks on New Zealand* (1846); several manuals on meteorology and sailing directions and his official reports to the Board of Trade. He also did valuable work for the seafaring community as secretary of the life-boat Association. Overtone took its toll of an excitable disposition and his mind gave way, leading to his committing suicide on 30 Apr 1865. FitzRoy married (1836) Mary Henrietta (who died in 1852), daughter of Major-general Edward James O'Brien. As a hostess and philanthropist Mrs FitzRoy won golden opinions. Her salon in Auckland was an oasis of culture and enlightenment.

*DN.B.*; *Jour. Royal Geog. Soc.*, vol xxxv;

G.B.a.p. 1838/680; 1844/556; 1845/1, 131,245,247, 369, 517 ii, 661; 1846/203, 337; G.B. Hansard, vol. 78, cols. 644-94; vol. 80, cols. 172-4, 183-6; Sinclair papers; Wells; Buick, *First war* (p); Marjoribanks; Danvin; Fitzroy, *op. cit.*; S. M. Martin; Clarke; Cowan i; Thomson; Saunders; E. J. Wakefield; King; Joan Barlow; Gisborne; G. H. Wells (p); Carleton; Hocken; Sherrin and Wallace; *The Times* (London), 1 May 1865.

FITZSIMMONS, ROBERT (1862-1917) was born at Helston, Cornwall, and came to New Zealand with his father as a child. They settled at Timaru, where he was educated and learned something of the trade of a blacksmith in his father's shop.

Though his parents were very devout people Fitzsimmons learned boxing as a youth and during the period 1880-90 acquired some reputation as a promising amateur. In 1890 he went to San Francisco and soon gained fame by winning the world's middleweight championship (14 Jan 1891). His most notable victory was against James J. Corbett at Carson City on 17 Mar 1897. He won that match in the last minute of 14 rounds by his use of the solar plexus punch, which was always associated with his name. He was, however, already old for heavy weight boxing. On 9 Jun 1899 he was defeated by James J. Jeffries in II rounds at Coney island. In 1900 he defeated two doughty opponents, Tom Sharkey and Gus Ruhlin; but in 1902 he again met Jeffries with the same result. On this occasion Fitzsimmons broke all the knuckles of his right hand with one blow. He fought eight times between 1903 and 1914 and in all fought 360 times, and received no scars. He had the shoulders and arms of a giant, but was knock-kneed and wore thick underwear to hide the thinness of his legs. He lost most of his money to sharpers. Fitzsimmons wrote *Physical Culture and Self Defence* (1901). He was married four times.

*D.Am.B.*; Fitzsimmons, *op. cit.*; R. H. Davis. *Ruby Robert* (1926); Jeffrey Farnol, *Famous Prize Fights* (1928); H. Sayers, *Fights Forgotten*.

FLATMAN, FREDERICK ROBERT (1843-1911) was born in Suffolk, educated at the High House School and spent some years on his father's farm before sailing for New Zealand in 1862 in the *Mary Ann*. On arrival in Canterbury he spent some months on Alfred Cox's Raukapa station, and after a short time store-

## FLEMING

keeping in Geraldine he joined Robert Taylor in a sawmilling venture at Woodbury (1866). The firm acquired land and laid out a township for their employees, established a store and hotel, and out of their sawmilling profits gradually extended their holding of farming land until the partnership dissolved in 1892.

Flatman then retired to farm his own property near Geraldine, devoting more and more time to public affairs. He was a member of the Timaru and Gladstone board of works before the abolition of the provinces; was for 19 years a member of the Geraldine road board and later in life was mayor of the borough of Geraldine (1909-11). For many years he was a member of the Timaru harbour board; the south Canterbury education board and the Geraldine school committee. He was M.R.R. for Pareora (1893-96) and on the adjustment of electoral boundaries continued to represent Geraldine (defeating A. E. G. Rhodes on two occasions). On becoming a supporter of prohibition Flatman closed the hotel in Woodbury in which he was interested. He continued in Parliament until 1908 and during part of that time served as deputy-chairman of committees. Flatman died on 21 Sep 1911.

*N.I.P.D.*, 21 Sep 1911; *Cycl. N.I.*, iii (p); Andersen; *Timaru Herald*, 22 Sep 1911.

FLEMING, ALEXANDER (1843-73) was born in the west of Scotland, educated there and attended arts courses at Glasgow University. He was classical and English master at the academy at Helensburgh before coming to Southland in the early sixties. For some time he was tutor at Morton Mains, and in 1867 he was appointed schoolmaster at Lower Harbour. From there he went to Totara and in 1869 was appointed second master at Oamaru Grammar School. This he resigned to enter the Presbyterian ministry but, his health improving, he accepted in 1873 the post of first headmaster of the Invercargill Grammar School. Fleming was a man of sound scholarship and great promise but was frustrated by feeble health, which led to his early death (on 6 Sep 1873).

*Otago Daily Times*, 2 Oct 1873.

FLEMING, DAVID THOMAS (1861-1938) was born at Blackwater, Blairgowrie, Perthshire, the son of Alexander Fleming, with whom he came to New Zealand in the *Lady Milton* in 1863

## FLEMING

(Sir Robert Stout being a fellow passenger). His father taking up land at Otokia, Taieri, he was educated at Allanton and Otokia, and at the Otago Boys' High School and farmed with his father for a while at Hindon. He was secretary of the Henley river board from 1879 to 1884, in which year he joined the staff of the *Clutha Leader*. He became successively editor, manager and part proprietor of the *Leader* and controlled the *Bruce Herald* (1906-11).

In 1912 Fleming retired from journalism and became interested with his brother in sheep and cattle farming at Titiroa. He was a member of the Clutha river trustees (1907-24), and of the river board (1910-16) and chairman (1912-14); a member of the Balclutha High School committee (1893-1905); of the Otago education board (1915-18), and chairman (1913-16); of the technical college board (1913-16); a founder and governor of the South Otago High School; a member of the Otago High Schools board (1915) and of the general Council of Education (1918-30). He was on the Balclutha borough council (1891-1914) and mayor (1897-99 and 1933-37). He married (1889) Emilia, daughter of the Rev J. Menzies (Milton).

Fleming was organiser of the Reform party in Southland and was a member of the Legislative Council (1918-32). He died on 18 Oct 1938.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1918-32; *Clutha Leader*, 19 Oct 1938. Portrait: Parliament House.

FLEMING, THOMAS REID (1863-1930), a son of John Stuart Fleming, was born in Edinburgh, and came to New Zealand in 1868 by the *E. P. Bouverie*. His parents settled on the West Coast and he attended the Westport primary schools, winning scholarships which took him to Nelson College. There in 1878 he headed the junior University scholarship list for the colony. In 1881 he was appointed to the staff of the Wellington College, and in 1882 gained his B.A. degree. He represented Nelson at football and Wellington at cricket. In 1882 he passed the University of London matriculation examination with first class honours. He graduated M.A. and LL.B. in 1888, and was admitted to the bar. In 1890 he was appointed assistant inspector of schools for Wellington, and in 1893 an examiner to New

## FLESHER

Zealand University. He was a founder of Victoria University College, where he was appointed Instructor in political science and mathematics. In 1898 Fleming became a member of the council and in 1907 chairman. In 1901 he was made chief inspector in the Wellington district. In 1915 a senior inspector under the Education department, and in 1917 he was transferred to Otago. He retired in 1926.

Fleming introduced the home-reading movement and then founded the New Zealand section of the Australasian Home Reading Association. He was a member of the New Zealand University senate, of the Council of Education, of the district council of the Workers' Educational Association of Otago, and of the Wellington Training College committee. He was also an elder of the Presbyterian Church. On his death (on 14 Sep 1930) he was survived by his wife, Marion, daughter of Hugh Smitll of Melbourne.

*Cycl. N.I.*, i (p); Hight and Candy (p); *Who's Who N.I.*: 1924; *Otago Witness*, 16 Sep 1930; *The Dominion*, 15 Sep 1930.

FLESHER, JAMES ARTHUR (1865-1930) was born in Christchurch, and educated at Christ's College. He held a Gould scholarship. He was employed by the legal firm of Wilding and Lewis, and later by Joynt and Acton Adams, and was admitted to the bar in 1899.

Flesher was a member of the Christchurch City Council (1891-93) and again from 1917, becoming deputy-mayor in 1921 and mayor (1923-25). He was also mayor of New Brighton (1912-13, 1915-17) and a councillor from 1911; a member of the Christchurch tramway board (1906-18, 1921-27) and chairman (1913-16); of the Richmond school committee and domain board, the Christchurch domain board (1919-21); the Waimakariri river trust board (1927) and the Christchurch and Avon licensing committees. He took an active interest in the Red Cross society and St John's Ambulance association and the Methodist Church. He was president of the Christchurch Musical society (1915-18), chairman of the McLean Institute and of the Canterbury Pilgrims' association (1923). Flesher was a founder of the Canterbury Progress league in 1918, and president in 1929. (O.B.E. 1918.) He married (1900) Margaret Lucy, daughter of Robert Deahin. He died on 18 Aug 1930.

## FLIGHT

*Cycl. N.I.*, iii; *Who's Who N.I.*, 1908, 1924; *Christ's Call. Reg.*; *The Press*, 19 Aug 1930.

FLETCHER, JOHN SHEARER (1888-1934) was born at Kirkintilloch, Scotland, and obtained his whole education through scholarships. At the age of 24 he was headmaster of technical and commercial classes under the Kirkintilloch school board. He was the Glasgow secretary of the Scottish class teachers' association and on the executive of the Scottish education institute, and vice-president of the Young Men's Christian association. In 1916 he came to New Zealand and joined his brothers in the Fletcher Construction Co., for which he was Dunedin manager.

Retiring from business, Fletcher took a keen interest in the Young Men's Christian association and other social movements. In 1928 he was elected M.H.R. for Grey Lynn (as a supporter of the United Party). He afterwards took an independent attitude and lost his seat in 1931. He died on 15 Feb 1934.

*Who's Who N.I.*, 1932; *N.z. Herald*, 16 Feb 1934.

FLETCHER, ROBERT (1866-1918) was born at St Andrews, Scotland, and educated there. He was for some time with the Midland Railway Co., and spent eight years at sea before the mast. He landed in New Zealand in 1883 and found work in the Kaipara and Bay of Plenty coasting trade. In 1885 he became a wheeler for the Wellington harbour board and later improved his position. He took part in the maritime strike (1890). He was afterwards shipping clerk for J. Nathan and Co. for six years and then (with a fellow clerk) started a carrying and shipping agency.

Fletcher was a member of the Wellington harbour board from 1906 till his death (on 4 Sep 1918), and chairman (1910-15) and a member of the City Council (1907-15). He represented Wellington Central in Parliament (1914-18). He was a prominent freemason and member of the order of Druids.

*N.I.P.D.*, 25 Oct 1918; Beauchamp; *N.I. Times*, 2 Sep 1918.

FLIGHT, JOSIAH (1800-84) was born at Tiverton, Devon, educated there and apprenticed to a wide merchant at Lyme Regis, Dorset, where he started in business on his own account. He married Ann, daughter of James Devenish, and in 1842 came to New Plymouth in the

## FLURSCHEIM

*Timandra* with his brother-in-law and took up land at Mangaoraka, on the road to Waitara. Native troubles and the award of Governor FitzRoy caused him to abandon this farm.

One of the earliest justices in Taranaki, Flight was in 1852 appointed to succeed Captain King as magistrate at New Plymouth and sub-treasurer for the province. Later he was also sheriff and coroner, and in 1860 collector of customs. During the Maori war his duties as captain of militia and as magistrate were delicate and trying. On one occasion he assembled the residents to ask for military protection for the province, and in 1855 he called out the whole of the white male population for training as special constables. He had many disputes of a purely tribal nature to adjudicate in and was once indebted for his life to the protection of Katatore. A district judge was appointed in 1858 and Flight retired 10 years later. He and Devenish brought some of the first sheep to Taranaki, and also many English fruit trees and flowers (such as primroses and violets). He was a prominent social reformer and associated himself with every movement for the amelioration of the condition of both races. With the Rev W. Cannell he formed the first temperance society amongst the military (1861); and he assisted Whiteley to found the first total abstinence society amongst the Maori (1864). He was a charter member of lodge Egmont, L.O.G.T. (1873).

As a churchman Flight laid the foundation stone of the first Wesleyan Church, in Liardet street (13 Mar 1856). On 1 Jan 1862 he laid that of the Primitive Methodist Church; and on 11 Mar 1868 the place of worship of his own denomination, the Baptists, was opened, largely through his efforts. In secular matters he was a keen advocate of Taranaki ironsand and the harbour project. Flight died on 7 Mar and his widow on 3 Sep 1884.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc. and Gaz; N.Z. Gaz; NZ. Law jour.*, 11 Nov 1928; Wells; *Taranaki Herald*, 8 Mar 1884; *Taranaki News*, 15 Mar 1884; *Cycl. N.Z.* vi (p). Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

FLURSCHEIM, MICHAEL, was born at Frankfurt, Germany (1844), left school at the age of 16, and entered the banking house of his uncle, L. A. Hahn. He spent a year in Berlin, and then entered a share-broking and exchange firm in Paris. In 1867 he became a wholesale manu-

## FOOKS

facturer and importer in New York and, returning to his native city in 1872, he published there the *American News* for the benefit of Americans in Germany. In 1873 he purchased the Gaggenau ironworks, which he developed into one of the leading hardware concerns in Baden. Flurschein retired from business and travelled again widely. He was interested in currency reform and tried to induce certain interests in England to form an exchange currency of their own. In 1898 he came to New Zealand and endeavoured for some years to promote the idea of land nationalisation and currency reform. He gave evidence before the federation commission (1901) and published a number of books, including *Rent, Interest and Wages, Money Island* (1897); *Business Without Gold* (1898); and *The Clue to the Economic Labyrinth*. He also published in Wellington, as a supplement to *The Guardian, The Pioneer Of Social Reform* (1899).

*Cycl. N.Z.* ii (p); Scholefield, *Union Catalogue; TVho's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

FOLEY, EDMUND (1811-84) was a native of Tipperary, Ireland. He married a sister of Sir John O'Shanassy (premier of Victoria). Foley came to New Zealand from Australia about 1839, and in the early forties brought his family over and settled at Cornwallis (Manukau harbour). In 1843 he moved to Auckland and commenced business as a butcher. Some years later he opened the first licensed hotel at Otahuhu, where he had extensive farming lands on both sides of the bridge. From 1859-61 he represented the Southern division in the Provincial Council. Though deeply interested in provincial politics he did not again take an active part. During the Waikato war Foley took up large commissariat contracts for the troops in the Waikato and East Coast and he was a witness of the fighting at Gate Pa.

His son, JAMES FOLEY (1836-78) was M.P.C. for Pensioner Settlements (1861-66).

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*, 1859-66; *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Jun 1878, 25 Aug 1884.

FOOKS, CHARLES EDWARD (1829-1907) was the son of Charles Berjew Fooks and was born at Weymouth. He was educated at Salisbury and Edmonton, London, served his articles with a London architect and surveyor, and trained as

## FORD

a civil engineer. He married at the age of 21 and came to New Zealand in the *Steadfast* (1851). At first he was in the survey office of the Canterbury Association and afterwards practised as an architect, being the designer of the first church at Avonside. He took up a run of 5,000 acres alongside the Papanui road, of which the better portions were soon bought by speculators. The balance was difficult to work owing to swamps and Fooks lost money on it. He then returned to his profession.

In the late sixties Fooks was asked by Colonel Brett (q.v.) to make a survey to prove the feasibility of watering the plains by irrigation from the rivers. About 1869 he constructed about 12 miles of race on C. Reed's property at Westfield, which are still being used by the Ashburton county council. In 1871 he reported on the irrigation of the region from the Waimakariri to Rolleston, and in the following year £10,000 was voted by the Provincial Council for this work. Fooks was the first borough engineer of Ashburton. He died in 1907.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*, 1 Aug 1871, 4 Dec 1872; Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Lyttelton Times*, 14 Jan 1886.

FORD, SAMUEL HAYWARD, a medical practitioner, reached New Zealand with his wife in Aug 1837, intending to establish a hospital for both races at one of the mission stations. He settled at Paihia as surgeon to the missionary community, but his health failing he retired to Wahapu (1841). After the sack of Kororareka, at Heke's request Mrs. Ford arranged for the body of Pūmuka to be taken to Paihia for burial. On the urgent advice of Williams Ford went to live in Auckland, but returned to the Bay in 1849. Shortly after Ford's arrival in New Zealand he attended 800 native sufferers from influenza. He died in the seventies.

Wallace and Sherrin (p); Williams papers; Marsden L. and J.; *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Jan 1894.

FORD, WILLIAM JUSTICE (1853-1904), the eighth headmaster of Nelson College (1886-89), was a member of a famous cricketing family. He played for Cambridge University and Middlesex county and wrote much on the game, including a history of the University club, a biography of W. G. Grace and the cricket article in the *Encyclopedia of Sport*. He was educated at Repton School and St John's College, Cam-

## FORSAITH

bridge (minor and foundation scholar). He graduated B.A. in 1876 (2nd cl. classical tripos) and M.A. in 1878, and taught at the Royal Grammar School at Lancaster for two years and at Marlborough College (1877-86). After Ford left Nelson he was headmaster at Leamington College (1890-93), and taught later at Eton, Rugby, Cheltenham and Repton. He died on 3 Apr 1904: Ford married Miss K. M. Brownning (Nelson).

*Nelson Coll. Register; The Times*, 4 Apr 1904.

FORRESTER, THOMAS (1838-1907) was born in Glasgow, his father being a modelling and decorative plasterer. He studied at the School of Art and, having married, sailed in the *Pladda* in 1860 for Otago. He engaged in his trade in Dunedin and was for a while with Mason and Wales, architects, and later with R. A. Lawson superintending the erection of public buildings. He was supervisor of the Dunedin Exhibition building (1865) and was afterwards employed by the provincial government making borings for the Waitaki bridge. He established himself in business in Oamaru with John Lemon and they built St Paul's and Columba Churches and the post office. In 1871 Forrester was appointed secretary and inspector of works to the harbour board and he supervised the construction of the breakwater mole. He started dredging the harbour and designed the Holmes wharf. He drew one of the earliest geological maps in New Zealand. With Dr H. A. de Lautour he did much research into the diatomaceous deposits of the Oamaru district. Forrester died on 25 Mar 1907.

*Oamaru Mail*, 26 Mar 1907; *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Apr 1907.

FORSAITH, THOMAS SPENCER (1814-98) was born in London. His father, Samuel Forsaith, a linen draper and haberdasher, was of Scots extraction, and both father and mother (Elizabeth Emberson) were Congregationalists of the strict Primitive type.

Apprenticed at an early age to a Croydon draper and silk mercer, Forsaith disliked his occupation and, determined to get to sea, engaged as a cabin boy in a collier bound for the Tyne. His intention was discovered by the Rev John Varty before the ship sailed, and he was returned to his parents, who, hoping to disgust him with a seaman's life, sent him in a collier

FORSAITH

on one voyage. He was then apprenticed as cadet to the shipping firm of Charles Horsfall and Co., and made three voyages to the East Indies in the ship *Huddersfield* (Captain Noakes). Returning to London with excellent testimonials, he found that his father had died. As fourth officer in the ship *Hoogley*, which was chartered by the government to take convicts to Botany Bay, he sailed for the Antipodes in Jul 1834. Once again he visited Australia, in the *Lord Goderich*, which left England Jul 1836 and called at some of the northern ports of New Zealand for spars. While in England Forsaith made the acquaintance of Elizabeth Mary Clements, daughter of Robert Clements, of Hoxton, London, and they were married on 17 May 1838, at the Congregational Church in Old Broad street-one of the earliest weddings legally celebrated in a dissenting place of worship.

Shortly after the wedding the young couple left for New Zealand with the intention of making a home here. Leaving his wife at Bay of Islands, Forsaith settled first at Mangungu, on the Hokianga river, and then he moved to the Kaipara. He purchased land from the natives at Mangawhare and on the Wairoa and Otamatea rivers, and assisted to make purchases for some Sydney merchants (Wright and Grahame). Mrs Forsaith now joined her husband at Mangawhare, where he engaged in farming and the timber trade. In Nov 1841 a skull was dug up on the land and three months later a large party of natives raided the farm to exact muru for a supposed offence. In the absence of Forsaith they carried off doors and windows. At an inquiry held at Mangawhare in the presence of the protector (Clarke) and G. M. Waterhouse, (q.v.) Forsaith was absolved of offence against native customs, and was later granted compensation for his losses. He left Mangawhare to live in Auckland, whither the Government had just been moved from Russell.

Owing to his experience of the natives and knowledge of the language the Government in Mar 1842 appointed him a sub-protector of aborigines. A year later he was promoted to be a protector. In this capacity he came into contact with Governor FitzRoy, whom he accompanied early in 1844 to Cook Strait and to the gathering at Waikanae after the affray at the Wairau. In Feb 1844 he was present at

FORSAITH

the signing of the Te Aro deed of purchase at Port Nicholson, and later he acted as interpreter for Richmond and Selwyn in bringing about peace between the tribes at Wanganui. In 1845, in his official capacity, he met Te Rauraraha on his visit to Wellington, and rode by his side into the town. Shortly after Grey's assumption of the governorship Forsaith's office was abolished. There were differences of opinion on matters of policy and charges were later made against Forsaith by the Governor in respect to the part supposed to have been taken by the protectors in private land dealings. Grey eventually withdrew his charges against Forsaith (the full correspondence being published in the House of Commons' papers relating to New Zealand).

Declining an invitation to resume duty in the new Native Department, Forsaith in 1847 went into business in Auckland as a draper. In 1852 his new premises in brick and stone were amongst the finest in the young city. For some years he was a prominent and popular figure in Auckland and a leader in its social life. In Sep 1852 he was elected to represent the Northern Division in the Legislative Council of New Ulster (which was never convened). When the first elections took place for the General Assembly (Sep 1853) he was returned for the Northern Division. Parliament assembled in Auckland in 1854 and was soon involved in a heated controversy on responsible government. Forsaith, more cautious than the Fitzgerald party, was reluctant to force the innovation on the Administrator (Wynyard) until he had had an opportunity of consulting the Colonial Office. Though he voted alone against 28 members in favour of a reasonable period of delay he afterwards strongly advocated giving the new system a fair trial. In Aug 1854, when Wynyard was being advised by Wakefield, Forsaith was one of 10 who refused to vote against him, on the ground that he was in a false position. The Assembly having been prorogued for a fortnight, Forsaith was summoned by the administrator to form a ministry. He was engaged at tile time at his business premises, but hurriedly 'changed his garb' before proceeding to Government House, an incident which led to his short government being referred to as 'the Clean-Shirt Ministry.' This ministry, which included also E. J. Wakefield, Travers and Mac-

FORSAITH

andrew, held office only from 31 Aug to 2 Sep. Though really the leader, Forsaith explained that 'he did not occupy the position of head of the Government in that House. He considered his colleagues as his equals; no one of them was before the others.' In his opening speech the Administrator said he hoped that the controversy would be buried in oblivion; he had endeavoured by appointments to the executive council to give to all the provinces an effectual voice and influence in both the legislative and executive proceedings of the government. In the debate on the address-in-reply Forsaith claimed to stand for a Whig policy as against the 'Tory or squattorial policy of FitzGerald.' The Government was defeated by 22 votes to 10, and it resigned office on 2 Sep.

Throughout the remainder of the first Parliament Forsaith was the ostensible leader of his party and an able exponent of Liberal principles: A sound thinker and a good speaker well informed, he took a broad view of most questions. His opinions on native matters were sensible and helpful. At the earliest sittings he carried a motion in favour of opening the proceedings with a prayer, but insisted that nothing should be done which might tend to grant to any religious body pre-eminence over the others (26 Aug 1854). For the same reasons a year later he carried a resolution protesting against the salary of Bishop Selwyn being provided out of colonial funds (28 Aug 1855). At the dissolution of 1855 Forsaith found his popularity had waned and he lost his seat in the Assembly (Henderson 363, Lee 294, Forsaith 292, May 213). At the same time he contested unsuccessfully a seat in the Auckland Provincial Council. Four members were required, and he was sixth amongst seven candidates.

Forsaith now devoted himself more closely to his business, and, it is said, acted for about twelve months as editor of the *New Zealand*.

In 1857 he was appointed a J.P. In Apr 1858 he was once more elected to the House of Representatives (for the City of Auckland). In this Parliament he supported the ballot with the remark: 'If it exercised a conservative influence that would furnish to his mind one of the strongest reasons for supporting it, as a means of checking that democratic tendency which was so unmistakably exhibited in colonial politics.' (8 Jul 1858.) Forsaith's strong sympathy for

FORSAITH

the Maori led him to take a determined stand in regard to the war. His generous defence of Wi Kingi during the important debates in Aug 1860 created dismay amongst the supporters of the Government, and when the elections came again Forsaith was looked at askance by a considerable section of the people of Auckland, whose fears of a native rising were not altogether without reason. Though he had made it clear that the war, having been embarked upon, must be fought to a successful end, his opponents in the electorate made capital of his pro-Maori feelings, and he was soundly defeated (for Auckland East) by Thomas Russell (q.v.). 'When he retired from the contest, at 11 a.m., he had polled only 19 votes against his opponent's 110.

This contest closed Forsaith's parliamentary career. He remained in business in Auckland until the middle of 1862, when he retired with some idea of entering the church. Always a strong evangelical, he had taken a leading part in Congregational meetings whenever occasion offered. He signed the confession of faith of the Presbyterian Church in Auckland (1850), but always preferred the Congregational. When he left to settle in Dunedin (1862) he resigned from the trusteeship of the Auckland Savings Bank, and a few months later was a trustee of a similar institution in Dunedin. In 1863 he became a vice-president of the Y.M.C.A., and a few weeks later a member of the local committee for the Exhibition of 1865. He spoke at Congregational meetings in and about the city, and for some time was associated with the new journal, *The Colonist*, whose first manager (Lambert) had been recommended by him to Macandrew. Before long Forsaith accepted a charge under the Presbyterian Church as missionary at Tuapeka, and he contemplated entering the ministry of that Church. He was recommended in 1864 as being eminently qualified for acceptance, but in Jan 1865 the presbytery requested him to continue his theological studies for another two years. In Jul of that year he was duly ordained to the pastorate of the new Congregational Church at Port Chalmers. In 1867 Forsaith was invited to take charge for two years of the Congregational church at Point Piper, Woollahra, New South Wales. While there, at the instance of his friend, the Hon John Fairfax, he undertook to

FORSYTH

establish a church at Parramatta, and he started preaching in the mechanics' institute there in 1870. The foundation stone of the church was laid the following year, and in 1873 the edifice was opened (at a cost for land and building of from £3,000 to £4,000). When he left Parramatta (1878) there was a debt of £700 on the church, towards the extinguishment of which as a jubilee effort he donated £250.

Forsyth resigned the Parramatta pastorate, at the request of friends, to accept the resident chaplaincy of the Camden Theological College. While there he founded a mission cause at Haslam's Creek (later Hampden). After four years at Camden he returned to Parramatta and commenced to labour at Summer Hill, where in 1882 he founded a progressive church. He was for one year (1872) chairman of the Congregational Union of New South Wales, and he acted as its registrar. On leaving Summer Hill Forsyth, with his wife, paid a long visit to Canada, the United States and Europe. He gave many lectures in Great Britain, which attracted emigrants towards New Zealand; and he officiated for some time in the Presbyterian Church at Venice. When he returned to New South Wales in 1884 he thought it imprudent to accept a new charge, but for some years filled vacancies in Australia and New Zealand (especially in Dunedin and Invercargill).

While Forsyth lived in Dunedin the Rev Dr Stuart wished to write his biography, but died before entering upon the task. Forsyth commenced his own memoirs early in 1898. In that year he and his wife celebrated their diamond wedding. Forsyth died at Parramatta on 29 Nov 1898, and his widow survived him only a few months. (See T. M. MacDONALD.)

Hansard, 1853-55; G.B.O.P., 1846; Buller; Saunders; Mennell; Rusden; Reeves; Hight and Bamford; Cox; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Thomson, ii; Elihu Shaw in *NZ. Herald*, 13 Jul 1935; G. Smales, do. 6 Jan 1894; *NZ. Herald*, 4 Apr 1891, 21 May 1892, 7 Apr 1894, 21 Jul 1929; *Evening Post*, 18 Aug 1934 (p).

FORSYTH, SAMUEL (1891-1918) was born in Wellington, the son of Thomas Forsyth. He was employed as a goldmining amalgamator when he volunteered for service in the New Zealand Expeditionary Force (13 Aug 1914). Forsyth was wounded on Gallipoli (Aug 1915), when he served with the engineers. In France

FOWLDS

he was promoted to lance-corporal, Dec 1916; corporal, Nov 1917; sergeant, May 1918. On 24 Aug 1918 Forsyth rushed several machine gun posts which were obstructing the New Zealand advance on a village and by dashing leadership and total disregard for danger captured all of them. He afterwards, in spite of being wounded, approached the enemy positions on foot to guide a British tank to a favourable position. When the tank was put out of action he organised the crew into a section and led them against enemy machine gun posts until he was killed by a sniper. He was posthumously awarded the V.C.

Annabel, *Official History of the N.Z. Engineers*, 1922 (p); *London Gaz.*, 21 Oct 1918; N.Z.E.F. routine order; *The New Zealander* (London), 25 Oct 1918.

FOSTER, THOMAS SCHOLFFILD (1853-1918) was born in London, came to New Zealand in the *Philip Laing* (1856) and was educated at Christ's College (1866-71), where he was junior and senior Somes scholar. At Canterbury College he graduated B.A. (1881; senior University scholar) and M.A. (1882) while he was on the staff of the Christchurch West School and the Boys' High School. He was headmaster of Christchurch West (1882-1904); inspector of schools for North Canterbury (1904) and principal of the Training College and lecturer in education at Canterbury College. Foster was the first chairman of convocation of the University (1884-87); a fellow of Christ's College (1893-1918) and a governor of Canterbury College. He died on 8 Sep 1918.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Christ's Coll. List.*; Hight and Candy (p).

FOWLDS, SIR GEORGE (1860-1934) was born at Fenwick, Ayrshire, the son of Matthew Fowlds, a handloom weaver who lived to the age of 101. As a boy George worked at the loom making linen sheets and on his father's farm. At the age of 12 he left the Hairshaw School in Waterside village and was apprenticed to a clothier in Kilmarnock. Four years later he joined the staff of a soft goods house in Glasgow, where he was able at night to attend the Andersonian College.

In 1882 Fowlds went to South Africa, where his first job was with a stone mason laying kerbstones in Capetown. Later he cleaned railway

FOWLDS

carriages, and then went to Beaufort West, where he got a position as book-keeper in a general store at Builfontein. In 1884 he married Mary Ann Fulton, of Fenwick, and, the climate not suiting her health, they left for New Zealand (1885). In Auckland Fowlds worked as a general labourer until finding a post as salesman in a mercery store. In 1886 he purchased a small business in Victoria street. Two years later he bought the stock and fixtures of a bankrupt clothier in Victoria arcade, and laid the foundations of his business. Being joined by his son in 1905 he was thus enabled to devote more time to public affairs and social movements in which he was interested. He had already been a member of the school committee and the Mount Albert road board.

A Liberal in politics, Fowlds stood for the Auckland seat in 1896 without success, but in 1899 was returned (with Witheford and Napier) for Auckland City, which he represented till 1902. In that year he was elected for Grey Lynn, which was his constituency till 1911. After the death of Seddon Fowlds was invited to join the Ward cabinet, in which he administered with zeal and success the departments of Education and Public Health. He also during the administration of Ward, had charge of the portfolios of Customs, Defence, Justice, Hospitals and State Fire Insurance. In 1910 he represented the Dominion at the opening of the Union Parliament of South Africa.

In Sep 1911, discontented with what he regarded as the negative Liberalism of the Government, Fowlds resigned from the cabinet, feeling that he could do better for the country out of office. Standing as a Social Democrat in the ensuing general election, he was defeated by J. Payne (the Government candidate), and again at the election of 1914. His last effort to re-enter the popular chamber was in 1919. Fowlds favoured free trade, the elective executive and the referendum and was a strong supporter of single tax, in the interests of which he ran a small paper for many years. He had a passionate love of education. He was chairman of Auckland University College for 13 years and was largely responsible for the foundation of Massey College, of which he was chairman from its inception in 1927 till his death. He was a member also of the senate of the University of New Zealand.

FOX

In religious life Fowlds was a mainstay of the Beresford Street Congregational Church and was twice president of the Congregational Union of New Zealand. He was devoted to the cause of temperance, being twice a vice-president of the New Zealand Alliance and president of the Auckland executive. As a freemason he was provincial grandmaster for Auckland in 1894-95 and deputy-grandmaster for New Zealand in 1896. He was also a prominent Rotarian, being one of the founders of the organisation in New Zealand and its first president. Other movements in which he was actively interested were the Workers' Educational Association, the Red Cross Society, the 8t John Ambulance Association (he was a Knight of Grace); the Costley Home, the Boy Scouts association, the Orphans Club and Burns Club; the New Zealand Land Values league and Proportional Representation Society. He received the C.B.E. for work in connection with the war of 1914-18 and was knighted in 1928.

*N.Z.P.D.*; J. K. Fairlie, *Matthew Fowlds . . . and other Fenwick Worthies* (1910); *NZ. Draper*, 30 Nov 1921 (p); *N.Z. University minutes*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1932; *Evening Post*, 17 Aug 1934. Portrait: Parliament House.

FOWLER, HARRY LEWIS (1861-1927) was educated at Rugby and at Balliol College, Oxford. (M.A.). In 1885 he was appointed headmaster of the Madrasa-i-Azam, in Madras, and acting-professor of history at the Presidency College there. In 1891 he joined the staff of the Southland High School as first assistant and two years later became headmaster. Though somewhat austere in manner, he had a great influence upon the school. In 1904 he became principal of Nelson College, and he occupied that position till his retirement in 1921. He died on 10 Feb 1927.

*Southland B.H.S. Reg.*; *Nelson Coll. O.B. Reg.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v.

FOX, EBENEZER (1827-86) was apprenticed to printing in England and completed his time as a compositor. He studied Pitman's shorthand and was an expert notetaker. For some years he was a member of the staff of the *Manchester Examiner and Times*, which employed him reporting political speeches and important events. For reasons of health Fox emigrated to Australia in 1852, spent 10 years in journalism there and in 1862 came to Dunedin, where he found

employment on the *Otago Daily Times*, recently established by Vogel. Here he became chief reporter and by his legal reports made a reputation for 'the paper which was maintained by subsequent staffs. In 1868 Fox joined Vogel and Campbell in an offer to lease the paper, and next year they were associated in the establishment of the *New Zealand Sun*. This lasted only a few months, and Fox then went with Vogel to Auckland, to assist in his control of the *Southern Cross*. A few months later he became private secretary to Vogel and in 1870 secretary to the cabinet, which position he filled until about 1885, when he retired. He died on 8 Jan 1886.

*Otago Daily Times' Diamond Jubilee; N.Z. Times*, 9 Jan 1886.

FOX, EDWARD BURTON, was born at Musselburgh, Scotland, his father being provost of the town. As a young man he was a good horseman and a member of the Midlothian Yeomanry Cavalry. He emigrated to Victoria and had an adventurous life on the goldfields. Crossing later to New Zealand, he was for a while in Wellington and then settled on the West Coast. For some years he was storekeeping and gold buying at Brunner. He was chairman of his road board and in 1872 a member of the Westland county council. He wrote *The Nobbler* (by Christopher Sly, revised and corrected by E. B. Fox). Fox died about 1875.

'Vestian C.C. Proc.: Hindmarsh.

FOX, FRANCIS JOHN (1857-1902) was the son of Jemmett George Fox, of county Longford, Ireland. He entered the Royal Artillery in 1876 and served in Burma and in Afghanistan (1880), being present at the defence of Kandahar as orderly officer to General Brooke. He saw service in the Boer war in Natal (1881) and was afterwards adjutant of divisional garrison artillery in England and aide-de-camp to the officer commanding the south-eastern district. At Suakim (1885) he served with mountain batteries. After holding several staff appointments he was nominated (in 1891) as Commandant of the Forces in New Zealand. Fox retired in 1893, with the rank of colonel in the New Zealand militia. He married (1894) Lucy, daughter of Sir William Russell. He died on 27 Feb 1902.

*Otago Daily Times*, 20 Dec 1891; *The Times*, 5 Mar 1902.

FOX, SIR WILLIAM (1812-93) was the third son of George Townshend Fox, deputy-lieutenant of the county of Durham. Educated at Durham Grammar School, he proceeded to Wadham College, Oxford (1828), where he graduated B.A. (1832) and M.A. (1839). At the end of 1838 he entered at the Inner Temple and he was called (1842). He published a treatise on the law of simple contracts and in 1842 an essay on *Colonisation and New Zealand*.

Having decided to emigrate to New Zealand, Fox married Sarah, daughter of William Halcombe, of Poulton, Wiltshire, and a few months later they sailed in the *George Fyfe* (arriving at Wellington on 7 Nov 1842). Fox intended to become a regular settler, but it is not clear whether he really wished to practise law. In any case this course was impossible because he was called upon to make a declaration which he considered humiliating for an English gentleman, and accordingly refused. Instead he became editor of the *New Zealand Gazette and Blittannia Spectator*, which he controlled vigorously in the interests of the New Zealand Company's settlers. In 1843, in company with Clifford, Vavasour and Whitehead, Fox made an extensive exploration of the Wairarapa district in search of suitable land for settlers. A few weeks later, when Arthur Wakefield (q.v.) was killed in the affray at Wairau, he was offered the post of resident agent for the Company at Nelson.

Having resigned the editorship of the *Gazette*, he took up his position in Sep 1843 and made a striking success of it. The settlement was despondent as the result of the reverse at Wairau, the shrinkage of employment and failure to obtain possession of farming lands. Fox took active steps to restore confidence and to widen the outlook of the colonists. Early in 1845, in company with Stephens (late chief surveyor of the Company) and a few others, he established a practicable route between Queen Charlotte Sound and the Wairau. Shortly afterwards Colonel Wakefield confirmed Fox in his position, with the reversion of the post of principal agent. The directors in London had frequent occasion to express approval of Fox's conduct, particularly his firmness and discretion in meeting native difficulties.

On 1 Feb 1846, in company with Brunner,

Heaphy and a native, Fox started across country to Rotoiti, which had already been discovered by Cottrell and named Lake Armur (after Captain Wakefield). Thence they proceeded to a wide stretch of pasture containing 15,000 acres, which Spooner and Heaphy had discovered, and from there across new country to Rotoroa (which Fox called Howick), and out on to a grassy plain of 4,000 acres intersected by a stream (which he named the Mangles). They then travelled to Matukituki and the Aglionby valley, their farmest point being 140 miles from Nelson. Fox persuaded Brunner to undertake a journey immediately down the coast from Cape Farewell to the mouth of the Buller river. In Feb 1848 Fox was appointed attorney-general for New Munster, but he remained at his post for another three months in order to distribute the rural lands and settle the claims of the land purchasers. During this time he heard that there was likely to be further delay in the inauguration of representative institutions. He accordingly resigned the attorney-generalship and planned to pay a three months' visit to the Australian colonies. At the request of Grey, however, he agreed to investigate land claims, and was so engaged until Aug. Bell, having met with an accident, was unable yet to take up his new post at Nelson. In Sep Colonel Wakefield died and Fox succeeded him as principal agent at Wellington. He prevailed on Bell to remain at Nelson and also to make an effort to purchase native lands in the Wairarapa.

Meanwhile the Church of England settlement was being planned. Late in 1848 Fox sailed with Captain Thomas to search for a suitable site in the South Island. He declined the offer of a seat in the Legislative Council, and the vacant attorney-generalship was presented to D. Wakefield (Dec 1848). On returning from the south he found that Bell had not succeeded with his Wairarapa mission and he was inclined to hold Bell responsible. Bell's acceptance of a seat in the Legislative Council (20 Dec 1848) accentuated an estrangement between the two, and on his return to Wellington (Mar 1849) Fox ordered Bell to repair to his post at Nelson, remarking that this was the third occasion on which he had taken an official position in opposition to the principal agent. Bell protested that Fox would have acted similarly, but

the directors in London upheld Fox's contention that Bell's acceptance of office might prejudice the interests of the Company.

In 1849 Fox took up a considerable area of land in Rangitikei, on which he established his homestead of Westoe. He farmed half of the block and cut up the remaining 2,500 acres into small farms which he sold on deferred payment to persons with small means.

The surrender of the charters of the New Zealand Company being imminent, Fox took an active part in the Settlers' Constitutional Association, and in 1850 proceeded to England as honorary political agent of the Association to further the self-governing constitution. Earl Grey declining to receive him personally, he forwarded a memorial complaining of the misgovernment and illegal proceedings of Sir George Grey (1852). Nevertheless Fox took an important part in drafting the constitution. In a letter to Godley (7 Jun 1852) E. G. Wakefield says; 'Fox's presence as delegate from the colony has been our chief tower of strength. Our work could not have been done without him. He has done much singlehanded by dint of intelligence, assiduity, modesty, prudence and courage: To him it was mainly due that Taranaki was a separate province from the outset, instead of being attached to Auckland. While in England Fox published *The Six Colonies of New Zealand* (1851) which was inspired by Newcastle in the hope that it would discredit the colonial policy of the Conservative party. Before returning to New Zealand he spent some months in Canada and the United States, thereby initiating a consistent habit of studying social conditions abroad. He was, indeed, the most widely-travelled student in New Zealand politics.

The new institutions being well launched when he arrived back in the colony, he was immediately elected to represent the City in the Wellington Provincial Council (Jun 1854-57). There he strongly supported Featherston and was in office almost continuously. He was a powerful protagonist in the constitutional struggles of Wakefield and Featherston. He represented Rangitikei (1857-62). Fox was a member of the commission set up in 1853 to report on education in the province. He was keenly interested also in electoral reform and as early as Apr 1858 persuaded the Council to

accept without division the ballot system of voting. He was a staunch advocate of the rights of the outdistricts, feeling that they were often neglected and discourteously treated by the provincial governments; yet it was due to his persuasion a few years later that the districts of Rangitikei and Wanganui did not seek separation as a new province. Instead, he strongly urged them to demand control of their own funds through the establishment of a county council. Fox was obviously marked for advancement in the wider sphere of colonial politics. His legal education, his valuable experience as an official of the Company and his wide knowledge of the world were of inestimable service to a rising political leader. Imbued with strong democratic opinions, he was a radical with republican leanings. Completely unselfish in his political life, he stood aside again and again for colleagues not always more worthy. He was disinclined for the limelight, and definitely preferred to seek reforms in the social sphere rather than in politics. Long before he retired from Parliament he was deeply involved in social movements which had a considerable bearing upon the welfare of the country in the eighties and nineties.

Fox entered Parliament as member for Wanganui in Dec 1855, and at the general election of 1860 won the Rangitikei seat, which he held until the middle of 1865. He had been in Parliament only a few months when he moved the resolution which unseated the Sewell ministry. His own cabinet, which was sworn in on 20 May 1856, included Hall, Charles Brown, Daldy and Ralph Richardson. It lasted only a fortnight. Thereafter, as an ardent philo-Maori, Fox came into marked antagonism with the Stafford government (1856-61). He deplored the Taranaki war and believed that Wiremu Kingi and the Waikato were being cruelly treated. His strong feeling on this question drew him back from an imminent retirement (1860) and made him the leader of the anti-war party. He distrusted intensely some of the colleagues of Stafford, notably Whitaker and Richmond. 'I had almost retired,' he said in Parliament years later, 'and was living on my farm at Rangitikei, but the unhappy events of the Taranaki war forced me, on the meeting of the Assembly, into the position of the leader of that party in this House whose business it

was to stand between the natives and the great injustices which were being perpetrated upon them: Seeing nothing but injustice in the vigorous prosecution of war against tribes which had been wronged, he led the attack against Stafford as soon as Parliament met, and on 12 Jul 1861 took office (with Featherston, Wood, Mantell, Williamson, Henderson, Pollen, Sewell and Crosbie Ward as colleagues). On the arrival of Sir George Grey as Governor, Fox welcomed him as the one man capable of dealing justly and firmly with native affairs. He believed in the incipient self-reliant policy to the extent that native affairs should not be separated from the other functions of responsible government. Though he had criticised Grey's autocratic behaviour as Governor 10 years earlier, Fox was confident that the Maori would receive justice at his hands.

As soon as Grey had assumed office (Oct 1861) he invited Fox to accompany him on a tour of the native districts. Both were shocked at the disaffection of leading chiefs and their lack of confidence in the General Assembly. Wiremu Tamihana, in particular, condemned the manner in which the House had condoned ill-treatment of loyal chiefs, and asserted that what it had once done it was capable of doing again. Gorst was established in the Waikato as a symbol of strength and peace, and every effort was made to conciliate the sorely tormented King leaders. United in their desire to pacify the Maori on a basis of mutual trust, Grey and Fox had almost forgotten their earlier asperities and seemed to be working in complete unanimity. Grey admitted that native affairs could not properly be divorced from the responsibility of the Colonial Government and the Colonial Office had already expressed itself in the same direction. That being so, Fox made a tactical blunder in moving a resolution asking the British Government to transfer complete control of native affairs to the Colony. A considerable majority in the House held this view, but opposition speakers represented it as an attempt to tie Grey's hands. The voting on the motion was equal, and Monro (the Speaker) took the unusual course of casting his vote against the Government in office.

On the advice of FitzGerald, Domett was sent for and asked to form a ministry. He accepted

the task and offered Fox a seat in the cabinet, which was declined. Domett took office accordingly (6 Aug 1862) with a cabinet which contained four of Fox's team but was dominated by such figures as Gillies, Bell and T. Russell. A year later Fox was again in office, but although he formed the ministry he eschewed the leadership. The premiership he gave to Whitaker while he took the colonial secretaryship and native affairs. The other ministers were Wood, T. B. Gillies and T. Russell. It was Oct 1863 and the Colony was once more involved in a native war. With a strong force of imperial troops and a steadily increasing number of colonials, Grey was forcing the pace in the Waikato, and even as early as this showed some impatience with the rather too deliberate movements of British generals. Fox was wholeheartedly for the war and had nothing to complain of in the vigorous manner in which Russell pushed on the campaign. During the year that the ministry was in office the battles of Rangiriri, Rangiaowhia, Orakau, Gate Pa and Te Ranga were won. The Whanganui and Taranaki tribes were badly beaten. Fox not only consented to the enactment of the suppression of rebellion act and the confiscation of vast blocks of land in the disaffected districts, but with his pen he vigorously defended the policy against English critics. By the irony of political circumstances, Fox the philo-Maori was now in opposition to Grey on this precise point. Grey defended the erring tribes against excessive severity in the confiscation of their lands, while the ministry demanded that the punishment should be measured by the needs of the Government rather than by the offence of the natives. The ministry resigned (24 Nov 1864) leaving the Governor to find a new leader at a moment when the colony's finances were embarrassed, and the British Government was applying pressure to induce the ministry to work amicably with Grey in the interests of the Maori.

Fox then left the Colony on a long tour of travel and study. When he returned to New Zealand, in the middle of 1868, he was welcomed with open arms by Stafford, who hoped that some patriot would at once offer him a seat in Parliament. Fox was engaged as counsel for the Government in the Rangitikei-Manawatu purchase and was not eager for office. He did return to Parliament (in Jun 1868) for his old

Rangitikei seat, which was vacated for his benefit by W. H. Watt; and he was at once accepted as the leader of the opposition. Entering into the fight with great spirit, Fox bombarded the Government with motions of censure and no-confidence particularly on its financial policy. The confiscations had done nothing to pay for the war, which was still dragging on disastrously on the West and East coast, and Te Kooti was yet to escape from the Chathams and spread dismay and devastation over the North Island. Grey resigned the administration to Bowen early in 1868 and proceeded to England.

On 13 Jul Fox demanded a clear statement of the Government's policy regarding the provincial system of government and native affairs. This really inaugurated the drive against the provincial system, of which Fox himself had for so long been a champion. He deplored the fact that Gladstone's advice had not been taken in 1852 by the interposition of some more satisfactory machinery between the provincial and general governments. Vogel made an impassioned defence of the provinces. The motion was defeated by 40 to 31. On 25 Sep McLean achieved a tie on a motion denouncing the Government's native policy. Before the session of 1869 the Government's position had deteriorated. Fox moved a resolution of no-confidence. It was carried by 40 votes to 29, and thus terminated Stafford's second five-year term of office. Fox took office on 28 Jun 1869, having as colleagues Vogel, McLean, Bell, Gisborne and Featherston. This was the only ministry in which he had any freedom of action. Finding the war dragging slowly to an end, with two expeditions in the field, the Government reversed the war policy of its predecessors and decided to make an end of it with as little of the bayonet as possible: It was a chance in the main for McLean to pacify the natives, who still had confidence in his justice and sympathy. In 1870 the last expedition was withdrawn from the field and Armed Constabulary parties protected gangs of workers, pakeha and Maori, making roads and bridges to open up the interior and reduce the liability to outbreaks in the future. Fox incurred some censure for allowing Te Kooti to remain at large.

For Vogel the chance was an 'opportune one. He was the first Treasurer for many years who had been able to bring down a budget which

was not loaded with the costs of an interminable and indecisive war. He declared veiled war on the provinces, linking with it his programme of borrowing for development and immigration. Fox was little more than the titular head of the ministry, but he did take his part in constructive legislation, passing the University of New Zealand act and the land transfer registration act. In 1871 he was for a while Registrar-general of lands. Later in his term of office Fox brought Sewell into the cabinet, but he retired after little more than a year of uncomfortable bickering with the masterful Vogel. Fox then recruited, Reeves, Ormond and Waterhouse (q.v., whom he had met in South Australia and welcomed to New Zealand public life). In the middle of 1872 he appointed Hall and H. J. Miller to the executive. A few weeks later his ministry was defeated and Stafford took office again (10 Sep 1872) with Fitzherbert, Sewell, Gillies, D. Reid, and Curtis as his colleagues, a cabinet of provincial stalwarts who perhaps hoped to stave off the doom of their system.

Stafford was defeated a month later. Vogel, who moved the no-confidence resolution, was sent for, and in consultation with Fox agreed to offer the leadership to Waterhouse, who was now in the Legislative Council. This ministry, which was to last for only six months, was an ill-omened effort to fuse inharmonious elements. Vogel was the real premier; Waterhouse (in the remoteness of the Legislative Council) the titular leader. Matters came to a head while Vogel was out of the country. Waterhouse insisted on resigning, and Fox once more consented to give his services in forming a government, this time at the urgent request of Bowen, who was impatient to take his departure at the end of his term as Governor. Fox accepted the leadership temporarily, held office for five weeks until Vogel returned to the Colony and then retired. He was never again in office, and henceforth devoted his time to social and philanthropic movements.

Retiring from Parliament in 1875, he again visited England, travelling by way of the United States. There he attended the grand lodge of Good Templars and visited the states of Maine, Vermont, Connecticut and New Hampshire to study the working of the liquor licensing laws and local option. In England he was elected

a vice-president of the United Kingdom Alliance and he gave many lectures on temperance in England, Scotland and Ireland. He addressed the Royal Colonial Institute on the affairs of New Zealand (1876). In his absence he was again elected to Parliament, taking the seat for Wanganui which Vogel had resigned (Sep 1876). Fox now found himself in opposition to Grey. He was more effective in opposition than in office and led many assaults on the policy and administration of the Government. Eventually Grey was decisively defeated (48 to 34) on an amendment proposed by Fox, condemning the personal conduct of the Native Minister (Sheehan), as having 'lowered the dignity of the Queen's Government and the pakeha' (Jur 1879). At the general election the Government lost its majority, but Fox himself was defeated for Wanganui and did not get back into the House until May 1880, when a new vacancy occurred for his old Rangitikei constituency (which he represented until the dissolution in 1880). In 1879 Fox was created a K.C.M.G. In 1880 he and Bell were appointed royal commissioners to investigate the problems of confiscated lands in Taranaki and the West Coast. After making his report with Bell he was charged with carrying out the recommendations. This task occupied him for the next four and a half years and was fulfilled faithfully and meticulously. In 1885 Parliament voted him £2,000 for his services. He disposed of his farm at Westoe and soon moved to Auckland, where he resided for the rest of his life.

During his last term of office as Premier (1871) Fox had introduced a bill to grant local option to districts in respect to liquor licensing, but it was not carried into law until after his retirement. He adhered to the policy of prohibition by the will of the people, without compensation to license holders. He founded the New Zealand Alliance on the lines of the English body (1886) and was its president for the remainder of his life, making generous donations to enable it to carry on its work. As early as 1874 Fox contributed a regular column on liquor law reform to the *New Zealand Times*.

A facile and incisive writer, Fox was constantly engaged in journalism, either regularly or as a contributor to leading newspapers. In his early political life he wrote 'Under the Clock' for the *Wellington Independent*. In

1860 he published *The War in New Zealand*, in which he contended that the Governor, and not the colonists, was to blame for the native troubles. Four years later, when his own Government was carrying on a war, a memorial was published by thirty prominent Englishmen expressing the hope that Grey would end it by negotiation and would not resort to confiscation of native lands. Appearing himself to have changed his native policy, Fox had published in England (1865) *The Revolt in New Zealand*, a collection of letters written to his brother, in which he contended that whereas the Taranaki war was based on unjust treatment of the Maori the war in Waikato was a rebellion pure and simple, full of danger arising from the activities of the Land League and the King movement. The same thesis he elaborated in 1866 in *The War in New Zealand*. In early life Fox was a radical with a strong tendency to republicanism, arising no doubt from close association with the United States and resentment against the policy of the Colonial Office. Later he passed through various shades of political thought. Though liberal in his views, he opposed the Young Liberal party under Grey. In 1887, after he had made his final retirement from politics, he wrote in the *Rangitikei Advocate* a series of articles (afterwards published in a pamphlet) in which he demonstrated that the political crisis of that time was not the result of Vogel's policy but arose from economic depression and from the dissemination of socialistic ideas and land theories by the parties of the day.

Gisborne, Reeves and Saunders have weighed up faithfully the character of Fox, each showing the weakness, or perhaps the idealism, which prompted this highly qualified leader to yield the title to men of more aggressive and less reliable qualities. He was a clever parliamentarian, an alert debater, a humorous and caustic speaker, remarkably well-informed. In politics he had no ambitions for his own preferment. He was willing at any moment to retire from the field and find solace in social activities. He was passionately interested in social reform and in the rights of the Maori. He was an accomplished water colour painter. Fox was physically strong, and delighted even in advanced years to indulge in strenuous exercise. He did much exploring in his early years in New Zealand and at the age of 80 climbed

Mount Egmont. He was a strong swimmer and twice saved his life by swimming, once in the West Indies and again in the Brunner river. He died on 23 Jun 1893, exactly a year after his wife. Lady Fox was active in philanthropic works in Auckland, notably in the Jubilee kindergarten movement.

N.Z.C. papers and printed reports; *N.Z. Gaz.*; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, v (p); Fox, *op. cit.*; *DN.B.*; J. G. Wilson; Saunders (p); MS. petition in Turnbull Library; Reeves; Gorst, *N.Z. Revisited*; Hocken; Rees; Gisborne; Lovat; Jourdain; Ward; Drummond; Broad; Wakelin; *Grey River Argus*, 9 Jan 1868; *Evening Post*, 29 Aug 1929 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, Oct-Dec 1889, 24 Jun, 7 Jul 1893. Portrait; Parliament House.

FRANCIS, FREDERICK WYATT (1856-1901) was born in Essex, son of John P. G. Francis, and came to Canterbury with his parents in the *Cornubia* in the following year. Educated at Gee's Grammar School, he was four years in the Post Office and then joined the firm of Crowe and Co., wine and spirit merchants. He was associated with Manning and Co. (1887-1901). Francis joined the Christchurch City Guards as a private, was appointed sub-lieutenant (1878), lieutenant 1881, captain and adjutant of the first Canterbury battalion (1885); major 1887; and later lieutenant-colonel commanding. He commanded the 4th New Zealand Contingent in South Africa (1900) and showed brilliant leadership at Malmani Hill (16 Aug). He was invalided with fever and died (on 31 Mar 1901) shortly after his return to New Zealand. Francis married (1880) a daughter of Charles O. Cox.

*N.Z. Army List*; Ranfurly; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 1 Apr 1901.

FRANKLAND, FREDERICK WILLIAM (1854-1916) was born at Manchester, the eldest son of Sir Edward Frankland, K.C.B., F.R.S. Educated at University College School (1866-69) and University College (1869-72) he was in his father's chemical research laboratories at the South Kensington Science Schools (1873-74).

Owing to ill-health Frankland came to New Zealand (1875) and in the following year entered the civil service as a clerk in the Customs, transferring later in the year to the Insurance department. In 1884 he was appointed Registrar of Friendly Societies and

## FRANKLYN

actuary to the Government Life Insurance department. Two years later he was appointed Government Actuary and Statist; in 1888 he became actuary and principal officer of the Government Life Insurance department, and in 1889 Commissioner. In the following year he resigned that post and paid a visit to England, where he was appointed assistant-actuary to the Atlas Assurance Co. In 1891 he attended the International Congress of Hygiene and Demography. In 1893 he accepted the post of associate-actuary to the New York Life Insurance office, and he remained in the United States for nine years, visiting England each year. During this period he was engaged on the mortality statistics of under-average lives, to which he made valuable contributions.

Ill-health compelled him to resign this post in 1902, and he came back to New Zealand, travelling by way of the Far East. He then settled down in Foxton, where he became a member of the borough council (1905-08) and of the school committee and took an interest in other sides of life. He contested the Manawatu seat (1909). In 1911 he was appointed examiner in statistical method and other subjects to the Education department.

Frankland was a man of high literary and scientific attainments, a lifelong student of theology, sociology and metaphysics, and the author of numerous papers in the proceedings of the Actuarial Society of America, the American Academy of Political Science, the London Mathematical Society, the American Mathematical Society, the American Economic Society and the American Association for the Advancement of Science. He was a friend of Herbert Spencer and an advanced thinker himself. To his friendship with Sir Harry Atkinson can be traced a definite influence upon Atkinson's social policy. As early as 1885 he was a socialist.

Frankland married (1879) Miriam, daughter of C. H. Symons, Foxton. His death occurred on 23 Jul 1916.

*Insurance Record*, 4 Aug 1916; *Successful Americans* (1916); *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); James Collier (in *The Press*), 13 Nov 1909; *Manawatu Evening Standard*, 24 Aug 1916.

FRANKLYN, WILLIAM NORRIS (1837-1919) held a commission in the 81st foot, which he resigned before coming to New Zealand. He

## FRASER

served in the Armed Constabulary and afterwards became a school teacher. He was one of the earliest settlers in the Grey Valley, and represented that district in the Nelson Provincial Council (1869-70). He afterwards settled at Wakefield and was a member of many local bodies, including the education board, the Nelson harbour board, the Waimea county council (1900), the charitable aid board, the licensing committee and the Nelson College board of governors (1902). As a volunteer he commanded the Waimea Rifles and took part in the Parihaka expedition. Franklyn was a keen follower of the turf and some years president of the Nelson Jockey Club. He died on 15 Jun 1919.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 16 Jun 1919.

FRASER, ALFRED LEVAVASOUR DURELL (1862-1919) was born at Kaiapoi, the son of John Marchant Fraser, and educated in Christchurch. He settled in Hawkes Bay in 1881, first as a school teacher at Frasertown and afterwards at Hastings. As a native land court advocate he displayed a facile command of Maori and knowledge of native lore. He was a member of the Hastings borough council and the licensing bench. In 1896 Fraser contested the Hawkes Bay seat against Sir W. Russell. At the following election he defeated R. D. D. McLean for Napier, which he represented 1899-1908. He was defeated by J. Vigor Brown in 1908, and contested Hawkes Bay without success in 1911. In 1918 he was called to the Legislative Council. He was a prominent race-horse owner. Fraser married (1893) Emily, daughter of W. Y. Dennett (Hastings). He died on 24 Feb 1919.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug, 2 Sep 1919; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 25 Feb 1919. Portrait: Parliament House.

FRASER, CHARLES, the first Presbyterian minister in Canterbury, was a man of considerable scientific attainments. He had been trained at Marischal College, Aberdeen, and graduated M.A.

Fraser arrived in Canterbury by the *Oriental* in Apr 1856 and preached forthwith to a large congregation in Lyttelton and on the following Sunday in Christchurch. In Feb 1857 he opened St Andrew's church, Christchurch, his parish extending to Kaiapoi on one side and Banks

## FRASER

Peninsula on the other. Taking advantage of the provincial education ordinance, Fraser and his friends established a number of schools with subsidies granted by the provincial funds and brought teachers out from Scotland. He was personally interested in higher education and to save the funds he himself taught the higher classes at one of these schools in Christchurch till 1874 when the experiment had to be abandoned. The school developed into the Christchurch Boys' High School. Fraser visited Hokitika, preached in French to the settlers at Akaroa; twice enlarged St Andrew's church, and created two new parishes out of his own. In 1866 he established on his own responsibility the first church periodical, the *New Zealand Presbyterian*. Fraser was a member of the Canterbury Collegiate Union from 1871 and lectured on English language and literature before the College was established. His ministry ceased in 1883 and he died in 1886.

Dickson; Hight and Candy.

FRASER, FRANCIS HUMPHRIS (1833-1911) was born in London and educated at Watson's School in Edinburgh. In 1864 he came to New Zealand in the *Wild Duck* and became a teacher in the Wesleyan school at Wellington. Three years later he started in business as a bookseller. He was a member of the Wellington City Council (1888-1900), of the hospital board (some time chairman), the education board and the harbour board (1892-1910; chairman 1897-98). He was active in friendly and temperance societies, being president of the Gospel and Temperance society and vice-president of the New Zealand Alliance.

In 1883 Fraser contested the Te Aro seat against C. J. Johnston, on whose resignation three years later he was elected, only to be defeated by Stuart Menteath at the general election a few months later. He tried twice (in 1893 and 1896) to regain a seat, but without success. Fraser was called to the Legislative Council in 1899 and retired at the end of his term (1906). He died on 6 Aug 1911.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 8, 9 Aug 1911; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 6 Aug 1911.

FRASER, JAMES (1841-70), who claimed descent from the Lovats, was born in Nova Scotia. He received his first commission in the 73rd Highlanders (1858) and saw service in

## FRASER

India (being promoted lieutenant 1859, and adjutant). He retired (1863) with the intention of serving for the North in the American Civil War, but on the fall of Richmond (Apr 1864) decided to take up land in New Zealand.

Fraser settled down in Hawkes Bay and received a captaincy in the militia (Aug 1864). When the Hauhau rising occurred he was offered command of the Hawkes Bay Military Settlers, and he at once took the field with a small force and rendered services of great value, for which he received rapid promotion. He particularly distinguished himself in 1865 at the attack on Pakairomiromi (2 Aug), Pukemaire (3 Oct) and Waerenga-a-hika, where he led the attack with 600 men and carried the position after five days' siege. Fraser was promoted brevet major (23 Sep 1865). On 25 Dec 1865 he fought a sharp engagement against the Hauhau at Omaru-hakeke. On 3 Jan 1866, at Te Kopane, Ropata's contingent, with the help of Fraser and other European officers, carried the position in good style.

Later in the year Fraser, now a lieutenant-colonel, was summoned from Wairoa with his Military Settlers to assist in repelling the Hauhau invasion of Hawkes Bay. Whitmore's orders were that Fraser should take up a position to intercept the enemy detachment approaching by way of Petane. On the morning of the action at Omarunui (12 Oct) Fraser met the invaders, under Te Rangihiroa, in a sharp defile and, having cut off their retreat, killed Te Rangihiroa and 11 men and captured most of the remainder. He was appointed to No 1 Division Armed Constabulary (his Military Settlers being disbanded), and was attached (May 1868) to St John's command operating against Tamaikowha in the Ruatoki and Whakatane valleys until floods broke off the operations. With a force of 50 men he marched through the enemy country from Wairoa to Poverty Bay, returning with an escort of only five. He did good service against Te Kooti at Wairoa and Ngatapa and then took his force again to Bay of Plenty, being appointed to command at Tauranga. Deceived by Te Kooti's movements, he sent an expedition to Paengaroa, while Mair, hastily gathering his native contingents, reached Rotorua in time to meet the invaders. Fraser died on 10 Mar 1870.

## FRASER

Cowan, ii; Whitmore; Lambert; Gudgeon (p); Gascoyne (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Mar 1870.

FRASER, THOMAS (1809-91) was born at Ledclune, Inverness-shire, the son of Captain Fraser (of a younger branch of the Lovat family). At the age of 16 he entered the service of the East India Company as an ensign in the 7th Bengal Cavalry. He retired in 1842 with the rank of captain. He was several times shipwrecked and once was the sole survivor of a vessel cast away on the French coast. Most of his ten brothers lost their lives on active service.

Fraser spent some years in France after his retirement, and in 1858 came to Wellington in the *Oliver Laing*. He settled in Otago, purchasing a station in Shag valley. Though he never entered the Provincial Council he was deputy-superintendent in 1868 for Macandrew, whom he strongly supported, and he was M.H.R. for Hampden (1861-63). Seven years later he was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat until his death on 24 Jun 1891.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 24 Jun 1891; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 25 Jun 1891; *Evening Post*, 28 Jun 1934. Portrait: Parliament House.

FRASER, WILLIAM (1827-1901) was born at Inverness, Scotland, and educated at the Academy there and at Edinburgh University. After serving articles to a solicitor in Inverness, he was two years in the office of Christie and Pagan, of Cupar (1848-50) and was admitted to the bar 1851. He married Elizabeth Horsburgh (d. 1906), daughter of the last hereditary sheriff clerk of Fifeshire. Soon after this he emigrated to Victoria, where he had some experience on the goldfields and came to New Zealand 1863 with Australian volunteers for the Waikato war. He served as captain in the first Waikato regiment, and was present at Te Ranga, Irihanga (Jan 1867), Whakamarama (Feb) and many other engagements, rising to the rank of colonel.

Fraser was a member of the Provincial Council for Franklin (1865-69) and resident magistrate and warden at the Thames (1869-79). On retiring he became part proprietor of the *Thames Advertiser*. He was also M.H.R. for Thames (1884-90) and for Te Aroha (1891-93). He was five years mayor of Thames, a member of the county council and colonel of the Thames Scottish battalion. In 1894 he was

## FREE

appointed sergeant-at-arms of the House of Representatives, a post which he filled until his death on 17 Sep 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Thames Star*, 25 Jul 1927; *N.Z. Times*, 18 Sep 1901; *N.Z.P.D.*, 17 Sep 1901; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Sep 1901; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*, 1865-70. Portrait: Parliament House.

FRASER, SIR WILLIAM (1840-1923) was born in India, the son of Captain Hugh Fraser, of the 5th Madras Light Cavalry. He was educated at Elizabeth College, Guernsey, Victoria College, Jersey, and the Lycee de St Brieuc, Brittany, and in 1858 arrived in New Zealand with the intention of going on the land. With A. C. Strode (whose daughter Ellen Isabel he married in 1874), Fraser took up the Earnsclough station, which he held continuously for many years. In 1862 Hartley and Reilly discovered gold on the property, but did not inform the owners and the rush took them unawares.

Fraser represented Dunstan in the Otago Provincial Council (1867-70). He was a member of the first Vincent county council in 1877 and became chairman in 1883, continuing so until 1893, when parliamentary duties demanded more of his time and the ravages of rabbits had reduced to a minimum the profits of sheep farming in Otago. Elected to Parliament for Wakatipu in 1893, Fraser continued to hold the seat till 1919, when he retired and was called to the Legislative Council. In the Massey ministry of 1912 Fraser was Minister of Mines, Public Works and Industries and Commerce. He continued, in charge of public works alone, in the National ministry (1915-19) and in the Massey ministry till early in 1920, when he relinquished his portfolios. He remained a member of the executive till his death (on 16 Jul 1923).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 17 Jul 1923; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Ross; Gilkison; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Jul 1923. Portrait: Parliament House.

FREE, WILLIAM HENRY (1826-1919) was born in county Wicklow, Ireland, and at an early age joined the army. He was a corporal in the 58th regiment when he came to Tasmania in the military guard on the convict ship *Anson*. Crossing to New Zealand with his regiment, he served in 1845-46 at the battles of Ohaeawai (where he distinguished himself by saving wounded under fire) and Ruapeka-pekapa. He then settled in Taranaki. When the

## FREELAND

war broke out there he was a colour sergeant in the Taranaki volunteers, with whom he served with distinction at Waireka and Mahoetahi (1860). Free represented Ornata in the Taranaki Provincial Council (1865-69). He died in 1919.

*Taranaki P.C. Proc.*; Cowan (p).

FREELAND, THOMAS, an old settler of Marlborough, resided in Picton. A builder by occupation, he frequently contracted for the carrying out of public works. He represented Picton in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1865-69).

FREER, JOHN GEORGE (1825-72) came to New Zealand about 1862 from Cape Colony, where he had seen service in the Cape Mounted Rifles. He became captain and quartermaster in the 2nd Waikato regiment. After the war he went into business as proprietor of the Army and Navy hotel in Auckland. Freer represented Auckland East in the Provincial Council (1863-69) and Pensioner Settlements (1870-72). He died on 8 Nov 1872.

*Parltry Record*; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Nov 1872.

FRIEND, GEORGE (1838-98) was born in London, his father being an official of the East India Company. Educated at a private school at Leatherhead, Surrey, and at King's College, London (where he took high honours), he went on to Trinity College, Cambridge, but discontinued his studies to come to New Zealand in the *Hamilla Mitchell* (1853). In 1854 he was appointed to the Audit department and in 1858 to the Native department (under McLean). In 1863 he was appointed clerk assistant of the House of Representatives, and in 1889 Clerk. He died on 19 Jul 1898.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 19 Jul 1898; *Parltry Record*; *Evening Post*, 19 Jul 1898.

FULLOON, JAMES (1843-65) was the son of a trader and his native wife. As a grandson of Te Mautara-nui, he belonged to the Whakatohea tribe of Ngati Awa. Educated under the Rev T. Chapman at Rotorua, he showed considerable scholarship. When H.M.S. *Pandora* was on the coast of New Zealand Fulloon was attached to Captain Drury as interpreter. He was then employed in a similar capacity in

## FULTON

the Native Land Purchase department under D. McLean, with whom he travelled a good deal. On the outbreak of the Waikato war he was attached as interpreter to General Cameron and made useful reports to the Government (in Jun 1863). After the murder of Volkner Fulloon was in H.M.S. *Eclipse* when she visited Opotiki to apprehend the murderers. He had hopes of combating the Pai-marire doctrines in Bay of Plenty and, against the advice of pakeha friends in Auckland, he went to Whakatane to raise a contingent of loyal natives to fight against Kereopa. While thus engaged he was murdered by Hauhau sympathisers (in Aug 1865).

Cowan; *Wellington Independent*, 8 and 15 Aug 1865; *Southern Cross*, Aug and Dec 1865.

FULTON, HARRY TOWNSEND (1869-1918) was the son of Lieut-general John Fulton, and came with him to New Zealand. Educated at the Otago Boys High School (1881-88), he was a lieutenant in the Dunedin City Guards when he received his first commission in the 93rd Highlanders (1892). In 1894 he was seconded to the Indian army and appointed to the Gurkha Rifles with which he served on the North-West Frontier (1897-98) at Malakand and Tirah. In the South African war (1899-1901) he was with the New Zealand Mounted Rifles (D.S.O.). On the outbreak of the war of 1914-18 he again joined the New Zealand forces, with which he served first at the capture of Samoa in command of a composite half-battalion; then in Egypt and France in command of battalions of the Rifle Brigade, and afterwards in command of the Brigade in France (1916), where he died of wounds on 29 Mar 1918. (C.M.G.) Fulton married (1905) Ada Hermina, daughter of John James Dixon.

Studholme; *Otago B.H.S. List*; *Evening Post*, Apr 1918.

FULTON, JAMES (1830-91), the son of Major Robert Bell Fulton, of the Bengal Artillery, and of Lisburn, county Antrim, was born at Futtighur, India. He was taken to Ireland as a boy, and was educated at Cheltenham and Blackheath. He received training in surveying and engineering under Sir Digby Mackworth and for a while held an appointment in connection with the Huddersfield and Manchester railway.

## FULTON

At 18 years of age Fulton sailed for New Zealand in the ship *Ajax* (Sep 1848) with the intention of being a farmer. Shortly after his arrival he took charge of Valpy's mill at the Leith. He then went on a farm at West Taieri and then far in the backblocks. Fulton in 1852 married Catherine Henrietta Valpy. For many years he was resident magistrate at Port Chalmers, Dunedin, and Outram. On retiring from the bench he was a member and first chairman of the Taieri county council.

In 1879 Fulton was elected for Parliament for the Taieri constituency (defeating Snow by 319 votes to 178). In 1882 he was returned unopposed; in 1884 and 1887 he defeated Carn-cross. He was for many years a member of the waste lands committee, and was chairman of the petitions committee which unseated Grey for Christchurch. A strong supporter of the Atkinson Government, he could have been Minister of Lands had he wished. In 1889 Fulton was chairman of the sweating commission which investigated conditions existing in Dunedin. He was keenly interested in the welfare of the workers. Sympathetic, upright, courteous and conscientious, he was a high type of citizen. Retiring from the House, he accepted a call to the Legislative Council (Jan 1891). Fulton was a member of the Otago education board for some years and a life governor of the Otago Boys' High School; and from 1876 until his death was a member of the council of Otago University. He was always a strong advocate of Bible-reading in schools. In Parliament he was a recognised leader of the movement for women's franchise and a strong supporter of temperance. Fulton died on 30 Nov 1891.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken; McIndoe; Cox; *N.Z. Times*, 1 Dec 1891; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Nov 1891, 8 Aug 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

FULTON, JAMES EDWARD (1854-1928), a son of James Fulton (q.v.), was born in Otago and educated by private tutors. Having

## FYNES

obtained some technical experience, he was appointed a cadet in the Public Works department (1873) and promoted to assistant-engineer in 1878. In private practice (from 1880) he made a preliminary survey of the proposed Kaihu valley railway. In 1882 he was appointed resident engineer in charge of the Palmerston-Waikanae section of the Wellington and Manawatu railway, and in 1889 manager and locomotive superintendent. He resigned in 1896. Fulton designed and built the Kelburn cable tramway in Wellington and bridges and light railways in various parts of the Dominion. In 1881 he was elected an associate member of the Institution of Civil Engineers, England, and later a member of the advisory committee in New Zealand. He was a member of the council of the New Zealand Institute of Surveyors (and sometime president), and in 1910 was elected a member of the American Society of Civil Engineers, and a Fellow of the Royal Society. On his death (6 Dec 1928) the Fulton bequest to the New Zealand Institute of Engineers was founded.

*Cycl. N'z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Evening Post*, 7 Dec 1928 (p).

FYNES, HENRY JAMES (1822-87) was born in London, matriculated at London University and joined the Roman Catholic Church. Emigrating to New South Wales, he studied theology at St Mary's College, Sydney, and was ordained priest in 1845. After doing parochial duty there for four years he came to Auckland and was attached to St Patrick's Cathedral under Bishop Pompallier. In 1851 he was put in charge of the military settlers at Howick and Panmure and in 1871 he removed to Parnell. For some years (from 1882) Fynes was vicar-general of the diocese and he managed St Mary's Industrial school. He was appointed a domestic chamberlain to the Pope with the title of Monsignor. He died on 16 Jun 1887.

## G

GAGE, DAVID RICHMOND (1868-1916) was the son of John Gage and the grandson of George Gage, who married Waana Pororua. He was related to the Ngati-Maniapoto chief Rewi. Educated at St Stephen's College, Auckland, he won a Makarini scholarship to Te Aute College, where he learned Rugby football and became a skilful player in almost any position in the field. He was associated with T. R. Ellison, with whom he played for many years. Proceeding in 1886 to Wellington, he joined the Poneke Club and played for the province against Stoddart's English team. In 1888 he was a member of the Maori team which toured England. He played in 68 of the 74 matches and distinguished himself in various positions, but mainly as half-back and full-back. Later he played for Auckland province, and he was a member of the New Zealand team which visited Australia (1893). He played for North Island against South (1894) and for New Zealand against Queensland (1896). Gage represented Wellington province in 36 matches, and Hawkes Bay and Auckland on a number of occasions. He captained both Wellington and New Zealand. He died on 12 Oct 1916.

*N.Z. Rugby Annual*, 1920; A. F. Wiren and W. T. Prentice (information); *N.Z. Times*, 13 Oct 1916.

GALLAGHER, TIMOTHY (1840-88) was born at Cronadun, county Donegal, Ireland, and educated at Kilmacrenan. In 1863 he emigrated to Australia and joined the staff of St Patrick's College, Melbourne. In 1866 he came to New Zealand and opened a store at Charlestown, with a branch at Addisons Flat. Later with his brothers he opened branches in Cronadun, Inangahua and Westport. In Jun 1868 he was elected M.H.R. for North Westland, being then one of the youngest members of the House. He

resigned his seat in Jun 1870. On going to live at Reefton he was a member of the Inangahua county council. In 1870 Gallagher married Mary Francis, daughter of Charles Mullins, and with his brothers established a business in Westport. He was a justice of the peace, a member of the harbour board and chairman of the vigilance committee. Gallagher died on 24 Aug 1888.

*N'z. Tablet*, ? Sep 1888; *Westport News*, 28 Dec 1926. Portrait: Parliament House.

GALLAHER, DAVID (1874-1917) was born at Belfast, Ireland, and came to New Zealand with his parents, who were members of G. Vesey Stewart's settlement near Tauranga. On leaving school he worked in Auckland, where he became a departmental foreman in a freezing establishment. He was a fine Rugby footballer and for some years captained the Auckland provincial team, notably in 1903 against England. In 1905-06 he captained the All Black team which toured England, winning 31 out of 32 matches. Gallaher was the greatest wing forward who ever appeared in New Zealand Rugby and was described by the *Morning Post* (London) as 'a real artist in the novel position: He acted as sole selector for Auckland province for some years.

Gallaher served in a New Zealand contingent in the Boer War. In the war of 1914-18 he became a sergeant-major and died of wounds in France on 4 Oct 1917.

G. H. Dixon, *Triumphant Tour of the New Zealand Footballers*, 1906 (p); *N'z. Rugby Annual*, 1920 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Oct 1917; *Evening Post*, 15 Oct.

GALLOWAY THOMAS JAMES (1800-81) entered the army as an ensign in 1821 and rose to colonel of the 70th regiment in 1854. He

## GALVIN

saw service in the Jamaican insurrection (1831) and the Indian mutiny. He came to New Zealand in 1861 with his regiment. When he was promoted from this command he agreed, at the request of Sir George Grey and General Cameron, to accept the command of the Auckland militia and volunteers (Aug 1863), and he was major-general commanding the Colonial Forces till 1865. (Lieutenant-general 1871; general 1877; colonel 70th regiment 1874). Galloway died at Kilmeague, county Kildare, Ireland, on 15 Sep 1881. Galloway's redoubt was named after this officer.

Cowan; *App. H.R.*, 1864-67; *The Times*, 22 Sep 1881.

GALVIN PATRICK (1847-1937) was born in Thomond county, Ireland, and at the age of 12 was apprenticed to the *Clare Journal*. In 1863 he moved to Nena, county Tipperary, but in 1866 emigrated to Victoria in the *Black Ball*. Finding his way to Bendigo, he took the place of Joseph Ivess (q.v.), on the *Independent*, and two years later spent some time on the Ballarat goldfields, without success. He then joined the *Ballarat Star* and eventually found employment in the Government printing office in Melbourne.

In 1874 Galvin came to Dunedin and two years later to Wellington, where he was successively compositor, publisher and sub-editor of the *New Zealand Times* and editor of the *Mail*. In 1880, with J. C. Yorke and J. B. Innes, he founded the *Hawera Star*. He was associated later with the *Manawatu Daily Times* and the *Poverty Bay Herald* and in 1888 went to the Melbourne exhibition as correspondent for several New Zealand newspapers. In 1889 Galvin was editor of the *Yea Chronicle*, and while there he promoted the Victoria Country Press Co. In 1896 he became editor and proprietor of the *Hawera Morning Post*, but shortly resigned and joined the Mines department. He became secretary of the rivers commission and of the mining commission. He was some years on the staff of the Government Statistician and a sessional clerk of the House of Representatives. Once more in journalism, Galvin was on the *Evening Post* and eventually became editor of the *New Zealand Mines Record*. He retired in 1918 and died on 11 Feb 1937.

## GARLAND

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Hawera Star* (jubilee issue); *Evening Post*, 11 Feb 1937.

GARIN, ANTOINE MARIE (1810-89) was born at St Rambert, department of Loire, France, in the diocese of Belley. Showing early in life a strong disposition for a missionary career, he was ordained in 1834. In 1840 he joined the Marist Brothers and in Jun 1841 arrived at Bay of Islands and remained there for a few months. In 1843 he was at Kaipara and in 1845 returned to Kororaraka, where he showed great bravery and devotion in attending to the wounded under fire in Heke's war. Altogether he spent 10 years as a missionary to the Maori, at the stations mentioned. In 1848 he was appointed to Otahuhu, Panmure and Howick, where he came into contact also with many Irish soldiers amongst the New Zealand Fencibles.

In 1850 Garin was sent as first parish priest to Nelson. There he established a private school, at which many Catholic boys were educated, including Archbishop Redwood. Diaries which he kept of his work and travels give an illuminating insight into the difficulties and the long foot journeys involved in the work of his parish, his steadfast industry and the simplicity of his character. Garin found the parish without any buildings of consequence and left it fully equipped with a fine church and presbytery, a convent and high school and boys' and girls' industrial schools. He was for some time on the central board of education, and on the committee of the Nelson Aid Society and he took part in all charitable movements. In 1884 Bishop Redwood conferred on Garin the rank of archpriest of Nelson. He died on 14 Apr 1889.

Pompallier, *Fishers of Men* (p); *Marist Messenger*, 1 Mar 1938; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 15 Aug 1889, 11 Dec 1926 (p).

GARLAND, CHARLES HUGHLINGS (1857-1918) was born in London, a son of T. C. Garland (for 50 years lay agent of the Wesleyan Seamen's mission in London). Garland assisted his father in his work, and at 16 became a Methodist local preacher. He was a teacher in the Hale street school, Poplar, and later undertook tutorial work. He was accepted for training for the ministry and studied at Headingley and Wandsworth Theological Colleges.

## GARRICK

Garland was one of three clergy selected by the British Methodist conference to replace those drowned in the *Tararua* (1881) and he reached Wellington in Sep 1882. He began his New Zealand ministry at Northern Wairoa and was soon transferred to Christchurch. He was ordained (1884) and married (1885) Eleanor Jackson, of Tunbridge Wells, England. He was a man of rare gifts and a preacher of singular charm and power. At an early age his gifts brought him to the front rank and he filled many important positions. On five occasions he was a member of the Methodist general conference of Australasia and in 1914 sat on the board of missions. In 1891 he published a pamphlet *Christianity and Secularism*. In 1893 he delivered the official lecture at the Wesleyan conference in Dunedin on *The Bearing of Higher Criticism on Leading Evangelical Doctrines*. This made Garland the storm centre of a theological controversy. Pamphlets attacking his orthodoxy were published by the Rev David McNicoll and by William Shepherd Allen (q.v.), to which Garland convincingly replied in a pamphlet entitled *The Authority of the Bible*. In 1901 he was elected president of the Methodist conference; in 1911 he was acting-editor of his church paper and in 1912 he was appointed principal of the Methodist Theological College in Auckland. He held this office until his death on 4 Nov 1918. During the great war Garland undertook the pastorate of the Mount Eden Church in addition to his principalship.

M.A.R.P.

GARRICK, FRANCIS JAMES (1833-90) was born in Australia, his father having come out a year or two earlier to manage a flourmill. Educated at the Sydney College (where T. Peacock was a fellow pupil) he was articled to Andrew McCulloch, solicitor, and later with Robert Nicholls, and was admitted to the New South Wales bar. For some years he practised in Sydney in partnership with Rowley and Holdsworth and in 1863 he came to New Zealand, intending to practise in Nelson. Instead he joined Cowlshaw, who had studied with him, and thus established one of the most successful practices in Christchurch. J. B. Fisher became a partner in 1883. Garrick was a very successful pleader. He declined many invitations to enter politics, but represented Christ-

## GASCOIGNE

church City in the Provincial Council (1866-69) and was in the executive (1866). Later he was provincial solicitor for some time (1875). In 1884 he was elected M.H.R. for St Albans, which he represented till 1887. Garrick married a daughter of John Jenkins Peacock (Sydney). He died on 7 Jun 1890.

*Canterbury P.C. Proce.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Arnold; *Lytelton Times*, 9 Jun 1890.

GARROW, JAMES MITCHELL ELLIS (1865-1935), who was born in Scotland, came to New Zealand as a boy with his parents. Educated at the Albany street school, Dunedin, he taught for some time as a pupil teacher, and graduated at Otago University (B.A. 1897; LL.B. 1905). After some years in business he became registrar of Otago University and in 1911 was appointed professor of English and international law at Victoria University College. Garrow was the author of an annotated edition of the Crimes Act, and of standard text books on property. From 1916 to 1928 he served on the College council. Retiring in 1928, he was created professor emeritus, and he died on 7 Oct 1935.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 8 Oct 1935 (p).

GASCOIGNE, BAMBER (1829-69) belonged to an old Yorkshire family. He was living in Australia and had just married when he took service in the Military Settlers for Taranaki. Arriving by the *Brilliant* at New Plymouth (Feb 1864) he received a commission as ensign and was stationed with two other settlers at the redoubt at Pukearuhe, living in a cottage with his family of three. On 13 Feb 1869, when they were working on the farm, they were attacked by a party of Ngati-Maniapoto and all murdered. This was the final war episode on this Coast.

Cowan, ii, 295, 527; Wells, 281-2.

GASCOIGNE (or GASCOYNE), FREDERICK JOHN WILLIAM (1838-1926) was born at Cawnpore, the son of Lieut-colonel Charles Manners Gascoigne, of the 5th Bengal Light Cavalry, H.E.I.C.S. (who served in both Sutlej campaigns and died in New Zealand in 1872).

Gascoigne was educated at Kumaon. He left India with his parents in 1852 in the ship *Marlborough* for Australia. At Melbourne, on the advice of John Tinline (q.v.) they took pas-

## GASCOIGNE

sage in the *Belle Creole*, arriving in Nelson in 1853. They settled on a farm at Paingatotara, Motueka. About 1856 Gascoigne junior became a cadet on the Hawkes Bay station of his mother's cousin Donald McLean (q.v.), and he remained there for three years. Returning to the South Island, he assisted in driving cattle from Marlborough to Otago and then spent two years on the goldfields at Collingwood and Motueka. In 1863 he was offered a commission in the Colonial Defence Force and joined a mounted unit in Hawkes Bay. On the outbreak of fighting with the disaffected Ngati-Porou (1865), he was ordered to Poverty Bay and served in the operations there, including Pakairomiromi, Pukemaire and Hungahunga-toroa (Aug-Oct). After the fight at Waerenga-a-hika he remained at Waiapu in command of the magistrate's guard. In 1867 he was engaged in the fighting at Wairoa and when the force was disbanded in the temporary lull his commission lapsed. On the return of Te Kooti from the Chatham islands Gascoigne offered his services to Biggs and at great risk carried a despatch to Wairoa (Jul 1868). He was again commissioned to the force and stationed by Biggs at the fork of the Wairoa road, 20 miles from Gisborne, to watch for the return of the enemy from Urewera. Gascoigne urged that an old unused track should be watched but Biggs considered this unnecessary. It was by this route, however, that Te Kooti returned and massacred the settlers in the neighbourhood of Gisborne (including Biggs and his family). Gascoigne with great difficulty reached the opposite side of the river and, getting into Gisborne by boat, he at once assumed control, evacuated the women and summoned reinforcements. He took an active part in the operations under Whitmore in the Ruakituri valley and the actions of Patutahi and Makaretu. Reconnoitring the stronghold at Ngatapa he advised caution in attacking, and was prominent in the final assault in Jan 1869.

Being now recommissioned as captain (sub-inspector A.C.) Gascoigne proceeded to the West Coast and was present throughout the operations against Titokowaru, from Turangaika to the final action at Te Ngaere. Thence he went to Bay of Plenty and took part in the pursuit of Te Kooti into the Urewera. He was often mentioned in despatches and was recom-

## GAUSTAD

mended for the N.Z.C. As officer in charge at Ohinemutu he entertained the Duke of Edinburgh. He married in 1872, Marion, daughter of Henry Carr, and returned to his command at Tokaanu. He was successively stationed at Opepe, Tauranga, Tarawera and Rotorua, having charge of native labour constructing roads in the Taupo and Bay of Plenty region.

In 1880 Gascoigne was summoned to the disturbed area at Parihaka and during the operations in 1881 he was in charge of the prisoners and returning visiting natives to their tribes. He then returned to Rotorua and Waikato, where in 1882 he arranged the meeting of Bryce and Tawhiao at Ngaruawahia. Early in 1883, when a section of the King natives arrested Hursthouse and Newsham, he took strong measures to impress them, finally surrounding and arresting Te Mahuki and the whole of his force as they entered the town of Alexandra. Promoted major (1886), Gascoigne was put in command of the artillery at Wellington in 1887, but retrenched the following year and appointed sheriff at Auckland. In 1891 he became R.M. at the Chathams, where he did much for the social improvement of both native and pakeha people. He resigned in 1897 owing to ill-health and settled in Hawkes Bay, where he died (13 Dec 1926). (Gascoigne seems to have spelled his name Gascoyne after 1908.)

Cowan (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Gascoigne; *Soldiering in New Zealand*, 1916 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 29 Sep 1888, 12 Jan 1889.

GAUSTAD, CHRISTOPHER (1838-1927) was born at Trondhjem, Norway, his father being a sea captain. His early education he received at Molde. At the age of 22, while working in a printing office in Bergen, he became a devout Christian. He attended the mission school at Stavanger and, to prepare for the mission field, proceeded to Berlin, where he was studying languages at the time of the war with Denmark. Incidentally he visited the Danish prisoners of war at Spandau. In Berlin Gaustad became acquainted with a Norwegian student, Anne Gorina, of Ouli Nees. They sailed for India in the *Hotspw-* from London and were married at Muzafferpur, Bengal (Dec 1865).

In 1870 Gaustad's health broke down in the Indian climate and they moved to Queensland, where he became pastor to the Scandinavian

## GAY

congregations, most of whom were making a difficult livelihood on their small farms. There he toiled for 10 years on a very low salary. In 1877 he became a naturalised British subject. In Aug 1880 they came to Palmerston North. Gaustad ministered for about 10 years to the Lutheran congregations in that town, visiting also the communities in Rangitikei and the Forty Mile Bush and making many arduous journeys to Woodville, Dannevirke, Norsewood, Makaretu and Mauriceville. In 1889-90 he travelled in Europe, giving many lectures upon New Zealand in Norway, and preaching in the cathedral at Trondhjem on the 25th anniversary of the seamen's mission. While in Halcombe Gaustad printed, on a handpress which he acquired from an Anglican clergyman, several pamphlets on religious and social subjects. The most noteworthy of these (printed in 1889) was an interesting speculation into the future which he delivered as a public lecture in Linton's hall in 1888. He was well versed in British and European history and frequently, even in advanced age, held services in remote backblocks for the benefit of all denominations. Gaustad died at Urenui on 5 Feb 1927.

*Manawatu Evening Standard*, 20 Nov 1937; Miss A. J. Gaustad (information). Portrait: General Assembly Library.

GAY, WILLIAM (1865-97) was born at Bridge of Weir, Renfrewshire, Scotland, his father being an engraver on copper plate for printing wall papers and calico cloths. Gay was educated in the board school at Alexandria, near Dumbarton, where he became a monitor at 14.

With an Orr Ewing scholarship he went to Glasgow University, where he found the study beyond his strength and his strict Calvinist upbringing shaken by doubts. This prevented him from fulfilling his father's ambition by entering the ministry. After being brought back from London he obtained a clerkship in Glasgow at 12s a week. Again he went to London and was starving when G. R. Sims sent him a pound and A. Moore found him some work. He suffered severe hardships. After trying to get employment at sea he sailed for New Zealand in the *Dunedin*, arriving in Otago in 1885. While purser's clerk in the *Tarawera* during a cruise to Milford he met Professor

## GEBBIE

Morris, who employed him to write chapters for *Pictw-esque Australasia* (1886). After two years in the service of the Union Steamship Co. he went to Hawkes Bay, where he seems to have thrived until 1888, when he went to Victoria. He was appointed to the staff of Scotch College. The work was beyond his strength, but his meeting with the Rev Dr Strong had a vital influence upon his life and thought.

Gay wrote a good deal of verse, the first appearing in print in 1881. He was a profound student of metaphysics and Hegelianism. He was fascinated by pure poetry as he found it in isolated passages in Keats, Shelley, Shakespeare and Wordsworth. He projected a pronouncing dictionary of geographical names and a pamphlet on consumption (from which he suffered), and he wrote for the Australian Association for the Advancement of Science an essay on Walt Whitman in his relation to science and philosophy. Gay published *Sonnets* in 1896, *The Commonwealth and the Empire* and *Christ on Olympus*. His poetry was universal, not local, and dealt mainly with feelings and sympathies common to humanity. Gay was tutor at several homes in the Riverina and Melbourne, and in 1893 settled at Bendigo, where he died on 22 Dec 1897.

Gay, *Complete Poetical Works* (with biog. introd. by J. Glen Oliphant), 19B; *Bendigo Advertiser*, 23 Dec 1897; *The Press*, 8 Jun 1907.

GEBBIE, JOHN (1822-50) was born in Ayrshire, Scotland, and came to New Zealand in the *Aurora* (1840). After spending three years at Wellington, he accepted the position of farm manager to John Deans (Riccarton), with whom he remained for some years. In 1845 he leased land at the head of Port Cooper and eventually settled at Gebbie's valley, establishing a dairy herd and supplying the Wellington market. He died in 1850.

His son, JOHN GEBBIE (1840-88) was born at Wellington. Besides improving his property he took a part in local government, being a member of the Akaroa county council, chairman of the Little River road board and school committee and a member of the licensing committee. He married a daughter of Moses Crier (Lyttelton). His death occurred on 19 Sep 1888.

GEDDIS

*Cani. O.N.*; Deans; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Lyttelton Times*, 21 Sep 1888.

GEDDIS, JAMES McROBERTS (1856-1935) who was born in Belfast, Ireland, came to New Zealand in 1864 and settled in Auckland, where his father, John Stewart Geddis, established himself as a manufacturer. Entering Journalism in 1869, he served on the *New Zealand Herald* (1869-78), the *Dunedin Age* (1878-79) and the *Auckland Star* (1879-88), and in 1888 was appointed to the Hansard staff. He contributed to the *Pictorial Atlas of Australasia* and *Maori Wars* and published a series of articles *Summer Isles of Eden*. With his brother, W. J. Geddis (q.v.), he established the *St James Chronicle*, and with W. Blomfield, purchased and conducted the *Auckland Observer* and in 1900 founded the *New Zealand Free Lance* in Wellington. He was president of the New Zealand Unitarian association (1920-23) and of the Wellington Unitarian association (1930); was chairman of directors of several companies and in 1926 was created an Officer d'Academie Française. Retiring from the Hansard staff in 1924, he was editor of the *Free Lance* until his death on 21 Sep 1935. In 1882 he married Hannah Elizabeth, daughter of J. B. Jackson, of Auckland.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 23 Sep 1935.

GEDDIS, WILLIAM JOHN (1860-1926) was born at Belfast, Ireland, and came to Auckland with his parents four years later. Educated in the public schools, he joined the *Auckland Star* at the age of 14 and was sub-editor at 28. In 1892 he resigned to join W. Blomfield in the purchase of *The Observer*, which they ran in partnership for many years, Geddis being editor. They established the *New Zealand Free Lance* in 1900 and the *Waihi Daily Telegraph* (1901). Geddis joined Henry Brett and T. W. Leys in the purchase of the *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), of which he was managing director till 1913, when he took up the same position with the *New Zealand Times* Co. In 1918 Geddis was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 1 May 1926). He married (1889) May, daughter of J. C. Morrin.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Jun 1926; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *N.Z. Times*, 3 May 1926. Portrait: Parliament House.

GEORGE

GEORGE, EDEN (1863-1927) had a photographer's business in Christchurch, with a branch in Dunedin. He stood for a Christchurch parliamentary seat in 1891 (but was defeated by Sandford) and also contested a Dunedin seat. He was mayor of Christchurch in 1893 and advocated many improvements, including asphaltting of the city streets. Having sold his business to Wrigglesworth and Binns, he went to Sydney, where he again established himself as a photographer, with a branch in Melbourne. In 1901 George defeated Sir James Graham (mayor of Sydney) for the Sydney-Belmore seat in the New South Wales Legislative Assembly, and in 1904 he was returned for the Asburnham seat. He retired in 1907. He stood again for Parliament in 1913, but was defeated by R. D. Meagher by a large majority. George was for a while a successful racing man. He died on 2 May 1927.

Information from the Librarian, New South Wales Parliament; *Sydney Morning Herald*, 25 Nov 1913, 4 May 1927; *Labour Daily*, 19 Mar 1927.

GEORGE, JAMES (1813-78) was born at Woolwich, England, of Scots parents, with whom he emigrated to Tasmania in 1823, his father being engaged under the board of ordnance. George was apprenticed to a baker. In 1838 he went to South Australia and engaged in his trade, and in 1840 he came to New Zealand. He was in the ship *Delhi* off Coromandel when J. L. Campbell and his associates were there, and afterwards visited Waitemata and Waiheke. Eventually he lived in a tent on the site of Auckland. George engaged in his business in the town and made a competence. He was a member of the Auckland city board and represented Auckland West in the Provincial Council (1861-65). He died on 5 Jul 1878.

*Auckland p.e. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 6 July 1878.

GEORGE, JOHN REES (1841-89) was the son of a solicitor and was born at Lewisham, London. He entered the office of a London tea merchant but, having mechanical tendencies, joined the firm of Kennards, railway contractors. At the age of 20 he was in charge of a contract in Portugal and in 1865 he came to New Zealand under engagement to the Wellington provincial government, for whom he earned out an extension of the Queen's wharf and con-

GEORGE

structed the patent slip and the Wanganui bridge. He was manager of the Patent Slip Co. and the first Wellington Gas Co. and managing director of the Wellington Trust and Loan Co. till his death (on 26 Jun 1889). George was a member of the Wellington City Council (1874-78) and of the harbour board (1889) and chairman of the chamber of commerce (1882).

*N.Z. Times*, 11 Jul 1889.

GEORGE, SEYMOUR THORNE (1851-1922) was the son of Lieut-colonel George Thorne George (of the 75th regiment and 4th Hussars). He was educated at Cheltenham College for the Royal Engineers, but owing to an accident at football abandoned his studies and entered the office of a civil engineer in London. In 1869, on the advice of Sir George Grey, a friend of his father, he came to New Zealand, and for some years managed Grey's estate at Kawau island. In 1872 he married Annie Maria Matthews, niece of Grey.

In 1878 George was elected M.H.R. for Hokitika, and at the general election of 1879 he gained the Rodney seat, which he represented until 1884, being much of the time chief Liberal whip. He was mayor of Parnell for two years and unsuccessfully contested the seat in Parliament. In 1903 George was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death (on 2 Jul 1922). He was a director of several Auckland companies, including the New Zealand Insurance Co. (chairman 1905-08, 1911-17), the Waihi Goldmining Co. (of which he was an original shareholder) and the Devonport Steam Ferry Co.

*Parltry Record*; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Jul 1922. Portrait: Parliament House.

GIBB, JAMES (1857-1935) was born at Aberdeen and educated at the Grammar School and University of Aberdeen and Edinburgh College. After spending two years in a bank he entered Divinity Hall, Edinburgh, but owing to indifferent health emigrated to Australia and continued his studies at Onnond College (from 1882). He was stationed at Footscray before his ordination, which took place in 1883, and three years later was inducted to First Church, Dunedin, where he ministered for 18 years.

Gibb took a prominent part in church organisations. He was one of the movers in the estab-

GIBB

lishment of *The Outlook* and he initiated the formation of the council of churches in Dunedin, of which he was the first president (1899-1900). It was in recognition of his work in bringing about the union of the two Presbyterian churches in New Zealand that he received the degree of D.D. from the University of Aberdeen (1902). His sermons on the moral state of Dunedin created some sensation and led to the formation of the Dunedin Social Reform association (of which he was president in 1893-94). He was chairman of the union committee from 1895 to 1901 and, having been moderator of the synod of Otago in 1901, he was the first moderator of the United Church in the same year. He initiated the Bible-in-schools committee of the Church; was president of it (1901-06) and was president in 1903 of the Bible-in-schools Referendum league. He also presided for some years (1902-07) over the committee on the union of the Presbyterian, Methodist and Congregational churches.

In 1903 Gibb received a call to St John's Church, Wellington. During a ministry of 23 years there he continued the activities which he had initiated in Dunedin and was also president of the Young Men's Bible Class movement in 1902. On a visit to Great Britain in 1920 to bring out missionaries for the Church in New Zealand he was impressed with the need for a universal peace movement and on his return he brought into existence the New Zealand branch of the League of Nations Union. Gibb took a leading part in establishing Presbyterian orphanages and Scots and Queen Margaret's Colleges in Wellington, of which he was chairman till 1933. After his retirement he raised special funds for meological scholarships and for a Maori mission girls' college. He married Jean, daughter of D. Smith (Aberdeen). His death occurred on 24 Oct 1935.

Dickson; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Dominion*, 24 Oct 1935 (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 18 Jun, 9 Jul, 31 Sep 1890, 31 Oct 1893, 24 Oct 1935.

GIBB, JOHN (1831-1909) was born at Cumbernauld, Stirlingshire, Scotland, and studied art under John Mackenzie, of Greenock. He exhibited in the exhibitions of the West of Scotland and Glasgow Institute of Fine Arts. In 1876 he came to New Zealand in the *Merope* and settled in Christchurch. Gibb was noted

## GIBB

for his realistic treatment of water in his seascapes, and later did many notable landscapes of Canterbury and the West Coast. He was a prolific painter and exhibited for many years at the Canterbury Art Society and elsewhere in New Zealand. Examples of his work appear in most of the leading galleries in the Dominion and in Australia. A notable picture is his reproduction of Miss Townsend's scene of the landing of immigrants from the *Cressy*. Gibb died on 10 Sep 1909. (See his son, WILLIAM MENZIES GIBB.)

Barr, *Art; The Press*, 11 Sep 1909.

GIBB, WILLIAM MENZIES (1859-1931) was born at Innellan, on the banks of the Clyde, the son of John Gibb, a Clydeside seascape painter. At the age of 15 he came with his parents to Canterbury. He had already begun his study of art under his father and at the Dunoon Academy and continued them in New Zealand. He went to Melbourne at the age of 17 to work in the National Gallery and exhibited there at the age of 18. On returning to Christchurch he rapidly gained a reputation as a landscape artist. His father was a foundation member of the Canterbury Art Society and the son exhibited there consistently until in 1914 his work was crowned by his election as president of the society. He was one of the most notable landscape painters of New Zealand and his works are hung in most of the public galleries, including four in Canterbury. Gibb did not go in for large canvasses. He painted faithfully as he saw; his technique was dependable, and his brushwork and tonal shading were meticulous. He married (1890) Robina, daughter of Robert Menzies. He died on 26 Jul 1931.

*The Press and Star-Sun*, 27 Jul 1931.

GIBBS, SAMUEL (1817-85) came to Canterbury in 1855 and a few years later moved to Otago, where he farmed a property at Taieri. He settled in Oamaru about 1860 and took a leading part in local government, being for many years a member of the borough council and three years mayor. He was a director of several companies. Gibbs died on 21 Dec 1885.

*North Otago Times*, 22 Dec 1885.

GIBBS, WILLIAM (1819-97) was born in London, where he served his apprenticeship to a

## GIBSON

painter and glazier. He arrived in Nelson by the *Duke of Bronte* in 1852 and proceeded by schooner to Motupipi, Golden Bay, where he farmed until the first discovery of gold on his land (before the Otago discoveries). He then erected a store, built a wharf and commenced carrying by bullock team to the fields. At that time he owned most of the land upon which Collingwood was afterwards laid out. For some time he was resident magistrate and warden. He was member of the Provincial Council for Masacre Bay (1858-61), for Collingwood (1865-69) and for Golden Bay from 1869 until the abolition. Gibbs was a candidate for the superintendency in 1869. He contested the Collingwood seat in the House of Representatives against Collins in 1871 (losing by three votes) and was elected in 1873, sitting for that constituency until 1881. He was again magistrate at Golden Bay until his retirement. Gibbs died on 7 Nov 1897.

*Cycl. N.I.*, v; *The Colonist*, 23 Nov 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

GIBSON, JOHN, a Devonshire man believed to have been of Scots descent, came to Wellington in 1850 in the *William Hyde*. He had land in the city, but in a few years moved to Wanganui, where he became a well known settler and represented Wanganui in the Wellington Provincial Council (1854-56). He was distinguished by his outspoken opposition to Featherston and advocacy of the separation of Wanganui and Waitotara from Wellington province. Gibson was drowned at sea about 1869.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.; Parltry Rec01'd*; Woon; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 12 Jan 1860.

GIBSON, MARY·vrcrORIA (1556-1928) was born at Lyttelton, the daughter of Captain F. D. Gibson, and was educated at Mrs Crosby's school, the Christchurch Girls' High School and Canterbury College (M.A. 1888). She first taught in primary schools, becoming head mistress of the girls' side of the East Christchurch school. In 1898 she was appointed principal of the Girls' High School, which expanded considerably during her term of office. She was responsible for the opening of the branch school at Avonside, the foundation of the Old Girls' association and the establishment of Acland residential hostel for country girls. Miss Gibson retired in 1928 and died on 2 Sep 1928.

## GIFFORD

*Who's Who N.I.*, 1924: Hight and Candy; *The Press*, 3 Sep 1928.

GIFFORD, ALGERNON (1825-1909) was born in London, the son of Edward Gifford, architect. Educated at St John's College, London, he was ordained and went to Newfoundland in 1848. From there he moved to Forteau, Labrador, where he was missionary for a district 100 miles long on each side of the strait of Belle Isle. After seven years there he returned to Portugal Cove, Newfoundland. In 1862 he came to New Zealand in the *Zealandia* and was appointed vicar of Oamaru, where he held his first services in a woolshed. Gifford retired in 1900, and died on 5 Jul 1909. He married (1851) Sarah Anne (d. 1913), daughter of William Evans, of Limerick, Ireland.

GIFFORD, EDWARD AUGUSTUS (1819-94) was born in London, the son of Edward Gifford, architect, of the firm of Ashpitel, in whose office he also trained. He then devoted himself to the study of art in the Royal Academy schools, where he won the gold medal in his final year. In 1854 he went abroad. His interest was in genre, portrait studies and landscape. He had pictures hung in the Royal Academy in 1842, 1845, 1857, 1863, 1867 and 1870. His portrait of Bishop Selwyn is hung at Lichfield and that of Admiral Fairfax Moresby is reproduced as the frontispiece of *Two Admirals*.

In 1877 Gifford came to New Zealand, residing first in Oamaru, where his brother was vicar. He lived successively at Auckland and Napier, and eventually returned to Oamaru, where he died on 8 Nov 1894. He painted many New Zealand landscapes, especially in Otago, South Canterbury and Auckland, exhibiting throughout a poetic quality in choice of subject and method of treatment. His output was hung regularly in the exhibitions of New Zealand. Several public collections contain specimens and the Auckland art gallery contains a canvas of the Auckland water front in 1887.

Family information; the Librarian, Royal Academy; *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Nov 1894.

GILES, JOSEPH (1832-1930) was born at Frome, Somersetshire, and educated there and in London. His medical studies were inter-

## GILFILLAN

rupted by the Crimean war, for which he enlisted and was stationed at the base at Scutari, where he met Florence Nightingale.

After returning to complete his studies at London Hospital (M.R.C.S.) he came to New Zealand in the *Lord Ashley* (1859) and took up land at Mauku, fattening stock for the market at Drury. He spent a few months at Gabriel's Gully, and then served as a surgeon with the 1st Waikato Regiment in the Waikato campaign and at Tauranga. He saw no fighting, but tended the wounded in both fields, especially after the fight at Te Papa (1864). He intended to practise in Auckland, but acted as editor of the *New Zealander* for some time. He moved to Nelson with the intention of practising, but again became involved in journalism as editor of the *Examiner* (while Hugh Lusk was absent in Sydney sitting his law examinations). He then became warden and resident magistrate at Westport and Reefton. After fifteen months as magistrate in Wanganui, he became Under-secretary for Lands, Mines and Emigration, but, disliking the office routine, he resumed duty as a magistrate (at Hokitika) and commissioner of crown lands (1885-86). In 1888 Giles was transferred to Auckland, and five years later he retired to resume farming at Mauku. He acted on several royal commissions, notably to inquire into the Dunedin Benevolent Institution (1882), the Rakaia railway accident (1899) and the Christchurch Hospital.

Giles was a fine classical scholar and at one time edited the *Southern Cross* magazine. In this and elsewhere he wrote many poems, a collection of which he published (1908). His diamond jubilee poem, *Dies Memorabilis*, was noteworthy. In later years he contributed much to the *New Zealand Herald* and other papers. Giles was a member of the senate of the New Zealand University (1882-99). He was a non-smoker and a strong advocate of temperance and no-license. He died on 9 Jun 1930.

Giles, *op. cit.*; Barclay; *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Jul 1882; *Westport Times and Star*, 28 Dec 1926 (p); *N.I. Herald*, 10 Jun 1930.

GILFILLAN, JOHN ALEXANDER (1793-1863) was born at Elizabeth Castle, Jersey, the son of a captain in the 78th Highlanders. Educated there and at St Albans, England, he went to sea as a cabin boy and 18 months later entered

## GILFILLAN

the Royal Navy, in which he saw much active service in South America, China, the West Indies and India. He was wounded in boarding a French ship.

On retiring from the Navy, he settled in Edinburgh to study painting and surgery and a few years later was appointed drawing and painting master at the Andersonian College, Glasgow. During 15 years there he painted many pictures and illustrated books, including an edition of Bunyan's *Pilgrim's Progress*. He painted for the Duke of Buckingham and for Robert Burns's family. In 1826 Gilfillan married Sarah Murray and after her death in 1837 he married her cousin Mary Bridges.

Having decided to emigrate to New Zealand, he spent some months in London learning carpentry and engineering and in 1841 they sailed in the *Mandarin* to Port Nicholson. In 1842 they proceeded to Wanganui in the *Catherine Johnstone* and settled on their farm at Matarawa. Gilfillan built a house in Wanganui, where they lived till 1845. He took a prominent part in the affairs of the town and district and he made many pictures and portraits of well known residents. As the result of a disagreement between Midshipman Crozier, of H.M.S. *Calliope*, and a Ngati-Ruaka chief over the erection of a whare, the Gilfillan family was attacked at Matarawa on the night of 18 Apr 1847, Gilfillan being wounded and his wife and four children killed. At the end of the year the family left for Sydney, and in 1849 removed to Adelaide, where they spent nearly four years. Gilfillan was on the Victorian goldfields in 1852 and then obtained a position in the customs at Melbourne. There he exhibited regularly in the art exhibitions until his death, which occurred in 1863. Many of his pictures were used to illustrate books on New Zealand and some are in public galleries in Australia and New Zealand.

T. W. Downes, *Old Whanganui*, 241-289 (p); Mundy; Hocken, *Bibliog*; Tyrone Power; *Wanganui Herald*, 6 Jan 1888.

GILFILLAN, JOHN ANDERSON (1821-75) was born at Torry, in the parish of Torryburn, Fifeshire, and educated at the Grammar School of Cullen, Banffshire. In 1837 he entered the office of Briggs, Thorburn, Acraman and Co., of Calcutta, and at the end of the year was trans-

## GILLIES

ferred to the London office. His health suffered from overwork and he was advised to seek a better climate. He accordingly came to Wellington in the barque *Victoria* (1846). Having to arrange business matters before settling in Auckland, he returned home in H.M.S. *Race-horse*. In 1848 he came to Auckland in the *Lalla Rookh*, to join his brother Robert, who had preceded him in the *Dart*.

Gilfillan was gazetted a justice of the peace in 1852, and when the new constitution was brought into operation he was one of the first members elected to the Auckland Provincial Council (for Auckland Suburbs, Aug 1853). Early the following year he was a member of the provincial executive, and in May 1854 he was called to the Legislative Council, in which he sat till 1861, and again from 1862 to 1866. He remained a member of the Provincial Council for many years (representing Auckland Suburbs 1853-55, and Auckland West 1867-68) and was a member of the executive in 1854-55, in 1864 and in 1867-68. For some time he was provincial secretary under the superintendency of Williamson. In 1858 Gilfillan was appointed representative in Auckland of the Colman Steamship Co., of Hull, which established steam communication between Sydney and New Zealand (with the *Airedale*, *Lord Ashley*, *Lord Worsley*, *Claud Hamilton* and *Prince Alfred*). He was the first president of the Auckland chamber of commerce and for many years took an interest in the commercial advancement of the city. Gilfillan married (1852) Gertrude Anne Eliza (who died in 1885), daughter of Dr W. Davies, Colonial Surgeon. He died on 1 Feb 1875.

*Auckland P.C. Proc. N.Z.P.D.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii.

GILLIES, JOHN (1802-71) was born at Rothesay, in Bute, the son of a small crofter and handloom weaver. He received in his parish such an education as enabled him in 1820 to enter on his articles under Alexander Irvine, town clerk, sheriff and clerk of petty sessions at Rothesay, and comptroller of customs for the town and port.

His articles completed, he entered a merchant's office in Greenock, and in 1827 married Isabella, daughter of John Lillie (Glasgow, a descendant of Huguenot refugees). He soon went back to Rothesay as deputy town clerk

## GILLIES

and agent for the Greenock Bank. When the first municipal council was elected under the reform act of 1832, he was appointed town clerk of the burgh and clerk to the harbour trustees. He was also admitted (as procurator of the sheriffs court) as a notary public. In 1842 the Greenock Bank was amalgamated with the Western bank of Scotland and Gillies became local agent for the larger institution. Next year Gillies prepared a bill to provide for the police of the burgh and to supply lighting and water, and he was sent to London to watch its passage through Parliament. A loyal and devout churchman, Gillies in 1830 was ordained as an elder of the church of Scotland. At public meetings, at synod, at presbytery, and in assembly he threw himself heart and soul into the problem of the civil establishment of religion and education. Through him his native parish received some of the best men available for its schools. Deeply moved by the spectre of disruption in the Church, he stood by his minister and left the Established Church when the crash came. The seceding portion of the congregation, on his advice, roofed over as a church a large open space in the town which had been used as a cooperage. For the best part of 10 years thereafter Gillies represented his parish in the Free Church assemblies.

Then he was taken with the idea of migrating. His son, John Lillie Gillies, had already gone to Australia, and when the idea occurred to the father in 1851 he withheld it from his family, and called upon them to join in prolonged prayer for guidance. The whole day they thus addressed themselves. In the evening they discussed the problem, and, almost without dissent, adopted the momentous decision. With his mind at peace, Gillies set about making arrangements for his departure. At the age of 49, he sailed with his family in the *Slains Castle*. On arriving in Dunedin Gillies purchased a 10-acre section and house at Halfway Bush (where he lived for many years) and a farm at Tokomairiro, which was carried on by his sons. He went into partnership with John Hyde Harris (the only solicitor then practising in Dunedin) and was forthwith admitted a barrister and solicitor of the Supreme Court. He was soon fully involved in the public affairs of the province. In 1853 he was elected to the Provincial Council, for which he acted as clerk.

## GILLIES

He was speaker in 1854-55. In 1857 Gillies was appointed by the General Government sheriff of Otago and resident magistrate, and from 1861 to 1870 he was registrar of births, deaths and marriages. Education had in him a champion fired with Scots zeal and with ideas far in advance of his time; as, for instance, when he advocated setting aside one-third of the Church estates for a university chair. One of the founders and an elder of Knox church, he took a great interest also in the foundation of the strong church at Tokomairiro, to which he presented a bell. Gillies made himself chiefly responsible for the creation of the sustentation fund of the church; he was a strong advocate of missions to the Chinese and the Maori, and of the union of the Presbyterian Churches of New Zealand. He was a pillar of strength of the Sunday schools, the Otago Bible Society and the Young Men's Christian Association. He died on 24 Jul 1871. (See J. L., R. and T. B. GILLIES, 1- McINDOE.)

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Hocken; *Otago Witness*; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Jul 1871, 28 Feb 1930 (p).

GILLIES, JOHN LILLIE (1832-97) was born at Rothesay, Scotland, the son of John Gillies (q.v.), and educated at the parish school. In 1843 he went to Scougall's Academy.

In 1845 he joined the Western Bank of Scotland, and six years later sailed in the *King William* for Australia. In Victoria he went on a sheep and cattle run, visited the goldfields and thence passed to journalism. He joined the staff of the *Geelong Advertiser* (1854) and was accountant for some time. There he married and in 1855 he left in the *Gil Blas* for Otago, where his father and brothers were settled. Gillies took up a farm in Tokomairiro, and in 1861 went amongst the first to Gabriel's Gully. He had great influence with the diggers, and was closely associated with Gabriel Read (q.v.) in providing for their self-government and religious services.

In 1861 he was elected M.P.C. for Tokomairiro, which he represented to 1864. He was in the executive (1863-64) as provincial treasurer (under Dick), and showed great financial ability. In 1869 he was again in the Council for Tokomairiro, and he was in the executive (1869) as a non-official member (under Reid). In May 1871 he was returned for Port Chal-

mers and elected speaker. When Macandrew dissolved the Council (1873), as a protest against Reid being provincial secretary and a member of the General Government, Gillies opposed him for the superintendency, making an arduous campaign on horseback throughout the province. He was defeated (by 3,902 to 2,759), but regained his seat in the Council (for Milton) and also the speakership, which he held until the provinces were abolished. In 1873 he was elected to Parliament for Waikouaiti, but resigned in 1875 on accepting the position of secretary to the Otago harbour board.

Gillies was for some years editor of the *Bruce Herald*; was on the school committee at Tokomairiro and Union street, Dunedin; a member of the local committee for the New Zealand exhibition of 1865 and of the mining conference (1868). In 1869 he was chairman of the commission to draw up the basis of reunion of Otago and Southland, and in 1870 he reported to the Government on sludge channels on the goldfields. In 1873 he was on a commission (with J. P. Maitland and H. W. Robinson) to consider the complaints of Chinese residents at Wakatipu (1873). He was largely interested in the Table Hill Quartz Mining Co. Gillies died on 27 Sep 1897.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Hocken, *Otago; Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vols ii, ix, x; Pyke (p); *Evening Star*, 27 Dec 1897; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Jul 1871, 28 Sep 1897. Portrait: Parliament House.

GILLM.S., ROBERT (1835-86) was born at Rothesay, Buteshire, educated at the parish school, and in 1851 went on to the University of Glasgow, where he took a professional course. When his father (John Gillies, q.v.) decided to emigrate to New Zealand Robert at once turned his attention to land occupations, and spent the first half of 1852 working on a farm.

He arrived in New Zealand with his parents in the *Slains Castle* (Nov 1851). In 1853 the brothers, Robert and William (q.v.) went farming at Riversdale, Tokomairiro, where the father bought a property. Their goods were shipped to the head of Waiholo lake at Clarendon and then carted. Robert distinguished himself by driving one of the first pairs of horses seen in the Tokomairiro plain; and gained further renown by steering the straightest furrow at the first ploughing match held there

(1856). He was an active promoter of the old Bruce Agricultural society. From 1857 to 1861 Gillies was employed in the provincial surveying service. While surveying on the Waihopai, New River, and Mataura plains (1857-58) he found traces of gold, and in his reports to the Government he prophesied a brilliant future for the industry.

In 1861 Gillies came into Dunedin, and joined C. H. Street (q.v.) in business as land and estate agents. They carried on successfully for 15 years, and when Street retired (1876) Gillies took Walter Hislop in as partner. Later the firm amalgamated with Connell and Moodie, and in 1884 formed the Perpetual Trustees, Estate, and Agency Co., of which Gillies was chairman until his death.

Though he could without difficulty have been elected to the Provincial Council or to Parliament Gillies declined for many years to enter public life. In 1883 he contested the Bruce seat in Parliament, but was defeated by McDonald. In Aug 1884 the position was reversed (Gillies 581, Driver 364, McDonald 235). In Parliament Gillies showed all the vigour and intelligence of his family, but he retired in Jul 1885 on account of health. He had a strong scientific bent. He was a member of the Athenaeum committee; a fellow of the Linnaean Society, and a founder (1869) of the Otago Institute, before which he read important papers on the trapdoor spider (1875 and 1887) and the fauna of Otago. "In later years he devoted himself to astronomy, and spent much money on instruments for his observatory. He was on the council of the Institute until 1885, and president in 1876.

Gillies did great work in social movements. For many years he was a prominent member of the Prisoners' Aid society and local treasurer of the London Missionary Society. He was also for a long period president of the Knox Church Young Men's society; he laid the foundations of the Church library, and was largely instrumental in the removal of the church from the old site to the new. In the business sphere Gillies was a promoter of the Dunedin waterworks and of the Westport Coal Co., and chairman of the original *Otago Daily Times* and *Witness* Newspapers Co. In later years he acquired a farm at Awamoko, where he built up a flock of Leicester sheep of high reputation.

Gillies married a daughter of his partner, Street. He died on 15 Jun 1886.

*Trs. N.Z. Inst.*, vols ii, viii, ix, x; *Bruce Herald*, 12 Jan 1886; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Jun 1886, 12 Jul 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

GILLM.S., THOMAS BANNATYNE (1828-89), the eldest son of John Gillies, was born at Rothesay, Buteshire. Like his brothers, he went to the parish school under a superior dominie, whose services his father had acquired for the benefit of the parish.

From school he went into his father's office to study law, but having other ideas, he left and went to Manchester to enter into commercial life. During a few years spent there he gave ample evidence of the soundness of the Scots education by winning the gold medal offered by the Young Men's Christian Association for scholarship. About 1852 the father decided to emigrate to New Zealand and Thomas Bannatyne returned to Rothesay to prepare for the change, and married Miss Douglas. The family left in the *Slains Castle*, reaching Otago late in 1852. Shortly after landing his father took up land in the Tokomairiro district and Thomas and a brother farmed it. Later he moved to Warepa. He was a good farmer, and spent some years happily enough on the land, but a man of his intellectual habits could not remain in the wilds.

By 1858 Gillies was back in town and, having passed the examinations prescribed by the Supreme Court of New Zealand, he entered into practice with John Hyde Harris. Early in 1860 he was returned to a seat for Dunedin Town in the Provincial Council, where two years later he occupied the speaker's chair for a month or two. In Apr 1860 he was elected M.H.R. for Dunedin Country District and at the general elections in 1861 he won the Bruce seat, which he held until resigning in 1865. Domett took him into the ministry in Aug 1862 as Attorney-general, and in the Whitaker-Fox ministry he was Postmaster-general and Secretary for Lands (1863-64).

During his last few years in Dunedin Gillies was in partnership with C. W. Richmond. In 1865 he decided to remove to Auckland, and he made the long journey entirely on horseback, with the exception of the passage of the straits. Gillies's high standing in public life is evident

from the fact that within four years of reaching Auckland he was able to contest the superintendency successfully against a most experienced provincial politician (John Williamson), whom he defeated by 50 votes after the hottest fight ever known in the province. In May 1870 he re-entered Parliament as representative of Mangonui, and at the general election of 1871 he won the Auckland City West seat, which he held until his elevation to the bench in 1875. Gillies's superintendency was a difficult one, but he administered the office with dignity and independence. His views on the provincial system were not altogether popular in the province, but his wide experience in both Otago and Auckland gave them a weight which could not be ignored. He did not contest the superintendency again at the end of his term (1873). Stafford had appointed him Colonial Treasurer in 1872, and Colonial politics now took his time. In Parliament he was a strong opponent of the Vogel public works policy. In 1875 he was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court.

Gillies was a man of many-sided talents, which were always at the service of his fellow colonists. He was keenly interested in scientific subjects, his special branch being conchology. He had a fine collection of New Zealand shells, in the search for which he more than once cruised in a cutter, in company with Professor Kirk, among the bays and islands of North Auckland. He read papers before the Auckland Institute (of which he was a founder). As Superintendent he obtained for the Auckland Institute and Museum the fine site which they occupied for many years. To acquire this he headed the subscription list with a donation of £500. He was three times president of the Institute, and was on the council of Auckland University College from the time of its establishment till his death. A few months before he died he was appointed to the senate of the University. Another of his hobbies was horticulture, and especially the acclimatisation of trees of economic value. He planted cork oaks at Mount Eden with considerable success. Gillies wrote a good deal at different times. In 1862 he contributed to the *Otago Witness* an interesting series of *Pencilings by the Way*, which bore testimony to the tastes implanted in his mind by his education in Scotland.

Gillies visited the Old Country for the bene-

## GILLON

fit of his health in 1887. After his return he continued his judicial duties up to the day of his death, 26 Jul 1889. By his first wife he had a family of three sons and one daughter. He afterwards married (1867) Agnes, a niece of Dr Andrew Sinclair (q.v.). She died on 2 Mar 1884. In her memory and that of her uncle, Gillies founded the Sinclair-Gillies scholarships at Auckland University College.

*Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, vols ii, iv, vi, vii, ix, x, xii, xiv, xv, xvi; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, ii (p); Hocken; Beattie, iii; Gisborne; *Otago Witness*, 4 Apr-6 Jun 1857; *Otago Daily Times*, 27 Jul 1889, 19 Apr 1930 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Jul 1889. Portrait: Parliament House.

GILLON, EDWARD THOMAS (1842-96) was born at Douglas, Isle of Man, of Irish parentage. He attended Forester's School there and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Maori* (1851). Thereafter he received his education at his mother's school. He early showed literary tastes and contributed sketches to the *Otago Witness*, as a result of which he received an appointment on that paper. He reported the Provincial Council meetings and represented his paper at the opening of the goldfields.

When Vogel established the *Otago Daily Times* Gillon joined the staff as chief reporter, but a severe attack of fever compelled him to give up journalism for a while, and he became clerk of the court at Tokomairiro. There in 1864 he helped to found the *Bruce Herald*, which he left to establish the *Bruce Standard*. In 1867 he was appointed to the newly-established Hansard staff and clerk of private bills, filling in his leisure with special correspondence. He soon gave up his official duties and joined the *Evening Post*. In 1868 he won a government prize for an essay on land settlement. In 1872 he was appointed manager of the Press Association, but the business being disposed of to Holt and McCarthy, he rejoined the *Post* as editor. This he resigned to contest the Wellington Country seat, in which he was unsuccessful. For a time he edited and partly owned the *Argus*. In 1878 the Press Association was reformed, and he became manager, all the opposition was absorbed, and the United Press Association was the result. After managing this business successfully he resumed the editorship of the *Post* (1884).

## GILLOW

Gillon was M.P.C. for Wellington City (1875-76) and about the same time was a member of the City Council. He was a powerful, trenchant writer with a lucid style, and for many years was one of the most influential journalists in the colony. He championed the rights of the press fearlessly. On one occasion he refused in the Supreme Court to divulge a source of information and a few years later he supported a member of his staff who refused to disclose the source of his information in a case of parliamentary privilege. He took an active part in founding the New Zealand Journalists' association, of which he was president for three years. Gillon was a clever horseman, an enthusiastic volunteer and a good cricketer. He was one of the leading exponents of Shakespeare and represented in New Zealand the Dramatic Authors' Society and the J. C. Williamson Co. As a freemason he helped to create the grand lodge of New Zealand, but firmly refused to be made grand master. He was eventually elected P.D.G.M. and was chairman of the central committee and president of the board of general purposes. He was twice married, his second wife (Isabella Jackson) dying in 1884. Gillon died on 19 Apr 1896. (See C. W. ADAMS.)

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Otago Daily Times Diamond Jubilee Souvenir*; *Evening Post*, 20 Apr 1896; Research Lodge of Wellington, leaflet no 100, Feb 1934.

GILLOW, EDMUND (1837-1931) was born at St Nicholas, Isle of Thanet, and educated at King's School, Canterbury, and Edinburgh. Coming to New Zealand with a brother in the late fifties, they took up the Mararoa run, near lake Manapouri, which they stocked with sheep from Australia (1858). They afterwards moved to the Narrows, Riverton.

Gillow represented Longwood in the Southland Provincial Council in 1864, and Aparima 1869-70. He then moved to Dunedin, and became interested in mining. Later he went to reside on the West Coast, where he became engineer to the Westport Coal Co. Retiring after many years' service, he remained consulting engineer until his death, which occurred on 11 Sep 1931.

*Southland P.C. Proc.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Sep 1931.

## GILMER

GILMER, HAMILTON (1838-1919) was born at Broomfield, county Monaghan, Ireland, and educated there. In 1861 he came to Victoria and soon afterwards to the goldfields of Otago and the West Coast. With his brother he owned many hotels on the West Coast, which prospered during the heyday of Hokitika, Staffordstown and Greymouth. He paid one visit to Ireland, where he married Miss Hamilton. Returning to Greymouth, he moved in 1881 to Wellington, where he made investments in property and industrial enterprises and was director of many companies. He took little part in public life. For seven years he was a member of the Legislative Council (1907-14). His death occurred on 25 Jun 1919.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1919; *N.Z. Times*, 26 Jun 1919. Portrait: Parliament House.

GILMOUR, ROBERT (1831-1902) was the son of a Scottish farmer. He came to New Zealand in the late fifties, settling first at Auckland and then at Napier, where he was on the staff of the *Herald*. In 1863 he moved to Smithland and took up a farm at Hokonui, but being of a literary turn of mind went to Invercargill and was appointed to the literary staff of the *Southland Times*. He shortly obtained an interest (with J. W. Bain) in the paper. Selling this, he entered into partnership with W. Craig in the *Southland News*, but again sold out and visited the Old Country, where he was in business (1873-79). On his return to Invercargill he acquired the interest of Chantrey Harris in the *Times*, becoming manager and director; revising editor (1886); editor (1888) and sole owner (1896). He was once president of the Southland hospital board and the Caledonian and Burns societies. Gilmour died on 24 Apr 1902.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Southland Times*, 25 Apr 1902, 12 Nov 1912.

GILRAY, THOMAS (1851-1920) was born in Lanarkshire and educated at the High School in Edinburgh, where he gained many prizes and was Carson medallist. At Edinburgh University he graduated M.A. with honours in classics and the rectorial prize, and he proceeded to Heidelberg and Berlin. He was three years assistant to Professor Masson at Edinburgh; three years master at the Watsonian

## GISBORNE

College; head English master at Glasgow Academy; and six years professor of English at Dundee University.

In 1889 Gilray was appointed professor of English at Otago University, a position which he held till his death (in 1920). (Honorary LL.D. Edinburgh.) He was chairman of the professorial board (1907-10). A most successful teacher and lecturer, Gilray was keenly interested in Carlyle, and raised funds in New Zealand for the acquisition of Carlyle's house in Chelsea for a museum.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Feb 1920.

GILRUTH, JOHN ANDERSON (1871-1937) was born in Forfarshire, Scotland, and educated at Arbroath and Dundee. He first studied law, but afterwards turned to veterinary science, which he studied in Glasgow and London. (M.R.C.V.S. 1891.) In 1893 he was appointed Government Veterinarian in New Zealand, in 1898 Chief Veterinarian and in 1901 Pathologist to the Health department. He was a member of the royal commission on public health (1900). In 1908 he was appointed professor of veterinary pathology at Melbourne University; in 1911 a member of a scientific commission to the Northern Territory; and from 1912-20 he was administrator of the Territory. Thereafter till his death (on 4 Feb 1937) he was Chief of the division of animal health for the Commonwealth Council of Scientific and Industrial Research.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 6 Feb 1937.

GISBORNE, WILLIAM (1825-98) was a son of Thomas John Gisborne, of Holme Hall, Bakewell, Derbyshire, and Sarah, the daughter of J. A. Krehmer, of St Petersburg. He was educated at Harrow, and at the age of 17 went to South Australia.

In 1847 he came to New Zealand; was appointed private secretary to the Lieutenant-governor of New Munster (9 Aug) and a few months later clerk to the executive. He then lived at the Hutt, and Thomas Arnold (q.v.) was much impressed by his qualities. In Sep 1848 he was appointed commissioner of crown lands for the province of New Ulster, and in 1850 a commissioner for the quieting of native titles. In 1852 he went to England on 18 months' leave of absence. On his return (1853)

## GISBORNE

he was appointed Under-secretary for Lands; and in Jul 1856, on the inauguration of responsible government and the retirement of the old permanent officials, he succeeded Dr Sinclair (q.v.) as Under-secretary in the Colonial Secretary's office. In 1861 Gisborne married Caroline, daughter of Assistant-commissary-general Bridgen. He continued in his official position until 1869, when Fox appointed him to the Legislative Council and the ministry, with the portfolio of Colonial Secretary. Shortly afterwards he was appointed Commissioner for the Government Life Insurance office, which he administered until Hs76.

While on a visit to Taranaki (1871), Gisborne was persuaded to accept nomination for the Egmont seat in Parliament, to which he was elected unopposed. The constituency thanked him for saving it the expense and trouble of an election. For a few weeks in 1870 he was Minister of Public Works. When the Fox Government was defeated (Sep 1872) Gisborne resigned his seat in Parliament in terms of the disqualification act. While he was absent in London in 1877 he was again returned to Parliament, by the electors of Totara (Westland), as a supporter of Grey; and during the last few weeks of the Grey administration (Jul-Oct 1879) he was Minister of Lands, Mines and Immigration. Shortly after his return to Parliament he succeeded his brother in the possession of several country homes in England, and in 1881 he went to reside there. In 1892, as heir of his cousin Sir Thomas W. Evans, he came into possession of Allestree Hall, Derby, where he lived for the remainder of his life, taking his part in the affairs of the county, of which he was a deputy-lieutenant, as well as being a magistrate for Herefordshire.

Gisborne devoted much of his later years to literature. He was a shrewd judge of character. Reeves says of his *Rulers and Statesmen of New Zealand* (first published in 1886) that it is written 'with such undoubted fairness and personal knowledge, and in so workmanlike, albeit good-natured, a way as to have a permanent interest.' In 1889 he published *The Colony of New Zealand*. As a public official Gisborne stood high at a time when the service was not strong, and he acted as chairman of the royal commission which endeavoured to devise a better system of promotion and pensions. He

## GITTOS

was a sound administrator with a good financial head and the aloof disposition of the statesman. Gisborne was for some years chairman of the governors of Wellington College. In 1886 he acted as one of the New Zealand commissioners for the Colonial and India Exhibition. While in New Zealand Gisborne delivered many thoughtful addresses on such topics as socialism (Mechanics' Institute, Auckland, 1852; Wellington 1871). He died on 7 Jan 1898.

*Parltry Record; N.Z.P.D.; D.N.E.; Col. Gent.; App. H.R., pass; Leckie; Saunders; Reeves; Arnold; Mennell; Gisborne, op cit.; The Times, 8 Jan 1898; N.Z. Herald, 25 Feb 1898.* Portrait: Parliament House.

GITTOS, WILLIAM (1829-1916) was born at Ingleton, Durham, and came to New Zealand with his father, Benjamin Gittos (1808-84), in the ship *James*, which reached Auckland by way of Hobart and Port Nicholson in 1840. The family lived for a time in tents on the site of Auckland before proceeding in the *James* to Bay of Islands and travelling overland to Hokianga. There his father started a farm. They suffered great privations and dangers during the early years of their residence, and on the outbreak of Heke's war were compelled at short notice to leave for Auckland in the Government brig *Victoria*.

William, now about 16, remained in the district and, with Maning (q.v.), saw something of the fighting, especially about Okaihau. He received some education in a night school established by his father for the benefit of his own children and those of neighbouring settlements; and soon acquired a fluent knowledge of the Maori language. For the Maori themselves he evinced a warm sympathy. Kindly and genial in disposition, he was genuinely interested in their welfare, not less on the temporal than on the spiritual side. He was particularly helpful in their dealings with the pakeha, and for some years supervised their leases, collected their rents and kept their accounts. Sports and games also he fostered with advice and encouragement.

The Gittos family in 1857 established themselves in Auckland as leather merchants and developed tanning with native barks (such as the tanekaha and towhai). On the outbreak of war in 1863 they started a tannery at the Whau. William, on moving to Auckland, went into

## GLASGOW

the building trade, and in 1853 he visited Melbourne to widen his experience. His health was not good and in a few years he returned to Auckland, where in 1856 he was admitted to the ministry of the Wesleyan Church and appointed to Kaipara to minister to Europeans and Maori. In the same year he married a daughter (1830-1906) of the Rev John Hobbs. She was born at Mangungu and in 1850 joined the staff of Wesley College at Auckland under Joseph Fletcher. Gittos's skill as a boatbuilder and bushman and his knowledge of medicine were of great value in his ministrations at Kaipara. In every settlement he established a Bible class, and Maori schools for boys and girls required constant supervision. When the *Matilda Watfenbach* arrived in 1862 with the first Non-conformist settlers to establish the Albertland settlement Gittos visited the immigrants and held an open-air service on their first day ashore. He so fully gained the confidence of the Maori tribes in the north that though war prisoners escaping from Kawau received every hospitality from the local tribes, they were unable to create any disaffection. At his suggestion the Government repatriated the Waikato prisoners. Gittos displayed tact, courage and judgment in his dealings with the Maori and was a wise counsellor for the Government.

In 1886 he withdrew from this service in impaired health and took up his residence in Ponsonby as superintendent of the Maori mission both north and south. In 1891 he moved to Waikato, where he was for three years in close touch with the King's movement and gained the confidence of Tawhiao. In 1894 Gittos returned to live in Auckland, where he died on 26 May 1916.

Buller; Brett, *Albertlanders* (p); Morley; *N.Z. Herald*, 7 Aug 1884, 27 May 1916.

GLASGOW, DAVID BOYLE, EARL OF (1833-1915) was the eldest son of Patrick Boyle (great grandson of the 2nd earl). Entering the Navy, he served in the Crimean war and the China war of 1857, retiring with the rank of captain. In 1890 he succeeded to the earldom on the death of his cousin and seven years later was created Baron Fairlie of Fairlie in the peerage of the United Kingdom. He married (1873) Dorothea Elizabeth Thomasina, daughter of Sir Edward Hunter Blair.

## GLASGOW

Glasgow was appointed Governor of New Zealand, in succession to Lord Onslow, in 1892, and assumed the office on 7 Jun. He found the country impatiently awaiting a solution of the constitutional difficulty which Lord Onslow had left to him. The Ballance Government, unable to force its legislation through the upper house (where it had only five supporters against 31 who were opposed to its policy) had asked Onslow to make 12 new appointments. Though the Colonial Office had already laid down that the governor should take the advice of the ministry in such a matter, Onslow objected. Glasgow inherited his reluctance. He argued that it was necessary to maintain the independence of the Legislative Council as a brake upon the lower house and that if legislation were consistently rejected by the Council the ministry could ask for a dissolution. He offered to appoint nine members, and when the Government declined to accept he suggested that it should resign. This Ballance refused to do, fully believing that when the matter was referred to the Colonial Office it would be decided in favour of the Government. Glasgow submitted the problem in a despatch of 22 Jun 1892. Lord Knutsford, the Colonial Secretary, replying by cable on 10 Aug, expressed the opinion that the Premier's request was reasonable inasmuch as, even if twelve members were appointed, the opposition would still have a strong majority in the Council. He added that the existence of the second chamber might be imperilled unless there was a more even balance between the parties. In a later message he advised the Governor to accept without hesitation the advice of ministers, to reopen the question and to waive his objections. Glasgow acted accordingly, and the twelve new members were appointed on 15 Oct. Keith remarks that since then there has been no serious difference between the two houses in New Zealand.

Glasgow completed his term of office in Feb 1897, being succeeded by Lord Ranfurly. Gisborne says that he was an excellent governor: •urbane, frank, hospitable, with that combination of attractive qualities and knowledge of the world so often seen in naval officers, he has shown firmness and ability without political bias. He has taken a kindly interest, without reference to party politics, in all social institu-

## GLASS

tions likely to promote the well-being of the colony. He retired with the respect and good wishes of all classes: Glasgow was president of the Institute of Naval Architects. He died on 13 Dec 1915. His daughter married Sir Charles Fergusson, who was Governor 1924-30.

G.B.O.P., H.C., 1893-94/198; *N.Z.P.D.*; Gisborne (p); Keith; *D.N.B.*; Burke; *The Times*, 14 Dec 1915.

GLASS, ARTHUR GILPIN CANNING (1858-1928) was born at Devizes, in Wiltshire, and educated at St Anne's, Brixton. He was in offices for three years before coming to New Zealand in the *Helen Denny* at the age of 13. He was employed on sheep stations in Hawkes Bay for five years and then took up bush land at Broadwood, near Kaitaia. There he organised the first branch of the Farmers' Union (1899), under the chairmanship of T. W. P. Smith. Glass afterwards travelled widely through New Zealand forming branches, and completed the organisation in 1902. He then retired to his farm and later purchased a farm near Mercer. He died on 31 Aug 1928.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Sep 1928.

GLEDHILL, FRANCIS ULLATHORNE (1803-82) was a native of Halifax, Yorkshire, and saw a good deal of the political reform agitation in the north of England before coming to Taranaki by the *Bella Mal'ina* in May 1844. He commenced business as merchant and auctioneer and manufacturing leather. When the constitution was inaugurated he was a candidate for the superintendency of Taranaki Oul 1853); but was unsuccessful. He opposed state education on the ground that the settlers were well able to pay for the needs of their children. He was, however, elected to Parliament for New Plymouth (1853-55). He was a member of the Provincial Council (for New Plymouth 1857-65 and for Grey and Bell 1865-73); and represented Omata in Parliament (1865-66). Gledhill was also a member of the New Plymouth town board, of the first harbour board and of the mounted volunteers. He died on 2 Oct 1882.

*Pm-Itly Record; Cycl. N.z.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald*, 4 Oct 1882. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

GODFREY, EDWARD LEE, entered the British Army as ensign in the 20th Foot in 1809 and

## GODFREY

was promoted captain in the 73rd (1828), retiring on half pay 1830. From 1833 he served in the civil wars in Portugal and Spain. In 1839 he arrived in New South Wales with the intention of becoming a settler. He was a man of high principle and good judgment and became intimate with the officer commanding the forces (Sir M. O'Connell), by whom he was recommended to Governor Gipps for the post of land titles commissioner in New Zealand. To this he was appointed in Oct 1840. He was still engaged in his task when New Zealand became a separate colony and Hobson confirmed him in office as commissioner for land claims (3 Jul 1841).

G.B.O.P., 1845/108, 1845/131; Shortland, 9; *Army Lists*, 1810, 1829, 1831-33; Jellicoe; E. Wilson; Marais.

GODFREY, HENRY (1825-68) was a son of Dr Godfrey, of Oxford, an original selector of land in New Zealand and arrived in the *Bernicia* on 5 Nov 1848. He spent a number of years farming and milling in the Nelson district, being the first to make use of steam machinery there. He then settled in the Wairau and took a prominent part in the public life of the new province of Marlborough. In 1862 he entered the Provincial Council for Tuamarina, which he represented until the next general election, when he was returned for Upper Wairau. He remained a member until his death. Godfrey was twice a member of the executive (1863-64 and 1865-67) and on one occasion was deputy-superintendent of the province (1866). As a farmer he was efficient and progressive; in politics practical and well balanced. He died on 22 Aug 1868.

*Marlborough Express*, 23 Aug 1868.

GODFREY, JOHN, an early Marlborough settler came from Charlbury, Enstone, Oxfordshire. He built before 1855 the Wairau hotel at Renwick, which was a frequent rendezvous for political gatherings. He represented Upper Wairau in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1860-62), Picton (1862-65) and Tuamarina (1865-69). He was in the executive on three occasions between 1862 and 1865, and took a prominent part in the political crises of 1862. As a result of these he obtained several amendments of the law to the disadvantage of the land-owning

## GODLEY

party. Godfrey was a member of the first Picton borough council (1876).

*Marlborough P.C. minutes*; Buick, *Marlborough*.

GODLEY, JOHN ROBERT (1814-61) was born in 1814, the eldest son of a landed proprietor at Killegar, county Leitrim, Ireland, his mother being a sister of Robert Daly, Bishop of Cashel. Godley went first to Ward's preparatory school at Iver, and then to Harrow. Here he won the Sayers scholarship (1831), but as he wished to go to Oxford he did not take it up. In 1832 he obtained a governor's scholarship for Oxford and was admitted to Christ Church. There he won the Fell scholarship, and in 1835 took a second class in classics for his B.A., which he gained in 1836.

He then studied for the bar, was duly called and held a brief or two; but his interest was rather in the principles than in the practice of law, and he studied deeply the science of politics. Not robust in health, Godley travelled a good deal in Europe and North America. His *Letters from America* (1844) attracted attention by their shrewd and understanding comments on men and things. In view of the difficulties of Ireland he devoted much study to the problem of colonisation, and put forward for official consideration a scheme under which over a million people should be emigrated from Ireland to Canada and settled in one district. The cost, estimated at [10,000,000, was to be met by a loan charged on the landed property of Ireland, and the interest paid out of income tax specially raised for the purpose. The scheme, though supported by a memorial largely signed by Irish landowners, was turned down as being too costly. Meanwhile the famine burst with full force upon the country, a million people died and more than a million fled to find better conditions in the United States. Godley in these times did his duty as a country gentleman, acting as required in the capacity of magistrate, grand juror, and poor law guardian. His observations on the poor law in Ireland show how deeply he was interested in his fellow-men. In that year he contested the county seat in Parliament as a Tory, but was unsuccessful, chiefly owing to the conviction of the Catholics that it would not do to have the county represented from Killegar: His liberal opinions, however, pleased them.

## GODLEY

About this time Godley and Gibbon Wakefield were attracted to each other's schemes, and they were introduced, with results which were to be of great importance to Canterbury. Wakefield, who was scheming a Church of England settlement in New Zealand, saw that Godley, with his wealthy connections, his Oxford upbringing, and his known opinions on colonisation, would be a great asset. Accordingly, he persuaded him to take a leading part in it. The published correspondence shows that Godley spent much time elaborating the scheme; FitzGerald (in his prefatory memoir to Godley's speeches) says that he was actually the author. At any rate, suffering in health as he was, and faced with the absolute necessity of going to Italy or some other sunny climate, Godley agreed to be head and front of the expedition. In order that he could take part in the negotiations he became a director of the New Zealand Company and managing director of the Canterbury Association. Through him many staunch supporters, by whose help the thing was eventually revived and carried through, were brought in. During the two years occupied in maturing the scheme Godley was a constant contributor to the *Canterbury Paper's* and to the *Morning Chronicle*, the London paper which was most interested in colonial questions. The underlying principle of the proposal was that land sales would provide funds for the endowment of religion and education, twin ideals which specially appealed to the wealthy friends of the movement. In fact, it was the proposed 'Buller College' or 'Buller University' (named after the deceased Charles Buller) which fascinated several of them.

Warned by the advance of tuberculosis in his system that he must get out of England, Godley with his little family sailed in the *Lady Nugent* towards the end of 1849 to prepare the way for the settlers. The vessel anchored in Port Cooper on 14 Apr 1850. The harbour was much better than he had anticipated. Captain Thomas (q.v.), who had been sent down by the Company to prepare for the arrival of the colonists, had not only laid out the town of Lyttelton (where a dozen or so houses had been erected) but he had built houses for the surveyor and agent and for the accommodation of the immigrants and had run a jetty out into

## GODLEY

twelve feet of water. Godley rode over the hill with Thomas to visit the Deans family, who had settled on the plains long since, and incidentally he gave the name of Shakespeare to the river which they had already named after the Scotch Avon.

The funds available having all been expended, Godley stopped expenditure; but approved of what Thomas had done. Having some months on his hands, he proceeded to Wellington, where Grey was now in charge of the administration. There he remained until the end of the year, devoting much thought to the fight of the Settler's Constitutional Association against Grey's semi-nominated council and in favour of full representative government. Meanwhile, in England the prospects of the Canterbury Association were revived and carried through to success by the action of Lord Lyttelton in the spring of 1850 in accepting the chairmanship of the managing committee. 'Within a few months the first four ships were on the berth for Port Cooper. Godley returned to Lyttelton to welcome their arrival. Three ships cast anchor on 16 Dec. Thenceforward for about two years Godley was in all but name governor of the new colony. On the whole he administered his trust with sagacity and never-failing consideration for all with whom he had to do. Bold resolves had to be taken, as for instance when, rather than drive away from the province experienced Australian pastoralists who were willing to take up runs, he reversed the regulation regarding squatting. But in doing this he had a previous understanding with the Land Purchasers' Society that they would faithfully abide by the decision of the Association.

During 1851 Godley was troubled by the intention of the Canterbury Association in London to retain in its own hands the nomination of the managing committee in New Zealand. How deeply he felt on any form of absentee government he expressed to FitzGerald in these words: 'I would rather be governed by a Nero on the spot than by a board of angels in London, because we could, if the worst came to the worst, cut off Nero's head, but we could not get at the board in London at all: He actually wrote to the Association during 1851 resigning on these grounds his position as its agent. The Association delayed accepting the resignation

## GODLEY

and took power, under the constitution which was then being framed, to transfer all its powers of government to the superintendent and provincial council of Canterbury. When the constitution of 1852 arrived in the Colony, Godley was requested to stand for the office of superintendent. He declined on the ground that he had made arrangements to be back in England in three years, and he sailed for Home on 22 Dec 1852.

Appointed to a commissionership of income tax in Ireland, he soon transferred to England, and on the remodelling of the War Office he was appointed head of the store department. He became assistant Secretary at War under Lords Panmure and Herbert and General Peel. In 1854 he was appointed agent in London for Canterbury, but this post he resigned in 1856 as being inconsistent with his official duties. In 1860 the recrudescence of his disease, which for years made speaking most painful, caused Godley to go to Italy for a change.

Returning to the War Office, he had much to do with the report in 1861 of the departmental committee on the military defence of the colonies, and he gave evidence before a parliamentary committee. The report had an important bearing on the subsequent policy of the British Government during the Maori war. Godley's opinions on the subject were stated in a speech which he made on his return from New Zealand in 1853: 'May I earnestly and solemnly impress the one great fundamental maxim of sound colonial policy-it is, to let your colonies alone; not chiefly because your interference will probably be an injudicious kind in this or that particular matter-still less because it will be costly and troublesome to yourselves-but because it tends to spoil, corrupt, and to degrade them; because they will never do anything, or be fit for anything great so long as their chief political business is to complain of you, to fight with you, and to lean upon you; so long as they consider you responsible for their welfare, and can look to you for assistance in their difficulties. I protest quite as much against subsidies and subscriptions as against vetoes and restraints; indeed more, for the poison is more subtle, and the chance of resistance less. I want you neither to subsidise their treasuries nor to support their clergy, nor to do their police duty with your

## GOLDER

soldiers, because they ought to do these things for themselves, and by your doing it all you contribute to making them effeminate, degenerate, and helpless. Do not be afraid to leave them to themselves; throw them into the water and they will swim.'

Godley's career, which would inevitably have led to great distinction, was cut short. He died on 17 Nov 1861. Mrs Godley, who was a daughter of C. G. Wynne, of Vodas, Denbighshire, wrote an interesting series of letters from New Zealand in 1850 (published in 1936). She died in 1907. The eldest son, JOHN ARTHUR, (1847-1932) became Secretary of State for India and was raised to the peerage as Baron Kilbracken.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; D.N.E.; Cycl. N.Z., iii (p); N.Z.C. (Canterbury Association papers); J. E. FitzGerald, Selection from Writings and Speeches of J. R. Godley; Godley, op. cit., and Speeches; Reeves; Marais; A. Trollope, Australia and New Zealand, 1873; Callt. ON.; Acland; Kilbracken; Woodhouse; The Press, 28 Oct 1861, 29 Jun 1862, 15 Dec 1900, 5 Jan 1907, 11 Apr 1908, 25 Jan 1930 (p).*

GOLDER, WILLIAM (1810-76) was born in Scotland. He came to New Zealand with his wife in the *Bengal Merchant* (1839). He wrote a good deal of verse and published *New Zealand Minstrelsy* (1852), *The Pigeons' Parliament* (1854); *The New Zealand Survey* and *The Crystal Palace of 1851* (1867). Golder was a school teacher at Belmont and Korokoro schools from 1873 till his death (on 20 Jun 1876).

Hocken, *Bibliog.*, Wellington Educ. Board (infonation); *N.Z. Spectator*, 14 Jul 1852; *N.Z. Times*, 24 Dec 1876.

GOLDIE, DAVID (1842-1926) was born in Hobart and educated at the Church of England school there. Arriving in Auckland in 1863, he followed his trade as a carpenter for some years; contracted for supplies to the troops, became manager for George Holdship, and in 1867 commenced in business as a timber merchant.

Goldie was a member of the Auckland Provincial Council (for Auckland West) from 1873 till the abolition. He was 15 years a member of the Auckland City Council and Was mayor (1899-1901); a member of the harbour board, the charitable aid board, and the education board (10 years) and a sinking fund commis-

## GOLD-SMITH

sioner for the City Council and harbour board. A strong prohibitionist, he acted for many years on the licensing committee. In 1879 he defeated P. Dignan in the parliamentary election for Auckland West, which he represented till 1881, and again from 1887-90. He was elected for Newton in 1890, but resigned his seat the following year. "He is said to have declined ministerial rank offered to him by Ballance.

Goldie was for 60 years superintendent of the Alexander street Sunday school, and was a founder of the Auckland Sunday schools union. He was president of the Band of Hope and of two Christian Endeavour societies. He was president of the Primitive Methodist Church conference in 1885, and strenuously opposed the union with the Wesleyan church. He married (1866) a daughter of Charles Partington, and died on 8 Jun 1926.

A son, CHARLES FREDERICK GOLDIE (1870 - ) is a successful New Zealand artist, whose works appear in most of the public collections.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Jun 1926; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Auckland Star*, 27 Sep 1887; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Jun 1926 (p).

GOLDSBRO', CHARLES FIELD (1828-83) was born at vVelshpool, Montgomeryshire, and received his medical education in London, Paris and Edinburgh. (M.R.C.S., Eng.; L.S.A., 1856; L.R.C.P., Edin. 1860; F.R.C.S., 1878; M.B., Sydney, 1866; M.D., 1868.) He was house surgeon at Charing Cross hospital and medical officer to the General Post Office in London before coming to Auckland in the *Rob Roy* (1860). He was appointed coroner and surgeon to the militia, with which he served in the Waikato war (1863). Later he was president of the pensions board and of the Auckland Medical society. Goldsbro' was an active freemason, being past-master of Lodge Waitemata. He died on 20 Dec 1883.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Dec 1883; 14 Aug 1929.

GOLD-SMITH, ERIC, CHARLES (1848-1912) was born in Camberwell, London, the son of Captain Henry Gold-smith, C.E. (who came to New Zealand in 1862 in command of No 5 company, 1st "Waikato regiment). He was educated at the Boys' High School at Highgate, London, and the Grammar School at Denmark Hill, and came to New Zealand in the *Bos-*

## GOLLAN

*phorus* (1864). Early in 1867 he joined the volunteer engineers at Tauranga, and took part in the campaign against the Hauhau (being present at Te Irihanga and Whakamarama in Feb). Gold-Smith joined the survey in the Wai-kato in 1867 and in 1869 gained his license. In 1870 he was transferred to the government staff engaged on the triangulation of the North Island, and he was surveyor to the Tauranga district land court and district surveyor for the Bay of Plenty (1871-89). In 1897 he was appointed commissioner of crown lands for Hawkes Bay. He was promoted to Canterbury (1906) and Auckland (1909). Gold-Smith married (1873) a daughter of Charles Jepson Kensington (Auckland). He died on 13 Mar 1912.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Weston; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); Cowan, ii; Jourdain; *Evening Post*, 13 Mar 1912.

GOLLAN, DONALD (1811-87) was born at Culloden, Inverness, and educated at Inverness and the Edinburgh Academy, being trained as an engineer and surveyor. In 1841 he came to the Colony under the New Zealand Company and in 1854 settled down in Hawkes Bay, where he experienced most of the vicissitudes of the pioneer. He took up the Maungatarata run and was a successful sheep farmer. Gollan represented Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay in the Wellington Provincial Council (1853) and Ahuriri (1857-59). He took part in the separation movement; was appointed a justice of the peace (1856); was on the first provincial roll (1857) and a founder of the A. and P. association (1858). In the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council he was member for Waimarama for a short period (1861). In 1864 he was a captam in the Napier militia. He married in 1859 the widow of Charles de Pelichet. She died shortly after the birth of their son. Gollan died on 14 Oct 1887.

His son, SPENCER HERBERT GOLLAN (1860-1934) was educated in Switzerland and at Cambridge University. An adept at all sports, he won the Diamond skulls at Henley and with George Towns and Tom Sullivan rowed from Oxford to Putney in a triple sculling boat in 13 hours 56 minutes. In New Zealand he had a stud and racing stable, his most successful horses being Tirailleur, Bonnie Scotland, Tirant d'Eau, Norton, Australian Star and Mōifaa

## GOODBEHEERE

(which afterwards won the Grand National in England). Gollan married a daughter of James Farmer (q.v.).

GOOD THOMAS (1823-1907) was born at Aston Court, Worcestershire. His family was dispossessed for adhering to the King's Side in the Civil War. Good received his education partly in England and partly in France, and settled down to country life. He was a skilful athlete (running, boxing and jumping), and a fine gentleman rider, having many successes on the turf both in England and in Taranaki. In 1850 he walked from Mokau to New Plymouth and back in an effort to lower the record of another walker ('Skinny Jim').

Good came to New Zealand with his uncle in the *Louisa Campbell* in 1845 and took up land in the Omata district, where he remained until the Maori war. In 1853 he bought a flock of sheep from Wanganui. In 1853, and again in 1863, he was for a few weeks a member of the Provincial Council for Ornata, retiring in each case owing to native troubles. He planned the Ornata stockade and began its construction. In the early part of the war he had command of friendly natives, but he resigned to accept a commission as captain in the Bush Rangers, with which he served throughout. He was present at Mahoetahi (1860), and received the medal and a grant of 400 acres at Urenui, where he farmed for the next fifteen years. He was in command of the northern outpost at the time of the murders at White Cliffs (1869). About 1875 he moved to Oeo, where he took up a large area of country and resided until about 1901, when he moved to Ramanui, Hawera. Good was a member of the Taranaki county council in the seventies. In 1880, during the Parihaka troubles, he was camped with his company at Oeo. He died on 19 May 1907.

*Taranaki P.C. minutes; Victoria Hist. of Warwickshire*, iii, 557; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); Cowan; W.H.s. in *Taranaki Herald*, 21 May 1907. Portrait. *Taranaki Hist. Coll.*

GOODBEHEERE, EDMUND (1854-1938) was born at Handsworth, England; educated at Stony Stratford and in 1880 came to New Zealand and settled at Feilding. He served at Parihaka with the Manchester Rifles. He was a borough councillor from 1888 and mayor on many occasions (1892, 1897-1904, 1910-13). He

## GOODFELLOW

represented the borough on the Palmerston North hospital board (1892-1906) and was chairman (1899-1900); was president of the Feilding A. and P. association (1903); a member of the Oroua licensing committee (1897-1930) and chairman of the Lytton street school committee. He married a daughter of Major Liddle (Scots Greys), and died on 26 Jun 1938.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i.

GOODFELLOW, WILLIAM (1800-90) was born at Hawick, Scotland, and owned and operated a Hourmill. He had a fairly large family when he was attracted by the colonising scheme of the New Zealand Company. Having purchased land from the Company, he sailed from Greenock in the *Palmyra* (1839) for Australia, Dr Logan Campbell being also a passenger. Goodfellow visited Adelaide, Melbourne and Sydney, and then came to New Zealand. Unable to get possession of his land at Port Nicholson, he went to Auckland, travelling overland on foot. There he established a flourmill and bakery, and at the first land sale in 1841 purchased sections fronting on Queen and Wyndham streets. He also had a farm at Otara, and 2,000 acres later between Te Awamutu and Alexandra. Goodfellow was a founder of St Andrew's Presbyterian Church in Auckland and was associated with the Savings Bank and other financial undertakings. He represented Southern Division in the Provincial Council (1855-57, 1859-61). He died on 28 Jul 1890.

Family information; *Auckland P.C. Proc.; N.Z. Herald*, 29 Jul 1890.

GOODMAN, HENRY JOSEY, an early settler of Nelson, was one of the founders in 1857 of *The Colonist*, to the columns of which for many years he made humorous contributions. He was a grocer by trade and represented Nelson in the Provincial Council (1861-65).

*Nelson P.C. Proc.; The Colonist Jubilee Souvenir.*

GORDON, SIR ARTHUR HAMILTON, first Baron Stanmore (1829-1912) was born in London, the son of the 4th Earl of Aberdeen. Educated at Cambridge (where he graduated in 1851), he was president of the Union. He was private secretary to his father (1852-55) and Liberal member for Beverley (1854-57), and in 1858 went to the Ionian islands as private secre-

## GORDON

tary to Gladstone, then Lord High Commissioner. He received the C.M.G. in 1859.

In 1861 Gordon was appointed lieutenant-governor of New Brunswick, and he published many of his experiences in a volume entitled *Wilderness Journeys in New Brunswick 1866-70*. He was appointed to Trinidad in 1866, and to Mauritius in 1871 and was the first governor of Fiji in 1875. Having inaugurated the government of the new colony, he was appointed in 1877 to the additional post of High Commissioner and Consul-general for the Western Pacific. In this capacity he did much to control the traffic in native labour and to cultivate good relations with the small kingdoms of the Pacific.

On 7 Aug 1880 Gordon was appointed Governor of New Zealand, still retaining his duties as High Commissioner. This was his first governorship under the responsible system and was marked by differences of opinion with his ministry, for which he was not entirely to blame. A dispute within the ministry as to the policy to be adopted towards Te Whiti had brought about the retirement of Bryce, and matters were moving along smoothly when after the session of 1881 Gordon left on an official visit to Fiji. A few days after his departure the ministry came to an important decision, reversing its native policy and adopting the strong hand towards Te Whiti. Bryce rejoined the cabinet. Volunteers were called out and an expedition mobilised for the arrest of the leaders at Parihaka. A credit of [100,000 was asked for the extraordinary expenditure. Hearing of these events when at Levuka (through his private secretary), Gordon hurriedly returned to New Zealand, landing in Auckland on the evening when the administrator (Prendergast) issued the proclamation giving the Maori leaders fourteen days to accept the Government's terms and appointing Bryce to the ministry. Not being a party to the measures that were being taken, Gordon called upon the Government for a statement of the reasons for its change of policy. Meanwhile, he felt that he must accept the advice of his ministers and approve their military measures, especially as he believed that 90 per cent. of the people of the Colony at the time would support the Government. A minority of intellectual and experienced people in New Zealand seemed to him to have doubts

## GORDON

as to the methods of disposing of the **confiscated** lands, but his present advisers **were responsible** for the decision to enforce obedience and sincerely desired a conciliatory settlement of the long standing dispute. For his **part, he** could see no justification for the change in **policy** and complained of the discourtesy of the Ministry towards himself. He believed there would be loss of life unless Te Whirl showed forbearance —which in the event he did. Nevertheless **Gordon** felt that he would be misusing his powers if he refused to sign the proclamation and called for new advisers. In his despatch of 3 Dec 1881 he says; 'For my part, the more attentively I study the West Coast **question**, and the better I become acquainted with its history, the more cause do I perceive for doubts as to the soundness of the popular view.' At the **moment** he wrote popular approval of the **Government's** action was being recorded at the polls in a general election.

Gordon's relations with the ministry thereafter were not pleasant. For some years after his departure (on 23 Jun 1882) he was engaged in a controversy with Bryce, through the medium of the Colonial Office, Bryce having complained, with obvious justification, of the part played by Gordon in regard to the libel upon him in Rusden's history of New Zealand. In 1883 Gordon assumed the government of Ceylon where, during the crisis caused by the failure of the Oriental Bank Corporation, he took strong action, against the advice of his council, in extending the guarantee of the Government to the note issue of the bank, thereby preventing much distress among the poorer classes and probable rioting.

Gordon retired from the colonial service in 1890 with a fine record as a conscientious administrator, who laid down **lasting principles** for dealing with a native race. His personal action as regards Bryce in the case referred to will hardly bear scrutiny. After his retirement he devoted himself to literary pursuits, publishing in 1893 a life of his **father**; in 1897 records of private and public life in FIJI; and in 1906 a memoir of Sydney Herbert, Lord Herbert of Lea. He was created K.C.M.G. in 1871; G.C.M.G. in 1878 and Baron Stanmore in 1893. Stanmore was an active member of House of Lords committees, was president of the Ceylon Association in London and chairman of the

## GORE

Bank of Mauritius. As a churchman he remained throughout life a member of the house of laymen of the province of Canterbury. He married (1865) Rachel Emily, daughter of Sir John Shaw-Lefevre. He was a personal friend of Charles Kingsley, Roundell Palmer and Samuel Wilberforce. He died on 30 Jan 1912.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *App. H.R.*, 1881 A8, 1882 A4, AS, A8, A8a, 1883 A4, 1884 sess ii, A5; 1888 AI, 1889 AI; Gisborne (p); Sir R. Stout (in *Aust. Rev. of Rev.*, viii, 164-85); Des Voeux i; Rusden; Saunders; Gordon, *op. cit.*; Keith; Egerton; Scholefield, *Pacific*; *The Times*, 31 Jan 1912. Portrait: Government House, Wellington.

GORDON, JOHN (1829-1909) was born in Edinburgh, emigrated with his parents to Sydney (1838) and to Bay of Islands (1840), where his father had a Government post.

At the end of 1840 they moved to Auckland, purchasing a section in Waterloo Quadrant and a farm at Tamaki. Later they moved to Otahuhu. His father having died in 1853, Gordon farmed for a few years and then let the property and went into business as a commission agent in Otahuhu. He served in the Royal Cavalry Volunteers (1860-71) and was later captain of the Otahuhu Rifles (1871-82). He was chairman of the Auckland hospital board for some years; chairman of the **Otahuhu** road board; and member of the school committee (1878-82) and he inaugurated the borough council. He was a charter member of lodge St John, Otahuhu (S.C.) in 1866. From 1868-73 he represented Raglan in the Provincial Council. For 16 years (1859-75) he represented Otahuhu on the diocesan synod. From 1865 he was secretary of the New Zealand Agricultural Association. Gordon moved to Auckland in 1887, and died there on 28 Jan 1909. He married Lucy, daughter of Dr Elmsly (Otahuhu).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Barclay; *Otahuhu Diamond Jubilee* (1938); *Auckland Star*, 28 Jan 1909.

GORE, JAMES (1834-1917) was born in Liverpool. In 1852 he arrived in Victoria and with his father entered into government contracts for roads and bridges. About 1861 he came to Otago and for some years did similar work and building. Gore was for some years from 1877 a member of the Dunedin City Council and was mayor in 1881-82. He was chairman of the first licensing committee in High ward, a

## GORING

member of the Hospital and charitable aid board and of the drainage board, and he represented Dunedin South in Parliament (1884-87). Gore was grandmaster of freemasons (Scottish constitution). His death occurred on 23 Jul 1917.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 24 Jul 1917.

GORING, FORSTER YELVERTON (1846-1923) was born at Portumna, county Galway, the son of Forster Goring. Educated at Auckland Grammar School, he enlisted at the age of 16 as a private in the 1st Waikato Regiment and served in 1863 under Lyon at Wairoa. In Sep 1863 he was appointed ensign, and he was six months with Pitt's regiment at Otahuhu. After escorting Maori prisoners from Drury to Otahuhu, he occupied the church at Mauku. He was attached to the commissariat transport corps (1863-66) and then rejoined his own corps at Tauranga, and served under St John and Fraser in the Urewera. He displayed great coolness and judgment in the retreat at Te Ngutu-o-te Manu (where he saved wounded men under fire), and the reverse at Moturoa (Nov). On both occasions he commanded the rearguard. He was promoted major, and served continuously under Whitmore on both coasts (being present at Ngatapa and at Otautu, and eventually commanding the Waihi redoubt).

Goring was appointed inspector in 1874, and served with the Armed Constabulary in different districts until 1885, when he was appointed to command the New Zealand Artillery in Dunedin, and later in Auckland. He commanded the latter district (1891-97) and retired as a lieutenant-colonel, living thereafter in Hastings. Goring married (1880) Berma, daughter of Major H. Dobie, Madras Army. He died on 17 Feb 1923.

Goring's father, FORSTER GORING (1810-93) was a son of Sir Charles Goring, 7th baronet. He held a commission as ensign in the 1st King's Dragoon Guards (1832-34); resigned from the army in the early fifties and arrived in Auckland about 1860. He was clerk to the executive 1862-89. Goring married (1839) the Hon Sydney Yelverton, daughter of Viscount Avonmore. He died on 10 Dec 1893. (See F. Y. GORING and W. W. JOHNSTON.)

*Parltry Recol'd*; Gudgeon (p); Cowan, ii (p);

## GORST

Whitmore (p); Burke, *Peerage*; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 19 Feb 1923.

GORST, SIR JOHN ELDON (1835-1916) was born at Preston, Lancashire, the son of Edward Chaddock Gorst, and was educated at Preston Grammar School. He matriculated at St John's College (1857-60). He chose the bar as a profession, but took a position at Rossall school to be near his sick father.

On his father's death Gorst returned to London and decided to go to the colonies. He sailed for New Zealand in the *Red Jacket* and on the voyage became engaged to Mary Elizabeth, daughter of the Rev Lorenzo Moore (Christchurch). They were married in Australia, and reached New Zealand in May 1860. On arrival in Auckland Gorst found the Maori King movement a constant subject of discussion and he wrote some letters to the *New Zealander* sympathising with them and deprecating the use of force to crush a weaker race. He intended offering his services to Bishop Selwyn, but came under the strong influence of Sir George Grey, who had just returned as Governor, and he was soon appointed inspector of native and missionary schools in the Waikato, with which he was expected to combine the duties of an intelligence officer. While he was procuring timber for erecting an industrial school, Selwyn made the mission school at Otawhao available, with a farm of 200 acres, upon which young men from the Waikato tribes could be trained and educated in reading, writing and arithmetic and at mechanical trades. Implicit obedience to orders was demanded of all pupils. A hospital with a house surgeon and an itinerant surgeon was also projected.

Gorst soon established friendly relations with Wiremu Tamihana te Waharoa, Rewi, Te Heuheu and Tawhiao. Taking alarm at the progress being made, the King party published a Maori newspaper, the *Hokioi*, to propagate their views. Grey proposed publishing a rival paper, and Gorst accordingly issued from a special press at Te Awamutu *Te Pihoihi Mokemoke* (the sparrow on the housetop). The reasoned replies of this newspaper offended the King natives, who complained of the 'bad mocking style: and Rewi threatened to sack the office. This was done by Aporo (on 24 Mar 1863), and the press and type were sent

## GORST

down the river to Te Ia. Rewi advised Grey to remove the magistrate, and promised a truce for three weeks. The King in council disapproved of Rewi's conduct, but on the advice of Wiremu Tamihana, Gorst decided to withdraw. The news from Taranaki of the occupation of Tataraimaka had further incensed the King leaders, and war seemed inevitable. Gorst accordingly left on 18 Apr 1863. On 11 Jul Grey issued a proclamation calling upon the natives to declare their loyalty and assist the troops. A few days later Gorst left for Australia, with F. D. Bell and Colonel Pitt, to recruit volunteers for the Waikato regiments.

Returning to England, Gorst was called to the bar at the Inner Temple (1865). He contested the Hastings seat in the Conservative interest in that year, and in 1866 was elected for Cambridge Borough. He soon attracted the attention of Disraeli, and when he lost his seat in 1868, he undertook to reorganise the party on a popular basis. Though its emphatic success in the elections of 1874 was largely due to Gorst's work, he was not given a place in the Conservative administration. In 1875 he took silk, and was again elected to Parliament (for Chatham). As a lawyer he gained considerable reputation. In the Parliament of 1880 he became associated with Lord Randolph Churchill (both having democratic tendencies), and later also with Drummond Wolff and Arthur Balfour, these four comprising a 'party' which put up effective criticism of the Government. He differed with Churchill in 1881 on the coercion bill, and on the leadership of the Conservative party.

When the control of the National Union of Conservative Associations was secured in 1884, Churchill made terms with Lord Salisbury without consulting Gorst, and the breach between them was widened by a difference over the franchise bill. When Churchill took office he obtained the Solicitor-generalship for Gorst who, however, would not accept an extension when the Government was reconstructed. He was appointed Under-secretary for India (1886). In 1884 he introduced Tawhiao to Lord Derby. In 1890 he was British plenipotentiary at a labour conference in Berlin; in 1891-92 Financial Secretary to the Treasury, and in 1895 vice-president of the Privy Council committee on education. He was genuinely interested in

## GORTON

social reform. In 1902 Gorst retired on a pension. He retained his seat in the House of Commons, but when he declared himself a free-trader, against Chamberlain's tariff policy, he was rejected by Cambridge University, which he had represented since 1892.

Thereafter Gorst devoted himself to writing and speaking on social topics. His book, *The Children of the Nation* (1906), was a notable work. In 1906 Gorst revisited New Zealand. He surrendered his pension in 1909 to contest Preston as a Liberal.

Lady Gorst having died (1914), he married (1915) Ethel, daughter of Edward Johnson. His death occurred on 4 Apr 1916.

His son, Sir John Eldon Gorst (1861-1911), was British Agent and Consul-general in Egypt (1907-II).

*D.N.B.*; Gorst, *The Maori King and New Zealand Revisited* (p); Cowan (p); Rusden; Saunders; *N.Z. Herald*, 10 Sep 1884; *The Times*, 5 Apr 1916.

GORTON, EDWARD (1838-1909) was the son of the rector of Badingham, Suffolk. He was educated at Marlborough College and got his ensigncy in the 29th Regiment (1855). He served in India and Burma (1857-59) and exchanged into the 57th, which he joined in Taranaki. He was aide-de-camp to General Cameron in the Waikato and distinguished himself at Katikara. He became a major in the New Zealand militia, commanding the Wellington and Wairarapa district, and was commended for his promptness in arming the Wairarapa settlers and preventing the spread of Hauhauism.

Promoted lieutenant-colonel, Gorton was given command of Wanganui (1865-69) and had control also of the colonial commissariat and transport after the withdrawal of the British troops. He took the field in 1869 as quartermaster-general under Whiunore, and provisioned the troops on the march at the back of Egmont. Inspector-general of stores (1869), and of all government stores, civil and military (1871), he resigned in 1878 to enter into business with John Stevens as Stevens and Gorton, land and stock auctioneers, Feilding (later Gorton and Son). He was two years chairman of the Bulls town board and some time on the Rangitikei road board. Gorton married (1863) Nora Mary, daughter of John Stephenson Smith. He pub-

## GOULAND

lished (1901) *Some Home Truths re the Maori War (1863-69)*.

Gorton, *op. cit.*; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*, 1864; Cowan; Whitmore; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Gudgeon (p); *N.Z. Times*, 31 Dec 1909.

GOULAND, HENRY GODFREY (1801-77) was born in London and in 1812 went to Cape of Good Hope with his parents. On the death of his father (1818) he entered the store of John Murray, and was in business in Capetown for a few years. In 1823 he married Mary Ann Mackie (died 1827), and in 1826 he went to India, where he married (1832) Jessie Burn. In 1838 he was head assistant in the chief pay office and in 1840 was appointed assistant-registrar in the judicial department.

In 1841 Gouland bought two allotments in the Nelson colony, and in 1847 he left India and arrived in Wellington by the *London*. Crossing to Nelson in the ketch *Supply*, he met Fox, Wakefield and Domett and arranged about his land orders, withdrawing his money from the Nelson Bank on the day it closed (25 Oct 1847). Gouland selected at the Wairau, and in Apr 1848 got his stock from Sydney. He was gazetted a justice of the peace. On 25 Nov the *Triumph* passed up the Opawa river, the first vessel to cross the bar. Being unfortunate in his first season, and losing money in a London bank failure, Gouland gave up the run and accepted the post of sub-collector of customs at Port Victoria (Aug 1849). There he received the Godleys, Sir George and Lady Grey and the first settlers (Dec 1850). In 1851 he was transferred to Akaroa. In 1854 he was appointed provincial secretary and auditor, member of the executive and for a short time inspector of schools. As provincial secretary Gouland advocated the establishment of a windlass worked by bullocks at the top of the Bridle Track to assist traffic until such time as the province could afford to construct the tunnel.

Early in 1855 Gouland resigned and returned to Wairau where he was appointed magistrate. In 1857 he became magistrate at Collingwood for the new goldfields. In 1860 he was transferred to Lyttelton where in 1861 he was appointed immigration officer. In 1862 he married Caroline, daughter of David Johnston. In Aug he was elected M.P.C. for Tuamarina, and agreed to accept the speakership and provin-

## GOULD

cial treasurership from Sinclair and Eyes. The constitutional struggle between Eyes and Baillie prevented him from entering upon either office. Meeting with losses from floods and thistles, he sold out in 1863 and bought sections on the Waimea road, Nelson. In 1865 Gouland visited England, returning in 1866. He died on 11 Nov 1877...

*Canterbury Proc. and Gaz.*, *Marlborough Gaz.*, Buick, *Marlborough*; personal information from W. E. Redman and A. D. McIntosh.

GOULD, GEORGE (1823-89) was born at Hambleden, Oxfordshire. His parents gave him a sound education and an apprenticeship in commerce. Early in 1850 he married Hannah Lewis, and on 14 Jul they sailed in the barque *Camilla*, arriving in Wellington on 12 Dec.

Having selected his section at the corner of Armagh and Colombo streets, Gould erected a building as a dwelling and general store. The facilities for transport from the port were primitive, and he often carried merchandise either over the bridge path or from the landing at Ferrymead. In 1855 Gould took Grosvenor Miles into partnership, and the business, under the style of Gould and Miles, was moved to premises in Colombo street. Owing to the insufficiency of silver currency in circulation, cardboard counters were improvised bearing the legend 'I.O.U: Gould and Miles.' Having the agency for Cookham boots, Gould in 1866 opened Cookham House as general outfitters on the opposite side of the street. He was now deeply engaged as a squatters' agent in Canterbury and a large shipper of wool to England. He also established a chemist's business as Gould and Co., which continued for years after he had retired. About 1875 he sold the retail business to his managers (Chisnall and Stewart taking over Cookham House), and devoted himself to the financial and export business. He had started with very little capital, but in less than 20 years he had amassed a considerable fortune. This he invested largely in city, suburban and country lands. During a wool slump several Mackenzie country stations fell into his hands, but he held them only until he could find a sale. In 1869, the Springfield estate, of about 16,000 acres in the Methven district, was offered for sale by Hill and Bray. Gould advertised for a manager, and appointed Duncan

## GOULD

Cameron, thus establishing a long partnership which yielded a large fortune to Cameron, who after Gould's death bought the estate out for [65,000. Gould had a farm of 100 acres at the top of Colombo street, 250 acres on the Lincoln road (the site of Mount Magdala), and 1,000 acres at Springston. He imported shorthorns and Lincoln sheep from England, and in the sixties was a frequent prize-winner at the Canterbury shows.

Though debarred from public life by extreme deafness, Gould associated himself with nearly every movement for the **advancement** of the city. He was the second president of the Agricultural and Pastoral association (1869-74). He was president of the poultry association, the Union Rowing Club, and the horticultural society. He was an original shareholder and a director of the Christchurch Gas Co., the New Zealand Shipping Co., and many others. He was a member of the first Christchurch town board (1862); a commissioner of the domain board and of the board of education, and a governor of Canterbury College. He took a part in promoting building societies and insurance companies, and financially assisted many struggling clubs and societies. He **advanced** [1,000 in furtherance of a **promise** to subsidise pound for pound all public donations made to the funds of the Agricultural and Pastoral association.

Many pieces in the fine collection of statuary and pictures in the museum were presented by Gould, and the Y.M.C.A. and Working Men's Clubs received many gifts of money and books. Gould died on 28 Mar 1889.

*c'el. N.Z.*, iii (p); Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 17 Apr 1889; *The Press*, 29 Mar 1889, 25 Oct 1930 (p).

GOULD, HENRY GEORGE (1851-1914) was born at Wolverhampton, England, and **educated** at the Maidstone Grammar School. Arriving in Lyttelton by the *Cardigan Castle* (1873) he studied theology at Christ's College and was ordained (deacon, 1874; priest, 1877). He married (1878) a daughter of Thomas Cane (Christchurch). Gould was curate of **Malvern** (1874), vicar of Woodend (1878), of Lethfield (1878), Hokitika (1883), Lincoln (1888) and St Luke's, Oamaru (1890). In 1897 he was appointed archdeacon of Oamaru. In 1908 he became vicar of St Paul's Cathedral, Dunedin;

## GOURLEY

in the following year canon, and in 1913 he was collated to the archdeaconry of Dunedin. He died on 27 Sep 1914.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Oct 1914.

GOULTER, CYRUS (1825-91) belonged to Bath, in England, and was a surveyor by profession. He landed in Nelson from the *Fife-shire* (1842), was employed on the survey party for some years, but was temporarily **absent** when the **affray** occurred at Wairau. While on this duty he was impressed by the quality of the land and he soon acquired the **Hawkesbury** estate of 9,000 acres. Goulter took a prominent part in public life, being a member of the Marlborough Provincial Council throughout. He represented Upper Wairau (1860-62 and 1863-73) and was speaker of the council (1860-63 and 1865-75). He was provincial treasurer **during** a great part of the **time** and held office in the executive almost continuously, being provincial secretary at the end of the period (1876). Thereafter he was commissioner of crown lands until 1879, and was a member of the Wairau road **board** and other local bodies. Goulter married Anne, daughter of Henry Redwood, and died on 17 Feb 1891.

His eldest son, CHARLES FRANCIS JOSEPH-GOULTER (1854-1935) was concerned in the foundation of the famous merino studs on the Hawkesbury and Blairich estates. **After** perfecting merinos to suit New Zealand conditions, he turned his attention to Jersey cattle, purchasing his first pedigree stock in 1870. He afterwards devoted his attention to Clydesdale, thoroughbred and Shetland horses, English setter dogs and game fowls.

*Marlborough P.C. minutes*; Buick, *Marlborough*; *C'el. N.Z.*, v; *The Dominion*, 18 Feb 1935.

GOURLEY, HUGH (1825-1906) was born at Ballynahinch, county Down, Ireland, where he was educated. As a young man he moved to Newtownards, and in 1852 he sailed for Australia in the *Emigrant*. He was a year in Melbourne and some time in Geelong and on the Ballarat diggings. Returning to Geelong, later, he became a member of the town council.

In 1861 he crossed to New Zealand in the *Spray* and started with a party for the Otago goldfields. After working claims at **Waitahuna**, Wetherstones, Gabriel's Gully and **Waipori**, he

## GOVETT

returned to Dunedin, worked at his trade as a saddler and, having brought his family over, started in business. He ran a coach senice between Dunedin and Port Chalmers and cabs in Dunedin, and in 1874 added funeral undertaking to his business.

Gourley was a borough councillor of St Kilda from 1881 and mayor for 13 years; chairman of the Otago harbour board (for 16 years), a city councillor (1885-95), mayor of Dunedin twice (1888-89, 1896-97), a member of the Otago dock trust (for 17 years), of the benevolent trustees (22 years); of the licensing committee and other bodies. He contested parliamentary seats in 1893 and 1897, and in 1899 was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till 1906. Gourley married a daughter of John Johnston, of county Down. He died on 16 Dec 1906.

*eyel. N.z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Jul 1899, 17 Dec 1906.

GOVETT, HENRY (1819-1903) was the son of the vicar of Staines, Middlesex, and was educated at Sherborne school and Worcester College, Oxford, graduating B.A. (1841). He sailed for New Zealand in the *Union*, arriving at Auckland in Mar 1843 and engaged in fanning at Tamaki.

In Mar 1845 he accompanied Bishop Selwyn to Waikanae in the Government brig. Hadfield being seriously ill, Selwyn ordained Govett deacon to enable him to take Hadfield's place as resident deacon. He rapidly acquired the Maori language and remained at Waikanae till Dec 1846 when, Hadfield having recovered, he proceeded in *H.M.S. Drivel* to Auckland. There he was ordained priest (Feb 1847) and a week or two later he started to walk to New Plymouth and Otaki. In Apr, while in temporary charge at **Wanganui**, he intervened to prevent a war party from attacking the town. After a few weeks at New Plymouth after Bolland's death, he was married and settled down at Nelson as schoolmaster and clergyman. In Feb 1848 he was appointed to St Mary's, New Plymouth, of which he was incumbent for 50 years. In the Maori war he saw much service as chaplain to troops, and the churchyard of St Mary's was turned into a bullock yard for the transport.

In 1858 Govett was made first archdeacon of Taranaki. He resigned the charge of St Mary's

## GRACE

m 1898 and the archdeaconry in 1903. His death occurred on 4 Oct 1903. Govett was a member of the Taranaki education board from 1878.

Selwyn, *Annals*; *Taranaki Herald*, 29 Jan 1884, 5 Oct 1903.

GRACE, LAWRENCE MARSHALL (1854-1934) was born at Auckland, the son of the Rev T. S. Grace (q.v.), and educated at Pukawa and privately in Auckland and at the Church of England Grammar School there. He spent a year on the Thames goldfield and then farmed with a brother on the Waimarino plains. The pumice land proving unsuitable for sheep, he was articled to a solicitor and became an interpreter in the native land court. He married (1885) Kahui (who died 1929), daughter of Te Heuheu Tukino (q.v.), and sister of Te Heuheu Tukino, M.L.C. Grace represented Tauranga in Parliament (1885-87) and then joined the Native department. In 1894 he was appointed interpreter in Maori to the House of Representatives. He died on 10 Jan 1934.

Grace; *The Dominion*, 27 May 1929; *N.Z. Herald*, II Jan 1934. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRACE, MORGAN STANISLAUS (1837-1903) was born at Clonmel, county Tipperary, the son of James Grace, of Sheffield, Queen's county. Educated at Stonyhurst College, he studied medicine at Dublin, Paris and Edinburgh, and qualified as M.D. in 1858 and L.R.C.S. in 1859. He then entered the army as an assistant staff-surgeon and, coming to New Zealand at the outbreak of the Taranaki war, served throughout that and the Waikato campaign under Generals Pratt, Cameron and Whitmore. He had charge of a field hospital at Waitara and in 1865 he was appointed principal medical officer to the New Zealand forces. In the following year he withdrew from the army to engage in private practice in Wellington, but sometime later he volunteered to assist Whitmore with his advice when engaged in the strenuous campaign on the West Coast. (C.M.G.) His account of the Maori war, published in 1899, is one of the most interesting and dispassionate contributions to the history of the period.

Grace practised for 30 years in Wellington, and during that time associated himself with many philanthropic movements and with the public life of the community. He was the first

surgeon-general of the New Zealand volunteer forces (1887). In 1870 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death. He moved the address-in-reply in his first session and again in 1890. In the latter year he was created a Count of the Holy Roman Empire. He was for some years lessee of the \Wellington tramways and for 30 years a member of the local board of the Australian Mutual Provident Society (being chairman for 10 years); and was a member of the senate of the University of New Zealand, 1871-1903.

Grace married in 1866 a daughter of the Hon John Johnston (q.v.). His death occurred on 19 Apr 1903. (See F. G. DALZIELL.)

*N.Z.P.D.*, 30 Jun 1903; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Whitmore; Beaglehole; Cowan; Grace, *op. cit.*; Gudgeon; *Lyttelton Times*, Jun 1879; *N.Z. Times*, 20 Apr 1903. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRACE, THOMAS SAMUEL (1815-1879) was born at Liverpool, of a Huguenot family which was driven from France and settled in Cheshire. Educated at a grammar school, he went into business early, and at the age of 20 had to accept part of the responsibility of maintaining his family. At 24, when he was principal in the business, he offered his services to the Church Missionary Society, and in 1842 he approached the Rev Mr Barker (afterwards Bishop of Sydney), at whose suggestion he went to Cromer. Being married in 1845 to Agnes Fearon, he volunteered to go to New Zealand, but owing to the war then prevailing was advised to study at St Bees. He was ordained in 1848 and sailed for New Zealand in 1850 with his wife and two children.

Bishop Selwyn decided that Grace should be stationed at Taupo, and he proceeded thither, reconciled Te Heuheu and Te Herekikie, and obtained from the former land for the mission station. Other duties taking him elsewhere, it was not until Apr 1855 that he took up his residence at Taupo. His influence was so successful that the next year Te Heuheu forbore to carry on a war against his enemies; instead he went down the Wanganui river with Grace to conclude a peace. Grace was convinced that the constant pressure of the pakeha on the Maori to sell their land was the cause of uneasiness and of the King movement; and that the natives in the Taupo country were in a state of armed neutrality in which peace was

only preserved by the power of the Gospel. He was accused of having convened the King meeting at Pukawa in 1856. In fact, he refused to be present when he heard that the King was to be discussed. His teaching resulted in the Taupo people raising £500 during 1858-60 to buy sheep, yet at a meeting at Taupo in Apr 1861 it was decided to enter the war on the side of the King. Te Heuheu (Iwikau) alone restrained them. His death in Oct 1862 removed this restraint, and shortly afterwards Ngati-Tuwharetoa warriors joined in the fighting in \Waikato. Before 1863 was out the Graces abandoned their home and left Taupo. In Mar 1865 Grace was at Tauranga when Volkner was murdered by the Hauhau. Grace was held prisoner for a short time, but eventually escaped to the warship *Eclipse*. He showed great courage in reopening work in the disaffected country. In later years he visited Taupo on several occasions and spent some time at Matata. He once narrowly escaped capture by Te Kooti, and his house at Taupo was plundered by Hauhau.

In 1868 Grace proposed that native chiefs and clergy should be consulted in the management of mission lands. Appreciating the underlying motives of the King movement, though he had no part in it, Grace realised that the proposal for the appointment of a Maori bishop of the Church of England was likely to be acceptable to them. He discussed it favourably with the Hawkes Bay chief Karaitiana, but it seemed then that no suitable native was available. Grace's ministry amongst the Maori was eminently successful in face of many obstacles, and was marked by a sympathy with Maori aspirations which was not always found in missionaries. He died on 30 Apr 1879.

A son was LAWRENCE MARSHALL GRACE (1854-1934, q.v.). Another, THOMAS SAMUEL GRACE (1850-1918), was educated at the Grammar School in Auckland and the Theological College in Nelson, ordained in 1876 and became Archdeacon of Marlborough. A third, ALFRED AUGUSTUS GRACE (1867-), who was educated at St John's College, Hurstpierpoint, Sussex, has written a number of books of Maori life, including *Tales of a Dying Race* (1901) and *Folk Tales of the Maori* (1907).

*App. H.R.*, 1865-66; Cowan; T. S. Grace; *Annals N.Z. Lit.*

GRAHAM, ANDREW (1843-1926) was born at East Kilbride, near Glasgow, and educated at the Glasgow High School and University. In 1864 he came to New Zealand as one of the representatives of the Glasgow Bank. He first visited Poverty Bay during the Hauhau rising, arriving at Gisborne on a business trip on the day after the massacre. He joined the cavalry corps in Napier and served throughout the campaign, being present at the fall of Ngatapa, in the Urewera and at the relief of Mohaka. In 1872 he established himself in business in Gisborne and became a leader of public affairs. He was a member of the borough council, chairman of the Cook county council (1879-80) and the first chairman of the harbour board. In 1887 he was elected M.H.R. for East Coast, which at that time extended as far as Tauranga, but resigned his seat in 1889. He was a director of the *Poverty Bay Herald*. Graham died on 17 Apr 1926.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Jun 1926; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRAHAM, CHARLES CHRISTIE (1835-1915) was born at Cupar, Fifeshire, and educated at the Universities of St Andrews and Edinburgh. In 1855 he emigrated to Australia and with his brothers carried on a merchant's business in Melbourne. He then took up a sheep run on the Waitaki river and was elected in 1869 to represent Oamaru in Parliament. Moving to the North Island, he took up land in Rangitikei. He was elected to the Wellington Provincial Council as the representative of Rangitikei, and sat till the abolition, being part of the time chairman of committees.

Graham was a member of the Wellington education board, and secretary of this and the Wellington College board of governors. In 1878 he was appointed town clerk of Wellington, and five years later official assignee there. He was transferred to Dunedin in 1893 and died on 27 Dec 1915. He married Jemima Frances, daughter of Major-general T. Webster, governor of Mauritius. While town clerk of Wellington, Graham designed the City's coat of arms.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Dec 1915.

GRAHAM, GEORGE (1812-1901) was born at Hove, Brighton, England. He belonged to the Grahams of the Border, his grandfather having

been an interpreter between the Scots and the English. At the age of 19 he was appointed clerk of works in the board of ordnance (now the Royal Engineers). In 1835 he saw disturbed conditions in Ireland and in 1836 came to New South Wales. In 1840 he came to New Zealand, where he was engaged for some years on public works, roads and fortifications. In the Maori war he laid out the defensive works of Auckland and was instrumental in having the reserve of the Albert barracks enlarged. He advocated employing natives on public works and canals to connect the Waikato and Kaipara with Auckland.

Ordered on service to China, Graham suffered a nervous breakdown there and retired to settle at Mangere, where he farmed successfully. Elected soon after as M.H.R. for Newton, he represented it 1861-69. He was a consistent advocate for Maori rights, and during the Waikato war conferred \Titl Wiremu Tamihana and succeeded in inducing him to make his submission to General Carey. Graham made a considerable fortune, and lived during his later years in England, where he died on 14 Feb 1901. (See W. A. GRAHAM.)

Cowan; *App. H.R.*, 1864; Gudgeon; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Mar 1901. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRAHAM, GEORGE SAMUEL, was a son of Robert Graham (q.v.). He was in the Auckland Provincial Council as member for Northern Division (1861-63). Later he had landed interests in Piako, Upper Thames and Waikato and eventually became identified with the goldfields. He contested the Te Aroha seat in Parliament (1891).

GRAHAM, JOHN (1819-89), a native of Westmoreland, arrived in Wellington in 1853, worked at his trade (house painting) for a few weeks and moved to Auckland, where he engaged in storekeeping and other occupations. He was M.P.C. for Newton (1868-69), and later relieving officer, with responsibility for the expenditure of provincial funds on charitable aid. He was a strong temperance advocate. Graham died on 6 Sep 1889.

*N.Z. Herald*, 9 Sep 1889.

GRAHAM, JOHN (1843-1926) was born in Nelson and educated there. He was a member

## GRAHAM

(1877-94) and chairman of the Nelson school committee, a member of the Nelson education board, a governor of Nelson College (1894) and a member of the council of Victoria College (1898-1912). For some years he was on the harbour board and the land board.

Graham was elected in 1893 to represent Nelson in the House of Representatives. He was a supporter of the Seddon government and retained his seat till 1911, when he retired voluntarily from politics. He was chairman of the banking inquiry committee in 1896 and in 1894 successfully opposed the Midland railway bill in so far as it proposed to abandon the obligations of the company to provide a railway to Nelson. Graham died on 7 Feb 1926.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Jun 1926; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Cololist*, 8 Feb 1926. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRAHAM, ROBERT (1820-85) was born near Glasgow, the son of a Lanark farmer who also owned coalmines. Educated in the parish school, he showed great mental ability, courage and determination. While acting as superintendent of a mine he had an accident in which he suffered severe injuries, as a result of which he changed his occupation and entered a warehouse.

Attracted to the colonies, Graham sailed in Jan 1842 in the *Jane Gifford* for New Zealand, arriving at Auckland on 9 Oct. He at once chartered the cutter *Black Hawk* and loaded her for Bay of Islands. At Kororareka he met his brother David with whom he started the business of R. and D. Graham. He soon afterwards purchased merchandise in Sydney and opened a store in Auckland. Owing to a threat of war at Bay of Islands, he chartered a schooner and removed the stock from there to Auckland, thus escaping the burning of the settlement.

In 1850 the brothers dissolved the partnership and Robert speculated in cargoes of potatoes for California, where he spent the next three years. On his return, he devoted his attention to improving his property at Ellerslie, importing cattle, sheep, deer, quail, etc., and breeding pedigree stock which won many prizes. He purchased, grassed and stocked Motutapu island; and brought into cultivation and stocked the Lamb Hill estate at Waiuku. Con-

## GRAHAM

vinced of the healing qualities of its waters, he purchased the Waiwera block (1845), spent a large sum in developing it and eventually acquired his title from the Government. When the northern tribes threatened Auckland, his manager buried the furniture and left the estate. The place was leased for a term and afterwards Graham erected suitable accommodation for developing it as a health resort.

Graham was in Parliament for the Southern Division (1855-60); and for Franklin (1861-68) During the same period he was also in the Provincial Council (Southern Division' 1855-57, Franklin 1865-69). Always interested in the Maori race, he moved in Parliament for the appointment of a native council of Europeans who should not be removable on a change of government. The plan was rejected. Favouring a strong native policy, Graham urged Gore-Browne to act when a quantity of gunpowder was stolen from Great Barrier and taken to Coromandel. He was one of the four Auckland members who unsuccessfully resisted the land compact of 1856; and he opposed strenuously the removal of the government to Wellington.

Graham showed distinguished courage and leadership at the wreck of the *White Swan* (29 Jun 1862), and personally found a suitable landing place and travelled overland to Wellington to get relief. Returning to Auckland in the *Lord Worsley*, he was again wrecked (on 1 Sep, at Te Namu, Taranaki), and his intervention with the hostile natives averted loss of property and probably of life. He saved £6,000 worth of gold dust which he carried until meeting the Superintendent and the officer commanding the forces.

In Dec 1862 Graham was elected Superintendent of Auckland (defeating Williamson). His term of office, which lasted to Sep 1865, was marked by the raising of a loan of half a million pounds and a vigorous programme of public works and buildings; the inauguration of a water supply to Auckland; the commencement of the railway to Drury, and the prospecting and purchase for the Government of the coal mines at Kawakawa. On the opening of the Thames goldfield, he acquired a large area of land by lease from the natives, laid out Grahams-town and constructed a steam tramline from Grahamstown to Tararu. In 1872 he revisited Scotland. He laid out and planted his estate

## GRAHAM

at Ellerslie (which afterwards became the property of the Auckland Jockey Club), and acquired land at Ohinemutu on which he erected Lake House. In 1878 Graham settled a native feud at Maketu and received as a token of gratitude from the Arawa a large block of land at Taupo containing hot springs. This property (Wairakei) he was developing at the time of his death, which occurred on 26 May 1885.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z.P.D.*; *Auckla7ld P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 May 1885. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRAHAM, WILLIAM AUSTRALIA (1841-1916) was born in Auckland, a son of George Graham (q.v.). He was educated in Auckland and at Clewer House school, Windsor, and Hele's grammar school, Exeter, and returned to New Zealand in 1854. A surveyor by profession, he became closely acquainted with the Maori and acted as interpreter for General Carey in his negotiations with the King tribe. He represented Waikato in the Auckland Provincial Council (1873-75). In 1882 he settled at Hamilton, of which town he was mayor (1884-87): He obtained for the town an endowment of 120 unallotted acres, and was mainly responsible for the establishment of the Waikato hospital board. Graham married in 1872 a daughter of Walter Coombes. He died on 9 May 1916.

*Auckla7ld P.C. Proc.*; Featon, p 140; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Waikato Times*, 10 May 1916.

GRANT, JAMES GORDON STUART (1838-1902) was born at Granton, Elginshire, and educated at the parish school and later at Aberdeen Grammar School and at Kings College and Marischal College in Aberdeen. He took the arts course of Edinburgh University at New College, and finished his education at St Andrew's University, where he studied the first principles of moral philosophy and political economy.

In 1855 Grant went to Melbourne and from there, at the invitation of W. H. Reynolds, he came to Otago (1855), believing that he would receive a post in the Otago High School. Instead he opened the Dunedin academy, had a school in Wellington for a short time and then engaged in lecturing and preaching. He established the *Saturday Review* (which ran 1864-68), and later the *Delphic Oracle*. In both

## GRAY

journals he showed marked literary ability, but he was repeatedly at loggerheads with public men in the province. In 1864 he led a deputation of working men to the Provincial Council, and was arrested by order of the speaker and had to apologise; but a few months later, supported by the Foresters, he was elected to the Provincial Council for City of Dunedin at the top of the poll. In the Council (1865-67) Grant tried to have the Scottish thistle, as the national emblem, deleted from the thistle ordinance of the council. In 1867 he contested the superintendency against Macandrew, and in 1868 stood for the mayoralty of Dunedin against Birch. He contested the parliamentary seat in 1874, 1875, 1879 and 1884 and then retired. He died on 27 Feb 1902.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; MacMorran; Hocken, *Otago*; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; McIndoe; *Saturday Advertiser*, Mar 1881 *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Feb 1902; *Evening Star*, 27 Feb 1902.

GRAY, SIR ALEXANDER (1860-1933) came of Scots pioneer stock, being the son of William Gray (q.v.), formerly of Aberdeen, and Mrs Catherine Geddes (Sutherland) Gray, who was born in Wick. Born in New Plymouth, he was educated at Wellington College and Grammar School (now Wellington College), being enrolled on the day it opened. At the age of 14 he entered the attorney-general's office as a cadet and two years later was articled to F. H. D. Bell, with whom he remained for five years. In 1881 he was admitted a barrister and solicitor, and moved to the Wairarapa, where he became junior partner in the firm of Beard and Gray (Greytown).

In 1886 Gray returned to Wellington and eventually founded the firm of which he remained head from 1892 until his death. For six years he was junior partner with Mr Campbell, and then practised in his own name (1892-1903). He was raised to the rank of King's Counsel in 1912. Gray was for many years president of the Wellington district law society and succeeded Sir Charles Skerrett as president of the New Zealand law society (of which he first became a vice-president in 1918). In that office he was prominent in the negotiations which resulted in the establishment of the solicitors' fidelity guarantee fund and was chairman of the committee of management of the fund. He was

## GRAY

a member of the rules committee set up under an act of 1930, and presided at most of the legal conferences from 1928. He was noted for his cool, incisive mind, and his patient and persuasive manner. He was an ideal arbitrator and had particular success in this field.

Gray was knighted in Jan 1933. He married (1904) Mary, daughter of John Nelson, of Milton, Otago. J.H.B.S.

*Evening Post*, 28, and *Dominion*, 29 Apr 1933.

GRAY, CHARLES MATTHEW (1853-1918) was born in Geelong, Victoria, and came to New Zealand in 1862, settling first in Dunedin. He was engaged in the soft goods business in Wanganui (1865-74) and saw active service in the later years of the Maori war (1868). In 1874 he moved to Christchurch, where 10 years later he established himself in a drapery business. In 1885 he was elected to the City Council, of which he was a member intermittently till 1912. In 1891 he was mayor of Christchurch and in 1904-05 of greater Christchurch. He was chairman of the fire brigade, of the hospital board (1898); of the tramways board (from 1916); and of the executive of the New Zealand International Exhibition (1904-05).

Gray defeated T. E. Taylor in 1905 and represented Christchurch North in the House of Representatives till 1908, when Taylor defeated him. A lifelong advocate of temperance, he regularly compiled statistics of the cost of the liquor traffic to New Zealand. He died on 11 Jun 1918.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 25 Oct 1918; *The Press*, 12 Jun 1918; *Lyttelton Times*, 30 Apr 1883. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRAY, ERNEST (1833-95) arrived in New Zealand in 1853 and, with his brother Henry, took up the Coldstream run on the Rangitata river. He married a daughter of Colonel Macpherson, of New South Wales. He represented Waitangi in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1866-70) and was a member of the Legislative Council from 1867 until he retired from politics (1883). He then sold his run and purchased Hoon Hay, where he lived until his death.

Gray was much interested in agricultural matters, and was a successful breeder of long-woolled sheep. He was an active member of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral asso-

## GRAY

ciation and often acted as judge in the sheep classes. He died on 14 Jul 1895.

His brother, HENRY FRANCIS GRAY, who came to New Zealand with him and was a partner throughout, represented Riccarton in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1874-75).

*Partly* *ReCOI*"d. *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*, Acland: *Lyttelton Times*, 17 Jul 1895. Portrait: Parliament House.

GRAY, JOHN, who held a commission in the 40th Regiment, came to New Zealand in the *Sir George Seymour* (1847) in command of a section of the Royal New Zealand fencibles, to settle in the vicinity of Auckland. Gray was M.H.R. for the Southern Division (1853-55) and represented Newton in the Auckland Provincial Council (1868-69).

GRAY, MOSES WILSON (1813-75) was born at Claremorris, county Mayo, Ireland, the son of John Gray and younger brother of Sir John Gray, sometime M.P. for Kilkenny and founder of the *Freeman's Journal*. His ancestors were Ulster Orangemen who moved to Connaught in the interests of Protestant ascendancy. He was educated at Cork and afterwards at Hazelwood, near Birmingham, under the father of Sir Rowland Hill. He then proceeded to Trinity College, Dublin (1829) where amongst distinguished contemporaries such as Mr Justice Willes, Dillon, Davis, Sir Edmund Barry, Isaac Butt and Dr Kenealy, he graduated B.A. (1835) and took honours and a scholarship. He entered at King's Inns 1834, and was called in 1845.

In 1835 Gray was appointed an assistant commissioner in the Poor Law Inquiry in Ireland, and in that duty he gained much experience in emigration. When the post terminated he went to the United States and was called to the bar. He was greatly interested in the settlement of the new frontier states, and after his return to Ireland he wrote a valuable pamphlet (1848) propounding a scheme for the relief of poverty in Ireland through the establishment of colonies in America by Irish landed proprietors. Gray came back from America in the middle of 1843 with promises of money and political support for Ireland. He took part in the management of the *Freeman's Journal*, of which he was for some time editor. In 1844 his brother James was convicted of treason (with the O'Connells),

## GRAY

but the conviction was afterwards quashed.

Wilson Gray continued to read for the bar and was called as stated, but was temperamentally too timid for successful pleading. The brothers were leading figures at the conference of tenants in Dublin in 1850 to frame better land legislation, and the League of the North and South suffered a severe blow when, fearing excesses by the peasantry in the parishes, they withdrew their fund of political sagacity from the council. In 1856 Gray sold his interest in the *Freeman* and, with Charles Gavan Duffy, he went to Victoria. (According to the Victorian Law list, Gray was admitted there on 24 Dec 1851, being the third barrister on the roll.) Duffy was lionised, while Gray quietly haunted the courts, too diffident to make his way to a lucrative practice. For two years he reported the law courts for the *Argus*. He became interested in the eight-hour movement and the land question, and in 1858 was a prime mover in, and president of, the Victorian convention, which sat for some years at Melbourne, in a hotel opposite the House of Parliament. A demonstration organised by Gray led to the passing of a bill making it illegal to hold assemblies within 200 yards of the house of Parliament. The opposition organised against the land bill was successful.

Gray was defeated for the East Melbourne seat in Parliament in 1859, but in 1860 became member of the House of Assembly for Rodney. He was the forerunner of radical thought in Victoria and a notable opponent of the squatter interest. He declined Duffy's offer of the solicitor-generalship in 1857, and often voted against his colleagues. Though re-elected in 1862, he resigned his seat in the following year and moved to Dunedin, where he was admitted as a barrister of the Supreme Court. Gray never shone at the bar. He had a profound knowledge of legal principles and afterwards became an authority on the mining law of New Zealand, but he shunned the hurly-burly of the courts and modestly devilled for his friend G. E. Barton. He is said to have declined the dual office of provincial solicitor and crown prosecutor, but in Jun 1864 was appointed judge of the district court and resident magistrate on the goldfields. His decisions were consistently sound and were reprinted in the New Zealand Jurist as *Gray's District Court Mining*

## GRAY

*Decisions*. Painstaking and conscientious to a degree, spartan in dress, he endured much hardship in arduous travelling. Nevertheless he declined a county court judgeship in Victoria and a puisne judgeship in New Zealand (1868) and wore out his frail health in the conscientious discharge of his role on the goldfields. Provision was made for a pension in 1875, but he did not live to enjoy the retirement. His death (at Lawrence on 4 Apr 1875) terminated what the *Otago Daily Times* described as 'a blameless life [which was] one religious act of noble generosity.'

Gray was survived by his wife and a son, Wilson H. Gray, who had distinguished himself in the Federal army during the civil war in the United States.

Ross: Mennell: King's Inns Library, Dublin; Burtchaell and Sadleir, *Alumni Dublinenses*, *Otago Daily Times*, 5, 12 Apr 1875; *N.Z. Colonial Law Journ.*, pt 1; R. Stout, in *Melbourne Review*, vol vii, 1882, P 27-40. Portrait, by John Irvine, A.R.S.A., in Otago University.

GRAY, WILLIAM (1817-73) was born in Scotland, educated there and spent 10 years in the post office at Aberdeen, rising from the position of stamper to that of chief clerk. In 1852 he emigrated with his family by the *Simlah* to New Zealand and entered into business in New Plymouth. For some years he conducted a school in Market Place and performed the duties of librarian to the Taranaki Book Club, 'which developed into the Mechanics' Institute. His shop was the rendezvous of politicians, theologians and literati. In 1854 Gray applied for the position of postmaster, and a year later, on the resignation of J. Stephenson Smith, a memorial was sent to the Government which resulted in his being appointed (Aug 1855). Three years later he was promoted to Nelson, where during the war he acted as government almoner towards the Taranaki refugees. He became secretary and inspector of post offices and in that capacity made several visits to San Francisco. He died there in Jun 1873.

*Taranaki News*, 28 Jun 1873; D. Robertson, *Early History of the N.Z. Post Office* (1905); Wells.

GRAY, WILLIAM (1844-1907) was born in Aberdeen, a son of William Gray (1817-73) and arrived in New Plymouth with his parents in 1852. He received his education at private

## GREEN

schools there and entered the office of the *Taranaki News* in 1858. Later he went to the *Nelson Examiner* office, where he served until 1864. He then entered the chief post office at Dunedin as a junior clerk. In 1865 he became clerk in the deadletter office of the General Post Office and from 1866-68 was mail agent on the Panama steamers. Until 1870 he was mail agent on the Ivlelbourne steamers, and then was appointed clerk in the secretary's branch of the General Post Office. He was promoted chief clerk in 1872; Secretary two years later and Secretary of the Post and Telegraph department on the amalgamation of the two branches in 1881. Gray held that position until his death on 22 Mar 1907. In his youth he was a prominent cricketer.

*Evening Post* and *N.Z. Times*, 23 Mar 1907.

GREEN, GEORGE (1810-72) arrived in New Zealand from Sydney in 1838 and spent some months in the south, making purchases from Maori chiefs which included Centre island, Stewart island and bays on the mainland, an area at Catlins, and Quarantine island in Otago harbour. Returning to Sydney, he prosecuted his claims with the Government of New South Wales without success and in 1858-59 visited New Zealand for the same purpose. From 1860 till his death (on 30 Aug 1872) he lived in Sydney. In 1870 a small grant of 5,000 acres was made to him.

*App. L.C.*, 1868, P 31; Hocken, *Otago; Otago Daily Times*, 3 Sep 1872.

GREEN, JAMES (1836-1905) was born in Middlesex, the son of a mechanic and would have followed the same trade as his father had he not decided to come to New Zealand. Arriving at Port Chalmers (1856) he went to Tokomairiro as an agricultural labourer and later took government contracts and worked on the diggings and as a carrier. In 1861 he settled at Blueskin and became a member of the general road board. In 1867 he was elected to the Provincial Council for North Harbour and he continued a member until the abolition (North Harbour 1867-70; Blueskin 1871-75). He was in the executive most of the year 1875. In 1876 he was elected to the Waikouaiti county council (of which he was chairman 1877-93). In 1878 he was elected to Parliament, in which

## GREENFIELD

he represented Port Chalmers (1878-79) and Waikouaiti (1882-84 and 1893-96). Commencing in 1868 he had a long experience of local body service, including the Otago education board (1878-96; three times chairman); school commissioners, waste lands board, hospital board, charitable aid board, benevolent trustees, hospital trustees and land board.

*Otago Daily Times*, 21 Aug 1905.

GREEN, MATTHEW WOOD (1840-1914) was Manchester in 1840. Brought up in the doctrines of the Church of England to the age of 14, he associated much with the Wesleyans, and finally joined the Church of Christ. At the age of 18 he was preaching, and in 1862 he came to New Zealand with his family and spent five years preaching for the Church of Christ in Auckland. He was then for three years in Sydney and in 1869 accepted an invitation to the Swanston street church, Melbourne, and founded a new church in North Melbourne. After a visit to England for his health Green worked in Dunedin (1878) for five years, erecting the fine tabernacle in Great King street. He represented Dunedin East in Parliament (1881-84). He then spent 12 years in Adelaide, where he was secretary of the South Australian Alliance (1889), returned on a visit to Dunedin (1902) and had charge of the tabernacle for a year, and then resumed his post in Melbourne where he died on 29 Sep 1914. In later life he was an Anglo-Israelite.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv.; Melbourne *Argus*, 30 Sep 1914. Portrait: Parliament House.

GREENFIELD, ALFRED (1829-1920) was born in Islington, London, the son of a solicitor, in whose office he was employed after completing his education at the Mordon Hill Academy. In 1851 he came to Nelson in the *Clara* and shortly afterwards, with Walter Long Wrey, drove a mob of horses from Nelson to Amuri for John Tinline. He was a cadet on a Stoke property and then became clerk in the Superintendent's office (1854). There he was employed throughout the provincial period, as clerk, provincial secretary and treasurer; M.P.C. for Nelson (1865-67), and a member of the executive in 1857, 1865 and 1865-75. He was also provincial auditor, commissioner of crown lands, agent for the south-western goldfields, judge of the assess-

## GREENSILL

ment court, warden at Westport and Palmerston North and chairman of the wardens' conference, and a member of the education board and the hospital board. As chairman of the Nelson school commissioners he did much towards the foundation of the Nelson Girls' College. Greenfield was resident' magistrate at Clyde and Thames, and acted on six royal commissions. He died on 31 May 1920.

*Nelson P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 1 Jun 1920.

GREENSILL, JOHN ABRAHAM ROBERTS (1840-1923) was born at Haulbowline island, Cork, the son of Major Greensill, commissary of ordnance, and first cousin to Lord Roberts of Kandahar. Being intended for the army, he was educated at Carshalton military school preparatory to Woolwich. Owing to ill-health he came to Nelson in the *O'iental* (1856), but moved shortly afterwards to Marlborough and for some years worked at Erina and Marshlands, farmed at Arapawa and ran a successful merchant's business in Picton. In 1866 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Queen Charlotte sound. He was a member of the Picton borough council and several times mayor of the borough. He was a director of the Marlborough Building society and of the King Solomon Gold Mining Co. He married first (1866) Selina Rebecca, daughter of T. W. Downes; and second (1888) Rose (who died 24 Oct 1893), daughter of Mr Justice Conolly (q.v.). He was long associated with the Church of England as a lay reader. Greensill died on 6 Dec 1923.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Marlborough Express*, 7 Dec 1923.

GREENSTREET, HERBERT EDWARD (1851-1936) joined the *Worcester* as a cadet in 1866, and two years later went to sea as a midshipman, serving through all ranks from able-bodied seamen to first mate in ships trading to the Far East and the Pacific. His first command was the ship *Mataura*, one of the first to be fitted with refrigerating machinery. In 1882 he collected 3,844 carcasses of mutton at the ports of New Zealand and delivered it successfully in London. The second voyage was less fortunate owing to a neighbouring vessel unloading bone dust while the holds were open. Greenstreet was soon afterwards appointed second

## GREENWOOD

mate in the steamer *Aorangi*, and in 1885 master of the *Ruapehu*. He became commodore of the New Zealand Shipping Co.'s Heet, and travelled about 2,500,000 miles at sea without mishap. In 1917 he retired from the service and his death occurred on 22 Mar 1936.

Critchell and Raymond (p); *The Dominion*, 23 Mar 1936.

GREENWOOD, GEORGE DEAN (1851-1932) was born at Howarth, Yorkshire, England, the son of George Oates Greenwood, and brother of Dr Harry Greenwood. Educated privately and at a public school at Reading, he learned farming in Leicestershire, where he hunted with the Quom and Pytchley.

Three of his uncles, James, Joseph and Edward, had arrived in Canterbury from Australia in 1843, and taken up a property at Purau, on Banks Peninsula, in which his father also had an interest. In 1847 they sold it and bought more stock for their run at Motunau.

Greenwood went to California in the hope that he might find it suitable for sheep farming but, being disappointed, he returned to England. His father, being now the sole survivor of the partnership, had bought the Teviotdale estate in north Canterbury (1867), and in 1875 Greenwood paid a visit to New Zealand to inspect the property. He then studied the wool trade in Bradford and in 1878 took charge of Teviotdale. He was one of the first breeders to attempt the evolution of a type of sheep specially suited to New Zealand and by crossing the Leicester with the merino he produced the Corriedale, which gave superior wool and mutton.

Greenwood had a thorough knowledge of station management. He sold off much of Teviotdale, but bought other properties in Queensland and Argentine, with which he had great success. One noteworthy instance of his foresight was his conversion of a cattle property in Australia to sheep. He was one of the founders of the North Canterbury Freezing Co., of which he was for some years chairman.

In 1908 Greenwood took up racing with great success. He engaged R. J. Mason as trainer and bought such horses as Sunglow, Perle d'Or, Acrostic, Lady Wayward, Formden and Armlet. He had an extraordinary series of successes in New Zealand and Australia, in-

## GREENWOOD

cluding the Derby (12 times), the Jackson Plate (10), the C.J.C. Challenge stakes (10) and the Auckland (6), Middle Park Plate (6), the St Leger and the A.J.C. Gimcrack stakes. Greenwood married first a daughter of Robert Chapman (Springbank) and second Mrs Helene Cross. He died on 28 Aug 1932.

HELENE FODOR (1878-1932) was the daughter of William Frederick Fodor, a French diplomat, and spent her early years on the continent. She was educated at the Girls' High School, Dunedin, and later became associated with Miss Freeman in the conduct of Girton College in Dunedin and Christchurch. She married first Mr Cross and then Greenwood. Devoted to animals, she assisted her husband materially in the management of his racing stud. During the war of 1914-18 she compiled a book on *Soldiers' Spoken French*; and she published also *Gloaming, the Wonder Horse*; and a novel, *The Splendid Horizon*. She was much interested in art; was a personal friend of van der Velden and possessed a fine collection of paintings and objets d'art. She died on 1 Dec 1932.

Acland; J. Hay; Jacobson; *NZ. Tu' Register*; *The Press*, 28 Aug (p), 1 Dec 1932; *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Jan 1900.

GREENWOOD, JOHN DANFORTH (1803-90) was born in England, where he was educated and graduated in medicine (M.R.C.S.). He practised at Mitcham, Surrey. In 1843 he came to New Zealand as surgeon of the *Phoebe Dunbar* and settled with his family at Motueka (Nelson), where he practised his profession. In 1849 he was nominated a member of the Legislative Council of New Munster, but resigned in 1850, feeling that his position was not compatible with independence. He was for some time editor of the *Examiner* and was the first inspector of schools in Nelson. Greenwood was an original trustee and governor of Nelson College and filled the position of principal (1863-64). In 1866 he was appointed sergeant-at-arms in the House of Representatives, a position he held for 11 years. He died on 15 Jun 1890.

*Parlry Record*, *N.Z. Chess Book*, 1922; *N.I. Spectator*, 5, 30 Oct 1850; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Oct 1925; *The Colonist*, 17 Jun 1890.

GREENWOOD, JOSEPH, belonged to the 31st regiment and came to New Zealand in 1847 with a detachment of the New Zealand Fen-

## GRESSON

cibles, of which he was brigade-major. In 1850 he published in Auckland, in English and Maori, a narrative of *A Journey to Taupo from Auckland*. Greenwood represented the Pensioner Settlements in Parliament (1853-57) and in the Auckland Provincial Council from 1855-57, when he resigned both seats.

*Auckland P.C. Proc., N.I.P.D.*, 1853-57; Hocken, *Bibliog.*

GREENWOOD, ROBERT (1797-1889) was born in England and educated at Cambridge University, where he graduated. He engaged in mercantile life in London, where his father was connected with banking. In 1850 Greenwood came to New Zealand in the *Poictiers*, and shortly afterwards settled in Taranaki, taking up land at Tataraimaka. He represented Omata in the Provincial Council (1857-61). He had to withdraw to New Plymouth on the outbreak of the Maori war, and afterwards lived for most of his time with Captain Good at Urenui. He died on 14 Sep 1889. Greenwood was a successful athlete in his younger days, and even in advanced age frequently walked long distances.

*Taranaki Herald*, 26 Sep 1889. Portrait: *Taranaki Hist. Call.*

GRESSON, HENRY BARNES (1809-1901) was born in county Meath, Ireland, the son of the Rev George Leslie Gresson, rector of Ardnercher, Westmeath. To the age of 14 he was educated at home, and he then went for three years to a private school in Westmeath, from which he matriculated at Trinity College, Dublin. Having graduated B.A., Gresson entered upon the study of law, and was admitted to the Irish bar in 1833. After gaining experience in London and Dublin, he practised for eight years as an equity barrister at the chancery bar in Dublin. During this time he collaborated with Burroughs in a treatise on equity pleading. In 1845 he married Anne (d. 1889), daughter of Andrew Beatty of Londonderry.

In 1854, having now a growing family, and being a strong churchman, Gresson became interested in the Canterbury colony, for which he sailed with his family in the ship *Egmont*, which carried reinforcements for the 58th and 65th regiments. He landed at Auckland on 24 Jun 1854 and arrived at Lyttelton on 23 Jul.

## GRESSON

At first the family lived at Oxford terrace east, where Gresson commenced to practice. Later he moved to the corner of Worcester and Manchester streets. Three months after arriving in Canterbury he was appointed provincial solicitor and crown prosecutor for the province. As a member of the executive ex officio, Gresson participated in many governments under Fitzgerald and Moorhouse. His leaders were: Hall (1854-55), Brittan (1855), Tancred (1855-57 and 1857-58), Packer, Bowen, and Cass (all in 1867). In 1855 he was appointed a J.P. for Canterbury.

In a rearrangement of judicial districts in 1857 Gresson was appointed a judge and given jurisdiction over the whole of the South Island. Hitherto Stephen had come down occasionally from Wellington to deliver the gaol, and there was very little civil business. The following extract from the dates of Gresson's first circuit gives an idea of the travelling he did, mostly on horseback: Wellington 11 Jan 1858; Nelson 20 Jan; Lyttelton, Feb; Dunedin 8 Mar. The journey from Nelson to Lyttelton, 230 miles, was a lonely one, but he had a good river horse and a competent Maori guide. From Christchurch to Dunedin he rode in company with Charles C. Bowen. Gresson's appointment to the bench entailed his resignation of all provincial offices. In the early sixties the sudden growth of population in Otago, consequent on the discovery of gold, called for the creation of a separate judicial district; and Gresson was relieved of the area south of the Waitaki by the appointment of Richmond as judge for Otago. Shortly afterwards a judicial district was established in Westland, and in Jan 1865, Gresson crossed the Alps to open the first court in Hokitika. Before long his district was restricted to Canterbury.

In 1874 a joint parliamentary committee decided on a rearrangement of the judiciary, under which Gresson would have to go to Nelson. There was a strong feeling amongst the judges that it tended to restrict the independence of the bench if Parliament had the power of moving judges from place to place. Gresson had no wish to leave Christchurch, for he had identified himself with the people and their ideals and about 1864 had purchased a country property near Woodend. He accordingly retired from the bench at the end of 1875, and

## GREY

in the following year paid a visit to England and Ireland. In 1877 he was granted the title of •honourable: On returning to New Zealand, Gresson indulged his taste for farming. He paid much attention to sheep and cattle breeding, importing many new animals (especially Leicester sheep) to improve his stock, and he was a successful competitor at agricultural and pastoral shows. The Canterbury show of 1862 (which resulted in the formation of the Agricultural and Pastoral association) was held in his paddock in Latimer Square. He was passionately fond of flowers also, and had fine gardens both at Woodend and Fendalton. About 1891 he sold his farm to Henry Gray, and two years later went to live in Fendalton, where he died on 31 Jan 1901.

Gresson always took a keen interest in education. Until he was appointed to the bench he was a fellow of Christ's College. He was an original member of the board of governors of Canterbury College (1873-76), and chairman in 1875. He was an early president of the Canterbury Philosophical Institute (1872). As a churchman he was a moving spirit in the erection of Christchurch Cathedral, and was for many years a member of the diocesan synod, and for a while chancellor of the diocese.

*N.I.P.D.*, 13 Aug 1861; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *N.I. Gaz.*, *Cycl. N.I.*, iii (p); Cox; Wigram; *The Press*, 1 Feb 1901, 26 Jul 1930 (p).

GREY, SIR GEORGE EDWARD (1812-98) was born at Lisbon on 14 Apr 1812, a few days after the death of his father, Lieut-colonel Grey, of the 30th Foot, at the battle of Badajoz. The family were a branch of the Greys of Groby, represented in the peerage by the Earl of Stamford. Grey was educated at Guildford, Surrey, and in 1826 entered Sandhurst, from which he gained his ensigncy in the 83rd Foot. (Ensign 1829; lieutenant 1833; captain 1836.) He served with his regiment at Glasgow and then for four years in Ireland. There he was deeply impressed by the condition of the working classes, and became imbued with ideas on land tenure which were expressed in his later political liberalism.

In 1833 Grey entered the senior department of the Royal Military College, from which he passed out in 1836 with a certificate from the governors showing that he had not only acquit-

ted himself with the highest credit in the examinations but had 'extended his acquirements far beyond its limits into the highest branches of mathematical science' and showed 'a superior merit and talents.' This achievement gained him his captaincy. He was already losing interest in the army as a profession and being drawn towards exploring.

In 1836, with Lieut. Lushington, of the 9th Foot, he proposed to the Colonial Office to undertake an exploration in western Australia to ascertain the existence or otherwise of a great river, or ocean inlet, north of the Swan river. The proposal was endorsed by Lord Glenelg and had the approval of the Royal Geographical Society. Accordingly, on 5 Jul 1837 the small expedition, with Grey in command, sailed from Plymouth in H.M.S. *Beagle*. On arrival at Capetown Grey hired the schooner *Lynher*, 150 tons, purchased 31 sheep, 19 goats and 6 dogs, and with a party of 12 men sailed on 29 Nov for Australia. They anchored in St George bay on 2 Dec, and Grey made a short preliminary expedition while the *Lynher* under Lushington went to Timor for ponies. Grey encountered great hardships and difficulties. He lost his dogs owing to the heat and, finding himself cut off from the schooner by a wide arm of the sea, swam to the other side, only to find himself surrounded by hostile natives. Naked and exhausted, he took advantage of the darkness to hide in a cave and was taken off the following morning by the *Lynher*. After recruiting his strength Grey made important journeys into the interior, passing round the end of the Macdonald range, discovering and naming Mount Lyell and the Glenelg river (4 Mar 1838), which he explored for a distance of 70 miles. He found vast tracts of fertile pasture land, upon which he rested and recuperated the strength of his surviving ponies—several had been lost in the rugged ravines of the river bed. Grey was severely wounded in the thigh in an engagement with natives, and on 4 Apr his party turned back. Exhausted by heat, hunger and rough travelling, they were picked up by the *Lynher* and *Beagle* on 15 Apr, and on the 27th they sailed for Mauritius to recover their strength.

While there, Grey reported his explorations to England. On 21 Aug he sailed for the Swan river to consult with Sir James Stirling. While

he was awaiting despatches from the Colonial Office, he made one or two minor expeditions. On 17 Feb 1839, with a party of 11 white men, he sailed for Shark bay, taking three whaleboats in the hope that he would be able to explore the whole length of coast. On 25 Feb they landed on Bernier island, where they lost one of the whaleboats in a gale shortly afterwards. Grey and Dr Walker swam off and baled out the others to save them from swamping. On 5 Mar they discovered the Gascoyne river, and, returning to Bernier island, they found that their depot had been almost destroyed and most of their provisions were gone. It was imperative that they should reach civilisation as soon as possible. They accordingly set sail for the south. On reaching Gantheaume river both boats were upset in the breakers and it was necessary to continue the journey of 300 miles to Perth on foot. In the first week they covered only 70 miles. Provisions running short, Grey decided to divide the party, and he led the advance guard, consisting of himself and four others. On 11 Apr they crossed the Arrowsmith river. They suffered much from heat, hunger and thirst, and Grey was hampered by his wound. Struggling doggedly on, the others fell out and Grey, assisted by friendly blacks, staggered into Perth on 21 Apr. He had travelled the whole distance in three weeks. He lost no time in equipping a relief party by which the survivors were brought in.

While recuperating his strength and awaiting instructions from London, Grey devoted himself to the study of native dialects and customs, and with that object accepted the post of government resident at King George's sound (Aug 1839), where the duties were mainly connected with the natives. While there he married Eliza Lucy, daughter of his predecessor, Captain (afterwards Admiral Sir) R. W. Spencer, R.N. Despatches from the Colonial Office indicated that it did not favour a continuance of the explorations to the north-westward, so Grey concluded his service in western Australia and sailed for England from Adelaide (11 Apr 1840). On the voyage he prepared his memorandum for Lord John Russell on the best means of promoting the civilisation of the natives. Reaching England in Sep, he had not completed his book for publication when he was offered the governorship of South Austra-

lia. He sold his captain's commission and sailed at once, reaching Adelaide on 14 May 1841.

Grey found the colony bankrupt, the town unduly large, and a great number of people receiving relief from public funds. He made drastic cuts in all forms of expenditure, encouraged bona fide squatting, and used the revenues so derived for road-making and surveys. Within three years the area under cultivation increased from 2,500 acres to 28,760 acres and the rural population from 6,121 to 11,259, with a corresponding shrinkage in that of Adelaide. Copper discoveries at Burra Burra helped to overcome the depression. Grey took the opportunity in South Australia of putting into effect some of his proposals for the civilisation of the natives. He extended the Queen's law to all within the colony, encouraged native education and, through the appointment of protectors, controlled the relations of settlers with the natives. In this service he stationed E. J. Eyre (q.v.) at a settlement called Moorundee, specially charged with guarding the welfare of blacks coming into contact with overlanders and squatters. As the result of his policy of firmness and justice, Grey was able to report in 1844 that the tribes on the Murray and Darling were perfectly amicable and well disposed. His methods were fully approved by the Colonial Office.

Intelligence from New Zealand, meanwhile, indicated that FitzRoy's administration was not successful. The Colonial Office, alarmed at the tension between natives and whites turned naturally to Grey as the man most likely, in spite of his youth, to cope with the situation. Meanwhile Grey, hearing of the outbreak of hostilities at Bay of Islands, on his own responsibility loaded into a vessel which had called at Adelaide all the munitions he could spare for the use of the New Zealand Government. A few days later he received a despatch from the Colonial Office appointing him Lieutenant-governor of New Zealand, and instructing him to repair at once to that post. He landed at Auckland on 18 Nov 1845 and proceeded without delay to Bay of Islands. At Kororareka he found the military (consisting of about 670 of all ranks of the 58th and 99th Regiments) strengthening their position on the tip of the peninsula, while hostile natives were moving about freely on the opposite side of the bay.

He at once announced his intention of advancing against the enemy position. On the 28th he met in conference the friendly chiefs (led by Tamati Waka Nene, q.v.) whom he assured of the determination of the British Government to respect the Treaty of Waitangi and to forbid the alienation of native lands without the full consent of all concerned. He invited Heke and Kawiti to accept the terms of peace offered by FitzRoy. Kawiti was inclined to agree, but was overborne by the younger man. Grey accordingly lost no time in moving the troops towards the enemy positions. An ordinance was passed forbidding traffic in arms and ammunition. Friendly natives were enrolled under European officers; and a small force was despatched to hold Heke while Kawiti's stronghold at Ruapekapeka was invested by a force of 1,173 British and 450 native troops. The siege began on 31 Dec 1845, and on 10 Jan, the palisade having been sufficiently breached by the artillery, the pa was stormed and occupied. This broke the resistance of the enemy. Grey had been in the field throughout, he had directed the operations more or less over the heads of the naval and military leaders, and the decisive part he had played raised his prestige with the natives, who were flattered by the manner in which he deferred to the advice of Tamati Waka Nene. A few months later he exhibited the same combination of strategy, firmness and daring in the southern district. In the operations against Rangihaeata, Grey took the precaution of seizing Te Rauparaha and holding him prisoner on suspicion of aiding and abetting the rising. A few months later he was called upon (Apr 1847) to suppress a native outbreak in the Whanganui district, where some whites were murdered. The river was blockaded and the withholding of supplies of food and tobacco materially assisted to bring the hostile natives to terms, for which they sued on 21 Feb 1848.

Grey had rapidly acquired great mana with the Maori. He had now a command of the language, had made many friends amongst the chiefs by rewards for loyalty, and gained their confidence by safeguarding their lands; by employing native labour on roads; by prohibiting the sale of arms and drink to natives; by establishing savings banks, and inaugurating a simpler form of native judicial institutions; by subsidising schools and hospitals and giving as-

sistance in many forms of material improvement. He took a deep interest in Maori philology, literature and traditions, and made a valuable collection (which later he presented to the Auckland Public Library). Taking advantage of his leisure to study the land question, he condemned the alienation of native lands and denounced the land proclamations, which in his opinion favoured the speculator as against the genuine settler.

Throughout most of the latter part of 1846 and the whole of 1847 he devoted much attention to the proposed constitution (his views being set forth in important despatches of 7 Oct 1846 and 3 and 13 May 1847). Before the latter reached England the Colonial Secretary had sent his despatch of 1 Jun enclosing a copy of the proposed bill, and a few weeks later (7 Jul) the royal charter relating thereto. The royal charter Grey felt did not sufficiently safeguard Maori rights over land and, supported by the protest of Bishop Selwyn and the opinions of the Chief Justice (Martin) and the Attorney-general (Swainson), he suspended it indefinitely, stating his reasons to the British Government. On 1 Jan 1848 Grey assumed office as Governor-in-chief of New Zealand, and during that year he was knighted. The investiture took place on 18 Nov, Sir George being supported by two Maori esquires. He also had conferred upon him by Oxford University the honorary degree of D.C.L. The delays entailed in long-distance discussion with the Colonial Office of the proposed new constitution made the settlers impatient. A Constitutional Association was formed to demand representative government, and petitions were widely signed asking for the recall of the Governor. Grey made himself unpopular also with the missionaries, whom he accused of land-grabbing. Meanwhile, on behalf of the government he had bought the native interest in lands in the South Island which were required for the Otago and Canterbury settlements, and the first settlers had arrived and established themselves (1848 and 1850). Grey had a heavy correspondence in connection with these two colonies and the affairs of the New Zealand Company, which had to be provided for in the constitution owing to the surrender of its charters. The Canterbury Association negotiated with the British Government directly, and its supporters accused Grey

of being hostile to it. The Godley letters and Grey's speeches in the Legislative Council bear on this. His treatment of Lieutenant-governor Eyre (q.v.) was used by his critics as an aggravation of his offence in suspending the constitution act, and appointments made by him to the nominated legislative council did nothing to appease their anger.

The Imperial Parliament had already passed the constitution act granting representative institutions to New Zealand when Grey's own Legislative Council enacted a provincial councils ordinance (Jul 1852). On 16 Jul Sir John Pakington wrote his despatch enclosing the new act. On 13 Sep Grey assumed the governorship under this measure. In Jan 1853 he proclaimed the provincial districts, and on 12 Aug he was able to inform the Secretary of State that the Act was in satisfactory operation. Certain delays occurred which served to confirm critics in the belief that Grey was unfavourable to representative government and did not wish to see it inaugurated. The first provincial councils were elected (in Auckland) on 4 Aug 1853, and the first session of a council (in Taranaki) commenced on 16 Sep. Grey left the colony on 31 Dec without seeing the General Assembly convened.

In 1853 Grey, in company with Selwyn, visited many of the Pacific islands in the government brig *Victoria*. Finding the French in possession of New Caledonia, he warned the British Government of the dangers likely to arise in the future, and put forward a proposal for a federation of Pacific races under the aegis of New Zealand. As Premier (1878) he reverted to the dangers of the French occupation of the New Hebrides, and five years later he carried in Parliament a bill to enable New Zealand to establish federal relations with such Pacific peoples as might desire them. In the eighties he was consulted by Samoan chiefs as to their future. He published in 1885 a pamphlet on German colonisation and the Samoan negotiations.

Grey's new post was the governorship of Cape Colony, together with the high commissioner-ship of South Africa. Arriving there early in 1854, he found conditions existing which seemed to resemble closely the state of native affairs in New Zealand, and within three weeks of his arrival he outlined his plan of campaign. His

chief problem throughout was in connection with the eastern frontier, where the Basuto were at variance with their neighbours, the Dutch farmers of the Orange Free State. Grey's reputation as a native administrator had reached South Africa, and he lost no time in applying the same policy of firmness and justice, with a humane regard for the social welfare and education of the native. He established hospitals and schools, attached loyal chiefs to him by tactful consideration and rewards, and arrested troublesome ones. When whole tribes were threatened with extinction by famine, he found employment for 34,000 individuals with white employers throughout the colony. He proposed to protect the border districts by establishing a force of army pensioner settlers, and, this being impracticable, he settled in South Africa many members of the German legion which had been enlisted for the Crimea. Grey's relations with the Boer states were cordial and trustful, the Dutch people in South Africa having a great regard for his courage and resource. He broached at an early stage the desirability of all the European colonies in South Africa entering into a federal union. The troubles of Free State with the Kaffirs promoted this movement. At the desire of the Free State, Grey mediated with the Basuto, and with great pertinacity followed Moshesh to his stronghold at Thaba Bosigo and obtained his signature to a treaty (1855). It was not well observed, and before long war broke out. When the Free State asked for help against the Basuto, Grey declined either to assist or to permit the enlistment of colonists in the forces of the republic, but after the defeat of the Boers he offered his services as a mediator and helped the Boers to conclude a new peace treaty (15 Oct 1858). Meanwhile he was in treaty with them with a view to forming a South African federation. Writing to the Colonial Secretary on 24 Jun, he expressed his firm conviction that 'nothing but a strong federal government, which unites within itself all European races in South Africa, can permanently maintain peace in this country and free Great Britain from constant anxiety for the peace of her possessions here: To this Henry Labouchere explicitly declared that such federation was no part of the policy of the British Government. Grey was fearful of the two Boer Governments coming together

and so forming an obstacle to future federation under the British flag, and he lost no opportunity of promoting his project. On his suggestion the Free State Volksraad passed resolutions favouring federation with the Cape Colony, and Grey submitted these to the Cape Parliament at its meeting in Mar 1859. Before Parliament had time to come to a decision he received a peremptory despatch from the Colonial Secretary ordering him to drop the federal scheme. When Lord Lytton discovered how far he had proceeded in face of the official ban he hastily recalled Grey from his post (4 Jun 1859). In the light of subsequent events Grey's vision would seem to have been sound, but (as Professor E. A. Walker says) he was years ahead of his time. To the regret of both Dutch and British settlers and of the natives whose welfare he had so jealously promoted, Grey left for England. Before he reached Home there was a change of government. The new administration reinstated him in his governorship, and he returned to South Africa, but he had instructions from the Duke of Newcastle not to persevere with his federal scheme. He understood that an appointment in Canada would follow at an early date, but events in New Zealand were again to turn his steps in this direction.

Another incident of Grey's South African administration requires to be noticed. In 1857 he received a despatch from Lord Elphinstone informing him of the outbreak of mutiny amongst native troops in India, and suggesting that he might be able to assist. Grey acted with great promptitude and courage. Within three days he had collected all the available troops in Capetown and arranged for their transportation to India, together with £60,000 worth of specie and every horse that could be spared even from his own stables. The 93rd Regiment arrived from England at that moment en route to join the forces engaged in China. Grey insisted on diverting it to India, and so by a happy accident was able, in the words of Lord Malmesbury, 'probably to save India: While South Africa was denuded of troops he astutely balanced the loyalties of the native peoples and preserved peace. Grey made a deep study of the languages and customs of the native races in South Africa, and here also he collected literature in etymology and philology which at a later date he presented to the Cape Library.

## GREY

In his solicitude for the natives he employed Dr J. P. Fitzgerald (q.v.), who had co-operated with him in the establishment of native hospitals in New Zealand. He enlisted the services also of the French missionaries, and was a close friend of the missionary explorers Robert Moffat and David Livingstone.

When Grey set foot again in New Zealand (Oct 1861) he found a very unhappy conflict between the two races. The Taranaki war had been fought to a truce, but certainly not to a conclusion, and the northern tribes were gravely disaffected. Grey at once examined the evidence in the Waitara purchase and, with the concurrence of the ministry, decided that the transaction was invalid and should be reversed. He was under no misapprehension as to the extent of native disaffection, and adopted his usual energetic methods of coping with the problem. Every opportunity was seized of becoming personally acquainted with the tribes and making friends of the best chiefs; schools and roads were built, and a scheme of administration devised for the benefit of purely native districts. Theoretically the Governor no longer had full control over native administration, and Grey was not always in unison with his ministry, but on the whole they co-operated cordially enough, both desiring peace without more bloodshed. It was partly politics that prevented Fox and Grey from making permanent an understanding they had come to for the management of native affairs, making it appear that the Governor and Premier were at loggerheads. That this was not so is evident from Grey's despatch to the Duke of Newcastle (14 Jul 1862): 'I am anxious to assure you that my responsible advisers have in all cases given me the most liberal and generous support, for which I shall always feel very grateful to them. Undoubtedly differences of opinion have on a few occasions arisen between us, but these have been made the subject of full and fair discussion and no difficulty has ever been found in following some course which I believe was quite satisfactory and conducive to the good of Her Majesty's Government.' Meanwhile Newcastle was penning a despatch expressing his firm resolve that the Colonial Government should assume full responsibility for the conduct of native affairs. While these two despatches were on the water Fox brought on a debate on native policy. The

## GREY

object was merely to affirm the advisability of such an arrangement, but it was debated as a no-confidence resolution. The House was evenly divided; the Speaker gave his vote against the Government, and Fox went out of office. Within a short time Newcastle's despatch arrived, completely perplexing the new Government, which had taken office pledged to maintain Imperial control of native affairs. The agreement under which Fox and Grey had co-operated was then affirmed by the House (on 14 Aug 1862) in the following terms: '1. That ministers should, in conformity with the Royal Instructions, advise the Governor in Native affairs as well as in Colonial affairs whenever his Excellency desires to obtain such advice, and should also tender advice on all occasions of importance when they deem it their duty in the interests of the Colony to do so. 2. That ministers should at his Excellency's request undertake the administration of native affairs, reserving to his Excellency the decision in all matters of native policy. 3. That as the decision in all matters of native policy is with his Excellency, the advice of ministers shall not be held to bind the Colony to any liability, past or future, in connection with native affairs beyond the amount authorised, or to be authorised, by the House of Representatives.'

While doing his utmost to avoid hostilities, Grey recognised the deep grievances, of the inland tribes especially, and pushed ahead with roads from Auckland into the Waikato, believing that they might serve to prevent war; or, if war came, that they would enable him to prosecute it with vigour. Though he often sided with Maori against pakeha, his sympathies were strongly with the colonists in their dispute with the British Government over military assistance and the control of native affairs. When the Waikato war broke out in 1863 Grey was not caught unawares. He had already obtained reinforcements from Australia and Great Britain and India, and was able to begin the campaign with some thousands of men in the field. Once embarked on the undertaking, he determined to push the war to a successful conclusion as soon as possible, and was impatient of the deliberation shown by some of the British officers commanding in the field. His disputes with General Cameron were unseemly, but not altogether avoidable. Though disruptive of discipline and

## GREY

tending to widen the gap already evident between Grey and his superiors in Downing street, they did lead in the long run to a prompter conclusion of the war. When, for instance, Cameron declined, with the ample force at his command, to storm the native position at Wera-roa (West Coast) Grey directed the attack with a force of Colonial soldiers and friendly natives and took the position with the loss of one man. His faith in the efficiency of the settlers was not misplaced, and it strengthened him in his correspondence with the Colonial Office. The tone which he employed in that correspondence was, however, not judicious, and it certainly helped to widen the estrangement. As a result, on 18 Jun 1867, when the war was entering on its most acute stage, Grey was informed that when his term as governor expired a successor would be appointed. The curtness and the peremptory tone of the despatch gave the impression that he was in disgrace, and the feeling prevailed in New Zealand that he had been sacrificed owing to his advocacy of the rights and point of view of the colonists.

Sir George Bowen arrived to relieve him in Mar 1868, and Grey proceeded to London in some hope of having it out with the Colonial Secretary. The Manchester school of political thought was now in the ascendant, and Mr Gladstone received Grey with some cordiality, but without any assurance of further employment. It is not certain that Grey wished for this, though he subsequently complained of the manner in which he had been discarded. He paid a series of visits to English towns, and gave addresses on Colonial Affairs and Liberalism as they appeared to him. He was invited to stand for several seats in the House of Commons, but when he announced his candidature for Newark in the Liberal interest Gladstone made it clear that the Liberals did not want him officially. He stood as an independent, but on the representation of Gladstone he agreed to waive his right in favour of Sir Henry Storks, and he withdrew on the morning of the poll. Grey's platform at this time included a general denunciation of the Little England school and the views of Goldwin Smith; closer union with the colonies; state-aided emigration; the electoral ballot; reclamation of waste lands; and free education. In England during the period 1868-70 he spoke and wrote vigor-

## GREY

ously on these topics.

In 1871 Grey returned to New Zealand and took up his residence on his island home of Kawau, where for a time he lived contentedly with the obvious intention of devoting his time to study, collecting books and objects of interest in Polynesian art, and planting native and exotic shrubs in his beautiful gardens. In 1874 the question of the abolition of the provinces was assuming an acute character. In Auckland, which was still smarting under the added injustice of having been robbed of the seat of government, feeling ran so high that it was hopeless for any candidate to come forward whose loyalty to the provinces was in doubt. Throughout 1874 Auckland politicians looked expectantly towards Kawau for leadership. Events moved quickly in 1875. On the resignation of T. B. Gillies a vacancy occurred in Parliament for Auckland City West. A deputation was being arranged to wait on Grey at Kawau when John Williamson, the Superintendent of the province, died (16 Feb). A week later the deputation approached Grey and suggested that he should stand for both positions. He gave his consent, and on 24 Mar he was elected to the superintendency, and three days later to Parliament, in both cases without opposition. This was the first occasion in New Zealand on which he submitted himself to a popular vote.

In Parliament Grey made a nofeworthy contribution to the hopeless struggle on the provincial issue. The outcome was already inevitable, and Grey was more concerned about the form of administration which would take the place of the provincial system. When Parliament was dissolved at the end of the year, the provincial issue was politically dead. Grey was returned unopposed for his Auckland seat (23 Dec). He was also opposing Vogel at Thames, and there too, he was successful (6 Jan 1876). The year 1876 saw the end of the provincial system, which had inaugurated the constitution in 1853. Grey, as Superintendent, was responsible for winding up the affairs of Auckland province. That question being out of the way, he gradually gathered about him a body of members of advanced views to whom the platform which he had adumbrated in England in 1868 appealed. These formed the nucleus of the future Liberal Party. On the defeat of Atkinson (13 Oct 1877) Grey formed a ministry,

having as his colleagues Larnach, Macandrew, Sheehan, J. T. Fisher and Whitmore. A few months later Ballance, Stout and J. N. Wilson came in. The Government policy included adult franchise, triennial parliaments, taxation of land values, the free breakfast table, compulsory purchase of large estates, leasehold tenure and the elective governorship. All of these (except the last) was to be carried into law within the next twenty years, but not by Grey. His ministry got into difficulties over the land tax and a commercial crisis. Ballance resigned after a personal disagreement, and Grey took into the cabinet Gisborne, J. W. Thomson and Swanson. He carried on for a few weeks after being defeated; then asked for a dissolution and appealed to the country.

Grey was elected unopposed for Thames, and made a strenuous campaign throughout the country. In the result the House was fairly equally divided, and the Governor sent for Sir John Hall. To enable Hall to take office, four Auckland members crossed the floor of the House to support him on the understanding that he would carry through certain of the Liberal party's reforms. Grey resigned on 8 Oct 1879. He was deposed from the leadership of his party for obvious reasons. He was not a successful premier, and he was a poor parliamentarian. It was charged against him that he gave his confidence to incompetents and quarrelled with his colleagues. He had certainly a disposition to play a lone hand, and was not an impressive financier. Before the defeat of his ministry, discontent was rife in the Liberal party. Earlier in 1879 a Young New Zealand Reform Party was formed, including in its membership 22 Liberal members of Parliament who agreed that the new organisation should be subsidiary to the Liberal Colonial Party. They included T. W. Hislop, R. J. Seddon, B. Harris, S. T. George, C. A. de Lautour, W. Barron, R. H. Reeves, F. J. Moss, E. Hamlin, R. C. Reid and J. C. Brown. Embittered by his deposition, which tended to accentuate the non-co-operative side of his character, Grey was a private member throughout the eighties and in the heyday of the Liberal party in the early nineties he intervened only as a critic. As an orator he was head and shoulders above the average of the members of Parliament, and he was revered by members of both parties and treated with great deference

during the 15 years that he was still to be in Parliament.

In 1889 he succeeded, after many years' patience, in carrying into law the one-man-one vote principle, which he achieved by an amendment in Atkinson's representation bill. His health was now failing, and his retirement from Parliament seemed imminent. In 1888 he sold Kawau because of his advancing years, and at the dissolution of 1890 he retired from politics, comfortable in the belief that Ballance and his colleagues were on the threshold of office. They did, indeed, win at the polls, and within a few weeks formed the first Liberal ministry in New Zealand which had a sufficient backing to carry out its programme.

Grey was appointed to represent New Zealand at the Federal convention in Sydney, where he cut a striking figure. He carried a resolution in favour of the single manhood suffrage, but failed to get acceptance for his other hobby, the elective governor-general. His early views on federation were embodied in a dispatch of 30 Aug 1851, which he reprinted in 1891. The Journals of Parliament contain many official papers on this subject. Grey has no sooner returned to New Zealand than a deputation requested him to contest the Newton seat. He acceded, and was elected unopposed (Apr 1891), giving a general support to the Liberal Government. When Ballance died, Grey strongly advised Seddon to form a Government, and Seddon in after years publicly acknowledged his indebtedness to the advice and the leadership of Grey, much of whose electoral programme he and his colleagues embodied in legislation. In Dec 1893 Grey was again elected (for Auckland City).

In failing health he visited England in 1894, and a few months later he tendered his resignation (4 Jul 1895). In 1897 he was reconciled with his wife, from whom he had been estranged for many years. His death occurred in London on 20 Sep 1898 (two weeks after that of Lady Grey), and he was buried in St Paul's. In private life Grey was abstemious and simple, fond of art, literature and science, and passionately fond of children. His affection for the native race both in New Zealand and South Africa was genuine and warmly reciprocated. Of his public character Reeves makes a fine appraisal in the *Dictionary of National Biography*.

Grey's writings include: *Vocabulary of the Aboriginal Language Of Western Australia (1839)*; *Vocab. of the Dialects of South Western Australia (1840)*; *Journals of Two Expeditions of Discovery in North-West and Western Australia 1837-39 (1841)*; *Poems, Traditions and Chaunts of the Maoris (1853)*; *Mythology and Traditions of the New Zealanders (1854)*; *Polynesian Mythology and Ancient Traditional History of the New Zealand Race (1855)*; *Ko nga Whakapehamenga Whaakahuareka o nga Tipuna o Aotea-roa (1857; 2nd edn, 1885)*; and a multitude of pamphlets and reprints of speeches on political and scientific subjects. His celebrated reference to 'unborn generations' occurred in an address as president of the New Zealand Society at Wellington (26 Sep 1851) and the reference to 'unborn millions' in a speech at Wellington on 16 Aug 1879.

*N.Z.P.D., pass.*; *Auckland P.C. Proc., pass.*; *App. H.R., pass.*; *G.B.O.P., pass.*; *Grey, op. cit.*; *MS. and ports. in Turnbull and Hocken Libraries*; *Col. Gent.*; Cooper; Rees (p); do. *Sir Gilbert Leigh (1878)*; Henderson (p); Collier (p); Milne (p); Gisborne (p); Rusden; Reeves; Saunders (p); Cox; Mennell; *D.N.B.*; Stewart and Rossignol; Carter; Wakelin; Cowan; McKillop; Morton; Gudgeon (p); Godley, *Letters*; Condliffe; Gorton; *Brett's Almanac, 1879* (p); Buick, *First War*; Fox; Harrop, *England and N.z., England and the Maori Wars*; H. W. Farnall, *Industrial Depression in N.Z. (1890)*; C. O. B. Davis, *Maori Mementos (1855)*; J. Grey, *His Island Home (1879)*; E. Wakefield, *Stafford*; Drummond; Scholefield, *N.z. Evol., and Pacific (1920)*; Egerton; Hight and Bamford; Shrimpton and Mulgan; E. A. Walker, *Hist. of S. Africa (1928)*; E. H. Brookes; *Hist. of Native Policy in S. Africa (1927)*; C. W. de Kiewiet, *Brit. Col. Policy and the S. African Republics (1929)*; Sir Godfrey Lagden, *The Basutos (1909)*; G. M. Theal, *Hist. of S. Africa, vol iv*; *N.Z. Herald, 1 Dec 1890* (p), 12 Nov 1898. Grey collection, Auckland Public Library; *N.z. Herald, 7 Jun 1883, 8 May, 31 Dec 1886, Jun-Aug 1887; The Press, 1 Jul 1909*. Grey collection in S. Africa; W. H. Bleek, bibliography, 1858; T. Hahn, index, 1884; H. W. Williams, *Maori matter, 1906*. Speeches: *1867-Southern Cross, 9, 10 Dec. 1875-N.Z. Herald, 24 Feb; 8, 23, 27 Mar; 23, 24 Nov; 4 Dec; Otago Daily Times, 3, 24 Nov. 1879-N.Z. Times, 16 Aug; N.Z. Herald, 3 Sep. 1880-Sat. Advertiser, 3, 10 Jul. 1882-Sat. Advertiser, 2 Sep. 1883-N.Z. Herald, 6 Jun. 1884-N.Z. Herald, 30 Jan. 1885-N.Z. Herald, 9, 12 May.*

GREY, JAMES GRATTAN (1847-1931) was born in county Down, Ireland. On first coming

to Australia he 'was on the parliamentary and literary staffs of the *Argus, Age and Leader* (in Melbourne). He came to New Zealand under a three years' engagement to the *Lyttelton Times*, of which he was chief reporter. He was for a while on the *New Zealander* (Auckland) which ceased publication in 1865, and was connected with the *New Zealand Sun* (Dunedin) as dramatic critic (1869). At this time he was correspondent of the French *La Patrie*.

After being some years in New Zealand Grey contributed interesting character sketches of our public men to the *Leader*. In 1879 he published in Wellington *His Island Home*, a description of Sir George Grey's home and the northern part of New Zealand. In 1883 he wrote pictures of travel for the *Press* (Christchurch) and in the early eighties sketches for the *Evening Post* on 'The New Zealander in Australia.' Grey was appointed to the staff of Hansard about 1875, and became chief reporter in 1896. His dismissal at the time of the Boer war was the occasion of much political controversy. He afterwards went to the United States and, returning to Australia, was editor of the *Perth Recol'd*, the *Perth Morning Herald* and the *NOL-th Coast Daily Times* (Lismore). He died on 10 Jul 1931.

*Cycl. N.z., i* (p); *App. H.R., 1900, H29, IS; Evening Post, 10 Jul 1931; The Press, 17 Jul 1909.*

GRIFFIN, WILLIAM (1811-70), who is regarded as the father of the eight-hour labour movement in Auckland, was a painter by trade, and came to New Zealand in 1850, having seen much of the Chartist movement in Great Britain. At the first eight-hours meeting, which he convened in 1855, he asked the workers, so as not to cause inconvenience and loss, to give employers six months notice of their intention to reduce hours. He was a member of the Provincial Council for City of Auckland (1857-61). Signing himself 'Constitutionalist,' he was a constant contributor to the columns of the *New Zealandel'* and the *Weekly Register*, especially on social topics. Griffin took a great interest in the treatment of New Zealand flax, and on moving to the Thames goldfields, was interested in the Molly Bawn claim. He died on 13 Jul 1870.

Griffin was one of the promoters of the first land association in Auckland, and was on the

## GRIGG

committee of the Flax-hackle Benevolent association, formed in the seventies by public subscription to give employment by selling hackles.

*N.Z. Herald*, 11 Nov 1890 (p); *Thames Advertiser*, 14 Jul 1870.

GRIGG, JOHN (1828-1901) was born at Bodbrane, Duloe, Cornwall. He spent his youth on his father's farm, being educated privately and at the naval college at Stoke.

On his father's death (1853) he sold the farm and sailed for Australia in the *Blackwall*, reaching Melbourne early in 1854. Disappointed in his search for a suitable locality for farming, he crossed to New Zealand and took up land at Otahuhu, where he cultivated potatoes on a large scale for the Australian market. This proving unprofitable, he contracted with the Government for the supply of hay to the troops in the Maori war. The contract was cancelled, and he bought up all the available hay, which he sold to the troops at an enhanced price. Grigg married (on 7 Jun 1855) Martha Maria (d. 1884), daughter of Henry Vercoe, of Mangere (formerly of Egloshayle, Cornwall). Continuing sheep and cattle farming, he visited the South Island in the early sixties and bought land in Southland which he sold at a profit. In 1864 he purchased the first portion of what was afterwards Longbeach station and, in partnership with his brother-in-law (T. Russell, q.v.) he increased the area until the station in 1871 aggregated about 30,000 acres of freehold land, much of it almost impassable bog. His brother Joseph managed the property until 1866, when John moved to Canterbury. For some years the family occupied a house at Avonbank, Christchurch. Taking advantage of the demand on the West Coast he sent four or five hundred sheep twice a month and 60 or 70 cattle across the Alps. Grigg set to work systematically draining the bog lands, most of which he gradually brought in for pasturage. (During the years 1873-75 William Massey, q.v., was one of his station hands.) The economic depression of the late seventies affected the partners, and in 1882 Russell withdrew, the separation being the occasion of a historic clearing sale of stock. Grigg retained 12,500 acres, which he now commenced to develop intensively as an agricultural property. As the land was reclaimed from bog a number of the employees took up farms, of

## GRIMES

which they obtained the freehold. Grigg bred the best strains of cattle and sheep for the changing trade. He was one of the first to ship refrigerated mutton and lamb, which he railed to Dunedin; and he was a leading spirit in the formation of the Canterbury Freezing Co., which erected the Belfast works. He was a provisional director and subsequently chairman of the company until shortly before his death. Grigg was an active member of the Canterbury A. and P. association, being a member of the committee in 1886, vice-president in 1892 and president the following year. He took many prizes at this and other shows. As an agriculturist he excelled. Making full use of machinery, he cropped as much as 5,000 acres in 1899. The yield per acre in 1901 averaged 50 bushels of wheat, 50 to 99 of oats, and 47 of barley.

Grigg took a leading part in local government, being chairman of the Ashburton county council for some years and also of the Longbeach road board and the school committee. A strong churchman, he was a member of the third Anglican general synod. In Aug 1884 he was elected to represent Wakanui in Parliament (defeating Ives by 454 votes to 400). He took an active part in the debates of that year, but was unable to devote time to the office and retired (Jun 1885). He died on 5 Nov 1901.

His eldest son, JOHN CHARLES NATILE GRIGG (1861-1926) farmed the homestead block until his death. He married Alice, daughter of Prof. F. W. Hutton (q.v.).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Col. Gent.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Philpott.

GRIMES, JOHN JOSEPH (1842-1915) was born at Bromley by Bow, Kent, and educated at the Marist Brothers' school which was established at St Anne's, Spitalfields road, in 1855. It was the influence of this institution that induced him to enter the Church. For this purpose he studied at Bar-Ie-Due, France, and in Ireland (for theology).

In 1867 Grimes was professed in the Society of Mary. Ordained at the age of 23 in the University Church in Dublin, Grimes was appointed professor of literature and classics in St Mary's College, Dundalk. In 1874 he left for New Orleans to take up a similar post, and he spent seven years at Jefferson College, of which he became rector. Having recovered from

## GRIMES

a severe attack of yellow fever incurred in parish ministrations, he returned to Ireland and was asked to take charge of the missionary training college at Paignton, Devon. The church of the Marist foundation, on St Mary's hill, was the first Roman Catholic place of worship opened in this part of the west country since the Reformation.

In 1887 Grimes was designated bishop of the newly created diocese of Christchurch, which had been separated from the large diocese of Wellington. He was consecrated to the post at St Anne's Church, London, and was the first bishop to be consecrated by Cardinal Vaughan. Sir Charles Clifford and Martin Kennedy were amongst those present. Sailing in Dec 1887, Grimes reached his diocese early in 1888. He at once formed a new church (St Mary's, Manchester street) independent of the Cathedral, and entered upon along programme of consolidation and expansion of the church's institutions. Opening a convent of the Good Shepherd at Mount Magdala, he introduced the Sisters of Nazareth to Christchurch and soon afterwards the Sisters of Mercy, who were mainly interested in education. His diocese included the Chatham islands, portion of Nelson and the whole of Westland as far south as Jacksons Bay, which he visited with considerable peril in the *Jane Douglas* (1901).

While in search of health in Europe in 1890. Grimes was present at the beatification of the first Marist Martyr of Oceania (Peter Chanel). Having conceived in 1897 the intention of building a cathedral, he received great encouragement from the Pope, and carried the project through; The edifice was dedicated on 12 Feb 1905. Grimes re-established the Society of St Vincent de Paul, and established the Sacred Heart Association, the Mount Magdala Home and St Bede's College. He brought to Christchurch a community of nursing sisters of the Little Company of Mary, who were responsible for the creation of the Lewisham Hospital. A firm believer in confraternities, he established the Apostleship of Prayer and the Arch-Confraternity of the Blessed Sacrament. On the occasion of his silver jubilee in 1912 he was enumerated amongst the domestic prelates of the Pope. proclaimed a noble, and joined with the number of those of whom both parents are of the order of count. He was made a knight com-

## GROSSMAN

mander of the Holy Sepulchre. He was a pleasant and vigorous preacher and a graceful writer. In secular life he was a governor of Canterbury College, a member of the Philosophical Institute and a vice-president of the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals. Grimes died on 15 Mar 1915.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times, The Press*, 16 Mar 1915; *N.Z. Tablet*, 18 Mar 1915 (p).

GRIMMOND, JOSEPH (1843-1924) was born at Drogheda, Ireland, and educated in the Bluecoat school there. He qualified as an engineer, and in 1859 emigrated to Melbourne in the *Eagle* and went in search of fortune to the goldfields at Ballarat and Creswick Creek. Two years later he crossed to the diggings at Gabriel's Gully, whence he passed on in 1863 to Wakamarina and in 1865 to the West Coast. Grimmond had fair success on all of these fields. He erected mining plants at Ross and Reefton, and constructed and operated sawmills in both districts. Amongst the mining companies in which he invested with success were the Ross United (of which he was manager) and the Mont d'Or. With McKay and Davy he owned the Back Creek and Kanieri Lake water races.

Grimmond took a prominent part in politics. For 13 years he was mayor of Ross; and for many years a member and five years chairman of the Westland county council. He represented Westland in Parliament from 1887 until 1890 (when he was defeated by Seddon, whom he opposed without success in 1896). In 1918 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member to the time of his death on 27 Nov 1924. He married (1898) Margaret Isabel, daughter of Duncan Madarlane, R.M.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26, 30 Jun 1925; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

GROSSMAN, EDITH HOWITT (1863-1931) nee Searle, was born in Beechworth, Victoria, and was educated at the Invercargill Grammar School and the Christchurch Girls' High School. As a junior University scholar she entered Canterbury College in 1881. She won the Bowen prize (1882) and a senior scholarship, and graduated B.A. (1884) and M.A. (1885) with first class honours. Subsequently she taught at the Wellington Girls' College, and in 1897; before

## GROVE

Victoria College was established, she began university tutorial classes with Dr Innes. She later took up journalism and civic work, and married Professor Joseph Penfound Grossman. Her publications include *Angela, a Messenger* (1890), *In Revolt* (1893), *In Memoriam, Helen Macmillan Brown* (1903), *Life of Helen Macmillan Brown* (1905) *A Knight and the Holy Ghost* (1907), *The Heart of the Bush* (1911), and numerous articles in English and oversea magazines. She was one of the first members of the Canterbury Women's Institute, and an original member of the London Lyceum Club. Mrs Grossman died in Auckland on 28 Feb 1931.

Hight and Candy; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Annals N.Z. Lit.*; *The Press*, 7 Mar 1931.

GROVE, DANIEL, reported for Wellington provincial government on a prospecting expedition in Vairarapa. Moving to the Thames, he represented Thames Goldfields in the Auckland Provincial Council (1869-70). He was a strenuous advocate of improved mining laws and the creation of a mining board for the Thames. In 1872 he left Auckland province and continued mining surveys in the south.

*Auckland and Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *SOI/them Cross*, 30 Sep 1868.

GRUCHY, GEORGE (1825-88), an early settler in the Papakura valley, represented Franklin in the Auckland Provincial Council (1861-65). He afterwards returned to England and died in Jersey on 5 Dec 1888.

GRUNDY, WILLIAM THOMAS (1852-1938), who was born in Birmingham and educated at Saltley College, took up teaching and rose to be headmaster of St Philip's School, Birmingham. After two years in Australia he came to New Zealand in 1880, and spent nine years as headmaster of Masterton school. In 1889 he was appointed head of the Clyde Quay school, which position he held until he retired in 1917. Grundy served for eight years as secretary of the New Zealand Educational Institute and was responsible for introducing the teachers' appeal bill. He was chairman of the Wairarapa High School governors (1923). He died on 4 Oct 1938.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *The Dominion*, 5 Oct 1938 (p).

## GUDGEON

GUARD, JOHN, was born in England and brought up to the sea. A man of great size and strength, he made his way successfully amongst the rough whalers. About 1820 he reached Sydney, where he built a schooner of 66 tons, the *Waterloo*, for the trade between Port Jackson and Hobart. In 1823 he was sealing in New Zealand and in 1827, being carried accidentally into Tory Channel, he settled at Te Awaite, where for some time he was successfully engaged in capturing whales passing through Cook Strait. He married Elizabeth Parker (1814-70, of Sydney).

The *Waterloo* having been wrecked at Waikanae and pillaged by the natives, Guard went to Sydney in the *Harriet*. On the return voyage she was wrecked at Te Namu (29 Apr 1834) and the whole of the ship's company were captured by the natives. Several were devoured, but Guard found his way to Moturoa and thence to Sydney, where he invoked the assistance of the Legislative Council. H.M.S. *Alligator* was detached to recover the captives. On 16 Sep she was off Te Namu and all of the survivors were eventually recovered. Violence, which now seems to have been unnecessary, was inflicted upon the natives, who had expected to receiveutu for the return of the prisoners and were wantonly fired upon with severe loss.

Guard, who had planned a colony in New Zealand as early as 1828, moved to Kakapo (Port Undenvood). In 1838 he piloted H.M.S. *Pelorus* on her examination of the Sounds. He accompanied Wakefield in the *Tory* for some time, acting as pilot on occasion.

Buick, *Old New Zealander*; C. A. Macdonald; E. J. Wakefield; *Polyn. JOUR.*, vol. 19, p. 101; Marshall.

GUDGEON, THOMAS WAYTH (1816-90) was born in England, where he was educated and served seven years in the property and income tax office, Somerset House. He had charge of the correspondence branch under the special commissioners and drew up a compendium for the conduct of the business of the office (1846).

In 1850 he came to New Zealand with his brothers in the *Berkshire*, and settled for 10 years as a bush farmer in Taranaki. About 1859 he moved to Wanganui with his family, and shortly afterwards the war broke out in the neighbourhood he had been living in. In 1864

## GUDGEON

he joined the Wanganui volunteer militia, and was appointed quartermaster and commissariat officer, with the rank of lieutenant. In 1869 he went to the Thames goldfields, where he spent 10 years. Moving in 1879 to Auckland, he was appointed registrar and record officer and spent the remainder of his life collecting historical matter and data concerning Maori customs and superstitions. He published in 1879 *Reminiscences of the War in New Zealand*; in 1885 *The History and Doings of the Maoris from the Year 1820 to the Signing of the Treaty of Waitangi*, and in 1887 *The Defenders of New Zealand*. Gudgeon died on 24 Aug 1890.

Gudgeon, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 26 Aug 1890. Portrait: Gudgeon.

GUDGEON, WALTER EDWARD (1842-1920) was a son of T. W. Gudgeon (q.v.), with whom he came to Taranaki in the *Berkshire* (1850). Educated at Beardsworth's school in New Plymouth, he joined the volunteers in 1859, and in 1860 moved with his family to Wanganui. He was serving as sergeant-major of the Wanganui Maori contingent. His commission as ensign in the Wanganui militia was granted in 1865 to reward his gallantry in disarming a body of natives at Arei-ahi and thus assisting to turn the position at Weraroa and to induce its capitulation (21 Jul). He was at the relief of Pipiriki, and commanded the advance guard at Okotuku (4 Jan 1866), for which he was promoted lieutenant. Throughout the Patea and Titokowaru's campaigns and in the pursuit of Te Kooti through the Urewera, he commanded the native contingent.

On the day of the disaster at Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu Gudgeon was left in charge of the camp. He was appointed to the Armed Constabulary when it was formed and at the conclusion of the war was appointed resident magistrate at Gisborne. He commanded a company at Parihaka (1881) and was left in command of the Constabulary at Manaia until 1885, when he was appointed major commanding the land forces at Wellington. He was acting Undersecretary for Defence during the absence of Colonel Reader, and was then appointed commissioner of police and in 1897 a judge of the native land court.

In 1899 Gudgeon was sent to Rarotonga as Resident Commissioner to the Cook islands

## GUINNESS

(C.M.G. 1900). It was largely due to his influence that the chiefs agreed to cede their sovereignty, and he remained on afterwards as chief justice. He retired in 1909 and during the war of 1914-18 was a military censor. An excellent Maori scholar, Gudgeon contributed many papers to the *Polynesian Journal* and provided much of the material for his father's *History and Traditions of the Maoris*. He died on 5 Jan 1920.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Polyn. Jour.*, vol. 29 (p); Gudgeon (p); Cowan (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 6 Jan 1920.

GUINNESS, SM ARTHUR ROBERT (1846-1913) was born at Calcutta, India, the son of Francis Guinness (q.v.), and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Tory* (1852). He was educated at Christ's College (1854-59) and articled to Edward Harston. When Harston disposed of his practice Guinness completed his articles with Garrick and Cowlshaw. He was admitted in 1867, and started to practise in Greymouth (with J. E. Warner; later with E. G. B. Moss, and finally, from 1884 with H. W. Kitchingham). Guinness sprang into prominence at once by his brilliant and persistent advocacy on behalf of the Fenian prisoners, for whom he was junior counsel (1868). He practised on the West Coast for 46 years, being a notary public from 1888. He married (1875) a daughter of James Westbrook (Launceston, Tasmania). Guinness was a good cricketer and was captain of the Westland representative XI (1876-88) and of the team that played against Lillywhite's English team (1877).

In 1873 he contested the Grey seat in Parliament against M. Kennedy and Woolcock. In the following year he was elected to represent the Paroa riding in the Westland Provincial Council, of which he was a member to the abolition, and on the executive in 1874. (Seddon represented Arahura during the same period.) In 1876 Guinness was elected to the first Grey county council (of which he was chairman for nine years and a member 1876-90). He was on the Greymouth borough council for one year; on the harbour board 1874-86, 1890-1913 (several times chairman); the school committee; and the High School governors (from 1892). He formed the deepsea harbour league, and was president of the Greymouth Trotting Club.

In 1884 Guinness again contested a parlia-

GUINNESS

mentary election, defeating Joseph Petrie for Grey, which he represented continuously till his death (on 10 Jun 1913). On two occasions only (1890 against W. H. Jones, and 1911 against P. C. Webb) did he have a close contest. He was chairman of committees (1893-1903) and Speaker from 1903 till his death. Originally a supporter of Grey, he was a Liberal throughout and took a prominent part in enacting the old age pensions law and other social legislation. He was a keen advocate of compulsory military training. In 1911 he was knighted. Guinness was a member of the Odd-fellows, Druids and Foresters.

*Parltry Record; Westland P.C. Proc.; Harrop, Westland; Cycl. N.Z., i (p); Christ's Coll. List; Evening Post, Lyttelton Times, Grey River Argus, 11 Jun 1913.* Portrait: Parliament House.

GUINNESS, FRANCIS H. V. (1818-91) was born in Dublin, a son of the Rev Hosea Guinness, D.D., rector of St Warburgh's and chancellor of St Patrick's Cathedral, Dublin. As a young man he went to India (1846) and thence to Australia, coming to New Zealand in the *Tory* (1852). He was sub-inspector of police in Canterbury (1858-62), and second-class inspector at Akaroa (1862-64). Retiring with that rank, he was appointed warden's clerk at Greymouth (1867) and receiver of gold revenue (1869). For 20 years he was warden and resident magistrate at Ahaura, and later warden at Collingwood and resident magistrate at Ashburton. While in Westland he represented Greymouth on the county council (1870-71). He died on 18 Jul 1891. (See A. R. GUINNESS.)

*Lyttelton Times and Grey River Argus, 20 Jul 1891.*

GULLY, JOHN (1819-88) was born at Bath, of a family to which also belonged the prize fighter John Gully (1783-1863) and Sir William Court Gully, Q.C., Speaker of the House of Commons. Apprenticed to an iron founder, his taste for drawing led to his being transferred from the workshop to the drawing and designing department. He left at the end of his articles and joined the Savings Bank at Bath, and a little later his father's business in the city. While acting as accountant he took lessons in landscape painting. In his early twenties he married Jane Eyles, the widow of Joseph Moore, of Portsea.

GUTHRIE

Attracted by Hursthouse's book on New Zealand, Gully in 1852 sailed in the *John Phillips* with his wife and family, and took up land at Ornata, Taranaki. He soon abandoned his attempt at farming in favour of clerical work in New Plymouth. In the Taranaki war he served with the volunteers, but, his health being unequal to the strain and exposure, he moved to Nelson and got employment as drawing master at the College. In 1863 he was appointed draughtsman and surveyor in the provincial service, under J. C. Richmond. He left the Survey department about 1878 and devoted the whole of his time thereafter to painting. While visiting Westland with the Superintendent (J. P. Robinson) they were capsized on the Buller bar and Robinson was drowned. Gully visited Victoria sketching, and on his return, with J. C. Richmond, spent a day or two in Milford Sound in fine sketching weather.

Many of Gully's works were purchased for Australian and New Zealand galleries and private collections. He exhibited in 1871 in the Royal Academy and for many years at the Society of British Water Colour Artists. All of his pictures sent to the Indian and Colonial Exhibition in 1886 were sold. In 1877 Henry Wise and Co. published a portfolio containing chromo-lithographs of some of his better known pictures of New Zealand scenery, with descriptions by Von Haast. Gully died on 1 Nov 1888.

G. Lincoln Lee, *John Gully* (1932), with list of his works; *The Colonist*, 2 Nov 1888. Portrait: Taranaki Historical collection.

GUTHRIE, DAVID HENRY (1856-1927) was born at Abbeyleix, Queen's county, Ireland, and educated at the diocesan school there and at Kildare Street College, Dublin. He trained as a teacher, and after coming to New Zealand in 1876 was teaching under the Wellington education board for 20 years.

In 1881 he took up land in the Rangitikei district, which he farmed with success. He was a member of the KIWITEA county council, chairman of the Rangiwahia Dairy Co., and a member for 10 years of the Wanganui education board. Guthrie took a leading part in the New Zealand Farmers' Union, and in 1908 won the Oroua seat in Parliament, which he represented till the dissolution of 1925. He retired owing to ill-health and was called to the Legislative

GUYTON

Council. He was a supporter of the Reform party and was elected whip in 1911. In 1918 he joined the National ministry as Minister of Lands, and he held that portfolio in the Massey ministry, with the addition of Railways (1922). In 1924 he resigned all departmental administration and remained without portfolio in the Bell and Coates ministries until his death (on 31 Mar 1927). Guthrie's chief task in the ministry was the settlement of returned soldiers upon the land.

*N.Z.P.D., 1908-27; Who's Who N.Z., 1924; The Dominion, 1 Apr 1927 (p).* Portrait: Parliament House.

GUYTON, WILLIAM, was born at Liverpool. He came to New Zealand in the *Coromandel* (Aug 1840) and entered into business with Ridgway and Earp in Wellington. In 1843 he was on the burgesses' roll of Wellington and, being elected at the head of the aldermen in that year, he became mayor on the death of Hunter. The ordinance under which the corporation was created having been disallowed by the Home Government, Guyton called a meeting of the aldermen on 4 Dec 1843 to wind up the affairs of the corporation. He was a trustee

GWYNNE

of the Pickwick Club (1840). Guyton was afterwards in business in Wanganui, where one of the main streets is named after him. He returned to England early.

*N.Z.C. 31; Ward; The Dominion, 22 Aug 1930.*

GWYNNE, RICHARD (1827-83) was born at Rostrevor, county Down. He left Ireland in 1849 and travelled extensively in America. In 1853 he was in Australia, arriving in the *Earl of Charlemont*, which was wrecked on Barwon head. Gwynne spent a year or two in Victoria as stockman and trading, and in 1854, in partnership with Benjamin Newell, he brought a consignment of horses to New Zealand. For some years they were in partnership as import merchants and introduced many valuable thoroughbred sires. Newell having died, Gwynne married his widow. In 1862 they visited England, and on returning took the Junction hotel at Newmarket. Gwynne moved to Waikato in 1874 and took the Hamilton hotel. He was a prominent figure in the district and a leader of its social institutions. For some years he was a member of the borough council and acting mayor. He died on 26 May 1883.

*Waikato Times, 29 May 1883.*

---

---

# H

---

---

HABENS, WILLIAM JAMES (1840-99) was born at Brighton, England, and educated at the Puget School there and Hackney College, graduating B.A. at London University (1862). He studied for the Congregational ministry, was ordained in 1863 and came to New Zealand in the *Canterbury* (1864). For 15 years he was in charge of Trinity Church, Christchurch, which was erected during that time. In 1878 he was appointed inspector-general of schools, and in 1886 he succeeded John Hislop as Secretary for Education. In this capacity Habens had much to do in organising the department and co-ordinating the work of the various education boards and the classification of teachers. He was a member of the royal commission on higher and secondary education and acted as secretary (1879-80). He was a fellow of the New Zealand University and a member of the senate (1877-99); founder of the Public Service Association; and president of the New Zealand Congregational union. He married (1863) Annie, daughter of Thomas Mellish (Brighton, England). Habens died on 3 Feb 1899.

Butchers; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening Post*, 4 Feb 1899.

HADDON, ROBERT TAHUPOTIKI (1866-1936) was the son of Charles Haddon and Te Paia, and on his mother's side was of high descent in the Ngati-Ruanui and Nga-Rauru tribes. In boyhood he was adopted by Tohu Kakahi (q.v.), one of the prophets of Parihaka, and was thus recognised also as a high chief of Taranaki. He witnessed many stirring events in and about Parihaka in the days of Te Whiti's rise and decline.

As a young man Haddon took an active part in the Young Maori Movement, and later he was associated with Maui Pomare (q.v.) in the

reform of Maori hygiene. He entered the ministry of the Methodist Church, was ordained and in time became superintendent of the Maori missions of the Church. In this position he did valuable work in improving the social conditions of the people. For 35 years he travelled widely amongst the Maori tribes of the North Island, attending all the great gatherings. He was keenly interested in the exclusion of liquor from the King Country, and was a member of the deputation which waited upon Parliament, taking with it a wheelbarrow and spade in token of the bargain which was made (when the last section of the Main Trunk railway was opened) that liquor would never be allowed into the Rohe-potae. Haddon was well versed in the ancient lore of his people, which he studied at the feet of such teachers as Tauke te Hapimana and Te Haukopa. When he participated at the installation of the Maori King Koroki, he was honoured by being clad in the cloak of Tawhiao. At the hui at Waitangi in 1934 he presented to the Treaty House, on behalf of the Taranaki Maori, a painting of the great event of 1840, done by his son Oliver Haddon. One of his last interests was the formation in 1936 of the Aotea Maori Association, to improve the social condition of the people.

Haddon died at Warkworth on 5 Nov 1936. His wife, Susan Haerehau Haddon, died on 10 Aug 1932.

*Hawera Star*, 10 Apr 1930 (p); 'Tohunga' in *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, 1 Dec 1936 (P).

HADFIELD, OCTAVIUS (1814-1904) was born at Bonchurch, Isle of Wight, the last of the family of sixteen of Joseph Hadfield. He spent 10 years of his boyhood abroad, mainly in Brussels, Lille, Tours and Paris, and during this

## HADFIELD

time gained a good command of languages and was so influenced by the doctrine of the Atonement as to wish to become a missionary.

Returning to England in 1828, he entered Charterhouse School the following year, but in 1831, owing to delicate health, had to leave and spend his time in the open. He entered Pembroke College, Oxford, in 1832, occupying rooms once tenanted by Samuel Johnson. Here again his studies were interrupted, and he spent a year in the mild climate of the Azores. In 1835 he returned to England determined to become a clergyman and entered upon the study of the Greek Testament and Aristotle. Having decided in 1836 to become a missionary in New Zealand he found that by not having graduated he was ineligible for ordination. He was, however, accepted by the Church Missionary Society as a lay missionary (Oct 1837). Learning that Bishop Broughton would ordain without a degree, he sailed for Australia in the *John* (Dec 1837). After a trying voyage with a mutinous crew he reached Sydney, where he was ordained deacon (Sep 1838).

Hadfield was tall and spare, very delicate in health, but with a richly cultured mind-analytical and logical-and a bent for languages and philosophy. In Dec 1838 he sailed with Broughton for Bay of Islands in H.M.S. *Pelorus*, and on 6 Jan 1839 was ordained priest at Paihia (Henry Williams, William Williams and R. Maunsell taking part in the ceremony). He had been about nine months attached to the native school studying Maori when Katu (son of Rauparaha), and Matene te Whiwhi (q.v.) arrived asking that a missionary should be sent to Waikanae. Hadfield at once volunteered for the post, and proceeded thither with Henry Williams. Finding the Ngati-Raukawa and the Ngati-Awa at enmity over the sale of lands to the New Zealand Company, Williams remained to reconcile them, and on 5 Dec bade farewell to Hadfield. Though many of the natives were anxious for Christianity, others were demoralised by the example of whalers and traders, and Hadfield spent a few difficult years establishing himself at Waikanae and Otaki, between which he rode regularly almost daily. He made many dangerous journeys as far north as Wanganui and Patea and across the straits to Queen Charlotte sound. In 1841 he had 18 schools and 600 pupils, and his two services daily were attended

## HADFIELD

by congregations of more than 500. While teaching as widely as he could, he never interested himself in secular matters or in the possession of land, and thus won the warm approval of the New Zealand Company. In 1840 he assisted Williams by calling a meeting of his tribes to sign the Treaty of Waitangi. In May 1841 he courageously confronted Te Heuheu at Waikanae and succeeded in staving off an attack by the combined Ngati-Raukawa and Ngati-Tuwharetoa on the Ngati-Awa people (led by Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake). In 1842 Hobson sailed past while Hadfield, in a strong northerly gale, was precariously steering his whaleboat across Cook strait. He accompanied Bishop Selwyn in his canoe voyage up the Manawatu river, and in 1843 he was almost drowned in attempting to save his fellow missionary (Mason) in the Turakina river.

When Rauparaha and Rangihaeata returned from Wairau (Jun) and endeavoured to rouse their tribes against the Europeans, Hadfield firmly resisted their arguments at Waikanae. A favourable turn was given to the discussion by sound of the bell for religious service (rung by Riwai te Abu), and on resuming Wiremu Kingi threw in his influence in favour of the Europeans and announced that he would not allow the hostile tribes to attack Port Nicholson. Having prevailed over the chiefs, Hadfield rode into Wellington (20 Jun). Later at Waikanae he introduced Governor FitzRoy to discuss the Wairau affair. Hadfield's health, always frail, broke down in 1844 and he was for the next five years lying on a sickbed in Wellington. During his illness Selwyn contemplated himself residing at 'Waikanae, which he regarded as a key position in the Island, but the arrival of the Rev Henry Govett enabled him to make other arrangements. Govett was succeeded by the Rev Samuel Williams, who organised the schools and the farming and boarding establishments with great success, and promoted the building of the Otaki church, which Hadfield had designed. Wiremu Kingi after his conversion was a faithful adherent and supporter of the mission, and Tamihana te Rauparaha (Katu) and Matene Te Whiwhi were enthusiastic teachers. Hadfield's constant attendant from 1839 was Riwai te Ahu (1818-66, of the Ngati-Kura branch of Ngati-Awa). He was the first native lay reader at Waikanae, and in 1855

## HADFIELD

was taken to St John's College by Selwyn, returning as an ordained deacon in 1856. For many years he had charge of the Manawatu district.

Governor Grey adopted Hadfield as his constant and trusted adviser, visiting him almost every day when he was in Waikanae or Wellington and acting invariably on his advice. He recognised that Hadfield had an intuitive knowledge of the Maori mind and that his illness gave him time for reflection.

In 1848 Hadfield commenced a new treatment under Dr Fitzgerald, from which he profited so rapidly as to be able to return to his station in Oct 1849. Meanwhile he had been appointed archdeacon of Kapiti (Jan). Realising that Christianity was going through a period of 'withering' after its first Hush in the forties, he paid great attention to farming and handicrafts, and interested some of his leading supporters in scientific farming and the breeding of shorthorn cattle and merino sheep. In 1852 Hadfield married Catherine, daughter of Archdeacon Henry Williams. She took charge of the girls' school.

In public life Hadfield came under criticism again and again for his participation in political questions. In 1857, in the interests of the natives, he supported Welch for the superintendency. He opposed the Constitutional Association on the same grounds, and made a strenuous fight against the education bill, the result of which was that the denominational system was retained. In 1856 he wrote important letters to the Governor (Gore-Browne) suggesting means of reconciling the two races and making use of intelligent Maori in their own government by appointing trustworthy men as assessors. In 1857 he took a prominent part in the drawing up of the New Zealand Church constitution. He was offered the bishopric of Wellington in 1858, but declined owing to his feeble health and went to England as chaplain to Archdeacon Abraham (who was proceeding to be consecrated to the see).

Hadfield had as early as 1845 drawn up for Grey a paper on the Maori tenure of land. He warned the Government in 1857 that the changes in the system of purchase were likely to cause grave resentment. Individual purchase he considered undesirable and he strongly urged the Government to define clearly the

## HADFIELD

native title. On his return from England in 1859 he had letters from Wiremu Kingi warning him that the Government was driving him into war over the Waitara purchase. He did not realise then the gravity of the position, but shortly afterwards, believing the Waitara war to be unjust, he said so with candour and fearlessness, incurring wide odium. Throughout 1860 he took his stand with Selwyn, Martin and Swainson in condemning the native policy of the Government, and he was called before the bar of the House of Representatives on 14 Aug to undergo a searching examination on native affairs (by C. W. Richmond and Whitaker). Nevertheless he restrained his own tribes from taking part in the war. Hadfield wrote two important pamphlets on *One of England's Little Wars*, to show that Wi Kingi had been unjustly treated. Grey in Apr 1863 admitted the mistake, and Stafford in 1868 confessed that the war was wrong but said that his colleagues had forced him into it. Throughout the difficult period 1861-67 Hadfield kept the Ngati-Raukawa people loyal. The most difficult crisis was in 1865, after the murder of Volkner, when a strong Hauhau deputation, under Te Ua, visited Waikanae and endeavoured to persuade the local tribes to join the movement. On that occasion Henare Matene Te Whiwhi turned the scale in favour of the Government.

Hadfield felt his health failing in the late sixties. In 1870 he was consecrated Bishop of Wellington. He was the first deacon ordained in Australia, the first priest ordained in New Zealand, and the first bishop consecrated in New Zealand without royal warrant (which he declined to accept). In later years he became the intimate and close friend of Richmond, whose antagonist he had been on the native question. He was a fearless controversialist, caring nothing for public opinion, and a wise administrator. He opposed the doctrine of evolution, rationalism and scientific Bible criticism. Hadfield was a strong supporter of Wanganui College, which he supervised for most of the period 1853-93, and he fought strenuously in defence of the College trust. He appeared as a principal witness in the Bryce v. Rusden libel case in London (1884) and had several warm controversies on constitutional questions in the synod. In 1890 he was elected primate, and four years later he resigned the see

## HAGGITT

and the primacy to live in retirement at Marton. Mrs Hadfield died in 1902 and Hadfield himself on 11 Dec 1904.

G.B.O.P., *pass.*; *App. H.R.*, 1854-67; Buller; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Wakefield; Saunders (p); typed letters and journals, Turnbull Library; Jacobs; Carleton; Godley, *Letters*; *N.Z. Spectator*, 14 Nov 1860; R. G. C. McNab, in *The Press*, 14 Mar-30 May 1931; *Evening Post*, 24 Oct 1929 (P).

HAGGITT, BRIAN CECIL (1838-98) was born at Toronto, Canada, the son of D'Arcy Haggitt (1806-69, solicitor, who a year or so later came to Hobart). Educated at the Hutchin school there, he served his articles with his father, and was admitted at Hobart (1861). In 1862 he commenced to practise in Dunedin, and in 1864 was joined by John Stamper. This association was dissolved in 1865 and his father came into the firm, which was carried on as Haggitt and Haggitt from 1866 till his father's death (on 9 Jul 1869).

In 1867 Haggitt was appointed crown solicitor for Otago. In 1871 his brother D'Arcy (who had joined him as clerk in 1864) and Spencer Brent joined the partnership. Haggitt was elected in 1865 to represent the City of Dunedin in the Provincial Council (with J. G. S. Grant as his colleague). By the help of the Ancient Order of Foresters, they defeated W. Mason and T. Birch. In 1866 he was deputy-superintendent. In 1867 he was elected to the Council (Vogel being one of his colleagues and F. D. Bell one of the defeated candidates). In 1867 Haggitt was provincial solicitor, and in 1867 provincial solicitor and a member of Reid's executive (with Vogel as a colleague). They resigned together in 1871 and Haggitt retired. In 1873 he was again M.P.C. for Dunedin.

Haggitt only became prominent at the bar about 1877. Thereafter he appeared in all important criminal trials. He was chancellor of the Anglican diocese of Dunedin.

Haggitt married, first Catherine (1881); daughter of W. G. Robertson (Tasmania), and second (1883) a daughter (d. 1931) of W. A. Tolmie. He died on 31 Jan 1898.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Feb 1898.

TE HAKEKE, an able chief of Ngati-Apa, was one of the emissaries who sought to placate Te

## HAKUENE

Rauparaha during the Tataramoia heke to Waikanae (1822). In 1823, to avenge his people for the killings by Ngati-Awa and Ngati-Toa, he led a taua which fell on the Ngati-Toa at Waikanae, killing 60 (including three daughters of Te Pehi Kupe).

In 1830 Hakeke distinguished himself in the campaign of Whanganui against Nga-Rauru and afterwards in reprisals against Te Pehi Turoa for cultivating his lands at Rangitikei. After Takarangi had been killed Te Anaua made peace with Hakeke. Rauparaha was now faced with a federation of West coast tribes, who organised an attack on Kapiti by 2,000 to 3,000 men. Hakeke was captured in the battle (which ended decisively in Te Rauparaha's favour), and was kept for some years at Kapiti as the prisoner of Matene te Whiwhi (q.v.). When he was released (before 1840) he lived quietly with Whatanui.

While without a chief the Ngati-Apa were skilfully led and rehabilitated under the guidance of Hakeke's son, Kawana Hunia. A fine-looking man and a good orator, Hunia's main motive in life was to obtain revenge against the Ngati-Raukawa. He led a force of kupapa co-operating with General Chute in Taranaki, and afterwards insisted on the completion of the Rangitikei sale (in 1866) and threatened to build a pa on the land. His claim was supported by Rangitane and Muaupoko and resisted by Taratoa. The Native Land Court having in 1869 decided against the Ngati-Raukawa, Hunia and Major Keepa te Rangihiwini impugned the Ngati-Raukawa claim to Horowhenua and appeared with arms at the hearing at Foxton. After the case had been decided in 1873 Hunia made a descent on the Ngati-Raukawa settlement at Buller lake.

*App. H.R.*, 1866-74; Downes; Cowan.

HAKUENE, IHAKA TE TAI (?1836-1887) was born at Te Rawhiti, Bay of Islands, of illustrious lineage. He was the second son of Whai Hakuene, of the Ngai-te-wake hapu of Ngapuhi and was also connected with the Rarawa. He was too young to take part in Heke's war. Having married Ahenata Takurua, a daughter of Te Kemara Tareha, chief of Waitangi, her health forbade him accepting the invitation of the Rev B. Y. Ashwell to study for the ministry, but he soon became a lay reader. When Te

## HALCOMBE

Tai was 25 years old his father died, having previously designated him as his successor in the chiefship. Truthful, honourable and modest, with a keen sense of responsibility, Ihaka devoted his talents and strong common-sense to improving the social condition of his people. He acted as treasurer to the Maori committee which in the early eighties placed a memorial stone on the site of the signing of the treaty of Waitangi.

Te Tai first stood for the Northern Maori seat in 1876, and he represented it from 1884 to the time of his death. This happened on 6 Apr 1887, while he was attending the meeting of the synod in Auckland. Ihaka was survived for a few weeks only by his second wife Rubia (whom he married on 25 Mar 1885), daughter of Matene te Whiwhi and widow of Hori Kerei. of Rawhiti. Hakuene was the most distinguished layman in the diocese. In Parliament he waimly advocated Bible reading in schools, particularly for natives.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1884-87; *Church Gazette*, Jul 1887; *N.Z. Herald*, Apr 1887, 5 May 1888 (Ri Maumau).

HALCOMBE, ARTHUR WILLIAM FOLLETT (1834-1900) was born in Wiltshire, England, the son of John Halcombe, Q.C., and came to New Zealand early in the sixties. In 1863 he married Edith Stanway (d. 1903), daughter of W. Swainson, F.L.S. He represented Rangitikei in the Provincial Council (1865-72) and was in the executive on four occasions as provincial secretary and treasurer. Halcombe was immigration agent under the general Government, and later attorney and agent of the Emigrants' Aid Society for the Manchester block, a post he held for nine years (1872-81). He was in 1876 on the first Manawatu county council. Halcombe resigned his position in 1881, and became manager of the Patetere estate in the Thames. In 1886 he moved to Taranaki, where he was a member of the Clifton county council, and the New Plymouth High School board. He was for some years (from 1869) editor of the *Wellington Independent*. Halcombe died on 3 Mar 1900. (See SIR WILLIAM FOX.)

Family information; Jackson; J. G. Wilson; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 5 Mar 1900.

HALL, ARTHUR WILLIAM (1880-1931) was born at One Tree Hill, Auckland, and educated at St Johns College. He farmed first at One

## HALL

Tree Hill, then for five years at Mangere, East Tamaki and Papatoetoe (where he had two milking herds). He was a member of the first town board at Papatoetoe (1918) and later chairman, till his retirement in 1928. He was chairman of the Milk Producers' association, representative of the suburban local bodies on the Railway Advisory board and chairman of the school committee. Hall was returned to represent Hauraki in the House of Representatives in 1928 as a supporter of the Reform party. He died on 17 Apr 1931.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *The Dominion*, 17 Apr 1931 (p).

HALL, CHARLES (1843-1937) was born at Malton, Yorkshire, where he was educated at Richardson's academy and the British school and apprenticed to a joiner. Later he entered the post office and then the railway clearing-house in London.

In 1875 he came to Napier in the *Countess of Killtore* and commenced business as a builder. On the opening of the Woodville settlement in 1882 he took up a section but, losing his home in a fire, he returned to business as a builder (in Woodville). He assisted in the settlement of the Hall and Malton blocks near Woodville, and was an original selector on the Mangahao settlement, Pahiatua.

In public life Hall was a member of the Woodville road board (1883-86); some years mayor of Woodville; district coroner; a member of the Waipawa county council (chairman 1889); Woodville licensing board (chairman 1884); Waipawa licensing board (1895-98); the Hawkes Bay education board (1901-06) and the Hawkes Bay land board (1886-1903). In 1893 he became member for Waipawa, but at the following election he was defeated by G. Hunter (q.v.). In 1899 he turned the tables, and until 1911 he sat in Parliament. On his retirement he spent three years in England, and then settled down in Dannevirke. His first wife having died in England, he married (1875) Marian Dinsdale (d. 1918), of Malton. Hall died on 29 May 1937.

*Dannevil'ke Advocate*, 29 May 1937; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

HALL, EDWIN (1855-1928) was born at Louth, Lincolnshire, educated there and passed as a chemist, which trade he followed in the north

## HALL

of England. He studied further on the Continent, and eventually emigrated to Victoria. In 1876 he came to New Zealand from Sydney and started farming in Waikato. Ten years (1879-89) were spent in England and, after a further tour of travel in Australia and the East, Hall resumed farming, at Mangere (1891). He was secretary of the Auckland Agricultural association (1892-1912), resigning to act on the cost of living commission. He was some time secretary of the New Zealand Farmers' Union and of the first Dominion conference (1902), and attended all the agricultural conferences. He was a member of the council of agriculture and the board of agriculture. He was keenly interested in stock-breeding, herd-testing and rural economics, and contributed many papers to the proceedings of farmers' societies. In his own district Hall was chairman of the Onehunga school committee and president of the public library. He died on 5 Jun 1928.

N.Z. Farmers' Union reports; N.Z. Agricultural conference, do.; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924.

HALL, GEORGE WILLIAMSON (1818-96) was born at Scarborough, a brother of Sir John Hall (q.v.). As a youth he went to sea and became a captain in the merchant service. He settled in Canterbury, taking up the Highbank property in 1852 and later, with his brothers, Springfield. Hall devoted himself mainly to his pastoral pursuits, but represented Heathcote in the Provincial Council for one year (1861-62). He died on 27 Feb 1896.

Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 28 Feb 1896.

HALL, SIR JOHN (1824-1907) was born at Hull, the son of Captain George Hall, of Elloughton, Yorkshire, a mariner-shipowner and elder brother of Trinity House, Hull. To the age of 10 years he was at school in Hull, and the next six years he spent in Germany, France and Switzerland, acquiring some knowledge of Latin and a useful facility in French and German. At the age of 16 he entered the office of a London merchant, and in 1845 he joined the Post Office, where he became private secretary to the permanent head. He was commissioned to visit Europe to investigate a proposal to carry mails from India by way of Trieste instead of through France. The proposal was dropped as being impracticable.

Hall was selected as chief postmaster at

## HALL

Brighton, with a salary of £600 a year; but royal patronage gave the post to another officer and he left the service. He became interested in the Canterbury scheme, and, reading Weld's *Hints to Intending Sheepfarmers in New Zealand*, he decided to emigrate, and sailed for New Zealand in the *Samarang*. While in London, Hall was a member of the Honourable Artillery Company, and won a medal for rifle shooting. During the Chartist disturbances of 1848 he did service as a special constable. Landing in Canterbury in 1852, he engaged a Maori guide and rode far south. He also visited the North Island, riding through Wairarapa and Hawkes Bay, and eventually decided that the best place was south of the Rakaia, where the only white settlers were the Rhodes brothers. He acquired a large canoe to ferry his stock and goods across the Rakaia and to use afterwards in a regular service for the benefit of settlers. The first crossing was so discouraging that he abandoned the ferry and settled on the north side of the river, buying Stoddart's run and stock.

Hall was clearly marked out by his experience for public life, and at the elections of 1853 was returned to represent Christchurch Country district in the Provincial Council. From that time until the provinces came to an end he was continuously a member of the Council, except when absent in England. He was instrumental in getting the ordinance passed which established the Church of England trustees for the province and helped to pass the ordinance to combat scab. In Oct 1854, he was appointed provincial secretary, and he was head of the government until May 1855. He was elected for Heathcote in 1857. At the end of 1855 he was elected to represent the Country District in Parliament, where he accepted the office of Colonial Secretary in the Fox ministry (1856). In Nov he was appointed resident magistrate for Lyttelton, sheriff, and commissioner of police, and early in 1857 he became a magistrate and justice of the peace for the colony. In Dec 1858 he was magistrate for Christchurch. In 1859 he sought respite by a visit to England. There he spent three years and married (1861) Rose Anne (d. 1900), daughter of William Dryden, of Hull.

In Feb 1862 the Christchurch town council was called into being. Hall presided at the

meeting of burgesses, was elected at the head of the poll and in the following month he was elected chainnan. In 1863 he was re-elected under the new ordinance. The most urgent work facing the board, the construction of Cashel street, was carried out by an old-fashioned working-bee of householders, amongst whom Hall plied pick and shovel. He resigned the mayoralty in Jun 1863, and in Jul he was called to the Legislative Council. In Dec 1863 he returned to the Provincial Council, in which he represented Mount Cook until 1866, when he became member for Rakaia. In 1864 he became secretary for public works in the Tanned executive. Businesslike, prudent and methodical, he was just the man for the emergency which occurred in 1865, when gold was discovered in Westland. Communication with the other side of the mountains was a matter of vital concern, and Hall started off at once with the provincial engineer (Dobson) to examine possible routes. Satisfied with Arthur's Pass, he authorised Dobson to put all available men to work to open out the road. In Jun 1865 he was appointed commissioner of crown lands.

Early in 1866 the executive resigned, and Hall had more time for colonial politics. In Feb he resigned his seat in the Legislative Council and contested the Heathcote seat in the House of Representatives (defeating Buckley). In May he became a member for Rakaia in the Provincial Council, and in Aug he was appointed Postmaster-general in the Stafford ministry. During the three years that he held this office, Hall retained the confidence of his constituents, though they passed resolutions disapproving of the policy of the Government as a whole. Once more ill-health compelled him to resign his portfolio (Feb 1869), but he remained a member of Stafford's executive until the Government went out of office. In Oct 1867 he attended the conference in Melbourne on ocean postal communications. Hall's interest in Westland continued, and in 1868 he presented to Parliament a numerously-signed petition for separation from Canterbury. He warmly espoused the rights of the mining region, and when it was enacted that Westland should be a separate county, he was sent over to inaugurate the new system of government. Taking office as chairman of the self-governing county, he administered affairs until the elec-

tions at the end of 1868. He had been a strong provincialist, but was convinced that the example of Westland would show that all the necessary powers of self-government could be provided under a county. He was a firm believer in decentralisation and had taken part in the formation of road boards in Canterbury, and been a member of several. At a later date he welcomed the establishment of counties throughout New Zealand, and was a member of the first Selwyn county council, and its chairman (1877-79). In provincial politics he headed an executive (Oct 1870-Aug 1871).

In 1872 Hall was persuaded to resign his seat in the lower house to strengthen the Fox Government in the Legislative Council. A few months later the ministry was defeated. Stafford held office for a month, and was succeeded by Waterhouse, who invited Hall to be Colonial Secretary. Unfortunately owing to his health he had to resign (Mar 1873), when Waterhouse also retired. Hall now withdrew from provincial politics for good and sailed for England. On his return he was for a week or two a member of the executive in Atkinson's ministry (1876). In 1879, having resigned from the Legislative Council, he won the Selwyn seat and became leader of the opposition, moved an amendment on which Grey was defeated, and was himself invited to form a ministry. He took office on 8 Oct 1879 (with Whitaker, Atkinson, Rolleston, Oliver, and Bryce as colleagues). His anxiety regarding his majority was set at rest by four Auckland members crossing the floor of the House.

Hall's cautious administration helped to bring order into the finances of the colony, of which Atkinson had charge, while his social policy satisfied for the time the yearnings of Liberals. Amendments of the electoral law which Grey had drafted were adopted by Hall. Triennial parliaments and universal suffrage became law and, with the support of Rolleston, Hall declared in favour of more speedy land settlement. If there is any class in the community: he said, which is opposed to the settlement of the land on liberal principles, with such a class we have no sympathy whatever: The pacification of the Maori was a difficult task. The Native Minister (Bryce) advocated a policy towards Te Whiti and Tohu which Hall could not at first approve. The pacific Rolleston also urged

patience. Early in 1881 Bryce resigned, and Rolleston administered the department. A few months later, however, the situation appeared to the cabinet so menacing that Hall was converted to Bryce's views; Bryce resumed his place in the cabinet, and a display of force was decided upon. Though the coup at Parihaka (Nov 1881) was carried through without bloodshed, Hall was severely criticised. He incurred more odium for the arrest of Te Whiti and Tohu than credit for setting up a commission to investigate native grievances. While the proceedings at Parihaka were still incomplete, the general election was held and Hall was accorded a vote of confidence. The burden of office, however, had made inroads upon his health, and in Apr 1882 he resigned the premiership to Whitaker. His knighthood was received a month or two later.

Gisborne says of Hall: •There is nothing especially striking in his character, but it is a combination of useful qualities . . . He was always painstaking, accurate, conscientious, and intelligent. He is, perhaps, more an official than a statesman. His official aptitude was wonderful, and he looked on the transaction of departmental business as a labour of love . . . He has moderation, judgment, and commonsense. He is not apt to rush into extremes; he is ever ready to retrace his steps, as far as practicable, when he has made a mistake . . . All round, he has been one of the best public men in New Zealand:

Hall resigned his seat in the House (Feb 1883). Four years later he appeared as member for Selwyn, with no further desire for office, but interested heart and soul in the liberalisation of the electoral laws. Women's franchise had been advocated in Parliament by Dr Wallis as early as 1877. During the electoral debates in 1879-81 Ballance pushed the matter to a division. In 1881 Wallis's bill passed its first reading, and in 1887 Vogel dropped his bill after it had passed its second reading by 41 votes to 22. In the session of 1888, Hall presented a great petition and gave notice to move that the franchise be granted to women. In Aug 1889, in moving a resolution in favour of the measure, he said: •We cannot afford to bid women stand aside from the work of the nation. We need all their spirit of duty, their patience, their knowledge in abating the

sorrow, sin, and want that is around us: He was convinced, he added, that women were entitled to be placed on a perfect equality with men. The motion was carried by '37 votes to 11, and a fortnight later Hall's bill was read a first time. In 1891 he presented a petition with over 10,000 signatures, and his bill was read a second time by a majority of 25. The House resolved that the act should come into force before the next general election. To the dismay of supporters of the measure, the Legislative Council threw it out by 17 votes to 15. In 1892 Ballance's bill was lost on a disagreement between the houses. In 1893 Hall again presented a petition (with 31,872 signatures). On 9 Aug his female franchise bill passed its second reading almost unanimously. The Legislative Council bowed to the inevitable, but even then a minority petitioned the Governor not to assent. The bill became law on 9 Sep.

Hall retired from Parliament at the dissolution (Nov 1893). He had served in Parliament with slight intermissions for 40 years. He represented New Zealand abroad at the Paris exhibition (1889), and at the conference on federation (1890). He was fully convinced that federation would be a mistake; indeed •that the 1,200 miles between New Zealand and Australia were 1,200 reasons against such a union: Hall was a member of the first synod of the Church of England (1859), when the constitution was adopted. He served on various bodies, however humble—road boards, county councils, harbour boards, school committees—and was a governor of Canterbury College (1873-79). A member of the Leathersellers' Company of London, Hall was chosen master in 1905. As the first chairman of the Christchurch municipal council, he was called upon to be mayor at the time of the exhibition (1906). Failing health prevented him from taking his part, and he died on 25 Jun 1907. He left bequests amounting to £55,000, including £30,000 to establish a general charitable trust in Canterbury, £10,000 for the building of a church and vicarage at Hororata, and £10,000 to establish the Boys' Gordon Hall in Christchurch.

*N.z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 27 Jun 1907); *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Col. Gent.*; Cox; Saunders (p); *Cant. ON.*; Gisborne; Reeves; *The Press*, 26 JUN 1907, 12, 19 Apr 1930 (p). Portraits: Leathersellers Hall, London; Parliament House.

## HALL

HALL, RICHARD AUGUSTUS (1824-95) was born in county Monaghan, and educated at Trinity College, Dublin, where he graduated M.A. He was appointed curate at Derrygortrevey, county Armagh. Wishing to improve the prospects of his family, he joined in one of the Auckland special settlements, and induced others to come out in the *Mary Shepherd* which arrived at Bay of Islands in 1866. Having settled his family, he accepted an invitation from Bishop Selwyn to take charge of the parish of Howick, which he administered until 1882. He then returned to Ireland and was appointed rector of Quivy and chaplain to the Earl of Lanesborough. He retired in 1894 and died on 9 Dec 1895. Hall published several controversial works, including an essay on Swedenborgianism.

*N.Z. Herald*, 8 Feb 1896.

HALL, ROBERT (1832-1920) a native of Ulster, came to New Zealand in the *Ellora* in 1848, and for more than 50 years farmed in the vicinity of Auckland. He was president for many years of the Agricultural association, a member of the One Tree Hill road board (and 14 years chairman); of the One Tree Hill domain board and the Manukau licensing committee; a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank; chairman of the James Dilworth trust and a member of the council of Auckland University College. Hall acted on the land commission in 1905. He died on 22 May 1920.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Mar 1905; 24 May 1920.

HALL, WILLIAM (?- 1832) was born at Carlisle, entered the service of the Church Missionary Society in 1809, and was sent to Hull to learn carpentering and shipbuilding. He sailed with Marsden in the *Ann* on 25 Aug 1809, and for several years maintained himself by his trade in New South Wales, awaiting the opportunity to proceed to the mission in New Zealand.

Hall accompanied Kendall on the first voyage of the *Active* and later in 1814, when Marsden established the mission, he settled at Bay of Islands with his wife and family, his prime duty being to build the mission houses. He landed at Rangihoua on 12 Jan 1815. A few months later he moved to Waitangi, where he acquired 50 acres of land, built a house and commenced farming, but owing to the constant

## HALL-JONES

assaults by natives in this isolated spot he had to move. Under Marsden's direction Hall built stores at Kerikeri (1819) and he built ships under the direction of the Rev Henry Williams (the *Herald* being launched in Jan 1826). Marsden considered him industrious and persevering, but stubborn and self-willed. About 1825 he resigned from the mission owing to ill-health and commenced farming in New South Wales. For some time he taught at the seminary at Parramatta and assisted Marsden with the work of the mission. He was still catechist to gangs at different stations in New South Wales in 1831. He died on 28 Oct 1832.

Marsden, *L. and J.*, and *Lieutenants*; Carleton; Ramsden.

HALL-JONES, SIR WILLIAM (1851-1936) was a native of Folkestone, England, and was educated at public schools there. Trained as a carpenter and builder, he came to New Zealand in 1875, settled at Timaru, and was foreman for George Filmer for some years before entering into business on his own account. He carried out many contracts for buildings and other works.

Hall-Jones was a member of the Timaru borough council for five years and of the Levels road board for three years. In 1890, following the death of R. Turnbull, he was returned to Parliament for Timaru as a Liberal, and he held the seat continuously till 1908. When the Atkinson Government was defeated and Balance took office Hall-Jones was junior government whip, under Perceval (1891). He did not fully accept the view of his leaders that members of the party should vote with the Government, and in 1893 he resigned his post as whip. For three years he sat apart, keenly criticising the Government and voting in an independent liberal spirit and co-operating with McNab, Buick, G. J. Smith, Pirani and Montgomery, though on questions of no-confidence they always cast their vote with the Government.

In Feb 1896, Buckley and Reeves having retired from the Government. Hall-Jones was offered a portfolio, and he became Minister of Public Works and Marine. A painstaking, conscientious administrator, with a competent knowledge of building and contracting, he devoted himself with enthusiasm to the adminis-

## HALL-JONES

tration of departments which at that time were of high importance in the Government. He gained a reputation as a thorough and fearless manager in his own domain. When Seddon visited Australia in 1906 Hall-Jones, as the senior member of the cabinet in New Zealand, was acting-Prime Minister, and on Seddon's death he carried on the government as Prime Minister pending the return to New Zealand of Sir Joseph Ward. He set his face sternly against the counsel of a fairly strong section of the Liberal party that he should retain the leadership. The strain of administrative work told upon his health, and he was compelled in 1907 to take a holiday.

Returning to duty in Jan 1908, he was offered a few months later the position of High Commissioner in London rendered vacant by the resignation of Reeves. During the four years that he held this post he represented New Zealand at the Imperial copyright and education conferences and the international refrigeration congress in Vienna (at which he carried a resolution protesting against the restrictions in Europe against frozen meat from the dominions). He was the Dominion's representative on the Pacific Cable board, the Imperial wireless committee and the advisory committee of the Board of Trade. He was created K.C.M.G. in 1910.

On his return to New Zealand in 1913, Sir William was called to the Legislative Council by the Massey Government and remained a member till his death (on 19 Jun 1936). Staunch adherence to principle marked his whole public life; and his personal character was distinguished by courtesy, consideration and a singular lightness of heart even into advanced age. Hall-Jones played an important part in the preliminary study and representations which led to the acceptance by the Seddon Government of the policy of old age pensions. In a private memorandum (portion of which was published shortly after his death) he states that his first election was largely due to his advocacy of the subdivision of large estates. In discussions of old age pensions in 1894-95, he made careful estimates of the cost of granting pensions forthwith and suggested how this could be done without increasing taxation. He had intended making this a plank of his platform at the election in 1896, but on accepting

## HALLENSTEIN

an invitation to join the ministry he could not make use of it without the approval of his chief. Seddon fully concurred in the desirability of the pension but proposed raising the money by special taxation. A bill was introduced that session, but dropped after these objections had been urged against it. Next year it was passed by the lower house without special taxation, but thrown out by the Legislative Council. In 1898, after some new members had been appointed to the Council, the bill was carried.

While acting-Prime Minister in 1906, Hall-Jones, on behalf of New Zealand, sent to the Colonial Office a despatch protesting against the non-consultation of the Dominions in the matter of the New Hebrides. As the outcome of conversations between Seddon and the Australian Prime Minister, it had been intended that the despatches from the two dominions should be identical, but Hall-Jones considered the terms too strong, and took the responsibility of toning down the despatch which he sent on behalf of New Zealand.

*N.Z.P.D.*, *pass.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; Condliffe; Scholefield, *N.Z. Evol.*; Reeves; *Evening Post* and *The Dominion*, 20, 22 Jun 1936. Portrait: Prime Minister's gallery, Parliament House.

HALLENSTEIN, BENDIX (1835-1905) was born and educated in Brunswick, Germany. He finished in England, where he spent five years in a shipping house in Manchester. In 1857 he emigrated to Victoria and in 1863 crossed to New Zealand. He took up his residence first in Invercargill, but soon moved to Queenstown, where he established a business with J. W. Robertson and erected a flourmill at Kawarau for the benefit of the small farmers whom they settled upon their land. Hallenstein was several times mayor of Queenstown and represented the Lakes in the Otago Provincial Council (1872-75), and Wakatipu in the House of Representatives (1872-73). In 1873 he removed to Dunedin, where he helped to found the New Zealand clothing factory, of which he was managing director for many years. He was also a director of the D.L.C. (established in 1884), of Kempthorne Prosser and Co. and the National Insurance and Westport coal companies. He was German consul for some years. Hallenstein died on 6 Jan 1905.

## HALLY

Gilkison; *Cycl N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 7 Jan 1905.

HALLY, PATRICK (1866-1938) was born at Dunedin, educated there and brought up to the boot trade. He was president of the boot trades union (1890) and of the Dunedin tailoresses union (1893), and a member of the first conciliation board of Otago and Southland. In 1902 he was on the Dunedin City Council; in 1904 was appointed inspector of factories and in 1908 a conciliation commissioner under the act of 1908. He retired in 1936 and died on 21 Jul 1938.

HALSE, HENRY (1820-88) was born in the City of London; educated there and entered at St George's Hospital to study medicine but, preferring an outdoor life, sailed in the *Amelia Thompson* with his brother for New Zealand. Arriving at New Plymouth (1841), they at first engaged in farming, but in 1846 Halse entered the civil service. He married Mary Ann Shaw. In 1858 he was appointed commissioner of native reserves in Taranaki and in the following year magistrate and commissioner of police. In 1858, as assistant native secretary, he reported the murder of Katatore. In 1875 Halse became a judge of the native land court, from which he retired in 1880. He was a fine Maori scholar and a capable, conscientious judge. Halse died on 5 Jun 1888.

*App. H.R.*, 1867 A4; Wells; *N.Z. Times*, 7 Jun 1888.

HALSE, WILLIAM (1816-82) came to Taranaki in the *Amelia Thompson* (1841) and was immediately appointed a justice of the peace. In 1848 he succeeded Bell as resident agent for the New Zealand Company in New Plymouth (1848-52). He was appointed commissioner of crown lands in 1851 and held that office till 1863, when he entered into business. In 1853 Halse contested the Superintendency of the province against C. W. Brown (Brown 173, Halse 138). He acted as deputy-Superintendent 111 1858.

Wells; Seffern; Jourdain; *Taranaki Herald*, 13 Apr 1882. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

HALSWELL, EDMUND STORR, a son of Henry Halswell, of Presteign, Radnorshire, was admitted to the Middle Temple in 1831 and called in 1834. As a shareholder and a member of the committee of the Church of England Society,

## HAMILTON

he was appointed by the New Zealand Company as commissioner of native reserves, and arrived in the *Lady Nugent* (1841). He was appointed a magistrate in May, chairman of quarter sessions and protector of aborigines for the Southern district (Jul 1841), and judge of the county court (Feb 1842). In 1842 he tried and convicted a young Maori chief for theft. In 1845 he was an officer of the defence organisation in the Te Aro district. He shortly afterwards left the Colony.

G.B.O.P., 1842/569; 1846/722; E. J. Wakefield; Ward.

HAMER, THOMAS HUTCHINSON (1855-1924) was a son of the Rev Thomas Hamer (1814-99), who was sent to Auckland by the Congregational Union in 1865 to establish a church, and was a founder of the Freedom of Religion Society, formed to resist the establishment of a state religion. His son Thomas was born in Auckland and educated at Wesley College and McRae's high school. He was in the office of the Provincial Superintendent (1872-76), then for two years in the Bank of New Zealand at Thames, and in 1878 became a clerk in the Mines department. He was acting-Under-secretary in 1887 and later chief clerk of lands and mines. In 1891 Hamer became private secretary to the Minister (Hon R. J. Seddon) with whom he remained until his death (1906) when he became Under-secretary for Mines. In 1908 he was appointed auditor in the High Commissioner's office in London. Hamer married first (1883) Isabella Rayner (of Hutt), and second (1893) a daughter of W. Dollimore (Lyell). He died on 13 Feb 1924.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Southern Cross*, 6 Oct 1865; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Jun 1899, 25 Oct 1905; *N.Z. Times*, 15 Feb 1924.

HAMILTON, AUGUSTUS (1853-1913) was born at Poole, Dorsetshire. Educated at Dorset County College, he began his medical course at Epsom college, but had an inclination for natural history. In 1875 he came to New Zealand in the *Collingwood*, and commenced teaching at Thorndon school. He was afterwards appointed to Okarito, Westland, and while there made a noteworthy exploration in south Westland collecting plants. While teaching at Petane, Hawkes Bay, he was secretary to the Hawkes Bay Philosophical society and founded

## HAMILTON

a museum in connection with it. In 1890 he was appointed registrar of Otago University and in 1903 he succeeded Sir James Hector as director of the Dominion Museum.

Hamilton contributed frequently to the proceedings of the New Zealand Institute and published 72 papers in various branches of science, notably botany, ornithology, ethnology and entomology. He took a particular interest in the Maori collection and his most noteworthy published work was a fine volume on *Maori Art* (1907). He made an expedition to the Macquarie islands and many excursions in different parts of New Zealand (especially in South Canterbury) in search of specimens of the arts of the native race. His comprehensive collection was acquired by the Government for the Dominion Museum. Hamilton was a governor of the New Zealand Institute, a member of the Maori mission board, a founder of the Polynesian Society; a member of council of the New Zealand Academy of Fine Arts and a philatelist. He died on 12 Oct 1913. (See HAROLD HAMILTON.)

*Polyn. Journ.*, vol 22, P 230; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Hamilton, *op. cit.*; *Evening Post*, 13 Oct 1913.

HAMILTON, GEORGE DOUGLAS (1835-1911) was born in France and educated on the continent and at Edinburgh University, and in 1851 received a commission in the 11th hussars. He came to New Zealand in 1857 and managed stations for Dr Featherston and St Hill, afterwards taking up the Mangatoro property in Hawkes Bay. In the Maori war he served in various capacities for eight years, being twice wounded. He was deputy land frauds commissioner in 1867-68; chairman of the Seventy Mile road board (1868-72), president of the Woodville and Dannevirke Jockey clubs and of the Bush Districts Farmers' club (1891-1900). He did much to stock the rivers of his district with trout, and published *Trout Fishing and Sport in New Zealand* (1904). His only other publication was *The Relation of Capital to Agricultw'e and Labour in New Zealand* (1892). He died on 29 Nov 1911.

*App. H.R.*; *N.Z. Times*, 7 Oct 1910; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

HAMILTON, HAROLD (1885-1937) was the son of Augustus Hamilton (q.v.) and was born

## HAMILTON

at Napier. Educated at the Waitaki Boys' High School and Otago University, he qualified as an associate in geology at the Otago School of Mines (1908). He was biologist to the Australasian Antarctic expedition (1911-14), assistant at the Dominion Museum (1919-27), and the first director of the School of Maori Arts at Rotorua from 1927 till his death (on 31 Dec 1937). During the war he served in the Royal Naval Reserve as a lieutenant. He married (1917) Edith Leahy (Southampton, England). Hamilton studied deeply the arts and crafts of the Maori, and during his administration of the school was responsible for the carving and design of many native buildings erected all over New Zealand.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *RotoTua Morning Post*, 3 Jan 1938.

HAMILTON, WILLIAM JOHN WARBURTON (1825-83) was born at Little Chart Rectory, Kent, of Irish extraction. He was the eldest son of the Rev John Vesey Hamilton. His education he obtained in England, in Paris, in Brussels and at Harrow. At the age of 18 he left for Sydney in the *Bangalore*. Captain FitzRoy was a passenger, proceeding to be governor of New Zealand. This association was of importance in shaping Hamilton's career. The young naval officer who was to have been FitzRoy's private secretary having to resign as the result of a wound, FitzRoy offered the post to Hamilton. In this capacity he visited settlements and native strongholds from end to end of the colony. Many of FitzRoy's dispatches were drafted by him and he had also the duty of entertaining guests. During Heke's war in 1845, as a lieutenant in the Auckland militia and aide-de-camp to the Governor, he saw something of the fighting.

When FitzRoy was recalled (late in 1845) Hamilton continued for a while under Sir George Grey, and then returned to England (1846), where he appears to have spent two years. He came again to New Zealand as a survey officer in H.M.S. *Acheron*, detailed to make a survey of the coast (1848). Fellow officers were Captain Richards and Lieut. Evans, whose surveys were embodied in the first *New Zealand Pilot* and still remain the basis of navigation instructions for the New Zealand coasts. Richards was later Sir George Richards (managing director of the Cable Maintenance Co.),

## HAMILTON

while Evans became hydrographer to the Navy. Hamilton's work was chiefly in the South Island. Early in 1849 he made inland explorations in north Canterbury, and discovered open grass country up the Hurunui and Waiau rivers, part of which was called the Hamilton plains. His report (dated 3 May 1849) shows a sound knowledge of geology. When the *Acheron* was in Foveaux straits, Hamilton was put ashore, with a midshipman and a Maori guide, and made important explorations to the westward as far as Mt Hamilton, Jacob's river. They spent three days on the flat which afterwards became the site of Invercargill and then returned overland to Dunedin. During the summer of 1849-50 he examined the coastline from Banks Peninsula to cape Campbell, making soundings and landing in every cove. His reports were published in Captain J. Lort Stokes's paper before the Royal Geographical Society. When in Canterbury Hamilton considered the streets of the capital town should be two chains wide, with rows of trees, as in Paris.

Returning to Auckland, Hamilton was appointed by Grey to the post of resident magistrate at Wanganui (Aug 1850), a considerable responsibility for a young man of 25 years. He made several trips far up the river, got into communication with the natives, and organised a native police (of which Keepa te Rangihwinui, q.v., was a member). His integrity and fairness commended him to both races. His next official post was collector of customs in Canterbury, to which he was appointed in Aug 1853.

At the first elections for the Provincial Council Hamilton was elected for Lyttelton, which he represented 1853-57. An active and useful member, he was shortly appointed provincial auditor, which was in the gift of the Council. In the following year he was made also sub-treasurer for the general Government. Hamilton was a member of the Tancred executive (1853) and presented a good deal of government business in the Council. He was again in Tancred's executive (1855-57), and finally in that of Packer (1857). He did not seek reelection or to enter Parliament.

In Feb 1856 he was appointed resident magistrate in Canterbury, and was called upon to clear up outstanding difficulties with the South Island natives. His early knowledge of the

## HAMLIN

native question was extensive, but he insisted that a competent interpreter should accompany him, and the Rev J. Aldred was appointed. The negotiations in one district resulted in an area of 50,000 acres being purchased for £150, with £45 additional for expenses. North of Kaiapoi Hamilton purchased 1,140,000 acres for a payment of £200. Much of this area had already been let or sold to Europeans in the belief that it had been duly purchased from the natives. Hamilton strongly advised the Government to send a competent person to visit the South Island Maori every few years, and Sir Donald McLean agreed. In the Provincial Council, in his official capacity, and in the press Hamilton set his face firmly against the 'gridironing' of Canterbury lands by wealthy people, to the detriment of the working settlers. Several cases of evasion of the law were brought into the courts. He was for some years a commissioner of the land board. In 1863 Hamilton was a member of the provincial commission which recommended the improvement of Lyttelton harbour. After leaving the customs service he was appointed receiver of land revenue, a position which he held until his retirement (1874).

Incidentally he was for some time manager in Lyttelton of the Union Bank and a director of the Trust and Loan Co. He was also for 25 years a part proprietor of the *Lyttelton Times*. Hamilton was many years a governor of Christ's College, and was on the board of governors of Canterbury College (1875-83). He was a deeply religious man, a keen churchman and a lay member of the synod. He died on 6 Dec 1883. Hamilton married (1857) Frances, eldest daughter of James Townsend, who arrived in the *Cressy* (1850). She died in 1889.

G.B.O.P., 1850; A. Mackay; Cox, *Men of Mark*; Godley, *Letters*; Beattie, ii; *Lyttelton Times*, 26 May 1853, 3 Jan 1884, 13 Dec 1917; *The Press*, 26 Apr 1930. Portrait: *The Press*, 28 Apr 1930.

HAMLIN, EBENEZER (1844-1900) was born at Orua, Manukau, the youngest son of the Rev James Hamlin (q.v.). Educated at the Church of England Grammar School in Auckland, he was withdrawn at the age of 16 to join the 1st battalion Auckland militia on the outbreak of the Taranaki war. He was in the 3rd battalion at the opening of the Waikato war, but transferred to a frontier force at Waiuku and (serving under Maj. Lloyd) was twice

## HAMLIN

mentioned. He contested the Raglan seat in the Provincial Council in 1868 and represented Raglan (1870-73) and Waiuku (1873-74). In 1876 he was elected M.R.H. for Franklin, and he sat in Parliament for Franklin (1876-81); Franklin South (1881-90), and Franklin (1890-93). He was chairman of committees from 1882 to 1890. Hamlin died on 4 Jun 1900.

*N.Z.P.D., pass*; Gudgeon; *N.Z. Herald*, 5 Jun 1900. Portrait: Parliament House.

HAMLIN, JAMES (1803-65) was born in England and trained as a flaxdresser and weaver. Being drawn towards missionary work, he came to Bay of Islands with William Williams (q.v.) in 1826 and was stationed for some years at Waimate as a lay teacher, afterwards moving to Keri Keri. In 1834 he accompanied Archdeacon Brown on his exploration of the Waikato, and in the following year was stationed at Mangapouri. In 1836 he was placed in charge of two stations at Manukau, with headquarters at Awhitu. In 1844 he was ordained deacon and sent to Wairoa, Hawkes Bay. His ordination as priest took place in 1863 and in the following year, owing to the murder of his brother Job by King natives, he returned to Auckland, where he died on 15 Nov 1865.

Williams papers; Marsden, L. and J.; Stock; *Southern Cross*, 16 Nov 1865. Portrait: Sherrin and Wallace.

HAMMOND, THOMAS GODFREY (1846-1926) was born at Richmond, Nelson, on 4 Oct 1846; educated at Nelson and spent 14 years in business before entering the Wesleyan ministry, for which he was accepted in 1874. He did duty as a probationer at Rangitikei, New Plymouth and Manawatu. In 1878 he was appointed to the Maori mission at Hokianga as successor to the Rev William Rowse, and in 1887 he was appointed to resuscitate the West Coast Maori mission (with headquarters at Patea). The natives were bitterly hostile, and every door was closed to him except that of Taurua and his brother. A church was opened at Hukutere and services were held at Waitotara and Whenuakura. Hammond often met with insult, but gradually won his way, counselling the natives against armed resistance. By his patient endurance and virile courage in face of disappointment he eventually won the goodwill of Te Whiti and Tohu and was wel-

## HANATADA

comed to Parihaka. Throughout Taranaki the name of 'Te Hamana' is revered by the Maori. In 1890 he was appointed superintendent on the West Coast, and in 1917 superintendent of the Maori missions. He had a wide and accurate knowledge of Maori history and customs and made many contributions to the journal of the Polynesian Society. In 1916 he published *In the Beginning; The History of a Mission*, and in 1924 *The Story of Aotea*, both dealing with the history of Taranaki. He was superannuated in 1920, but continued to serve the Maori people until his death on 13 Dec 1926. Hammond married (1878) Lydia St George (1857-1936) of New Plymouth.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Pratt, *Minutes Conf.* 1938; W. J. Williams; *Centenary Sketches*; T. A. Joughin, foreword to *The Story of Aotea* (p).

HANATAUA, TE REI (?-1860) a principal chief of Ngati-Ruanui in the early nineteenth century, lived chiefly at Te Ruaki, and was considered by Gudgeon the greatest chief in Taranaki. He was constantly at war to prevent the passages of heke through his country towards Cook strait. In 1824 he participated in the combined attack on Te Rauparaha at Kapiti. In revenge for the death at his instigation of a Ngati-Awa chief, Te Karawa, a strong taua of Ngati-Awa and Taranaki, with reinforcements from Waikato under Awaitaia and Waharoa, invaded the Ngati-Ruanui country in search of Hanataua (1826), but without success. He protected the heke Tama te Daua from Ketemarae (1832) until it was safely past the hostile Whanganui tribes. Two years later a stronger force came from Waikato bent on obtaining revenge. Though many of his men were absent Hanataua defied the invaders and taunted them with breaking their peace. After a long siege and a truce for negotiation the pa fell and Hanataua was captured. Waikato proceeded to attack Matakatea (q.v.) at Ngateko, and in the confusion of their defeat at Nga-Ngutu-Mairo, Hanataua and many of his people escaped (1834).

Hanataua sympathised with Wi Kingi te Rangitake in the Waitara dispute (1860) and led to Taranaki a contingent of the Nga-Ruahine hapu armed with double-barrelled shot-guns. Arriving at Waireka on the eve of the engagement he was killed in the first charge.

## HANDLEY

TITO TE HANATAUA, chief of the Tangahoe tribe, was hostile to the pakeha during the early part of the Hauhau war, but took the oath in 1866.

S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Cowan; Gudgeon.

HANDLEY, HENRY EDWARDS, (1836-92) was born at Grantham, Lincolnshire, his father being a partner in the banking house of Philip Handley, Peacocke and Handley. He held a commission in the 2nd Royal Dragoons, sent in the Crimea, and commanded the right troop in the charge of the heavy brigade at Balaclava, where he showed conspicuous courage and was wounded. He afterwards came to New Zealand; farmed for a few years at Oakura (Taranaki) and was field adjutant on Herrick's expedition to Waikaremoana (1869). He was for some time in the Legislative department and, having land in Taranaki, contested the Omata seat in the Provincial Council against W. Carrington (1872). He afterwards lived in Auckland. Handley was a prominent figure on the turf and afterwards for some years wrote sporting notes under the nom de plume 'Old Turfite.' He died on 24 Jun 1892.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi, p 285; Gudgeon; *N.Z. Herald*, 25 Jun 1892.

HANDLEY, JOHN (1811-67) was born in England, brought up to farming, and on coming to New Zealand in 1841 settled in the Wanganui district at Southern Grove, near Westmere. There he had a model farm which was much frequented by military officers and government officials. Handley was a justice of the peace, and in 1856 was elected to the Provincial Council, in which he represented Wanganui and Rangitikei until 1861, supporting Featherston's policy throughout. He was chairman of the town board (1862-64). He died on 3 Mar 1867 as the result of injuries received by his horse falling on him. His widow died on 8 Jun 1868.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; 'Voon.

HANNAH, MARJORY LYDIA (1891-1930) nee Nicholls, was born in Wellington, the youngest child of H. E. Nicholls. She was educated at Clyde Quay school, The Terrace school and Wellington Girls' College, and passed on to Victoria College. While there she took a prominent part in most of the College activities,

## HANSON

contributing to, and later on, editing *The Spike*, and distinguishing herself in the dramatic and debating clubs. She was the first woman to win the oratorical contests for the Plunket medal (1913). Eye-strain and nerve trouble caused her to leave Victoria College without taking her degree, and she commenced her travels in 1914, visiting Australia, South Africa, England, Ireland, France, Belgium and Switzerland. She returned to Wellington (1915) and for the next three years taught at Marsden School. In 1917 she published her first book of poems, *A VentU'le in Verse*, and in 1918 spent a year in Ceylon and India. In Feb 1920 she was married to John Hannah of Colombo, who died a few weeks later. Mrs Hannah then returned to New Zealand. Between intervals of teaching at Marsden School, Chilton House, Girls' College and Chilton St James, she visited many overseas countries. In 1922 she published her second book of poems, *Gathered Leaves*. She did notable work on the amateur stage in Wellington and was a foundation member of the National Repertory Theatre Society. She also did competent work in stage-production for the University Dramatic Club and other societies. She was a gifted dramatic reader. During the winter of 1930 she was largely occupied in lecturing on the drama in Wellington, the Hutt, Masterton, and Palmerston North for the W.E.A. Her final book of verse, entitled *Thirdly*, was published within a few days of her death (which occurred on 1 Oct 1930).

Marjory Nicholls, *op. cit.*; *Art in N.Z.*, Mar 1931; *The Dominion*, 23 Aug (p), 3 Oct 1930.

HANSEN, THOMAS (1785-1874) came to New Zealand in 1814 as chief officer of the brig *Governor Phillip*, of which his father was captain. Having married a daughter of Sergeant Tolles, of the New South Wales Regiment, he settled at Te Puna in 1815 and lived continuously in the vicinity until his death on 8 Mar 1874. His wife predeceased him by seven years.

Marsden, L. and J. and *Lieutenants*; *N.Z. Herald*, II, Apr 1874.

HANSON, SIR RICHARD DAVIES (1805-76) was born in London, educated at Melbourne, Cambridgeshire, and articled to a London solicitor. After being admitted an attorney (1828), he practised for a while and also did

## HANSON

journalistic work for the *Globe* and the *Morning Chronicle*. He became associated with Wakefield's South Australia scheme in 1830, and after it had received the sanction of Parliament he went to Canada as an assistant commissioner to inquire into lands and emigration, being associated there with Wakefield and Charles Buller. On returning to England, Hanson was private secretary to Lord Durham, and in 1840 he arrived in New Zealand in the *Cuba* (Jan 1840) as agent for the purchase of land for the New Zealand Company. In this quest he visited Kawhia, where his operations were halted by Captain Hobson's proclamation; and he later visited and purchased the Chatham islands, but the deed was repudiated by the British Government. He then settled in Wellington and was appointed, with Evans and Moreing, to lay before the Governor of New South Wales the grievances of the settlers. At later meetings he opposed the demand for Hobson's recall. In May 1841 he was gazetted a justice, and in Sep crown prosecutor. He failed to secure a seat at the election of aldermen in Wellington (Oct 1842). Hanson edited *The Colonist* until its demise (Aug 1843). In 1844 he was appointed commissioner of the court of requests. About two years later he went to live in Adelaide, where he soon took a leading position at the bar, and wrote for the *Register*. He was elected to the legislature, but his election being declared invalid, he was appointed advocate-general, and ex-officio member of the legislature (1851). Hanson in the next few years passed some important laws, including a district councils act (1852); the abolition of grand juries and reform of court procedure trusts and joint stock companies. He was Attorney-general in the first ministry under responsible government (1856-57), and shortly after its defeat formed a ministry himself which held office until 1860. He again made important amendments of the law, and after opposing the land registration bill he secured the services of Torrens as head of the office. He was a member of the Legislative Assembly from 1857 to 1861, when he was appointed Chief Justice. During a visit to England (1869) he was knighted. In 1872-73 he was administrator of the government, and in 1874 he was chosen as chancellor of the new University of Adelaide. Hanson died on 2 Mar 1876. He was the

## TE HAPUKU

author of several works on theology and religion, including *Law in Nature* (1865), *The Jesus of History* (1869), *Letters to and from Rome* (1869).

*N.Z. Journal*, 1841 (p. 100, purchase of Chatham Islands); C. H. Spence in *Melbourne Review*, 1876; C. P. Lucas, *Lord Durham's Report* . . . 1912; Mennell; Loyau; *Austral. Encycl.*; *Desiderata*, 1 Aug 1936 :- N.Z. Company reports; *N.Z. Colonist* (Wellington), 1842-43. Portraits: S. Australian Archives; *Illus. London News*, 31 Jul 1869.

TE HAPUKU (Te Ika Nui o te Moana) (1808-78), a chief of Ngati-Kahungunu, Ahuriri, was born about 1808. He married a daughter of Kaimokopuna, a Rangitane chief, who was captured at Te RuTU.

In the twenties and thirties he had many exciting experiences during raids of northern tribes on Hawkes Bay, especially at the siege of Te Pakake pa, on the sand spit at Napier, by Taupo, Waikato and Bay of Plenty tribes (1825). Some of the raiders on raupo rafts reached the channel side of the fort and the place was taken. Te Hapuku was amongst the prisoners, but he escaped and sought refuge at Mallia, where the Ngapuhi chief, Te Wera, offered protection to the tribes from the plains. There the Hawkes Bay tribes were again attacked (in 1828) for the last time. After repelling this invasion they were able to find their way back to their homes, the last to do so sailing from Mallia in 1837 in a Heet of 69 canoes. After desultory fighting with the natives in the Him Valley Hapuku in Sep 1840 made peace and visited Port Nicholson in a trading schooner.

Hapuku made much trouble by selling land to Europeans and many were killed in the fighting which took place between two sections of Ngati-Kahungunu. He and his people were driven away from the Heretaunga district to the north (about 1853) by Karaitiana, Tareha and Renata Kawepo, who later besieged him in his palisaded pa. Sir Donald McLean intervened to bring about a settlement. In 1858, being taunted with having sold the ancestral forests of Ngati-Kahungunu, Te Hapuku built a pa and for several months defied the chief rival, Te Moananui. Te Moananui defeated him at Pakiaka, and when it was obvious there would be a massacre the Governor ordered a force of the 65th Regiment to Napier. An armistice

## HAPURONA

was arranged and Hapuku marched out with honours and moved off to his lands at Poukawa (Feb 1858).

Te Hapuku, who was a magistrate as early as 1853, was in Waikato in the critical days of 1863 and strongly urged the pakeha not to fire first for fear of a general war. His own loyalty was strained by the government refusing to support him against Te Moananui. In Feb 1865 the emissaries of Pai Marire from Taranaki gathered at his place and he was believed to have encouraged them and to have made promises of help to Te Waru (q.v.). The determined hostility of the other Hawkes Bay chiefs prevented him from joining the Hauhau. In 1867 he opposed the disposal of confiscated lands in Hawkes Bay. In Dec 1868 he led a contingent of his own people against Te Kooti. Te Hapuku was a thickset savage of medium height, elaborately tattooed. He was a good specimen of the old order of Maori chief, and a firm believer in the dignity of labour, in which he co-operated with his people at reasonable tasks. He was generous, but punctilious about his dignity, and quick to resent a slight. Toiroa, a tohunga of considerable mana, once commanded the building of a house in the following words: •Build my house at Te Hauke., The name for it is the name of a hill in Here-taunga. When a mist settles on the top of this hill, it is a sign to the people that a storm is about to break. Those at sea and going to sea, let them beware!' In 1876 Te Hapuku built the house in response to the command of the prophet, and called it •Kahuranaki,' the name of a hill on the sea side of the river Tukituki. Sir George Grey reconciled Te Hapuku and Karaitiana a few weeks before Te Hapuku's death, which took place on 23 May 1878, at Te Hauke.

Cowan, *Sketches* (p); do. *Wars; Polyn. Journ.*, vol 38, p 171; Lambert; Cox; J. H. Grace (in. formation); appreciation in *Te Wananga, 1878*.

HAPURONA (otherwise IWMAIRE, or PUKE-RIMU, formerly known as Ngawakawawe) was a chief of Ngati-Awa and one of the most successful of the Maori generals against British troops. Not of high birth, he was the son of Pukewhao, a Taranaki chief, his mother being a Ngati-Awa woman of Pukerangiora. He escaped from that stronghold when it was captured.

## HAPURONA

Hapurona was a tall, rough, honest-looking man; with some oratorical powers, fiery and jealous. A skilful engineer with considerable military talent, he was the fighting leader of Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake (q.v.). Having appealed to the King (Tawhiao) for help, he took the field early in 1860 in defence of Waitara. He was driven out of Te Kohia on the disputed block (17 Mar 1860). Three months later, on 27 Jun, he commanded skirmishers of Ngati-Awa in their victory at Puketakauere, which raised Maori mana against both soldiers and naval forces. He had made preparations for resisting the troops at Mahoetahi, but on the arrival of Wetini Taiporutu with the Waikato contingent he took a subordinate position and was posted with 800 men to make a flank attack. Hapurona now had a contempt for the soldiers and signed a letter challenging General Pratt and threatening to occupy the Bell block. When Wetini's position was stormed Hapurona fired a volley and retired, leaving the Ngati-Haua to be destroyed. On 23 Jan 1861 he led one party in the assault at dawn on No. 3 redoubt. He commanded the long defence of Te Arei against the clever sapping operations of Pratt, but under heavy artillery fire surrendered on 19 Mar. On 8 Apr he accepted terms of peace. Wi Kingi was to retire with the King people to Waikato, and Ngawaka Patukakariki also signed the treaty providing for the investigation of Waitara block, the completion of the survey, the restoration of plunder to the settlers and the submission of the Ngati-Awa. Hapurona had kept British troops in the field for more than a year and inflicted on the province losses of over £200,000.

Hapurona received a salary of £100 a year as commandant of Matarikoriko blockhouse. In Aug 1863 the Maori King and chiefs were living with him at Te Arei and Pukerangiora and in Oct troops burned the whares at Te Arei. Later Hapurona became a Hauhau, taking the name Tuahuterangi. He continued to have a great influence over Rangitake, whom he brought into New Plymouth to meet McLean and be reconciled with the government (22 Feb 1872). He lived his later years at Te Arei blockhouse, where he died on 26 Feb 1874. He had one son named Horopapera.

Cowan (p); M. S. Grace (p); R. Carey, *Narrative of the late War in N.Z., 1863*.

## HARATUA

HARATUA, a Ngati-Kawa chief of Bay of Islands, had been a matua of the Europeans in the early days of the Colony, when his pa was at Mangakahia. During the troubles of 1844-46 he acted as Heke's general, and took a leading part in the destruction of the flagstaff at Kororareka. Heke rebuked him for looting. He was with Kawiti at Ruapekapeka, and was wounded at Ohaeawai. Haratua after wards lived for many years near Archdeacon Williams at Pakaraka. He was a candidate for baptism before 1851, and took the name Te Wiremu on his baptism a few years later. His son was one of the first adults baptised there. Haratua took command of his people in a tribal dispute with the yritaniwha hapu at Pakaraka in 1867.

Buick, *First War*; Carleton; Cowan.

HARDHAM, WILLIAM JAMES (1876-1928) was the son of George Hardham, Wellington, and was educated at Mount Cook school. He was captain of the Petone Rugby football club and played for many years in the Wellington provincial team. He was employed in the railway workshops at Petone until proceeding to the South African war, in which he served as a farrier-sergeant with the 4th and 9th New Zealand Contingents. He received the Queen's medal with five clasps, and the V.C. for rescuing a wounded trooper at Naauwport (28 Jan 1901). In the war of 1914-18 he served with the Wellington Mounted Rifles in Egypt, Gallipoli and Palestine. He died on 13 Apr 1928.

Studholme; Ranfurly; *Who's Who N.Z., 1924*.

HARDING, ISAAC (1815-97) was born at Wanstron, Somerset, England, three months after the death of his father. At two years he was adopted by a childless uncle and aunt, and eventually he was confirmed in the Anglican church. Shortly afterwards he joined the Wesleyan Methodist church and soon became a local preacher. At the age of 21 he entered the ministry and was ordained at Newcastle-on-Tyne (1840). During the dissensions in British Methodism (1849-53) he rendered yeoman service by his loyalty and eloquence and his writings.

In response to a call for volunteers for Australia Harding offered and sailed for Victoria in 1852. Landing at the height of the gold rush he engaged in strenuous labour, enduring

## HARDING

hardships, establishing schools and erecting churches. He was one of the originators and the first editor of the Victorian *Wesleyan Chronicle*. In 1858 he was transferred to New Zealand, his first sphere being Auckland. The discovery of gold in Otago led to Harding's transfer to Dunedin, where the Rev James Buller had arranged for the erection of a church for him on Bell Hill. Harding held his first services in the Athenaeum and then occupied a canvas tent at the corner of Stafford and Melville streets. He speedily took the whole of Otago for his circuit and during two years churches were erected at Tuapeka, Clutha, Tokomairiro, Waikouaiti, Oamaru and elsewhere. In the course of one journey he went to Gabriel's Gully, thence proceeding through Teviot to Dunstan, up the Kawarau to Arrow and Queenstown, thence to Inverairgill and Dunedin. In this journey he used four horses and made some very long daily journeys. He opened preaching services in 23 centres and had canvas and frame churches erected on the goldfields at Hogburn, Shotover, Alexandra, Clyde, Hyde and other places. A robust constitution, volcanic energies and an indomitable will gave him a rich endowment for pioneering work.

Harding was a man of unusual mental ability, a profound thinker and book lover. He was a contributor to leading magazines and reviews in England. His letters written from Auckland and Dunedin and published in the *London Times* over the signature 'Uncle John: did remarkable service to New Zealand and its intending colonists. In 1859 he published a lecture entitled *Young men for the Colonies*, and a controversial pamphlet addressed to Governor Gore Browne on correspondence between him and Bishop Pompallier. In 1860 he published a pamphlet addressed 'To the intelligent Roman Catholic laymen of the province of Auckland,' regarding the inspection of schools receiving government grants. After leaving Otago Harding served at Wellington (1864-66) and Wanganui (1867). In 1868 he was transferred to Queensland, where in 1872 he founded the Methodist book depot in Brisbane. He died on 17 Jul 1897. M.A.R.P.

HARDING, JOHN (1820-99) was born at Southampton, England, and brought up to the

## HARDING

trade of a turner. He came to New Zealand in the *Birman* (1842), and worked in Wellington at his trade for some years and later as an ironmonger. He was one of the founders of the order of Rechabites in New Zealand (1842), and with Francis Bradey organised the anniversary celebrations in 1843 and subsequent years. About 1850 Harding acquired land in Hawkes Bay and made his homestead at Mount Vernon, Waipukurau. About 1876 he established his Romney flock with sheep purchased from Alfred Ludlam (q.v.). Later he bred also Clydesdale horses. Harding served on several local bodies. He died on 25 Jun 1899.

Ward; Playne; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 26 Jun 1899.

HARDING, RECHAB (1844-97) was born in Wellington, the son of John Harding (q.v.), and educated at Toomath's school and the Wellington Commercial and Grammar School. He then went to Hawkes Bay, where he worked on his father's station, Mount Vernon. He represented Te Aute in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1875-76) and served also on the Hawkes Bay education board, the land board, the Napier harbour board, the Waipawa county council, the Waipukurau hospital board and the Napier High school governors. He died on 2 Jun 1897.

*Hawkes Bay Herald*, 3 Jun 1897.

HARDINGTON, HENRY (1823-87) was born in England and arrived in Auckland in the early forties. He first kept the Victoria hotel on the beach, and later the Exchange in the Crescent. In partnership with S. A. Wood, he managed a horse bazaar and auction mart at the Greyhound. Hardington had great influence with the natives, and was on terms of confidence with Tamati Ngapora and other Waikato chiefs living at Mangere. On the outbreak of the war (1860), he joined the Auckland Cavalry volunteers, in which he became captain (1863), and served throughout the Waikato war. Mter the war he controlled the Onehunga coaches and held mail-carrying contracts for some years. He took a great interest in the Auckland Racing Club, of which he was one of the promoters and acted as clerk of the course both at Epsom and at Ellerslie. He died on 31 Jul 1887.

## HARDY

Gudgeon (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Jul 1880, 2 Aug 1887.

HARDY, CHARLES ALBERT CREERY (1843-1922) was born in Ireland and educated under the Church Education society. Having gained some experience in a store, he came to New Zealand in 1863, spending the next four years in Dunedin. In 1868 he went to the West Coast, where he kept a store at Charleston for some years, and later at Hokitika. He moved in 1879 to Canterbury, opening a store at Rakaia.

Hardy was for many years a member of most of the local bodies in his district. He was chairman of the Rakaia school committee and of the North Canterbury education board. In 1899 he was elected M.H.R. for Selwyn, which he continued to represent till 1911, when he was defeated by W. J. Dickie. In 1913 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death (on 29 Aug 1922). He acted for some years as whip for the Reform party and was chairman of the joint house committee.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1922; *Parltry Record*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *The Press*, 30 Aug 1922. Portrait: Parliament Honse.

HARDY, JOHN (1821-82) was born at Uxbridge, Middlesex, educated there and in London, and qualified as a civil engineer. He married Helen Akerman. In 1855 he came to Otago in the *Dunedin* and settled at Tokomairiro, his farm being named Helensbrook after his wife.

Hardy took a prominent part in the politics of the district as a supporter of Macandrew. An advocate of a better roading policy, within a few weeks of his arrival in the province he approached the Provincial Council with a petition on the subject, and for some years he was commissioner of roads and deviations. He presided at meetings to consider district needs and to form the mutual improvement society and the agricultural society. As a farmer he showed a fine example of scientific methods and new ideas. He imported valuable stud horses, and his ploughing teams were prominent at matches for many years. In 1860 he organised the coal company, of which he was secretary and manager.

Hardy was elected to the Provincial Council

## HARE

in Jun 1861 and represented the district until 1864. He was for some time provincial secretary and treasurer under Richardson, and was chairman of the committee on roads and their deviations. His chief service to the district and to New Zealand was, however, the encouragement he gave to Gabriel Read (then in his employ) to persist in his search for gold in the Tuapeka district. Hardy and his sons accompanied Read on these expeditions, and as provincial secretary Hardy reported in the Council the outcome (28 Jun 1861). He advocated encouraging Victorian miners to come to Otago after the opening of the fields. Hardy was a prominent member of the Church of England and presented land for its endowment. He was defeated at the Council election in 1864 and three years later moved to Dunedin, where he practised as a surveyor and architect. He maintained his interest in communications and led a deputation to the Council to protest against the railway line as projected. He carried out many engineering contracts, including the ferry and accommodation house at the Clutha; and acted as clerk and engineer to several road boards.

Mter moving to Oamaru Hardy surveyed much of the country lands for the provincial government and made many bridges. He was engineer in charge of railway construction on the Moeraki-Waitaki section. He laid before the Oamaru borough council in 1875 a scheme for lighting the borough with gas. He was for some years a member of the borough council (1876 and 1881-82), founded the permanent building society and was a vestryman and lay reader of the Church of England.

Hardy was a fine cricketer and a supporter of all musical societies. He contributed a good deal to the press, writing a graceful style of prose and some verse of passing quality. He died on 22 Sep 1882.

*Otago P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Diary Of Gabriel Read in Public Library, Dunedin*; Pyke; Hocken, *Otago*; *Bruce Herald*, 1864-67; *Otago Witness* from 1855; *North Otago Times*, 23 Sep 1882.

HARE, FRANCIS AUGUSTUS (1845-1912) was born in Germany and educated at St Columba's College, Dublin, and Emmanuel College, Cambridge, where he graduated (B.A., 1868; M.A., 1873). He was ordained in Ely Cathedral and proceeded to Perth, West Aus-

## HARINGTON

tralia, as headmaster of the collegiate school. In 1872 he came to New Zealand; in 1873 was private secretary to Sir James Fergusson, and on the conclusion of that appointment was temporarily engaged in the Ricearton parish. In 1877 he was appointed divinity and classics assistant at Christ's College, of which he became headmaster in 1889. He resigned in 1893, but remained on the staff until his death (on 26 Jul 1912). Hare was a canon of Christchurch Cathedral.

*NZ. Gaz.*, 1873; *Christ's Coll. List* (p); *The Press*, 27 Jul 1912.

HARGREAVES, EDWARD ALLEN (1826-80) was born in England. Coming to Canterbury in the early fifties, he was in business as a merchant in Lyttelton till 1870 when, having suffered considerable loss in the fire, he retired. He represented Lyttelton in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1861-62 and 1865-69), and in Parliament (1866-67). On being elected to Parliament he resigned the chairmanship of the Lyttelton municipal council, which he had held since its inauguration. Hargreaves afterwards lived at Timaru, having an interest in the Richmond station. He died on 9 Mar 1880.

*NZP.D.*, 1866-67; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Timaru Herald*, 10 Mar 1880.

HARGREAVES, JOSEPH (1821-80) was born in Liverpool. While a young man he came to Auckland and purchased a property at Tamaki, which he sold a few years later and bought from the natives a larger estate near Kaipara. He was an ardent sportsman and a successful breeder of horses. Hargreaves was elected in 1860 to represent the Suburbs of Auckland in Parliament, but owing to repeated prorogations and a visit to the Old Country, he resigned (24 Jul) without having taken his seat. He died on 10 Apr 1880.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, II Apr 1880.

HARINGTON, THOMAS CUDBERT (1799-1863) was born in India, his father, John Herbert Harington, being a member of the Supreme Council of Bengal. Having sold property in India for £6600, he arrived in New South Wales in 1820 and was at first allowed to occupy 6,600 acres in consideration of the position of capital. In 1827 he became a civil servant, and in 1829 joined the Colonial Secre-

## HARKNESS

tary's office. In 1834, when he was assistant colonial secretary, he helped Surgeon W. B. Marshall to get infant lessons translated into Maori for use in New Zealand. Two years later he was petitioning for a permanent appointment in the service. This being declined, he seems to have gone to England (1837) and become secretary of the New Zealand Company. His system of keeping office records was very efficient. In 1850 Harington made a gift of £300 to the endowment of Trinity College, Porirua (as soon as the name was announced). He died on 1 Feb 1863.

*Hist. Rec. Aust.*, xviii, 447; *N.Z.C., pass.*; *Wellington Independent*, 9 May 1863.

**HARKNESS, JOHN** (1853-1938) was born in Derbyshire, educated at the Derby school and graduated from Corpus Christi College, Oxford, proceeding M.A. A strong classical scholar, he was appointed to the staff of the Manchester Grammar School. In 1883 he was chosen as the first rector of the Waitaki Boys' High School, of which he was in control for fourteen years. Harkness was a man of deep culture and a generous spirit. *Mter* resigning from Waitaki, he was for seven years in charge of a private school in Christchurch and later on the staff of the Boys' High School. Returning to England about 1911, he resided for the rest of his life at Cheltenham. Harkness married (1889) Miss Satchell, one time matron at the Waitaki High School. He died on 28 Jul 1938.

K. C. McDonald (p); *Oamaru Mail*, 6, 10 Oct 1938.

**HARKNESS, JOSEPH GEORGE** (1851-1930) was born in Nelson, the son of William Dixon Harkness, of Scotland, who represented Waimea East in the Provincial Council (1863-65). Educated at Nelson College (1867-68), he became a school teacher and then a farmer.

Elected to Parliament as a supporter of the Atkinson Government, Harkness represented Nelson City (1889-93). He was a member of the Waimea county council (for eight years), of the school committee aRd of the Nelson education board, and chairman of the Richmond town board. In 1893 he took up land at Tariki, Taranaki. He was the chief promoter (in 1896) of the Midhirst Dairy Co., of which he was secretary and general manager till 1905,

## HARMAN

when he moved to Wellington. Harkness contested the Egmont seat in Parliament in 1897. In Wellington he became president of the chamber of commerce (1907-08), and president (and afterwards secretary) of the National Dairy Association, from which he retired in 1921. He was a member of the harbour board from 1908 and chairman (1919-22). In 1907 he was elected mayor of Onslow. He afterwards lived at Te Horo, where he was chairman of the dairy company, and he was one of the founders of the Wellington Coöperative Freezing Co. Harkness married a daughter of George MacRae. He died on 9 Jan 1930.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Philpott (p); *The Dominion*, 10 Jan 1930. Portrait: Parliament House.

**HARMAN, RICHARD JAMES STRACHAN** (1826-1902) was born at Dublin and educated at Rugby in the days of Dr Arnold. Amongst his school-fellows were Freeman, the historian, Sir Richard Temple and Dr Liddell. He learned to play good cricket, and figured in the earliest games in Canterbury a few years later. Harman qualified as a civil engineer, serving his articles with George and John Rennie in London, and soon after sailed with the first expedition for Canterbury in the *Sir George Seymour*. When the settlers organised the Society of Land Purchasers, he was elected to the council, and as executive officer he had to present to the agent of the Canterbury Association the recommendations of the Society with regard to roads and other public works.

In 1851 Harman started in business as a land and estate agent and agent for a number of purchasers who had not come out. In 1862 he was joined by E. C. J. Stevens (q.v.). Early in 1853, in partnership with Cyrus Davie, one of the early surveyors, he took up a run between the Selwyn river and Lake Ellesmere. They soon made several thousand acres freehold, and held it until the end of the seventies. In 1854 Harman, Bray, Cridland, Jollie and Dobson were appointed a commission to report on the best means of communication between Christchurch and its port. They recommended an open road by way of Sumner, with a tunnel through Evans pass. Harman assisted Bray in the survey for the tunnel, and then went to England. While there he acted as emigration agent, and sent out many people to the pro-

## HARMAN

vince. In 1855 he married Emma, daughter of Dr Thomas de Renzy, of county Wicklow. They came out in 1856 in the *Egmont*.

In 1857 Harman entered the Provincial Council for Heathcote, which he represented until 1860. He was a member of the executive (1856-58). The Council in 1858 appointed him to a commission to decide upon the best lines for road and railway communications. In 1859 he led the executive. In 1860 he was elected to represent Akaroa in the Council and he continued as its member until 1862. He was a member of the waste lands board, and he also did much surveying for the provincial government on Banks Peninsula. For the first month he was required to attend the land board twice a week. This entailed leaving camp at Duvauchelles at midnight, walking through the bush to Purau, boating to Lyttelton and thence walking to Christchurch. Eight times in the month Harman covered this journey. In 1865 he joined the provincial expedition to discover a route across the mountains to the West Coast, where a new mining population was settling. Crossing the Canterbury plains on foot, and swimming the Rakaia, Ashburton, and Rangitata rivers, they discovered Browning's Pass.

In 1867 Harman was nominated for Mandeville in the Provincial Council, but he retired in favour of a local man. In 1867 he was a member of the Financial Reform association, formed to bring economy into the affairs of the province. In 1871 he acted as deputy-superintendent. Harman was elected (1869) a member of the South Waimakariri board of conservators, and was chairman throughout. He was for long on the domain board (chairman 1874-81), and did much towards beautifying the city, notably in planting Rolleston avenue and the avenues surrounding Hagley Park, and in presenting a garden of rhododendrons (opposite St Michael's Church). He was for twenty-five years a churchwarden and for thirty-seven years a church officer of St Michael's; a member of the diocesan synod from its formation, and one of the first members of the "cathedral chapter; and a governor of Christ's College. As a volunteer Harman was elected a lieutenant when No. 2 Company was formed (1864). He succeeded Col. Packe as captain, and held that rank until the corps was disbanded. In 1885 he coöperated with de Renzie

## HARPER

Brett in forming the honorary reserve corps, in which he became a captain and helped to make a body of fine marksmen. He took part in the formation of the Canterbury Rifle Association, and represented it for many years on the New Zealand Association. He was one of the leading cricketers in the province, and for many years a supporter of the United Club, of which he was president. He was president of the Canterbury Rowing Club from its foundation, and of the Christchurch Football Club. Harman died on 26 Nov 1902.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Chris's Coll. List*; *The Press*, 27 Nov, 1 Dec 1902; 6 Sep 1930 (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 28 Nov 1962.

**HARPER, CHARLES JOHN** (1838-1920), a son of Bishop Harper, was born at Eton, England, and educated at RossaU and Cirencester Agricultural College. He came to New Zealand in the *Duke of Portland* (1855), and took up the Malvern Hills and Lake Coleridge runs. Later he owned properties at Brackenfield (Amberley), and Hackthorne (Ashburton). He was a member of the Rakaia road board and of the Provincial Council (in which he represented Sefton 1873-75). In 1900 he contested the Ashburton parliamentary seat against McLachlan. Harper was a member of the Upper Ashburton road board (chairman 1898 and 1901), and of the Ashburton county council (chairman from 1899), and chairman of the Rangitata road board. He married (1868) Sarah, daughter of Walter Cracroft. He died on 6 Sep 1920.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; *Acland*; *Cycl. N.z.*, iii (p).

**HARPER, SIR GEORGE** (1843-1937) was born at Stratfield Mortimer, England, the son of Bishop Harper (1804-93), and educated at Radley and Eton Colleges. He came to New Zealand with his parents in 1858, and returning to England in 1866 (after three years at Christ's College and four years on stations at Malvern and Avoca) he was called at the Inner Temple in 1869. He joined the Northern Circuit, held a few briefs at Manchester and returned to New Zealand in 1870 and commenced to practise. In 1880 he became a partner in Hanmer and Harper. He had a sound knowledge of local body law and also appeared in several celebrated cases, including those of the 'severed hand' and the yacht *Ariadne*. He was presi-

dent of the Canterbury Law Society (1910-11), of the Christchurch Club, captain of the Christ's College rifle volunteers and founder of the Citizens' Defence Corps (1914-18); a governor of Christ's College from 1900, and later subwarden, a member of the McLean Institute, and chairman of the Christchurch domains board. He received the O.B.E. in 1918 and was knighted a few weeks before his death (on 12 Mar 1937). Harper married (1871) Agnes, daughter of Judge Loughnan. In 1864 he explored the passes to find a route for sheep to Westland and drove 500 from Lake Coleridge to Hokitika by way of Browning's Pass and the Styx Saddle.

*Christ's Coll. List* (p); *N.Z. Law Jour.*, 16 Mar 1937 (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; J. D. Pascoe (information); *The Press and Stm'-Sun*, 12, 13 Mar 1937.

HARPER, GEORGE SAWDEN (1840-1911) was born at Burton-Fleming, near Bridlington, Yorkshire. He became a pupil teacher in the Wesleyan day school at Nafferton, Yorkshire, and began to preach at sixteen years of age. His gifts led to his acceptance for the ministry by the British Wesleyan conference, and his theological training was received under the direction of Dr Kessen. He entered the ministry in 1864 and in 1865 arrived in New Zealand, beginning work in Canterbury under the direction of the Rev James Buller.

On the discovery of gold on the West Coast Buller crossed the Southern Alps for Hokitika, directing Harper to go by sea. Harper was the first Protestant minister to work on the West Coast. His hearty manner, ready wit, tireless energy and appreciation of the digger's lot won their confidence and gave him great influence. He was later sent to organise Methodist work on the Thames goldfields and to preach in the open air at centres of population. He married (1868) Catherine Anne Ingamells. Harper held pastorates at Wellington, Blenheim and Nelson. The excitement and strain of his pioneering work resulted in nervous prostration, and in 1878 he was superannuated. He settled at Sanson and was for some time schoolmaster at Carnarvon, and worked for his church in the Manawatu district.

Harper contributed to the *New Zealand Wesleyan* a series of articles entitled 'The Gospel Among the Maoris' (1872-74) and he

left several manuscripts which are still unpublished. Two of these deal with work on the West Coast and Thames goldfields. He died on 24 Sep 1911. M.A.R.P.

HARPER, HENRY JOHN CHITTY (1804-93), the first actual Bishop of Christchurch, was born at Gosport, Hampshire. His father, Tristram Harper, was a physician, and belonged to a Worcestershire family. Educated in the first place at Hyde Abbey school, Winchester, Harper went on to Queen's College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A., in 1826, and M.A. in 1834.

After his first degree Harper went as 'conduct,' or chaplain, to Eton College (where his coadjutor was Selwyn). At Eton he evinced characteristics which pointed him out as a man for high preferment. He was the leading spirit in many reforms at the college, and when he left he received testimonials from the authorities, and from the people of the parish of Eton, which showed the high esteem in which he was held. He was at Eton College from 1831 to 1836, and curate in charge of the parish till 1840. (There was no vicar at the time, the College holding the vicariate). Meanwhile Harper was ordained deacon (1831), and priest (1832). In 1840 Eton College presented him with the living of Stratfield-Mortimer, in Berkshire, where he remained until he was designated Bishop of Christchurch. While curate at Eton College he took private pupils. It was on Selwyn's advice that he read for holy orders, and years later Selwyn strongly recommended Harper as the man for the bishopric of Christchurch. Accordingly a meeting of churchmen, held in Lyttelton in 1855, decided to petition the Queen asking that Harper should be appointed. The Royal letters patent were duly issued, and on 10 Aug 1856 he was consecrated by Archbishop Sumner in the chapel at Lambeth Palace. At the same time he became a doctor of divinity.

With his wife and family Harper sailed in the ship *Egmont*, which on 23 Dec 1856 arrived in Lyttelton. The scene at the meeting of Selwyn and Harper is depicted in one of the sculptured panels of the pulpit in Christchurch Cathedral. On Christmas Day Harper was enthroned in the Church of St Michael and All Angels, which became the pro-cathedral

of the diocese. By letters patent of the same date as Harper's, Selwyn was appointed Metropolitan of New Zealand: and before he left Christchurch he discussed with the new bishop his project of a constitution for the Church in New Zealand. Harper lived first in a house in Cambridge terrace (afterwards occupied by Dr Turnbull). On 24 Jan 1857 he consecrated the Church of the Holy Trinity at Avonside. Six months later he laid the foundation stone of Christ's College, of which he was first warden (Selwyn holding the office for only a few months). In the organisation of his vast diocese he travelled long journeys on horseback between the Hurunui on the north and Stewart Island. Almost every year he visited the farthest settlements of Otago and Southland. Like Selwyn, he spent many nights in the open, sometimes with only a saddle for pillow.

In 1866 the separation of Otago as an independent bishopric was initiated, and Harper was called upon to act as mediator and peacemaker when the opinions held by the bishop-designate (Jenner) caused his appointment to be challenged. Harper presided at several meetings in Dunedin, and tactfully and sympathetically endeavoured to induce the people of Otago to accept their bishop. When this was found impossible, he had to admit that the appointment was not valid until it was confirmed by the general synod of New Zealand. The controversy was still raging when Jenner reached New Zealand (Jan 1869). Harper convened the synod to meet in Dunedin, and presided throughout five or six days of anxious and difficult debate. One night he occupied the chair from 11 p.m. to 6 a.m. The synod declined by a decided majority to accept the bishop, and he returned to England. In due time Nevill arrived, and he was consecrated by Harper (1871). There were several other controversies which disturbed the even tenor of Harper's episcopate, notably the charge of heterodoxy against the Rev H. E. Carlyon, and the long discussion (1862-65) on the demand of the Christchurch synod to be allowed full control of its own church property.

Harper's opening addresses at the synods were marked by practical common-sense. In 1867 and 1878 he attended the Lambeth conferences. With the resignation of Selwyn, he was elected to the primacy of New Zealand,

but he declined to enter upon it until he was informed by Selwyn that he had laid down the office of Metropolitan <sup>au</sup> 1869). Harper's first general synod was at Dunedin. Several new bishops he consecrated personally, including 1- R. Selwyn (son of the bishop) as bishop of Melanesia (1877). In the same year at Napier he consecrated E. C. Stuart as bishop of Waiapu: 'The twenty-fifth year of his episcopate was marked (on 1 Nov 1881) by the consecration for public worship of the fine Christchurch Cathedral. In 1887 Harper announced his intention of laying down his episcopate at the earliest convenient moment, and on 26 Sep 1889 the diocesan synod was informed that his resignation had been accepted. On the following day Archdeacon Julius, of Ballarat, was elected to the see, and on 13 May 1890 Bishop Harper consecrated him. Meanwhile Hadfield was elected primate.

Harper was a member of the first N.Z. University senate, and had some influence in the formation of its policy. He married in 1829, Emily, daughter of Charles Wooldridge, registrar of the diocese of Winchester. She died on 10 Jun 1888. Harper died on 28 Dec 1893. (See SIR GEORGE HARPER, 1- B. ACLAND, C. R. BLAKISTON and C. G. TRIPP.)

*Cycl. N.z.*, iii (p); Cox; Purchas (p); Wigram; Beaglehole; *Cant. ON.*; *The Press*, 29 Dec 1893, 7 Jun 1930 (p).

HARPER, WALTER (1848-1930), a son of Bishop Harper, was educated at Christ's College, and at Trinity College, Oxford, was ordained in 1873 and was successively vicar of Ellesmere (1876) and of St Michael's, Christchurch (1882); principal of the upper department of Christ's College (1893-1906); dean of Christchurch (1901) and a governor of Canterbury College. He died on 6 Jan 1930.

*Christ's Coll. List.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924.

HARRIS, BENJAMIN (1836-1928) was born at Lisburn, county Antrim, Ireland, his parents being of Irish and French stock. His father, George Harris (1804-80), was a sergeant in the 65th Regiment. Harris accompanied his parents to Canada, but returned to England in 1846 and in the following year sailed for Wellington. In 1851 his father took up a farm at east Tamaki, and in 1860 Harris himself took up land at Pukekohe. Native unrest compelled

## HARRIS

him to leave, and he joined the Otahuhu Cavalry under Maj. Nixon. In 1862 he made another attempt to cultivate the farm, but in 1863 war broke out. Harris acted as guide to the 60th Regiment into Tuakau, and then rejoined his own corps with the rank of lieutenant (1863) and received his baptism of fire at Paterangi. After the war he returned to his farm to find the buildings burned down, and he took charge of immigrants just arrived at Pokeno, Tuakau and Pukekohe (1866). He was elected captain of the Tuakau and Pukekohe Rifles at the same time (1869), and afterwards major (1878). In 1875 he was commanding the South Franklin Rifles, and in 1885 he raised the first mounted rifle corps in Auckland province.

In 1862 Harris was elected a trustee of the Pukekohe highway district. He represented Ramarama in the Provincial Council (1874-75). In 1879 he was elected M.H.R. for Franklin, in 1882 for Franklin North (defeating W. F. Buckland) and in 1893-96 he represented Franklin again (defeating W. F. Massey). In his first term in Parliament he acted as whip for the Opposition party. In 1896 Harris lost his seat to Massey. He was called to the Legislative Council in 1897, and was a member till 1923 (when he retired). He was a member of the Auckland land board (from 1892), the Franklin county council from 1876 (some years chairman) and the Harrisville school committee (for 18 years). Harris died on 12 Feb 1928.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z.P.D.*, 3 Jul 1928; Cowan, i; Russell (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Feb 1928, 12 Jan 1933. Portrait: Parliament House.

HARRIS, JOHN CHANTREY (1830-95) was born at Bath, England, his father being a sculptor and friend of Sir Francis Chantrey. At the age of thirteen he apprenticed himself on a West India trading ship. In 1851, when he had been four years qualified, his ship was wrecked at Cape of Good Hope and he was stranded. Early in 1852 the *Gwalior* put in in distress. Harris shipped as first mate, and soon afterwards put the captain under arrest for drunkenness and brought the vessel to Auckland. He then had command of the *Governor Wynyard*, the first steamer built in New Zealand, took her across to Melbourne and ran

## HARRIS

her for a few months on the Yarra. Leaving this to go to the Forest Creek diggings, he had the usual vicissitudes there and finally settled down to journalism. For many years he was mining reporter at Thames for the *Southern Cross*. Then he joined the *Otago Daily Times* as representative at Port Chalmers (1873). In 1878 he was commissioned by the Union Steam Ship Co. to describe the hot lakes of the North Island for a guidebook. He spent a year or two with the *Southland Times* and in 1880 became proprietor and publisher of the *New Zealand Times* and the *New Zealand Mail* (Wellington). This connection lasted till 1890, when Captain Baldwin bought the paper. Harris invested disastrously in silver mines at Puhipuhi, and with his remaining capital bought the *Bruce Herald* (Milton). He died on 12 Feb 1895.

Harris was a free-thinker and lectured on that subject in Wellington (1884). His character was marked by honesty, humanity and straightforwardness.

Brett, *White Wings*, ii; Will Lawson, *Steam in the South Pacific* (1909); J. T. M. Hornsby in *Southland Times*, 12 Nov 1912; *N.Z. Herald*, 22 Oct 1873; *Otago Daily Times*, 14 Feb 1895.

HARRIS, JOHN HYDE (1825-86) was born at Deddington, Oxfordshire, educated there and received his training in law. He practised a little before coming to New Zealand.

Arriving in Dunedin by the *Poictiel-s* (Sep 1850), he at once commenced to practise, his office being in Stafford street. Later he joined John Gillies, whose son, Thomas Bannatyne, was afterwards a partner in the firm. Harris took an immediate interest in the affairs of the settlement, and was soon recognised as one of the 'Little Enemy,' Episcopalians for the most part, who found themselves banded together against some of the cardinal tenets of the old identities. Harris signed his name to the petition against class settlement which was sent to the Government for consideration. He admitted later that he had not had time properly to study the question, and retracted his adhesion to the offending document. Harris became popular in the province, and was clearly marked out for public life. He took a leading part in the protest to Wellington against the transference to the general Government of so-called 'surplus revenue' raised in Otago which

## HARRIS

was obviously required in the province. He opposed the nominated Legislative Council and co-operated as a member of the Otago Settlers' Association in the demand for representative government; drew up the petition to this end, and when the object was in sight supervised the preparation of the roll of electors. In doing so he resisted hotly the attempt to enrol Maori voters, on the ground that they did not possess the separate qualification that was necessary under the law.

Harris's plans were at first not very definite. As a leading citizen he took his part in the foundation of the Mechanics' Institute; he helped to promote the Otago Banking Co., and was an interim director. He drafted the petition for a charter, which was refused by the Government. He was a founder of the *Otago Witness* when a number of the leading men of the settlement decided to provide a newspaper in place of the defunct *Otago News*. When gold was discovered in Victoria he was tempted to leave, but eventually decided to stay in Otago. He passed the examinations required by the supreme court and, after going to Wellington to be admitted, he entered into partnership with Gillies.

When the elections were held towards the end of 1853 for the first Provincial Council, Harris was elected at the head of the poll for the City of Dunedin. He held strong views, and his determined attitude on several political questions brought him to grips with Cargill, his austere father-in-law. He remained a member of the Council until 1858, and during the last few months was also a member of the executive. He had meanwhile been elected a member of the first town board and of the first education committee (1856). In the following year Gillies was appointed a magistrate and Harris took his son, Thomas Bannatyne, into the practice. In 1858-64 Harris was a member of the Legislative Council. In 1860 he was appointed a district judge, but in 1862 the office was abolished.

Richardson in 1861 appointed Harris to be his deputy, and at the next superintendency election (1863) Harris defeated Richardson by 162 votes. As Superintendent he had many important public works to carry through, and severe economic trouble to face due to the inflation following the influx of men into the

## HARRIS

province. His task was not made easier by the unfriendly attitude of his Council, and he resigned his office in Jun 1865, long before the expiry of the term for which he had been elected. The dissolution of the town board was one of the unpleasant duties which fell to his lot, but the city later attained to the dignity of a municipal corporation, and in 1867 Harris had the honour of being elected mayor. That post also he resigned before the end of his term. He was president of the Dunedin exhibition in 1865. In 1867 Harris was called again to the Legislative Council, in which he sat for about a year. He was Attorney-general in the Stafford ministry.

Harris was at times a considerable owner of landed property in Otago. He lived for many years at the Grange and had rural runs at Waihola, Otokia, Lee Stream, and West Taieri. He opened for sale the first private township in Otago, at Clarendon. Harris had a lively passion for education, and he was a member of the council of Otago University from 1869 until his death. He was a prominent freemason under the English constitution, and assisted at the formation of several lodges in Otago. He was installed provincial grand master in 1864 and held that office until 1880. His death occurred on 24 Jul 1886. He married in 1851 Annie Cunningham (1830-81), second daughter of W. W. Cargill.

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken; McIndoe; *Otago Witness*, 3 Jul 1886; *Otago Daily Times*, 25 Jul 1886, 21 Mar 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

HARRIS, JOHN WILLIAMS (1808-72) was born in Cornwall. Going to sea with his uncle in a China tea clipper (in which he learned a good deal about navigation), he deserted his ship and found his way to Australia, where he obtained employment with J. Barrow Montefiore and Co., Sydney. In 1830 the firm sent him to New Zealand as agent for the purchase of flax and other produce, and he eventually settled at Turanga under the protection of the chief Turangi and married a Maori woman. He established the first shore whaling station on the East Coast and was the first European to settle permanently in the Poverty Bay district. Harris had considerable success as a storekeeper and sheepfarmer, but fell upon evil days in his later years and died tragically in Auckland

## HARRIS

on 4 Feb 1872. While on a visit to Sydney in 1837 Harris left with a relative the moa bones which were eventually laid before Professor Owen.

Buick, *Discovery of Dinornis* (p); W. L. Williams; *Gisborne Times*, 30 Oct 1926; *N.Z. Herald*, 6 Feb 1872.

HARRIS, WILLIAM CHAMBERS (1842-85) was born in Hull, his father being registrar in bankruptcy. Educated at Bradfield College, Berkshire, he proceeded to Brasenose College, Oxford, where he graduated (B.A. 1862; M.A. 1867). He was for a year (1864-65) assistant master at St Peter's College, Radley, and was then appointed headmaster of Christ's College, Christchurch, assuming the position in 1866. Harris was a devoted teacher, an energetic worker and no mean athlete, and under him the school made rapid progress. He undertook the work of the chapel in addition to his headmastership, and wrote his sermons every Sunday. His health breaking down, he resigned and became vice-principal and lecturer at Lichfield Theological College (under Selwyn). He was headmaster of Queen Elizabeth's Grammar School at Wimborne, Dorsetshire (1874-77) and vicar of Marchwood, Southampton (1877-79). In the latter year he was appointed organising chaplain to the diocese of Christchurch and inspector of the Church of England schools. In 1882 he became archdeacon of Akaroa, and the following year had again to retire owing to failing health. He died on 6 Jun 1885.

*Christ's Coll. Sch. List* (p); Jacobs; *The Press* and *Lyttelton Times*, 17 Jun 1885.

HARRISON, HENRY SHAFTO (1810-92) was born in Wakefield, Yorkshire, the son of a clergyman. He studied at Clare College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. Having married (1831) Henrietta Paterson (Yorkshire), he lived for some years at Warrengate House, Wakefield. He sailed for New Zealand in 1839 in the *Bolton*.

Arriving early in 1840 they shortly afterwards settled at St John's Hill, Wanganui, where they lived until the trouble of 1847. On this occasion Harrison served as captain, and he was afterwards for many years an officer of militia. Early in 1844 Harrison made an exploration down the Manawatu river, and later in the year he travelled overland with Captain Thomas to

## HART

Hawkes Bay. In 1851 he was appointed clerk to the Legislative Council. His wife having died (1853), he married (1855) a daughter of Dr Fletcher (Norfolk). On the new constitution being promulgated Harrison was elected to the Provincial Council for Wanganui and Rangitikei (1853), but (being appointed clerk) he resigned his seat. He was again elected in 1861, and resigned his seat two years later on accepting the post of provincial auditor. From 1861-70 he represented Wanganui in Parliament. He was one of the founders of the Wanganui Acclimatisation society and president for some years of the Wanganui Jockey club. He bred and raced many fine horses, and introduced racing in the district. Harrison died on 3 Jul 1892.

Family information; *Wellington P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *N.Z. Gaz.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Wakelin; Ward; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 13 Oct 1934; *Wanganui Herald*, 4 Jul 1892; *Wanganui Chronicle*, 4 Jul 1892.

HARRISON, WILLIAM HENRY (1831-79) was born at Leeds, Yorkshire. Coming to Auckland in 1860, he was in business for some time. In 1861 he went to Otago, and was a member of Vogel's first staff on the *Otago Daily Times*. He was the first editor of the *Grey River Argus* (1865), and in 1871 became editor of the *Wellington Independent*, from which he returned a year later to the *Argus*. He was a fine writer and a fluent speaker. Harrison represented Westland Boroughs in Parliament (1868-70), and Grey Valley (1871-75), but was rejected by his constituents for advocating the use of prison labour to construct a harbour at Port Elizabeth and the establishment of a central prison there. He turned the first sod of the Brunnerton railway (1873). He was a member of the first Westland county council and the Grey county council. Harrison died on 30 May 1879.

*Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Paul; Harrop, *Westland*; *Grey River Argus*, 9 Jun 1879.

HART, GEORGE (1820-95) was born at Winchmore hill, London, and educated there. He came to New Zealand with his brother, Robert Hart (q.v.) in the *Mary* (1843), and settled in Wellington. In 1848 he paid a visit to England and, returning in the *Phoebe Dunbar*, he settled in Canterbury, where he took up the

## HART

Winchmore run (1853). Then he returned to Wellington and was elected to the first Provincial Council for Hutt (1853), which he represented to 1861. From 1859-61 he was speaker. In 1859 he married Miss Kenison James (Sydney). Shortly after this he left Wellington to take up his residence in Canterbury. In 1866 he took over also the Fernside and Birch Hill properties. The former he sold in 1874 (with 40,000 sheep). In 1867-68 Hart was a member of the Canterbury provincial executive. He was elected to represent Coleridge in Parliament (1879), but at the general election a few months later was defeated by E. G. Wright. Hart died on 19 Aug 1895. (See R. PARK.)

*Wellington and Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Parltry Record*; Acland; *Lyttelton Times*, 21 Aug 1895.

HART, ROBERT (1814-94) was born in London. After his primary education, he commenced to attend lectures at University College in 1830, one of his lecturers being Dr Dionysius Lardner, who gave experiments with electric sparks. Hart was in Paris during the revolt of 1830. He was articled in 1831 to W. R. King, Serjeant's Inn, and attended law classes at University College.

In Aug 1843 Hart arrived in New Zealand and commenced forthwith to practise in partnership with A. T. Holroyd, who had come in the same ship (the *Mary*). He was later associated with R. D. Hanson (q.v.). In 1859 he paid a visit to England, and on his return was appointed district judge for Wellington district. This post he resigned in 1861 and returned to practice. In 1866 he took in as partner Patrick Buckley (q.v.) and they practised together till 1878, when Hart retired from the bar.

Meanwhile he had played his part in parliamentary life, in which he held a position of considerable influence. Elected in 1853 to represent the City of Wellington, he acted as law adviser to the Government during the absence of the Attorney-general (Swainson). At that time he was offered a seat on the Supreme Court bench, but declined. Hart was the only representative of Wellington province at the parliamentary session of 1855. At the elections later in the year, refusing to accede to the stipulations of the Featherston party, he stood

## HARTLEY

as an independent and was defeated. As crown prosecutor he appeared for the crown in the trial of the Maungatapu murderers. In 1867 he married Catherine (d. 29 Jun 1897), sister of Donald McLean.

In 1872 Hart was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (16 Sep 1894). Though he did not practise after 1878, Hart's advice was always valued as that of a sound, conscientious lawyer of unquestioned integrity. He was a notary public and revising barrister. At the time of his death he was the only member of the New Zealand Parliament who was in the first assembly in 1854. He rose from his sickbed to register his last vote (in favour of female suffrage).

Hart's interest in physics, aroused during his study at University College, was continued throughout his life. He read a paper on terrestrial magnetism before the Wellington Philosophical Society in 1892. Hart was an early freemason. (See G. HART and R. PARK.)

*N.Z.P.D.*, 17 Sep 1894; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *Trs. N.Z. Inst.*, 1890; Ward; *N.Z. Spectator*, 27 Oct, 10 Nov 1885; *N.Z. Times*, 17, 18 Sep 1894. Portrait: Parliament House.

HARTLEY, HORATIO (?-1903), an American by birth, was attracted to New Zealand from California in 1861 and, in company with an Irish-American, Christopher Reilly, prospected for gold. They first tried the Lindis, Otago. Early in 1862, working in the bed of the Molyneux river about 15 miles below the junction of the Manuherikia, they found signs of gold, but made no report. Having obtained stores, they returned and, taking the western bank, worked back to the junction of the Kawarau, a distance of 13 miles. There they obtained good results. After returning to Waikouaiti for provisions, outfit and packhorses, they followed up the eastern bank, examining especially the rocky bars. In the hard winter of 1862, with consequent low water in the river, they obtained 87 lbs weight of gold. One day, while they were washing good dust, a Victorian miner visited them but, not noticing their result, moved on.

In Aug they took their gold to Dunedin, disclosed the field to the authorities and were awarded £2,000. Hartley led the warden (Kedell) to the field, which was proclaimed on 23

## HARVEY

Sep 1862. Within three months 16,000 oz was taken out, 6031 oz being brought down by escort on 3 Oct. Hartley returned shortly afterwards to California, taking his fortune with him. He died in Jan 1905, leaving most of his estate of 50,000 dollars to the Tacoma school district.

Reilly abandoned his claim at the Dunstan, and spent some months investigating (without success) the feasibility of opening the Molyneux for navigation to afford easy access to the field. He petitioned the Provincial Council (5 Dec 1862) for £400 still owing to him for expenses incurred in this service, but did not appear before the committee to support the claim. He does not seem to have remained in New Zealand.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*, 1862; Pyke; Gilkison; DOI; *Otago Daily Times*, 16-20 Aug 1862; *San Francisco Call*, 1 Apr 1903.

HARVEY, BACHE WRIGHT (1835-88) was a scholar of St John's College, Cambridge, where he graduated M.A., as seventeenth wrangler in 1857. After coming to New Zealand he was curate of Westport, and later of Governor's Bay. He was appointed incumbent of St Paul's, Wellington, in 1871, and while there acted as examiner to Wellington College. In 1881 he was appointed to the staff of Wanganui Collegiate School, of which he was headmaster (1882-87). Harvey's contribution to Wanganui College was the introduction of the English public school system and standards. Resigning owing to ill-health, he received the honorary degree of D.D. from the Archbishop of Canterbury. He died on 26 Jan 1888.

HARVEY, GEORGE WILLIAM (1823-89) was born in Derbyshire, and as a young man came to Australia, settling in Ballarat. There he studied law in Randall's office. On coming to New Zealand (1861), he was at once admitted a barrister and solicitor in Dunedin. In 1864 he began to practise in partnership with Joseph Alexander McGregor. Later he was appointed a district judge at Lawrence, and afterwards at Hokitika (1875). On retiring from the bench he practised at Hokitika and Dunedin. He was a prominent freemason, being district grand master on the West Coast. Harvey died on 19 Nov 1889.

Barclay; *Otago Daily Times*, 20 Nov 1889.

## HASLAM

HASELDEN; FREDERICK HENRY was born in London, being the son of Charles Haselden, with whom he came to New Zealand in 1860. He was a member of the Rangitikei county council and the licensing committee. He won the Patea seat at a by-election (4 Jul 1901) on the resignation of G. Hutchison, and retained it on a second election (Nov 1901). He was defeated by W. Symes at the next general election (1902). Haselden was a conservative in politics, opposing the Liberal land system and co-operative labour, protection and federation. He left a few years later for South Africa.

*Evening Star* (Dunedin), 24 Jul 1901.

HASELDEN, WILLIAM REEVE (1849-1934), who was born in London, was the son of Charles Haselden, and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1861 by the *Mermaid*. Educated privately in Auckland, he entered the civil service in Hokitika in 1866. In 1872 he was admitted a barrister and appointed crown prosecutor for Westport. He was active in public life as a county councillor, a borough councillor and mayor. Haselden moved to Wellington in 1889, and practised law until 1897, when he was made a stipendiary magistrate. From 1905 until the abolition of the district courts he served as a district judge. He retired in 1918 and died on 12 Apr 1934. Haselden was the author of several works, including the *New Zealand Justice of the Peace* (1895), *Protection and Free Trade* (1887), and *Industries of New Zealand* (1885). In 1875 he married a daughter of J. Lane, of Kyneton, Victoria.

*Cyc. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932.

HASLAM, FRANCIS WILLIAM CHAPMAN (1848-1924), born at Cotta, Ceylon, was a son of the Rev J. Haslam, of St John's College, Cambridge, who was a translator of the Bible into Cingalese. He was educated at Rugby, where he was head of the school, and at St John's College, Cambridge, where he was a foundation scholar and exhibitioner. After teaching at Manchester and Tonbridge schools, and at the Westward Ho military college, Devon, he was appointed professor of classics at Canterbury College in 1879. Haslam was an active member and a president of the Philosophical Institute. Interested in colonial defence, he was president of the Navy League,

## HASLEWOOD

and during the war of 1914-18 undertook the recruiting of Ashley county. He retired from the University in 1912 and died in 1924.

*Cyc. N.Z.*, iii; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Hight and Candy (p).

HASLEWOOD, CHARLES CHURCH, was for some years a squatter in Australia before coming to Canterbury in the early years of the settlement. He took up the Coringa run in 1852, and later one or two others, which he did not carry on. Haslewood represented Rakaia in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1857-58). He met his death through a gun accident in Feb 1858.

Acland.

HASZARD, RHONA (1901-31) was born at Thames, and lived as a child at Hokitika and Invercargill, where her father was commissioner of crown lands. She was educated at the Southland Girls' High School, and proceeded in 1919 to the Christchurch School of Art to study drawing and painting. In 1925 she went to England to continue her studies and, having married, she accompanied her husband to Egypt. She died in 1931. Miss Haszard showed considerable ability as a painter, and exhibited with success at most of the New Zealand exhibitions and abroad.

Leslie Greener in *Art in New Zealand*, Sep 1933; *Christchurch Times*, 19 Jul 1933.

HATCH, JOSEPH (1838-1928) was born in London, his father being a furrier by trade and an alderman. A staunch Baptist, he wished his son to become a clergyman, but his bent was in another direction and he was apprenticed first to printing and then to a wholesale druggist.

At the age of 19 Joseph emigrated to Melbourne, and was employed in the drug firm of Youngman and Co. for six years. Being sent in 1862 to Dunedin to advise on opening a branch there, he decided to settle in Invercargill, and T. W. Kempthorne opened the Dunedin house. Hatch was in partnership with J. D. Hayes in Invercargill for some years. He became interested in seal and penguin oil and owned the cutter *Mary Brilliant*, 13 tons (which was wrecked at New River heads in 1873). She was replaced by the *Awarua* (built at Bluff), which sailed a good deal on the West Coast and to the Auckland islands, and was wrecked at Raro-

## HAUGHTON

tonga. (The *Awarua* picked up the survivors of the ship *Derry Castle*). Hatch then bought the *Gratitude*, 114 tons, in Sydney. He took over the penguin oil business (which was initiated by William Elder, of Port Chalmers), and as its headquarters was at Macquarie islands he had to move to Hobart to fulfil the requirements of the Tasmanian Government in leasing the station to him. At Macquarie island the *Gratitude* was lost (1898) and she was replaced by the *Jessie Niccol*. When she was lost (1910) he bought the schooner *Clyde*, which was lost on her first voyage (1911). The *Rachel Cohen* was the last sailer Hatch owned, and she was eventually equipped with an oil engine. Hatch lost much money in this trade and sold out to a company which had no better fortune, closing down in 1918.

While in Invercargill Hatch took a leading part in public life. He was a member of the City Council for some years, and mayor in 1878, and represented Invercargill in Parliament (1884-87), being defeated by Feldwick. He was a determined stonewaller. He was the first secretary of the Invercargill fire brigade and was an enthusiastic volunteer both in Melbourne and in Invercargill.

Hatch died on 2 Sep 1928. He married (1872) a daughter of Henry Wilson (Melbourne).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 2 Jul 1929; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; Ingram and Wheatley; *Southland Times*, 4 Sep 1928; *Parltry Record*. Portrait: Parliament House.

HAUGHTON, CHARLES EDWARD MALLARD (1827-1904) was born in New South Wales, taken to England as a child and educated at Oxford, where he graduated M.A. with the intention of entering the Church. Being appointed chaplain in H.M.S. *Queen*, he served in the Crimea. Later, in the *Euryalus*, as chaplain and naval instructor he taught navigation and mathematics to the Duke of Edinburgh. He retired from the Navy and, having become a Roman Catholic, came to New Zealand (1863) and practised as a mining agent at Queenstown in partnership with Manders (q.v.), who succeeded him as editor of the *Wakatipu Mail*. Haughton was elected to the Otago Provincial Council in 1865, and sat for seven years (for Queenstown 1865-67; The Lakes 1867-72). He was chairman of committees, and was a member of the executive for a month or two in 1871

## HAULTAIN

(as goldfields secretary under E. B. Cargill). In 1865-66 he was a member of Parliament for the Goldfields, in 1866-70 for Hampden, and in 1871 for Wakatipu. Though he was a Conservative and acted as senior whip for the Stafford Government, he supported the first factory legislation of Bradshaw and Richardson. Haultain retired from Parliament (1871) to accept the position of Under-secretary for Immigration and Mines. In 1876 he left the Government service and joined the staff of the *Wellington Independent*, from which he passed late in the seventies to the *Evening Star*, Dunedin. He was leader-writer at the time of his death (16 Apr 1904).

*Otago P.C. Proc.; Otago Daily Times and Evening Star*, 18 Apr 1904. Portrait: Parliament House.

HAULTAIN, THEODORE MINET (1817-1902) was born at Stony Stratford, Buckinghamshire, of Dutch ancestors, who came to England with William III. At the age of fourteen he entered the Royal Military College at Sandhurst and three years later got his commission in the 88th Regiment. He transferred to the 63rd (1836) and was a lieutenant in the 39th, with which he served for ten years in India. He was quartermaster-general on the staff of the army of reserve at Ferozpur (1842) awaiting the return of the defeated army from Afghanistan. In the following year he served in the Gwalior campaign and was present at the battle of Mahārājpur (29 Dec 1843).

In 1847 Haultain returned to England with the rank of captain and was appointed adjutant (and then staff officer) of Pensioners (1849). He came to New Zealand in the *Oriental Queen* in charge of the 8th division of the New Zealand Fencibles (1849). Located at first at Onehunga but he moved to Panmure after the retirement of Lieut-colonel Gray as staff officer of enrolled Pensioners (with the rank of captain). On completing his seven years' term of service with the Pensioners, he retired and settled as a farmer at Mangere (Mar 1857).

On the outbreak of fighting in Taranaki in 1860, Haultain organised the Auckland militia and commanded the first battalion (with the rank of lieutenant-colonel). In the Waikato war he was appointed to command the second of the four Waikato regiments of military settlers

## HAULTAIN

raised to guard the frontier. His station was at Alexandra. At the battle of Orakau he distinguished himself and was promoted colonel; and later he was colonel commanding the four regiments.

Meanwhile Haultain had taken a full part in public life. In 1852 he was a member of the first municipal council of Auckland. He took no part in provincial politics, but in 1859 was elected to Parliament for the Southern division of Auckland, defeating David Graham by one vote. He was defeated by C. Taylor in 1861. In 1864, on the death of Nixon, he was elected to Parliament for Franklin, which he represented until his retirement in 1870. Finding himself strongly opposed to the Weld ministry on the withdrawal of Imperial troops, he resigned his command (1865) in order to have a free hand in politics and, the ministry having been defeated, he joined the Stafford cabinet as Minister of Defence (16 Oct 1865). His administration was characterised by vigorous measures. He personally supervised the location of the military settlers and in the middle of 1868, when events bore a serious complexion, he asked Whitmore to take command on the West Coast. When Te Kooti attacked Poverty Bay, Haultain took the unpleasant responsibility of withdrawing the outposts to Wanganui in order to concentrate all available forces on the threatened East Coast. He took a personal interest in both campaigns, and supported Whitmore at every juncture. He personally commanded the column operating at Whakamarama until invalidated with rheumatism (1869). In the same year he retired from office, with permission to retain the title of 'honourable.'

Haultain was a high-minded soldier, a strict disciplinarian, firm but genial, and a prudent minister of defence. He was a strong advocate of temperance, and president for many years of the Auckland Total Abstinence Society. After retiring he carried out many official tasks. He was a member of the flax commission (1871); reported on native lands legislation; took charge of the payment of pensioners (1872); was a trustee under the native land frauds prevention act; a member of the Auckland education board (1871-80); a trustee of St. John's College since 1860; a member of the diocesan and general synods; a governor of Auckland Grammar School to 1900; secretary of the Auck-

## TE HAUPA

land industrial school and sheriff for Auckland. Shortly before his death he represented New Zealand at the reception to the New South Wales contingent from the Soudan. He died on 18 Oct 1902.

*NZ. Gaz.; App. H.R.; NZP.D., pass.; Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Whitmore; Gorton; Gudgeon (p); Morton; Gisborne; Saunders, ii; Cowan; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Jul 1881; 2 Jul 1885; 20 Oct 1902.

TE HAUPA (?-1818), a chief of Ngati-Paoa, was described by Marsden, who met him first in Jan 1815, as a man 'of great power and one of the best made men he had ever seen. His pa was at Whakatiwai, Hauraki gulf. In 1806 the brig *Venus*, in the hands of convicts, tried to kidnap Te Haupa, and succeeded in carrying off a female relative, who was sold to a tribe on the East Coast. Seeking satisfaction, Te Haupa joined Hongi's expedition early in 1818, the combined force numbering more than 800 men. Many pas were burned along the shores of Bay of Plenty and at Hicks Bay. According to S. P. Smith, Te Haupa was killed in an engagement with the Ngati-Porou, whom he suspected of having killed the Ngati-Paoa woman. About 2,000 prisoners were taken away by the victors, including a niece of Hine-Matioro.

S. P. Smith, *Maori Wars*; Marsden, *L. and J.*

HAWDON, JOSEPH (1813-71) was born at Walkerfield, Durham. He came to Australia as a young man and became one of the pioneer graziers of Victoria, making many explorations on his own account and taking up large tracts of land in different colonies. He was the first settler at Dandenong, Victoria, and the town is now on the site of his home station, which he disposed of to the administrator (Captain Lonsdale) in 1838.

Hawdon and his partner, Bonney, drove the first mob of cattle (300) from New South Wales to Adelaide (Jan-Apr 1838), and were highly praised by Sturt for the achievement. With Gardiner he drove one of the first mobs of cattle overland from Sydney to Port Phillip. In 1842 Hawdon married Emma, daughter of W. Outhwaite, Richmond, Yorkshire.

Hawdon took an early interest in New Zealand, and his reports on the Canterbury block were the means of attracting a number of Australian pastoralists there. In 1851 he sent

## HAWKINS

Joseph Pearson, one of his managers, with a shipment of sheep to establish stations. Pearson explored the upper Waimakariri, took up Burnt Hill for himself and induced Hawdon to take Craigieburn, Grasmere and other runs in the west of Canterbury. The Hawdon river and lake are named after him. In 1866 Hawdon was called to the Legislative Council, but owing to absence in England he was unable to attend. He returned to New Zealand in 1870, and died on 12 Apr 1871. (See R. CAMPBELL and E. W. HUMPHREYS.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); Acland; Sturt; Grey, *Journals; Cant. O.N.; The Press*, 13 Apr 1871. Portrait: Parliament House.

HAWKE, ARCHIBALD FOTHERINGHAM (1862-1936) was born at Stirling, South Australia, and came to Southland as a youth. Educated at a private school at Port Augusta, and at the Invercargill Grammar School, he became in 1878 a junior clerk in the National Mortgage and Agency Co., of which he was Invercargill manager in 1890.

Hawke was for some years mayor of Gladstone; for six years a member of the Invercargill borough council; chairman of the Bluff harbour board for three years, and of the hospital board for fifteen; president of the Southland Agricultural and Pastoral association, the chamber of commerce and the Southland and New Zealand Rugby unions. He was a member of the High School board of governors and the electric power board. He was called to the Legislative Council in 1918, and served two terms, retiring in 1932. He died on 27 Sep 1936.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Sep, 13 Oct 1936; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Southland Times*, 28 Sep 1936.

HAWKES, JAMES GEORGE, was in business in Christchurch as an auctioneer, and was captain of one of the city volunteer corps. He represented the City in the Provincial Council (1862-72), and was a member of the City Council for some years from 1875.

HAWKINS, WILLIAM HENRY (1862-1930) came to New Zealand as a young man and was first in clerical employment in Napier. He was for some years engaged in journalism in Wairarapa and Pahiatua, and was manager of the *Pahiatua Herald*. He was elected to Parliament

## HAWTHORNE

for Pahiatua in 1904, but defeated in 1908. He was a Liberal and a strong advocate of no-license. Hawkins afterwards farmed in Taranaki and served in the war of 1914-18 as captain in the Wellington Regiment. He died on 10 Aug 1930.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Taranaki Herald*, 11 Aug 1930; *Otago Daily Times*, 8 Aug 1904.

HAWTHORNE, STUART (1833-75) graduated M.A. at Sydney University and was headmaster of the Ipswich Grammar School. In 1869 he was appointed rector of the Otago Boys' High School, which was then in a critical condition. Hawthorne already showed signs of failing health when a commission was set up in 1873 to consider the state of the school. This body (consisting of Sir John Richardson, Professor Shand, R. Stout and James Hislop) recommended that the school should be divided into upper and lower departments, and that a board of advice should be appointed. Hawthorne appeared at the bar of the Provincial Council to vindicate his administration. He died on 8 Jun 1875.

*Otago H.S. O.B. Reg.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Aug 1889, 3 Aug 1933 (p).

HAY, EBENEZER (1814-63) was born at Midbuiston, Ayrshire. Brought up to farming, he was in business for some years in Glasgow as a grain and produce merchant. He was one of the committee which organised in Glasgow the early Scottish emigration to New Zealand (1839) and was a land purchaser in the New Zealand Company's settlement.

Having married a daughter of Thomas Orr, he sailed in the *Bengal Mel'chant*, arriving at Port Nicholson in Feb 1840. After exhaustively prospecting for suitable land in the North Island, Hay joined Captain Sinclair in examining the Port Cooper district in the schooner *Richmond* (1842). They visited Banks Peninsula and Otakou, and finally decided to settle at Pigeon Bay, the Sinclairs taking Holmes's bay. The schooner was then sold to Rhodes for ten head of homed cattle delivered at Pigeon Bay from Akaroa, a difficult and expensive condition. Hay steadily improved his holding, occasionally acquiring stock from Australia and also on occasion investing in the purchase of stock there for sale in Canterbury. He made butter and cheese on a large scale for the Wel-

## HAY

lington and Christchurch markets, and in 1852 introduced cocksfoot grass on the peninsula. One of the teachers whom Hay obtained from Scotland for his family was W. S. Fitzgerald (q.v.). The Hays had many vicissitudes from the Maori labourers whom they employed. From the rougher type of colonist, and from the ravages of bush fires, which involved him in heavy legal costs and damages. He died on 26 Nov 1863.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Cant. O.N.*; Guthrie Hay; *Lyttelton Times*, 16 Dec 1925; Godley, *Letters; The Press*, 16 Jun 1924; *The Sun*, 6 Aug 1927.

HAY, EBENEZER STORRY (1850-87) was born at Kilsyth, Scotland, came to Otago about 1865 and qualified as a barrister and solicitor, practising in Dunedin. A man of quaint habits and quiet disposition, he wrote a good deal of poetry for the press under the nom de plume of •Fleta: Shortly before his death he collected verse "from New Zealand poets for publication in *A New Zealand Garland* (which, however, did not appear). He read a paper before the University debating society in 1881 on some characteristics of Wordsworth's poetry. This was later published, with the addition of some of his own poems. Hay died on 20 Apr 1887.

Poems in *Saturday Advertiser* (notably 23 Aug, 20 Sep 1879) and *Otago Witness*, 17 Sep, 1, 17 Oct 1886; *Otago Daily Times*, 22 Apr 1887.

HAY, PETER SETON (1852-1907) was born in Glasgow and, arriving in Otago by the *Storm Cloud* (1860), completed his education at Otago University. There he graduated B.A. in 1877, being the first Otago student to receive that degree. In the following year he graduated M.A., with first-class honours in mathematics. Having entered the Public Works department as a cadet in 1875, he was appointed in 1879 an assistant engineer in Dunedin. In 1884 he was transferred to Wellington; in 1886 he became resident engineer; in 1896 superintending engineer for the Colony, and in 1906 Engineer-in-chief. He did much valuable technical work, his reports on hydro-electrical power in New Zealand rivers being very sound. Hay died on 19 Mar 1907.

*Otago Daily Times*, 7 May 1877; *N.Z. Times*, 20 Mar 1907.

## HAY

HAY, WILLIAM (1805-75) was born in Scotland and came to Wellington in 1840. A builder by trade, he moved to Auckland when it became the capital and was engaged in his trade there for many years. He built Government House. When Hay retired with a competency he bought a farm at Woodstock, Papakura. He was a member of the road board and president of the Agricultural Society. Hay was much interested in education, and promoted several schools in the province. He represented Suburbs of Auckland in the Provincial Council (1855-57), Franklin (1870-73) and Papakura (1873-75). He was a fluent speaker, was interested in social and religious movements, and was an office-bearer of the Presbyterian church. The engagement of Kirikiri was fought on his boundary. Hay died on 15 Feb 1875.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Feb 1875.

HAYHURST, JOHN (1827-89) was born near Preston, Lancashire, and in 1850 came to New Zealand. Having no capital, he worked for a while in the North Island and began in Canterbury as shepherd to H. J. Tancred, for whom he managed Malvern station in 1853. He afterwards rented Ashburton station (1855-60), and in 1861 took up Green Hayes, where he carried out comprehensive improvements, and cut the property up into small farms, upon which he settled about 250 people.

Hayhurst was a member of the Timaru and Gladstone board of works, and represented Timaru in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1865-66) and Geraldine (1872-74). A Liberal in politics, he contested the Geraldine seat in Parliament against E. Wakefield. The voting resulting in a tie, the returning officer cast his vote for Wakefield. Hayhurst died on 5 Apr 1889.

*Parltry Record*; Andersen; Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Timaru Herald*, 8 Apr 1889; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Aug 1891.

HAYNES, CHARLES (1838-1901) was born in Tasmania, educated in Victoria and came to Otago in 1859. He entered into business as a carrier from Dunedin to the goldfields and when the railway was opened moved to Palmerston, where he opened a store (1873). He was a member of the borough council and the school committee, was five times mayor of the

## HEALE

borough; and'contested the Moeraki seat against John McKenzie.

In 1886 Haynes moved to Dunedin, where two years later he entered the City Council. He was mayor in 1892 and thereafter again served in the Council. In 1888 he was elected to the benevolent trustees, of which he was at times chairman and treasurer. He was a member of the 'hospital and charitable aid board, and chairman of the George street school committee, and chairman of directors of the Commercial Property Co. and the New Zealand Cement Co. He twice contested a Dunedin City seat in Parliament.

Haynes married (1859) a daughter of P. Logan, and in 1888 a daughter of S. Woolley (Palmerston). He died on 7 Oct 1901.

*Otago Daily Times*, 15 Oct 1901.

HAZLETT, JAMES (1829-1913) was born at Maghera, county Londonderry, Ireland, and educated partly in that town and partly in Belfast, and he gained some mercantile experience there before sailing in 1854 for Australia. He had some success on the Victorian diggings and in Gippsland, and in 1861 came to Otago. In 1863 he started business at the Dunstan, and afterwards opened stores at Cromwell, Clyde and other places. He was five years mayor of Cromwell and represented the Dunstan in the Otago Provincial Council (1873-75). In 1878 Hazlett moved to Dunedin, where he entered into partnership with J. T. Mackerras as merchants and importers. He was president of the Dunedin Hospital for some years, a member of the charitable aid board and a warm supporter of the Dunedin benevolent institution. He was a successful racing owner, being a member of the Dunedin Jockey Club and some years its president. He married (1867) a daughter of Thomas Coleman.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Gilkison; *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Mar 1908.

REALE, THEOPHILUS (1816-85) was born in England, the son of a sugar broker in London. He received a good classical education, and was an accomplished linguist, mathematician and navigator; and something of a geologist; •a man of singular attainments and wide experience gained in travel:

Going to sea at an early age, Heale is said to

have commanded an East Indiaman before being appointed to the *Aurora*, which brought the first of the New Zealand Company's settlers to Port Nicholson (arriving 22 Jan 1840). A few weeks later, while getting a cargo of spars, the vessel was stranded at the mouth of Kaipara harbour and became a total loss. Heale spent some months travelling and making business connections in the north, and at the end of the year, having entered into partnership with Dudley Sinclair and others, he left for England. In Apr 1841 Sinclair purchased town sections for them in the first sale at Auckland. In reply to the criticisms of Wakefield, Heale published his book *New Zealand and the New Zealand Company*. He carried out negotiations on behalf of the Manukau Land Company with a Scots organisation which proposed to develop the interests of his group and establish a township (Cornwallis) inside the north head of Manukau harbour.

Heale brought out the machinery for a steam sawmill, which he erected on a 1½ acre section at Cornwallis. The project failed; the partnership was dissolved, and Heale returned to England again (1843). While there he gave valuable evidence before the select committee of the House of Commons. In 1845, in partnership with Whitaker (q.v.) Heale obtained a grant from FitzRoy for 27½ acres of land on Kawau island, below highwatermark, where it was intended to mine for copper. The grant was contested by the Aberdeen company which was operating above highwater mark and, the Privy Council having decided against Heale and Whitaker, they disposed of their interests (1850). They later engaged in coppermining on Great Barrier.

Heale was one of three members nominated by FitzRoy to the Legislative Council (3 Mar 1845) who resigned a year later to leave Grey free to make his own appointments. In Jan 1860 he was elected to Parliament for Auckland Suburbs, which he represented at the following session. He was defeated for Parnell at the general election by R. G. Wood (Jan 1861). A few months later (Sep 1861) he was appointed chief surveyor of the new province of Southland under the superintendency of Menzies (q.v.), who shortly appointed him chief engineer and adviser to the government. Heale laid out and supervised the construction of the

Bluff, Oreti and Northern railways, which were prosecuted with vigour until the provincial exchequer was empty. He also made important reports on the settlement of Stewart island. In May 1864 he was appointed deputy-superintendent, and J. H. Baker assumed office as deputy chief surveyor. The province being no longer able to finance public works, Heale did not resume his full duties, but undertook professional work in the north. At the end of 1864, as the outcome of a political deadlock, the Provincial Council elected him Superintendent, but as he had not received the requisite absolute majority he retired and then appears to have severed his connection with the province.

Late in 1864 Heale carried out surveying contracts at Tauranga, and a few months later was appointed inspector of surveys under the native land act. Early in 1866, though he was now away from Southland, he consented to be nominated for the Invercargill seat in Parliament. He did not appear to address the electors, but was defeated by Wood by only one vote. In Nov 1867 he was appointed chief surveyor in Auckland and inspector of surveys for the Colony, which position he held until 1876. While thus employed, he initiated the first extensive system of triangulation, which was afterwards prosecuted by S. P. Smith from one end of New Zealand to the other. Smith considered Heale 'the most scientific surveyor in the country.' He took observations of the transit of Venus and fixed the latitude of Mount Eden. In 1871 he published his *Principles and Practice of Surveying*. After the abolition of the provinces Heale was appointed (30 Apr 1877) a judge of the native land court, for which his knowledge of Maori and of Maori customs eminently fitted him. He retired in 1880 and visited England, but was again appointed in 1882. He finally retired in 1883 and returned to England, where he died, at Orpington, Kent, on 21 May 1885. He was a man of unusual attainments and experience, but lacked the assertiveness of character necessary for advancement in public life.

Family information; G.B.O.P., 1845/556; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *NZ. Gaz.*, 1860-62, 1864-67, 1877, 1882; *App. H.R.*, 1869 D.20; 1870 D.11, 11a; 1872 G.21; 1873 G.6, H.1; 1874 H.11; 1875 H.6; 1876 H.17; *Auckland Gaz.* 1843; *Southland Gaz.* 1861-64; A.

Mackay; Jourdain; Baker; Auckland Public Library, N.Z. 333-095B; research by R. P. Fletcher, Lands and Survey dept. Portrait: Parliament House.

HEAPHY, CHARLES (1822-81) was born in London, the son of Thomas Heaphy (1775-1835), who was attached to the Duke of Wellington's staff as an artist and founded the Society of British Artists. As a youth he studied for five years in the schools of the Royal Academy, and he gained bronze and silver medals and entered for the gold medal. He appears to have exhibited at the Royal Institute in 1835;

Heaphy was for 18 months in the works of the London and Birmingham railway. In 1839 he received an appointment for three years as artist and draughtsman to the New Zealand Company and left with the first expedition in the *Tory* (Apr 1839). He spent 12 years sketching and writing descriptive matter for the Company's publications, studying, surveying, and exploring. In 1841 he accompanied the expedition to fix the site of Nelson. In 1842 he visited England and published his *Residence in Various Parts of New Zealand*, one of the most authoritative accounts of the colony and the Chatham islands. Some of his sketches were lithographed for this publication.

On returning he took up land in the Nelson settlement, but was obliged to withdraw from it on account of the hostility of the natives. Heaphy took part in several explorations from Nelson to the headwaters of the Buller (1843-46) and accompanied Brunner on his arduous journey down the West Coast. In 1848 he was appointed draughtsman at Auckland. In 1852 he was located at the Coromandel goldfields, being the first goldfields commissioner in New Zealand. On the abandonment of the field (1853), he returned to Auckland, and was appointed district surveyor at Mahurangi early in 1854. In 1858 he became district surveyor for Auckland and in 1859 he assisted Hochstetter in his geological survey of Auckland.

In 1859 also Heaphy joined the Auckland City Volunteer company, of which he became lieutenant, and he was afterwards captain of the Parnell company. On the outbreak of the Wai-kato war (Jul 1863) he took one detachment and erected St John's redoubt at Papatoetoe. In Nov, by reason of his intimacy with the

country, he was attached to flying columns as guide. In Dec, as a justice of the peace, he committed for trial in Auckland the natives concerned in murders at Kaipara. On 11 Feb 1864, with a flying column under Sir Henry Havelock reconnoitring near Waiari, he was placed in charge of a detachment when a bathing party of the 40th Regiment was fired upon. Heaphy, having some knowledge of surgery, went to the rescue of a wounded soldier, tended him under fire and eventually with some assistance brought him off the field, being three times slightly wounded himself. He was promoted major in the militia and recommended for the Victoria Cross. As he did not belong to a unit of the regular army, and such an award had not previously been made, he did not receive the Cross until 1867.

On the termination of the war Heaphy was appointed chief surveyor in Auckland (1865). In 1867 he was elected M.H.R. for Parnell, which he represented until 1870, when he resigned to accept the post of commissioner of native reserves. In 1878 he was appointed a judge of the native land court, a position he held until his retirement in 1880. He died in Brisbane on 3 Aug 1881.

Besides the publications already mentioned Heaphy contributed in 1855 to the quarterly journal of the Geological Society a paper on the goldfields of Coromandel. In 1863, when he was waste lands commissioner, he prepared a pamphlet on New Zealand in support of the Auckland provincial loan of £500,000.

Heaphy married (1851) Catherine Letitia, daughter of the Rev John Churton.

*NZ.C.* papers and reports; *D.N.E.*; Heaphy, *op. cit.*; Cowan (p); Jourdain; Gudgeon (p); Harrop, *Westland*; Thomson; Buick, *First War*; unpublished thesis by O. S. Meads; *Southern Cross*, 13 May 1867; *London Gaz.*, 14 May 1864, 8 Feb 1867; *Annual Register*, 1881.

HEBERLEY, JAMES (1809-99) was born at Weymouth. His father, a native of Wurtemberg, Germany, who had been taken prisoner by the British, married and settled in England, where he commanded the brig *Nancy*. After three years' schooling Heberley worked in a ropewalk, and at 11 was apprenticed to the captain of a fishing smack. He ran away and found a post as cabin boy in the *Sarah and Margaret*, trading between London and Ham-

HEBERLEY

burg, and afterwards in the West Indian *Somersetshire*. After many vicissitudes he reached Sydney in the *Alexander Henry* (1825), and two years later, in the whaler *Caroline*, put into Bay of Islands.

In 1830 Heberley shipped in the schooner *Watel'loo* for Queen Charlotte sound, and settled at Te Awaite, where he engaged in whaling. He had many rough experiences during the last campaigns of the Ngati-Tahu against Te Rauparaha. Eventually in 1831 he settled at Port Underwood, where he married a Maori woman (1840). Returning in the *Hannah* in 1836 from Sydney, where he heard of the proposed English colonisation of New Zealand, he bought land at Port Nicholson (1 Feb 1837). The deeds were not valid. Heberley piloted the *Tory* into Port Nicholson, and round the coast to Wanganui and Taranaki. While she was at Kaipara he climbed mount Egmont with Diefenbach (Dec 1839). He was appointed pilot at Port Nicholson but, the fees being insufficient to maintain him, he moved to the town and engaged in fishing, also continuing his whaling operations. He was **drowned** at Picton in 1899.

C. A. Macdonald; E. J. Wakefield.

HEBERLEY, THOMAS HENRY (1876-1937) was born at Picton (his father Joseph Heberley, being harbourmaster there. His grandfather was James Heberley (q.v.). He lived as a boy with his uncle, Jacob Heberley, in Petone, and learned Maori carving from him. He paid special attention to Maori art, and was employed by the Dominion Museum authorities almost continuously from 1928. While so engaged he completed many Maori works, including the canoe in the Museum (which was carried out under the supervision of Elsdon Best), the Sir Maui Pomare memorial and the restoration of the Maori church at Otaki. Heberley died on 15 Jan 1937.

*The Dominion and Evening Post*, 15, 16 Jan 1937 (P).

**HECTOR**, SIR JAMES (1834-1907) was born (probably at Edinburgh), the son of Alexander Hector, a lawyer, and his second wife, Margaret McCrosty. He first attended the Edinburgh Academy (1844-45), and then for four years was a pupil at the Edinburgh High School. After three years at actuarial work, he sickened of

HECTOR

office routine and, having matriculated (1852) he entered the University of Edinburgh, and passed the medical course (apparently as an avenue to a scientific career). He graduated M.D. in 1856. Medicine did not hold him long. To examine the possibility of establishing communication between the Pacific and the Atlantic, the British Government in 1857 sent an expedition, commanded by Captain Palliser, R.N. Hector was offered the dual post of surgeon and geologist; Blakiston was astronomer, and M. Bourgeau botanist. Assured by Sir George Simpson of the co-operation of the Hudson's Bay Company, the expedition sailed from Liverpool on 16 May 1857 in the *Arabia*. From New York it made for Sault Sainte Marie, travelled by the government steamer to Fort William, and reached Fort Garry (Winnipeg). Having split the party into two, Palliser, accompanied by Hector and Sullivan (secretary to the expedition), started on the longer route by Pembina and Turtle mountain to Fort Ellice, where the others were to meet him. On reaching Carlton, Palliser returned to Montreal. Hector travelled from Edmonton to Rocky Mountain House, back to Carlton, then to Fort Pitt and down the Saskatchewan river to Carlton to connect with the other members. He was able to complete plans for the coming season and to make some substantial progress with his own scientific studies. Starting again, with Nimrod and Erasmus, Hector pushed on up the Bow river, crossed over to the Beaver Fort river and, following up the Columbia, discovered the Kicking Horse Pass—the main key to the central Rockies. Thence, though impeded by scarcity of provisions and numerous accidents, he crossed the watershed, continued down the Saskatchewan, and reached Edmonton on 7 Oct. During the eight weeks since they separated Palliser had made extensive and successful discoveries to the southward, including four passes, and had removed the uncertainty concerning the northern Kootenay pass. Setting off again in May 1859, Hector was repulsed in his efforts to find a pass down the Fraser and Thompson rivers towards the Pacific. His party returned to Colville, and then swung south to follow up the Columbia river to Fort Vancouver. Financial difficulties intervening, Hector penetrated to California and northern Mexico, and towards the end of 1860 re-

HECTOR

turned home by way of Panama. For his work in Canada he was made a fellow of the Royal Society of Edinburgh, of the Geological Society of London and of the Royal Geographical Society (which in 1861 awarded him its gold medal).

On the initiative of James Macandrew, approved by his successor (Major Richardson), Hector was engaged from Nov 1861 to carry out a geological survey of Otago. He landed in Dunedin on 15 Apr 1862, and during the winter made a preliminary reconnaissance of one-third of the province. To establish the truth of rumours of gold, he made an exploration up the Shag river and into the Manuhirikia valley. With two field assistants he made a rapid survey of certain coal deposits, the results of their analyses forming the groundwork for his valuable *Report on the Coals of Otago* (1864). Hector then turned his attention to the West Coast to decide as to its fitness for settlement, the extent of its resources, and the existence of a pass into Otago. An expedition was planned under the command of J. T. Thomson, and Hector determined to make a hurried survey west of Wanaka to assist it. On 28 Oct he left Dunedin, reached the Dunstan diggings, skirted Wanaka and made his way up the Matukituki valley, returning to Dunedin by way of Lake Wakatipu. As the arrangements for the West Coast trip broke down, he determined early in 1863 to make an assault from the land side, and the Government sanctioned an expedition to discover a practicable route in that direction. Hector intended to follow up the Waitaki and Ahuriri rivers, crossing over the Lindis pass and again proceeding up the Matukituki. The party left Dunedin on 6 Jan 1863, and followed the Matukituki to its source. On 17 Feb Hector, Sullivan, and Rayer climbed the Matukituki saddle and dropped down into what is now the Waipara river. Heavy rain and lack of food placed them in some jeopardy, and within eight miles of the sea they were forced to turn back. Their position was desperate as they struggled back to their central camp in the Matukituki. They reached Dunedin on 15 Mar. The conception of an effective exploration of the West Coast was first mooted by Macandrew, and revived later by J. T. Thomson. Hector made a hurried trip to Wakatipu and up the Greenstone valley

HECTOR

and on 15 May 1863, he and his party, without Thomson, boarded the *Matilda Hayes*. At Riverton Hector broke the journey to travel up the Waiau river and back by the Oreti and Aparima valley. Some Maori having been engaged; the vessel sailed for Preservation Inlet, and anchored off Milford Sound on 7 Aug. He could find no route leading from the Cleddau river across the range towards Wakatipu, so sailed towards the Awarua river and, when opposite Martin's Bay, entered the Hollyford river. Passing up this, they climbed the saddle which caps the Passburn, **dropped** down the Greenstone, and on 4 Oct reached Queens-town. Caples and Alabaster can claim priority in the discovery of this pass, but this did not lessen the importance of Hector's route. From Dunedin he returned to the schooner, in which he reached Port Chalmers on 6 Jan 1864. An acrimonious correspondence ensued with J. T. Thomson concerning several alterations to Hector's report.

Hector was one of the three commissioners for flax in Otago, and in 1870 he was appointed a commissioner by the New Zealand Government. His principal administrative work at this time was in connection with the Museum nucleus and the Exhibition of 1865. He was appointed a commissioner for the Exhibition in 1863, and in 1864 he was authorised to report on the preparations in the northern provinces. He completed his geological map and section of the province in Nov.

Towards the end of 1864, the Government authorised a complete geological survey of the Colony, and Weld offered Hector the position of director of this service. The exhibition successfully finished, and his term of agreement with the Otago provincial government having expired on 1 Jan 1865, he took up his new duties at Wellington in Aug. His organising ability and catholic interests soon established this work on successful foundations. In 1866 Hector was elected a corresponding member of the Geological Society of London, and later in the year an F.R.S. In 1868, he was largely instrumental in forming the New Zealand Institute (formerly the New Zealand Society). He was its first director and for 35 years edited the *Transactions*. In 1868 also he married Maria Georgiana, daughter of Sir David Monro.

In 1870 the Otago provincial government

sued Hector for breach of contract, but a committee of the House of Representatives quashed the charge. In 1871 he became a member of the first senate of the University of New Zealand, and in 1885 was elected chancellor, a position which he held for 18 years. In 1875 he visited Europe, where he was awarded the Lyell medal and received the C.M.G. for his services in Canada. On his return through the United States, he represented New Zealand at the Centenary Exhibition at Philadelphia. In 1879 Hector was appointed executive commissioner to the Sydney Exhibition (for which he prepared his *Handbook of New Zealand*). While he was acting in a similar capacity a year later at Melbourne, the Victorian Government asked him to report on the coal-resources of that Colony. He was knighted for his services as commissioner at the Wellington Exhibition. In 1890 he was chairman of the royal commission on the Dunedin hospital, and later he was sent to the West Coast as a commissioner to investigate the colliery troubles.

Hector was three times president of the Australasian Association for the Advancement of Science, and was unanimously awarded the founder's medal of the Royal Geographical Society. He was a member of numerous learned societies. After this period his work diminished in importance. When the staff of the geological survey was transferred to the Mines department, he retained his nominal position as director of the geological survey until 1903, but for some years had no control over the work. He visited Canada in 1903, and died at Lower Hutt on 6 Nov 1907. Amongst Hector's separate publications are an essay on the geographical botany of New Zealand (1865), *Phormium Tenax* (1872) and *Mineral Waters of New Zealand* (1893). *Lady Hector* died on 3 Aug 1930.

R.I.M.B.

*Otago P.C. Pmc. and Gaz.*; reports (1865-95) and bulletins of Geological Survey and Colonial Museum; meteorological reports (1868-85); Hector collection in Hocken Library; *Royal Geog. Soc. Jour.*, vol xxxiv; *Catalogue of Col. Museum (1870)*; Hector, *op. cit.*; Cox; Gisborne; Beaglehole; *Trans. NZ. Inst.*; *Cycl. NZ.*, i (p); *Otago Daily Times*, Feb-Mar, 10 Oct 1863. 9 Jun 1864. *New Zealand Times*, 7 Nov 1907.

HEKE, HONE (?-1850). This famous Ngapuhi chief was born at Pa Karaka and was the son

of Kau (brother of Pokaia) and Tupanapana, and descended from the Ngapuhi ancestor Rahiri. For a while he lived at Paihia with the Rev H. Williams. Though not himself of the highest rank, he made an influential marriage with Hariata, the daughter of Hongi Hika (q.v.).

Heke was rather a turbulent boy and as a young man used his high mana to levy tribute on travellers through his domain at Puketona. Though not fond of the martial life, his ambitions required that he should achieve a reputation. In 1830 he showed skill and bravery in battle at Kororareka; in 1833 he was wounded in the neck on Titore's expedition against Otumoetai pa (Tauranga). In 1837 he distinguished himself in fighting against Pomare and Te Mau-paraoa at Otuihi, when he narrowly escaped capture.

Educated by the missionaries, Heke acquired a deep knowledge of Scripture, which he turned to account in later years in controversies directed against the influence of the pakeha and the British Government. On being baptised, in the presence of the British resident (Busby) he took the name of Hone. He married first Ono (Lydia), the daughter of Te Pahii of Ngati-Rehia, and they had one son, who died. He then again became rather troublesome. After 1837 he moved to Kaikohe, where again he kept the people unsettled. Heke disliked the steady encroachments of the pakeha upon Maori customs and mana, and contrasted gloomily the poor condition of his people after 1840 with their earlier prosperity and influence. For himself, the arrival of British sovereignty deprived him of the revenue he had been accustomed to levy from shipping at the Bay. As the most prominent chief at Bay of Islands, whose ambitions were well recognised, he had urged up the chiefs gathered at Waitangi the need of protection, and when he signed the Treaty many others followed his lead. Nevertheless he disliked yielding up his mana to the Queen. His victory in the fight with Panakareao in 1843 raised his prestige, and revived his grievance against the Governor over the punishment of Maketu.

Quick to take offence at pakeha arrogance, and burning with ambition to make a name for himself, Heke was furious at being called a pig by a Maori woman of his tribe who was mar-

ried to a pakeha. He demanded her surrender, but eventually agreed to accept a cask of tobacco as utu. When this was not paid by the pakeha (Lord), Heke led his people into Kororareka (5 Jul 1844) and pillaged some of the stores. By now he was regarded by the missionaries as an apostate, and his influence with the natives in face of the decay of the old customs was much feared. He resented the removal of shipping and, regarding the flagstaff at Kororareka as a symbol of Maori deposition, he chafed to cut it down. On 8 Jul, after praying to both Christian and Maori gods, Heke led a war party and Haratua cut down the flagstaff. Troops and H.M.S. *Hazard* arrived at the Bay next month, but some of the friendly chiefs begged the Governor (FitzRoy) not to initiate hostilities. At a meeting at Waimate Heke paid ten muskets as utu and apologised for his outrage, but declared that the flagstaff was his property, cut from the forest of his own people.

Encouraged, it is said, by passages in the report of the House of Commons committee (1844) which seemed to question the wisdom of the Treaty of Waitangi, Heke continued his recalcitrant attitude, and again (on 10 Jan 1845) the flagstaff was cut down, and yet again on 18 Jan. A reward of £100 was then offered for his capture (to which he replied by offering a similar reward for the head of Governor FitzRoy). The flagstaff was re-erected and fortified with a blockhouse garrisoned by soldiers and men from the warship. On 11 Mar 1845 Heke again attacked the flagstaff hill. After severe fighting during the day the position was evacuated and the whole town abandoned to the enemy. The city of Auckland was alarmed at the arrival of refugees and reports that Kawiti had joined Heke and that an attack on the city was imminent.

Expecting retaliation by the troops, Heke and Kawiti built a pa (Okaihau) some distance inland. On 3 May a force of 400 soldiers and marines and an equal number of friendly natives was landed, and three days later the pa was assaulted in a frontal attack, which was unsuccessful for lack of artillery. The British retreated with the loss of 14 killed and 39 wounded, and Heke sallied out of the pa and attacked the friendlies. In this fighting he received a gunshot wound in the thigh, which

prevented him taking further part in this campaign. He now established himself at Ohaeawai, 19 miles inland. Colonel Despard landed a larger force on 16 Jun, and on the 22nd paraded at Waimate 630 men of the 58th, 96th and 99th Regiments and from H.M.S. *Hazard*, with four guns and a strong force of friendlies. Heke's garrison in the pa numbered 250, all armed with guns." Artillery opened on the 24th, without effect until a 32-pounder from the warship breached the palisade. A sudden sally of Heke against the friendlies under Nene resulted in the capture of a Union Jack and the narrow escape of several British staff officers. An assault delivered on the pa on 1 Jul failed, and the troops withdrew to a distance of 400 yards. Two days later Heke hoisted a flag of truce to enable the British to carry off their dead (44) and wounded (66). On the 9th a few more shells were thrown into the work and on the morning of the 10th it was found that the defenders had evacuated the pa. The troops accordingly took possession and five days later retired to the coast. FitzRoy determined to give the enemy time in which to consider the advisability of asking for peace. Heke's mana, however, was now very high, since he had thrice ostensibly beaten the British trained soldiers.

With the arrival of Grey to assume the governorship (in Nov 1845), affairs assumed a new aspect. Though Kawiti had constructed a very strong pa at Ruapekapeka, Heke had in the meantime realised the disadvantage at which he was placed by the neglect of planting, so that he was faced with a probable shortage of provisions for the coming campaign. He was held in his pa at Ikorangi by a feint attack while the British forces, with nine guns, were gradually marshalled before Kawiti's position at Ruapekapeka. Colonel Hulme had 1,173 soldiers and seamen and 450 native allies, with 13 guns. On 2 Jan 1846 Kawiti made a sortie from the pa, but was driven back. On the 10th a cannonade effected two small breaches in the palisade. On the following morning (being Sunday) Kawiti retired to the rear of the pa to rest. Heke's reinforcements were in the bush close at hand holding their religious service when British scouts ascertained the weakness of the position, and it was quickly and quietly occupied with slight resistance.

## HEKE

After the fall of Ruapekepeka the influence of Heke diminished, and his followers dwindled away rapidly. He made peace through his wife Hariata, who saw Grey. Heke remained disaffected in his last years, but made no further attempt at revolt, and he died on 6 Aug 1850. His widow married Arama Karaka. Heke at one stage called himself John William Heke Pokai.

G.B.O.P., 1850/1136, p. 17; 1851/1420, pp. 30, 33; 1854/1779, p. 119; A. N. Brown; Carleton, Marsden, L. and J.; Davis; S. P. Smith; Buick, *First War* (p); Bowen; Selwyn, *Annals* (p); Ramsden; Buller.

HEKE, HONE (1869-1909). This brilliant young Maori was born at Kaikohe in 1869, and belonged to the Ngati-Tawake, Ngati-Rahiri and Ngati-Tautahi hapu of Ngapuhi. His father was Hone Ngapua Tuhirangi, of Bay of Islands, whose father, Tuhirangi, was an elder brother of Hone Heke (q.v.). The present Heke was therefore the grandnephew of Heke and the great-grandnephew of Hongi Hika.

Educated at the Kawakawa village schools, the Oromahoe native school and St Stephen's college, Auckland, Heke entered the government service in 1891 as a clerk in the native land court at Wellington. He threw himself with great enthusiasm into the Kotahitanga movement, which aimed at securing for the Maori the full control of their own lands and local government. A Maori parliament of nominated members, which originated in a conference amongst the Ngapuhi in the eighties, held its meetings generally in the northern district. Extending gradually to embrace practically all the tribes but those of the King country and Te Whiti's close adherents in Taranaki, it held its first meeting in another district (Hawkes Bay) in 1892.

Heke resigned his post in 1892 to accept the position of leader of the Federated Tribes of New Zealand. He stood for Parliament and was elected for the Northern Maori, on the crest of this movement, expressly for the purpose of putting this policy into effect. Though his bill in 1894 was thrown out, the movement gained momentum and culminated in 1900 in the passing of the Maori land administration and the Maori councils acts.

Heke won several elections, retaining his mana with his people and his seat in Parlia-

## HENDERSON

ment until his death (9 Feb 1909). He was a brilliant speaker and a man of strong personality, not the least important of the group of young men (including Ngata, Te Rangihiroa and Pomare) who led the Maori towards their renaissance in the early years of this century.

Heke's influence as a prominent chief of four great tribes (Te Aupouri, Te Rarawa, Ngapuhi and Ngati-Whatua) was such that they were able on the advice of Sir James Carroll, to elect as his successor a man (Te Rangihiroa) who had no tribal connections in the north but was likely to carry on the spirit of Kotahitanga. A monument to Heke was erected on the Katkohe hill by the Government and unveiled by Carroll.

N.Z.P.D., 10 Jun 1909; Gisborne; Scholefield in *N.Z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907; information from Heke, Carroll and Sir A. Ngata. Portrait: *N.Z. Times*, *cit.*; Parliament House.

HEMPLEMAN, GEORGE (1799-1880) was born at Altona, Schleswig-Holstein. He came to New Zealand in 1835 as master of the brig *Bee* and established a shore whaling station at Piraki, Banks Peninsula, which for some years was fairly profitable. He enjoyed the protection of Tairaroa, but suffered much from the depredations of Tuhawaiki and other chiefs who visited the bay. His treatment of the natives was uniformly severe, and caused him to be reprimanded by Captain Stanley, of the *Britomart*.

Hempleman claimed to have made an extensive purchase of land in Banks peninsula from the natives on 2 Nov 1839. The claim was considered good by Colonel Campbell, but was not substantiated before the commission. He was twice married, first to an English woman in Sydney. He died on 13 Feb 1880 at Akaroa, after a prolonged illness and many disappointments. *The Piraki Log*, published by F. A. Anson in 1910, is based on Hempleman's diary (now in the Canterbury Museum).

J. Hay; Anson, *op. cit.*; Andersen; Jacobson; A.Mackay.

HENDERSON, DONALD (1822-89) was born and educated in Caithness, and learned the trade of an ironmonger at Airdrie, near Glasgow. Coming to Otago in 1856, he engaged in contracting and then entered into business in Princes street, Dunedin. Having made a competence, he took up land at Romahapa, where

## HENDERSON

he lived for the remainder of his life. He represented Clutha in the Otago Provincial Council (1867-73, 1874-75). Though not prominent in public life, he took a firm stand against Vogel's hundreds regulations, which he considered were designed to favour the squatting interest. Henderson died on 29 Dec 1889.

*Parltry Record; Otago Daily Times*, 31 Dec 1889.

HENDERSON, THOMAS (1810-86) was born at Dundee and trained there as a blacksmith. He then moved to Perth, where he married (1834) Catherine Macfarlane. In 1840 Henderson came to Wellington in the *London*. Moving shortly to Auckland, he was at the first land sale and bought a section in Wyndham street on which he erected the well-known hostelry, the Commercial Hotel.

For some years he was in partnership with J. Macfarlane in the timber business, which did not prosper. Then they founded the trading firm of Henderson and Macfarlane (1846), of which he was principal for many years, and they employed some hundreds of Maori in a gum-digging venture at Mangonui. The schooner *John Bull*, which they acquired for the Sydney trade, was not a success and they sold her in Hobart, taking flour in payment. The success of this deal led to the establishment of Henderson's mill (at the village afterwards called Henderson). The firm suffered heavy losses in 1849 through shipping timber to California. They sold their first vessel, the *Fanny*, to Polack. Another venture with timber to California, in the *Josephine*, landed on a stagnant market. They then chartered the *Glencoe* and initiated a successful trade with China, in which Henderson personally took part. On one of his visits he brought back Chinese pheasants, which were successfully acclimatised.

In 1852 the barque *Spencer* was chartered, and thus the Circular Saw line of sailing packets was inaugurated. Considerable profits were made in connection with the Victorian diggings and the firm expanded its shipping trade to South America. On the death of John Macfarlane in 1860, Henderson's son Thomas joined the firm; and Henderson withdrew shortly afterwards in favour of his eldest son (George) and his son-in-law, Gustav von der Heyde (q.v.). A few years later the firm met with reverses, and Henderson returned to busi-

## HENRY

ness. They purchased the steamers *Airedale*, *Lord Ashley* and *Phoebe*, but made little headway until the youngest son, H. H. W. Henderson, came in.

Thomas Henderson represented the City of Auckland in the Provincial Council (1855-57) and was a member of Campbell's executive (1855-56). At the same time he represented the Northern Division in Parliament (1855-70), holding office for a year without portfolio in Fox's ministry (1861-62). In 1865-67 he represented the Northern Division in the Provincial Council. Henderson was again in Parliament, for Waitemata, in 1871-74, two of his partners (Macfarlane and von der Heyde) being there with him. In 1878 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member until his death on 27 Jun 1886.

Henderson was a good honest type of politician, a practical thinker and a forceful speaker. In business he was always enterprising. His public spirit was evident in 1863 when he visited Melbourne while Colonel Pitt was enlisting men for the Waikato war. Learning that the banks would not give the Government credit beyond £10,000, Henderson personally found security for another £15,000; which he placed at Pitt's disposal. Henderson was a founder and many years a director of the Bank of New Zealand, and a director of the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co., the New Zealand Insurance Co. and the Auckland Gas Co.

Larkworthy; *Auckland Star*, 28 Jun 1886; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 May 1881. Portrait: Parliament House.

HENRY, JOSEPH (1835-94) was born in Ireland and educated at Trinity College, Dublin (L.R.C.S. Ireland 1862). He came to New Zealand in the *Ironsides* (1864) and during the Waikato war served as surgeon with the 1st Waikato Regiment, being present at Rangiriri. He afterwards married Miss Armstrong (d. 1891) and practised at Charleston, where he was surgeon to the hospital. He represented Buller in Parliament (1876-79), being defeated by Fisher. In 1880 he graduated L.R.C.P., and two years later moved to Wellington, where he practised until his death (9 Apr 1894). Henry was a justice of the peace, chief medical officer to the Government Life Insurance department from 1889, and a governor of Wellington College and Girls' High School.

## HENRY

*N.Z. Times*, 10 Apr 1894; *Westport Times and Star*, 28 Dec 1926 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

HENRY, RICHARD (1845-1929) was an accomplished bushman and observer, who took an interest in natural history and especially bird life. Henry had a sheep station in Canterbury adjoining crown lands and at one time had 20,000 sheep, but was ruined by the depredations of rabbits. He paid great attention to methods of extermination, but failed to suppress the pest. He accordingly sold the property but took it back again a year or two later. Again he had to abandon the run, but he believed that if he had studied the natural history of the rabbit he could have fought them successfully. In 1888 he published an interesting pamphlet on methods of combating the pest.

Henry then took up a place on Lake Te Arrau, where he encountered T. Mackenzie, M. Ross and others assisting in the search for his friend Q. McKinnon (q.v.). In 1895 he was appointed ranger under the animals protection act and stationed at Dusky Sound, with instructions to report on the best site for a house for observation and the protection of native fauna on Resolution, Parrot and Pigeon islands, and means of obtaining wingless birds from other parts of New Zealand to place in sanctuary there. He made valuable reports to the Government in which he described Maori relics on the beaches and articles left by the sealers. He described the roa (*apteryx australis*), and felt confident he could catch a takahe if he heard one.

Henry's natural history notes, many of which were printed in the annual reports of the departments and in the *Otago Witness*, are of great interest and considerable value. In 1904 it was considered advisable to recall him since he had no companion, and he was transferred to Kapiti island. He retired in 1911, and died at Auckland on 13 Nov 1929.

*App. H.R.* C1, 1895-1904; H2, 1905-09; *Otago Daily Times*, 11, 24 Jan 1893; Henry, *op. cit.*; *Otago Witness*, 31 Dec 1896.

HEPBURN, GEORGE (1803-83) was born at Leslie, in Fifeshire, Scotland. He was educated there and in Kirkcaldy, and went into business in the latter town. He was an elder of the Established Church in the congregation of Dr Alexander, whom he followed at the Disrup-

## HERD

tion into the Free Church. In 1850 he came to Otago in the *PoictieTs*, and in the following year he was appointed manager of James Macandrew's store in Dunedin. In 1859 he entered into business as a grain merchant in partnership with James Paterson, and after a successful experience of some years he sold out and went to reside at Halfway Bush.

In 1855 Hepburn was elected to the Provincial Council for Dunedin Western, which he represented till 1859, and he later sat for Wakari (1863-67). During part of the time he was chairman of committees. From 1866-69 he represented Roslyn in Parliament. He was a staunch Presbyterian, and in 1860 was one of the founders of Knox Church, of which he was an elder from the beginning. Deeply interested in Sunday schools, he was for over 60 years a teacher. He was also interested in secular education, and was for some years chairman of the Wakari school committee. Hepburn died on 9 Dec 1883. His daughter married W. Downie Stewart (q.v.), whose son, the Hon W. Downie Stewart, edited Hepburn's journals for publication in 1934.

Hepburn, *op. cit.* (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Jan 1884.

HEPPELL, GEORGE, was educated at Cambridge, where he graduated M.A. He was appointed headmaster of Nelson College. In 1859, and in his short reign showed great ability as a mathematician and some literary taste. Owing to differences with the governors, he resigned in 1861 and returned to England.

*Nelson Coll. Reg.*

HERD, JAMES, a Scottish seaman, was first in New Zealand in 1822 in command of the *Providence* trading in spars with the natives at Hokianga. Kendall assisted him as interpreter.

Herd was in command of the New Zealand Company's expedition in the *Rosanna*, which sailed from Leith in 1825 with a large body of mechanics and arrived off the southern coast of New Zealand early in 1826. He paid a visit to Port Nicholson, and at the Thames he remained for some weeks. He made a purchase of land, which included the islands of Waiheke and Pakihi, but owing to the unfriendly manner of the natives he left for Hokianga. Calling at Bay of Islands (26 Oct 1826) he complained of the hostility of the mission-

## TE HEREKIEKIE

aries who, he said, feared that colonisation would impair their influence with the Maori. At Herd's Point, Hokianga, he purchased a block of land for settlement. Some of the mechanics settled there under the protection of Patuone, Moetara and other chiefs and established the respectable colony of artisans which later visitors remarked upon.

The *Rosanna* arrived in Port Jackson on 11 Feb 1827, where her tender, the *Lambton*, was sold, and the mechanics were discharged. She took a cargo for England. Herd's report practically ended the venture, and the Company's interests were bought by the New Zealand Company of 1840. Marsden remarked that Herd's dishonest treatment of the natives on his earlier visit was responsible for their unfavourable reception.

*N.Z. Archives*; Carleton; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Sherrin and Wallace; Earle; E. J. Wakefield; Dillon; Harrop, *England and New Zealand*; *Nol. Jour.*, 1841; McNab, *Murihiku*.

TE HEREKIEKIE (1815-1861) was the chief of highest rank in Taupo when Christianity found its way there. As the son of Tauteka he was the principal chief of Ngati-Kurauia, the sub-tribe responsible for the elevation of Herea, or Te Heubeu Tukino I, to the position of paramount chief many years before. Te Wha-tupounamu, under whose authority the installation was carried out, and who had held Te Waka-iti down while Herea recited incantations over him, was his grandfather. On the side of his mother, Te Kahurangi, he was an ariki of Whanganui and the country extending northwards along the coast towards Taranaki, and traced descent from Puha-o-te-rangi, of the west coast, ancestor of the Whanganui people, and who was so tapu that people hong'i'd (or rubbed-noses) with his knee when they greeted him. Te Herekieke was also a chief of Matata and Whakatane. Over six feet in height and well proportioned, he is described as a perfect specimen of a wild New Zealander. He was a renowned athlete and is said to have jumped across a warm pool at Tokaanu which is nearly 30 feet wide. Herekieke never acknowledged the authority of Te Heubeu. He was one of the younger chiefs of Ngati-Tuwharetoa who joined the expedition of Tauteka, Te Kotukurae-roa and Te Whakarau in 1841 against Nga-

## TE HEREKIEKIE

Rauru and Ngati-Ruanui of Waitotara. Mter ravaging the country between Whanganui and Waitotara, the four chiefs occupied the pa at Patoka, where they were attacked by the local tribes under Matakatea (q.v.) and suffered severe losses. Peace was made, and when all was thought to be over, the local people slaughtered them. Tauteka and Te Whakarau were killed, but Herekieke, on account of his high tapu, was spared by Matakatea and escorted out of the pa by a chief named Tutangi-te-oko-okorau who, after detaining him for some time, assisted him to regain his own country.

In Herekieke's absence from Tokaanu in 1847 at his other pa at Turangarere, on the Hautapu river, his mother (Kahurangi) insisted on the killing of Manihera and Kereopa (q.v.), missionaries from southern Taranaki, as utu for the death of her husband at the hands of Nga-Rauru and Ngati-Ruanui. In 1841 E. J. Wakefield was the guest of Herekieke, whom he described as a commanding figure, about 28 years of age, hospitable and courteous in the extreme. Herekieke's chief pa at Tokaanu was near where the Tokaanu-Waihi road crosses the Tokaanu stream. In 1850 he objected strongly to the burial of Te Heuheu on Tongariro as likely to establish a claim to ownership of the mountain to which Te Heuheu and his sub-tribe had no rights. He threatened to call in the help of Whanganui and Tuhua to resist, and Sir George Grey, who had hoped to climb Tongariro, left the district rather than add fuel to the quarrel.

In 1853 Herekieke and Te Iwikau became reconciled through the mediation of the Rev T. S. Grace (q.v.). He married PapuDi, the daughter of Te Whakarau, who captured the celebrated patu-pounamu Pahi-kaure in Hawkes Bay. This prize is now in the hands of Te Heuheu's family. Herekieke died in 1861, and was buried at Tokaanu on 25 Jan 1862. His last words to his people were: 'Always be friendly to the pakeha, for they are your friends.'

Herekieke's son, KINGI, lived for some time with Wakefield in Wellington; a gentlemanly and well-meaning youth, but not very intelligent. In 1885 Kingi signed (at Poutu) Topia Turoa's demand for Kingite self-government.

Information from Sir Apirana Ngata and J. H. Grace; Grace; Crawford; Nicholls; E. J. Wakefield; *Waka Maori*, 1872.

## HERRICK

HERRICK, JASPER LUCAS (1833-90) was born in county Cork, Ireland, and entered the army as an ensign in the 67th Regiment of foot (1852). Two years later he retired and came to New Zealand in the *John Scott*, arriving in Auckland on 5 Mar 1859. He took up land in Hawkes Bay in partnership with J. N. Williams, and lived at Kereru, where he was postmaster (1865-69). In 1863 he was commissioned as a captain in the Napier militia, and he served under Whitmore on the East and West Coast. In the engagement at Ruakituri he was in command of the Napier volunteers. At Poutu in 1869 he had command of No. 2 company Armed Constabulary. He was in charge of the expedition at Waikaremoana, which was countermanded when he had the boats ready to carry the force across the lake. He then resigned and returned to Napier, where he married in 1870 Emily M., daughter of Richard Duncan, of Forest Gate, Essex.

Herrick represented Hampden in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1875-76) and served on many local bodies. He was accidentally killed at Oparae in 1890.

Family information; War Office records; Lambert; Cowan; Whitmore; *Napier Daily Telegraph*. 16 Oct 1925.

HERRIES, SIR WILLIAM HERBERT (1859-1923) was born in London, the son of H. C. Herries, barrister at law, and grandson of General Sir William Herries, chairman of the board of audit. He was educated at Eton College and Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. (1880). He studied geology on his Yorkshire holidays and when still young was elected a fellow of the Geological Society.

Coming to New Zealand in the *Tararua* (1881), Herries took up 900 acres of land at Shaftesbury, near Te Aroha, and in 1889 married Catherine Louisa, daughter of E. F. Roche, of county Cork and Ohineroa. He was a member of the Piako county council (1891-99), and of the Waikato hospital and charitable aid board (1893-97). In 1896 Herries was elected to Parliament for Bay of Plenty (defeating W. Kelly), and he represented that seat continuously till 1908, and under its new name of Tauranga till his death. As a leading member of the Reform party he became Minister of Railways and Native Affairs in the Massey cab-

## HESLOP

inet (1912) and also of Customs and Marine in the National government. He held his old portfolios in the new Massey government of 1919 till ill-health compelled him in 1921 to relinquish all departmental administration. He became K.C.M.G. in 1920.

Herries was a strong supporter of the turf, being president of the South Auckland Racing club and the Te Aroha Jockey club and patron of the Rotorua Jockey club. He published in 1921 *The Successful Running and Sire lines of the Modern Thoroughbred Horse*, a noteworthy treatise on breeding in Great Britain and Ireland. He contended that New Zealand would inevitably take a similar position in the southern hemisphere. Herries died on 22 Feb 1923.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 15, 19 Jun 1923; *Memoir of Sir William Herries* (1925, p); *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Feb 1923. Portrait: Parliament House.

HESLOP, JOHN (1838-1929) was born in the Cheviot Hills, Northumberland; educated at Blackburn and Redsdale, and came to New Zealand in the *Indian Queen* (1857). He gained experience on John Sutherland's run at Castlepoint and became manager of Hatuma estate. At the action of Omarunui a bullet passed through his hat. He was later corporal in the Waipawa cavalry. With his father Heslop took up a swamp property at Patangata, which they had to abandon after the Waipawa river had broken a new course and transformed the swamp into a lake. In 1863 Heslop and S. Thorpe chartered the *Rangatira* to ship bullock teams and merchandise to Otago, intending to cart stores to the Dunstan. The outlook being unfavourable, they withdrew and carted wool in Hawkes Bay for some years. In 1872 he drove stock through the Manawatu gorge. He explored other unfrequented routes in Waikato and the King Country. In 1873 he settled on a farm within 10 miles of Wanganui. He became a member of the first county council (1876), on which he sat until leaving the district in 1883 to take up a new property at Mawhitiwhitu, where he was a successful breeder of shorthorn and Holstein cattle. He was chairman of the Goat Valley and Matapu school committees, a member of the Taranaki land board (1904-21), the lands for settlement board, the Egmont forest board, the forest conservation board, and the Wanganui, Hawera

## TE HEUHEU

and Egmont licensing committees; the Hawera county council (1884-98; chairman six years); the Waimate road board (10 years), and the Taranaki hospital and charitable aid board.

Heslop tried to win the Patea seat in Parliament (being defeated by F. H. Haselden Nov 1901). In 1921 he was appointed a Government member of the assessment court. Heslop married (1874) a daughter of M. J. Goodson (East Coast). Re died on 6 Feb 1929.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p).

TE HEUHEU TUKINO I, or HEREA, a leading Ngati-Tuwharetoa chief at the end of the eighteenth century, was the son of the Ngati-Turumakina chief Tukino and his wife Parewairere. After the death of the paramount chief of the tribe, Rangi-tua-Matatoru, Rerea was invited by the sub-tribes Ngati-Turangi and Ngati-Kurauia, under Whatu-pouamu, to accept the paramount chieftainship in defiance of Te Waka-iti, who was of high rank. Accordingly Rerea challenged the leadership and overcame Te Waka-iti in a duel with the pouwhenua, thus becoming undisputed chief of Ngati-Tuwharetoa. Re married Rangi-aho, a chieftainess of Ngati-Manipoto and Waikato.

Ris son, Tukino, had been named by his mother 'Te Reubeu' in the following circumstances: Before his birth a party of the tribe had gone to the Ngati-Maniopoto country to bring back the bones of her relative Rangi Pumamao, who had died there. Though they knew where to find the bones, the spot was so overgrown with the shrub maheubeu that they could not without great difficulty penetrate the shallow cave in which they lay. The name Heubeu was accordingly given to the child (which was already conceived), and Rerea himself, after he had gained the leadership, was called Rangi-maheubeu by his wife and others of the tribe. A wise councillor and strong ruler, Herea presided for many years over the tribe. Re died in his palisaded pa at Waitahanui, and was buried at Motu-o-apa.

TE HEUHEU II, or MANANUI (?1780-1846) was one of the most celebrated chiefs in New Zealand when British sovereignty was proclaimed. The son of Rerea Tukino and Rangi-aho (of Ngati-Maniapoto), he was descended from Ngatoro-i-Rangi, the priest of the Arawa

## TE REUHEU

canoe who discovered the central mountains in the North Island. Through his mother he derived great mana from Ngati-Maniapoto and Waikato. Re received the name of Te Heubeu in the manner described (see supra). Called back from a war expedition at Poutu to the deathbed of Taipahau (a great tohunga of Te Reubeu's own sub-tribe), he received through the rite of ngautaringa all the sacred wisdom and supernatural powers. Re was thereafter called 'Mananui.'

Te Reubeu had outstanding success in war and great influence in council. As a warrior he made several expeditions with the central tribes against the people of Reretaunga, especially Ngati-Kahungunu, and he assisted in repeated endeavours to instal the Ngati-Raukawa in the Rawkes Bay district. On one of these expeditions (in 1820) while he was besieging Roto-a-Tara (near Pukehou) a detachment went off to Waimarama, where they lost Te Reubeu's brother Manuwhiri, the Taupo chief Tawake, and Peehi Turoa's brother Rangimarama. As he raised the siege Ngati-Kahungunu taunted Mananui with his grey hairs. Two years later he returned with a stronger taua and reduced the pa with great slaughter. About 1828, he returned with a very strong taua of Ngati-Tuwharetoa, Waikato, Ngati-Raukawa, Ngati-Maru and Arawa, and besieged Ngati-Kahungunu and the Ngapuhi chief Te Wera at Mahia peninsula. On the way there, while passing Wairoa, his section of the army defeated an enemy force, capturing the chief Te Reketua-te-Rangi and his daughter, whom he released and eventually befriended. An avenging taua of Ngati-Kahungunu and their allies two years later invaded Taupo and overpowered a pa at Omakukura. They had intended going on against Waikato, but Te Reubeu made peace on behalf of Ngati-Tuwharetoa and Waikato and persuaded them not to go farther.

In 1825 Te Reubeu accompanied Ahi Karamu on the heke of Ngati-Raukawa to Kapiti. Te Rauparaha tried to persuade him to join his federation, but his objection to the Ngati-Maru prevented him doing so. In 1832, with their Whanganui allies, the Ngati-Tuwharetoa under Te Reubeu attacked the heke Tama te Uaua at the passage of the Whanganui river, but was repulsed with loss, including his brother Te Popo and the Taupo chief

## TE HEUHEU

Tutawa. In 1834, in response to an appeal from Te Rauparaha for help in quelling the disputes of the tribes who were now located in the south, Te Heuheu led a taua of 800. Mter stubborn fighting, in which his brother Te Papaka was killed, the Ngati-Awa were defeated at Pakatutu and peace was concluded at Haowhenua, the vanquished tribe agreeing to stay south of W"aikanae.

Te Heuheu on this occasion marched as far as Port Nicholson. He resented the efforts made by the missions to Christianise his people, but befriended them for the advantage he would receive in attracting trade. To Selwyn, who visited him in 1843, he complained that no missionary had been sent to him, but said that he would take his time to decide upon the acceptance of Christianity, or which creed he would choose. In 1840 Iwikau, while at Bay of Islands, signed the Treaty of Waitangi and received red blankets and other gifts distributed by Captain Hobson. When Pirikawau and a government commissioner called on him Te Heuheu warmly repudiated the act of his brother, and insisted on the return of the blankets. He received Edward Jerningham Wakefield (in 1842) with cordiality and dignity, but suspecting that he wished to buy land, declared firmly that he had sold neither his land nor his authority, and warned the pakeha to remain along the seaboard and not to invade the interior of the country. In common with other visitors Wakefield found Te Heuheu a dignified and commanding personality. Sir William Martin described him as 'a grand old heathen chief, a man of huge size and weight; a regular aristocrat.' Richard Taylor considered him the perfect picture of a savage chief. Angas, who was in Taupo in 1844, pictures him in the same light-imposing and dignified, a fine old man, generous and hospitable. D. McLean, too, was impressed by his intellectual powers.

Herea had lived in a palisaded pa at Waitahanui. When Te Heuheu became chief he abandoned this pa and took up his abode at the village of Te Rapa, near Tokaanu. In 1842 his elder son, who had been living with the Ngapuhi chief Tamati Waka Nene in the North (and had assumed the name Te Waka) returned to his home accompanied by a strong deputation of northern tribesmen and the gift

384

## TE HEUHEU

of a horse. In Jan 1844 Te Heuheu led a strong war party to exact utu from Ngati-Rauru and Ngati-Ruanui. While he was encamped at Whanganui Bishop Selwyn and Major Richmond arrived in H.M.S. *Hazard* and by the combined efforts of the missionaries he was persuaded to return to Taupo. Te Heuheu was a great tohunga and a capable military tactician. Sagacious and eloquent in council, his mana was greatly enhanced by his relationship with Waikato and Ngati-Maniapoto.

He met his death tragically in a landslide which enveloped his village on 7 May 1846, burying himself and his wives, Te Waka and 54 others. A younger brother, Tokena te Kereihi, escaped, and the heir presumptive, Pataatai, was absent with his mother's people. Owing to tribal objections to the proposal to bury the remains of the chief on the mountain, Tongariro, they were interred close to the scene of the tragedy, but were removed secretly to Tongariro in 1850. Sixty years later they were again exhumed and interred in the mausoleum at the village of Waihi, close to Te Rapa.

Amongst the chiefs of Ngati-Tuwharetoa was a proverb, which originated with Potatau te Wherowhero in the fifties: 'Ko Tongariro te maunga. Ko Taupo te moana. Ko Te Heuheu te tangata: (Tongariro is the mountain; Taupo is the sea; Te Heuheu is the man.) Owing to the inexperience of his son Pataatai, Mananui was succeeded by Iwikau, his brother.

Personal information from Sir Apirana Ngata, J. H. Grace, R. H. Ward, Russell Duncan and Judge F. O. V. Acheson; Bidwill; Cooper; Selwyn, *Annals*; E. J. "Wakefield, *Adventure*; Crawford; R. Taylor; Thomson; Buller; Tucker; Angas (p); Cowan; Carleton.

TE HEUHEU III, or IWIKAU (?1790-1862) was the younger brother of Te Heuheu II, and for many years his war leader. He was smallish in stature, slighter in build and less prepossessing in appearance.

A brave and determined warrior, Iwikau took part in most of his brother's expeditions and led in battle, though it is said his brother planned the operations. In 1832 at the battle at Putikiwaranui, on the Whanganui river, he crossed the river and carried out an effective flank attack. Fearing the firearms of the northern tribes, Iwikau accompanied the Rev Henry Williams to Bay of Islands in Jan 1840 and

## TE HEUHEU

affixed his signature to the Treaty of Waitangi. This act Te Heuheu repudiated emphatically. In 1841, against the wish of Te Heuheu, Iwikau accompanied Tauteka and Herekieke in their expedition against Ngati-Ruanui and Nga-Rauru. Wiremu Kingi te Matakatea and Te Anaua tried to dissuade them from proceeding, and Iwikau returned when the taua reached Putiki. In 1844 he went south again with Te Heuheu to avenge the losses of this expedition but was persuaded to return by Bishop Selwyn, officials and missionaries. Shortly after his accession as leader (1846), he made a final peace with the Taranaki tribes.

Fearing another landslide, Iwikau removed his pa from Te Rapa to Pukawa. He strongly resented the treatment to which Maori chiefs of rank were sometimes subjected by Europeans, and the steady encroachment of the pakeha upon their lands and mana. He was a warm friend of Governor Grey, and paid a visit to Auckland in 1847 to be present at his swearing in as Governor-in-chief. He was then oldish, with a grey beard but hair still black. Grey gave him a horse, and next year made a noteworthy journey to Taupo in his company, Iwikau going to Auckland to escort him. Cooper's journal" of this visit shows that the Ngati-Tuwharetoa were still heathens, but in 1850 Iwikau set aside land at Pukawa, near his new pa, for a mission station. This was opened by the Rev T. S. Grace (q.v.), who became a close personal friend of Iwikau and a staunch supporter of peace during the troubled years that followed. Though restrained by missionary influence from fighting, Iwikau made many journeys in the interests of peace, notably in 1857 when he went to Hawkes Bay to curb Te Hapuku. Grace considered him 'a fine honest chief of the Maori race. With all his faults, he was the noblest Maori I ever met: He was a constant attendant at church services but refused to put away his wives in order that he might be baptised.

Feeling deeply the grievances and the imminent extinction of the Maori race, Iwikau sympathised with the King movement from its inception, but he opposed Matene te Whiwhi's "first overtures in 1853 lest Potatau should be elected king over himself. He was much impressed" by the meeting in the Ngati-Ruanui country in 1854 and the rise of the land league.

385

## TE HEUHEU

A few months later Iwikau himself convened a meeting to be held at Pukawa; A Roman Catholic mission had been established at Waihi, and on this occasion a number of priests were present and the French flag was hoisted. In the following year the king was elected. Te Heuheu regarded the movement as being peaceful and altruistic, and continued" his efforts to compose the disputes of the tribes. In 1857 he went with Grace to the Whanganui to make peace, but was fired upon, and after persevering for three days he retired without succeeding. In proceeding to the King meeting in 1857 he spoke strongly to Governor Browne at Rangiriri and Otawhao about the insulting treatment of Maori chiefs, the desertion of half-caste children by their fathers, and other native grievances.

Throughout the Taranaki war Iwikau remained quietly at his own place trying to restrain his people. This became increasingly difficult in their enthusiasm for the King movement, and his fierce temper suffered much irritation. He supported both Potatau and Tawhiao, and admitted sorrowfully that if Waikato became involved in the war his people would have to join in. Shortly before his death he became reconciled with Herekieke. His death, which was ascribed to the fact of some native children having broken up a tapu canoe, took place in Oct 1862. His principal wife, Ruingarangi, survived him. Iwikau was succeeded by his nephew, Pataatai, or Tukino.

Personal information from Sir Apirana Ngata, J. H. Grace and F. O. V. Acheson; Cowan; Angas(p); Grace; Thomson; Buick, *Waitangi*; Selwyn, *Annals*; *Proc. of Maori Parliament*, 1857; *Taranaki Herald*, 6 Dec 1862.

TE HEUHEU TUK!NO IV, HORONUKU, or PATAATAI (1826-88), the younger son of Te Heuheu II, took the name Horonuku from the circumstances of the death of his father. Pataatai was with his relatives the Ngati-Maniapoto when the landslide at Te Rapa occurred. On becoming head of the tribe he assumed also the patronymic •Te Heubeu.' A grandson of Rangiaho, a chieftainess of Ngati-Maniapoto, he was absent with his mother's people at Papatumotu, in the Rangitoto range, at the time of the disaster. As he was too young for the leadership of the tribe his uncle Iwikau (q.v.) ruled as regent.

## TE HEUHEU

In 1847 Horonuku was escorted back to his father's people by a great **gathering of Ngati-Maniapoto, vVaikato and Ngati-Haua**, including Tawhiao and Tamihana te Waharoa. Though a man of great stature, Horonuku was not a distinguished warrior, and in fact never engaged seriously in warfare. He was a **staunch** supporter of Christianity and the **missions**, but sympathised strongly with the King movement; and when the Waikato war broke out (1863) he warned the missionaries that he could no longer protect them. Raising a taua of **200 men**, who attended a solemn service at the **mission** at Pukawa, he embarked in a fleet of canoes furnished by the Ngati-te-Rangi-ita, and proceeded through lake Taupo and down the **Waikato** river to join the King forces at Meremere. Finding the King troops already **retreating** before General Cameron's advance, he declined to become involved in the fighting at Orakau, from which he quietly withdrew his taua, and **retreated** to his own country. Meanwhile the Rev T. S. Grace had abandoned the mission. Horonuku was not again on the warpath until 1869, when he yielded to pressure by Te Kooti and brought a detachment to his help. With this contingent he garrisoned one of the works at Porere, a little to the west of the fortified position of Mahaukura, west of lake Roto-arrā. Shortly after the attack commenced, on 3 Oct 1869, Horonuku escaped to the bush with his men and **remained** in hiding. In response to a message from Colonel McDonnell and Sir D. McLean advising him to withdraw from association with Te Kooti, he came out and tendered his submission. McLean had Horonuku and his family sent to Napier, where they were admitted to a benevolent parole to keep them out of harm. In 1870 they returned to their homes.

Horonuku only slowly became reconciled to British rule. In 1878 he presided over the native parliament, but took little part in its proceedings. He **remained** a Kingite at heart, and he and his son Tureiti in 1885 signed Topia Turoa's demand for self-government. In 1886 the native land court awarded to Horonuku the peaks of the three mountains. Anxious to secure the future of this region, he accepted the suggestion of his son-in-law (L. M. Grace, q.v.) and presented the area, amounting to 6,500 acres, to the government as the nucleus

## HEWETSON

of a national park. It was later **increased** by purchase to 150,000 acres. Horonuku died on 30 Jul 1888.

The inscription on the monument at Waihi and the explanation of this given by Judge F. O. V. Acheson regarding the use of the title 'Horonuku' conflict with the statements of James Cowan, J. H. Grace and R. H. Ward. Acheson says that the leaders of the tribe when the monument was erected desired the name Horonuku to be applied to Te Heuheu II, who was himself killed in the landslide in 1846.

Cowan; Grace (p); *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Nov 1935 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Aug 1888.

TE HEUHEU TUKINO V, or TURBITI (1865-1921) was the son of Pataatai, and succeeded him as chief in 1888. As a child of four years he accompanied his father on the campaign in support of Te Kooti, and was taken to Napier with his parents after the surrender at Porere. A man of great ability and personal **charm**, Tukino was proud of his ancestral traditions and deeply schooled in the poetry and lore of his race. Once he contested the Eastern Maori seat in Parliament against Wi Pere (1893), and on four occasions (1899, 1902, 1905 and 1908) he contested the Western seat. He was genuinely interested in the welfare of his **people**, and much impressed Sir John Gorst on his visit to New Zealand in 1906 by his perfect **command** of English and sensible appreciation of the position of the Maori. He was responsible for the removal of his grandfather's remains from their burial place on the side of Mount Tonganro to the mausoleum at Waihi (1910).

Te Heuheu actively promoted the recruiting of Maori soldiers for the war of 1914-18, and gave 35,000 acres of land for farms for them on their return. In 1918 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member at the time of his death (on 1 Jun 1921).

Tureiti's eldest son, Hepi, died in 1918, and he was therefore succeeded in the title and chieftainship by his younger son HOANI.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1921; Gorst, *N.Z. Revisited*; Cowan in *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Nov 1935 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 2 Jun 1921. Portrait: Parliament House.

HEWETSON, JOSEPH, came to **Nelson** in the forties and established a business in Motueka as flounniller and sawmiller. He represented

## HEWETT

Motueka in the Provincial Council (1859-61) and died in Jan 1901.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v, 232; *The Colonist*, Jan 1901.

HEWETT, JAMES DUFF (1830-1865) was the son of Colonel W. Hewett, of the Rifle Brigade (a Waterloo veteran who died in 1891). He was educated at Bonn University in Germany, and was intended for a military life, but came to New Zealand in 1855 and settled on the Toi farm at Kai-iwi. In 1858 he married Ellen Baker. Living in a district which was constantly disputed by the disaffected Maori, Hewett had many escapes and was twice burned out. He was chairman of the road board; a justice of the peace (1862); ensign in the militia (Oct 1863) and captain (May 1864).

In 1863 he was elected to represent Wanganui and Rangitikei in the Wellington Provincial Council. He favoured separation as a blow at provincialism, but early in 1864 changed his opinion. Hewett introduced Dr Featherston and J. C. Crawford to the disaffected chiefs when they discussed the Maori boundary, and thereafter was several times warned of impending attacks on his farm. Nevertheless he persisted in his military duties, declined to leave his farm and go to the stockade at night, and continued to employ Maori farm labour. He was murdered by Hauhau on 18 Feb 1865. His widow and family, after living for some years in England, settled in Wanganui.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Gudgeon; Ellen Hewett, *Looking Back*, 1925; *Independent*, 11 Feb 1865.

HEWITSON, WILLIAM (1860-1932) was born at Smythesdale, Victoria, and educated at the High School at Ballarat, Ormond College, Melbourne, and Melbourne University. He entered the service of the Union Bank of Australia, but afterwards studied for the ministry of the Presbyterian Church, was licensed in 1888 and put in charge at Brunswick. In 1895 he was appointed to Knox Church, Dunedin. Hewitson was convenor of the foreign missions committee of the Church (1901-22). In 1909 he was appointed master of Knox College, a post which he administered with conspicuous success until shortly before his death (on 8 Dec 1932). He was moderator of the General Assembly in 1928, a member of the council of

## HICKSON

Otago University (1903-22), and of the senate of the University of New Zealand (1912-22).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Otago Daily Times*, 10 Dec 1932.

HICKSON, WILLIAM (1810-85) was born in Liverpool and was a member of the firm of Ridgway and Co., who chartered ships to the New Zealand Company. Amongst these was the *Martha Ridgway*, which made two voyages (1840 and 1841).

Hickson came out in the *Theresa* at the end of 1843 to wind up the affairs of the branch establishment in Wellington (Ridgway, Guyton and Earp). He brought only his wife and elder children, but liked the prospect so well that he entered into business on his own account (as Hickson and Co., merchants and shipowners), and was at one time a successful shipowner trading between Sydney and Wellington. He made a special study of marine insurance, shipping and finance. Hickson was called to the nominated Legislative Council by Governor Grey (1848), and was at the same time a member of the Council for the province of New Munster. When the new constitution came into force he did not at once seek election, but in 1854, having retired from business, he was elected to the Provincial Council for Wellington City (which he served 1854-56 and 1865-69). He was a member of Borslase's executive for two years, holding the post of provincial treasurer part of the time. He was a member of the first town board (1863). As a landowner Hickson quite early imported from Australia stud sheep, purebred cattle and thoroughbred horses. He owned some good racehorses and was a constant supporter of the Wanganui and Wellington Racing clubs. For a while he was president of the Wellington Jockey club, and for many years acted as judge. He was also chairman of trustees of the Hutt Park racecourse.

Hickson was a senior justice of the peace from an early date, at a time when the first three on the list were almost automatically invited to join the Legislative Council. He presided on the bench until a year or two before his death. In 1857, when the steamer *Wonga* was sent down to Wellington from Auckland to be sold, Hickson, Hunter and Rhodes by a vigorous canvass secured a capital of £5,000 to

## HIGGINS

purchase her. Hickson was chairman of the company for the first five years. It bought also the *Stormbird* from John Jones, and paid its shareholders 10 per cent. each year for four years, and then returned them £19 for each £10 invested. Hickson was a man of great strength and vigorous constitution. He died on 6 Jul 1885. (See C. Rous MARTEN.)

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 7 Jul 1885; *Evening Post*, 28 Oct 1929 (p).

HIGGINS, ROBERT LUKE (1828-92) was born in Australia and was managing runs in Victoria for John Terry Murphy (a cousin of Gabriel Read), who sent him across to Canterbury with stock to take up a station. He took up Murphy's run on the Waimakariri, and acted as managing partner until Murphy's death, when he was executor. He also had a property of his own near Cust.

Higgins represented Ashley in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1857-61) and Oxford (1870-75). Gabriel Read's diary (in the Dunedin Public Library) shows that Higgins did him many services, which he recognised by sending a quantity of seeds of trees collected in Tasmania by the naturalist Dickenson. From these the fine plantations at Cust originated. Higgins died on 9 Nov 1892.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Adand; *Lyttelton Times*, 29 Nov 1892.

HIGHTON, ALFRED HENRY (1858-1915) was educated at Marlborough College, England, under Dean Farrar. He went to Cambridge in 1875 (St John's College), and graduated M.A. in 1878. He was then selected out of many applicants for the post of classical master and lecturer in science at St Peter's College, Adelaide. A few years later he was appointed mathematics and natural science master at the Auckland Grammar School, and in 1886 headmaster of the Southland Boys' and Girls' High School. He established the chemical laboratory there and took a great interest in athletics, but he was reserved and rather feared by his pupils. Resigning in 1843, he took over a milk condensing factory at Underwood. This was not a success, but he afterwards had a prosperous dairy business in Gipp'sland, Victoria. He died in Melbourne on 27 May 1915.

*Southland BR.S. Reg.*; *The Argus* (Melbourne), 28 May 1915.

## HILL

TE HIKO-O-TE-RANGI, a Ngati-Toa chief, was a son of Te Pehi Kupe (q.v.). During his father's absence in England he was chief of his tribe, but was unable to withstand the overbearing Te Rauparaha, whose influence grew inordinately. After his father's death at Kaia-pohia Te Hiko directed his energies towards obtaining utu against Ngati-Tahu, and took a leading part in the plans for the capture of Tamaiharanui (q.v.). After the capture of Onawe (Akaroa harbour) he remained behind owing to his canoe being out of repair. In spite of his part in this treachery Te Hiko was inclined to clemency and treasured the humane precepts of his father. When Kaiapohia was reduced he captured Tangatahara, who actually killed his father, but would not permit him to be killed and liberated him before returning to Kapiti.

In 1832 Te Hiko and Reretawhangawhanga led a taua to help the heke Tama te Uaua, whose passage was contested by Whanganui and Taupo. Thereafter there was no further fighting.

E. J. Wakefield found Te Hiko a man of chieftainlike demeanour, with noble and intelligent physiognomy, quiet and mild in speech, and inoffensive in his intercourse with the whites. He signed the deed of sale to the New Zealand Company (24 Oct 1839) and was anxious to receive clothing and utensils rather than guns and powder. Te Hiko was absent when Major Bunbury visited Kapiti to obtain signatures to the Treaty of Waitangi.

Stack; Buick, *Old New Zealander*; Travers; Cowan and Pomare.

HILL, GEORGE (ROWLEY) (1837-1930) joined the Royal Navy in 1851, and saw service in the Crimea, being in H.M.S. *Leopard* at the bombard of Sebastopol and afterwards in the Baltic. In the Indian mutiny he was with Peel's naval brigade, and was slightly wounded at Lucknow. Leaving his ship (H.M.S. *Hannibal*) at Palermo in 1860, he served with Garibaldi and was wounded. When he rejoined his ship, his desertion was pardoned. In 1863 Hill came to New Zealand and joined von Tempsky's Forest Rangers. He served in Taranaki and against the Hauhau on the East Coast in No. 1 company Military Settlers and the Armed Constabulary. At the siege of Hiruharama pa,

## HILL

near Mohaka on 10-12 Apr 1869 he led a party of natives past the rifle pits of Te Kooti's men and so gained admission to the pa. Hill was the life of the defence thereafter, strengthening the palisade and keeping up a steady and destructive fire from the angles. He was recommended for the New Zealand Cross, which was granted. After the war he joined the submarine mining section of the permanent force at Fort Cautley, and afterwards lived at Takapuna. He held two medals presented by the Royal Humane Society for saving human life. Hill died on 15 Feb 1930.

Lambert (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; Cowan (p); Gudgeon (p); *The Dominion*, 7 Jan 1927; *Evening Post*, 15 Jul 1879.

HILL, HENRY THOMAS (1849-1933) was born at Lye, Worcestershire, the son of a nail factor. Educated in his native town, he completed his training as a school teacher at Cheltenham Training College. He organised St Mark's school at Nottingham.

In 1873 Hill came to Canterbury in the *Merope* under engagement to the provincial government, to organise schools. He also taught science at Christ's College and mathematics at Miss Lohse's, and organised the first teachers' association (which held its conference at Christchurch in 1876). While he was engaged at the East Christchurch school, he studied at the University for his B.A., which he gained in 1878. He won the first Bowen prize. In 1878 he was appointed secretary and inspector to the Hawkes Bay education board, a position he held for 36 years. He started the *New Zealand Schoolmaster* and edited it for some years, and was a member of the commission on teachers' salaries.

Hill had a strong scientific bent and spent much time in the study of geology (F.G.S. 1896), Maori history and folklore. He contributed many papers to the proceedings of the New Zealand Institute and was president of the Hawkes Bay branch and a governor of the New Zealand Institute. He was a member of the Napier borough council and mayor (1917-19), and was a member also of the hospital board, the Hawkes Bay power board, and the High School governors, and chairman of the Parke island old people's home. He contested the Napier seat in 1920. He was a member of the Anglican diocesan synod.

## HILLYARD

Hill married (1873) Emily, daughter of John Knowles. He died on 15 Jul 1933.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; Hight and Candy; *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 16 Jul 1933; *Daily Telegraph* (Napier), 15 Jul.

HILL, JAMES (1822-97) was hospital sergeant of the 57th Regiment, with which he served in Corfu, India and Crimea, and came to New Zealand in 1861. He was steward of the New Plymouth hospital (1867-82). In 1869 Hill was elected to the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell, but a few weeks later retired in the belief that his position disqualified him. He was defeated by Upjohn at the by-election. He died on 2 Jan 1897.

HILL, JOSEPH SYDNEY (1851-95) was born at Barnack, near Stamford, England, the son of a builder. Orphaned at the age of nine, he entered a working school at Haverstock Hill and at 14 was apprenticed to a trade. The Rev Alexander Burton, of Trinity Church, Southampton, persuaded him to study for the ministry, and he passed his examinations after two years at Reading College and a further course at the C.M.S. College at Islington. There he met and married Lucilla Leachman. Ordained at St Paul's (1876), he proceeded to Lagos, but was soon compelled by fever to return to England, and was appointed to the cure of Holy Trinity, Richmond. In 1878 he was sent by the C.M.S. to New Zealand, where he worked with great success amongst the Maori in Hawkes Bay and Auckland. He was also a strong supporter of the Y.M.C.A. in Auckland. In 1890 Hill returned to England and was engaged in home mission work until 1893, when he was consecrated as Bishop of West Equatorial Africa in succession to Bishop Crowther. He and his wife died of fever in the Niger diocese on 9 Jan 1894.

Biography by Rose E. Faulkner, 1895 (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 24 Feb 1894, 9 Mar 1895.

HILLYARD, CHARLES, was a Canterbury sheep farmer and owned the Wai-iti run, on the Waimakariri river, from 1860 till 1868. He represented Mandeville in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1867-70). He left shortly afterwards for Fiji and did not return to New Zealand.

*Parltry Record*; Acland.

## TE HINAKI

TE, HINAKI (?-1821) was a chief of the Ngati-Paoa, whose stronghold was at Mokoia, Tamaki. He was a son of Te Whakapakonga. It is said that he was taken in the *Calder* to Valparaiso, where he was well treated and received many presents, and that on returning in the *St Patrick* he made an attempt to seize the ship, but was frustrated by Captain Florence. Afraid of the power of Hongi, Hinaki entered actively into the traffic in spars, delivering 50 spars to the *St Patrick* for one musket. Marsden in 1820 concluded a peace between him and his enemies at Hauraki. Major Cruise took his son Te Tata to Sydney, and Hinaki himself went in 1821. He met Hongi there on terms of friendship and came back with him to Bay of Islands. After entertaining Hinaki at the Bay, Hongi prepared a powerful expedition against him. Hinaki was besieged at Mokoia (Nov 1821) and shot by Hongi during the storming of the pa, which was accompanied by great slaughter and cannibal feasts.

S. P. Smith, *Maori Wars*; Cruise; Marsden, L. and J.; Buller; Bayly.

HINDMARSH, ALFRED HUMPHREY (1860-1918) was born at Adelaide and educated at St Peter's College there. In 1878 he came to New Zealand. He was for some years in the office of Smith, Chapman, Sinclair and White, solicitors, Dunedin, and was admitted a barrister and solicitor at Christchurch (1890). In 1894 he commenced to practise in Wellington. He was a member of the City Council (1905-15) and of the Wellington harbour board from 1911. Taking a keen interest in Liberal politics, he was defeated by R. C. Kirk for selection as Labour candidate for Wellington City in 1898. In 1911 he was elected M.H.R. for Wellington South, defeating R. A. Wright and in 1914 he defeated J. P. Luke. At the time of his death (on 13 Nov 1918) Hindmarsh was leader of the Parliamentary Labour party.

*Evening Post*, 13 Nov 1918; *N.Z. Times*, 14 Nov; *N.Z.P.D.*, 13 Nov 1918, pp 343, 355; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi. Portrait: Parliament House.

His father, JOHN HINDMARSH (1820-1903) was the son of Rear-admiral Sir John Hindmarsh, Governor of South Australia. He was educated at the Royal Naval College at Portsmouth, but being too delicate for the Navy he accompanied his father to South Australia, where he spent

## HIPANGO

some years surveying. He helped to layout the towns of Hindmarsh and Walkerville. In 1841 he returned to England, entered the Middle Temple, and was called to the bar. He then settled on a large property at Victor harbour, South Australia, also practising law and acting as revising barrister. He married a daughter of Captain Leworthy, R.N. In 1878 Hindmarsh came to New Zealand for the benefit of his health and acquired a property near Napier.

HINDS, SAMUEL (1793-1872) was born at Barbados and educated in England. At Queen's College, Oxford, he graduated M.A. (1818) and four years later was ordained. He was associated with the Society for the Conversion of Negroes. In 1827 he was appointed vice-principal of St Alban Hall, Oxford, under Whately, to whom as archbishop of Dublin, he was domestic chaplain (1831). In 1832 he wrote an essay on colonisation which was published as an appendix to Whately's *Thoughts on Secondary Punishment*. He was later prebendary of Castleknock and in 1846 chaplain to the Lord-lieutenant, in 1848 dean of Carlisle, and in 1849 Bishop of Norwich. Hinds was on the committee of the New Zealand Association. He published in 1838 *The Latest Official Documents relating to New Zealand*, in which he supported the plan of the Association and replied to the criticisms of the Rev J. Beecham and Dandeson Coates. He gave evidence before the select committee in 1840.

*D.N.B.*; Hinds, *op. cit.*; Marais; Harrop, *Wakefield*; O'Connor.

HIPANGO, JOHN WILLIAMS (HOANI WIREMU) (? -1865), an influential chief of Whanganui (Ngati-Tumango hapu), was a landed proprietor and lived at Putikiwaranui. Though inferior in rank to Te Anaua, his personal influence was greater. He early befriended the Europeans, embraced Christianity as soon as the missionaries arrived at Whanganui, and was himself an exemplary teacher. In 1846, when the Taupo chiefs and Mamaku made a hostile raid upon Wanganui, Hipango and the Putiki chiefs were appealed to for protection, and they garrisoned the town pending the arrival of a military force. On the murder of the Gilfillan family Hipango offered to pursue the murderers, and with five of his tribes-

## HIRST

men he followed them up the river. Both canoes were upset in the fight, but five of the six murderers were captured and brought back to Wanganui for trial. Governor Grey granted Hipango a pension for his services and he was appointed an assessor (1849).

In 1855 the Whanganui natives furnished Hipango with money to enable him to accompany the Rev Richard Taylor (q.v.) to England and convey their gifts to the Queen. These included Te Anaua's greenstone mere (a token of allegiance), a bag made by his wife, Rawinia, and an ancient family weapon sent by Pehi Turoa. The gifts were presented in audience with the Queen and Prince Albert at Windsor. On his return to New Zealand Hipango at once went to Taranaki with other elliefs and Mr Taylor to endeavour to effect peace between Rawiri Waiau and Katatore, but without success. He then entered St Stephen's School at Auckland to study for the ministry, but having to desist owing to failing eyesight, he accepted with reluctance from Sir George Grey a position of trust at Wanganui.

When the Hauhau, after recovering from their defeat at Moutoa, threatened Wanganui again by advancing down the river, Hipango was chosen to command the friendly force which advanced towards the Hauhau camp at Ohoutahi, above Hiruharama. Having skillfully manoeuvred to gain the advantage of his opponents, he declined to be the first to shed blood, and twice sent back to the enemy a captured picket. The Hauhau then commenced the attack, and after some blood had been shed Hipango led the assault on their position. Receiving a bullet in the chest, he walked to the rear and handed over the command to Haka-raia. He was carried down to Wanganui where he died on 24 Feb 1865. He was accorded an impressive public funeral and some time later a monument to his memory was erected in Wanganui.

His son, HORI KINGI HIPANGO (b. 1852) died while visiting England with Taylor (29 Jun 1871). Another son WALTER, presented Hipango park to Wanganui.

Buller; Downes; Taylor, *Past and Present*.

HIRST, HENRY (1838-1911) was born at Huddersfield, Yorkshire, and educated at Huddersfield College. Coming to New Zealand by the

## HIRST

*Agra* (1858), he settled in Otago, but soon removed to Southland and took up land at Te Anau and Manapouri. Having accompanied Captain Watts-Russell (q.v.) to prospect for grazing land at Breaksea Sound, he established a butchery at Riverton, and once drove a mob of cattle from there to Gabriel's Gully (1861).

Later he took up a run at Orepuki, and when it was resumed for gold mining purposes he bought a freehold property.

In 1877 he was elected to the Wallace county council, of which he was a member until his death, and chairman (1877-85). In 1879 Hirst was elected M.H.R. for Wallace (defeating J. P. Joyce), but he was defeated in 1884 and 1887. He strongly advocated the Riverton railway. As a young man he was a good cricketer and captained the Riverton club. He married (1860) a daughter of William Dallas. Hirst died on 14 Dec 1911.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1912; *Southland Times*, 15 Dec 1911; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Dec 1900. Portrait: Parliament House.

HIRST, THOMAS (1805-83) was born at Halifax, Yorkshire. He was already in middle age and had made a competence as a woolstapler when he sailed for New Zealand with his family in the *Gwalior* (1852). He took up a farm at Bell Block, Taranaki, and worked it until the outbreak of the Maori war compelled most of the settlers to retire to New Plymouth. He then with his wife paid a visit to England, sailing in the *William Brown*. The ship was burned at sea off Madeira and the passengers were rescued from the boats by a Swedish brig (Oct 1861).

On returning to New Zealand Hirst resided mainly in New Plymouth, taking a great interest in public life and in proposals for the improvement of the town and harbour. He constructed several ingenious models of concrete moles, breakwaters and floating landing stages. He stood for Parliament in 1853 and was a member of the Provincial Council for New Plymouth for one year (1865-66), trying unsuccessfully to regain a seat in 1873. He did duty for many years as a justice of the peace and was a prominent member of the Anglican synod. Hirst died on 11 Oct 1883 and his widow (who was a daughter of Jonathan Bracken, of Luddenden, Yorkshire) on 8 Sep 1901.

## HISLOP

*Taranaki P.C. minutes and Gaz.*; Jacobs; *Taranaki Herald*, 12 Oct 1883; 9, 10 Sep 1901; *News*, 13 Oct 1883. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

HISLOP, JAMES (1870-1932), son of Andrew Hislop of Stirling, Scotland, was born and educated at Taieri, Otago. Joining the Post and Telegraph department in 1885, he was assistant private secretary to Sir Joseph Ward (1900-06) and secretary until 1911, accompanying him when he went as Prime Minister to England in 1907, 1909 and 1911. In 1912 he was appointed Under-secretary to the department of Internal Affairs, from which post he retired in 1928. (O.B.E., 1919; M.V.O., 1920; C.V.O., 1927.) In 1900 he married Anne Grove, eldest daughter of Benjamin O'Connor, of Dunedin. He died on 7 Jul 1932.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 8 Jul 1932 (p).

HISLOP, JOHN (1821-1904) was born at Pentland, Midlothian. He received his education in Edinburgh, took the prize in every class at the School of Arts (now Heriot Watt College), and left with his diploma at the age of 17. Next year Hislop was appointed assistant master at Burntisland Grammar School, and two years later, at the age of 20, he was appointed to the staff of the school at Lasswade, his native parish. He afterwards attended the Normal School in Edinburgh, and then was master successively of the parish schools at Colinton, Cults, and Kirknewton. He was at Kirknewton for 12 years prior to leaving for New Zealand.

In 1855 Hislop applied for a post under the provincial government of Otago, and he arrived at Port Chalmers by the *Strathmore* in Oct 1856. He was appointed to the school at East Taieri, where he spent four and a-half years; and then he was appointed inspector of schools for the province and secretary of the Otago education board. While in this post he had much to do with the establishment of the Boys' and Girls' High Schools in Dunedin, the Training College, the School of Art, and the district high schools. He was also first secretary to the Otago University council and registrar of the University. In 1867 the provincial government employed him to report on the resources of the province, and he published an interesting handbook. When the industrial school was established at Caversham in 1869, the task of organ-

## HISLOP

ising and supervising the institution was entrusted to Hislop and St John Branigan (q.v.).

The passing of the national education act marked the end of Hislop's official career in the province. As early as 1871 he had a large part in the drafting of the bill, which was then read for a second time in the House of Representatives. It made no further progress, but many of its provisions were embodied in the later bill of 1877, which gave to the Colony a uniform system of education, free, secular and compulsory. Hislop was selected for the post of Secretary for Education when the new system was brought into force, and he went to Wellington to inaugurate it. When he left Otago the teachers of the province, who were to leave their mark upon the teaching profession of the Colony during the next generation, paid him a remarkable demonstration of affection and respect. Henceforward Hislop's duties kept him mainly in Wellington.

In 1882 he visited Great Britain, when he received from the University of Edinburgh the honorary degree of LL.D. in recognition of his services to the cause of education. He also received the fellowship of the Royal Society of Edinburgh. After retiring from the Education department (1886) Hislop lived in Dunedin. He became a member of the education board, of the hospital board of trustees, and of the City Council; chairman of the industrial school board of advice, a representation commissioner, a member of the committee of the benevolent institution, and a visiting justice of the gaol. In the commercial world he was a director of the Mosgiel Woollen Co. A prominent freemason, he was at one time grand master under the Scottish constitution. He also took a keen interest in the Caledonian Society.

Dr Hislop married (1846) Miss J. Horne, of Caithness-shire (who died in 1903). His death occurred on 19 May 1904. (See THOMAS WILLIAM HISLOP.)

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; *App. H.R.*, 1878-86; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Butchers; McIndoe; *Otago Daily Times*, 20 May 1904, 31 May 1930 (p). Portrait by Horsburgh at Otago University.

HISLOP, THOMAS WILLIAM (1850-1925), who was born in Kirknewton, Midlothian, was a son of John Hislop (q.v.). With his parents he came to New Zealand in 1856 by the *Strathmore*. He attended the Taieri primary

## HITCHINGS

school, Shaw's grammar school, the Otago Boys High School and Otago University. Admitted a barrister and solicitor in 1871, he practised law in Oamaru until 1890, being crown prosecutor (1872-76).

From 1876 until 1880 (when he resigned), Hislop represented Waitaki in the House of Representatives (defeating Sir William Steward). He was again in the House for Oamaru (1885-90) (defeating Lord Reidhaven). In 1887 he joined the Atkinson ministry, first as Colonial Secretary and later as Minister of Education and of Justice. During this time he drafted the optional clauses in the land act of 1877, and passed the local bodies powers act, the representation act, and the shipping and seamen's act. Several of his social measures were thrown out as too extreme, and were carried a few years later. In 1889 Hislop was made an officer of the Legion of Honour, in recognition of his services at the Paris exhibition.

Moving to Wellington in 1890, he practised in partnership with A. de B. Brandon. He contested Wellington seats in the elections of 1890, 1905 and 1908, but was not again successful. Hislop was mayor of Wellington (1904-08). In 1921 he was appointed a member of the Legislative Council, a position he held till his death on 2 Oct 1925.

He married, first (1873) Maria Annie (who died 1909), daughter of James Simpson of Parramatta, and second (1923) Margnerite E. Smith, of Wellington. One of his sons, THOMAS CHARLES ATKINSON HISLOP, (1888-) was elected mayor of Wellington in 1931.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Jul 1926; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Butt. Fort. Notes*, 10 Nov 1925; *Auckland Star*, 27 Sep 1887; *Evening Post*, 3 Oct 1925; *North Otago Times*, 19 May 1885. Portrait: Parliament House.

HITCHINGS, THOMAS (1816-94) was born at Oxford, England, qualified M.R.C.S. London, and came to New Zealand in the early fifties. He settled in Hawkes Bay, was government health officer, and attended to the wounded in the tribal fighting at the Big Bush between Hapuku and Te Moananui. He was M.P.C. for Napier Town (1859-67). In 1864 he was appointed provincial surgeon. Hitchings died on 26 Feb 1894. He married (1861) Mary Elizabeth Challen, daughter of George Garland (Sussex).

## HOBBS

HOBBS, JOHN (1800-83) was born at St Peter's, Isle of Thanet, the son of Richard Hobbs, a coach builder and Wesleyan local preacher. His father was admitted to the Wesleyan Society by John Wesley. He learned his father's trade and followed in his footsteps, joining the Church in 1816 and becoming a local preacher in 1819.

In 1822 Hobbs decided to emigrate to Tasmania to work among the convicts. Nathaniel Turner, whom he met there, urged him to offer himself to the Wesleyan Missionary Society, but Marsden had already offered to employ him under the Church Missionary Society in New Zealand. He accordingly, on 3 Aug 1823, sailed from Port Jackson in the *Brampton* (with Marsden, Williams and Turner) and walked from Bay of Islands to join the mission at Wesleydale, Whangaroa. The Rev Samuel Leigh having returned to New South Wales sick, Hobbs remained to assist Turner at Wesleydale. He was a skilled mechanic and built himself a house; cultivated a garden, had a good knowledge of medicine and became so proficient in Maori as to become one of the translators of the Bible into the vernacular. He translated the book of Job into Maori and composed and translated many Maori hymns (including a translation of Toplady's *Rock of Ages*.)

Unfortunately, when Hobbs arrived at Whangaroa, George, the local chief, was already failing in health and unable longer to protect the mission. On his death hostile natives made a violent attack on the station (Jan 1827), which had to be abandoned. Turner and his colleagues, with their families, protected by Patuone, walked through the bush to Bay of Islands.

Hobbs went to Sydney, where he married an English lady, Miss Jane Blogreff (1799-1887), and returned a few months later with unflinching courage to renew his exertions. Co-operating with Stack in the selection of a site, they opened a new station at Mangungu in Apr 1828 under the protection of Patuone and Nene, who gave them 850 acres of land. Hobbs had now received full ministerial standing, and he and Stack worked under the Rev W. White. In 1833, on his request to be moved, the home committee sent him to Tonga, where, having speedily acquired command of the language, he took charge of the press. Owing to the

## HOBBS

health of his wife he was designated for Tasmania, but the vessel springing a leak, put into Bay of Islands, and Turner claimed the services of Hobbs to take charge of his station. There he built boats and houses, operated the printing press and (with the assistance of Abraham Taonui) translated part of the Bible. He made several journeys with Bumby for the extension of the mission. Sailing in a small schooner from Hokianga they visited North Cape, Bay of Islands, East Cape, Port Nicholson, Cloudy Bay, Kapiti, Taranaki and Kawhia. They fixed a site at Port Nicholson on 8 Jun 1840 for a permanent mission. With Bumby and Whiteley, Hobbs travelled overland to Taranaki with the object of stopping a tribal war, and on another occasion he walked from Hokianga to Port Nicholson. He had great influence with Patuone, Nene, Muriwai, Moetara and Tawhai, and rendered service to the government as interpreter for Hobson at a gathering of 3,000 natives held at Mangungu to consider the Treaty of Waitangi (1840).

The outbreak of Heke's war was fatal to the prosperity of the Wesleyan mission, but Hobbs did much to wean the Ngapuhi from their war-like habits. In 1848 he was designated by conference to open a mission up the Whanganui river. The ship *Harriet Leathart*, which was engaged to take the missionaries there, was stranded in a storm. Hobbs spent the night lashed in the rigging and thus incurred deafness which increased so as to incapacitate him for heavy duty. In 1855-56 he spent a year resting at Three Kings Institution, Auckland, after which he retired. He died on 24 Jun 1883. Hobbs lived a life of strict integrity, devoted to the service of the mission. He never acquired property in New Zealand, the regulations of the Wesleyan mission forbidding any of its agents to acquire land or to engage in business. Mrs Hobbs died on 16 Dec 1887. (See RICHARD HOBBS, REV W. KIRK, and REV W. GRRROS.)

Marsden, *L. alld* J.; Morley; W. J. Williams; Buller; M. A. R. Pratt (information); *N.Z. Herald*, 25, 28 Jun 1883.

HOBBS, RICHARD (1833-1910) was born at Hokianga, the son of the Rev John Hobbs (q.v.). Educated at the mission school at Waimate, and afterwards privately by Dr Day, he

## HOBHOUSE

went to Tasmania, where he was apprenticed to Waterhouse Brothers (drapers). He married Emma, daughter of the Rev John Waterhouse.

Hobbs spent 12 months at the Friars Creek diggings in Victoria, and then returned to New Zealand and entered into business in Auckland. He was able to retire with a competence in 1873. Hobbs was a lieutenant in the First Volunteer Rifles in Auckland, and served in the Waikato as a captain in the militia (Sep 1864). He was a member of the Auckland City Council (1871-73). Taking up land at Springs, Pokeno, he bred horses and cattle and had a fine orchard. He represented Franklin in Parliament (1879-80) and Bay of Islands (1881-90). He was a member of the native affairs committee and was the promoter of the gaming and lotteries bill (1881). Hobbs was a member of the Manukau county council, the Pokeno road board and school committee and the Auckland education board (of which he was two years chairman). He was a justice of the peace and a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. A Wesleyan by tradition, he was superintendent of the Sunday school in High street, a member of the board of trustees of the church, and treasurer of Wesley College (for 30 years). Later he became attached to St John's Church, Ponsoby. He died on 16 Jul 1910. (See G. M. WATERHOUSE.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z.P.D.*, 19 Jul 1910; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Oct 1902, 18 Jul 1910.

HOBHOUSE, EDMUND (1817-1904), the first bishop of Nelson, was a son of the Rt Hon Henry Hobhouse and brother of Lord Hobhouse. Born in London on 17 Apr 1817, he was educated at Eton and Oxford. He graduated B.A. (at Balliol, 1838), M.A. (at Merton, 1842) and B.D. at Durham (1850). In 1841 he was ordained deacon and became a fellow of Merton College, and two years later vicar of St Peter's-in-the-East, Oxford.

Having declined to be a candidate for the bishopric of Christchurch (1856), Hobhouse was chosen in 1857 for the see of Nelson. He was consecrated with Abraham (q.v.) in Lambeth Church on 29 Sep 1858, receiving later the honorary D.D. of Oxford, Cambridge and Durham. Arriving in Nelson in Feb 1859, he attended the first general synod in Wellington before

## HOBSON

his installation. Hobhouse had to carry out the organisation of the new bishopric and its committees and institutions. He visited every corner of his wide diocese, on horseback or on foot, opening new churches in many districts in Nelson, Marlborough and what is now north Canterbury. He naturally became involved in much criticism, which he studiously ignored in the interests of peace. The whole of his stipend he devoted to diocesan objects, and he made the splendid gift to the diocese of Bishopdale and the first part of the old bishop's house.

Owing to failing health he intimated his intention of resigning (Aug 1864). A few months later his wife died. Released from his charge in Dec 1865, he returned to England, to spend many years in partial retirement. From 1869 to 1880 he was assistant to the Bishop of Lichfield, and for one year chancellor of the diocese. He died 20 Apr 1904.

Hobhouse married first (1858) Mary Elizabeth, daughter of General the Hon John Brodrick; and second (1868) Anna, daughter of Dr Williams, warden of New College. One of his sons was the Ven Walter Hobhouse (Bampton lecturer and editor of *The Guardian*).

*Nelson Dioe. Gaz.*, Oct 1933. Portrait: *Nelson Evening Mail*, 11 Dec 1926.

HOBSON, WILLIAM (1793-1842) was born in Waterford, Ireland, the son of Samuel Hobson, assistant barrister for the county of Cork, and his wife Martha Jones, who was seventh in descent from Henry Jones, Bishop of Clogher in the seventeenth century. In 1803 he entered the Royal Navy as a second-class volunteer and went to sea under the patronage of Sir John Poo Beresford in the frigate *Virginie*. In 1805 he was appointed to the frigate *Dart* (28 guns), in which he spent more than two years on the West Indies station, seeing much active service against pirates and privateers.

Passing for midshipman in 1806, Hobson was appointed to the *Temeraire*, and in 1808 he again served under Beresford in the *Theseus* (74 guns). His only engagement of large ships was when Willaumez made his escape from Brest. He was present at the boat attack on the French squadron in Basque roads, and also at Walcheren. Hobson again served with Beresford in the *Poictiers* (74 guns) in Portugal, and was supernumerary lieutenant in the *Dragon* in

## HOBSON

the West Indies. In 1812 he was appointed acting-lieutenant, and afterwards lieutenant, of the sloop *Peruvian* (18 guns), which captured the American privateer *John* after a chase of 15 hours. In 1814 he was present at the operations on the coast of Maine, including the expedition up the Penobscot river and the reduction of Hamden. Returning to England in Jun 1815, the *Peruvian* cruised in the Channel to gain tidings of the campaign of Waterloo, and after the surrender of Napoleon was with the escorting squadron which conveyed him to St Helena. In his next ship, the *Spey*, Hobson saw considerable service in the Mediterranean against pirates. He distinguished himself in command of the brig *Frederick*, which cut out of Smyrna harbour the pirate brig *William*, of Liverpool.

In the *Tyne* (28 guns) Hobson passed several years operating against pirates in the West Indies. While on independent service in command of the schooners *Eliza* and *Whim*, he was captured by Pepe Diablito in the port of Camaguey and eight days later cast adrift in the dismantled schooner without food, water or instruments. Punitive operations resulted in the capture of Aragonéz, the leader of the band, and the *Zaragonaza*, of 120 tons and 80 men. During 1823 Hobson, with a small flotilla, practically demolished the piratical haunts in the northern cays of Cuba, for which he received the thanks of the Admiralty. While he was again temporarily in the power of pirates the command fell to Lieutenant Francis Liardet (q.v.). Admiral Owen recommended Hobson to the Admiralty as an officer 'who to the most persevering zeal unites discretion and sound judgment.' Promoted commander in May 1824, he commissioned the *Ferret* (10 guns) early in 1825 and spent another year in the West Indies. He then commanded the sloop *Scylla* (18 guns) for two years, capturing the letter of marque *Diana*, 20 guns and 170 men, in Jan 1827.

At the end of that year Hobson married, at Nassau, Eliza, only daughter of a Scots West India merchant, Robert Wear Elliott. He was not again employed until 1834, six years after paying off the *Scylla*, when, through the interest of Lord Auckland (now First Lord) he was posted to the frigate *Rattlesnake* (28 guns) to join the flag of the admiral commanding in

the East Indies (Sir T. Bladen Capel). The company which he selected for this ship included three future admirals—To M. C. Symonds (1813-94), Hastings R. Henry, afterwards Yel-erton, and P. F. Shortland (1815-88). Shortly afterwards Lord Auckland was appointed Governor-general of India. In 1836 the *Rattlesnake* was detached to visit Australia. There Hobson was under the orders of Sir Richard Bourke, the Governor of New South Wales. He assisted to establish the new colony at Port Philip, where the *Rattlesnake* lay for three months while her officers surveyed the harbour and helped to layout the town of Melbourne. Bourke directed that the northern arm of the bay should bear Hobson's name. About this time Hobson was mentioned for the post of superintendent of the Bombay Marine, but he was already contemplating settling in one of the colonies, the climate of which was a great attraction.

The precarious situation of British settlers in New Zealand owing to the outbreak of a tribal war at Bay of Islands induced Bourke to despatch the *Rattlesnake* thither. Hobson made a careful study of conditions in the country and, with the advice of Marsden (who was visiting New Zealand at the time) and Henry "Williams, he made many contacts with native chiefs, missionaries and the British Resident (James Busby). On his return to New South Wales he made an interesting report outlining a scheme for the government of the country through a system of factories similar to those existing in India at that time. Despatches were now received ordering the *Rattlesnake* to rejoin the flag at Trincomalee in view of projected operations against Burma in which, as senior officer, Hobson would take command. Counsels of peace prevailed, however, and the *Rattlesnake* proceeded to England and paid off. Again unemployed, Hobson spent some months with his family in Plymouth. The New Zealand question was becoming more insistent, and Lord Glenelg, when he retired from the post of Secretary for the Colonies in Feb 1839, expressed the opinion that steps must be taken to place British authority there on a definite basis. His successor (Lord Normanby) was impelled to act by reports of French activities and by the preparations made by the New Zealand Company to establish a colony in New

Zealand. He considered the reports of Hobson and Busby on the proposed form of government, and decided to send an officer, in the capacity of consul, who might treat with the chiefs for the cession of sovereignty over portion or all of the country, and then become lieutenant-governor therein, subject to the jurisdiction of the governor of New South Wales. Hobson was chosen for the post (1 Jul 1839). On 14 Aug he received from the Secretary of State carefully drawn instructions, which laid emphasis upon the desire of the British Government to deal honestly with the natives and to safeguard their future interests against the encroachments of white settlement. He was not to be provided with a military force, nor even with the power to raise a militia of the white population.

On 25 Aug (four months after the departure of the Company's ship *Tory*) Hobson sailed with his wife and family, in H.M.S. *Druid*. In his party was Willoughby Shortland (q.v.), with whose family at Plymouth the Hobsons had lived on terms of close intimacy. Arriving in Port Jackson on 24 Dec, Hobson spent several weeks consulting with the Governor (Sir George Gipps) as to the machinery of government he should erect in New Zealand, the relations of New Zealand to New South Wales, the officials who should be taken to inaugurate the administration, and proclamations which were considered necessary to stop land speculation in the prospective colony. He sailed for New Zealand as a passenger in H.M.S. *Herald* (Captain Joseph Nias), and arrived at Bay of Islands on 29 Jan 1840. He at once got into touch with the British Resident (Busby) and the leading members of the Church Missionary Society. On the following day, in the mission church at Kororareka, he read his commission, extending the limits of the colony of New South Wales, and appointing him Lieutenant-governor over such part of New Zealand as might be ceded in sovereignty to the Queen. A memorial of the act was drawn up and signed by 40 European witnesses. Hobson then read proclamations announcing his assumption of office and warning claimants to land that only such claims as were derived from, or confirmed by, a grant from the crown would be held valid. Invitations were sent out for a meeting of chiefs to be held at Waitangi on 5 Feb to discuss the proposed

cession of sovereignty. In all these proceedings Hobson was cordially assisted by the missionaries and the Resident. At the meeting on 5 Feb, and at subsequent meetings both at Waitangi and at other places in the north of Auckland, the chiefs signed the instrument ceding sovereignty to the Queen, and copies were thereafter taken elsewhere to receive the signatures of more distant chiefs. On 8 Feb the British flag was hoisted and saluted with 21 guns to celebrate the cession.

Having attended similar meetings in the Hokianga district, Hobson sailed on 21 Feb in the *Herald* for the dual purpose of obtaining signatures and inspecting the Waitemata district, which Williams had recommended as the site for the capital. On 1 Mar, as the result of fatigue and anxiety, he suffered a stroke of paralysis which temporarily incapacitated him for duty, and on the advice of Williams he was taken to the mission station at Waimate for rest and medical care. The *Herald* returned to Port Jackson for provisions, taking George Cooper, the official whom Gipps had expected to assume office in such a contingency.

Gipps in the circumstances decided to send to New Zealand Major Thomas Bunbury (q.v.), of the 80th Regiment, who had been acting as Governor of Norfolk Island, the understanding being that if he should find Hobson incapable of continuing his office Bunbury would assume the administration, with a salary of £1,000 a year. Hobson meanwhile had responded to the careful treatment he was receiving, and when Bunbury arrived at Bay of Islands in the *Buffalo* with a detachment of soldiers (16 Apr) he found Hobson had moved from Waimate to Paihia and had resumed almost the full burden of his duties. On the advice of his officials he had entered into an agreement with Captain Clendon for the purchase of his property at Okiato, in Bay of Islands, as a temporary seat of government. Bunbury co-operated loyally with Hobson in completing the cession of sovereignty, and at his request went to the southern parts of the country collecting signatures of chiefs. The *Herald* sailed for this purpose on 27 Apr, and the Queen's sovereignty was proclaimed at Stewart island and (as regards the South Island) at Cloudy bay (on 17 Jun). Shortland meanwhile had been sent to Port Nicholson to display the dignity and authority

of the Crown amongst a body of settlers of the New Zealand Company who had been arriving in a series of ships since 22 Jan. Shortly after Bunbury's departure for the south Hobson received word from Port Nicholson of the proceedings of the settlers there. Acting under a voluntary agreement which they had signed before leaving England, they had constituted a committee or council for their own self-government, with legal officers purporting to act in the capacity of magistrates. On 14 Apr this tribunal adjudicated upon the complaint of a settler against the captain of the British brig *Integrity*. The defendant, refusing to acknowledge the authority of such a court, was committed to prison, and an attempt by his men to release him was repulsed by the settlers. He escaped from custody, however, and sailed for Bay of Islands to complain to the Governor. Believing the settlers at Port Nicholson guilty of high treason, Hobson on 21 May proposed to send Shortland with a detachment of troops to enforce obedience. In order to validate any action which Shortland might take he published two proclamations (dated 21 May), the one taking possession of the North Island by virtue of the cession of sovereignty by the chiefs, and the other taking possession of New Zealand by right of discovery. A third proclamation (23 May) declared the settlers' council illegal and ordered it to disband. Shortland left in the *Integrity* for Port Nicholson, where he arrived on 2 Jun. On the 4th he read his proclamations with ceremony before an eager and hospitable community which sent to Hobson addresses of loyalty. In Jul the French corvette *Aube* arrived in the Bay of Islands. As French settlers were also on the water, bound for Akaroa, Hobson despatched thither H.M.S. *Britomart* (Captain Owen Stanley) with magistrates to hold courts in token of the existence of British authority. The Company's settlers, who had influential support in Great Britain, urged Hobson more than once to establish his capital at Port Nicholson, where at the moment the largest British community was now settled. He had, however, made up his mind that the position on the Waitemata was the best. In Sep the land was purchased and formally proclaimed as the capital, and in Feb 1841 the Government shifted its headquarters there. The house which had been brought from England in the

## HOBSON

Company's ship *Platina* was accordingly erected, the *Britomart's* officers helped to survey the bay, and Felton Mathew laid out the city with some resemblance to the plan of Bath.

The founding of the new town inevitably attracted labourers from the southern settlement, and brought upon Hobson the further reproaches of the Company's settlers. The disallowance of the Company's purported purchases of land also caused the settlers at Port Nicholson grave anxiety. Their ably-conducted press bitterly attacked Hobson as the cause of their troubles. Since the mother colony of New South Wales declined to provide for its dependency, Hobson was embarrassed by lack of money, and he was handicapped from the outset by the indifferent quality of his officials. Public meetings in Wellington demanded the recall of the Governor. When despatches arrived which announced the separation of New Zealand from New South Wales and its erection into an independent colony, the Port Nicholson settlers adopted an address congratulating him upon his promotion, but repeating all the arguments previously used to induce him to make his home in Wellington. Hobson replied in conciliatory terms, and took the first opportunity (in Aug 1841) of paying a visit to Wellington. He was on friendly terms with Colonel Wakefield, the principal agent, whom he desired to appoint a magistrate; but the question of a site for the Company's second settlement was a fresh cause of friction. Fearing that the settlements were not strong enough to maintain themselves against possible native hostility, Hobson discouraged further dispersion, and for that reason declined to allow the new colony to be planted at Port Cooper. He offered a site at Mahurangi, north of Auckland, which Wakefield rejected. The colony was finally located at Nelson, where the land available was not adequate. Far from his own official head, Hobson was anxious to propitiate what he recognised as a valuable body of settlers and the powerful Company behind them, but the bitter hostility of the Port Nicholson press and the truculence of some of their leaders militated against the establishment of cordial relations. Having comforted the southern settlers with an assurance as to the occupation of their lands, relieved them in respect to customs duties, and provided regular courts, Hob-

## HOBSON

son returned to Auckland. During 1841 three officials of high character and attainments were sent from England to New Zealand, thereby considerably lightening Hobson's responsibility and strengthening his councils. William Swainson (q.v.) took office as Attorney-general, William Martin (q.v.) as Chief Justice, and shortly afterwards George Augustus Selwyn (q.v.) as Bishop of New Zealand. About the same time came despatches from the Colonial Secretary censuring Shortland and Mathew for their part in the land sales at Auckland and the purchase of the useless site at Russell (Okiaio).

Hobson had as yet little grounds for the feeling that the Colony was secure. A trial at Maketu for the murder of the Robertson family at Motu Arohia, Bay of Islands (20 Nov 1841) terminated in the execution of the murderer (7 Mar 1842). While it was in progress the safety of the colonists hung in the balance. It was the wise and sympathetic hearing of the case by Martin rather than the available military force that vindicated British authority. Shortly afterwards, the Ngati-Maru chief Taraia reverted to the worst savagery of the race by devouring two of his enemies. The executive council was inclined to use its small force against this powerful offender, but Taraia insisted that the quarrel was purely a native one, in which the Government had no right to intervene. Fearing the consequences with so small a military force to support him, Hobson sent the protector of aborigines to remonstrate with Taraia, and the incident ended. Hobson's financial difficulties were grave. The revenues of the Colony were quite inadequate for the expenses of the administration, and with the advice of his Council, he issued bills on the British Treasury. In due course they were dishonoured, and he was reprimanded for adopting that forbidden expedient. The struggling settlers of Auckland now joined their criticism to that of Wellington and demanded the recall of the Governor. Hobson was too ill to receive the deputation, and he died on 10 Sep 1842. •Had he lived a few weeks longer: says Swainson, •he would have been cheered by the knowledge that his general administration of the affairs of New Zealand was approved by her Majesty's Government: and that he might count on official

## HOCHSTETTER

support against the exaggerated pretensions of the Company and their agents.'

Hobson had many good qualities. Energy, decision and judgment he had always shown in times of action. He was a plain, practical naval officer, with wide experience, a high sense of justice and devotion to duty. Reeves says that 'most of his good' deeds were his own.' He had a deeply religious nature, and was earnestly desirous that the natives of New Zealand should suffer no hurt from his administration and from the historic instrument by which they ceded their country to the British crown. Mrs Hobson died in 1876.

Hobson's only son, WILLIAM ROBERT (1831-80) was also a midshipman in the Navy. At the age of 20 he served in the *Plover* and other relief ships searching for Sir John Franklin in Behring straits (1851-55). He had great experience of sledge travel, and in 1857 McClintock asked for his services in the new expedition in the *Fox*. With one sledge drawn by four men and another by seven dogs Hobson discovered relics on King William island which established the fate of the explorer (3 May 1859). He was promoted commander and appointed to the *Pantaloön* (1860). In 1862 he commanded the *Vigilant* in operations in the Persian gulf. He was promoted captain in 1866 and retired, dying on 11 Oct 1880.

Admiralty records in Public Record office; *G.B.OP.*, 1840/238; 1841/311; *N.z. Gaz.; Hist. Rec. Aust.*; MS. letters in Turnbull Library; *New South Wales Gaz.*; Scholefield, *Hobson* (p); J. C. Beaglehole, *Captain Hobson and the New Zealand Company*; Buick, *Waitangi and Akaroa*; Bunbury; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Gisborne; Harrop, *England and New Zealand*; Carleton; James, *Naval History*; Rusden; Swainson; Reeves; E. J. Wakefield. Portrait by Collins in Auckland Public Library (copy by James Macdonald in National Portrait Gallery).

HOCHSTETTER, FERDINAND VON (1829-84) was born at Esslingen, Wurtemberg, the son of Professor Christian Ferdinand Hochstetter, the principal clergyman in the town and a naturalist and botanist. After passing through the grammar school in his native town, he went to the seminary at Maulbronn to study theology, but after passing (1851) he was drawn to the study of mineralogy, palaeontology and geology and proceeded, with his doctorate of philosophy (1852) on a year's tour of study. In

## HOCHSTETTER

1853 he was employed in the Austrian geological survey, becoming assistant geologist in 1854 and chief geologist for Bohemia in 1856. He made a close study of the geology of the Bohmenvald and lectured in the University of Vienna.

In 1857 Hochstetter was chosen to accompany the *Novara* expedition, and he arrived in Auckland in that frigate on 22 Dec 1858. His services were sought by the Auckland provincial government to examine the coalfields in the province. On the strength of his report the general Government obtained leave for Hochstetter to remain eight months in New Zealand to report on its geology, natural history and physical geography. This commission he achieved with a staff which included Haast and Heaphy. He spent two months examining the formations near Auckland and then proceeded to Waikato, Whaingaroa, Bay of Plenty and the thermal district. In Jun he visited Coromandel, the Great Barrier and Kawau, and on 28 Jul left for Nelson, where he remained until 2 Oct, when he left for Sydney. In Nelson he examined the Dun mountain copper deposits and lake Rotoiti, but could not visit the Alps.

Arriving back in Austria in Jan 1860, Hochstetter received many distinctions from the Emperor and scientific societies. He was appointed professor of geology and mineralogy at the Technical University of Vienna. In Jun he took to London the two young Maori who, had accompanied him to Europe and embarked them with their printing press in the *Caduceus* for New Zealand. He was busy at this time working up the collections made in New Zealand and preparing his reports. In Apr 1861 he married Georgina Bengough, daughter of the English director of the Vienna gasworks. In 1862 he was granted leave to complete his book on New Zealand, which was published first in German in Apr 1863. In May 1864 he published his scientific work on the geology of New Zealand for the *Novara* publications, and in Dec the first half of the paleontology of New Zealand appeared. In 1864 he made a special study of prehistoric lake dwellings in Europe, and in 1865 he prepared for the Imperial Institute a report on oilfields in western Galicia.

Having failed to find an English publisher for the book on New Zealand, he had it translated into English by an American (Edward

## HOCKEN

Sauter) and it was printed by Cotta, of Stuttgart, the New Zealand Parliament having voted £525 for the purchase of 500 copies. In 1867 he was elected president of the Imperial Geographical Society of Vienna, a position which he held until his health failed in 1882. His other *Novara* publications were now brought out, and he prepared many text books for higher schools. In 1867 he went to Paris to report on the metallurgical products in the Exhibition, and in Sep of that year the English edition of the New Zealand book made its appearance. He was now suffering severely from an affection of the throat and, hoping that it might benefit his health, he got leave to act as consulting geologist to the Turkish Great Railway Co. For this work he received the order of the Medjidieh.

Hochstetter was one of the first promoters of the Austrian North Polar expedition of Payer and Laube, and he raised funds for the second expedition, in the *Tegethoff*. As a member of the commission for the Imperial Exhibition in Vienna in 1873, he persuaded New Zealand to take part. In 1872 he was appointed scientific lecturer to the Crown Prince Rudolph, with whom he travelled in the Austrian alps. In 1876 he became director-general of the Imperial Museum, to which he devoted his undivided attention after being pensioned from the University in 1881. Hochstetter, as head of the Museum, and by reason of his friendship with von Haast, was the means of effecting many valuable exchanges of exhibits between New Zealand and European museums. In 1877 the last sets of the *Novara* publications reached New Zealand. He was also responsible for the appointment of a competent taxidermist (Andreas Reischek, q.v.) for the Canterbury Museum. It is due to the continuing interest that Hochstetter took in New Zealand that this Colony's section in the Museum in Vienna is so complete and generously equipped. He died on 21 Jul 1884.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; Buller; biography by Sir Julius von Haast in *N.z. Journ. of Science*, ii, no. 5, Sep 1884 (p); *N.z. Herald*, 25 Jul 1884. Portrait: Bust in Canterbury Museum by Victor Tilgner.

HOCKEN, THOMAS MORLAND (1836-1910) was the son of the Rev J. Hocken, of Stamford, England. Educated at The Grove, Yorkshire,

## HOCKEN

and at Durham University and Dublin, he qualified in medicine (F.R.C.S., Eng., 1860; L.S.A.) and spent two years as a surgeon on the steamer *Great Britain* trading between England and Australia. In 1862 he settled in Dunedin and began to practise, being honorary surgeon at the Dunedin hospital and the benevolent institution and for 22 years coroner. He took a great interest in such social movements as the Patients' and Prisoners' Aid society and the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals.

Hocken's claim to recognition arises out of his interest in New Zealand history and his life-long collection of literature relating to it. For many years he was collecting books, maps, manuscripts and prints with such care and persistence that his library before his death constituted a body of published books and original source material unique in New Zealand. He devoted special attention to Samuel Marsden, and secured from the Church Missionary Society and other sources a remarkable collection of documents relating to him. At an early stage he began to read papers on New Zealand history and to contribute to the press, the proceedings of the Otago Institute and the transactions of the New Zealand Institute.

In 1898 he published his first important book *Contributions to the Early History of New Zealand* (relating to the foundations of Otago province). In 1901 he visited England and examined the papers of the New Zealand Company and of the missionary societies and other archives. He then devoted himself closely to the compilation of his *Bibliography of the Literature Relating to New Zealand* (1909) a patiently compiled volume which has since been the standard work in that sphere of research. Another volume, lectures on the *Early History of New Zealand*, was posthumously published in 1914, with a memoir by Sir George Fenwick. In 1896 Hocken offered his library to Otago University to form the nucleus of a New Zealand historical collection. It was subsequently housed in the Hocken wing of the Otago Museum, where its treasures have been of great service to the student and the historical researcher.

Hocken was a member of many learned societies, including the New Zealand Institute, the Royal Geographical Society, the Royal His-

## HOCKLY

torical Society and cognate bodies in foreign countries. In 1884 he was elected a fellow of the Linnaean Society in recognition of his contributions to science. He contributed frequently to the proceedings of the Australasian Association for the Advancement of Science. He was the first lecturer in surgery at Otago University and was a member of the council of that institution from 1883. A few months before his death (which occurred on 17 May 1910) he succeeded to the position of vice-chancellor.

Hocken's report on the papers of the New Zealand Company was followed a few years later by the transfer to the New Zealand Government of all documents regarded by him as being of insufficient value to be retained in the principal collection of records (which is in the Public Record Office in London). Though of secondary importance from the archive point of view, they form a valuable and interesting source for historical research. They include duplicate copies of most of the despatches from the Company's agents in New Zealand and are especially rich in loose papers, drafts of despatches and notes of proceedings in the hand of Edward Gibbon Wakefield.

Hocken, *op. cit.*; Fulton; Fenwick, *cit supra.*; *The Press*, 3 Apr, 20 Aug 1909; *Otago Daily Times*, 23 May 1910.

HOCKLY, FRANK FRANKLIN (1865-1936) was born at Orrell, Lancashire, the son of Captain E. M. Hockly. Educated at Hutton Hall, Dumfries, he arrived in New Zealand by the *Lady Jocelyn* (1884) and took up land at Makuri, Hunterville, and eventually at Te Awamutu. He was a member for nine years and chairman for five of the Kiwitea county council. In Waikato he was president of the second Auckland district military service board. He took a keen interest in the Farmers' Union, being a delegate to several Dominion conferences and chairman of a sub-provincial branch.

Hockly contested the Parliamentary seat for Rangitikei in 1909 and the Waimarino in 1911. In 1919 he was elected Reform member for Rotorua (where he was defeated by Clinkard in (1928). He was for some years chairman of the lands committee of the House and in 1926 was elected chairman of committees. He died on 7 Oct 1936.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 13 Oct 1936; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Post*, 7 Oct 1936 (p).

## HODGKINSON

HODGKINS, WILLIAM MATHEW (1833-98) was born in Liverpool. He was for a while employed in the patents office in London and in 1856 by Waterlow and Sons. Interested in art, he spent two years in the Latin quarter of Paris. In 1858 he sailed for Melbourne in the *White Star*, and in 1860 came to Otago. He first entered the office of Gillies and Richmond, and then became articled clerk to Howorth and Barton. On Barton's retirement he joined Howorth in practice, retiring in 1885.

Hodgkins was eminent amongst water colour painters in New Zealand, ranking with Gully and J. C. Richmond. He travelled widely and painted many New Zealand landscapes. He was a founder of the Otago Art society (1876) and president (1880-98). He married (1866) a daughter of John S. Parker (Sydney). He died on 9 Jan 1898.

*Otago Daily Times*, 10 Feb 1898.

HODGKINSON, SAMUEL (1817-1914) was born at Babworth, Nottingham; and received his education at the Retford day schools and the Collegiate Grammar School at Southwell. At the age of 17 he was apprenticed to Dr Valentine Williams in Nottingham (with whom one of his earliest experiences was a cholera epidemic). On completing his apprenticeship in 1838, Hodgkinson studied at Apothecaries' Hall and the Royal College of Surgeons, London. There he saw something of his relative Millais and of Clement Hodgkinson, his uncle (afterwards an explorer in Australia). In 1840 he gained the diploma of the Society of Apothecaries and membership of the Royal College, and went to Paris to walk the hospitals.

Returning to England he was appointed house surgeon to the Newark-on-Trent hospital and dispensary. While there he became interested in the New Zealand Company, and was appointed surgeon superintendent in the ship *Bombay*. Arriving in Nelson on 14 Dec 1842, Hodgkinson spent a little time in Wellington, and then took passage to Valparaiso, and joined an American whaler, which landed him in New Bedford in Jun 1843. After travelling for some time in the United States, he returned to England and entered into practice again.

In 1846 he was appointed by the Colonisation Commissioners as surgeon superintendent to the

## HODGKINSON

*David Malcolm*, bound with emigrants to Port Adelaide. From there he went to Port Philip and Warrnambool, and after spending some time in Victoria he crossed in 1851 to Canterbury (encouraged by the recommendations of Frederick Tuckett and Sir William Martin). Hodgkinson assisted G. D. Lockhart with a shipment of stock and before the year was out took up (in partnership with Hunter Brown) the Deans Peaks and Doctor's Hills stations in north Canterbury (including what is now Waipara downs). By next year they had 1,500 sheep running on 29,000 acres. In 1852 Hodgkinson was compelled by ill-health to visit England, and he published a pamphlet on emigration to Canterbury. In 1855, while he was absent, G. H. Moore purchased the run. While in England, Hodgkinson married a granddaughter (who d. 1902) of the Earl of Gosford. He played some part during this visit in persuading William Rolleston to make his home in New Zealand.

Coming to New Zealand in 1857 in the ship *Joseph Fletcher*, the Hodgkinsons landed at Auckland, and lived for a time at Parnell. They purchased land at Remuera at £30 per acre, and built a cottage. Not caring for the climate of Auckland, Hodgkinson in Jan 1859, with Dr Buchanan, rode from Dunedin to Invercargill, and from there walked with W. H. Pearson to Riverton. He purchased for £1,000 cash J. P. Taylor's Wairaka property, but sold again almost immediately and selected 900 acres at the foot of the Longwoods. He brought his family down in May 1860. In Jun 1861 they moved to Riverton, and Hodgkinson chose the homestead site at Fairfax. The house was built and occupied in the middle of 1862.

When SoutWand gained separation from Otago Hodgkinson declined to stand for the superintendency. Towards the end of 1864 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Riverton, and he threw in his weight to secure the election of Taylor as Superintendent. He was a member of the executive (1865-66). In 1869 he moved to Invercargill and retired from the Council, entering into medical practice for a short time with Monckton. He fought strenuously against the reunion of SoutWand with Otago, and re-entered the Council in Sep 1870 with that object. When the province was extinguished Hodgkinson gave up his practice,

but devoted much time to education, temperance, and other objects.

In 1876 he was elected to represent Riverton in Parliament, in which he was a staunch supporter of Grey. He did not seek re-election in 1879. In 1887 he was elected for Wallace, which he represented until 1890. His motion for an elective executive was only defeated by 27 votes to 25; he tried to reduce the members' honorarium according to the length of the session; and he took steps to have the grave of Wakefield in Wellington cared for, and to have a portrait of the coloniser hung in the town hall in Invercargill. He continued to be active in Invercargill, sitting on the bench, doing duty as coroner, and on the hospital and charitable aid board (1885) and the education board (1889). He had throughout life a voluminous correspondence with scientific men (including Lecky and Goldwin Smith); and he wrote many pamphlets on social and political topics. As long ago as 1860 he wrote on close settlement versus large estates; and for many years after the passing of the education act in 1877 he advocated Bible reading in state schools. Hodgkinson died on 10 Jan 1914.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Hocken; Roberts; Fulton, p 74-82 (p); Acland; *Southland Times*, 11 Jan 1914; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Aug 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

HODGSON, WILLIAM CHARLES (1826-94) was born at Chorley, Lancashire, the son of William Hodgson, a Manchester cotton spinner. Having lost his money by the introduction of the power loom, and having married his deceased wife's sister (then forbidden by the law of the Church) William Hodgson came to New Zealand in the *Himalaya*, arriving in Nelson in 1844. He took up 50 acres of land at Wakapuaka, upon which he and his family struggled in vain to establish themselves. The father died in 1847 and the son, who had been educated at the Manchester Grammar School and had hoped to go to Oxford, taught the private school which had been established in Nelson by Thomas Arnold (q.v.). He afterwards taught under the education board at Wakapuaka, and in 1863 was appointed inspector of schools. He represented Nelson in the Provincial Council in 1865. Hodgson retired in 1893 and died on 28 Jul 1894. A man of

## HODGSON

## HODSON

great literary taste and classical learning, Hodgson wrote a good deal of verse, the quality of which ranks very high amongst New Zealand poetry. Classical allusion and graceful diction abound, some of the choicest of his verse being English versions of Greek poems. A volume of his poetry, selected by A. A. Grace (who also wrote a biographical introduction) was published in 1896. A sister of Hodgson married J. W. Barnicoat (q.v.).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; Grande; Hodgson, *op. cit.* (p); *The Colonist*, Jul 1894.

HODSON, JAMES EDMUND (d. 1900) settled early in Marlborough, where he had a sheep run. He represented Awatere in the Marlborough Provincial Council (1870-74) and was a member of the executive twice during that term. On moving into Blenheim to live he represented the town (1874-75). He was mayor of Blenheim in 1875-76, and was a member of the education board and other local bodies.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v.

HOGBEN, GEORGE (1853-1920) who was born in London, was the son of a Congregational Minister, and attended a Congregational school in Lewisham, Kent, where he won a scholarship which took him to Nottingham (1867-69). After some years in the civil service as Junior auditor in the office of the controller-general, he entered St Catherine's College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. (1877) and M.A. (1881) after a distinguished career. In 1881 he came to New Zealand as science master of the Christchurch Boys' High School, from which he was appointed Inspector of schools to the North Canterbury education board (1887). He became rector of the Timaru Boys' High School (1889) and inspector-general of schools in 1899. During his 16 years in this office (1899-1915) a large number of reforms in the education system of New Zealand, culminating in the Education Act of 1914, were effected. In 1907 Hogben represented New Zealand at the education conference in London. In the year of his retirement (1915) his title was changed to director of education, and he was awarded the C.M.G. Hogben was an authority on seismology and a fellow of the Geological Society. He died on 26 Apr 1920. His wife was a daughter of Edward Dobson, C.E., of Canterbury. He published a number of works on education.

## HOGG

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Butchers (p); *N.Z. Graphic*, 16 Sep 1893; *Evening Post*, 26 Apr 1920.

HOGG, ALEXANDER WILSON (1845-1920) was born in Glasgow and educated in the primary schools there and at the Andersonian College. At the age of 13 he emigrated to Victoria, where he engaged in mining, storekeeping and journalism. "He helped to form a miners' protection league, one object of which was to institute courts of arbitration in place of courts of law. In 1877 he crossed to Dunedin, and was on the staff of the *Southern Mercury* and for some years manager and editor of the *Dunedin Age*. From there he went to Ashburton, where he conducted a paper, then to Timaru and finally he became part proprietor and editor of the *Wairarapa Star* (Masterton) (1881-92).

Hogg was elected to Parliament for Masterton in 1890 as a Liberal, and sat continuously for that electorate till 1911, when he was defeated by G. R. Sykes. He was chairman of the lands committee (1902-05). In 1909 he was Minister of Labour and Customs in the Ward Government, but he withdrew owing to a difference of opinion on matters of policy. He was a member of the school committee, the Wellington education board, the licensing committee and the land board (1889-1904), and of the Victoria College council (1898-1913). A fearless and outspoken politician, Hogg was scarcely fitted for the restrictions of team work and found it difficult to attune his opinions to those of the cabinet, with which he worked for only a few months. He was a firm believer in the leasehold tenure and in small settlement, and fought unceasingly for the formation of roads in the backblocks. Hogg died on 16 Nov 1920.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 11, 14 Mar 1921; Russell (p); *Evening Post*, 18 Nov 1920. Portrait: Parliament House.

HOGG, DAVID (1811-80), the first Presbyterian Minister in Wanganui, was born at Haddington, Scotland, and educated in Edinburgh. He was ordained in the United Presbyterian Church of Scotland and built up a new congregation in East Lothian. His brother, Peter Dodds Hogg, was sub-collector of customs at Port Nicholson (1841), and temporarily filled the post of chief collector of revenue at Auckland, and commissioner of audit (after the re-

## HOGGARD

signation of George Cooper 1843). In 1845 he was stationed at Nelson and a few months later at Wellington. He was drowned at sea about 1850. David Hogg came to New Zealand in the *Slains Castle* (1852), and was appointed to Wanganui, where he preached in a toetoe whare to 30 people in Jan 1853. He retired about 1870 and died in 1880.

Family information; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Ward; Woon.

HOGGARD, JOHN FARR (1815-71) spent his early life in the West Indies, but went to England for his education and is believed to have attended one of the leading universities and to have entered upon a medical course. Having money, he sailed for Australia towards the end of 1839 and there made the acquaintance of one or two other young men, who joined him in the purchase of a small vessel in which they crossed to Mangonui, walking thence overland to Bay of Islands. He did not intend to stay in New Zealand, but after a visit to Sydney in Sep 1840 he made his home here. He seems to have been in business with Daniel Pollen (q.v.) for some little time in Auckland, and in 1843 joined the civil service as a clerk. In 1844 he was transferred to Wellington, where he practically performed the duties of postmaster, though nominally collector of customs. In 1853 he was appointed postmaster, and he held that position until his death (on 4 Sep 1871). Hoggard was a man of some culture and a pleasing personality.

Records Post and Telegraph department; D. Robertson, *Rist. of Wellington Post Office*.

TE HOIKA, WIREMU NAHIRA (?1812-1903) a Ngati-Tahu chieftain, was born at Kaiapohia, and took part in the last tribal wars. He escaped from one of the raids of Te Rauparaha, but was captured at the sack of Kaiapohia and afterwards released. In 1844 he was present at the sale of the South Island lands, and he was also present when Kemp arrived in the *Fly* at Akaroa harbour to pay for the block. Te Hoika gave evidence in the native land court (1878) and before the royal commission (1879) tending to show that threats had been used to induce the natives to agree to the sale. In 1850 he settled at Tuahiwi, Canterbury. He assisted Canon Stack to obtain the church glebe in 1859, and was present at the laying of the foun-

## HOLLAND

dation stone of St Stephen's (1867). For some years he was chairman of the runanga. He died on 3 Dec 1903.

*The Press*, 6 Feb 1903.

HOLDSWORTH, JOSEPH GODFREY (1824-84) was born in London. Arriving in Wellington in 1853, he entered into business with John Knowles. He represented the City of Wellington in the Provincial Council (1856-57), and resigned to accept the position of paymaster of roads. This entailed much horseback travelling in Manawatu and Wairarapa. In 1870 Holdsworth was appointed commissioner of crown lands for Wellington, a position he held till a few months before his death (on 16 Aug 1884). He was the first president of the Y.M.C.A. in Wellington, and was chairman of the Benevolent Institution (1878).

A son, SIR CHARLES HOLDSWORTH (1863-1935) who was educated at Wellington College, became managing director of the Union Steamship Co. of New Zealand (Kt. Bach. 1926).

Ward; Jourdain; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, P 475.

HOLLAND, HENRY EDMUND (1868-1933) was born on 10 Jun 1868 at Ginninderra, near Canberra, New South Wales, and was educated in the Stone Hut (a provisional school) at Canberra and in the public school at Ginninderra. At the age of 14 he was apprenticed to printing in the office of the *Queanbeyan Times*, where he spent five years. He took a lively interest in social matters and, reading as widely as local resources would permit, laid the foundations of a deep culture. He was much influenced by Bellamy's *Looking Backward*, Karl Marx's *Capital* and Henry George's *Progress and Poverty*; had an intimate knowledge of both Old and New Testament philosophy, especially in its bearing on human relationships; and became a zealous member of the Salvation Army.

At the end of his apprenticeship Holland went to Sydney, where he made acquaintance with slums, poverty and unemployment, became a loyal trades unionist and a member of the Australian Socialist league and (some years later) of the Australian Electoral league. In 1888 he married a playmate of his boyhood, Annie McLachlan. He help to form the

## HOLLAND

Sydney tailoresses' union and was its first president. When he was editing *The Vedette* in Grenfell the union invited him to conduct their case in court; and he cycled 300 miles to do so (without fee). He was the leader in 1901 of a strike of tailoresses which assumed state-wide proportions and ultimately produced great improvements in the wages, hours of labour and conditions of the women workers concerned. An outspoken advocate of labour rights, he thus early risked the ordeal of imprisonment for his opinions, which in later days held no terrors for him. He was in fact imprisoned in 1896, 1909 and 1913-14 as the result of his writings and speeches at Newcastle, Broken Hill and Wellington (New Zealand).

Ill-health caused Holland in 1912 to come to New Zealand, where he at once became associated with the Labour movement, then in its infancy, and threw himself with quiet but determined energy into the advocacy of labour principles. He was appointed editor of the *Maoriland Worker*, which he conducted for nearly six years with conspicuous success. A fluent writer with an incisive, logical style, he expressed the views of his party with such force and effect that he was recognised during the struggles of 1912 and 1913 (including the Waihi strike) as a coming factor in the success of the party. He exerted every effort in support of the unity movement. In the *Worker* he led the fight against conscription during the war of 1914-18. His first parliamentary contest was in Wellington North in 1914 (against Herdman). Again in 1918 he stood (against Sir John Luke), but he did not gain a seat in Parliament until 1918, when the disqualification of P. C. Webb caused a vacancy for Grey. At the by-election (on 29 May 1918) Holland defeated T. E. Coates by 2,865 votes to 2,717. This electorate was abolished in the following year, when he defeated D. Q. O'Brien (by 3,545 votes to 2,542) for the Buller seat, which he held until his death.

On the death of A. H. Hindmarsh (q.v.) in 1919, Holland was elected leader of the Parliamentary Labour party, which then occupied the cross benches. After the election of 1925 Labour became the second strongest party in the House, but in 1928 it again found itself the weakest party and returned to the cross benches. Holland did the party a great service

## HOLLAND

in his clear and explicit statement of the aims of Labour, not only in the press and in party propaganda, but in public and parliamentary speeches. He defended with the greatest pertinacity the privileges gained for Labour in a succession of acts passed by the Ballance and Seddon Governments, and gradually brought the Labour party to occupy in the public mind the position of successors of the Liberals of the nineties. He marked the end of what might be termed the battle between ins and outs. He believed in increasing socialism rather than in reforming capitalism to make it more social. The party platform, as he saw it, should be determined only by the consideration whether it could lead or help towards complete socialism. His advocacy of the usehold principle of land tenure was also noteworthy.

A man of high principle and deep culture, Holland was one of the finest speakers in the Parliament of his day; formidable, incisive and devastating in debate; lofty and inspiring on the public platform. He was an indefatigable writer and pamphleteer, and published about 30 party pamphlets on social and political subjects. Noteworthy amongst his smaller publications are: *Armageddon and Calvary* (1919), *The Farmer and the Mortgagehold*, *Indentured Labour*, *Boy Conscription*, and *Samoa*. He also wrote verse of good quality. His volume *Red Roses on the Highway* contains much of high poetic standard.

Holland died on 8 Oct 1933 while attending the funeral of Te Rata Mahuta at Waihi. The public tribute paid to him both by the thousands who filed past his coffin in the main entrance hall of Parliament buildings, and by the huge concourse which followed his body to its resting place in the old Sydney street cemetery, was impressive evidence of the high esteem in which he was held by the community generally. His grave is marked by a fine symbolical memorial statue erected by the Labour movement of New Zealand.

*N.z.P.D.*, pass. (notably 10 Oct 1933); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *Annals N.z. Lit.*; Holland, op. cit.; typescript in Alexander Turnbull Library; Janet Fraser in *The Standard*, 6 May 1937; *The Standard* (p), *Grey River Argus*, *Evening Post*, 9 Oct 1933. Portrait: Parliament House.

HOLLAND, JAMES JOB (1841-1922) was born in Leicester, England, educated there and

## HOLMES

learned the trade of a builder with his father. In 1860 he came to New Zealand in the *Persia*, and after spending a short time on the Otago goldfields he was drafted into the militia for the Maori war, in which he rose to the rank of sergeant.

In 1864 he settled down as a building contractor, and he erected many important edifices in Auckland (including St Benedict's Church, the Costley home and the Baptist Tabernacle). He served on highway boards, the Auckland harbour board, the charitable aid board, the hospital board, the Auckland College and Grammar School governors and the council of Auckland University College. Holland was a member of the City Council (1886-93); mayor of Auckland (1893-95); a sinking fund commissioner and a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. Elected in 1891 to the licensing committees for Auckland North, South and East, he was chairman for three years.

In 1896 he was elected to Parliament for City of Auckland, but he was defeated at the following election (1899). Holland was an Oddfellow for 46 years and a trustee for 30. He married (1864) Agnes Melvin, daughter of Dr Mackenzie. Holland died on 31 Jul 1922.

*N.z.P.D.*, 7 Sep 1922; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.z. Herald*, 1 Aug 1932. Portrait: Parliament House.

HOLMES, JAMES (1831-1910) was born at Brighton, England, and learned the trade of a painter. Emigrating to Australia in 1852, he was for some time goldmining at Forest Creek, Bendigo and Ballarat, and for five years (1855-60) working in his own business in Geelong. In 1861 he came to Dunedin, followed his trade there for four years, and in 1865 moved to Hokitika, where he continued in his business, with a branch at Greymouth. In 1880 he bought the Okuku water race at Kumara, which he worked successfully for 20 years. He was also interested in the erection of one of the earliest batteries on the Coast. He was chairman of the first licensing committee, a member of the harbour board and the High School board and a vice-president of the Savings Bank. A Liberal in politics, Holmes was interested in the early political career of Seddon, who called him to the Legislative Council in 1901. He died on 17 Apr 1910.

## HOLMES

*N.z.P.D.*, 28 Jun 1910; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Apr 1910. Portrait: Parliament House.

HOLMES, JOHN (1838-1907) was born in county Kilkenny, educated at the Royal School, Dungannon and at Trinity College, Dublin, and admitted to the bar at King's Inns. In 1865 he emigrated to Victoria and was for some years magistrate at Wangaratta. In 1878 he settled in Christchurch, where he practised in partnership with A. Loughrey. He represented Christchurch in Parliament (1881-87), and during the next three years (1887-90) led the Radical party. His manifesto at the election of 1890 is an interesting exposition of radical ideas of the day. Holmes died on 3 Jul 1907.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 5 Jul 1907.

HOLMES, MATTHEW (1817-1901) was born at Strabane, county Tyrone, educated in northern Ireland, and trained for commercial life. At the age of 20 he emigrated to Victoria, where he farmed for a short time on the Barrabool hills. Being burned out, he went into business in Geelong, interesting himself in shipping wool and other produce and supplying the diggings.

Having made a small fortune, Holmes returned to Scotland in 1854 and purchased an estate near Edinburgh, but in 1859 he sailed for New Zealand in the *Pirate* to take up the position of general manager for the New Zealand and Australian Land Co. Visiting England in 1862 as a commissioner for the Exhibition of that year, Holmes sold his estate in Scotland and brought his family to Otago. He took up extensive holdings of land on behalf of the company and in his own name, notably the estates of Awamoa (near Oamaru), Castle-rock (Lumsden) and Manapouri. His other interests included Seaward Downs, Spar Bush and Totara. He was a progressive agriculturist, and imported a great deal of machinery for various properties. He also took a keen interest in stock breeding and purchased many stud animals abroad, especially Clydesdale horses and long-woolled sheep. At Castlerock he had a Cheviot flock.

In 1866 he was called to the Legislative Council, and he attended to his duties regularly for the remainder of his life. He was an original director of the Mosgiel Woollen Co. On re-

## HONGI

tiring from active business Holmes disposed of his connection in Dunedin to Dalgety, Rattra and Co. He married (1841) a daughter (d. 1897) of Allan McLean, of Strathallan, Victoria. Holmes died on 27 Sep 1901. (See G. McLEAN.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p), iv (p); *N.z.P.D.*, 27 Sep 1901; *Col. Gent.*; J. Church, in *Otago Daily Times*, 1 Oct 1901; *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Mar 1875, 28 Sep 1901. Portrait: Parliament House.

HONGI HIKA (?1777-1828) was a Ngapuhi chief of high rank, the son of Te Hotete, chief of Te Tuhuna (Kaikohe), and was descended from the great ancestor Rahiri. In person he was of medium stature and slight build, with large broad forehead, quick piercing eyes; dignified, mild mannered, little suggestive of the savage; and one of the least assuming of all the travelled Maori chiefs.

Hongi first distinguished himself in the field in Pokaia's expedition against the Roroa (1806) and he was one of the tribal leaders against Ngati-Whatua at the battle of Moremo-nui (1807), where Ngapuhi, stricken with terror at the death of Pokaia, fled the field. Hongi lost two brothers and many relatives and only escaped by his fleetness. It was here that he conceived the idea of revenge which shaped his later life by convincing him of the efficacy of firearms. In the next few years he had some personal successes in the field, but only where the enemy had no guns. With native weapons the fortunes of war swung from side to side. A campaign against the Ngati-Korokoro in 1812 on the lower Hokianga river created an entanglement which had the effect in 1844 of ranging the Ngati-Pou on the side of the British against Hongi's relative Hone Heke.

Hongi greatly widened his knowledge of the world by visiting Sydney in 1814 in company with Kendall, Hall and his nephew Ruatara. Marsden, with whom he lived at Parramatta, was much struck by his mild manners, his chiefly conduct and his sincere desire to acquire European arts. Hongi learned the alphabet in six days. He showed some skill in carving a bust of himself with an iron hoop. Returning to New Zealand with Marsden at the end of 1814, he assisted materially in the establishment of the mission. With Korokoro and Ruatara he helped to regulate the natives attending the first service held by Marsden, and thereafter was a constant protector of all Christian mis-

## HONGI

sions. He was most anxious to encourage the intercourse of white men, and punished severely any offences against the pakeha in his territory. Agriculture interested him, and he grew wheat from seed sent by Marsden, but military matters were his preoccupation. He laughed at Marsden's admonitions to stop fighting, but agreed to desist while the missionary was in New Zealand. In 1817 he planned a naval expedition to the North Cape, but having quarrelled with the Whangaroa tribe en route he returned to the Bay, lest they should make reprisals in his absence. In Feb 1818 Hongi joined Te Haupa (Ngati-Paoa) in an expedition to East Cape. With 900 men they harried the coast of the Bay of Plenty as far as Hicks Bay, where Te Haupa was killed. Hongi returned to his home with many hundreds of prisoners. Marsden dissuaded him from taking part in the Amiowhenua expedition (1819-20). By a deed dated Nov 1819 he granted land for the mission at Kerikeri.

Desirous of visiting England, Hongi sailed with a near relative, Waikato (q.v.) in Mar 1820 in the whaler *New Zealander*. They spent several months in Great Britain in charge of Kendall, making a prolonged stay at Cambridge, where they collaborated with Professor Samuel Lee (q.v.) in compiling a Maori dictionary. Hongi was dignified in bearing, behaved devoutly in church, and was everywhere treated with great deference. He was especially interested in the arts and crafts of the country, in army organisation and in implements of agriculture. George IV granted him an audience and gave him a suit of armour and some two-barrelled guns. Hongi had already conceived the ambition of being paramount king in New Zealand. He wished to take back with him 100 artisans, some missionaries and 20 British soldiers with three officers, and he offered to give them land to settle on. He was at special pains to secure firearms, even exchanging for them presents which seemed to him to have less value. Waikato, on the other hand, was interested in implements of a more peaceful purpose.

The English winter proving injurious to Hongi's health, the government provided the ID with passages to New South Wales in the convict ship *Speke*. He was received by the Governor and presented with a cow and other gifts. While there Hongi heard of the death

of a son-in-law fighting against the Thames tribes, and he also met the Thames chief Te Hinaki (q.v.) and the Coromandel chief Te Horeta (q.v.). Te Hinaki was awaiting an opportunity of a passage to England, but was dissuaded by Marsden. Hongi discussed freely his intention of turning his arms against Hinaki and Horeta as early as possible to obtain utu for his losses. Fired with this passion, and his ambition of being the King of New Zealand, he disposed of many utilitarian gifts and bought guns and ammunition. Moreover, according to Bishop W. Williams, he brought back to New Zealand a mind exasperated against the Church Missionary Society.

Returning in the ship *Westmoreland* to Bay of Islands (where they arrived 11 Jul 1821) Hongi held aloof from the missions, and his example was soon reflected in the defiant and truculent behaviour of the common people and the mischievous conduct of inferior chiefs. He entertained the Thames chiefs for a short time and then set about preparations for his expedition against them. He constructed for his own defence an ingenious fortification. On 5 Sep Hongi embarked the strongest taua ever despatched from the Bay—2,000 men, many of them with guns; and amongst the leaders such men as Rewa, Patuone, Muriwai and Waikato. The expedition sailed up the Hauraki gulf against the Ngati-Paoa pas at Mokoia and Mau-inaina, where Hinaki, poorly supplied with guns, had made the best preparations he could for the attack. Though presents were offered and accepted, Hongi pressed forward to the attack. The helmet which George IV had given him was shot off at an early stage, and in the close fighting he was in grave danger through getting his feet entangled in a vine. But Patuone urged a new attack, and Hongi, forming his superior numbers into a cuneus with himself at the apex, carried the position. Te Hinaki he shot personally and drank some of his blood. The pa was then attacked with rifle fire from high platforms and taken with great slaughter of men, including three pakeha sailors, women and children. Some hundreds of the vanquished were devoured in a feast lasting several days, and Hongi returned to the Bay of Islands with Hinaki's head as a trophy. In the two fights it is believed that at least 1,000 Ngati-Paoa were killed.

All of the northern tribes resented the monopoly of trading and pakeha intercourse which Hongi had created, and they lived in terror of the irresponsible supremacy of his guns. Marsden reasoned with him without avail that if he would only cease fighting they might accept him as king. In Dec 1821 Hongi proceeded against the Ngati-Maru pa Te Totara (Thames) which withstood his assault for two days and a night. He then sent sixty of his chiefs to make a deceitful peace, which Ngati-Maru accepted and sealed with gifts. Pomare, to avoid complicity in the plot, withdrew his men and returned home. Hongi's forces took to their canoes and pulled as far as Tararu as if "retiring; but when night fell they landed and took the pa by surprise. Sixty Ngati-Maru chiefs and many of other tribes who were in the pa were killed. Hongi's son-in-law, Tete, was amongst the casualties, and the belief that he died at the hands of a Waikato warrior afforded the pretext for a new campaign. Meanwhile Hongi returned to the Bay with his captives, upon whom revolting cruelties were committed.

In Jan 1822 1,000 men left for Thames, and in Feb an equal number. Their goal was a triple pa held by Waikato (with some allies of Ngati-Whatua and Ngati-Paoa) at Matakītaki" at the junction of the Mangapiko and Waipa rivers, 1½ miles north of Pirongia. Hongi's canoes were paddled up the Tamaki, pulled across the portage at Otahuhu to Manukau, and thence across the portage from Waiuku to the Awaroa, a tributary of the Waikato. Obstructions carefully prepared by the flying enemy delayed the journey, and it was probably the middle of May when Hongi sat down on the west bank of the Waipa, within 100 yards of the position. Many of the defenders escaped when the Ngapuhi guns first opened fire, and the pa was taken without much resistance, hundreds of the defenders being smothered in the ditches while trying to escape. On the following day Te Wherowhero and Te Kanawa led a counter attack and drove the Ngapuhi back into the pa, but Waikato were again defeated at Orongo-koekoe. Te Wherowhero, though vanquished, had yet another triumph at Otorohanga, where he surprised a considerable force of Ngapuhi who had captured a party of Waikato women. Sixty of the enemy were killed. Ngapuhi re-

turned north at their leisure, while Waikato hid in the forests of the upper Mokau.

Hongi was back at his home at the end of Jul. His next great expedition, against Rotorua, was in the early part of 1823. On this occasion the canoes paddled up the Pongakawa river, east of Maketu, towards Roto-rehu, and were then hauled overland to Roto-iti and so into Roto-rua. This difficult portage was hampered throughout by the bold attacks of the Ngati-Pikiao (Arawa), from whom Hongi suffered many losses. The Arawa, fearing Hongi's guns, had assembled with their canoes and supplies on the island of Mokoia. Hongi paddled round the position for three days, opening fire occasionally but really reconnoitring. Meanwhile many of the defenders swam to the shore of the lake and escaped. On the third day Hongi landed on the north side of the island, which was carried without great difficulty. In this attack the leader again had his helmet shot from his head and was thrown down in his canoe. Ngapuhi lost many men in the fighting in the canoes. They stayed some time in Rotorua, but abandoned the idea of a permanent occupation and eventually left, after making a partial peace with the chief Hikairo, to whom Hongi gave one of the helmets of George IV. The conqueror returned to the Bay with many prisoners. Hongi in 1823 promised Marsden he would devote his attention to agriculture if a man were sent to teach his people to plough; but he still exulted in his conquests and lamented that there was so little goodwill shown towards him by other chiefs. Later in the same year, while Pomare and Te Wera went on a new expedition, Hongi made preparations for sending Rewa with sixty other Ngapuhi chiefs and Rewa's daughter, Matiretoha, to cement a peace with Waikato by the marriage of the latter with Kati (brother of Te Wherowhero) and the reinstatement of that tribe upon their lands. This was achieved early in 1824.

Now at last Hongi was free to seek utu from his old enemies of Ngati-Whatua. Overtures were sent to the Hokianga people, who agreed to co-operate. Hongi then set out with a taua of 500 against the Te Roroa division of the hostile tribe, but timely presents assuaged his anger and he returned without attacking. Late in Feb 1825 the campaign was commenced.

Hongi had with him his son Hare Hongi' (aged 20, who had shown great bravery in the campaign against Hinaki), and many great chiefs, including Whareumu, Taiwhanga, Te Morenga and Te Tirarau, while the Hokianga contingent included Patuone, Nene and Moetara. Ngati-Whatua rejected the sage advice of the veteran Murupaenga to await attack at the head of navigation on the Kaiwaka river, and took up their position at Te Ika-a-ranga-nui, about a mile up the little tributary Waimako. Hongi wore his full coat of mail. Most of his men had guns, whereas the thousand of Ngati-Whatua and Uri-o-hau had very few. Ngati-Whatua impatiently dashed into the stream to fight hand to hand with the well-armed Ngapuhi under Whareumu; and killed many of them before Hongi came on the scene. Very soon the Ngapuhi firearms gained the upper hand. The carnage was terrible and, though Ngati-Whatua returned to the charge, they had no chance. They had lost one thousand men before they took to their canoes and escaped down the river. In one heap by the river's bank lay 120 dead, with Hongi's son, Hare Hongi, amongst them mortally wounded. Many Ngati-Whatua chiefs fell, but Murupaenga escaped, only to meet his death shortly afterwards. The tribe dispersed into the forest and did not reassemble until British sovereignty brought security to the weak. Ngapuhi lost about 70. Many prisoners were taken back to Hokianga, but liberated later by the intercession of Moetara.

Shortly after Hongi's return to Bay of Islands he moved his abode to Waimate. About Jun or Jul 1825 he went with Tareha to Whangaroa to punish the local tribe for the capture of the brig *Mercury*, an incident which he feared might discourage the visits of pakeha ships. Later in the year, to avenge a reverse suffered by his people at the hands of the fleeing Ngati-Whatua, he pursued them to Waikato and came up with them at Noho-Awatea, on the Mangapiko river. Some Ngati-Paoa who were in the pa were called out, and peace was made with them and then, with the help of a Ngati-Haua contingent under Waharoa, Hongi overwhelmed the Ngati-Whatua and killed Rewharewha. On his homeward journey he met Pomare and tried to persuade him to abandon his expedition, but without success. About this

## HONGI

time Murupaenga, the only chief who was able year after year to maintain a successful warfare against Ngapuhi, died.

Family **tragedies** and the ingratitude of people who feared but did not love him weighed on Hongi's mind, and late in 1826 he decided to leave Bay of Islands, drive his enemies from **Whangaroa** and live there. While he was fighting against the Ngati-Pou of Whangaroa (Jan 1827) the Wesleyan mission station at Wesleydale was plundered and the missionaries fled to Bay of Islands. In an engagement on the Mangamuka river Hongi received a **bullet wound** in the chest from which he eventually died. Marsden **hurried** across from Sydney (Apr 1827) to assure himself that the missions were safe. In spite of his unwavering care for them, **Hongi** was still consumed with the passion for war. Almost up to the day of his death (3 Mar 1828), he was planning a raid against Waikato for the death of Pomare, and his last words were to exhort his people to repel stoutly any attacks upon them. The missionaries had real reason to appreciate his protection, though undoubtedly it was prompted by the advantage **he** reaped from having pakeha settlers amongst his people and European ships engaged in commerce with him.

Hongi was cruel and treacherous, but not more so than his fellows. Powerful chiefs could not easily **discard long** traditions of revenge and utu Without falling in the estimation of their people. The early possession of firearms was a temptation to an ambitious man to establish a hegemony for his tribe. This restless ambition was fatal to **Marsden's** pious hope that the Maori people might accept a sovereignty based upon Christianity. Hongi had two wives, **Tangiwhare**, and the blind wife Turi-ka-tuku, who accompanied him on most of his **campaigns** and often advised him shrewdly as to his plans. She was the mother of Hare Hongi and of Harata, who married Hone Heke (q.v.) and Heke's military ambitions were inspired in some **degree** by jealousy of his father-in-law's reputation. Harata afterwards married Arama Karaka Pi, whom she survived. Turi died about the time of the last campaign against Whangaroa.

. A son of Hongi, Ripiro (born about 1804) visited New South Wales in 1819, returning in H.M.S. *Dromedary*.

410

## HOOKER

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Buller; Marsden, L. and J. (p); *Creevey Papers*; Carleton; Barton (p); Ramsden; Sherrin and Wallace.

HONORE, ABRAHAM (1818-94) was of French Huguenot extraction, and was born at Fredericia, in the Danish province of Jutland. An earnest student of the Bible, he offered his services at the age of 22 to the North German Missionary Society and was accepted. Having been brought up to farm work, his education was inadequate, and he spent two years in the seminary at Hamburg.

In 1843, following the arrival of a young Maori from Stewart island in a German whaler, the Society decided to establish a mission in southern New Zealand and chose Wohlers (q.v.) for the post. When Wohlers had been four years at Ruapuke, Honore was sent out in the *Blundell* (1848) to assist him. They spent 20 years together, working by day on their farms and preaching on Sundays to a dwindling congregation of Maori. Honore went to Stewart island (1855). In 1859, when living at Jacob's river, he became naturalised. He was now most of the time on the mainland, and had charge of all the natives between Dunedin and Invercargill until he was persuaded that there was better work in the North Island. He settled at Marton, ministering to the Scandinavians and constantly travelling up and down the coast keeping in touch with the despondent and often hostile tribes of Titokowaru, Te Whiti and Wikingi te Rangitake. Though his stipend was never much more than £50 a year he was twice married and brought up a family. He died at Foxton on 23 Jul 1894.

*Taranaki Herald*, 22 Nov 1873; Beattie, ii; Wohlers; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *N.Z. Gaz.*, 1859.

HOOD, AUGUSTUS ADOLPHUS ALEXANDER (d. 1866) was captain and owner of the barque *Augusta* at the time of his death (27 Jul 1866). He was a member of the Marlborough Provincial Council from 1862, his seat being vacated in 1866 owing to his failure to attend either session during that year.

*Marlborough P.C. Proc.*; *Marlborough Press*, 1 Aug 1866.

HOOKER, SIR JOSEPH DALTON (1817-1911) was born at Halesworth, Suffolk. Educated in the Glasgow High School, he proceeded

## HOOKER

to the University (where his father was professor of botany), and studied moral philosophy and medicine, graduating M.D. in 1839.

Interested in botanical research, he received an offer from Sir James Clark Ross to accompany the Antarctic expedition and he sailed from Chatham as assistant surgeon in the *Erebus* on 29 Sep 1839. The voyage was broken at Tasmania, New Zealand and the Falkland islands, and Hooker had ample opportunities of making collections. He spent some time at the Auckland and Campbell islands, where with Lyall he collected 370 specimens of plants. At Bay of Islands (early in 1841) he met Colenso and Dr Sinclair, who assisted him to make a **thorough** exploration of the vicinity. The **botanical results** of the expedition were published in six volumes by the British Government. The *Flora Antarctica*, *Flora Novae Zealandiae* and *Flora Tasmaniae*, which appeared between 1843 and 1860, embraced all the information on the subject which Hooker had collected from various sources. He had ample time to gather from correspondence with Colenso, Sinclair and others the results of their later observations.

In 1846 Hooker was appointed botanist to the geological survey of Great Britain. In 1847 he made a botanical and geographical survey of the Himalaya region, discovering many new plants (including 37 species of rhododendron). Hooker's researches had an important bearing on the theory of evolution. In the Pacific he found identical species in islands separated by 3,000 miles of ocean, and in the Galapagos he found related but different animals and plants in the different islands. In 1844 Darwin first confided to Hooker his theory of evolution by natural selection, and they corresponded continuously during the next 14 years before the theory was published. Darwin valued Hooker's opinion more than that of anyone else and believed he would live to see Hooker the first authority in Europe on geographical distribution. His introductory essay on the flora of Tasmania (1859) is remarkable as the first sketch of a rational theory of geographical distribution of plants. Hooker and Lyell some time earlier acted for Darwin, who was ill, in proving that his theory had been put forward 14 years before.

In 1860 Hooker took part in a naval scientific

411

## HOOKER

expedition to Syria and that year also he began (with Bentham) his *Genera Plantarum*. In 1865 he succeeded his father as director at Kew, where he had been engaged as botanist since 1855. His handbook of the *New Zealand Flora* which was commissioned by the New Zealand Government, appeared in 1867. In 1868 he was president of the British Association. In 1871 he went with John Ball and George Maw on an expedition to Morocco in which he proved that the Arctic-Alpine flora did not reach the Atlas mountains. Hooker in 1872 found himself in conflict with the Office of Works over the function of Kew Gardens, which the department thought should have the character of a pleasure garden. Gladstone sided with Hooker, and removed the offending commissioner.

In 1872 Hooker drew up suggestions for the collections to be made by the *Challenger expedition*, and in 1876, as president of the Royal Society, he welcomed back the expedition. He was chairman of the committee for publication of the reports, which appeared in 50 volumes during the period 1876-95. In retiring from the presidency of the Society in 1878, Hooker announced the raising of a sum of £10,000 as an endowment to enable the Society to reduce its fees, which had prevented many men of high eminence from joining. After some years of scientific work in America Hooker returned in 1879 to Antarctic botany, discussing the flora of Kerguelen Land as a result of the transit of Venus expedition (1874). His *Genera Plantarum* having been completed in 1883, he turned to his Indian botany, which he completed in seven volumes in 1897. Retiring from Kew in 1885, he edited in 1896 Sir Joseph Banks's journal of Cook's first voyage, and thereafter worked on the flora of Ceylon and the *Imperial Gazetteer of India*.

Hooker received honorary degrees from Oxford, Cambridge, Edinburgh, Glasgow and Dublin. (C.B., 1869; K.C.S.L., 1877; G.C.S.L., 1897; Order of Merit, 1907.) He received the most prized medals of many learned societies, including a Royal medal (1854), from the Royal Society, the Copley medal (1887) and the Darwin medal (1892). In 1892 he was the sole recipient from the Royal Swedish Academy of the medal struck to commemorate the bicentenary of the birth of Linnaeus. His physical and mental powers remained unimpaired until

## HOOS

his death, on 10 Dec 1911.

Leonard HUXLEY, *Life and Letters of Sir J. D. Hooker*, DN.B., Hooker, *op. cit.*, N.Z. *Jour. of Science*, May 1885.

HOOS, CONRAD, was born in Germany and acquired some experience in farming there and elsewhere on the Continent and in Scotland. He came to New Zealand on the discovery of gold at Gabriel's Gully, and followed the rush to Westland in 1865. He was a member of the Canterbury Provincial Council (for Westland) in 1866-67, and a member and first chairman of the Westland county council (1868). About 1870 he edited the *West Coast Times*. Hoos stood for the superintendency against Bonar, M. Kennedy and J. White in 1874, but was at the bottom of the poll. He was the author of *The New Zealand Practical Agriculturist* (1882).

HOPKINS, ISAAC (1837-1925) was born in London. He saw service in the mercantile marine during the Crimean war, and came to New Zealand first in 1855. Having married, he returned to the West Coast in 1865 and was on the Thames goldfield soon after it opened (1867). He and his mates working on the Golden Crown battery there first instituted the eight-hours system on the field in place of the 10 hours previously observed.

It was at the Thames that Hopkins commenced beekeeping, with a gincase hive (1874). In 1879 he obtained a copy of *Langstroth on the Honey Bee*, and from this constructed his first moveable-frame hives. He established an apiary at Parawai, Thames, which attracted considerable attention. From 1880 he contributed notes on beekeeping to the *Thames Advertiser*, and the *Auckland Weekly News* and shortly afterwards he brought out the first edition of his *Bee Manual* (afterwards the *Australasian Bee Manual*). In conjunction with J. C. Firth he established an apiary at Matamata, where he bred Italian queens and sent them to all parts of Australia and New Zealand. He also imported Holy Land bees and other varieties. Owing to ill-health, Hopkins removed to Auckland in 1887 and there organised the New Zealand Beekeepers' association, and promoted the foul brood and bee diseases bill of 1888 (which was unfortunately shelved). In 1905 he was appointed Government apiarist, and in 1907

## TE HORETA

and 1908 he got the legislation passed. He started the apiary at Ruakura state farm and the departmental bulletins on bee culture. In 1883 Hopkins was running the *New Zealand Illustrated Bee Journal*. He died on 20 Jul 1925.

Hopkins. *op. cit.* and *Practical Bee Keeping*, biography of Hopkins (New York State College of Agriculture, Cornell University); N.Z. *Jour. Agric.*, 20 Aug 1925. N.Z. *Herald*, 21 Jul 1925.

HOPPER, EDWARD BE'ITS (d. 1840) of Dover, was first associated with Dr G. S. Evans in 1832. He was a moving spirit in the South Australia Company and in 1837 E. G. Wakefield introduced him as the projector of that scheme. He was one of the promoters of the New Zealand Company and was a member of the Church of England Society, of the committee of the first colony and of the provisional committee formed in Wellington after the landing. He arrived in the *Oriental* (Jan 1840), and entered into partnership with H. W. Petre and F. A. Molesworth in a mercantile firm at the Hutt, which established a Hourmill and sawmill and had a millwright and engineering shop at work in Jun. Hopper had considerable landed interests in the province and was a director of the bank. He was drowned in the Hutt river on 17 Sep 1840, while working timber for the mill.

*Ward* (p). MS. journal in Turnbull Library.

TE HORETA TANIWHA (?176Q-1853) was the principal chief of the Ngati-Whanaunga tribe, of the Coromandel and Thames, when the pakeha colonists arrived. He claimed as a boy of nine to have seen Captain Cook when he was in Hauraki gulf, and was middle-aged when the first white settlers arrived. His daughter married William Webster (q.v.).

Horeta allowed the storeship *Coromandel* to take in spars in the gulf, and from her the name Coromandel was applied. He was one of the signatories of the Treaty of Waitangi (1840) and was consistently friendly to the whites, who called him 'Old Hooknose.' His name 'Taniwha' he adopted from having killed his assailant in the water after falling overboard wounded. A few months before his death Horeta convened a meeting of chiefs to discuss with Colonel Wynyard, Sir William Martin and Bishop Selwyn the conditions on which

## TE HORI

gold prospecting should be allowed. Feeble and stooped with age, he was proud that this ancestral lands should produce gold. He embraced Christianity early, but was baptised only a few weeks before his death (which occurred on 21 Nov 1853).

G.B.a.p., 1854/1779, p 180; C. W. Ligar, in *Illustrated London News*, 24 Nov 1855 (p); Cowan, *Sketches* (p); S. P. Smith; Bowen, 291-2; Carleton; Thomson; White, *Ancient History of the Maori*, vol. v; *New Zealander* (Auckland), 15 Dec 1852.

TE HORI, PITA (? 1805-1872) was a lineal descendant of Tuahuriri, the founder of the Ngai-Tahu tribe. A courageous warrior, he took part in the defence of Kaiapohia and was taken prisoner by Te Rauparaha (1827), but escaped and took part in Tairaroa's expedition against the Ngati-Toa at Queen Charlotte Sound. Pita was one of the envoys to arrange a peace, and he resided thereafter in Waikato till 1844, when he returned to take part in the sale of the Canterbury block. He died in Aug 1872.

*The Press*, 5 Sep 1904.

HORN, JAMES (1855-1932) was born at Inverkeithney, Banffshire, educated at Huntly school, Aberdeen, and trained as a draper. Coming to New Zealand by the *Oamaru* in 1875, he spent a few years in business at Port Chalmers and then entered into partnership in Horn, Roy and Co. and built the first store at Stirling. There he was a member of the Clutha licensing committee. In 1883 he purchased a business at Bannockburn, where he was chairman of the school committee, a member of the Kawarau and Wakatipu licensing committee and of the hospital board, and 13 years chairman of the Vincent county council. A firm believer in the future of central Otago when by means of irrigation fruit and lucerne should be developed, he was a member of the Railway League and afterwards organised the Upper Valley Settlers' Delegates League.

A Liberal in politics, Horn contested the Tuapeka seat in 1908 against Chapple; and the Wakatipu seat in 1911 against Fraser. On that gentleman's retirement (1919), Horn was elected. He retained the seat against J. Ritchie in 1922 and 1925, and retired in 1928. He was a member of the Otago education board from 1916, and of the King Edward Technical School

## HORNSBY

governors from 1919. Horn was a keen rifle shot and a member of the champion team in 1882-83. He married Maude Barltrop (of Nelson). His death occurred on 11 Dec 1932.

N.Z.P.D., 26 Jan 1933; *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Dec 1932.

HORNBROOK, ALFRED, was a son of a colonel of the Royal Marines, and himself served as a field officer of engineers in the British Legion in Spain (1837), and was created a Knight of Saint Ferdinand. He came to Wellington in the *Oriental* (1840) and engaged in business. During 1850, in anticipation of the arrival of the Canterbury settlers, he established the Mitre inn at Lyttelton. He was one of the first to start a station in Canterbury, taking up Mt Pleasant at Arowhenua, where he lost his money owing to scab. About 1870 he and his brother William bought Raukapuka from A. Cox, and they had also Opuha Gorge and Kakahu for a while. Hornbrook represented Port Victoria in the Canterbury Provincial Council in 1862-71, and was in the executive (1869-70). His wife is said to have been the last woman in Canterbury who wore the crinoline.

William Hornbrook, who was born in France in 1822, also served in Spain. He died at Seadown in 1882.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*, Cox; Acland; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Ward.

HORNE, CECIL GREVILLE (1845-1920) was born in Australia, where his parents had settled. He went to England to prepare for the Royal Navy, in which he served on several stations and rose to the rank of commander. In 1880 he settled in New Zealand, and shortly afterwards married a daughter of Singleton Rochfort. He was sergeant-at-arms to the House of Representatives from 1880 till 1889, when he resigned and accepted the governorship of a prison in northern New South Wales. There his wife died, he remarried and, returning to New Zealand, was again appointed sergeant-at-arms. He died on 12 Jul 1920.

N.Z.P.D., Jul 1920; *Evening Post*, 12 Jul 1920.

HORNSBY, JOHN THOMAS MARRYAT (1857-1921) was born in Hobart, Tasmania, where he was educated and brought up to printing by his father. Coming to New Zealand in

## HORT

1874, he settled at Queenstown, and soon afterwards took charge of the *Observer* at Arrow, where he was a borough councillor and lieutenant of the volunteers. In 1876 he became foreman printer of the *Southland Times*, and some years later was on the *News*. In 1882 he started the *Lake Country Press* at Arrow, and he contested the Wakatipu seat against T. Fergus in 1884. In 1886 he became editor of the *Napier Evening News*, and later of the *Waipawa Mail*. While in Hawkes Bay he was a member of the education board. After a few months in Dunedin he returned to the *Evening News*. He became editor of the *New Zealand Times* in 1896 and in that year contested the Wairarapa seat in Parliament.

In 1898 Hornsby purchased the *Wairarapa Leader*, and in 1899 he won the 'Wairarapa seat against Buchanan. Defeated by the same opponent in 1902, he turned the tables in 1905. In the following year he relinquished the *Leadel*' and became editor of the *New Zealand Railway Review*. Defeated in 1911 and 1914, he won the Wairarapa seat once more in 1914, but was defeated in 1919 (by A. D. McLeod).

Hornsby died on 23 Feb 1921. He married (1876) Sarah Scott, a daughter of Dougald Napier (Glasgow).

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.I.*, i. Portrait: Parliament House.

HORT, ABRAHAM (1799-1869) arrived in New Zealand in 1843. His son Abraham preceded him to Wellington, where he arrived in the *OTiental* in 1840 and established himself in business. There were several other Jews on board under engagement to him. Hort, junior, was elected to the committee of colonists in Apr. He was a keen oarsman and took part in amateur crews at regattas. In 1840, when sailing his whaleboat up the harbour (Heaphy being also on board) she upset in a gust of wind.

Abraham Hort, senior, arrived in Wellington in the *Prince of Wales* (3 Jan 1843). A man of wide Hebraic knowledge, he had authority from the Chief Rabbi (Dr Herschell) to form a congregation, and on the Saturday following his arrival (7 Jan) he conducted the first Jewish service held in New Zealand. Immediately afterwards he applied to the Administrator of the Government (Lieut. Shortland) for a site for a synagogue and cemetery in

## HORTON

Wellington; 'grants which' he said, 'will greatly conduce to the direction of the capital and industry of the Jewish people to these distant shores.' The application was approved on 16 May, and on the 31st Nathaniel Levin, Solomon Mocatta, and Kauffman Samuel were named as trustees. Hort was on the burgess roll in 1843, and seems to have been one of the aldermen elected in Oct of that year. He also signed the address of sympathy with the Nelson settlers after the Wairau *affray*. In 1845 he was a member of the military sub-committee for the defence of Wellington.

In 1848, when he was about to visit England, Hort moved a resolution at a public meeting to receive an address of sympathy from Auckland inhabitants on the earthquake in Wellington. He said it was a matter of congratulation to him that he had not left New Zealand before he heard such a message had been received from the people of Auckland. Some members of the Hort family settled in Tahiti as merchants a few years after the father's arrival in New Zealand.

Hort returned to England in the *Clontarf* in 1859, and died there on 18 Oct 1869. (See SIR F. BELL and N. LEVIN.)

*N.Z.C.*; *Jewish Review*; Dora Hort, *Tahiti, the Gem of the Pacific*, 1891; Ward; *Wellington Independent*, 20 May 1859; *N.I. Spectator*, 20 Jul 1853.

HORTON, ALFRED GEORGE (1842-1903) was born at Hull, Yorkshire, and as a youth was employed on the reporting staff of the *Daily Express* there. In 1861 he came to New Zealand and served a year on the staff of *The PTess* (Christchurch). He established the *Timaru Herald* (Jul 1864), which he edited and sub-edited for eight years, and then sold out to his partner. After a visit to England he joined Wilkinson in the *Thames Advertiser* and, removing two years later to Auckland, purchased the *Daily Southern Cross* from Vogel's company. At the end of 1876 the Wilson brothers, proprietors of the *New Zealand Herald*, negotiated a partnership with Horton, which involved the amalgamation of the daily papers, and the weekly issues.

Horton represented the town of Timaru in the Canterbury Provincial Council (for a few weeks in 1869), and he was instrumental in

## HOSKING

getting Stafford to stand for the Parliamentary seat (1868). In Auckland he took no part in public life. In 1884 he visited London at the request of the committee of investigation of the Bank of New Zealand and secured more capital and the first steps towards reorganisation of the institution. He was for a time a director of the Bank of New Zealand Estates Co.; from 1890 of the New Zealand Insurance Co. (two years chairman); and for some years chairman of the local board of the Mutual Life Association of Australasia.

Horton married (1867) Jessie Haliburton Chisholm (Dunedin). She died in 1879. His death occurred on 11 Mar 1903.

*Cycl. N.I.*, ii; *The Press* and *N.Z. Herald*, 12 Mar 1903.

HOSKING, SIR JOHN HENRY (1854-1928) was born at Penzance, Cornwall, and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Rock City* when only a year old. He was educated at Auckland and at the age of 16 was articled to Samuel Jackson. In 1875, having passed the necessary examinations, he was admitted by Judge Gillies, and he at once proceeded to Dunedin to take up a post as managing clerk to E. P. Kenyon. In 1877 he was admitted to a partnership which lasted till 1898, Hosking carrying on most of the time alone after the departure of Kenyon to England. He was a first-class conveyancer.

Accepting the advice of S. Solomon (q.v.) to enter into practice as a barrister, he showed himself also an excellent advocate, a sound and able lawyer. He gave valuable assistance in drafting the Bank of New Zealand legislation in 1894. In 1907 he took silk with the first batch of K.C.'s in New Zealand, and in the following year he entered into a new partnership with John Cook. In 1913, with A. McIntosh, he acted as a royal commission to inquire into the working of the Public Trust office, and in 1914 he was appointed a judge of the Supreme Court. During his tenure of this appointment he had to decide many difficult and intricate legal questions arising out of post-war legislation designed to adjust the relations between mortgagors and mortgagors. In 1924 he was appointed to carry this work to a conclusion under the mortgages final extension act. He was also chairman of the war pensions board.

## HOUSTON

Hosking retired from the bench in 1925 and was knighted (K.B.) in that year. He married Kathleen, daughter of Colonel Reader. With his wife he took a prominent part in Dunedin in the early activities of the Royal New Zealand Society for the Health of Women and Children, Lady Hosking being first president of the Dunedin branch..He died on 30 May 1928.

*N.I. Law Jour.*, 12 Jun 1928; *N.Z. Herald* and *Otago Daily Times*, 31 May 1928.

HOUKAMAU, TE HATIWIRA (1842-1916) was born at Wharekahika, Hicks Bay, the son of Iharaia Houkamau, a leading chief of Ngati-Porou (who was descended from Porourangi and who took the loyal side in the Hauhau rising. He died in 1875).

In 1865, when left in charge of Te Mawhai pa, Tokomaru, with only women and boys while the men were in the field against the Hauhau, Houkamau successfully defended the position against a force of overwhelming strength. He then proceeded to Waerengahika and took part in the fighting there and later at Ngatapa. As sergeant-major of the Ngati-Porou contingent, he served through the Urewera campaign and then received his commission as captain in the New Zealand militia. Commanding a Ngati-Porou force against Titokowaru, he took part in much of the fighting there. After the death of Ropata Wahawaha (q.v.) Houkamau became chief of the Ngati-Porou tribe. He died on 17 Sep 1916.

Cowan; *Who's Who N.I.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 19 Sep 1916.

HOUSTON, ROBERT MORROW (1842-1912) was born in county Down, Ireland, the son of the Rev T. Houston, D.D., and educated at Belfast Academy and Queen's College. Arriving in Lyttelton by the *Canterbury* in 1864, he remained in Christchurch for six months, and then went to Auckland, where he was employed as a school teacher at Whangarei, Otara and Otahuhu. His pupils won two out of three of the first state scholarships given in the province. Houston kept a store in Mangonui for many years, and was interested also in the timber and kauri gum industries.

He was chairman of the Mangonii. town board and Oruaiti district board, and for 24 years chairman of the Mangonui county coun-

## HOVELL

cil. In 1890 he was elected to Parliament for Bay of Islands, which he represented until 1908. He was a fluent speaker, well versed in parliamentary forms, and for 15 years was chairman of the native affairs committee (retiring in 1906 owing to ill-health). Houston married in 1870 Tina, sister of James Stewart, C.E., Auckland. He died on 27 Sep 1912.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Oct 1912; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Sep 1912.

HOVELL, DE BERDT (1850-1905) was the son of Dr C. H. J. Hovell, of the 3rd Waikato Regiment, and came of an old East Anglian family. Educated at King's School, Rochester, where he was a scholar on the foundation, he proceeded to Boniface College, Warminster (1868) and to St Augustine's College, Canterbury (1870). There he distinguished himself in mathematics and Greek, winning the Whytehead Greek Testament prize in 1870. He was captain of the eleven and the fifteen.

Hovell devoted himself to oriental languages, with a view to missionary work in India. He went there in 1872 under an appointment from the Society for the Propagation of the Gospel, and was ordained in Bombay (1873) and stationed at Kolapore. For health reasons he had to leave India in 1874, and he came to New Zealand in 1875. He served for three years in the diocese of Christchurch, at St Michael's, Christchurch, and in the parishes of Prebbleton, Templeton and Halswell. He married (1876) Emily, daughter of George Ffitch (Woodstock, Canterbury). Appointed vicar of St John's, Napier, in 1878 he displayed great energy in his parish and in furthering the building of the Cathedral. In 1889, on the formation of the Cathedral chapter, he was appointed dean. For some years he edited the *Church Herald*, and for 23 years took a Bible class in a district high school. Hovell was an able organiser, an eloquent preacher, and a man of considerable culture and literary taste. He was a prominent freemason and Rechabite and for 20 years was chaplain to the Napier garrison. He died on 4 Sep 1905.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *New Zealand Graphic*, 19 Dec 1891 (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 5 Sep 1905.

HOWARD, EDWIN JOHN (1868-1939) was born at Bristol, educated at Plymouth, and apprenticed to an accountant at Devonport.

## HOWELL

He served for some years in the Royal Navy, and in 1887 married Harriett, daughter of Amos G. Goring.

In Australia Howard worked for some years as a copper, lead and zinc smelter. He became foreman for the Australian Smelting Co., and later for the South Australian and West Australian Governments. He studied chemistry at the Adelaide School of Mines and prospected for gold in the Macdonald range. Howard came to Christchurch in 1902 and joined the Labour movement, in which he held every office from secretary of a union to secretary of the general labourers' union and eventually president of the national organisation. In 1919 he was elected to Parliament for Christchurch South, which he represented till his death (on 26 Apr 1939). Under the Labour Government (which came into office in 1935) he was chairman of committees and deputy-speaker. He was a member of the school committee, the boards of governors of Canterbury University College, the Technical College and the Agricultural College, of the Christchurch City Council, the Lyttelton harbour board, the domain board and the repatriation board.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1919-39; 30 Jun 1939; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion and Evening Post*, 27 Apr 1939 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

HOWELL, JOHN (1809-74) was born at Eastbourne and lost his father at an early age. His first employment yielded him threepence a week, and with a friend he ran away to sea on a smuggling vessel. On their return from France they were apprehended by the coastguard, but he was released on account of his youth, and with a companion (Luxford) stowed away on an emigrant ship for Australia. On being discovered they worked their passage. Howell shipped on whalers for some years and in 1829 was first mate under Captain Lovett. He spent some years in New Zealand waters and eventually took service with John Jones (q.v.) at Waikouaiti.

In 1836 Jones sent Howell with three ships to establish a station at Jacobs river to replace the abandoned station at Preservation Inlet. The settlement which he established at Falls Point was successful, and in a few years Howell purchased it for himself. By his marriage in 1838 with Koikoi, a daughter of Horomoana Patu, the Ngati-Mamoe chief of Centre island,

## HOWITT

he received a wide expanse of land between the Waimatuku and Jacobs rivers. While enjoying his honeymoon in Sydney Howell persuaded his half brothers and sisters (the Stevens family) to give up their unsuccessful farms in Australia and make their homes in Southland. They came in the whaler *Success* (1842), his half sisters being the first white women in Southland. Cattle and horses were brought across to stock the run and George Stevens took charge of the marine store which Howell established at Riverton. Theophilus Daniel, who arrived soon after, married the youngest Miss Stevens.

In 1844 Howell received visits from Bishop Selwyn and F. Tuckett. Developing his mercantile interests, he built the schooner *Amazon* (laid down in 1848), which on her first voyage carried some French colonists from Akaroa to Tahiti, and then went on to prospect the riches of California. On the return Howell brought 500 sheep from Sydney. His wife having died, he married a daughter of Captain Brown, a sealer at Codfish island. He now definitely left the sea and lived in a substantial house of Tasmanian hardwood. His grants aggregated 50,000 acres, extending from Fairfax to Wreys Bush, to which in later years he added the Burwood estate, Fairlight, south of Kingston, and some smaller properties. He built a fine new country house, Eastbourne, at Flints Bush. Howell continued to own and sail small ships, but he persuaded many whaler friends to forsake the sea and settle down on the land. He represented Riverton in the Southland Provincial Council (1862-69). He died on 25 May 1874.

*Riverton*; Roberts, *Southland*; Beattie, ii; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Southland Times*, 24 Apr 1937.

HOWITT, HERBERT CHARLTON (1838-63) was born at Esher, Surrey, the son of William Howitt and Mary Howitt, the poet, and brother of the Australian explorer A. W. Howitt. From his infancy he showed a passionate love of nature, animal and plant life. He received a good education, but was more interested in gardening, farming and the construction of implements. For a few years he was in a business office, walking into London each day.

In his early twenties Howitt came to Australia and spent two years with his father and brother on a bush selection. After they returned to

## HOWORTH

England he decided to settle in New Zealand and arrived in Canterbury in 1860. He found employment under the provincial government prospecting for gold on the West Coast and in Jan 1863 was instructed to open out a route to the goldfields from the Hurunui plain to the mouth of the Grey or the Teramakau. Having sent back two of his men as unfit for the strenuous work, he marked out and cut 40 miles of the track through Harper's pass and down the Teramakau. Having fixed a camp on Lake Brunner, he carried on into the winter, living mainly on eels and birds. He lent his horses to Lauper, the survivor of Whitcombe's party, to get back to Canterbury.

About the end of Jun Howitt lost his life, the only survivor of his party being Hammett, who found his way to the mouth of the Teramakau.

*Encycl. Brit.*; Money; *Austral. Encycl.*; Howitt; Harrop, *Westland*; Sherrin's journal in *The Press*, Jan 1864; *Lyttelton Times*, 27 Dec 1863.

HOWORTH, HENRY (1834-1907) was born in Shenley, Hertfordshire, the son of James Howorth (q.v.). He came to New Zealand with his father in the *Strathmore* in 1856 and studied law under him in Dunedin. He was appointed coroner in Dunedin in 1860, and admitted to the bar in 1862.

In 1869 Howorth was elected to Parliament for Taieri, which he represented till the following year. On one occasion his vote kept the Fox-Vogel Government in office. He practised in Wellington till 1894, and was then appointed examiner of titles in the Land Transfer department. He married a daughter of Charles Mottram Steel. Howorth died on 8 Jan 1907.

*Evening Post*, 8 Jan 1907.

HOWORTH, JAMES (1792-1867) was born in England, educated for the bar at Gray's Inn, and came to New Zealand with his family in the *Strathmore* in 1856. Settling in Otago, he practised in Dunedin for many years, and occupied the position of provincial solicitor and crown prosecutor. He represented Central district in the Provincial Council (1860-63), and was a member of the executive for two years at that time. He died on 13 Mar 1867.

*Otago P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Mar 1867.

## HUGHES

HUGHES, ROBERT CLINTON (1847-1935) was born at Auckland, the son of Robert Hughes (1821-1914), a Shropshireman. He arrived in New Plymouth as a young man and was apprenticed to W. Halse (q.v.), under whom he studied law and was duly admitted a solicitor. He practised for many years in New Plymouth.

Hughes was elected a member of the Provincial Council for New Plymouth in 1874, and sat until the abolition. He took a great interest in the amenities of the town, being a member of the Pukekura park board from its inception until his death. He was a member of the town board (1884-89) and of various societies for beautifying the town and humanitarian objects. Hughes was the last surviving member of the Provincial Councils in the North Island (see SIR J. MILLS). He died on 18 Jan 1935.

*Taranaki Herald*, 19 Jan 1935; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Taranaki P.C. Proc.*

HULBERT, CHARLES PARTRIDGE (1841-1926) was born at Bristol and arrived in New Zealand from Australia in 1860. He had some experience at Gabriel's Gully in 1863, and served in the Maori war. Later he settled in Christchurch, where he was for 30 years in business. He was elected to the City Council in 1879, 1881 and 1886, and was mayor in 1884-85, and a member of the domain and hospital boards. During his mayoralty he promoted the establishment of the Jubilee home for the indigent poor of Christchurch. Hulbert was an officer and life member of E battery of volunteers, and during the South African war (1899-1902) and the war of 1914-18 he did service as examiner of military clothing. He was a freemason, being master of lodge St Augustine and past provincial grand warden. He died on 22 Jun 1926.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *Evening Post*, 23 Jun 1926.

HULKA, WILLIAM KING (1819-1908) was born at Deal, the son of a doctor. The family originated in Holland, whence they fled to England to escape the persecutions of the Spaniards. Apprenticed to the sea under the East India Company, Hulke disliked the life, and after one voyage retired to farming in Pembrokeshire.

In 1840 he sailed for New Zealand in the ship *London*. Landing at Port Nicholson he walked overland to Wanganui, where he

## HULL

started a store in partnership with Dorset, Keith and Barley brothers (Bristol). Returning to Wellington, he made a voyage to Sydney for dairy cattle and established a farm at Kilbirnie and Miramar, from which he supplied vegetables and milk to the town. At the end of 1842 he moved to Wanganui, where he erected a flour-mill (driven by the wind) with machinery which he had imported from England. It was burned down in 1845 and he moved to New Plymouth, where he erected a new mill with the same machinery. This was afterwards the Union mill and was run by water power. In the early fifties Hulke purchased land at Bell Block, which he farmed until the war, when he retired to New Plymouth and established a nursery garden. In 1866 (with the Webster brothers) he established a steam flour mill. In proposing C. Brown for the Legislative Council of New Munster, Hulke advocated universal suffrage (1852). In 1886 he became a pioneer of the Taranaki dairy industry, when he started a model farm and dairy at Corbett road, Bell Block. Importing Jersey cattle, he established a famous herd and rendered valuable service to the industry and the province by promoting the dairy factory system. In 1882 he published *Golden Rules for Butter-making*.

Hulke was member of the Provincial Council for Grey and Bell (1857-58, 1861-65). He died on 23 Oct 1908.

*Taranaki P.C. minutes and Gaz.*; Philpott (p); *Taranaki Herald*, 23-28 Oct 1908.

HULL, FRANCIS HOLMES (1816-84) was born in England. He arrived in Auckland by the *Blue Jacket* (1860) and settled at Mangawai, or Kaiwaka, where he farmed for many years. He was appointed a justice of the peace (1861), and served on the bench in his own district and later in Auckland. In 1866 he was elected M.H.R. for Marsden, which he represented to 1869. Four years later he contested Otamatea for the Provincial Council. He was the first chairman of the Pukekaroro road board (1869) and for many years chairman of the school committee. He was one of the promoters of the Mangawai Racing club (1860). On going to reside in Auckland (1883) Hull took a keen interest in the Society for the Prevention of Cruelty to Animals and other humanitarian bodies. He died on 13 Jul 1884.

*N.Z. Herald*, 21 Jul, 6 Aug 1884.

## HULME

HULME, EDWARD (1812-76) was born at Hythe, Kent, and at the age of 16 was apprenticed to the Royal College of Surgeons in London. He studied also at the Middlesex Hospital and, having received his diploma, practised in Exeter, and was appointed a physician at the infirmary. He subsequently pursued his studies on the Continent, notably at the School of Medicine in Paris and at the Salpetriere asylum. In 1848 he was awarded the Jacksonian prize of the Royal College of Surgeons for his essay on asphyxia.

Hulme resigned from the Rotunda Hospital in Dublin in 1856 and came to New Zealand in the *Strathmore*, intending to go on the land. He was, however, persuaded to practise his profession, and in 1857 was appointed provincial surgeon in Dunedin. He was afterwards coroner and for many years port health officer. Hulme was for a short time a member of the Dunedin town board, but took no other part in public life. He died on 27 Dec 1876.

Fulton (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 28 Dec 1876.

HUME, ARTHUR (1840-1918) was born at Dublin, educated at Cheltenham College, Gloucester, and in 1859 received his commission as ensign in the 79th Highlanders, with which he served in India for some years. Returning to England in 1871, he became a captain in 1874 and deputy-governor of Millbank Prison, London. In 1875 he was transferred to Dartmoor; in 1878 he became deputy-governor of Portland, and later governor of Wormwood Scrubs.

In 1880 he was appointed inspector of prisons in New Zealand. In 1888 he was gazetted colonel of militia and inspector of volunteers. Two years later he became commissioner of police, a position which he occupied (together with that of Under-secretary of Defence till 1895) until his retirement in 1909. He died on 2 Feb 1918. Hume married (1864) Miss Macintire, daughter of the deputy-inspector-general of hospitals in the Punjab.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z. Times*, 4 Feb 1918.

HUME, FERGUS (1859-1932) was born in England and educated at the Otago Boys' High School and Otago University. Becoming a barrister, he spent three years in Melbourne and settled in England in 1888. His first novel, *The*

## HUMPHRIES

*Mystery of a Hansom Cab*, was published in 1887 and was followed by *Madame Midas* (1888) and many others. Hume died on 12 Jul 1932.

*Otago H.S.O.B. Reg.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1931.

HUMPHREYS, EDWARD WINGFIELD (1841-92) was the second son of Erskine Humphreys, barrister, Gârthmyl, Wales. He came to Otago in 1864 and took up a property at Strath-Taieri. About 1888 he left this station and settled in Christchurch. In 1889 he was elected to Parliament as a supporter of the Atkinson Government for Christchurch North, which he represented till the end of the following year, when he was defeated. In 1891 he was elected to the Christchurch City Council but had to resign on account of ill-health, and died on 28 Apr 1892.

Humphreys married Alice, second daughter of the Hon J. Hawdon (q.v.).

*Parltry Record*; *Otago Daily Times*, 30 Apr 1892. Portrait: Parliament House.

HUMPHRIES, EDWARD LARWILL (1816-69) was born in Finsbury Square, London; educated in London, and passed the examination of Apothecaries Hall in 1838 and that of the Royal College of Surgeons in 1839. He commenced to practise in the East End but, his health not being equal to the strain, he sailed for New Zealand as surgeon in the *Mary*, which touched at all ports in 1849.

Returning to England, his health again failed a year later and he came out to New Zealand with his family in the *Sir Edward Paget* (1851). Humphries settled in New Plymouth and was soon engrossed in an arduous, if not always lucrative, practice. Owing to native unrest the family had to move into the town while he acted as surgeon to the forces in the field.

In 1857 he was elected to the Provincial Council for New Plymouth, which he represented until 1861, being speaker of the Council the whole of that time. He was also on three occasions in 1860-61 deputy superintendent. Being a good business man, and finding medicine not profitable, he opened a business in the town, first as chemist and afterwards adding wine and spirits. Humphries and his wife (a daughter of William Dixon, lieutenant in the 44th Regiment) were active in all social movements, including the initiation of the recreation grounds, which afterwards developed into

HUMPHRIES

Pukekura park. Humphries died on 9 Jul 1869. His widow (Ellen Maria) died on 27 Apr 1889, aged 68. (See T. HUMPHRIES, C. W. HURSTHOUSE.)

Skinner (p); *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald*, 14 Jul 1869.

HUMPHRIES, THOMAS (1841-1928), son of E. L. Humphries (q.v.), was born in London and came to New Zealand in 1851. He was educated privately in New Plymouth and in 1857 joined the Taranaki survey department. He subsequently rose to the position of chief surveyor and commissioner of crown lands for Taranaki, Auckland, Hawkes Bay, Nelson and Canterbury and in 1906 became Surveyor-general. Serving with Atkinson's Forest Rangers, he took part in the Maori war in the sixties and became a good rifle shot.

Humphries was interested in astronomy in relation to surveying and wrote a text book on the subject. He officially observed the transit of Venus in 1882, and photographed the eclipse of the sun in 1885. He was a fellow of the Royal Astronomical Society and of the Institute of Surveyors, and a member of the Government Life Insurance and Public Trust boards of investment, and of the miners' and surveyors' boards of examiners. Retiring in 1909, he died on 30 Aug 1928. In 1864 he married Martha Ann, daughter of the Rev Robert Ward (q.v.).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *Evening Post*, 30 Aug 1928 (p); *The Dominion*, 31 Aug 1928 (p).

HUNTER, ALEXANDER HAMILTON (1816-1900) was a builder by trade. Arriving in Auckland in the early fifties, he carried on his trade with success until 1863, when a cyclone destroyed his factory in Parnell. Hunter was M.P.C. for Parnell (1865-69). He died on 12 Jul 1900.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *N.Z. Herald*, 17 Jul 1900.

HUNTER, GEORGE (1788-1843) came from Banffshire, Scotland. There he was educated and, having engaged in business in Glasgow, he came to New Zealand in the *Duke of Roxburgh* (1840) intending to make his home in Wellington. In the first instance he was representing the London firm of Arthur Willis, Sons, and Co., and later he started business in Lambton quay in partnership with Kenneth

HUNTER

Bethune as general merchants and shipping agents. On the erection of their building S. D. Parnell (q.v.), as clerk of works, insisted on the eight-hour day.

Hunter occupied the post of storekeeper-general to the New Zealand Company's settlement. He immediately took a leading place as a citizen of Wellington. For some time the pioneers governed themselves under a voluntary association of order and defence. When this drew the suspicion of Governor Hobson they appealed for the erection of a municipality, which would enable them to raise funds to carry out the necessary works in the town. Hobson proclaimed Wellington a borough as from 4 Aug 1842, and steps were taken to elect a council. This took place on 3 Oct. Hunter became mayor by virtue of his position at the head of the poll, and appears to have been painstaking, thorough, and sagacious. He was one of the few chosen by Hobson for the commission of peace (3 May 1841).

Hunter's life came to an untimely end owing to his devotion to public duty. Requisitioned in Jun 1843 to call a public meeting to sympathise with the people of Nelson in the Wairau disaster, he attended it and caught a chill, from which his death followed on 19 Jul. W. Guyton became mayor for the balance of the term. The ordinance of the Legislative Council of New Zealand, under which the borough council was established, was disallowed later, and the corporation came to an end in Dec 1843. (See ROBERT COLE, HENRY GOVETT.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Ward (p); *Evening Post*, 3 Sep 1929 (p). Portrait: Wellington City Council.

HUNTER, GEORGE (1821-80) was born in Banffshire, the son of G. Hunter (q.v.), with whom he came to New Zealand in 1840. He became a member of his father's firm, which in 1844 removed from Lambton Quay to Customhouse street. When Kenneth Bethune died he became the sole partner. As a business man he was shrewd, able, and scrupulously honest. He had large country interests in Hawkes Bay (where he owned the Porangahau station), and considerable holdings in real estate in Wellington.

In public life Hunter was opposed to Featherston, and he declined Grey's offer of a seat in the Legislative Council because his partner

HUNTER

was a partisan of Featherston. He did accept the invitation in 1848. When the constitution of 1852 came into operation, Hunter retired from politics; but at the election of the second Provincial Council (1857) he was persuaded to come forward, and he was a member until the abolition. During the contest between Featherston and Jerningham Wakefield (1857-61) Hunter was closely associated with the latter, and was for a short time a member of his executive. He was also in Bunny's executive under the superintendency of Fitzherbert.

Hunter entered Parliament in 1870 as a member for Wellington City, and supported Vogel and Fox against Stafford. He continued in Parliament until 1879, when he was defeated by W. Hutchison, who also defeated him for the mayoralty. He retired from the City Council in 1879. Hunter was a founder of the Wellington chamber of commerce (of which he was president); of the Wellington Choral society, of the Gas Co., the Patent Slip Co., the Trust Loan, and Investment Co.; the Wellington Club, the Jockey club and the *New Zealand Times*. On a stud farm at Island Bay he bred stock which he exhibited successfully at shows. He was an efficient militia officer; started the patriotic fund during the Crimean war and took the first steps to see that New Zealand was represented at the London Exhibitions of 1851 and 1862. He was a liberal member of the Church of England, attending St Peter's Church and building a church on his estate at Porangahau.

Hunter married a sister (who died 1868) of Major James Paul (q.v.). He died on 6 Aug 1880. (See SIR GEORGE HUNTER.)

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Ward (p); *N.Z. Times*, 7, 13 Aug 1880; *Evening Post*, 3 Sep 1929. Portrait: Wellington City Council.

HUNTER, SIR GEORGE (1859-1930) was the son of George Hunter (1821-80, q.v.), and was born and educated in Wellington. He soon afterwards engaged in sheepfarming with his brother at Porangahau, where he lived most of his life. He was 35 years chairman of the Wallingford road board, 37 years chairman of the Porangahau road board, and 33 years a member of the Waipawa county council. He was president of the Hawkes Bay Agricultural and Pastoral association and of the New Zealand Council of Agriculture.

HUNTER

As a sportsman Hunter was president of the Waipukurau and Wellington Racing clubs. With his brother he bred many thoroughbreds and raced with some success. The mare Cynisca, owned by him and Sir George Clifford, won the Wellington Cup three times in succession. As a member of the racing conference, he introduced the gaming amendment bill on the first occasion. Hunter represented Waipawa in Parliament (1896-99), and again from 1911 till his death (which occurred on 20 Aug 1930). He married (1923) Mrs Edith Munro (nee Ford).

Hunter donated £30,000 worth of land for the settlement of veterans from the war of 1914-18. He was knighted in 1921.

*Parltry Record*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 20 Aug 1930; *Evening Post* and *The Dominion*, 20, 21 Aug 1930. Portrait: Ward; Parliament House.

HUNTER, WILLIAM MAGEE (1834-68) and his brother, HENRY BOYLE HUNTER, were born in county Antrim, Ireland. William was trained in the militia in Ireland and at Hythe gunnery school. On coming to New Zealand he was clerk to the Auckland Provincial Council. On the outbreak of war in 1863 he received a commission as captain and adjutant in the 1st Wai-kato Regiment of militia, in which his brother also served for a while. On the day of the attack on Turutumu-mokai (12 Jul 1868) von Tempsky, as senior officer, led his division to relieve the post and Hunter, having received no orders, remained to defend the Waihi redoubt with his division of mounted Constabulary. Unjustly accused of failing to come to the rescue of the garrison, he was acquitted by courtmartial, but the accusation rankled in his mind.

At the first attack on Te Ngutu-o-te-Manu (21 Aug) he commanded the second division, which formed the rear-guard in the retreat. In the second attack (7 Sep) he requested permission of Colonel McDonnell to storm the position, but was refused and ordered to escort the wounded out of the bush. Von Tempsky was one of the five officers killed and Lieutenant Henry Hunter, of the Wellington rifles, met his death while heedlessly exposing himself to observe the enemy movements.

Major Hunter was killed in the reverse at Moturoa (7 Nov). With 50 men of the Armed

## HURST

Constabulary he advanced across the open front of the position under heavy fire and led his men round the stockade searching for a weak spot. He was severely wounded, and though Whitmore tried to staunch the bleeding, died almost immediately. Hunter had begged permission the previous night to lead the assault.

Cowan; Whitmore; Gudgeon (p).

HURST, WILLIAM JOHN (?-1886) was born in England. He settled in Auckland in the early sixties, and was a conspicuous figure in politics for the remainder of his life. In 1868 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Auckland East, which he represented until 1875. In 1870 he moved the resolution which unseated the executive, and he was a member of the incoming government without portfolio; but later he accepted the treasurership, which he held for three years. In 1871 he was elected to the Auckland City Council, and in 1876-77 he was mayor of Auckland. He was also a member of the education board. In 1879 Hurst was elected to Parliament for Auckland City West, which he represented till 1881, and from that date until his death he was member for Waitemata. He was one of the four Auckland Liberals who supported the Hall ministry. He was a fine debater, an active thinker and a good business man, and was much interested in agricultural matters. He died in England on 29 Sep 1886.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; Morton; *Auckland Star*, 8 Oct, 15 Nov 1886. Portrait: Parliament House; Barr.

HURSTHOUSE, CHARLES FLINDERS (1812-76) was born in England. At the age of 19 he was sent to the United States and Canada to report on the prospects for settling there. He advised the family to turn their attention to New Zealand and he came to Nelson in 1842. From Wellington he walked to New Plymouth, where he spent five years, and then revisited England. There he published *An Account of the Settlement of New Plymouth* (1849) and lectured to induce emigrants to come to the Colony. He came back in the *Joseph Fletcher* in 1854 with other members of the family, but returned to England at once and was not able to come here again for 15 years. During that time he published *New Zealand, the Britain of the South* (1860), a *Letter to Australian Colonists* (1867), *The Incorporation of the British*

## HURSTHOUSE

*Colonial in the Home Empire* (1867), the *New Zealand Handbook, A Short Synoptical View Of New Zealand To-day* (1867), *Australian Independence* (1870), and a number of pamphlets. He was thanked by the Taranaki Provincial Council for his services to the province. Hursthouse came to New Zealand again by the *Halcione* in 1870. He died on 23 Nov 1876.

Hocken, *Bibliog.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 24 Nov 1876.

HURSTHOUSE, CHARLES WILSON (1841-1911) was born in Norwich, England, and educated in New Plymouth, where he arrived with his parents at the age of two. In 1855 he entered the survey department as a cadet, and two years later became assistant surveyor. In this capacity he was sent to survey the Waitara purchase, but was turned off by Wi Kingi's people (1860). He served in the Taranaki war (1860-64), and was present at Waireka and Mahoetahi. (Ensign of Military Settlers, 1866; lieutenant Taranaki militia, 1869; captain New Zealand militia, 1881; retired 1905.)

He represented Grey and Bell in the Taranaki Provincial Council (1869-73). In 1871 he was appointed a surveyor in the Public Works department to layout railway routes; in 1875 resident engineer in Taranaki, and in 1880 a road surveyor making roads to Parihaka. He then proceeded to make the explorations for the North Island main trunk railway. While on this duty, in Mar 1883, he and T. Newsham were captured by Mahuki and bound hand and foot for 48 hours. He was for many years engaged in the King Country and as resident engineer began the construction of the line, which he completed to Mokau station, 34 miles from Te Awamutu. In 1901 he was made chief engineer of the new Department of roads. Hursthouse married a daughter of Dr E. L. Humphries (q.v.). He died on 26 Feb 1911.

Cowan, *Wars and Old Frontier*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Jourdain. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

HURSTHOUSE, RICHMOND (1845-1902) was born in New Plymouth (the son of John Hursthouse, who arrived in 1842). Owing to the outbreak of the Maori war he was taken by his parents to Nelson, and his education was limited to one year at the Bishop's School there. At the age of 19 Hursthouse was with a survey party which laid out the town of Westport. He then returned to New Plymouth and served for

## TE HURUHURU

two years in the Bush Rangers under his kinsman Harry Atkinson. In 1868 he visited the Thames goldfields and afterwards spent three years in engineering works in Melbourne. He was fairly successful at the Gulgong rush in 1871, and returned to New Zealand for the Green Half rush at Coromandel. This was disappointing, and he returned to live in Nelson.

Hursthouse was elected to Parliament in 1876 by the Motueka constituency, which he represented for II years. He contested the Nelson seat (1899) and Egmont (1902). Hursthouse was farming until 1893, and thereafter was manager of the Australasian Gold Trust and Pioneer Co.'s works at West Wanganui. For many years he was a member of the land board and education board, and he was the first mayor of Motueka (1900). He died on II Nov 1902. His wife, a daughter of Edward Fearon, died on I Sep 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v; *Parltry Record*; Nicholls; *The Colonist and Taranaki Herald*, 12 Nov 1902. Portrait: Taranaki Hist. Coll.

TE HURUHURU, a South Island chief of the early nineteenth century, belonged to the Ngai-Tahu tribe. He had a narrow escape from death in a fight between Ngai-Tahu and Ngati-Mamoe on the Waitaki river, south Canterbury. Bishop Selwyn, who met him at the Waitaki ferry in 1844, found him a man of pleasing manners, and Edward Shortland, who found him as chief person at Te Puna a Maru, says that he acted as ferryman very conscientiously. He gave much information about the interior of Otago, and drew a map showing the position of the inland lakes.

Selwyn, *Annals*; Shortland; Hocken, *Otago*.

HUTCHISON, GEORGE (1846-1930) was born at Dundee, Scotland, the son of W. Hutchison (q.v.). To the age of 15 he received his education in public schools in Ireland and Scotland. Coming to New Zealand with his parents (1866), he was associated with the *Southern Cross* in Auckland for a year or two; then studied law and, having been admitted, commenced in 1872 to practise at Wanganui and Wellington.

Hutchison first attempted to enter Parliament in 1881. He announced himself for Waitotara, but stood down in favour of Bryce and contested the Egmont seat against Atkinson. In

## HUTCHISON

1884 he contested the Taranaki seat against Atkinson, and in 1887 defeated Bryce for Waitotara, which he represented till 1893. Electoral boundaries having been altered, he sat for Patea from 1893. A vigorous independent in politics, he had a part in the defeat of the Atkinson ministry (1890), but remained in opposition to the Ballance Government and afterwards to that of Seddon. In 1889 he introduced a bill to give accused persons the right to give evidence in their own defence.

In 1899 Hutchison went to South Africa, where for a while he did military staff duty during the advance to Bloemfontein and Pretoria. He resigned his seat in 1901 to practise law in South Africa, where he remained till 1907. After spending two years in England he returned to Auckland, where he passed the remainder of his life. He died on 30 Jul 1930.

Hutchison married a daughter of the Rev D. Hogg (Wanganui). He was for some time an officer of the West Coast infantry battalion. An eloquent speaker and a capital debater, Gisborne expected him to achieve some political success.

*Parltry Record*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 2 Jul 1890; Gisborne (p); Saunders; *N.Z. Herald*, 31 Jul 1930; *Auckland Star*, *ib.* Portrait: Parliament House.

HUTCHISON, WILLIAM (1820-1905) was born in the village of Bellie, Banffshire, educated in the parish and at Inverness, and became a journalist. He worked on newspapers in Scotland and Ireland, and published several pamphlets on the poor law and education. In 1866 he came to Auckland under engagement to the *Southern Cross*, but a few months later accepted the editorship of the *Wanganui Chronicle*, which he controlled for seven years.

During this time he was mayor of Wanganui (1873-74), and represented the town and district in the Wellington Provincial Council (1867-76). In Feb 1874 he established the *Tribune* (in Wellington). He sold out two or three years later to E. T. Gillon (q.v.), and edited the *Nelson Colonist* for a short time. He was very prominent in the civil life of Wellington, being five times elected mayor (1876-77, 1879-81). He was on the education board (1877-84) and represented Wellington City in Parliament (1879-81) and Wellington South (1881-84). In 1884, having been defeated by G. Fisher, Hutchison went to Dunedin and

## HUTT

again engaged in journalism. Here he became deeply interested in trades unionism and in politics. He was first president of the Otago Protection League; president of two trades unions and of the Industrial League of New Zealand (1890). After contesting the Roslyn seat in 1887, he was elected for the City in 1890 as a Labour representative (with Pinkerton and Fish). In 1896, and at a subsequent by-election in 1897, he suffered defeat, and he was not again in politics. A strong party man, yet very independent, he was perhaps not as well suited for politics as for journalism. As a writer he was highly endowed, with the accomplished style of a good essayist. He wrote prolifically on social, philosophical and religious topics. He was for 50 years an ordained elder of the Presbyterian Church, and for some years an ordained deacon of Knox Church. Hutchison was described at his death as 'an all-round worthy: He was on the committee of the Dunedin City mission and one of the Dempsey trustees. He married, in 1846, Helen Acheson, of Inverness (who died in 1900). Their sons included G. Hutchison (q.v.), T. Hutchison, S.M., and Sir James Hutchison. Hutchison died on 3 Dec 1905.

*Cycl. NZ.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 4 Dec 1905; *Evening Star*, *ib.*; *Lyttelton Times*, 8 Dec 1890. Portrait: Wanganui Town Hall; Wellington Town Hall; Parliament House.

HUTT, SIR WILLIAM (1801-82), after whom the Hutt river was named, was born in Lambeth, Surrey, and educated privately at Ryde, Isle of Wight, and Camberwell. Matriculating from St Mary Hall, Oxford, he entered Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. (1827) and M.A. in 1831. He married (1831) Mary, daughter of J. Milner, and dowager countess of Strathmore.

Hutt was M.P. for Hull (1832-41) and for Gateshead (1841-74). A freetrader and much interested in colonial affairs, he was a member of the select committee on colonial lands (1836). He was a commissioner for the foundation of South Australia, a member of the New Zealand Association (1837), and of the select committee on New Zealand (1840). After the New Zealand bill was thrown out in 1838 Hutt formed the New Zealand Company, amalgamating the interests of the New Zealand Land Company, the New Zealand Colonisation Company and

## HUTTON

the old New Zealand Company of 1825. He was later a director and chairman. In 1860 he was vice-president of the Board of Trade. (K.C.B., 1865.) He died on 24 Nov 1882. His first wife (who died 1860) left him mining properties worth over £18,000 a year. He married again (1861) a daughter of the Hon Sir James Francis Stanhope.

*D.N.E.*; *G.B.O.P.*, 1838, 1840 *et seq.*; Harrop, *Wakefield*; Marais.

HUTTON, DAVID CON (1843-1910) was born in Dundee, Scotland, educated there, and proceeded to the School of Art, where he gained a free studentship and in 1859 was appointed an art pupil-teacher. He continued his studies in modelling, and published his freehand drawing series. In 1863 he gained an art master's certificate, and in 1865 was appointed art master at the Perth School of Art. Early in 1870 he arrived in Otago (in the *Christian McCausland*) as drawing master under the Otago provincial government, and he forthwith established the School of Art in Dunedin, of which he was principal till his death (on 20 Oct 1910). Hutton married (1872) a daughter of A. Douglas, Edinburgh.

*Otago Daily Times*, 7 Nov 1910.

HUTTON, FREDERICK WOLLASTON (1836-1905) was the son of the Rev F. H. Hutton, and was born at Gate Burton, Lincolnshire. He was educated at Southwell Grammar School and at the Royal Naval Academy, Gosport, but at the age of 14 entered Green's merchant service and made several voyages to the East in the *Alfred*.

In 1854 he entered the applied science department of King's College, London, to qualify as a civil engineer; but on the outbreak of the Crimean war he received his commission (1855) as ensign in the 23rd Regiment (Royal Welsh Fusiliers). After a period of service in the field he returned to England, was promoted lieutenant (1857) and sailed for China, but was diverted to India. He was at the relief of Lucknow under Sir Colin Campbell. In 1858 Hutton returned to England to help raise a new battalion of the regiment. He passed the school of musketry at Hythe and was appointed instructor to the battalion, with which he went to Malta. Having completed his training at Sandhurst and Woolwich (specialising in geo-

## HUTTON

logy and mineralogy) and been elected a fellow of the Geological Society (1860), he was attached to the Royal Horse Artillery, and then to the 9th Lancers. Promoted captain (1862), he rejoined his regiment at Malta. In 1863 he was brigade-major at the Curragh, and in 1864 deputy-adjutant and quartermaster-general at Dublin.

In 1865 Hutton sold out of the army and came to New Zealand in the *Queen of the South*, reaching Auckland in 1866. He started flaxmilling, but was soon employed by the provincial government to examine the extent of the coal deposits in lower Waikato, and then spent two years under the Colonial Government reporting on the Thames and the geology of the Great Barrier. In 1869 he erected a flaxmill at Churchill, Waikato, but abandoned it as a financial loss. At the request of McLean, Hutton reported on the defence of Auckland against a sudden cruiser attack, and examined the harbours of Nelson, Wellington, Lyttelton and Port Chalmers. He recommended the mounting of guns and locomotive torpedoes and the training of marine artillery and volunteers.

In 1871 Hutton published his catalogue of New Zealand birds, in 1872 a catalogue of fishes, and in 1873 a catalogue of mollusca. He was appointed geologist to the Geological Survey and teacher of natural science at Wellington College. He then became provincial geologist of Otago, and in 1873 professor of natural science at Otago University. In 1880 he was appointed professor of biology at Canterbury College, a position he held until 1892, when he resigned to become curator of the Canterbury Museum. In that year also he was elected a Fellow of the Royal Society.

Hutton wrote many scientific papers. In 1861 he reviewed Darwin's *Origin of Species*, and some years later his *Lamarckism and Darwinism* attracted a good deal of attention. He also published many scientific text-books, and collaborated with J. Drummond in *The Animals of New Zealand* (1904). His magnum opus was the *Index Faunae Novae Zealandiae*, published in the same year. Hutton was president of the Australasian Association for the Advancement of Science.

## HYDE

He married (1861) Annie Gouger, daughter of Dr William Montgomerie, H.E.I.C.S., and died on 27 Oct 1905.

*Col. Gent.*; Hight and Candy; Hutton and Drummond, *op. cit.* (4th ed.); *Otago Daily Times* and *The Press*, 31 Oct 1905. Portrait: *N.Z. Jour. of Science*, vol ii (p).

HYDE, ROBIN, nee IRIS GUIVER WILKINSON (1906-39) was born in South Africa, the daughter of George Edward Wilkinson (who was born in India and went to South Africa with Lumsden's Horse in the war of 1899-1902) and his wife, Adelaide Butler, whose parents were pioneers of Victoria. Her great grandfather, John Sircom, was a minor poet. Coming to New Zealand as an infant, she was educated at the Berhampore school (Wellington) of which she was dux, and then at Wellington Girls' College, where she won junior and senior scholarships and several literary prizes and contributed to the school magazine, *The Reporter*. While on the staff of *The Dominion* she attended lectures at Victoria College. Having suffered permanent injury in an accident she devoted herself to literature, mainly as a freelance writer, and won a short-story competition of the *Auckland Sun* and a poetry prize. Under the pseudonym 'Robin Hyde' she wrote verse and prose for that paper, the *Sydney Bulletin*, the *Triad*, *Auckland Star* and the *New Zealand Artists' Annual*. Her first publication, *The Desolate Star*, a small volume of verse, appeared in 1934, and her first volume of prose, *Journalese*, in the same year. She developed quickly as a writer, publishing in rapid succession *Passport to Hell* and *Check to Your King* (1936), *Wednesday's Children* (1936), *Nor the Years Condemn* (1938), *The Godwits Fly* (1938) and two other volumes of verse, *The Conquerors* (1935) and *Persephone in Winter* (1937). Early in 1938 she went to China, where her health suffered from hardships undergone in the war. Her book, *Dragon Rampant*, was in the press when she died (in London) on 22 Aug 1939.

Robin Hyde, *op. cit.*, and personal information; *The Dominion*, 25 Aug; *Evening Post*, 23 Aug (p); 2 Sep 1939.

---

---

ICK, CHARLES THOMAS (1827-85) was born on the Lady Halton estate, Shropshire, and arrived in New Zealand in the *Lord Worsley* in 1858, going into business in Dunedin as a draper. In 1863 he started farming at Waikouaiti, where he took an interest in local affairs as a member of the borough council. Losing money on his farm, however, he moved to Christchurch in 1870, where he carried on business as an auctioneer for 12 years. In Dunedin Ick assisted in securing the return of Vogel to Parliament and was a member of the City Council. He was active in social work in Christchurch, being a founder of the Benevolent Aid society (1879) and a member of the hospital and charitable aid board. He was mayor of the City in 1879-80, and many years chairman of the works committee. He died on 27 Apr 1885.

*Cycl. NZ.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 28 Apr 1885.

INGLES, HENRY ANTHONY (1840-92) was born in London, the son of David Ingles, of Kincaid, Stirling. Educated at Edinburgh Academy and Sandhurst, he received his ensigncy in the 78th Highlanders (1856) and sold out in 1861 as a lieutenant. He came to Nelson by the *Ravenscraig* (1862), and with a brother purchased the Pukipuki run, Marlborough (extending from the Iron Gate to the Kowhai river), which they named Kincaid. They had a stem struggle with scab and rabbits.

Ingles was a justice of the peace and a member of the road board. He represented Clarence in the Marlborough Provincial Council from 1868 until the abolition, and was a member of the executive in 1870 and again from 1874 until the end of the period. He was M.H.R. for Cheviot (1871-75). As a friend and confidant of Stafford (q.v.) Ingles suggested to Vogel bringing down the abolition resolutions on 13

Aug 1874. He was afterwards on the county council. He married (1875) Emily Ann, daughter of Walter Glas Chieve (Tasmania). He died on 21 Mar 1892.

Information from family and James Davison, Kaikoura; *Parltry Record*; Press Association, 21 Mar 1892; *The Colonist*, 30 Nov 1869; *The Press*, Oct 1894; *N.Z. Herald*, 3 Dec.

INGLIS, JOHN (1822-84) was the son of a Presbyterian minister and was born at Milden, Roxburghshire. He emigrated to Victoria in 1854 and to New Zealand a few years later, taking up a sheep farm in the North Island. After spending a year or two in business in Timaru, he was appointed in 1864 manager of Matheson's agency in Christchurch. When that business was disposed of (1878) he carried on on his own account.

Inglis took a great interest in free and un-denominational education, and as a member of the Provincial Council for Christchurch (1869-74) he did much to promote the Canterbury system. In 1871 he was appointed by the Superintendent a member of the board of education, and he assisted to frame the education ordinance. He was chairman of the first board of education (1874) and was a member and chairman of both the boards subsequently set up under acts of Parliament (1874-84). Altogether he served 13 years on the board (including more than nine years as chairman). He was interested also in the Canterbury Philosophical Institute and was a governor of Canterbury College and some time chairman of the chamber of commerce. Inglis was a staunch member of the Trinity Congregational Church (of which he was 15 years treasurer). He died on 19 Oct 1884.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Hight and Candy; *Lyttelton Times*, 24 Oct 1884.

## INNES

INNES, ALEXANDER (1832-82) was born at Glasgow and educated in Edinburgh. He was apprenticed to his uncle, a seal engraver, but on emigrating to Victoria he was for some years a storekeeper at Ovens. He designed the town hall at Beechworth. In 1863 he came to Otago, settling in Queenstown as salesman to Bendix Hallenstein. Later he went to Arrowtown in charge of a branch store. There he acquired considerable property (including an orchard), to which he devoted his whole attention. Innes represented The Lakes in the Provincial Council (1872-73). He was the first mayor of Arrowtown and designed the seal of the corporation. A man of some culture and education, he took a keen interest in the local library. Innes died on 11 Dec 1882.

*Lake Wakatipu Mail*, 15 Dec 1882.

INNES, DAVID, came to Canterbury in the first years of the settlement and in 1853 was allotted 25,000 acres (later Holme and Pareora stations). He entered into partnership with William Hyde Harris, owner of Waikakahi (1855), and they worked the stations together until 1864. Then Innes and Edward Elworthy became partners. When they dissolved Innes took the lower Pareora, of which he freeholded 15,000 acres about that time.

While returning from England in the *Kensington* in 1862, Innes purchased from L. Walker (q.v.) a consignment of horses which Walker considered unfit for further travel. Thus Traducer, Leotard and Mermaid (dam of Lurline) came to New Zealand. Innes was in the Provincial Council (for Pareora) from Mar to Jul 1864, being twice elected in that period. After selling his station he resided in Christchurch till his death in 1865.

Innes married (1860) Catherine Lucy, daughter of Mrs D. T. Williams. She published in 1879 a volume, *Canterbury Sketches*, and wrote verse and fiction for the *Otago Witness* and other papers up to the time of her death (on 28 Apr 1900).

Acland; Cox; C. L. Innes, *op. cit.*; *Canterbury P.C. Proc.*, 1864; *Lyttelton Times*, 30 Apr 1900.

INNES, SIR JOHN (1840-1912) came to Canterbury in the early sixties and bought run 167. This became part of the Mt Brown station, of which he was later sole owner (1877). He took his younger brother James into partnership and

## IRONSIDE

in 1890 they bought the freehold of the whole of Double Corner and Mt Brown from the Midland Railway Co. He was a justice of the peace.

In 1878 Innes succeeded to the baronetcy of Balveny. He returned to Scotland in the nineties and died unmarried on 2 May 1912. He was succeeded as thirteenth baronet by his brother James (born 1846) who also returned to Scotland and was a justice of the peace for the county of Banff, where he died unmarried on 7 Jan 1919.

Acland; Burke, *Peerage*, 1935; Woodhouse.

IRELAND, GEORGE (1829-80) was born in north Ireland of Scots extraction, educated there and emigrated to the colonies. (Ross says Ireland was not his real name and that he had been an army officer.) He was at Gabriel's Gully (1861), the Dunstan and the Molyneux; and eventually left goldmining and settled down as a schoolmaster at Roxburgh. He was a well read, serious-minded man and though a Wesleyan, acted as secretary of the provisional committee before the appointment of the first Presbyterian minister (1868). After giving up the school he returned to mining and held a claim at Roxburgh until his death.

Ireland was member of the Provincial Council for Mt Benger (1873-75). In 1879 he was nominated by the miners as a Liberal to oppose the runholders' candidate for the Waikaia seat in Parliament and was elected. He died on 15 Aug 1880.

Don; Ross; *Evening Star*, 16 Aug 1880; *NZ Times*, 10 Sep 1880. Portrait: Parliament House.

IRONSIDE, SAMUEL (1814-97) was born at Sheffield, Yorkshire. In Sep 1836 he was sent to Hoxton Wesleyan College for theological training, where he distinguished himself as a linguist. On 24 Aug 1838 he married Sarah, daughter of William Eades, of Sheffield. They sailed for New Zealand by the barque *James*, 350 tons, on 20 Sep 1838 (the Revs J. H. Bumby and Charles Creed being fellow-passengers). They arrived on 19 Mar 1839.

With the assistance of the missionaries and of Tamati Waka Nene, Ironside studied Maori; in six weeks he read the morning service to the native congregation, and in five months was preaching extempore in Maori. He and the Rev John Warren accompanied the Hokianga

## IRONSIDE

chiefs to Waitangi to meet Captain Hobson, and he instigated the speech made by Nene in opposition to Hone Heke, as a result of which the chiefs signed the Treaty (6 Feb 1840). Ironside signed as a witness. He and Hobbs prepared for Hobson's visit to Mangu-  
ngu, where on 13 Feb 34 Hokianga chiefs signed the Treaty. Hobson wrote a letter of thanks to the Wesleyan missionaries for their aid.

Ironside was appointed to open a mission at Cloudy Bay. While at Kawhia with Whiteley, Ironside and the Revs J. Aldred and G. Buttle, accompanied by Paul Mariwhenu led a party of liberated slaves to their ancestral homes, and on this journey (Jun-Aug 1840) Ironside selected sites for mission stations in the Taranaki and Wanganui districts. The schooner *Hannah*, 28 tons, chartered to convey him and Buddle to Cook straits, was totally wrecked when leaving Kawhia. In Dec Ironside and Aldred left in the *Magnet*. Ironside was landed at Guard's Bay on 20 Dec, and Aldred at Port Nicholson on 23 Dec. Ironside selected as his headquarters Ngakuta Bay, at the head of Port Underwood, Admiralty Bay and Pelorus river. He planted native teachers at about 30 villages and sent preaching squads to the West Coast, Kaikoura and Banks peninsula, and to assist Watkin at Waikouaiti. At the 16 churches erected in his station were 600 baptised natives and a great body of adherents. The church at Ngakuta (opened on 5 Aug 1842) accommodated 800 people. Ironside established causes at Motueka and at Nelson in 1842. At Nelson in less than three years he baptised 680 adults and 168 children.

In Apr 1843 he gave evidence at an important murder trial in Wellington, the result of which angered the natives and outragea Ironside's sense of justice. The natives were sore also about certain land transactions. Ironside warned Tuckett (who was surveying some Wairau lands) and Captain Wakefield that the consequences might be serious. Failure to follow his advice led to the Wairau tragedy on 17 Jun. Ironside at Ngakuta heard of it the next afternoon (Sunday), and early on Monday tried vainly to launch his boat in the teeth of a south-east gale. On Tuesday, aided by men from the whaling station, he set out and encountered Te Rauparaha and Rangihaeata, who

## IRONSIDE

advised him to leave the dead to the wild pigs. At the scene of the tragedy Ironside buried some of the slain where they lay, and a dozen others in a large grave. Next day the Government brig *Victoria* arrived, and he handed over to St Hill, the sheriff, the pocket books, watches and money he had found on the various bodies. In Feb 1845 the residents of Nelson presented Ironside with a handsomely bound Bible in three volumes in appreciation of his heroic humanitarianism at the Wairau. The tragedy disrupted Ironside's plans, for the natives loaded their canoes and carried out their long-cherished purpose of returning to their ancestral homes in Taranaki. Ironside could not muster a native crew for his boat. He left the station in the temporary charge of Paramena; a native teacher, and later arranged for a catechist named Jenkins to supervise the work at Cloudy Bay and Queen Charlotte Sound.

Ironside settled in Manners street, Wellington, near Te Aro pa. From 1843 to 1848 he shared fully in the life of the town. On 13 Aug 1843 he officiated at the opening of a native chapel at Te Aro flat. He was a member of the committee dealing with the sale of lands at Te Aro, and witnessed the signatures of the natives to the deed of sale in Sep 1844. In that year he was a vice-president of the Mechanics' Institute. On 5 Dec he preached at the opening of a brick church of which Governor FitzRoy had laid the foundation stone. He was a trusted adviser of both FitzRoy and Grey, and his counsel on native affairs was valued by the Attorney-general and the Colonial Secretary. In 1844 petitions were sent by the church members and by prominent citizens asking that he should not be removed from Port Nicholson. He was accordingly left undisturbed until 1849, and exercised a profound influence amongst excited tribes from the Wairarapa to Wanganui. He co-operated heartily with Hadfield and Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake in preventing a Maori attack on Wellington. After the earthquake of 1848 Ironside bore a worthy part in organising relief measures.

In 1849 he was transferred to Nelson. Upon his departure from there in 1854 the citizens presented him with a silver tea service in testimony to his Christian philanthropy and eminent usefulness. After serving at New Plymouth

## IRVINE

(1855-57), Ironside transferred to Australia, where he laboured at Sydney, Adelaide, Hobart and Melbourne. From 1875 to 1878 he was foreign mission secretary in Victoria. In 1878 he was superannuated and settled in Hobart. He acted as custodian of church property deeds in Tasmania (1885-89) and died on 24 Apr 1897. M.A.R.P.

G.B.a.p., 1844/556. 1845/131; *N.z. Gaz.*, 1843; E. J. Wakefield; Buller; Buick, *Marlborough and Old New Zealander*; C. A. Macdonald; Morley; Pratt; G. Smales in *N.Z. Herald*, 6 Jan 1894; *Methodist Times*, 1890-92; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 11 Dec 1926 (p).

IRVINE, JOHN (1805-88) was born at Lerwick, Shetland. As a boy he showed a taste for art, but being left an orphan at the age of 10 he had to go abroad before he was 21 in search of a livelihood. He studied in Edinburgh and in London at the Royal Academy (1826-28) where Herbert, Etty and Maclise were fellow students. In 1828 he received a medal for work in the antique school, and in 1834 he was elected an associate of the Royal Scottish Academy, where he exhibited. At the Royal Academy he sold seven pictures in one year.

Irvine specialised in portraits, and finished some of the work of Thomas Lawrence. He came to Melbourne to join his son, and while in Adelaide made a portrait of Sturt, the explorer. In 1863 he settled in Dunedin, where he painted many portraits for the Provincial Council (including Dr Burns, Cargill, John McGlashan and Moses Wilson Gray). In 1865-66 he did some engraving and lithography for the *Otago Witness*. He was president of the Dunedin Art Society, to which he presented some books as the nucleus of a library. He died on 22 Jun 1888.

*Otago Daily Times*, 11 Jul 1888.

ISAACS, EDWARD (1820-91) was born in London and emigrated to Tasmania about 1840. He obtained a post with a firm whaling and sandalwood trading in the South Sea islands. In 1844 he established a business of his own and, leaving his partner in charge, went to London and sent to Auckland his brothers George and Henry. They did well as general merchants, and opened a branch in Melbourne when gold was discovered (1853). There he spent the next few years, identifying himself

## ISITT

with social and charitable objects. After removing to Auckland in 1860, Isaacs assisted to promote the Auckland Shipping Co. (afterwards merged in the New Zealand Shipping Co.). He was a member of the City Council 1875-79 and of the harbour board for many years. During the Waikato war the firm carried out large contracts for supplies. Isaacs died on 20 Aug 1891.

His younger brother, **HENRY ISAACS** (b. 1824) came to Auckland in 1852. He was on the harbour board and the City Council (1871-74 and 1875) and was mayor in 1874.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.z. Herald*, 11 Sep 1891.

ISITT, FRANCIS WHITMORE (1846-1916) was born at Bedford, England, and received his theological training at the Wesleyan College, Richmond. He came to New Zealand in 1870. He was a master of pulpit oratory, and held several important pastorates until broken health compelled temporary retirement. With health restored he devoted some years to church work and in 1900 he became secretary of the New Zealand Alliance (a position he retained until 1909). He was a prominent prohibition leader and brought to this work great organising capacity, strong conviction, boundless enthusiasm and tireless industry.

A magnetic personality, Isitt had great gifts as a platform speaker and wielded a trenchant pen as editor of *The Prohibitionist* (afterwards known as *The Vanguard*). During his secretaryship of the New Zealand Alliance ten electorates carried no-license. The impress of his influence is upon the statutes relating to the licensed liquor traffic.

Isitt married (1874) Mary Campbell, daughter of William Purdie. He died on 11 Nov 1916.

M.A.R.P.

ISITT, LEONARD MONK (1855-1937) was born at Bedford, England, educated at Bedford Modern and Clevedon Colleges and entered a softgoods business. Suffering ill-health, he came to New Zealand in 1875 and joined his brother (F. W. Isitt, q.v.) in Dunedin. There he studied for the Methodist ministry as a home missionary and was ordained in 1883. He early adopted the crusade against the liquor traffic and, allying himself with T. E. Taylor, became in a few years one of the protagonists of prohibi-

## ISLINGTON

tion. Isitt was associated as chairman with the Sydenham no-license campaign, which resulted in the closing of all hotels within the electorate (a decision afterwards reversed by the Privy Council). With the consent of the Methodist conference, he resigned from the ministry to devote his whole time to the prohibition cause. First he concentrated on the passing of a bill to provide for local option. The success of this crusade led to his being invited to England by the United Kingdom Alliance, and he made four lecturing tours of Great Britain.

On the death of T. E. Taylor (1911), Isitt contested his seat in Parliament (Christchurch North), which he won and held continuously till 1925. He then retired and was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till his death (on 29 Jul 1937). He was a brilliant orator and a persistent advocate of his ideals, prohibition and Bible-reading in schools. He repeatedly introduced in Parliament bills to further them, and he established *The Vanguard* and ran it for many years in the interests of prohibition. He was vice-president of the Methodist centenary conference in 1922.

Isitt married (1881) Agnes, daughter of John Scott Caverhill. He was principal of the firm of L. M. Isitt, Ltd., booksellers, and was a governor of Canterbury College.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 10 Sep 1937; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *Evening Post* and *The Dominion* (p), 29 Jul 1937. Portrait: Parliament House.

ISLINGTON, SIR JOHN POYNTER DICKSON-POYNTER, 1st Baron (1866-1936), was the son of Rear-admiral J. B. Dickson and Sarah, daughter of Thomas Poynder. Succeeding his uncle as baronet in 1884, he assumed the additional name of Poynder. Educated at Harrow and Oxford, he gained his commission as lieutenant in the 3rd battalion the Royal Scots. He served in the South African war and was aide-de-camp to Lord Methuen (D.S.O.). After retiring he became major and honorary colonel of the Wiltshire Yeomanry.

From 1898-1904 Dickson-Poynder was a member of the London County Council (for St George's, Hanover Square). He took a great interest in the feeding of school children and other social activities. In 1892 he was elected in the Conservative interest for Chippenham, which he represented till 1910, when he was ap-

## IZARD

pointed to be Governor of New Zealand. Having travelled widely in the British dominions, Dickson-Poynder was converted to Liberalism in 1905, but always asserted his independence. He was created first Baron Islington on taking office as Governor of New Zealand. His term lasted only two years. He retired on 2 Dec 1912 to undertake the chairmanship of the Indian public services commission.

In 1914 he was Under-secretary for the Colonies; in 1915-19 Under-secretary for India, and in 1920-26 chairman of the National War Savings committee (P.C. 1911; K.C.M.G. 1911; G.C.M.G. 1913.) He was chairman of the Imperial Institute (1914-21) and president of the African Society (1915-16), chairman of the Royal Northern Hospital (1891-1912) and a knight of justice of the Order of St John.

Islington married (1896) Anne, daughter of R. H. D. Dundas. He died on 7 Aug 1936, the title becoming extinct.

*Who's Who N.Z.*; Burke, *Peerage*; *The Times*, 8 Dec 1936.

IVESS, JOSEPH (1844-1919) was born at Askeaton, county Limerick, Ireland, and accompanied his parents to Melbourne in 1852. Educated at Barnett's Grammar School at Emerald Hill, he came to New Zealand in 1868, and was engaged in the printing business in Hokitika and Reefton. He represented Inangahua in the Nelson Provincial Council (1873-75). In 1875 he moved to Patea, where he established the *Patea Mail* and in 1877 to Ashburton, where again he established a newspaper.

He was a member of the borough council and contested the Parliamentary seat for Wakanui against J. C. Wason (1881). The election of Wason being declared void, Ives defeated Alfred Saunders. In 1884 he was defeated by J. Grigg, but he regained the seat in 1885, defeating E. G. Wright. On being again defeated (in 1887) he retired. Ives established 45 newspapers in various towns in Australia and New Zealand. He died on 5 Sep 1919.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 11 Sep 1919; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Scholefield, *Union Catalogue*.

IZARD, CHARLES BEARD (1829-1904) was born at Brighton, England, and educated at King's College, London, and Magdalen College, Cambridge. (B.A., first senior optime 1854.) He

## IZARD

was called to the bar at Lincoln's Inn (1854) and practised in the chancery division until coming to New Zealand in 1860 by the *Avalanche*.

Beard commenced to practise in Wellington, and in 1875 admitted H. D. Bell to partnership. Retiring in 1887, he devoted some attention to business, being a director of the Wellington and Manawatu Railway Co. and a governor of the Wellington Girls' High School and Boys' College. He contested the Foxton seat in Parliament in 1881, and was elected for Wellington South and Suburbs in 1887. A supporter of Atkinson, he was nevertheless a free-trader, and voted against his leader on his tariff proposals.

Izard married (1859) Miss Hayward (Sussex). He died on 24 Oct 1904.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *N.Z. Times*, 25 Oct 1904.

## IZARD

IZARD, CHARLES HAYWARD (1860-1925) was born in New Zealand, the son of Charles Beard Izard (q.v.). Educated at Harrow school,

he read law at Lincoln's Inn (1880) and was called. On his return to New Zealand he entered the firm of Bell, Gully and Izard (1885) and afterwards (from 1906) practised with T. S. Weston. He was a member of the Wellington City Council (1898-1907), and was M.H.R. for Wellington North from 1906 to 1908, when he was defeated by A. L. Herdman. Izard was a member of the Legislative Council (1918-25). He was a director of several companies, including the Manawatu Railway, and the Wellington Trust and Loan. He died on 18 Sep 1925.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 21 Sep 1925; *Evening Post*, 19 Sep 1925. Portrait: Parliament House.

---

---

# J

---

---

JACKSON, FREEMAN RAYNEY (1838-1900) was the son of the Rev Francis Jackson, M.A., of Recall, Yorkshire, and of Emmanuel College, Cambridge. He came to Lyttelton in 1851 and a few years later made a prospecting tour through Otago and Southland and took up the Birchwood run on the Jacob's river and also Manapouri lake station. He contested the Aparima seat in the Southland Provincial Council in 1861 and represented New River in the Council (1861-64). He married (1859) Anna Eleanor Augusta, younger daughter of John Shea Lawlor, of Gurteenrue, county Cork.

About 1866 Jackson moved to Wanganui, where he entered into business in 1874 as an auctioneer and stock and station agent (F. A. Krull being a partner later). He was a member of the borough council and mayor of Wanganui (1892-96). He was many years secretary of the Wanganui Jockey club and the Wanganui Gas Co. He died on 8 Jun 1900.

*Southland P.C. Pmc.; Col. Gent.; Cycl. N.Z., i (p); Roberts, Southland; Wanganui Herald, 8 Jun 1900.*

JACKSON, HENRY (1830-1906) was born in England and educated at York College. At 15 he entered as a midshipman in the Indian Navy, in which he served for 17 years and attained the rank of lieutenant. He carried out some marine surveys, including that of the Cocos channel (while in command of the survey ship *Krishna*) and was attached to the commission which delimited the Turko-Persian boundary. On this duty he rode from the head of the Persian gulf to Mount Ararat, where three frontiers met, thence to Trebizond and by sea to Constantinople, where he was engaged for three years on his plans. Jackson made many journeys in Persia and Armenia

and travelled widely also in India. In 1862, while he was in New Zealand on furlough, the Indian Navy was abolished, and he entered the New Zealand Survey department. Three years later he was appointed chief surveyor in Wellington province. He was a first-class mathematician. In 1879 he retired from the service and was elected to Parliament for the Hutt (defeating Mason). Parliament being dissolved five weeks later, he was defeated by Mason.

Jackson was an accomplished linguist in French, Arabic, Persian and Hindi. He died on 29 Oct 1906.

*N.z. Surveyor, Dec 1906; N.z. Times, 24, 27 Jun, 16 Dec 1879.*

JACKSON, THOMAS (1811-85) was principal of the Battersea Training College and a prebendary of St Paul's, and had made many speeches in England on behalf of the Canterbury Association before being chosen as Bishop of Lyttelton.

When the letters patent were examined it was found that the diocese of New Zealand, to which Bishop Selwyn had been consecrated, could not be divided without his consent, and that therefore Jackson must go out first and be consecrated afterwards. He accordingly came to Canterbury in 1851 in the *Castle Eden* to take up his see. Each of the ships carried a clergyman selected by him. Jackson had an interview with Selwyn, who was quite ready to relinquish portion of his vast diocese and wished him to go to Sydney for ordination, but after inspecting his diocese he decided to return to England, and on arriving there resigned his appointment. He is described as a talented and amiable man, but not possessing the right qualities for the post to which he had been designated. He was for many years rector of the parish of Stoke

## JACKSON

Newington. He died on 3 Jun 1885.

Wigram, P 49; Jacobs; Godley, *Letters*.

JACKSON, WILLIAM (1832-89) was the son of Samuel Jackson, of Green Hammerton, Yorkshire. At the opening of the Waikato war he was farming at Papakura. He at once volunteered for service, and distinguished himself in repelling an attack on Ring's redoubt at Wairoa, then only partially built. He was then authorised to raise a company of 60 men for the Forest Rangers Oul 1863), and by the end of the year they were in the field scouring the Wairoa forest and the Hunua ranges. He was present at Mauku (Sep 1863) and on Dec 14 his (No. I) company surprised a strong body of Maori in a gorge near the source of the Wairoa, and killed eight of them.

The Rangers being reorganised, Jackson raised a fresh company which was attached to the 2nd Waikato Regiment and was actively engaged throughout 1864, being present at Wairai (II Feb) and Orakau (Mar-Apr). For these services Jackson was thanked and promoted major. When hostilities ceased he settled down on a military grant. Though there was no further fighting, conditions were so uneasy that Jackson raised two troops of volunteer cavalry (one at Te Awamutu), of which he had command for some years.

In 1872 he was elected M.H.R. for Waikato, which he represented to 1875. In 1887 he was again elected to Parliament, this time for Waipa, which he represented to the time of his death (29 Sep 1889). He was Government whip during three sessions. Jackson devoted much energy while in Parliament to securing for the Forest Rangers and Nixon's men the privileges granted to others who served in the war.

Gudgeon (p); Cowan, i (P), and in *N.z. Railways Magazine, 1 Feb, 1936 (p); Parltory Record; N.Z. Herald, 30 Sep, 1 Oct 1889.*

JACOBS, HENRY (1824-1901) was born at St Catherine's, Isle of Wight, the son of William Hearne Jacobs. At the age of 10 he entered the Charterhouse, where he was captain of the school in 1841. He went on to Queen's College, Oxford, graduating B.A. in 1845 (first class in classics), and later proceeding M.A. In 1848 he was elected a fellow of Queen's. Ordained the previous year, he was appointed curate of Bassall, Gloucestershire, and in 1848 headmaster

## JAGO

of St Nicholas College at Shereham. He then became vicar of All Saints, Poplar, and in 1850 was chosen as classical professor of the proposed Christ's College in the Canterbury settlement.

Jacobs arrived in the *Sir George Seymour* and conducted the first service at Lyttelton. In 1851 he held the first service at St Michael's, Christchurch. In Apr 1852 he opened Christ's College grammar school as headmaster. He resigned in 1863 and declined the bishopric of Nelson (1864), to become archdeacon of Christchurch. This post he resigned in 1866 on being appointed dean of the Cathedral. In 1873 he relinquished the charge of St Michael's, and he was again archdeacon of Christchurch (1876-1900). In 1878 Jacobs was commissary while the Bishop was attending the Lambeth conference, and at that time he was created a doctor of divinity. He was for some years editor of the *New Zealand Church News*, and in 1889 published his history of the Church in New Zealand. He was a distinguished classical scholar, and wrote a good deal of verse, notably *Shadows of the Old Church* (1870), and *A Lay of the Southern Cross* (1893). He was much interested in philanthropies in Christchurch, and was associated for many years with the St John Ambulance Association. Jacobs died on 6 Feb 1901.

Buller; Jacobs, *op. cit.*; *Cycl. N.Z., iii; Lyttelton Times, 7 Feb 1901.*

JAGO, JOHN WESLEY (1830-1904) was born at Nailsford, Gloucestershire, and at the age of eight was taken to Glasgow and then to Alloa, where he served a four years' apprenticeship to brassfounding. Then he joined the staff of the *North British Railway and Shipping Journal* and later the *Examiner*, and then the Caledonian Railway Co.'s Gartsherrie ironworks. Transferred to the company's works at Lugar, Ayrshire, he was dismissed for refusing to assist the Conservative candidate for Ayr Burghs. He found employment with Schrader and Mitchell (leather, bark and hide merchants).

Having signed the pledge at the age of seven, Jago gave temperance addresses when he was 15 as chief ruler of the Phoenix Hope tent of the Juvenile Rechabites at Alloa. About 1861 the Dunedin Total Abstinence Society sought in Scotland for a man to act as agent, and Jago was selected. He sailed for Otago with his wife

JAMESON

and family in the *Cheviot* (1862), and when the engagement expired went into the timber trade with Allan Galt. Later he was a **flax** exporter and proprietor of a bonded warehouse in Stuart street. In 1872 he was appointed manager of the *Evening Star*, which he controlled until his death (on 18 Nov 1904). Jago was an officer of the Congregational Church in Moray place, which he helped to found, and was chairman of the Congregational Union of New Zealand in 1889. He also took a deep interest in the Salvation Army.

In provincial politics he supported Reid against Macandrew, and he contested the Parliamentary seat for Port Chalmers against Macandrew. He stood also at a Provincial Council election for Dunedin. He was a member of the Otago education board in 1890, and some years chairman of the George street school committee. Having superintended a temperance mission in Glasgow, Jago, on arriving in New Zealand, collaborated with Sir William Fox and helped to introduce the Order of the Sons of Temperance (of which he became Grand Worthy Patriarch). He was chief templar of the first Good Templar lodge in Dunedin (1872) and was G.W.C.T. at the grand lodge at Christchurch in 1877. He edited the *Temperance Advocate* and its successor, the *Temperance Herald*; was president of the New Zealand Alliance (1898-99) and wrote and spoke a great deal on the subject of temperance. (See JOSHUA STRANGE WILLIAMS.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Evening Star*, 19 Nov 1904.

JAMESON, JAMES PURVIS (1824-96) was born and brought up in London. He came to New Zealand in the *Sebastopol* (1863). He was in business as a merchant in Christchurch and had farms at Leeston and Coalgate. In 1868 he was elected to the City Council and in 1871 he was mayor. He took an active interest in fostering New Zealand industries, and was a promoter and sometime president of the industrial association. He helped to establish the Kaiapoi Woollen Co. and was a director of the Mutual Benefit Building Society. Jameson died on 6 Sep 1896.

*The Press*, 7 Sep 1896.

JEBSON, JOHN (1819-1900) was born at Flockton, near Wakefield, Yorkshire, and worked at

JELlicOE

the coalmines at the age of five. By attending night schools, he ultimately qualified as a mining engineer and worked in that capacity in Yorkshire and Lancashire before coming to New Zealand in the *Zealandia* in 1862. He supervised the construction of telegraph lines between Lyttelton and Christchurch and the West Coast, and was appointed manager of the Kowai Coalmining Co. When the company suspended operations he bought the lease and worked the mine for 20 years. He was the first chairman of the East Malvern road board and represented Rakaia in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1874-75). Jebson was 10 years chairman of the school committee, and was one of the founders of the Methodist Church, Malvern, of which he was a local preacher. He died on 22 Apr 1900.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Lyttelton Times*, 24 Apr 1900.

JELlicOE, JOHN RUSHWORTH JELlicOE, 1st Earl (1859-1935), was born at Southampton, the son of Captain J. H. Jellicoe. Educated at Rottingdean, he entered the *Britannia* as a cadet (1872), and served with the Channel squadron during the Egyptian war (1882). He distinguished himself at the Naval College and in 1891, after a period of staff duty, he became assistant to the director of naval ordnance. He was in the *Victoria* when she was sunk in collision with the *Camperdown* (1893).

In 1897, being now a captain, Jellicoe was a member of the ordnance committee. During the Boxer war, in which he was flag captain in the *Genturion*, he commanded the naval brigade and acted as chief of staff to Admiral Seymour during the attempt to relieve the legations at Peking (1900). He was severely wounded. (C.B. 1900.) In 1902 Jellicoe was naval assistant to the Controller of the Navy. In 1905 he returned to sea duty as Director of Naval Ordnance and Torpedoes. Promoted rear-admiral in 1907, he served for more than a year in the Atlantic fleet and was then a Lord Commissioner of the Admiralty and Controller of the Navy (1908-10). During the next year or two he commanded the Atlantic fleet and in 1911-12 the second squadron of the Home fleet, being then appointed Second Sea Lord of the Admiralty. On 22 Jul 1914 he was appointed commander-in-chief of the Home fleet.

JELUCOE

On the outbreak of the war of 1914-18 Jellicoe was appointed commander-in-chief of the Grand Fleet. He was in supreme command during the first two years of the war, having his fleet of capital ships based all the time at Scapa Flow and exercising a general command of the North Sea. (G.C.B. 1915; G.C.V.O. 1916.) When the pressure of the German blockade became severe, and public opinion demanded that the Navy should pass to more aggressive action, Jellicoe succeeded (May 1916) in bringing the German High Sea Fleet to action off the coast of Jutland. After a fight lasting throughout the day, in which the battle cruisers and cruisers suffered heavy losses, and the battle squadrons were for some hours engaged, the German fleet escaped under cover of night to the shelter of Heligoland and Wilhelmshaven, leaving the British fleet in command of the sea, which was never again challenged. He received the Order of Merit in 1916. In November of that year Jellicoe gave up the command to become First Sea Lord, and that position he vacated at the end of 1917, when he was created Viscount Jellicoe of Scapa.

At the end of the war he was invited by the British Government to confer with the Dominion governments on Empire defence. He sailed for this purpose in H.M.S. *New Zealand*, flying the flag of admiral of the fleet, to which rank he had been promoted for the occasion. Having returned from that mission, he was appointed Governor-general of New Zealand, assuming the administration on 27 Sep 1920. Jellicoe's term of office was marked by no special event or incident, and he retired with the good wishes of all classes on 26 Nov 1924. Having gone on the retired list in that year, he was created an earl (1925).

At the close of the war Lord Jellicoe received the freedom of the City of London, with a sword of honour; honorary degrees from the Universities of Glasgow, Oxford, Cambridge and St Andrews, and many decorations from foreign governments. After his retirement he served as a Boy Scout commissioner for the county of London; was chairman of the National Rifle association; and vice-president of the British Legion (1928-32). He made his maiden speech in the House of Lords (on the naval treaty) in May 1930.

Jellicoe died on 20 Nov 1935. He married

JENNER

(1902) Florence 'Gwendoline', daughter of Sir Charles Cayzer.

R. Bacon, *Life of John Rushworth, Earl Jellicoe and The Jutland Scandal*; J. E. T. Harper, *The Truth about Jutland and The Riddle of Jutland*; Corbet, *Naval Operations*; *The Times*, 21 Nov 1935.

JENKINSON, JOHN EDWARD (1858-1937) was born in Dunedin, the son of John Hartley Jenkinson, wharfinger. Educated at state schools, he served his time to boilermaking in a Dunedin foundry and shipbuilding yard. In 1882 he joined the first labour union—the Dunedin boilermakers—by which he was elected president and deputed in 1883 to form unions in other cities. He also represented the union at the conference with New South Wales boilermakers in 1883, with a view to forming an Australasian federation. Jenkinson was one of the committee of three appointed to draw up rules for the Canterbury trades council and for the railway servants' union. He inaugurated technical classes under the auspices of the unions in Christchurch and represented his trades council at several annual conferences. For some years he was president of the tailoresses' union and treasurer of the Labour Day celebrations committee.

Jenkinson was called to the Legislative Council in 1892 (one of the number appointed to create a Government majority), and was a member till 1914. On retiring, by the effluxion of his third term in 1914, he contested the Clutha seat in the House of Representatives. He was keenly interested in New Zealand history and was president for some years of the Wellington Early Settlers' association. Jenkinson died on 29 Nov 1937.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Mar 1938; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Witness*, 17 Mar 1931; *Evening Post* and *The Dominion*, 30 Nov 1937. Portrait: Parliament House.

JENNER, HENRY LASCELLES (1820-98) was a son of Sir Herbert Jenner Fust, judge of the Court of Arches. Educated at Harrow, he was fond of music and was himself a fine singer and successful composer. At Cambridge he played in the XI and was a scholar of Trinity Hall, where he took his LL.B. (being placed second in the law tripos in 1841). He was ordained deacon (1843) and priest (1844), and

## JENNER

held the cures of Chevening (Kent), St Columb Major (Cornwall), Antony (Cornwall) and Brasted (Kent). He became vicar of Preston-by-Wigham, near Sandwich, Kent, in 1854, and played for the Kent XI. In 1852 he was made a minor canon of Canterbury Cathedral. There he founded the choral union and was for five years its precentor, and secretary of the ecclesiological society.

In 1865, on the request of the deanery board in Otago, Archbishop Longley selected Jenner as first bishop of Dunedin, the new diocese about to be established out of the southern portion of Christchurch diocese. Objections to his appointment were lodged, and the rural deanery board rejected the appointment (Feb 1866). Jenner was duly consecrated (Aug 1866), and made preparations for his departure for New Zealand. Meanwhile it came to the knowledge of the people of his prospective diocese that he favoured a rather advanced type of ritual. Bishop Harper warned him in England not to come out, as he had not resigned the new diocese. Accordingly when Jenner arrived in Lyttelton (Jan 1869) Harper forbade him to take any official part in public worship, but allowed him to hold meetings in the hope that his charm of manner and high attainments might heal the breach. Eventually the diocesan synod held its first meeting (17 Apr 1869), Harper being present. A discussion which lasted until 6 a.m. culminated in a decision adverse to the acceptance of Jenner as bishop, and he shortly afterwards sailed for England.

In 1871 the Archbishop of Canterbury reaffirmed his right to the see but said that he advised him to forego it. Jenner did resign in 1871, but protested against Bishop Nevill's assumption of the office. In New Zealand Selwyn insisted that Jenner had been consecrated with as much formality as he himself; that there had been undue delay in lodging a protest against the appointment, and that he was, in fact, the first bishop of Dunedin. This view was upheld by the English bishops in 1872 and 1875.

Jenner had received the degree of D.D. from Cambridge University on his appointment to the bishopric. He continued vicar of Preston until his death (which occurred on 18 Sep 1898). He took a warm interest in the French

## JENNINGS

phase of the Old Catholic movement, and during the period 1882-93 made periodical visits to Paris as Bishop of the Eglise Catholique Gallicane. He published a number of musical compositions, including some much admired hymns.

Crockford; Jacobs; Purchas; Tucker; Hocken, *Bibliog.*; *Otago Daily Times*, Jan-May 1869, 3 Nov 1898.

JENNINGS, WILLIAM THOMAS (1854-1923) was born in Auckland (his parents having arrived in 1849), and received his education at St Paul's school there and at Dunedin. He was apprenticed to printing to his uncle, W. H. J. Seffern (q.v.) in the *New Zealander* office at Auckland, and after completing his term went in the early seventies to the Thames, where he became foreman of the *Guardian*. He was later foreman of the *Otago Guardian* and manager of the *Dunedin Age* and then of the *Oamaru Mail*. Returning to Auckland he became foreman of the *Star* (1882).

Jennings took a leading part in labour organisation, being connected at different times with the Knights of Labour and president of the Auckland trades and labour council, the tailors' union (1898-1900) and the typographical union. He was keenly interested in social reform, and was secretary for some years of the Auckland Liberal association. In 1892 he was called to the Legislative 'Council, in which he sat until 1902, watching carefully all social measures. He resigned (1902) to contest the Egmont seat, which he won and held until 1908. In the following Parliament he represented Taumarunui (1908-11), being defeated by C. K. Wilson. In 1915 he was returned for Waitomo, which he represented until 1922, when he was defeated by J. C. Rolleston. His devotion to the welfare of the bush settlers in Taranaki and the King Country was noteworthy. He was a member of the Auckland Grammar School governors, the Taranaki school commissioners and the Waitara harbour board. As a volunteer he held a commission in the Hobson rifles and the engineer corps, and was secretary of the Rifle Association. Jennings died on 6 Feb 1923.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 9 Feb 1923; Scholefield, *Union Catalogue*; *Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p), vi; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Auckland Star*, 17 Oct 1892; *N.Z. Times*, 7 Feb 1923. Portrait: Parliament House.

## JERVIS

JERVIS, HENRY MAHON (1820-1901) was born at Stroud, Kent, educated there and in London, and trained to mercantile life. He came to New Zealand in the ship *London*, arriving at Port Nicholson Dec 1840 and intending to settle at Bay of Islands. Early in 1841 he sailed in the *Brougham* with the Company's surveyors, seeking a site for the Taranaki settlement. (His diary of this journey was published in the *New Zealand Herald* in Mar 1892.) Fearing that his goods had been lost in the schooner *Jewess*, Jervis walked overland by the coast to Wellington. He spent some time sawing timber in the Hutt valley, but the floods carrying it away he commenced trading in Wellington.

In 1842 he visited Nelson, and chartered a schooner of 70 tons to visit the ports on the west coast of the North Island. Reaching Onehunga at the time of Hobson's death (Sep 1842), he sailed in the schooner *Osprey* for Hobart and walked overland to Launceston. He traded Tasmanian produce with New Zealand ports, and eventually settled for 12 months at Hicks Bay. In 1845 he returned to Auckland, and worked for Scott and Davis. Early in the fifties he married, and for some years he was associated with Nathan and Co., for whom he managed the shipping and troop business. He retired from this service about 1860 to act as agent for passenger ships trading to New Zealand, and became New Zealand manager for the Panama Mail Co. and Hall's Californian line, and agent for the Australian and New Zealand Co.'s services.

For a short time Jervis was engaged in mining ventures at Thames and Coromandel, but in 1870 he returned to Auckland and purchased the Golden Crown Brewery, which was afterwards acquired by Campbell and Ehrenfried. He died on 14 Sep 1901.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 5 Mar, 14 May 1892, 16 Sep 1901.

JERVOIS, SIR WILLIAM FRANCIS DRUMMOND (1821-97) was born at Cowes, Isle of Wight, the son of General William Jervois, K.H. Educated at Dr Burney's academy at Gosport and Barry's school at Woolwich, he entered the Royal Military Academy in 1837. (2nd lieut. Royal Engineers 1839; lieut. 1841; capt. 1847; brev. major 1854; brev. lieut.-col.

## JERVOIS

1861; lieut.-col. 1862; col. 1872; maj-general 1877; lieut.-gen. 1882; colonel commandant of Royal Engineers 1893.)

Jervois sailed for the Cape in 1841, and served on the construction of defensive posts on the eastern frontier against the Kaffirs. Late in 1842 he was brigade-major to a mixed force to check the Boers at Colesberg. He built a bridge over the Fish river at Fort Brown and a road to Fort Beaufort, and did much surveying and engineering in Natal, Cape Colony and Kaffraria, part of the time under military escort. His work was warmly praised by Sir Harry Smith. In 1849-52 Jervois commanded a company of his corps at Woolwich and Chatham, and in making the defences of Alderney. In 1855 he was commanding Royal Engineer in the London district, and in 1856 assistant inspector-general of fortifications. Next year he was appointed (in addition) secretary to the defence committee, and in 1859 to the royal commission on the defences of the Kingdom. The defences of dockyards and naval bases were for the most part designed by him. In 1862 he was director of works for fortifications and confidential adviser to the secretaries for war. In 1863 he reported on the defences of British North America, and during the Civil War he visited the principal forts on the Atlantic seaboard of the United States. (C.B. 1863.) He replied with energy and success to criticisms of his plans. In 1869 Jervois visited Halifax, Bermuda, Gibraltar and Malta, and in 1871-72 the Red Sea and India. He was close at hand when Lord Mayo was assassinated at the Andaman islands. (K.C.M.G. 1874 for services in Canada.)

In 1875 Jervois was appointed governor of Straits Settlements, where he sent commissioners to govern Perak in the name of the sultan. He received the thanks of the Government of India for a successful campaign against the ruler. In 1877 he was appointed adviser on defence to the governments of the Australian colonies. In Jul he was appointed Governor of South Australia and, after taking over his duties, he visited New Zealand and Tasmania in continuation of his work as adviser. (G.C.M.G. 1878.) His recommendations were accepted and generally carried out.

After five years of successful administration in South Australia, Jervois was appointed to New Zealand, taking up his duties on 20 Jan

## JOHNSON

1883. His reports on our defences created genuine interest, and the war scare of 1885 assisted the Government in inaugurating a scheme of defence. Jervois incurred a certain amount of criticism by his intervention to prevent the New Zealand Government sending a national vessel to Samoa when the king made overtures for protection (1884). His views on defence and imperial policy were very sound, but occasionally daring, as for instance when he expressed the opinion that Chinese labour was the most suitable for the development of parts of Australia. He completed his term in New Zealand on 18 Mar 1889, and left behind him the reputation of a highly successful and popular governor.

In 1890 he was a member of Stanhope's committee on coast defence duties, when he strongly urged that the Navy should be entrusted with the protection of naval bases. He contributed many papers on engineering and fortification to technical and service journals. In 1892 he revisited Australia. He died on 16 Aug 1897. Jervois married (1850) Lucy (d. 1895), daughter of William Norsworthy.

*D.N.B.*; Royal Engineers records; Saunders; Gisborne (p); Scholefield, *Pacific*; *The Times*, 18 Aug 1897.

JOHNSON, GEORGE RANDALL (1833-1919) was a son of the Rev Richard Johnson, M.A., and was born at Lavenham, Suffolk. He was educated at Eton and Clare College, Cambridge (B.A. 1857; M.A. 1860). He was a fine cricketer, and on one occasion played for the Gentlemen of England. He was called to the bar of Lincoln's Inn (1861). In the late sixties, with his brother, J. W. Johnson (q.v.), he took up the Maraetaba station at Young Nick's Head. He was a member of the Legislative Council from 1872 to 1892, when he retired to live in England. There he was a justice of the peace, living at Stalham and Tunstead, Norfolk. He married Lucy, daughter of Colonel A. Hamilton Russell. Johnson died on 24 Nov 1919.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1920; *Col. Gent.*; *The Times*, 13 Apr 1920. Portrait: Parliament House.

JOHNSON, JAMES WOODBINE (1844-99) was born at Lavenham, Suffolk, and educated at King Edward's School, Bury St Edmunds, and at Rugby. He then proceeded to Trinity College, Cambridge, where he graduated B.A. in 1865. After visiting Queensland, he came to

## JOHNSON

New Zealand (1867) and, with his brother (G. R. Johnson, q.v.) took up the Maraetaha station, of 9,300 acres, at Young Nick's Head, Poverty Bay. He was a justice of the peace, a member of the road board, and chairman of the Cook county council (1877-78, 1881). He represented Turanganui in the Auckland Provincial Council (1873-75). He was a captain in the militia, and a member of the Gisborne High School trust, and president of the Poverty Bay Turf club. Johnson died on 11 Oct 1899. (See SIR MAUI POMARE.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Col. Gent.*

JOHNSON, SAMUEL (1827-1905) was born at Manchester, educated there and, having served his apprenticeship to the printing trade, started in business (1850). He drifted into journalism, and had some experience in connection with the *Manchester Daily Telegraph*. In 1858 he went to Castleford, Yorkshire, as editor and proprietor of the *Castleford Guardian*.

While there he became interested in the proposed Nonconformist settlement at Albertland (1862), with which he allied himself as printer and editor of the newspaper. He sailed for Albertland in the *Matilda Wattenbach*, taking a printing plant with him. The first numbers of the *Albertland Gazette and Ocean Mail* were published on the voyage, and the paper was continued at Port Albert till 1864. Meanwhile Johnson had assisted to maintain himself and his family by acting as postmaster and secretary to the settlement. In 1866 he moved to Blenheim, where he established the *Marlborough Express*. He took an active part in politics, being a member of the Provincial Council for Lower Wairau (1872-74). He founded the Blenheim fire brigade, of which he was captain.

In 1868 he took a printing press to Fiji, and established the *News and Planters' Journal* at Levuka. Returning to New Zealand, Johnson eventually sold his interest in the *Express* (1880), and in 1883 purchased the *Waipawa Mail*, which he sold to a local company in 1884. He remained there until his death (on 6 Aug 1905), engaging in journalism and taking part in local affairs. He was chairman of the building society and secretary of the Waipawa school committee.

Buick, *Marlborough*; Scholefield, *Union Catalogue*; Brett, *Albertlanders* (p); *Hawkes Bay Herald*, 7 Aug 1905.

## JOHNSTON

JOHNSTON, ALEXANDER JAMES (1820-88) was the eldest son of James Johnston, banker, of Wood Hill, Kinnellar, Aberdeenshire. He was educated at Marischal College, and later at King's College, London, and in Paris. He graduated M.A. at Aberdeen in 1835 and then, being too young to be called, he spent two years in France, Italy and Russia, and in 1838 entered at Lincoln's Inn to read for the bar. In 1841 he was admitted as a special pleader. While still reading he published, in 1842, a short treatise on exchequer bills. Called to the bar by the Middle Temple in Jan 1843, Johnston practised till 1858 on the Northern Circuit and at the West Riding sessions. In 1857 he was deputy recorder of Leeds. He also practised in Westminster Hall and before parliamentary committees. From 1847 to 1858, with the Hon G. Denman and J. P. Bulwer, he contributed to the *Law Journal* the reports of the Court of Common Pleas, and he collaborated with Mr Justice Chitty in works on law.

In 1858, pursuant to a resolution of both Houses of the New Zealand Legislature, Johnston was selected as a puisne judge of the Supreme Court. Her Majesty's warrant was issued for the post in Apr, and he arrived in New Zealand in Oct. For the next 17 years he lived in Wellington, and in 1875 removed to Christchurch, where he presided for the remainder of his life. In 1867 and in 1884 Johnston was acting-Chief Justice, and several times acting-Governor. He published *Notes on Maori Matters* (1860), observations respecting the law upon riots and the defence of person and property by private persons; three volumes of the reports of the Court of Appeal (1867-77); three editions of the *New Zealand Justice of the Peace and Coroner* (1863, 1870 and 1879) and *The Practice of the Supreme Court*. He was a member of several royal commissions, including that on statute law consolidation (1879). In 1861 Johnston was deputed to consider the claims of the Ngati-Awa to lands in Taranaki. He presided at the trial of most of the native prisoners during the Te Kooti and Titikowaru risings and of the Maungatapu murderers. As a criminal lawyer he showed great acumen. On the bench he upheld in a determined manner the high traditions and lofty tone of British justice. A man of great culture and high attainments, he had a dry humour, was socially

## JOHNSTON

popular and interested in social movements, and was a lover of music in all forms, and of art. (In 1861 he lectured on 'The Influence of Art on Human Happiness.') At the time of his death he was chairman of the committee which established the home for the aged needy in Christchurch. His wife (Amelia Devonport Yallop), who died in 1885, was also closely associated with all philanthropic objects. Johnston died on 3 Jun 1888, while visiting England.

E. Maxwell; *N.Z. Times*, 4 June 1888. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

JOHNSTON, SIR CHARLES JOHN (1845-1918), the third son of John Johnston (q.v.), was a native of Wellington. He was educated at Toomath's Commercial and Grammar School; at the Catholic College of St Mary in Derbyshire, and at Kensington College, London. He returned to New Zealand in 1864 and entered his father's business.

From 1881-87 he was M.H.R. for Te Aro, resigning his seat to visit England. When Wellington celebrated the jubilee of the settlement Johnston, as a native of the town and a son of one of its founders, was elected chief magistrate (1890-91). He was called to the Legislative Council in 1891, being one of the last nominated on the old system of life-membership; and continued in the Council for the rest of his life. In 1915 he was elected speaker, and he held office until his death on 13 Jun 1918. (His knighthood was practically posthumous).

Johnston married Alice Margaret (1850-1931), daughter of Dr Featherston. He was a local director of the Australian Mutual Provident Society, and was for many years a director and chairman of the Wellington Woollen Co. He served in the Wellington Naval Volunteers, and was eventually commander of the brigade. He took part in the Parihaka expedition (1881).

His eldest son, FRANCIS EARL JOHNSTON (1871-1917), was a lieutenant in the North Staffordshire Regiment in 1891. (Captain 1900; major 1911; colonel 1914.) He served in the Sudan (1896), and South Africa (1900-02). In the war of 1914-18, he commanded the first New Zealand infantry brigade in Egypt, Gallipoli and France. (C.B. 1915). He was killed in action on 7 Aug 1917. Johnston married a daughter of A. G. Fell (Wellington).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 15 Aug 1917, 25 Oct 1918; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i

## JOHNSTON

(p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Studholme; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 14 Jun 1918; *Evening Post*, 10 Oct 1929. Portrait: Parliament House.

JOHNSTON, JOHN (1809-87), who claimed descent from the Johnstons of Annandale, was in business in London before leaving for New Zealand with his wife and young family by the *Prince of Wales* in 1841. He entered into business in Wellington, and soon established the wholesale house of Johnston and Co.

Johnston evinced an early interest in public affairs. He spoke at the Reform banquet (1849), and was a member of the Settlers' Constitutional Association the following year. He represented the Wellington Country district in the Provincial Council (1855-59, 1861-65) and sat for Karori and Makara (in which district he made his home) 1865-72. In 1858, 1861, and 1868 he was a member of the executive. Johnston was called in 1857 to the Legislative Council and, with the exception of a year when he was absent, he sat continuously until his death. Though never a prominent politician, he was for a few weeks in 1866 a member of Stafford's executive. He paid close attention to his business, from which he retired in 1878, leaving it to his two sons, Waiter and Charles (q.v.). He was a broad-minded and large-hearted citizen, and one of the earliest freemasons in the colony.

Johnston died on 16 Nov 1887. (See M. S. GRACE and SIR W. B. PERCEVAL.)

*Wellington P.C. Proc.; Cycl. N.Z.*, i; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 17 Nov 1887; *Evening Post*, 10 Oct 1929 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

JOHNSTON, ROBERT, was educated at Foyle College, Londonderry. In 1855 he joined the 89th regiment (Royal Irish Fusiliers) as ensign, being promoted lieutenant the same year and serving in the Crimea, India and South Africa. He bought out in 1862 and, coming to New Zealand, served in the war with the 2nd Waikato Regiment. (Lieutenant 1863; captain 1864). Mter the war Johnston adopted teaching, and conducted a grammar school in Wellington and later the Portora school in Blenheim. In 1876 he closed his school in Blenheim, and joined the Wellington education board. He died on 29 Jun 1922.

*Marlborough Express*, 1 Sep 1937.

JOHNSTON, SYDNEY (1841-1917) was a son of John Johnston (q.v.), and was born in Well-

## JOHNSTON

ington. Educated at the Jesuit College at Stonyhurst, Lancashire, he returned to New Zealand in 1860 and married Sophy, daughter of Colonel Lambert. In 1887 he succeeded to his father's property at Oruawharo, Hawkes Bay.

Johnston represented Waipukurau in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1863-67 and 1871-75). He died on 28 Jun 1917.

*Hawkes Bay Herald*, 3 Jul 1917.

JOHNSTON, WALTER WOODS (1839-1907) the eldest son of John Johnston (q.v.), was born in London. He received his education in New Zealand, and afterwards in France, and then joined his father's business in Wellington.

Johnston entered Parliament in 1871 as member for Manawatu, which he represented continuously until 1884. In the last three years he served as Postmaster-general and Minister of Public Works in three successive governments (those of Hall, Whitaker, and Atkinson). He was a sound administrator. In 1888 he was elected one of the shareholders' committee to investigate the condition of the bank of New Zealand. When the head office of the bank was transferred to Wellington (1894), he was elected a shareholders' director, but resigned the following year to accept appointment as a government director under the new scheme of control. He was also a director of the Equitable Assurance Society of the United States.

Johnston married (1868) a daughter of Forster Goring (q.v.). He died on 31 Aug 1907.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 3 Sep 1907; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 1 Sep 1907; *Evening Post*, 10 Oct 1929. Portrait: Parliament House.

JOHNSTON, WILLIAM (1825-91) was born at Moffat Water, Dumfriesshire, and came to Otago in 1857. He accompanied J. MacGibbon to Southland and worked on a run at Hokonui. In 1859 he took up land at One Tree Point, and eventually settled on a property at Wreys Bush, Southland, which he greatly improved. He was an expert judge of sheep.

Johnston is said as early as 1858 to have transported to Invercargill by bullock sledge half a ton of cheese made by himself and his wife. He represented Roslyn in the Southland Provincial Council (1864-69), and Waihopai (1869-70). For a few weeks in 1869 he was speaker. Mter the reunion with Otago he rep-

## JOHNSTONE

resented Southland for a few months in the Otago Provincial Council. He was a member, and sometime chairman, of the Wallace county council, and was a candidate for the Wallace parliamentary seat in 1890, but withdrew at a late stage. Johnston died on 15 Jul 1891.

*Southland Times*, 17 Jul 1891; J. P. Young in *Otago Daily Times*, 25 Apr 1895.

JOHNSTONE, CAMPBELL (1863-1930) was born at Waiuku, the son of Captain J. Campbell Johnstone (of the 2nd Punjab infantry, H.E.I.C.S., who saw much service in India and settled at Raglan in the early sixties, dying there on 20 Jun 1882). He went to Raglan at an early age, and settled on a block at Whatawhata, where he carried on extensive farming operations. He married (1891) Clementina, daughter of Charles Alexander (of Te Awamutu).

Johnstone was 28 years a member of the Raglan county council (and 20 years chairman); a member of the Waikato hospital board from 1909 (chairman from 1926), and a member of the Auckland harbour board, the highways council, the counties association, the hospital boards association and the Raglan licensing committee. He was a prominent racing owner and a member of the committee of the Waikato Racing and Trotting clubs. He died on 2 Oct 1930.

*N.Z. Herald*, 3 Oct 1930.

JOLLFFI, EDWARD (1825-94) came of a Huguenot family which fled to Scotland from France, and moved to Cumberland about the end of the eighteenth century. He was the fourth son of Francis Jollie, of Brampton, near Carlisle. At the age of 17 he came to New Zealand in the *Brougham* as a survey cadet under the New Zealand Company, landing in Nelson in Mar 1842.

In 1846 he was sent to Otago to assist in surveying the Otago block. The work was let in contract blocks, Jollie being engaged, in partnership with Wylie and A. Wills, on a block which included Clutha, Kaihiku, and Waiwera. There he became acquainted with Captain Thomas, who undertook the block between the Clutha and Tokomairiro rivers. Mter leaving Otago Jollie spent some time in Nelson farming with his brother, on the understanding that as soon as the locality of the Canterbury settle-

## JOLUE

ment was decided upon, he should join Thomas in the survey. In the meantime Jollie made the first overland trip with sheep between Nelson and north Canterbury by way of Jollie's pass. He moved to Lyttelton in Aug 1849 to start on the survey. The survey of Lyttelton was satisfactorily accomplished and in Oct he proceeded on a similar duty to Sumner, and then to Christchurch. While there he lived in a grass hut at The Bricks belonging to the surveyor Scroggs.

In planning Christchurch Jollie laid out a few crescents, which Thomas disallowed. He also proposed streets two chains wide, in which trees could be planted. In naming the streets in Lyttelton and Christchurch the names of bishoprics of the Church of England were read out of the peerage one by one, approved by Thomas, and written upon the map. The work was completed by Mar 1850, and 11 months later Jollie was present when the settlers made their first selections. He made his permanent home in the province, and practised his profession of surveyor for some years. A great deal of south Canterbury was surveyed by him and Hewlings. In 1859 he was sent to survey the government town of Tīnaru.

In 1860 Jollie was elected M.H.R. for Cheviot, but other business compelled him to resign in 1861. In that year he married Caroline Armstrong, daughter of the Rev John Muggerridge Ormond. In 1865 he was elected to represent Heathcote in the Provincial Council, and he almost immediately became a member of Tancred's executive, in which he served for 12 months. In 1866 he was elected for Selwyn, which he represented until 1876. On the Council reassembling in 1866, he was leader of an executive for a few weeks. In Mar 1868, he again took office, and continued until Jun 1869. He was then defeated and remained out of office for 12 hours. Returning to the government benches as provincial secretary, he was in office until Apr 1870. Once more (1874-75) he was in the executive, under the leadership of Montgomery.

On the abolition of the provinces Jollie turned his attention to farming on his property at Southbridge, and in 1879 he went to England, where he remained for five years. On his return he took up land at Waireka, near Patea. He also had an interest in the Napier land and estate business of Jollie, Fulton and Co. He

## JOLLIE

died on 7 Aug 1894. Jollie was one of the founders of the Christchurch Club (1856).

*Canterbury Papers; Canterbury P.C. Proc.; The Press*, 15 Dec 1900, 2 Aug 1930 (p); *Napier News*, 8 Aug 1894; Jollie, typed reminiscences in Alexander Turnbull Library. Portrait: Parliament House.

JOLLIE, FRANCIS (1815-70) was the eldest son of the Rev F. Jollie. He arrived in Nelson by the *Fifeshire* (Jan 1842) and was settled before the Wairau affray. For a short period he acted as resident agent for the New Zealand Company. He took a leading part in the demand for a constitution, and when the provinces were established (in 1853) he stood for the superintendency of Nelson against Stafford, but was defeated: Stafford, 251; Saxton, 206; Jollie, 130.

In 1853 Jollie moved to Canterbury and took up land at Peel Forest. In 1855 he paid a visit to the Old Country and, returning in 1858, married and lived for a short period in Christchurch. His interests being in south Canterbury, Jollie took up the cudgels on behalf of the out-districts, demanding for the settlers the right to spend their revenue on their own works. In 1861-66 he represented Timaru in Parliament, and in 1866-70 he represented Gladstone. For a short while in 1866 he was Colonial Treasurer in the Stafford ministry, but he retired on a reconstruction forced by Moorhouse, who declined office for himself. He was a quiet, unassuming member of Parliament, but always assertive of the rights of his district, and his efforts had much to do with securing for south Canterbury the Timaru and Gladstone board of works, which controlled the expenditure of local revenues.

In Nelson and in Timaru Jollie did useful work as a leader writer for the *Nelson Examiner* and the *Timaru Herald*. He had intended retiring from politics when his death occurred on 30 Nov 1870.

Acland; Arnold; *Col. Gent.; The Press*, 2 Aug 1930.

JONES, FREDERIC (1832-90) was born at Arley Castle, Shropshire, and educated by the Rev G. Wharton. He qualified as an architect and spent some years with Haslam and Butler, London. In 1863 he came to Canterbury for health reasons in the *Chariot of Fame*, and for some years was in the employ of F. Jenkins,

## JONES

builder, with whom later he started an unsuccessful flaxmill at Kaiapoi. He was afterwards with W. Montgomery and Co.

Jones was a member of the Heathcote road board, and member and sometime chairman of the South Waimakariri board of conservators (afterwards the South Waimakariri river board). He made a valuable report on the protection of Christchurch against flood. In 1881 he was elected to the Selwyn county council, and he took part in formulating the Halswell drainage scheme (1882). From 1883 till his death he was chairman of the Cashmere domain board, and for some years he was chairman of the hospital and charitable aid board (1886-87). In 1887 he was twice successful in parliamentary elections for Heathcote, which he represented to the time of his death (8 Sep 1890). Jones was interested also in the horticultural society, the industrial association and the Lancaster Park Co. He took part in the proceedings of the sweating commission.

*Lyttelton Times*, 1 Oct 1890. Portrait: Parliament House.

JONES, GEORGE (1844-1920) was born at Upper Hutt, and went with his parents to Australia, where he was educated in the common schools and at the Scales Academy and the Grammar School at Geelong. He served part of his apprenticeship there, finished in the Government printing office in Brisbane, and took employment as a journeyman compositor in the *Bulletin* office, Rockhampton.

In 1863 he came to Christchurch and was employed on the *Standard*, the *Lyttelton Times* and *The Press*. In 1866 he went into business as a printer and publisher, having as partner George Tombs, founder of the firm of Whitcombe and Tombs. Having sold out to Tombs (1868), he started a business in Auckland, where for a time he printed the *Star*. In 1872 he founded the *Waikato Times* at Ngaruawahia, and in 1874 he founded the *Echo* in Auckland. This he sold late in 1875 to Reed and Brett and moved his plant to Dunedin. There on 8 Jan 1876 he and G. M. Reed published the first issue of the *Evening News*, founded to support provincial institutions against their growing enemies. The *News* closed down on 9 Jan 1878. Jones spent a year on the *Otago Guardian* and in 1877 purchased the *Evening*

## JONES

*Mail* at Oamaru. He changed the name to the *Oamaru Mail*, which he conducted with signal success as a Liberal organ. In 1909 he formed the business into a company. About the same time he acquired the *Southland News*, which he formed into a company controlled by his family, two of his sons being editors of the two papers.

Jones believed that the journalist should hold himself aloof from local bodies, and accordingly took no part in public affairs beyond membership of musical societies. He was a fine violinist and was for many years conductor of the Oamaru Garrison band, which he raised from a humble standard to achieving success in contests. Reluctantly he was drawn into political life as the outcome of an article which he wrote in 1877 charging Sir F. Whitaker with having promoted the native land bill in the interests of himself and his friends. Called before the bar of the House, he was adjudged guilty of a breach of privilege and sentenced to be confined, but as he could not be retained in custody after Parliament prorogued, he was prosecuted in the courts in Dunedin and acquitted. The publicity of this trial gave a considerable fillip to the paper, and Jones was drawn into politics as a result. On the resignation of T. W. Hislop in 1880, he was elected member for Waitaki, defeating John Reid and W. H. S. Roberts. He did not stand again in 1881, as he would not oppose Shrimski for the town seat and he believed that the country should be represented by a farmer. T. Y. Duncan was thus returned:

Jones became an active supporter of Sir William Fox on the liquor question, and an ardent advocate of prohibition. His political views were strongly democratic, and he believed in the leasehold tenure of land and the subdivision of large estates. He was called to the Legislative Council in 1895, and was a member till 1916, and again from 1918 till his death (on 16 Dec 1920). He married (1865) Dorothy, daughter of Stephen Tweedy, of Sunderland and Canterbury.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 11 Mar 1921; Paul; Scholefield, *Union Catalogue; Cycl. N.z.*, iv (p); *The Press*, 25 May 1911; *Evening Star* and *Otago Daily Times*, 17 Dec 1920. Portrait: Parliament House.

JONES, JOHN (1809-69) was born in Sydney, the son of Thomas Jones, an early settler of

## JONES

New South Wales. He was an adventurous youth in days and conditions which offered no premium to the educated boy, and therefore he found advancement with his hands and native commonsense. As a boy he went to sea in a sealer, and thus first saw the shores of New Zealand. Having saved a little money while serving before the mast, Jones bought himself a boat and took to the calling of a waterman in Sydney Harbour. His savings he invested so carefully that when he was only 20 years old he was a partner in three whaling ships which frequented the New Zealand waters from Port Jackson. He seems to have been the invigorating factor in the business, which went ahead from the moment of his intervention.

In 1835 Jones purchased for himself for £800 the *Sydney Packet*, in which he sailed as his own supercargo round the whaling stations of southern New Zealand. The year before he had become interested in Runn's whaling station at Preservation Bay, and in 1836 he had three boats and 36 men working for him there. Two years later he had stations at Awarua, in 1839 at Aparima and Waikawa, and in that year also he acquired from the natives at Waikouaiti an area of land which soon became a veritable oasis in the wilderness of uncultivated prairie and bush. Jones in 1840 took a first step towards forming an organised colony by inducing eleven families of English people from New South Wales to emigrate to his land at Waikouaiti. He offered a fixed sum per year, and at the end of two years the freehold of 60 acres of land per family. Intent on assuring the permanence of the settlement, he prevailed on the Wesleyan Missionary Society to send a missionary to Waikouaiti, the house, chapel, and school being provided by him. Accordingly on her next voyage Jones's schooner brought James Watkin (q.v.) and his wife to act as clergyman and teachers to the children of whalers, settlers and Maoris.

In the early forties Jones was attracted to Wellington by the arrival of emigrants there, and for a while he had some business association with W. M. Bannatyne. He kept the schooner *Scotia* constantly trading with Sydney, taking whalebone and oil from New Zealand. On one occasion he placed his schooner, fully manned and provisioned, at the disposal of the Government for use in necessary operations or

in taking succour to whites. During the alarm following the fight at the Wairau two of his vessels were thus at call. Jones suffered in the slump of 1842, but maintained his New Zealand holdings. In 1844 Mr Watkin was replaced as missionary by the Rev Charles Creed, who was in Otago when the pioneers arrived in 1848. About 1846 Jones made his home at Waikouaiti, a sort of feudal lord among his retainers, who found him a hard enough taskmaster, but generous and just. Anticipating the arrival of the settlers in Otago, he established a trading store to supply them with necessary commodities, and he earned the good opinion of the immigrants by his fair dealing. He moved to Dunedin in 1854. He was now a considerable merchant with ships of his own maintaining a regular trade around the coasts of New Zealand and to Sydney. He purchased Captain Bellairs's house at Fern Hill, which later he replaced by a stone building, afterwards known as the Fernhill Club. In 1859, in co-operation with the firm of Cargills, he purchased the paddle steamer *Geelong*, and a few years later the paddle steamer *City of Dunedin*. In 1863 the steamer *Golden Age* first came to Dunedin. Jones had a quarter share in her, and with this basis he founded the Harbour Steam Navigation Co., which prospered in spite of setbacks. The *Albion* and *Scotia* were added to the fleet, and the firm obtained a contract from the provincial government to run regular services between Dunedin, Oamaru and way ports.

Jones's own creation, the Harbour Co., developed into the Union Steam Ship Co. His business on shore expanded very materially as a result of the discovery of gold (1861). He was now in a thoroughly substantial way, and attempted to defeat the note issue of Macandrew and Co. He subsequently issued notes on his own credit, payable on demand. It is said that at one time £20,000 of these notes were in currency. Jones nevertheless suffered with others in the periodical slumps which struck the province. In that of 1866 he was able by judicious assistance to narrow the disaster that visited the community. At a time when 15 and even 20 per cent. was being charged on mortgage, Jones was content with 10.

In public life Jones knew his limitations. He was at the head of the poll for the Dunedin town board in 1855 (and chairman in 1856),

but generally declined to accept public positions. Sir George Grey, when he visited Dunedin in 1867, referred to him as a tried personal friend of more than 20 years' standing. Yet Jones was careful to decline the offer of a call to the Legislative Council. 'A large-hearted man with the simple instincts of a child,' was one description applied to him—a tall, muscular figure, adorned usually in his later days with a tall silk hat and a black coat. He was a liberal patron of the churches of all denominations. Besides building and endowing the Church of England at Waikouaiti, he gave land for St Paul's, Dunedin, and he insisted that the clergy should travel free of charge in his ships.

Jones married in 1830 Sarah Sizemore (d. 1864). He died on 16 Mar 1869.

His eldest son, JOHN RICHARD JONES, was a landowner in Waikouaiti district, where he farmed the Matanaka property until his removal to Dunedin in 1876. In Dec 1862 he was elected to represent Hampden in Parliament. VQgel was also nominated, but did not demand a poll. Jones resigned before the next session. As an executor for his father, he attended the meeting in 1869 at which the interests of the Dunedin Harbour Ferry Co. were developed into the Union Steamship Co. Jones married (1855) Mary (d. 1906), daughter of John Orbell. He died on 4 May 1911.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Hocken, *Otago*; McNab; *Whaling*; McIndoe; Roberts; Shortland, 79, 106; Purchas; Pratt; Christie; *Otago Daily Times*, 5 May 1911, 31 Jan 1930 (P).

JONES, JOSHUA (1845-1918) was born in Wales, educated in England and travelled widely. He spent some years in the constabulary in South Australia; and on the goldfields in the Northern Territory, where he was associated with the local organisation for self-government. Coming to New Zealand, he took up a section in the Moa block at Tariki, Taranaki. Moving to Mokau he became on friendly terms with the King natives; negotiated for the lease of the Mokau block and led a survey party into the King Country. In 1878 he assisted to arrange a meeting between Rewi and Sir George Grey. In 1892 Jones proceeded to England to obtain capital for opening up the mineral resources of the Mokau. While there he is said to have been a poor law guardian in a London metropolitan

borough. After returning to New Zealand he was engaged in protracted litigation and parliamentary applications. He died on 7 Jan 1918.

*App. H.R.*, 1879, ii H35; 1888, G4, 4a, 4c, 1.7; 1910, I.1a; 1912, ii 1.17. *Taranaki Herald*, 12 Jan 1918.

JOUBERT, JULES (1824-1907) was born at Angouleme, France, in 1824, educated at Bordeaux and the College Bourbon, Paris; and in 1839 sailed in the corvette *Heroine* for Brazil, Madagascar and Bay of Islands. He then left the ship and sailed in the schooner *Martha* for Sydney, where he spent seven years in the French consulate, attaining the position of chancellor. In 1840 he accompanied Lavaud (q.v.) in the *Aube* in the capacity of interpreter.

Resigning his post after the French revolution of 1848, he went to South Australia, where he invested in town property. The gold discoveries in Victoria in 1851 revived his prospects, and he carried swag and shovel to the diggings at Mount Alexander, where he was commissioned by a contractor to erect a block of government buildings. He afterwards started a store at Sawpit Gully. In 1853 he was present in the French cruiser *Catinat* at the hoisting of the French flag in New Caledonia. After making and losing a fortune in trade and speculations, Joubert was for some years secretary to the Agricultural Society of New South Wales (1867-78). While in this position he went to France to study the Exposition, and on his return he and R. E. N. Twopeny established the first international exhibition (1881). For his services at the Paris exhibition (1878) he received the ribbon of the Legion of Honour. He promoted exhibitions at Adelaide, Perth and Calcutta, and in 1889 was general manager of the Dunedin and South Seas exhibition. In the following year he published in Dunedin *Shavings and Scrapes from Many Parts*.

Loyau; Joubert, *op. cit.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 26 Nov 1889 (p).

JOWSEY, THOMAS (1853-1934) was born at Middlesborough, Yorkshire, educated at Dr Grieve's academy, and enlisted in the army. He served for seven years in India with the 15th Hussars, retiring as a non-commissioned officer. In 1883 he came to New Zealand, and for the next 20 years was house manager of the Timaru

hospital. He was keenly interested in the Timaru Rifles, in which he attained the rank of major in 1899. He served in South Africa (1900-02) in command of the 3rd New Zealand Contingent (Rough Riders), which at General Brabant's request was permanently attached to his column. (C.M.G. 1901.)

Jowsey remained in Timaru for a year or two after the war, and then moved to Christchurch, where he founded and managed the United Services Hotel. He eventually settled in Waibi in the service of the Waihi Goldmining Co. There he was for some years a member of the borough council and of the hospital board (of which he was chairman for three years).

Ranfurlly; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1902-32.

JOYCE, JAMES PARKER (1835-1903) was born at Southampton, England, where he was educated and entered the customs service. In 1855 he emigrated to Victoria, and in 1858 to Southland. He was stockman on Tuturau station, in which he afterwards bought a share, and was clerk of the town board of Invercargill (1864-65). Some time later he became editor of the *Southland Times*, and then part proprietor of the *Southland News*, of which he was editor for 40 years.

Joyce was M.H.R. for Wallace (1876-79), for Awarua (1881-84), and for Te Aro (1884-87). In Invercargill he was a promoter of the Horticultural Society. He married (1862) Miss Caydzien (Edinburgh) and he died on 16 Jan 1903.

Beattie i, ii; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; Pyke; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Jan 1903.

JOYCE, JOHN (1839-99) was born at St Ives, Cornwall, of Irish extraction. As a boy he went to sea in a fishing smack. In 1854 he emigrated to Victoria with his father (Captain Michael Joyce, 1816-95) who was an officer of the Victorian water police, and he spent three years (also in the waterpolice) at Williamstown. When retrenched out of that service he was in charge of a hooker of 55 tons.

In 1861 he came to New Zealand and was in the water police at Port Chalmers for a while before being appointed clerk of the magistrate's court. Four years later he was articled to Howorth and Hodgkins and, having qualified in law, was admitted to the bar (1873). He practised for a few years in Dunedin (with J.

## JOYNT

A. D. Adams) and then removed to Canterbury, practising in Christchurch and Lyttelton. He was chairman of the Sydenham school committee and a member of the borough council, and was mayor (1879-81). Intending to establish a deep-sea fishing company, he again settled in Lyttelton and became a member of the borough council in 1885. He was three years a member of the Canterbury education board and for many years superintendent of the Wesleyan Sunday school in Lyttelton.

Joynt entered Parliament in 1887 as member for Lyttelton (supporting the Stout-Vogel party) and was in Parliament continuously till 1899 (for Akaroa 1893-96, Lyttelton 1896-99). He died on 1 Dec 1899. He was an enthusiastic volunteer. In 1883 he raised the Sydenham rifles (of which he was captain), and he was the first major of the Canterbury rifle battalion (1885-91). He married a daughter of G. Coates (Christchurch).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Russell; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Feb 1895; *Lyttelton Times*, 2 Dec 1899. Portrait: Parliament House.

JOYNT, JOHN WILLIAM (1852-1933) was born in county Wicklow, Ireland, and was educated in a school at Kilkenny and at Sautry school, Dublin. He proceeded to Trinity College as a first-class sizar and had a brilliant career there, winning several classical scholarships, the vice-chancellor's prize and the Berkeley gold medal for the highest distinction in classical scholarship and double first class honours. He was awarded in 1879 the gold medals of the Historical and Philosophical societies. Next year he graduated M.A. and sat at once for his fellowship but, his health breaking down, he came to New Zealand.

In 1889 he was appointed headmaster of Nelson College, of which he had control for 10 years. On the establishment of Victoria University College in 1898, Joynt was an applicant for the chair of classics. Shortly afterwards he was appointed registrar of the University of New Zealand, a position he held from 1899 to 1910. He was also for a year or two lecturer in German at Victoria College and for some years an examiner for the University. In 1910 he went to London, where he acted as representative of the University of New Zealand until he retired in 1931. He represented New Zealand on the

## JULIUS

executive of the Imperial Universities Bureau. He died on 22 May 1933.

*Univ. of N.Z. Calendar; Nelson Coll. O.B. Reg.; Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post*, 24 May 1933; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 19 Sep 1931; *The Times*, 24 May 1933.

JOYNT, THOMAS INGHAM (1830-1907) was born in county Galway, Ireland, and educated there and in Dublin. He served his articles in a solicitor's office in the capital (where he became acquainted with H. B. Gresson, q.v.). In 1856 he emigrated to Canterbury in the *Mariner* with his wife and child. After being clerk to the bench in Lyttelton and Christchurch, he entered Gresson's office and was later articled to T. S. Duncan. He was admitted to the bar in 1863 and commenced to practise on his own account. Joynt was an eloquent pleader and a witty conversationalist. In 1907 he was appointed a K.C. He was member of the Canterbury Provincial Council for Kaiapoi from 1871 till the abolition, and a member of the executive under Rolleston (1874-75). He contested the Christchurch parliamentary seat without success against J. Holmes. His death occurred on 5 Sep 1907.

*The Press*, 8 Jun, 6 Sep 1907.

JULIUS, CHURCHILL (1847-1938) was born at Richmond, Surrey, and educated at Blackheath Proprietary school, at King's College, London, and Worcester College, Oxford, where he graduated B.A. (1869) and M.A. (1871). He was ordained deacon (1871) and priest (1872). His first curacy was at St Giles, Norwich (1871). In 1873 he became curate of South Brent, Somersetshire; in 1875 vicar of Shapwick; in 1878 of Holy Trinity, Islington, and in 1884 of Christ Church pro-Cathedral in Ballarat.

Julius came to Australia in the barque *South Australian*, and was for some time archdeacon of Ballarat and dean of the Cathedral. While there he was elected (1889) to the bishopric of Christchurch. The consecration took place on 1 May 1890. Cambridge University conferred on him the D.D. in 1893, and in 1920 the honorary LL.D. Julius was a man of great personal charm and wide gifts; tolerant, industrious, an eloquent emotional preacher and an orator of some distinction. In 1922 he succeeded Nevill (q.v.) as primate of New Zealand, becoming at the same time the first archbishop in the pro-

## JULIUS

vince. He had then been in holy orders for 53 years and a bishop for 35. Two years later he announced his retirement from the see of Christchurch, which took place in Apr 1925. He was warden of Christ's College (1890-1925) and a governor of Canterbury College (1890-1920).

In his retirement Julius devoted much of his leisure to mechanical pursuits, including clock-making (at which he was expert), electricity and radio. His clock hospital was a feature of his home for many years, and he spent one vacation repairing the organ in the old church at

## JULIUS

Paihia, Bay of Islands. He married (1873) Alice (who died in 1918), daughter of Colonel M. J. Rowlandson.

*Crockford; Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *Star-Sun and The Press*, 2 Sep 1938 (pp).

JULIUS, HERBERT AMELIUS, was a runholder in north Otago and a prominent figure on the turf, being clerk of the course to the Oamaru Jockey club. In 1867 he was elected to represent Oamaru Town in the Otago Provincial Council. His death occurred on 31 May 1868.

---

---

# K

---

---

**KAIHAU, HENARE** (1855-1920), a chief of the Ngati-Teata, a sub-tribe of Waikato, was born at Waiuku. His father was Ahipene Kaihau (one of the Waikato chiefs who sued for peace in Feb 1861. Ahipene was afterwards appointed an assessor, and was a policeman at Waiuku in 1863, when he went over to the enemy and was dismissed. He died on 3 Dec 1892).

Young Kaihau was educated at Archdeacon Maunsell's school at Waiuku. He showed great mental ability and was a thoroughly Europeanised Maori, with a fine stature and presence. By the age of 24 he was taking a keen interest in native affairs, and he was for years associated with the various Maori parliaments, in which he was recognised as a man of outstanding mental capacity. His sister being married to Tawhiao, he was in close touch with the King movement, and was for years the principal adviser of King Mahuta. In 1886 he was deputed by Tawhiao to visit Wellington to discuss the possibility of establishing a council of Maori chiefs in association with Parliament.

In 1884, and again in 1886, he stood for the Western Maori seat in Parliament. Ten years later he again came out as the first candidate nominated for parliament by the Maori King. He defeated Ropata te Ao and sat in Parliament primarily to represent King and Waikato interests, from 1896 to 1911. In his first session he introduced a Maori council constitution bill, designed to give to the Maori race what the King leaders considered a suitable form of local self-government. It provided that all Maori lands should be administered by a council of which 14 members should be nominated by the governor, 14 and the president nominated by Mahuta Tawhiao te Wherowhero and 28 elec-

ted for three-year terms by the four Maori constituencies. The mana of the council was to be vested for life in Mahuta and his lawful descendants, who should from time to time appoint the president of the council. The bill was read a second time, pro forma, on 25 Nov 1897 and dropped.

At several subsequent elections Kaihau was opposed by Te Heubeu Tukino (q.v.), but he managed to retain his seat until the advent of Maui Pomare (q.v.) in 1911, with tribal support which enabled him to win the election. Kaihau tried in 1919 to regain the seat, but without success. Both in Parliament and out he did his utmost to heal the breach with the King natives, and he succeeded in persuading an important party of Waikato to attend the reception to the Prince of Wales at Rotorua in 1920.

Kaihau died on 20 May 1920, leaving a wife (daughter of W. Flavell, of Waipipi).

*N.z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1920; S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Scholefield in *N.z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907; Hone Heke and Sir A. Ngata (information). Portrait: Parliament House.

**KAIN, CONRAD** (?1879-1934), one of the most remarkable guides who ever operated in the New Zealand ranges, was an Austro-Italian. His climbs in Europe (including Corsica) and Canada had become recognised as classics long before 1914, when a patron, H. O. Frind, brought him to this country. In two seasons he crammed daring new routes and first ascents into his calendar, forcing his objectives, for the most part, in the Murchison, Tasman and Mueller valleys. His nationality caused steps to be taken for his imprisonment on Somes Island during the war of 1914-18, but the deter-

## KANE

mined efforts of Mrs Thomson (with whom he had traversed Mount Cook) won his passage to Canada, where he was made chief guide at Banff. He died on 2 Feb 1934, after a brilliant Alpine career. His biography, *Where the Clouds can Go* (1936) was edited by the American Alpine Club. J.D.P.

**KANE, EDWARD WILLIAM** (1858-1934) was born in Wellington, where he was educated at the Thorndon Catholic school and articled to F. M. Ollivier, barrister and solicitor. In 1886 he joined the parliamentary staff; in 1920 he became clerk of the House of Representatives, and in 1930 Clerk of Parliaments and of the Legislative Council. (C.M.G.). Kane married (1921) Rosetta, widow of F. E. Baume (q.v.)

*Parltry Record; Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924, 1932; *The Dominion*, 19 Jul 1934 (p).

**TE KANI A TAKIRAU** (?1800-1856) was one of the greatest chiefs of the Maori regime. His dominant position among the aristocracy of the territory between the Bay of Plenty and Wairarapa was mainly due to the marriage of his great grand-mother, Ngunguru-te-rangi, of Hicks Bay, with Tane-toko-rangi, grandson of the warrior chief Konohi of Whangara. The sole issue of this union was the famous Hine-matiore, who married a second cousin, Te Hoa-tiki. Her two daughters married two brothers, the sons of the famous Tolaga Bay chief, Te Whakatatare-o-te-rangi; Ngarangi-ka-hiwa, the elder, marrying Te Rongo-tu-mamao, and Te Kakari, the younger, marrying Te Amaru. Te Whakatatare was in his prime when Cook visited Tolaga Bay. There was thus merged in the person of Te Kani-a-Takirau, as the son of Ngarangi-ka-hiwa and Te Rongo-tu-mamao, the most aristocratic lines of descent on the long seaboard from Opotiki to Port Nicholson.

Owing to his high lineage Te Kani never cultivated food for himself, and in the event of his pa being besieged a special body guard was detailed to provide for the safety of his person. As a child he had been in great danger during the Ngati-Maru raid at Mahia, and was released by Potiki when he begged to be killed with a mere appropriate to his rank. In the attacks by Titore, Te Wera and Tu Korehu on the East Coast tribes about 1820 three of his near relatives were killed, and Hine-matiore

## TE KANI

was spirited away by her people to prevent her being captured. Te Kani himself escaped with difficulty, many of his people being killed. In the early nineteenth century he was the most powerful chief on the East Coast. He welcomed Te Wera when he came to settle at Mahia, and begged his assistance in finding the hiding place of his grandmother.

Owing to the restrictions of his high birth, Te Kani's warlike career was not distinguished. Having been defeated by Whanau-a-Apanui at Parinui-te-Ra, he sent Te Houkamau to obtain help from Pareihe and Tiakitai, and together they turned the tables at Toka-a-Kuku (1835). When Te Wera was free to assist Te Kani in his search for Hine-matiore he did so by attacking the Ngati-Porou stronghold of Tuatini, which he took.

By virtue of his high lineage Te Kani was offered the position of Maori king in 1854, but declined it. On that occasion he said: •I am a king by right of my ancestors. Hikurangi is not a travelling mountain: The latter expression was a sarcastic reference to the legends of travelling mountains in the Taupo district, whence the offer of the kingship had emanated. In his later years Te Kani was most friendly to the missions. He was a tall, commanding figure, fully tattooed, and wore European dress except on ceremonial occasions. At one time he had ten wives. He was very much addicted to horseracing. It was his invariable practice to give gifts in return for any received by him and he presented his best horse to McLean on the occasion of their first meeting. In 1835 he showed much attention to Polack. He died at Whangara in 1856 and was buried on an island off Tolaga Bay beside his ancestress.

S. P. Smith, *Wars; Polyn. Jour.*, xxv; Polack; Sir Apirana Ngata (information); Lambert, p. 489; W. L. Williams, *East Coast*.

**TE KANI, HIRINI** (1826-96) was closely related to Te Kani-a-Takirau, his great-grandfather, Tama-i-hikitea-te-rangi, being first cousin to Hine-matiore. He was inclined towards the King movement, but refrained from accepting office or taking an active part. In later times he strenuously opposed the Haubau emissaries in the East Coast district, and threw up defensive works. He died on 5 Jul 1896. Two years later the Government erected a monument to his memory at Gisborne.

## KAPA

KAPA, EPARAIMA TE MUTU (1842-1925), a chief of Te Whananaki hapu of Te Aupouri, was a grandson of Patuone and descended from Mirupokai. He was born at Kaitaia, and educated at the mission school there under Puckey (q.v.). Most of his life he lived at Te Kao and Parengarenga, always exercising his considerable authority in peaceful directions. He was a man of keen intellect and well-balanced judgment, but without much driving force. Convinced of the advantages of education, he persuaded his people to send their children to schools and colleges.

In 1891 Kapa was elected to succeed Taiwhanga as member for the Northern Maori. He was defeated in 1893 by Hone Heke, who represented the Kotahitanga movement. Kapa stood against Heke without success on two subsequent occasions (1896 and 1899).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Jun 1925; *N.z. Graphic*, 3 Jun 1893; *N.z. Times*, 10 Oct 1907. Portrait: Parliament House.

KARETAI (1781-1860), popularly known as 'Jackey White,' was the principal chief at Otakou when the pakeha arrived. The son of Te Ihutakaru and Kakatuaheka, he was a cousin of Taiaroa (q.v.). Edward Shortland visited him in 1843, when he lived at the eastern heads of Otago harbour. He had been for some time interested in sealing and had a share in a sealing boat. He often visited Sydney and with his wife once spent a year at Parramatta under the care of Samuel Marsden. Karetai made several campaigns against Te Rauparaha. He was wounded in the knee at Oraumoa and became permanently lame, and also lost an eye. Like Taiaroa, he made peace with Te Rauparaha at Poneke after the Wairau affair (1843). He signed the Treaty of Waitangi at the Heads in 1840, and the Otago deed of sale in 1844. He later came under the influence of Charles Creed. Karetai died on 30 May 1860.

Stack; Pratt; Hocken, *Otago*; Shortland.

KARSLAKE, JOHN KARSLAKE, with Anson bought the Waireka station in Canterbury in 1862. It was sold a few years later to the Rt Hon Joseph Chamberlain, and they bought Mount Torlesse (1868). This also they disposed of and acquired Avoca (1873). Karslake represented Coleridge in Parliament (1871-72). He was drowned on a voyage to England.

Acland.

## TE KAWAU

KATENE, WIREMU, an influential chief of the Uritaniwha hapu of Aupouri, and of Ngapuhi, farmed a large estate at Te Ahuahu and lived in pakeha style, setting a good example to his people. Katene was elected to represent the Northern Maori in Parliament in 1871, and was a member of the executive under Waterhouse, Fox, Vogel and Pollen (1872-76). He was defeated in 1875 by Tawhiti and Te Tai. In May 1887 Katene was again elected to Parliament for Northern Maori, but he lost his seat at the general election a few months later. He died on 1 Nov 1895.

*Parltry Record; N.Z. Herald*, 29 Nov 1895. Portrait: Parliament House.

TE KAWAU, APIHAI (?1790-1869) was the principal chief of the Taou hapu of Ngati-Whatua at Kaipara, and paramount chief of the tribe in the early part of the nineteenth century. A finely tattooed warrior, and the most strictly tapu man that S. P. Smith ever met, he was described by Butler as a man of bold disposition and a good countenance. Marsden met him in 1820, when he boarded the *Dromedary*, offering spars from his forests at Waitemata, and accompanied the missionary to inspect the harbour of Manukau. He had a great aversion to war, and in later years deplored the losses of his people at the hands of Ngapuhi, which compelled them to evacuate their ancestral lands about Tamaki for several years. Some accounts say that Kawau took part in the defence of Mau-ina-ina (Nov 1821), but it is better established that he initiated the Amiohenua expedition to the south, leaving Oneone-nui (southern Kaipara) with his taua in Sep 1821 for lower Waikato, and being joined there by Ngati-Maniapoto and other forces under Tu-Korehu. Some Ngati-Maru from Thames also joined. The combined force invaded Hawkes Bay by way of Rotorua, Kaingaroa and Wairoa, and passed on by the Manawatu gorge and Wairarapa to Port Nicholson. Returning by the Whanganui river, they became involved in extraordinary developments in Taranaki and were eventually besieged in Pukerangiora, whence they sent an appeal to Te Wherowhero for assistance. Kawau assisted Waikato in the defence of Matakītaki (May 1822) and, having made peace, he returned to Tamaki in Jun, having marched 800 miles and had a basket of human flesh for his pillow every

## KAWEPO

night. S. P. Smith says this was the longest march ever made by a taua. Fearing the guns of Ngapuhi, Kawau and Te Hinana retreated with their people to Pukewhau, on the Waipa river, while other hapu moved to Mahurangi, where they were later attacked by the Parawhau hapu of Ngapuhi. This dispersion, and the departure of a force to avenge the victims of Parawhau, accounted for Kawau's absence from Te Ika-a-ranganui (Feb 1825). After the death of Hongi, the Ngati-Whatua returned to their lands at Tamaki, resuming the cultivations at Mangere, Onehunga and Horotiu and the fortified pa at Okahu (Orakei), where they made closer contact with the missionaries.

Kawau invited Captain Hobson to visit Waitemata, used all his influence to make land available for the capital (1840), and welcomed the official party at Waiariki (Official Bay) in 1841. He lived for the most part at Orakei, being confirmed in a reserve of 700 acres by the judgment of 1868. In his later years he was much in the company of Sir William Martin (q.v.) and eventually was baptised, taking the Christian name of 'Apihai' (Abishai). He died at Ongarahu (Kaipara) in Nov 1869.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Thomson; Davis; Butler, *Journals*; Marsden, *L. and J.*; Lady Martin, *Our Maoris*; Cowan, *Sketches* (p).

TE HIRA TE KAWAU (?1810-88), the son of Apihai, though of higher rank than his cousin Tuhaere (q.v.), was unassuming and disinclined for leadership. He was one of the party which accompanied Logan Campbell (q.v.) to select a site for a town on the Waitemata (1840) but took umbrage at a fancied insult and refused to proceed with the negotiations. He died on 5 Jul 1888 at Okahu.

Campbell; *N.Z. Railways Magazine*, Nov 1933; *Southern Cross*, 30, 31 Dec 1868; *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Mar 1892. Portrait: Cowan *Sketches*.

KAWEPO TAMA-KIHIKURANGI, RENATA (?1808-88) one of the best known chiefs in Hawkes Bay, belonged to the Ngati-Te Upokoiri hapu of Ngati-Kahungunu, and was born in the first decade of the nineteenth century. He had achieved some fame as a warrior in the twenties. In 1830 Ngapuhi invaded Hawkes Bay and totally defeated Ngati-Kahungunu at Roto-a-tara, close to Te Aute College, where Renata was captured. He was taken back by

## KAWEPO

the conquerors to the north. While living with the Ngapuhi he was tattooed and converted to Christianity. Desiring to convey the Gospel to his own people, he became a teacher and went back first to Patea and then to other settlements, where he was recognised as a chief. He returned to Ahuriri with Colenso (Mar 1845) and introduced horses there in 1850. His influence was always friendly to the pakeha, and in 1857 he and several other chiefs in Hawkes Bay wrote to the *Hawkes Bay Herald* assuring the settlers that there would be no hostilities against them. When Napier was in danger he was offered the rank of major, but declined. Nevertheless he led his own hapu in the fighting at Omarunui under Colonel Whitmore and was instrumental in the rout of the Hauhau. He declined pay for his services, but accepted a sword of honour.

When his men landed very seasick at Tuaranganui (Gisborne), some of the chiefs wished to give them time to recover, but Renata insisted on immediately marching and they attacked Patutahi the following morning (20 Nov 1868). He took part also in the successful attack on Makaretu and in the operations at Ngatapa (1868-69). When Whitmore called for volunteers for the storming party against Te Waiparati he was the first to offer. Later in 1869 he took the field with 65 mounted men of his tribe in the Taupo expedition under Colonel McDonnell. After attacking the Papawai pa from three directions, they discovered that Te Kooti and his men had made their escape to Porere, where they were followed. In the fight Renata was engaged in fierce single combat with a stalwart Hauhau when the latter's wife sprang upon him and gouged out his right eye with her fingers. A timely assistant despatched the Hauhau. Renata would not allow the plucky woman to be injured and later he married her.

In 1883 Renata welcomed Tawhiao to Hawkes Bay as a friend, but scorned his pretensions. A man of great sagacity and a born ruler, Renata was highly respected by both races. His interest in Christian institutions continued after the peace, and he made many gifts to churches and schools. He received a Government pension of £100 a year for his services, and lived in European style at Omaha (where he died on 13 Apr 1888). Honourable in all

## KAWITI

his dealings, Renata Kawepo once refused £4,390 for a piece of land which he had promised to sell for £480. His grandniece was Airini (afterwards MRS G. P. DONNELLY, q.v.).

Cowan; Gudgeon; Cowan, *Wars*; do. *Sketches* (p); Lambert; *Otago Daily Times*, 21 Jun 1909, sup. p. 2.

KAWITI (?1774-1854), a fine old Maori warrior, was a chief of the Ngati-Hine hapu of Ngapuhi, and lived at Waiomio, near Kawakawa. In early life he took part in the expeditions of Ngapuhi. He was interested in the whites from the first, and got into friendly relations with Thomas Kendall on his visit in 1814, but remained a heathen almost to the end.

Though he signed the Treaty of Waitangi (1840), Kawiti was soon in active revolt against the colonists. Prompted mainly, it would seem, by curiosity and a desire to pit the prowess of the Maori against British soldiers, he entered eagerly into Heke's plans in 1844 for an attack on Kororareka, proposed a binding alliance, and opened hostilities by plundering the outlying settlers. His taua consisted of his own hapu, with men from the Roroa, Kapotai, Ngare-Hauata, Ngati-Pu and Ngati-Toki. Heke was somewhat jealous of Kawiti's mana in the early days of the rising. Approaching the town of Kororareka in the early morning of 11 Jan 1845, Kawiti's taua of 200 encountered the force landed from the warships, and after a sharp fight were repulsed. Kawiti's son and one of his leading chiefs (Pumuka) were amongst the 20 killed. At Puketutu Kawiti's division again suffered severely in a charge by the 58th Regiment. Coming to the help of Heke, he occupied the rising ground, and when driven out after a hard fight maintained a stiff rear-guard action in the bush. Kawiti on this occasion was twice engaged hand-to-hand with soldiers and was slightly wounded; he escaped by lying concealed while the troops passed him. His losses were over 20 men, including his second son Taura.

At the suggestion of Heke, Kawiti then set about strengthening the pa at Ohaeawai, of which he doubled the capacity and improved the defences in a scientific manner. Attacking against the strong advice of Tamati Waka Nene (q.v.), Colonel Despard suffered a severe reverse, and the Maori then retired. Determined

## KEDDELL

that any further fighting should be on his own land, Kawiti constructed a strong pa at Rua-pekapeka. He declined repeated overtures of peace, and prepared to meet the attack. On 9 Jan 1846 the artillery started a severe bombardment which lasted all day; Kawiti's two guns being silenced early. Believing that Sunday would be observed as Ra-tapu, Kawiti that night retired to the rear of the pa to rest. At dawn the abandoned breastwork was reconnoitred by the friendlies, and the troops were enabled to effect their entry unopposed into the main part of the pa. Alarmed too late, Kawiti fired one volley into the enemy and escaped to the bush in the rear, where Heke's troops were holding church service. After a fruitless effort to recover the work the insurgents withdrew. Embittered against Heke for his supposed lukewarm co-operation, Kawiti on 29 Jan offered to make peace. He was afterwards reconciled with Nene, and lived quietly for the rest of his life.

Unlike other leading chiefs of the north, Kawiti refused until old age to accept the Christian religion. At the suggestion of the Rev Henry Williams (q.v.) he attended divine service for the first time in Nov 1851, and he moved his residence to Pakaraka to be close to his friend. On 2 Feb 1853 he was baptised (taking the name of Te Ruku, Duke). He died on 5 May 1854. Kawiti stuck tenaciously to the native customs of chivalry.

His son, MAIHI PARAONE KAWITI, who took control of the tribe, was a good Christian. In Jan 1858, as a token of lasting peace, he re-erected the flagstaff on the hill at Kororareka. When the King movement was inaugurated Maihi was offered, but declined, the King governorship of the northern district. A conservative Maori of the old school, he wielded great influence amongst the Ngapuhi. He died at Waiomio on 21 May 1888.

Buller; Carleton; Marsden, *L. and J.*; S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Cowan (p); Buick, *First War* (p).

KEDDELL, JACKSON (1831-1910) was born in Kent and educated at Arno's Court, Somersetshire. In 1850 he became a cornet in the 16th Lancers, but shortly resigned and emigrated to Australia, where in 1853 he joined the Victorian Mounted police. He was present at Eureka Stockade. While holding the rank of sub-in-

## TE KEKERENGU

spector he paid a visit to Otago (1861) during Branigan's organisation of the mounted police in that province. On the discovery by Hartley and Reilly at the Dunstan in 1862, he was appointed warden there.

In the following year Keddell raised a troop on the goldfields for service in the Maori war. He served under General Cameron through the Waikato campaign and in 1864 was promoted major. In 1868 he was appointed resident magistrate and warden on the Thames fields, and some time later went into partnership with his colleague L. Broad as mining agents. He was resident magistrate at Coromandel (1870-79), in Central Otago (1879-85), Greymouth (1885-92) and Oamaru where he died on 17 Nov 1910.

Keddell married first (1864) May, daughter of William Corbett, chief postmaster at Auckland; and second (1882) a daughter of R. McCracken, Otago.

Gilkison; *ycl. N.z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 5 Dec 1910.

TE KEKERENGU, or TAIHAHA, a chief of Ngati-Ira, was a son of the principal chief of Ngati-Ira (Whanake) and was descended from Te Whakumu, who led the earliest migration to Wairarapa and settled at Cape Palliser, where they amalgamated with some of the Ngati-Kahungunu. His mother was Tamairangi, a celebrated beauty of Ngati-Kuia (Aropaoa) and a direct descendant of Ira. She had great influence on the West Coast and Wairarapa. Kekerengu led the Ngati-Ira in the attack on Te Rauparaha at Kapiti. About 1826 he and his father were living south of Titahi Bay, where they traded in flax with passing vessels. owing to friction with the Ngati-Toa over fish-109 and food there was much fighting, and the Ngau-Tama and Ngati-Kahungunu plotted to massacre the Ngati-Ira. The tribe was eventually evicted from Wairarapa by the Ngati-Mutunga about 1827-30, and Kekerengu took refuge with Tamairangi and his people at Tapu-te-Ranga (Island Bay), and then with the Ngati-Toa at Waikanae. Tamairangi had been captured by the enemy but was protected by Rangihaeata. During this sojourn Kekerengu was guilty of a liaison with Rangihaeata's wife, and fled to Arapaoa with Tamairangi and then to Cape Campbell. Te Rauparaha sought revenge against the Ngai-Tahu for shielding him, and

## KELLING

when his fleet appeared Kekerengu fled to the south. Though he escaped at the time, he is believed to have been killed by the Ngai-Tahu for bringing on them the defeat at Omihia (c. 1829).

Kekerengu was the possessor of the famous greenstone mere Tawhito whenua, which he gave to Rangihaeata (from whom it passed to Hohepa Tamaihengia, and eventually to Airini Donnelly, q.v.).

S. P. Smith, *Taranaki*; Elsdon Best, *Whanganui a-Tara*.

KELHAM, JAMES, was employed in the office of the New Zealand Company before coming to the colony in the *London* (1842). He was in business as an accountant in Wellington, and was the first chairman of the chamber of commerce (1856-58). Kelham represented Wellington City in the Provincial Council (1856) and in Parliament (1853-55). He was a strong supporter of Featherston in provincial politics and chairman of his election committee in 1857. After retiring Kelham lived at Waiwetu road, Hutt, till his death in 1882.

N.Z.C.; Ward.

KELLETT, EDWARD (1865-1922) was born in Dunedin, educated there and trained as a carpenter. Taking an interest in trade unionism, he was president of the amalgamated society of carpenters and joiners and organising secretary. During the war of 1914-18 he was a member of the Otago and Southland military service board and afterwards of the repatriation board. He served on the West Harbour borough council for many years till 1919, when he was elected to represent Dunedin North in Parliament. He died on 15 May 1922.

*N.z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1922; *Otago Daily Times*, 16 May 1922.

KELLING, CHARLES FREDERICK CHRISTIAN (1818-98) was born and educated in Mecklenburg-Schwerin, Germany, and at the age of 26 came to New Zealand with his brother and other Germans in the *Skjold*. They settled at Waimea East, where the brothers farmed together for several years. Charles then moved to Upper Moutere, where he resided for the remainder of his life. Like his brother, he took a great interest in the emigration of Germans to New Zealand, and he also participated in

KELLING

public affairs as a member of the Nelson Provincial Council for 12 years (for Moutere 1861-69; and for Waimea West 1869-73). He died on 28 Dec 1898.

*Parltry Record; Nelson P.C. Proc.; The Colonist*, 30 Dec 1898.

KELLING, JOHN FEDOR AUGUSTUS (1820-1909) was born in Mecklenburg-Schwerin, Germany, where he had a high school education and studied surveying. He farmed for a while on the estates of Count Ranzau, and in 1844 left for New Zealand in the *Skjold* as one of the leaders of the second migration of Germans for Nelson, in which the count took an interest. He settled at Waimea East, took up 350 acres for farming and in 1855 purchased a run of 8,000 acres in Marlborough. There he pastured 4,000 sheep until 1877, when he bought a large farm at Stanley Brook, Motueka. In 1853 he was a director of the Settlers' Cattle Fair association, and in the following year he organised the Nelson Agricultural association, of which he was secretary to 1862.

Kelling was elected in 1854 to the first Waimea road board. He was chairman of the board to 1860, and also of the central education board. He was elected to the Provincial Council for Waimea East, which he represented 1857-63 and 1865-75. In 1860 he was for a few months member of Parliament for the same constituency. He was appointed a justice of the peace in 1859. In 1863 he visited Europe and acted as immigration agent for the New Zealand Government, which was interested in obtaining more German settlers.

In 1867 Kelling was appointed consul for New Zealand for the North German Confederation. This position he held until 1871, when he became consul for the German Empire, a post which was abolished on his recommendation in 1884. The Kaiser presented him with the Order of the Crown in recognition of his services. Kelling was a lieutenant in the New Zealand militia during the Maori war, but did not serve in the field. He died on 24 Oct 1909.

*Nelson P.C. Proc.; N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Oct 1909; *App. H.R.*, 1863, D5; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *The Colonist* 27 Oct 1909; *N.Z. Times*, 25 Apr 1907.

KELLY, JAMES WHYTE (1855-1938) was born at Carluke, Lanarkshire, educated at the parish

KELLY

school and apprenticed to tailoring, at which he worked in Scotland and England. Having married Elizabeth, daughter of James Millar (Motherwell), they sailed for New Zealand in the *Aldergrove* (1875). Kelly worked for Thomas Millar (Invercargill) till 1890, in which year he contested Invercargill in the Labour interest (defeating Feldwick and J. W. Bain). He was re-elected in 1893 (defeating Joseph Hatch) and again in 1896 (defeating Scandrett and John Sinclair). In 1899 he was defeated by J. A. Hanan. Kelly was a borough councillor and mayor of South Invercargill, secretary of the Southland trades and labour council, and chairman of the Southland Amalgamated Society of Railway Servants. He died on 15 Dec 1938.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iv; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Lyttelton Times*, 8 Dec 1890; *Timaru Herald*, 17 Dec 1938; *Otago Daily Times*, 22 Dec. Portrait: Parliament House.

KELLY, JOHN (1807-83) was a native of county Tyrone, Ireland. As a young man he joined the Royal Engineers and came with a detachment to Australia, where he superintended the construction of government buildings in Tasmania and New South Wales. In 1836 he retired from the army and crossed to Bay of Islands, where he lived for several years. He was present at the signing of the Treaty of Waitangi. Kelly acted as guide to a detachment of the 80th Regiment during Heke's trouble. About 1843 he removed to Auckland, erected a house on a piece of land which he had bought at Mt Eden and continued to practise as a surveyor. He represented the Pensioner Settlements in the Provincial Council (1856-59). He died on 14 Apr 1883.

*Auckland P.C. Proc.; N.Z. Herald*, 16 Apr 1883.

KELLY, JOHN LIDDELL (1850-1925.) was a native of the village of Calder, near Airdrie, Scotland, where his father was employed as a blacksmith and was known as a poet and orator. At the age of 11 John entered upon his seven years' apprenticeship to the *Airdrie Advertiser*, where he learned clerical work, kept accounts and reported the law courts. In 1870 he married, and in 1875 he was sent to Rutherglen, where he published, managed and edited the *Rutherglen Reformer* and acted as district representative of the *Glasgow Herald* and *Evening Times*. He was already doing exercises in

KELLY

verse which developed later into a happy and sometimes playful muse.

In 1881 Kelly left England in the *Algoa Bay* for New Zealand and, finding his way to Auckland, joined the staff of the *Star* as a compositor and reader. He later became sub-editor, and in 1885 went in the schooner *Janet Nicoll* to report for the Government and the Auckland chamber of commerce on trade openings in the Pacific islands. His report was published in 1885. This voyage inspired Kelly to write his poem *Tahiti* and the libretto of a comic opera *Pomare* (1885).

In 1888 he left the *Star* to become part proprietor and editor of the *New Zealand Observer*, which he controlled until an unfavourable verdict for damages led to his parting with his interest. He then reported in Parliament for a while and became sub-editor of *The Globe* (Dunedin). A few months later he joined the literary staff of the *Lyttelton Times*, of which he was sub-editor until being appointed in 1898 editor of the *New Zealand Times*.

On leaving this post (in 1906) Kelly edited for a short time the *Tribune*, at Hilo, Hawaii, and the *Ashburton Guardian*, and then took up his residence in Auckland, where he did a variety of literary work.

In 1902 Kelly published a collection of his verse under the title *Heather and Fern*. He adventured a little into philosophy with such pamphlets as *The Cult of the Occult* and *The End of Time*, and finally into British Israelitism. He died on 10 Dec 1925.

Kelly, *op. cit.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Times* and *Auckland Star*, 11 Dec 1925.

KELLY, MAURICE (1785-1888) was born in Queen's county, Ireland, the son of a peasant farmer. At 15 he went to sea, trading to North and South America, India and New South Wales. Returning to Ireland, he enlisted at Carlow in the 3rd Buffs, from which he deserted a few weeks after landing in New South Wales. Sharing the colonel's passion for cock fighting, he was leniently treated, but he again took to the bush and after five years of country life crossed to Whangaroa, where he worked for a sawmiller (Snowden) for three years.

Returning to Sydney in the brig *Guide*, he spent a few years in Australia and finally came to New Zealand in the *Hannah Watson* (Cap'

KELLY

tain Stewart), *Whitaker* being a fellow passenger. Landing at Kaipara he worked at bush-felling at Elmslie's, Wairoa. When the capital was moved to Auckland Kelly was engaged sawing timber at Lucas Creek and Kauri Point. He then went into business for himself in association with Dr Lee' and others at Smale's Point, preparing timber for Sydney, California and China. They had 500 acres at Lucas Creek, and Kelly owned 10 bullock teams. Having married a widow (Mrs Fairs, who died 1885) he sold out and took up a freehold of 2,000 acres at Wade (1848), where he built a hotel and operated a sawmill and a carrying business. He took part in many provincial elections and was in the Provincial Council for Northern Division (1859-61). He died on 24 Jun 1888.

*N.z. Herald*, 24 Mar 1888 (p).

KELLY, THOMAS (1830-1921) was born in Isle of Man and educated there. In 1855 he came to New Zealand by the *Cresswell* with his parents. They acquired land at Bell Block, Taranaki, where Kelly afterwards farmed for many years. He served in the Maori wars, becoming an ensign in the Taranaki militia in 1865.

Kelly was first a member of the Provincial Council in 1863, representing New Plymouth until 1869. For the last three years of that period he was provincial secretary under H. R. Richmond (q.v.). Thus early he strenuously advocated the construction of railways and roads to open up the country as the best means of combating the Maori. He was responsible for much road and bridge construction, and was active in initiating the section of railway between New Plymouth and Waitara (1873).

Elected to the House of Representatives for New Plymouth Town in 1869, he sat continuously until 1884. During this period he promoted with great energy legislation for the development of communications in Taranaki. The harbour ordinances of the province were re-enacted as required after the abolition, and Kelly was for many years a member and some time chairman of the board. He was also on the land board, the education board and the Taranaki county council. When the abolition of the provinces was imminent he was persuaded to return to the Provincial Council to assist in the winding up of provincial affairs. In Oct 1874

KELLY

he was elected for Grey and Bell, and he succeeded Atkinson as provincial secretary for the balance of the provincial term, being afterwards one of the general Government agents.

In Parliament Kelly was for eight years chairman of the public petitions committee. After his defeat by O. Samuel (1884) he remained in private life for some years until being called to the Legislative Council by the Ballance government (1892). His term was twice renewed, and he finally retired in 1913. He was a consistent Liberal in politics, a staunch supporter of the Ballance and Seddon governments and an advocate of a state bank. For many years he was a leader writer for the *Taranaki Herald*. Kelly died on 21 Sep 1921.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 23 Sep 1921; *Tamaki P.C. Proc. and Gaz.*; *Taranaki Herald*, 7 Jul 1884, 21 Sep 1921. Portrait: Parliament House.

KELLY, WILLIAM (1840-1907) was born in county Louth, Ireland, and educated in Ardee. He then went into mercantile life. Having married, he came to New Zealand in 1863 and almost immediately undertook commissariat contracts for the troops operating in Waikato and the East Coast. In 1865 he established himself in business at Opotiki, where he had several vessels trading with Auckland and other ports.

Kelly represented Pensioner Settlements in the Auckland Provincial Council (1872-73) and Opotiki (1873-75). In 1870 he contested the East Coast seat in Parliament against Mackay and Skeet and won. He was defeated by Morris at the election of 1875, and contested the seat five times before regaining it by defeating Judge Gill and Kerr (1887). He then represented the constituency, which was called alternately East Coast, Tauranga and Bay of Plenty, until 1896. In 1897 Kelly was called to the Legislative Council. He died on 19 Sep 1907.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 19 Sep 1907; *Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 20 Sep 1907. Portrait: Parliament House.

KEMP, HENRY TACY (1818-1901) was born in Norfolk, England, and came to New Zealand with his father, James Kemp (q.v.) in 1819. He was educated at the mission school at Waimate and afterwards at a grammar school in Norwich, England. Returning to the colony just before the Treaty of Waitangi, he entered the public service on 6 Feb 1840, and as a cadet on Hobson's staff assisted to indite the documents relating to the inauguration of

KEMP

British rule. He was subsequently engaged on land purchases and in 1843 was appointed secretary and interpreter to the land claims commissioners (Godfrey and Richmond). He escorted Dieffenbach overland from Bay of Islands to Kaipara and Manukau, and was present at the apprehension of the murderer of the Robertson family and the capture of Pomare's pa (1845).

In 1846 Kemp relieved Dr Shortland at Wellington, and as Native Secretary was present at the capture of Te Rauparaha, prevented the seizure of Major Last at the Hutt as a hostage, and assisted to organise the friendlies under Wi Tako (q.v.). He was with Sir William Fox when he fixed the site of Picton, and in 1847 traversed Wellington province collecting statistics for the blue book. In 1848 he carried through the Ngai-Tahu purchase in the South Island.

About this time Kemp translated into Maori *Robinson Crusoe*, *The Pilgrim's Progress* and *Whately's Organisation of Labour*. The first two were popular and were soon sold out. He also published on his own account *First Step to Maori Conversation* (which ran to three editions).

In 1849, having been appointed a justice of the peace, he accompanied Bell in the fruitless effort to purchase the Wairarapa block. Next year he negotiated the purchase of the Remuera block at Auckland for £5,000 (with an eventual profit to the treasury of £27,000). In 1851 Kemp was district commissioner for the purchase of native lands in the north, and later civil commissioner and resident magistrate in Auckland, district land officer and inspector of native schools. After serving in that capacity for 10 years he resigned. In association with Paora Tuhaere and Te Wheoro, Kemp succeeded in opening up communication with the King tribes and obtaining the appointment of Mair as magistrate at Alexandra. After his retirement he was employed for five years by the Auckland provincial government on native duties. He died on 24 Oct 1901.

Kemp married Maria Williams, daughter of J. A. Wilson (q.v.). She died on 21 Jan 1889. *N.M. Gaz.*, 1841, p. 129; *App. H.R.*, 1891, ii G7; Hocken; Kemp, in *N.Z. Herald*, 1901 (9, 16, 23, 30 Mar, 6 Apr); *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Oct 1901.

KEMP, JAMES (1798-1872) came from Wymondham, Norfolk. A smith by trade, he was

KEMPTHORNE

selected by the C.M.S. to proceed to New Zealand with the Rev J. G. Butler (1819). He sailed in the convict ship *Baring* to Sydney, and with Marsden in the *General Gates* to Bay of Islands, where they arrived on 29 Jul 1819. The Kemps were stationed at Keri Keri, where he helped to build the school and remained as smith and storekeeper. He also taught in the school and at one time had 200 natives under instruction.

Kemp was a zealous and high principled man; Marsden more than once praised him as 'a missionary of the right sort and the couple as very choice people.' He served until 1852, when he severed his connection with the mission. He died on 21 Feb 1872 (his wife Charlotte having predeceased him by 12 years). Kemp's wooden house at Keri Keri, built in 1819, is still occupied by his family.

Marsden, *L. and I.*, and *Lieutenants*; Stock; Kemp letters in Hocken Library; Williams papers; *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Feb 1872.

KEMPTHORNH, JOHN PRATT (1849-1931) was the son of Sampson Kempthorne, and was born at Auckland. Educated at the Grammar School under Dr Kinder (q.v.), he settled at Nelson (1868) and at the age of 20 became a theological student at Bishopdale (Nelson). In 1873 he accompanied Bishop Suter to England and, having passed first, he was the gospeller at his ordination (by the Bishop of Canterbury) on 21 Sep.

Kempthorne was curate of Stoke (1874-76); became a priest in 1876, and was appointed curate of All Saints, Nelson, and headmaster of the Bishop's school. In 1878 he was appointed vicar of Reefton, and married Mary Louisa, daughter of Dr L. Boor. In 1880 he became vicar of Trinity, Greymouth, and he built the new church before being appointed to the Cathedral church at Nelson (1885). In 1916 he was elected a canon, and appointed vicar of Brightwater and Archdeacon of Waimea. He retired in 1926 and died on 18 Sep 1931.

Kempthorne was closely associated with all diocesan activities, and for 30 years was commissary of the bishop. For many years he was president of the Harmonic Society. He left a widow and a large family, three of his sons being in holy orders. He was a grandson of the Rev Josiah Pratt, secretary of the C.M.S. (1802-

KENDALL

23). His son, LEONARD STANLEY (1886-) became Bishop in Polynesia (1923).

Williams Papers; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1924; *Nelson Gazette*, 1 Oct 1931; *New Zealander*, 11 May 1864; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 5 Oct 1926.

KEMPTHORNE, SAMPSON (1809-73) arrived in Auckland in 1842 by the *St George*, bringing a number of farming settlers, and made a livelihood farming near St John's college and surveying. In 1849 he was nominated to the Legislative Council of New Ulster. He died on 14 Nov 1873. Kempthorne married (1838) Marianne, daughter of the Rev Josiah Pratt (1768-1844). She died on 24 Sep 1884.

KENANA, RUA, or HEPETIPA (1869-1937) was born in Maungapohatu in the Urewera Country, and as a young man worked on sheep stations on the East Coast. Not of chiefly rank, but possessing a strong personality and a gift of oratory, he returned to the isolation of the Urewera country to present his version of pakeha learning, and soon began to demand recognition as leader and prophet. Sir Joseph Ward, intervening in the internal tribal rivalry in 1905, supported the hereditary chief, but Rua's power and influence continued to increase. He established a farming settlement at Maungapohatu, and a trading station. As priest of his new religion, Rua wore his hair long, took seven wives—the number prescribed, as he claimed, by holy writ—and built a large temple. In 1910 he was arrested and fined for selling liquor to natives. Charged again with the same offence in 1916, he resisted arrest and in the struggle several men were killed. After a trial which lasted 47 days, Rua was sentenced to a year's imprisonment in Auckland. On his return home he continued to exercise a considerable influence over his followers, who regarded him as divine. On his death (21 Feb 1937) hundreds of Maori gathered at Matahi for the tangi, to be disillusioned when on the third day his prophecy that he would rise from the dead was not fulfilled. Rua had during his lifetime 12 wives, and more than 70 children.

*The Dominion*, 24 Feb (p), 5 Mar, 28 Apr 1937; *Evening Post*, 25 Feb 1937 (p); *N.z. Herald*, 4 Apr 1916 (p); *The Press*, 16 Jan 1919.

KENDALL, THOMAS (1778-1832) was born at North Thoresby, Lincolnshire, on 13 Dec

1778. Educated in the parish school, he was afterwards engaged teaching privately in a home near his birthplace. Later he was with a family which brought him under a strong religious influence and first turned his thoughts towards the church as a profession. While here he was interested in agriculture, and worked for two years a small farm of 15 acres. Having married, he returned to his native village, and endeavoured to make a livelihood as a linen draper and grocer. A speculation in hops drew him to London, where he spent some years as a school teacher and became associated with religious organisations. His enthusiasm for the evangelical movement in the Church of England brought him in touch with the Church Missionary Society, to which he was highly recommended during Marsden's visit to England in 1809. The committee approved of him, but considered he should further qualify himself before entering the mission field. It was consequently not until 1813 that he sailed for Australia in the transport *Earl Spencer*. Kendall and his wife acted as schoolmaster and schoolmistress on board, and in consideration of remaining three years in the Colony were to receive the customary land grant.

When Marsden purchased the *Active* (in 1814), Kendall was free from his school duties and able to embark upon the first missionary voyage to New Zealand. He completely fulfilled Marsden's instructions and hopes, and prepared to accompany him to Bay of Islands, leaving his two daughters in Sydney. Prior to sailing he was gazetted a justice of the peace at Bay of Islands. Marsden established the mission at Rangihoua, Kendall being in charge, with John King and William Hall as assistants. The basis of the mission was to give instruction in European arts and crafts. Kendall was keenly interested in the Maori language, and suggested to the Society (1815) the propriety of sending out some person of talent who could assist in writing it down. His little volume *A Korao no New Zealand; The New Zealander's First Book* (published in 1815), was of great assistance to Professor Lee in compiling his Maori grammar. In 1816 Kendall opened a school at Rangihoua, at which in a few weeks 60 native pupils were receiving instruction. Already, however, there were signs of dissension amongst the missionaries. Kendall being a layman, his

colleagues refused to acknowledge the authority vested in him by Marsden or the Society. Lack of discipline on the one hand, and constant alarms from warring tribes on the other, militated seriously against the success of the mission. The school closed after two years for lack of support; and the missionaries, forbidden to trade with the natives on their own account, were often in serious want. Marsden was vexed by many complaints which the missionaries made against each other. Though there were already signs of moral deterioration in Kendall's ardent and overbearing character, Marsden continued to repose confidence in him. In 1819, when he brought to Bay of Islands the Rev J. G. Butler, the first ordained minister for the mission in New Zealand, Marsden insisted that the missionaries should bind themselves not to engage in private trading. Before long Kendall was not only openly selling muskets to the natives, but he refused to acknowledge the authority of either Butler or the committee of missionaries.

Still interested in his Maori studies, he suddenly determined to go to England, taking with him his protector, Hongi, and Waikato to assist in putting the Maori language into writing. Hongi's private wish was to obtain muskets and other weapons with which to avenge himself upon the Ngati-Whatua and the Ngati-Paoa. Against the advice of both Marsden and the committee, Kendall sailed in the *New Zealander* (2 Mar 1820), leaving his wife and large family to care for themselves. The Society strongly censured him for leaving New Zealand without permission and for bringing Maori chiefs to England. It adjured Kendall to eschew private trading; to devote his whole time henceforth to the work of the mission; to extend cultivations and stock-raising, and to govern the affairs of the mission through quarterly meetings of the missionaries, schoolmasters and lay settlers, each taking the chair in rotation. Kendall's ambition of being ordained was gratified. The party returned to Australia in the transport *Speke*, and reached Bay of Islands in the *Westmoreland* (II Jul 1821).

Before long not only was Kendall selling muskets to the natives, but he vigorously defended his action against the remonstrances of Marsden. Charges of immoral living were now made and admitted, and Marsden wrote sus-

pending Kendall from the service of the mission. He arrived in person with Henry Williams (q.v.) in 1823, and conveyed the decision of the Society dismissing Kendall from its service. He refused to allow the erring missionary to remain in New Zealand, though he had the protection of Hongi. Kendall gained the day through the wreck of the *Brampton* as she was leaving the Bay in Sep. In Mar 1823 he removed to Kororareka, and later took up his residence under the protection of Pomare at Matahui. Living practically as a Maori, he continued his study of the language and customs and corresponded intermittently with Lee and with the Missionary Society.

In Feb 1825, seeking change, Kendall sailed with his family by the *St Patrick* for Valparaiso, where he spent two years as clergyman and schoolmaster in the service of the English community. In Jun 1827 he returned to New South Wales in the ship *Elizabeth* and received from Governor Darling (in consideration of his service in New Zealand) a grant of 1,280 acres of land at Ulladulla, in the southern district. There he engaged in the timber trade, for which he purchased a small vessel and commanded it himself. She overturned in a squall at Shoalhaven in Sep 1832 and he was drowned. His soil Basil, who was in the business with him, had served for some years in the Chilian and Brazilian navies under Lord Dundonald. He was the father of Henry Clarence Kendall (1841-82), the Australian poet.

Marsden, *L. and J.*, and *Lieuts.*; Ramsden; S. P. Smith; Carleton; Hocken, in *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*, v, 33.

KENNAWAY, SIR WALTER (1835-1920) a native of Exeter, was a son of William Kennaway, of a well-known Devonshire family. When his education was finished (at the Mount Radford school, Exmouth), his father purchased land orders in the proposed Canterbury settlement for the three brothers (Walter, Laurence and John).

Walter arrived in Lyttelton in the ship *Callterbury* in Oct 1851, and they at once took up a small farm in the Heathcote valley, which was worked by John for many years. In company with F. W. Delamain, Laurence and Walter squatted in 1854 on the Alford run, in the forks of the Ashburton. They claimed 50,000 acres,

but were eventually awarded 20,000. The partnership with Delamain was dissolved in 1860, and the Kennaways took up the Opawa and Rollesby runs. Later they had a run farther south, with out-station at Burke's Pass, where they endured the hardships of early settlers in Canterbury. Some of their experiences are recounted in Laurence Kennaway's book *Crusts* (published after his return to England in 1874). When they took up the Burke's Pass place they had to go 180 miles in order to get clean sheep, and had then to drive them by a circuitous route along the foothills in order to avoid scab-infected country. Walter was one of the first to drive a bullock wagon through Burke's Pass.

Kennaway made an attempt in 1865 to get into the Provincial Council (for Geraldine), but was defeated by William Gosling by II votes to 5. Two years later he was elected to the Provincial Council for Mount Cook. This he represented 1867-70, and Seadown 1870-74. He was a member of Hall's executive in 1870 and 1871, and in 1871 he formed an executive which held office until the first week of 1874. Kennaway came into office as the result of a motion he moved in the interests of the outdistricts, which he believed were not being fairly treated in the expenditure of public moneys. Once his administration was defeated by a single vote, but the mover was taken into the executive, which then carried on. As secretary for public works, Kennaway had control of the construction of railways in Canterbury under the Vogel development policy, and the letting of the contract for harbour improvement at Lyttelton. He was eventually defeated on a proposal of his government to introduce a general manager of railways from England. He resigned from the Council.

Kennaway had some part in drafting the Canterbury education ordinance. This established a non-sectarian system which provided that on one day in each week teachers of religion could enter the schools to teach the Bible to their own pupils. He was also responsible for setting aside over 300,000 acres of public lands as endowments for Canterbury College, the School of Agriculture and other institutions. He was a governor of Canterbury College (1873-74) and for some years commissioner of crown lands.

In 1874 Kennaway accepted the post of sec-

## KENNEDY

retary to the Agent-general in London, which he filled for the next 31 years under Featherston, Vogel, Bell and Reeves. In 1886 he was a commissioner for the Colonial and Indian Exhibition in London. In 1889, for his services in connection with the exhibition in Paris, he was made an officer of the French Academy. In 1891 he received the C.M.G.

Kennaway retired in 1909, and in that year was knighted. He died on 24 Aug 1920. He married (1864) Alicia, daughter of J. E. Jones. The Kennaway brothers about 1874 returned to live in Devon.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Acland; Cox; Kennaway, *op. cit.*; *N.Z. Times*, 29 Apr 1909; *The Press*, 13 Nov 1909, 21 Jun 1930 (p).

KENNEDY, ALEXANDER, who was of Scots birth, came to New Zealand from Sydney in the *Nimrod* (1840) as manager of the Banking Company established at Bay of Islands and later managed the Auckland branch (1841-45). He then became manager of the Union Bank of Australia at Auckland, of which he had charge until 1861. In that year Kennedy was associated with the flotation of the New Zealand Bank (the Bank of New Zealand). The first office was opened at Auckland on 16 Oct, followed by that at New Plymouth (18 Nov); Dunedin (2 Dec) and Wellington (15 Jan 1862). Kennedy was appointed (15 Jul 1861) inspector and general manager. He retired from the Bank in 1869 and went to England. While in London in 1873 he published an interesting book of reminiscences of *New Zealand* and in 1885 *A Visit to Lake Rota-aim*. In 1845 Kennedy took his turn of duty digging trenches for the defence of Auckland and he was a member of the Legislative Council of New Zealand (1846-47) and of New Ulster (1848). He published in 1852 *Notes of a Short Tour into the Interior* made by canoe on the Waikato and Waipa rivers.

*Parltry Record*; Kennedy, *op. cit.*; *Wellington Independent*, 20 Dec 1861.

KENNEDY, ALEXANDER (?-1887) was the son of a Presbyterian minister of Jura and Colonsay, in Argyllshire. He settled in Napier in the early fifties and was a partner in the mercantile firm of Watt, Kennedy and Watt. Later he established the firm of Routledge, Kennedy and Co. Kennedy sat in the Provincial Council

## KENNEDY

for Napier Town from 1863-75, and was a member of the executive (1865, 1867 and 1869).

KENNEDY, DAVID (1864-1936), who was born in Lyttelton, was educated at St Mary's College, Dundalk, Ireland, and at University College, Dublin, at Barcelona, and at the Gregorian University in Rome (qualifying D.D.). Ordained in 1891, he was appointed to the Marist seminary at Meeanee, Hawkes Bay. This he equipped as an official meteorological station, and he was made a fellow of the Royal Astronomical and Meteorological Societies. In 1909 he was appointed rector of St Patrick's College, Wellington. In 1914 he represented New Zealand at the general chapter of the Marist order, and after a second term at the seminary he was appointed to the parish of Temuka. Kennedy was first rector of novitiate house at Highden, Palmerston North, till 1928, when he was called to be provincial of the order in Australasia. In 1936 he was provincial procurator. He died at Palmerston North on 10 Mar 1936.

*St Patrick's College 1885-1935* (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post*, 10 Mar 1936 (p); Eileen Duggan in *The Dominion*, 11 Mar 1936.

KENNEDY, JOSEPH BOND (1841-1913) was born at Kennedy's Bay, Auckland. His father, John Kennedy, after whom the bay was named, came to New Zealand in the *Buffalo* and loaded that vessel and the *Pelorus* with spars for the Admiralty. He was murdered in 1843. John was brought up by his Maori mother. When quite young he went to Auckland and shipped as a seaman. Before he had attained his majority he was in command of a small vessel trading to Melbourne. He first visited Poverty Bay in 1851 in the *Fly*, and was employed for some years by Captain Read in the coasting trade, commanding the *Tawera* and the *Julius Vogel*. In 1874 he was appointed harbour-master of Gisborne. In 1892 he resigned to commence a lightering business, which expanded into the prosperous firm of Kennedy and Co. He married first (1867) a half-caste woman of the Opotiki tribe. Kennedy died on 19 Jun 1913.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924.

KENNEDY, MARTIN (1836-1916) was born in Ireland, and emigrated to Australia in 1860.

## KENNY

After spending 12 months on the diggings in Victoria, he came to Otago, and with his brothers was in business in Queenstown till 1865, when he moved to the West Coast. He was a merchant in Greymouth for 20 years. Meanwhile he had been interested in goldmining, and had acquired a share in the colliery at Brunnerton (1874). The coal business absorbed the whole of his time from 1880, and he became sole proprietor of the mine and the steam colliers. In 1888 he amalgamated his interest in the Grey Valley Coal Co. and sold the ships to the Union Steamship Co.; and in 1889 he moved to Wellington and became managing director of the Staples Brewery Co.

Kennedy contested the superintendency of Westland in 1874 (Bonar, 534; Kennedy, 383; J. White, 223; C. Hoos, 50). He was chairman of the Greymouth harbour board from 1885 and a member of the Westland county council. He was M.H.R. for Grey Valley (1876-78). Kennedy was a director of the Bank of New Zealand for many years, representing the shareholders from the time of the reconstruction till his death (on 25 Aug 1916). He was a strong supporter of the Roman Catholic church, and endowed the Kennedy scholarships at St Patrick's College. He was a knight of St Gregory.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 29 Jun 1917; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Beauchamp; *N.Z. Times*, 26 Aug 1916.

KENNY, COURTENAY WILLIAM AYLMEY THOMAS (1839-1905) was born in Burma, the son of the commandant of Madras presidency. Educated at Harrow and intended for the army, he joined with the 88th (Connaught Rangers) for the Crimea. He was severely wounded in one of the early engagements, and was invalided home. Promoted captain, he came to New Zealand to convalesce and, his regiment having been ordered to India, he resigned his commission and came to Wellington (1858). For many years he had a sheep farm at The Rocks, Queen Charlotte Sound.

Kenny was one of the oldest justices of the peace, and was commissioner of crown lands for Marlborough (1862-65), M.P.C. for Picton (1865-66); deputy-superintendent of the province in 1865 and M.H.R. for Picton (1868-81). He was called to the Legislative Council in 1885, and remained a member till his death (on 12 Dec 1905).

## KENRICK

*N.Z.P.D.*, 28 Jun 1906; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *Marlborough Express*, 12 Dec 1905. Portrait: Parliament House.

KENNY, WILLIAM HENRY (1811-80) was the son of Major W. C. Kenny, of the 73rd Regiment (Black Watch). He got his ensigncy in the same regiment in 1828. (Lieut. 1832; capt. 1841.) He served in the Mediterranean and in the Canadian rebellion, being present at the engagements at St Eustache, Napierville and elsewhere.

Returning to England, he served in the northern district and in Wales during the Chartist troubles. In 1843 he became staff officer of Pensioners at Sheffield. In 1847 he came to New Zealand in the *Ramillies* with the first detachment of the New Zealand Fencibles, and was gazetted major in the militia (Aug 1849) and resident magistrate. (Brevet-major, 1854; brevet lieut.-colonel 1859; major unattached 1861.) He received the thanks of the Government for his prompt disposal of the force for the protection of the City. When the Waikato war broke out he was in command of the Auckland garrison, then reinforced by sailors from the *Iris*, recruits for the 65th Regiment, and artillery and engineer details, and later by two companies of the 40th Regiment and three of the 65th. Being relieved by Colonel Carey, of the 18th Regiment, he sold out (Apr 1863) with the rank of regimental major and brevet lieut.-colonel, and was appointed quartermaster-general to the New Zealand forces on the staff of Maj.-General Galloway (1863-64). In 1867 he was promoted colonel in the militia, and appointed inspector of volunteers for the North Island. He resided most of his life at Otahuhu.

Kenny was a member of the Legislative Council from 1853 until his death (17 Aug 1880). His widow died on 25 Jun 1889, aged 74.

War Office records; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1853-80; Gudgeon (p); *N.Z. Times*, 10 Sep 1880; *N.Z. Herald*, 18 Aug 1880. Portrait: Parliament House.

KENRICK, HARRY (1832-86) was born in Denbighshire, Wales, and educated privately in England. As a young man he tried his fortune on the Australian gold fields, where he was present at the Eureka stockade affair. He returned to England, and in 1861 came to New Zealand and settled on new country in Canterbury, where he started a sawmill. He was at

## KENSINGTON

Waimea, Nelson, when he was appointed clerk of court at Greymouth (1865). He was clerk of the warden's court on the West Coast, and was afterwards resident magistrate there (1877), and at Gisborne, and native land trust commissioner.

In 1879 he was appointed to succeed Fraser as warden and resident magistrate on the Thames goldfield. There he adopted a new policy as regards pegging out and registration of claims. The Te Aroha goldfield, reported on 11 Sep 1880, was declared open by Kenrick on 25 Nov, when 20 natives and 850 Europeans took out licenses. It was regarded as a model goldfield. His administration was marked by high integrity and a remarkable knowledge of the law and regulations affecting goldmining. He was frequently consulted in the drafting of new laws. When he died (31 Jul 1886) a fine memorial was erected over his grave by the business men and miners of the field.

W. G. K. Kenrick (information); Weston; *Te Aroha, the Fortunate Valley* (p) (1930); *Thames Advertiser*, 2 Aug 1886.

**KENSINGTON, WILLIAM CHARLES** (1845-1922) was born at Criccieth, Wales, the son of Charles J. W. Kensington. He was educated at Grosvenor school, Bath, and King's school, Bruton, Somerset. He served in the campaigns on the East Coast in 1863 and 1864, and was gazetted ensign in the 1st battalion militia in 1865. Having joined the New Zealand government service in 1863 as a survey cadet in Wai-kato, and passed his examinations in 1866, he was engaged as an inspector of surveys under the native land act and a special commissioner to investigate disputes in Hawkes Bay. In 1871 he was deputy-inspector of surveys, and in 1876 chief draughtsman in the Auckland office. In 1902 he was appointed Under-secretary for Crown Lands. He inaugurated the land drainage branch and had control of the afforestation branch. He retired in 1912, having been awarded the I.S.O. in 1909.

Kensington married (1867) Emily (d. 1869), daughter of G. Owen Ormsby; and (1873) Amy (d. 1906), daughter of Colonel W. H. Kenny. He died on 20 Aug 1922.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Jourdain (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 31 Dec 1901; *The Dominion*, 21 Aug 1922.

## KERR

**KEOGH, AUGUSTINE** (1858-1917) was born in Dublin and educated in Marist colleges there, in Dundalk, and in France. He graduated with honours at the Royal University of Ireland, made his religious profession in 1879, and was ordained in 1883. Possessing great literary and classical accomplishments, he became a member of the teaching staff of his old school, St Mary's, Dundalk, of which he became rector at an unusually early age.

In 1899 a breakdown in health necessitated a year's rest, after which Keogh was appointed rector of St Patrick's College, Wellington (1901). A strong individualist, he left an impress on the life of the college and on the tone and the discipline of the boys. He established the cadet corps and the school infirmary and founded San Antonio at Miramar. He was the author of the college song, *Blue and White*. Dr Keogh retired in 1909, and was afterwards parish priest at Hastings. He died in 1917.

*St Patrick's College*, 1885-1935 (p).

**KERR, JAMES** (1834-1901) was born in Dumfriesshire, Scotland, and served his time on the *Dumfriesshire and Galloway Herald*, afterwards working for two years on the *Dumfriesshire Courier*. He emigrated to Melbourne in 1858, visited the Owens diggings, and was employed for three years on the *Melbourne Age* (George Fisher, q.v., being a fellow employee). In 1861 he came to Otago, and he was employed by the *Otago Daily Times* for four years. Then, with Arnot and Keogh, he founded the *Grey River Advertiser* (1865), which eventually became a limited liability company. Kerr was a member of the borough council, and a member and chairman of the harbour board and the education board. He was a director of the Gas Co. and a trustee of the racecourse. As a freemason he was deputy district grandmaster.

Called to the Legislative Council in 1892 by the Ballance government, he was an active member until his death (on 25 Aug 1901).

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *N.Z.P.D.*, 26 Aug 1901; *N.Z. Times*, 17 Oct 1892; *Grey River Argus*, 26 Aug 1901. Portrait: Parliament House.

**KERR, JOHN** (1830-98) was born in the south of Scotland and came to Nelson with his parents in the *Fifeshire* (1842). His father, John Kerr (1801-63) was an agricultural labourer and, having taken up a farm at Waimea West,

## KETTLE

used one of the first ploughs in the settlement (25 May 1842). He represented Waimea West in the Provincial Council (1857-63).

After leaving school, the son assisted on the farm, but eventually took service in the Government brig. From this he settled at Port Undenvood and engaged in whaling there and at Tory channel. Some years later he opened a store. Kerr also represented Waimea West in the Provincial Council (1873-75) and later was M.H.R. for Waimea (1885-87) and for Motueka (1887-90). He had many interests in sawmilling and landowning, was part owner of the Tamdale station, and owned the Lake run at Rotoiti, where he died on 3 May 1898.

*The Colonist*, 10 May 1898.

**KETTLE, CHARLES HENRY** (1820-62) was born at Sandwich, Kent, received a good education, and was mathematics master at Faversham school in his native county when he decided to emigrate to New Zealand. He was a passenger by the *Oriental*, which reached Port Nicholson on 31 Jan 1840. Among his fellow-passengers were E. Betts Hopper, F. A. Molesworth and H. W. Petre, who had a quantity of machinery and merchandise and went into business together as millwrights and engineers on the banks of the Hutt river. Kettle was employed by them as a clerk until Sep 1840, when Betts Hopper lost his life in a boating accident.

Thrown on his own resources, Kettle joined Mein Smith's survey staff, where his mathematical knowledge was soon of marked assistance. He was appointed an assistant surveyor, and was in charge of the party which opened up the Ohariu valley in 1841. For two years he was engaged in explorations and surveys in Porirua, Port Nicholson, and Upper Hutt. In May 1842, with Alfred Wills, Kettle made an adventurous journey round the Tararua mountains, exploring at the same time a good deal of the Rimutakas. They left Karekare, near Foxton, the headquarters of the survey staff, on 5 May, proceeded up the river and reached the gorge on the 11th. Passing through to the eastern side of the ranges, they turned south through thick bush into the Wairapa valley. After two attempts to find a passage from Wairapa lake to the Hutt valley, they eventually succeeded and reached Wellington on 8 Jun, having traversed a considerable tract of coun-

## KETTLE

try not previously crossed by white men.

The surveys were suspended owing to the financial difficulties of the Company, and Kettle in 1843 returned to England by the *Brougham*. He arrived to find the New Edinburgh scheme still being talked about, and threw himself into it with enthusiasm. With George Rennie he paid a visit to Edinburgh to study the lay-out of the old town, with a view to the new Edinburgh having the advantage of the good points of the old. When eventually the operations of the Company were resumed, Kettle was appointed surveyor and civil engineer for a period of three years at £400 a year, specially to carry out the surveys for New Edinburgh. Before leaving he married Amelia Omer (Dover). They took their passage in the *Mary Catherine*, and reached Wellington on 2 Feb 1846.

Kettle collected a staff in Wellington, and three weeks after his arrival there he landed at Koputai, near Otago heads. His first work was to survey the town of Port Chalmers and to sound the harbour for the benefit of the expected shipping. Then he undertook a journey on foot in south Otago through the Taieri and Tokomairiro plains as far as the Nuggets, with the object of dividing into suitable survey contracts the whole of the Otago block. This work having been let out to various parties, he returned to Dunedin and started to layout the future city. At the end of 1846 he brought his house up to the site of the new town.

When the first ships arrived, Kettle was present to welcome them and to show the leaders the layout of their town. As chief surveyor for the Company, he came into collision with Cargill over the custody of the land office and documents. Kettle decided to settle in Otago. He took part in the meeting in 1851 which called upon Valpy to decline nomination to the Legislative Council. He was one of the first four magistrates of the province, and as such attended all of the meetings which had to decide on public works and similar undertakings. During 1851 Kettle made two long explorations in the interior to inspect lands for settlement west of the Otago block. He had now been appointed a government surveyor, a position which he held until 1854. During the last three years he was also deputy registrar of deeds for the province. Kettle then selected land in the south Otago district, from the top

## KIDD

of the KaHuku ranges to the Clutha, and established his homestead in 1854 at Kaihiku bush, with a woolshed of rough timber thatched by the natives. He was an exemplary employer, and many farmers well-known in later years commenced in his service. He went in for merino sheep, and in 1855 had a flock of 2,000. He is sometimes credited with having been the first to sow gorse and broom for live hedges.

Kettle gave up farming in 1860 and returned to live in Dunedin. He stood for a Dunedin seat in the Provincial Council, but received only 18 votes. In the following year he was elected to represent Bruce in the House of Representatives. In 1862 Kettle was appointed provincial auditor. He died on 5 Jun 1862, a young man who would undoubtedly have taken a high position in the province. Hocken says that he and Strode were generally to be found on public questions in opposition to the general body of the settlers. They were not Scots; they were not of the body of emigrants; they were both nominated officials of the general Government. Kettle was a man of high principle and a steady, earnest, and practical Christian: He took a keen interest in social movements, and especially in the Young Men's Christian Association, of which he was a founder and some time president. In 1855 he led the young temperance movement of Otago, being elected honorary secretary of the Otago Maine Law League. He was a good cricketer. (See I. L. MACASSEY and SIR JOHN ROBERTS.)

N.Z.C. reports; G.B.O.P., 1844/556; *Otago p.e. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.* iv (p); *Otago Journal*; Hocken; Ward; J. A. Thomson; E. J. Wakefield; *Otago Daily Times*, 6 Jun 1862, 4 Apr 1930 (p).

KIDD, ALFRED (1851-1917) was born at Hounslow Heath. He arrived in Auckland at the age of 13, and after working on a farm at Mangere for three years he settled at Thames for seven years. He then became providore to the Waikato Steam Navigation Co. In 1875 he moved to Auckland, and became landlord of the Commercial hotel, which he ran for 20 years. He was president of the licensed vic-tuallers' association.

Kidd served on the City Council (1885-88 and from 1891) and was mayor of Auckland in 1901. He was a governor of the Auckland Grammar School, chairman of the Auckland

## KIDSON

harbour board and the Aka Aka drainage board and a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. He was one of the founders of the Druids order in Auckland, of the masonic grand lodge of New Zealand and the united friendly societies' dispensary. He was in Parliament for City of Auckland (1902-05) and for Auckland Central (1905-08), and acted as senior Government whip under the Seddon and Ward administrations. He was president of the Auckland Racing club and owned several successful horses (notably St Hippo). Kidd died on 25 Aug 1917.

*N.z.P.D.*, 29 Aug 1917; *Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Aug 1917. Portrait: Parliament House.

KIDD, ROBERT BOYD (1818-94) was born in northern Ireland and educated at Enniskillen school, from which he took a scholarship to Trinity College, Dublin. There he obtained a first exhibitionership, and he was ordained with a view to being elected a fellow of the University. While rector of Butley, Suffolk (1856) he published a *Delineation of the Primary Principles of Reasoning*, on the reading of which Dr Whately wrote that he did not know a superior logician at that time:

Precluded by ill-health from accepting a professorship at Queen's University, he arrived in Auckland in 1863. Kidd became editor of the *New Zealander* later in the year and acted until 1865. In company with Joseph N. Fowler he started a collegiate school in Auckland. From this he removed to Wesley College, where he taught classics and mathematics (1883) and finally became first headmaster of Auckland College and Grammar School. When the Grammar School was transferred to the old Albert barracks he became chief classical master and later registrar of the University College and secretary to the Grammar School governors. He was once a tutor at St John's College. He was a prominent freemason. His death occurred on 19 Jul 1894.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii; *N.z. Herald*, 20 Jul 1894.

KIDSON, EDWARD (1883-1939) was born at Bilston, England, came to New Zealand as a child with his father Charles Kidson, and commenced his education at Nelson College (1896-1900). He won a junior scholarship and a Sir George Grey scholarship, and proceeded to Canterbury College, where he graduated

## KILGOUR

(B.Sc. 1904; M.Sc. 1905; B.A. 1906; M.A. 1907; D.Sc. 1924). In 1905 he was appointed assistant magnetic observer at Christchurch under the Lands and Survey department. Three years later he joined the staff of the Carnegie Institution at Washington, and until 1914 worked on magnetic surveys in South America, Newfoundland, and Australia. In the war he served with the Royal Engineers (1915-18) forecasting and applying meteorology to gunnery at Salonika. (O.B.E.). He was then appointed to the Watheroo observatory in West Australia, and in 1921 became assistant director of the Commonwealth meteorological service. In 1927 he became director of the meteorological services in New Zealand, which during his administration developed rapidly to meet the increasing demands of aviation. Kidson presented at scientific conferences papers on his observations, and spent much time in the preparation of critical studies of the meteorological results of the Shackleton and Mawson Antarctic expeditions. He was a fellow of the Institute of Physics and of the Royal Society of New Zealand, and was in 1931 elected a member of the International Meteorological committee. Kidson married (1919) Isabel M. Dann. He died on 12 Jun 1939.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1932; *The Dominion and Evening Post*, 13 Jun 1939 (P).

KILGOUR, JAMES (1812-97) was born at Musselburgh, Scotland, educated at the grammar school there and Edinburgh University (where he graduated M.D. in 1838). Going to Melbourne (1839), he took up a run at Tar-rone, near Port Fairy, but lost his money on its being resumed, and was for some time agent of the colony in London. *Mter* practising in Victoria he came to New Zealand (1859), and practised at Nelson, Picton and Wellington, finally moving in 1869 to Thames. Kilgour was a justice of the peace, chairman of quarter sessions, mayor of Thames (1878), and first president of the School of Mines. In 1890 he went to reside in Parnell, where he died on 20 Sep 1897.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Weston; *N.Z. Herald*, 1 Oct 1897.

KINDER, JOHN (1819-1903) was born in London and educated at Cheam, Surrey, and Trinity College, Cambridge, where he gained a scholarship and graduated as a wrangler in 1842. He

## KING

took private pupils until proceeding M.A. (1845). While at Cambridge he took much interest in ecclesiastical architecture, and became a member of the committee of the Camden Society. In 1847 he was ordained to a curacy in East London, but was almost immediately appointed by the master and fellows of his College to be headmaster of Alleyne's Grammar School at Uttoxeter, Staffordshire. He was ordained priest in 1849.

In 1855 Kinder was chosen by Bishop Selwyn as headmaster of the proposed Auckland Grammar School. During the 17 years that he held that position, he acted as chaplain to the Auckland garrison and was successively assistant minister of St Barnabas, Parnell (five years), St Mark's, Remuera (three years) and St Andrew's, Epsom (seven years). At St Andrew's he raised funds to erect a pretty church from his own plans. When Bishop Cowie reopened St John's College in 1871, Kinder was appointed master, and in 1873 the degree of D.D. was conferred upon him by the Archbishop of Canterbury. Resigning the headmastership in 1880, he was appointed exantining chaplain. He retired a few years later. Kinder did much to improve the efficiency of the college, and to beautify the grounds. He installed windows commemorative of Selwyn, Patteson and Martin, and bequeathed his library to the College. He always opposed the removal of the college to Parnell, and eventually succeeded in getting it brought back to Tamaki. A fine scholar with a facile command of French and German, Kinder was a charming talker and an effective preacher. He published in 1901 a forcible pamphlet on the report of the synod commission on St John's. In his early years he came under the influence of Frederick Denison Maurice, the theologian, who was one of the founders, with Charles Kingsley, of the Christian Socialist movement.

Kinder married (1859) Marianne Celia (d. 1928), a daughter of Archdeacon A. N. Brown. He died on 5 Sep 1903.

Cowie; Purchas; Davis (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 7 Sep 1903.

KING, EDWARD (1825-65) was born in Sussex, England, and arrived in New Zealand in 1850. He began business as a general merchant in Auckland, and with the exception of nine months spent on the Victorian diggings he continued successfully until retiring in 1863,

## KING

On the outbreak of the Waikato war he was appointed superintendent of stores, but retired in Nov 1864. He was a director of the Auckland Bank and the Bank of New Zealand, and a trustee of the Auckland Savings Bank. He acted as secretary for the Auckland exhibit at the industrial exhibition in Otago, and for several land associations formed under the provincial ordinances of the early fifties. As a member of the Papakura association, he took part in developing the coal measures at Drury. King for many years rendered consistent public service. He helped to form several schools under the common schools ordinance (1869) and to found churches at Wairoa, Papakura and Drury. He was a churchwarden of St Matthew's, a member of the diocesan and general synods and secretary of the orphans' home. He helped to promote the Auckland horticultural society, of which he was secretary and treasurer, and also the acclimatisation society. King was a member of the Auckland Provincial Council for City of Auckland (1857-61) and for Auckland West (1861-65). He died on 27 Oct 1865.

*Southern Cross*, 28 Oct 1865.

KING, SIR (FREDERICK) TRUBY (1858-1938) was born at New Plymouth, a son of Thomas King (q.v.). Educated privately at New Plymouth, he proceeded to Edinburgh University, where he graduated M.B., C.M. (1886) and won the Eccles scholarship. He spent two years studying public health, after which he took his B.Sc. degree. King had experience at the Edinburgh and Glasgow hospitals and, having married Isabella Cockburn (d. 1927), daughter of Adam Millar, he returned to New Zealand (1888) and took the post of medical superintendent of the Wellington hospital. Appointed in the following year medical superintendent of Seacliff asylum, he spent many useful years there, not merely in his official duties, but engaged in farming and fruitgrowing and in the breeding of pigs and other farm animals. His researches at that time had a considerable bearing upon his subsequent discoveries in the realm of infant feeding and the nutrition of the human body. In 1894 he returned to England to study brain pathology and nervous and mental diseases, and he became a member of the Psychological Association.

Shortly after this he began to attend regu-

## KING

larly the agricultural conferences in New Zealand and to expound his eugenic theories to a wider audience. In 1905 he founded in Dunedin the Society for the Promotion of the Health of Women and Children (popularly known as the Plunket Society, from the name of its first patron, Lady Plunket). The society received a royal charter in 1916, when it became the Royal New Zealand Society for the Health of Women and Children. King wrote much on the subject of the Society's work in its early years, his chief publications being *The Feeding and Care of Baby*, *The Natural Feeding of Infants*, *The Expectant Mother* and *Baby's First Month*. These were very frequently reprinted. The propaganda and educational work of the society in a few years produced marked effects upon the infant death rate. In 1917 King was invited to undertake similar work in England and, in conjunction with Miss Patrick (q.v.), he established the Mothercraft training centre at Earl's Court. (C.M.G., 1917.) After the war he was attached as a child welfare expert to the inter-allied Red Cross conference and he visited Poland and Austria in the interests of the war victims relief committee.

In 1919 he introduced his system of infant feeding in Australia, and two years later he was appointed director of child welfare in New Zealand (in addition to the appointment of inspector-general of mental asylums). In 1924 he was on the committee to investigate mental degeneracy and sexual perversion, and he was on the prisons board (1925-27).

In 1925 King was created a knight bachelor. He retired in 1927, and died on 10 Feb 1938, when his remains were accorded a state funeral. Lady King for many years wrote child welfare notes under the name of 'Hygeia.'

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Evening Post*, 10 Feb 1938; *The Dominion*, 11 Feb (p).

KING, HENRY (1783-1874) was born at Torquay on 7 Apr 1783, and at the age of 12 entered the Royal Navy as a midshipman in the *Namur*, in which he served five years. He was present at the battle of St Vincent, distinguished himself in many boat actions and, having been promoted third lieutenant, transferred to the *Canopus*. He served also in the *Ambuscade* and the *Unite*, from which he was invalided with a broken leg due to the fall of a topsail tie. On

## KING

his recovery he was appointed first lieutenant in the *Seahorse*, in which he served against the Americans on the Potomac and at the taking of Alexandria. For his services in convoying a merchant fleet he was promoted commander. Admiral Cochrane, in recommending him, said that King rose from his sickbed while the ship was passing the hostile batteries and personally laid the first two guns, each of which disabled an enemy gun.

Retiring from active service on peace being proclaimed, King took employment as a barge-master on the Bude and Holsworthy canal. Many years later he became interested in the Plymouth 'Company for the settlement of Taranaki and, accepting the position of chief commissioner, he sailed in the *Amelia Thompson*, arriving on 3 Sep 1841. He was at once gazetted police magistrate, but a few months later (following the absorption of the Plymouth Company) he was superseded as commissioner by Captain Liardet. He then, in company with George Cutfield, settled on his Brooklands section, bringing cattle from Australia in the *Jupiter*.

In 1848 he was appointed resident magistrate. The European population of Taranaki gave him little trouble, but the native question always called for tact and discretion. In 1852, having completed 10 years on the bench, King retired, and lived quietly at Brooklands until the outbreak of the war in 1860 obliged him to withdraw to New Plymouth. He died on 6 Jun 1874.

Wells; *Taranaki Herald*, 8 Jun 1874.

KING, JOHN (1787-1854) was born at Swerford, Oxfordshire, and brought up as a shoemaker. He was engaged at this trade at Nether Worton, near Banbury, when Samuel Marsden visited England in 1809 in search of artisans to form the first mission to New Zealand. King entered the service of the Church Missionary Society, and took lessons in flax-dressing and twine-spinning with a view to introducing those crafts amongst the Maori. Sailing in the *Ann* with Marsden, he formed a close friendship with Ruatara (q.v.). King spent some years at Parramatta with Marsden before the opportunity occurred of proceeding to New Zealand. He married Hannah, daughter of Thomas Hansen (q.v.), captain of the *Active*, and they pro-

## KING

ceeded to New Zealand in Jan 1815 and settled at Rangihoua, Bay of Islands. King's duty was to act as catechist for the district and teach the people something of agriculture and making lines. His relations with Kendall were not pleasant. In 1819 they visited Hokianga together, being the first whites to do so. King rendered faithful service until his death (on 6 May 1854). "Mrs King died on 27 Nov 1851.

Marsden, *L. and j.*, and *Lieutenants*; Ramsden; Stock; *New Zealander* (Auckland), 27 May 1854.

KING, JOHN (1810-62), an English solicitor, arrived in Wellington in 1844. He took little part in public life, but was a member of the Church of England education society and the Mechanics' Institute. After being defeated for the Provincial Council in 1855 he was elected for Wellington City in 1857 and sat till 1861. He died on 5 Jun 1862.

KING, NEWTON (1856-1926), second son of Thomas King (q.v.) and brother of Sir Truby King, was born in New Plymouth and educated there at Crompton's private school. He began his career as clerk in the firm of Webster Brothers, and in 1879 established his own business as merchant and auctioneer. His activities as a stock and station agent eventually spread all over Taranaki. In many enterprises he was associated with Richard Cock (1851-1936, who was twice mayor of New Plymouth). They formed together the Crown Dairy Co., which in 1920 became Newton King, Limited. He was chairman of the New Plymouth Sash and Door Co. (1893-1926), and of the Ridd Machine-milking Co. (1909-26); a director of the Land and Building society (1902); president of the Taranaki Jockey club, the Agricultural society (1903), the chamber of commerce; and a member of the New Plymouth harbour board.

In his youth King represented the province in football and was a member of the Taranaki rifle volunteers. He married Mary, daughter of Dr George St George. He died on 26 Jul 1927.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; Philpott (p); *Evening Post*, 27 Jul 1927.

KING, THOMAS (1821-93) was born in London, educated at a commercial school, and entered the office of a member of the coal exchange. He had a good grip of business, and at

## KING

the age of 18 was practically in charge of the office but, his health being delicate, he decided to emigrate to New Zealand. Having purchased two Taranaki sections, he sailed with his friend R. Chilman (whose sister Mary he married in 1846) in the *William Bryan*, arriving in Mar 1841.

King sold his goods to advantage, took employment at various trades, and in 1843 commenced an importing business. In company with Dorset he chartered the 12-ton schooner *Carbon*, which they operated in the coastal trade between Nelson, Wellington, New Plymouth and Manukau. After importing Hour from Australia in 1844, King in the following year exported about 150 tons of Taranaki Hour to various ports.

In 1848 he took up land at Mangorei, where in 1852 he was visited by Lord Robert Cecil (afterwards Lord Salisbury). He was elected M.H.R. for Grey and Bell (1853-55 and 1860), and he sat for some years in the Provincial Council (for New Plymouth in 1856; Grey and Bell 1857-61). He was also provincial treasurer. While in Parliament King exposed the plot to make peace with Waikato (1860). In the following year, the Bank of New Zealand having started business, he was appointed its first manager in New Plymouth, a position he held with conspicuous ability until 1876. Thereafter he again devoted much of his time to public affairs, being (for 10 years) chairman of the harbour board, and a director and sometime chairman of the New Plymouth Gas Co., the Taranaki Land, Building and Investment Co., the Sash and Door Co., the New Plymouth Savings Bank and the education reserves board. He died on 28 Apr 1893. Two of his sons were Newton King and Sir F. Truby King.

Wells; *Taranaki Herald*, 19 Jul 1854, 28 Apr 1893. Portrait: *Taranaki Hist. Coll.*

KING, WILLIAM CUTFIELD (1829-61) was the only son of Captain Henry King, and came to New Zealand as a lad. Receiving his education in New Plymouth, he took up farming on a considerable scale at Woodleigh. He married Elizabeth Mary Richardson (1855). Possessing an independent character and pleasant manners, he was highly esteemed, and in 1857 was elected to represent Omata in the Provincial Council. During the Maori war King held a

## KINSEY

captain's commission in the Taranaki militia. In Nov 1860 he was elected to represent Grey and Bell in Parliament, but he did not take his seat. On 8 Feb 1861, while riding on his property at Woodleigh, then being pillaged by marauding natives, he was shot and killed.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 6 Jun 1861; Wells; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *Taranaki Herald*, 9 Feb 1861.

KINROSS, ANDREW (1829-1915) was born near Glasgow. Losing both parents early, he went to sea in 1847 and a year later emigrated to Australia and obtained employment at Langi-Kal-Kal station. In 1852 he visited the goldfield at Fryers Creek, and then engaged in carrying to the goldfields. In 1853 he married, and in 1861 he came to Port Chalmers in the brig *Dunedin*. Shortly afterwards he settled at Invercargill, where he engaged in carrying to the goldfields. He opened a store at Queenstown in partnership with Brown and Pritchard and, having sold his teams, invested in house property and a farm at Myross Bush (1865).

Kinross was a member of the Southland Provincial Council for Invercargill (1869) and for Roslin (1869-70), and was on the executive. On the reunion with Otago he sat in the Otago Council (for Southland 1870; for Oteramika 1873-75). He moved a resolution affirming that all men over 21 years of age should be eligible to vote for superintendents and members of parliament or provincial councils. Kinross contested the Invercargill parliamentary seat against Shanks in 1878. He was elected to the Southland education board (1869), was a member of the land board from 1878-80 and 1885-1909, of the Southland county council, and chairman of the Myross school committee (1869), and the Lindhurst road board.

Kinross wrote a good deal of verse of passable quality, a selection of which was republished in *My Life and Lays* (1899). He died on 19 Nov 1915.

*Southland and Otago p.e. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); Kinross (p); *Southland Times*, 20 Nov 1915.

KINSEY, SIR JOSEPH JAMES (1852-1936) was born at Plumstead, Kent, educated at the Royal Naval School at Greenwich, and for nine years was a master in the lower school at Dulwich College. He married (1872) Sarah Ann Garrard, and in 1880 arrived in New Zealand. Kinsey founded the shipping firm of Kinsey and

## TE KIRIKUMARA

Co., of which he was chairman at his death (on 5 May 1936). He was a foundation member of the Christchurch Liedertafel, a life member of the Canterbury Agricultural and Pastoral association, a governor of Canterbury College (1894-97) and a Canterbury commissioner for the South Seas Exhibition at Dunedin (1889-90). He was keenly interested in Antarctic exploration, and acted as attorney for Captain R. F. Scott's two expeditions and for one of Sir E. Shackleton's. He received the Scott medal of the Royal Geographical Society (1914), and was knighted in 1917.

*The Press*, 6 May 1936; *Evening Post*, 10 May.

TE KIRIKUMARA, IHAIA, a celebrated warrior chief of the Otaraua hapu of Ngati-Awa, living in Taranaki, was present as a young man at the siege of Motutawa (Mokau) in 1832. He remained in Taranaki when the hekes took place to Cook strait, and helped in the defence of Sugar Loaf where he was taken prisoner. In 1834 he arrived in Taranaki as a prisoner, accompanying the Waikato on a raid to Waitara to see his home.

In 1842-43, by the good offices of the missionaries, he was liberated and returned to Waitara. He took a prominent part in the Puketapu feud (1854-60). Rimene, chief of the Mamaku pa, who had been residing with Puketapu, committed adultery with Ihaia's wife and was shot. Ihaia demanded also a land utu, and associated himself with Teira in the proposed sale of Waitara. Rimene had been a member of the Ngati-Ruanui anti-land selling league. A taua of 380 (including Ngati-Ruanui) besieged Kirikumara in Mamaku (20 Dec 1854). After a brave defence Ihaia escaped to Mahoetahi and the Ngati-Ruanui returned to their homes. Ihaia then joined forces with Arama Karaka to avenge the death of Karaka's brother at Devon road, where they were besieged by followers of Katatore, Wiremu Kingi te Rangitake and the Ngati-Ruanui. A truce was declared in 1856; but in the following year Ihaia and Mahau offered the land at Ikamoana for sale. This new dispute led to the murder of Katatore, with whom the Government was negotiating, by Ihaia's brother (9 Jan 1858). Ihaia was again besieged in his pa on the disputed land, which he evacuated on 6 Feb, and retired to Karaka. Wi Kingi's followers burned the pa and all im-

## KIRK

plements and furniture, and killed the livestock. They then besieged Karaka, but through the intervention of Parris (q.v.) and Whiteley Ihaia was enabled to withdraw and Wi Kingi destroyed the fort. Ihaia was prominent amongst the native allies against Wi Kingi in 1860, he and Tirarau making a declaration of friendliness to the pakeha (Jul 1860). His loyalty was, however, not above suspicion.

Ihaia died at Wakatete pa, Waitara, on 9 Jul 1873. In person he was below middle height, with a mild expression and not unpleasant countenance.

Wells; S. P. Smith; *Taranaki News*, 12 Jul 1873.

KIRK, THOMAS (1828-98) was born at Warwick, England, and educated at Coventry, and was employed for some years at Newark's timber mills in that town. He married (1850) Sarah, daughter of William Mattocks, of Coventry, and in 1863 he came to Auckland in the *Ge-trude*.

In New Zealand he devoted himself at once to the study of botany. In 1867 he explored the Great Barrier; in 1868 the east coast of north Auckland, in 1869 the Thames goldfield, in 1870 Waikato and in 1872 Rotorua and Taupo. He was for some years curator of the Museum and secretary of the Auckland Institute. In 1874 he was appointed lecturer in natural science at Wellington College (then affiliated with the University of New Zealand). He displayed a fine faculty for imparting knowledge, and it was a matter of regret when the relationship with the University ceased and he was appointed to the staff of Lincoln Agricultural College (1881). Kirk was elected a fellow of the Linnaean Society in 1871; was an original member of the Auckland Institute and a governor of the New Zealand Institute (1875-81 and 1887-88), and several times president of the Wellington Philosophical Society. In 1875 he published (in collaboration with J. Balfour) reports on the durability of New Zealand timbers, and thereafter was a constant contributor to the proceedings of the Linnaean Society, the Linnaean Society of New South Wales, *Nature*, the *Journal of Botany* and the *Gardeners' Chronicle*.

In 1885 Kirk became chief conservator of state forests, and he organised the Forestry department, which, however, was abolished as

## KIRK

a measure of economy in 1888. In 1889 his *Forest Flora of New Zealand* was published by the Government. After retiring he made further explorations, notably in Stewart, Auckland and Campbell islands, the Antipodes and the Snares. At the time of his death he had made good progress with his magnum opus, *The Students' Flora of New Zealand and Outlying Islands*, which was completed by T. F. Cheeseman and published in 1899. It was said of Kirk that no other botanist ever acquired such a complete familiarity with the flora of New Zealand. Besides his books he contributed 122 botanical papers to the *Transactions* of the New Zealand Institute.

Kirk was a staunch Baptist, and was president of the New Zealand Baptist union (1892). He died on 8 Mar 1898.

Kirk, *op. cit.*; *Trans. N.Z. Institute*, vol 31, *et pass.*; Cheeseman, *Manual of N.Z. Flora*; Australian Association for the Advancement of Science, 1891; Leckie (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 10 May 1898; *Evening Post*, 9 Mar 1898.

KIRK, THOMAS WILLIAM (1856-1936) was born in Coventry, a son of T. Kirk (q.v.), with whom he came to Auckland (1863). Educated at St James's school and Auckland College and Grammar School, he entered the geological survey as a cadet, and was on the staff of Dr Hector (1874-91). During this period he contributed to the New Zealand Institute, *Nature*, the French *Journal of Conchology* and other periodicals. He was elected a member of the New Zealand Institute (1878), of the Geological Society of Australasia (1887), of the Microscopic Society of London (1889) and a fellow of the Linnaean Society (1890).

In 1892 Kirk was appointed head biologist in charge of the horticulture division of the Department of Agriculture. The period of 18 years that he controlled the branch coincided with a great expansion of the fruitgrowing industry, and Kirk's contribution to its success is embodied in a succession of scientific pamphlets and annual reports of high technical value. He initiated the series of leaflets for farmers, writing very many of them himself. He advised and carried out the first experiment in biological control of insect pests in New Zealand, using with complete success the Australian ladybird (*vedalia*) to control the cotton cushion scale.

## KIRKBRIDE

Kirk married (1883) Edith Dixon Callcott (d. 1938), granddaughter of Jonas Woodward. He died on 19 May 1936.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Kirk, *op. cit.*; *The Dominioll*, 20 May 1936.

KIRK, WILLIAM (1825-1915) was born at Ferry on Trent, near Gainsborough, educated at private schools and became a local preacher at 19. In 1846 he was ordained in London, and the following year sailed for the New Zealand mission field in the *John Wesley*.

After spending a few months in Auckland he was appointed (1849) to the station at Newark, Hokianga, where in 1848 he married Emma (1828-1906), daughter of the Rev J. Hobbs (q.v.). Four years later he was transferred to Wanganui. Proceeding thither in the schooner *Hannah Leithart*, which was wrecked on the bar of the river, they were assisted by the settlers to their station at Ohinemutu, far up the river. There they spent four years, living most of the time in a rough hut with earthen floor. Transferred to Canterbury in 1853, Kirk saw the first church of his denomination erected in Christchurch and another started in Lyttelton. From Waikouaiti he erected the first church in Port Chalmers, and then returned to the North Island, taking up a station and industrial school at Kai-iwi, which were broken up by the war of 1860. Thereafter Kirk served at Mangonui, Nelson, Wellington, New Plymouth, Auckland and Richmond, retiring in 1889. He died on 9 May 1915.

Morley; W. J. Williams; Methodist Conference, 1938; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i.

KIRKBRIDE, MATTHEW MIDDLEWOOD (1848-1906) was born at Ulleskelf, Yorkshire, educated there and came to New Zealand in the *Portland* (1863). He was first employed by Alfred Buckland in connection with the landing of cattle for the troops in the Waikato, and then settled with his people on a bush farm at Little Omaha, moving in 1872 to Mangere. He married in 1874 Grace, daughter of Alexander Bruce (Mahurangi) and took up a bush section near Ashhurst, Manawatu. Five years later he returned to the north and purchased a farm at Mangere. He was chairman of the Mangere road board and school committee, and a member of the cemetery and domain boards and the Auckland Provincial Agricultural asso-

## KISSLING

aatton (president two years). In the Farmers' Union he was president of the Auckland province and delegate to the annual conference (1901).

In 1902 Kirkbride defeated O'Rorke for the parliamentary representation of Manukau, which he represented till his death (on 4 Nov 1906). In his first session he secured the passage of his own farmers' mutual fire insurance bill. He was a member of the federation commission (1900).

*N.Z.P.D.*, 27 Jun 1907; *N.Z. Herald*, 5 Nov 1906. Portrait: Parliament House.

KISSLING, GEORGE ADAM (1805-65) was born at Murr, Wurtemberg. Leaving school at the age of 14, he spent three years in the Moravian settlement of Korntal, where he studied industrial arts in preparation for his admission to a theological course, which he commenced in 1823 in the Moravian college at Basle. He was ordained a minister of the Reformed Lutheran United Church, and in 1827 went to West Africa under instructions from the Basle Missionary society to translate the Scriptures into the Bassu language. He was engaged for some years on this task and in charge of a native school.

In 1833 he was appointed by the Church Missionary Society to a post in Sierra Leone, where he had charge of the two parishes of St Peter and St James at Bathurst and Charlotte. In 1837 he married and returned to Sierra Leone as headmaster of the native college at Fourah bay. In 1840, owing to ill-health, they returned to England, and Kissling was ordained deacon and in the following year priest. He then decided not to return to Sierra Leone but came to New Zealand, arriving in May 1842. The Society had intended to station him in the south, but Bishop Selwyn appointed him in 1843 to Kawakawa, near East Cape, where he took up his duties amongst tribes which were rather turbulent and ill-disposed. In 1846 ill-health again compelled him to give up his charge, and he was for some years employed as chaplain in the neighbourhood of Auckland. In 1849 he was appointed to the parish of St Barnabas, his duties including the charge of the native girls' school. In 1851 he took charge of St Stephen's school at Taurarau, and in 1852 was appointed archdeacon of Wai-

## KNIGHT

temata, to which was added later the charge of the parish of St Mary's, Parnell. Kissling died on 9 Nov 1865.

*Southern Cross*, 10 Nov 1865; *N.Z. Herald*, 21 Sep 1891.

KNIGHT, ARTHUR CHARLES (1833-1905), a son of the Rev William Knight, of Steventon, Hampshire, came to New Zealand in the *Sarnarang* (1852) and, with his elder brother (Richard), took up the Steventon run in the Selwyn valley. He sold out in 1856 and bought a farm below Prebbleton. Knight was a member of the Canterbury Provincial Council for Lincoln (1866-75), and was on the executive (1869, 1871-72 and 1875). In 1869 he was head of the government. As secretary for education he moved to obtain an endowment for Lincoln College.

Knight married (1858) Caroline, daughter of the Rev Thomas E. Hankinson. He died on 14 Dec 1905.

*Canterbury P.C. Proc.*; Acland; *The Press*, 16 Dec 1905.

KNIGHT, CHARLES (1808-91) was born at Rye, Sussex, the youngest child of James Knight (who died a month after his birth). Two years later his mother married Thomas Godfrey, of Hawkhurst, Kent, by whom he was brought up with care and affection. He graduated in medicine at Guy's Hospital (F.R.e.S. 1869) and after practising for a while went to America.

In 1841 he decided to go to Australia, whither his brother William had gone in 1829 (afterwards to become auditor-general of Western Australia). Charles accepted the position of surgeon in the ship *Lm'd Glenelg*, in which Sir George Grey was sailing to assume the governorship of South Australia. Owing to drunkenness and mutinous behaviour on board, Knight took an active part in navigating the ship and actually commanded her from Port Albany to Holdfast Bay, where she arrived on 10 May. Soon after landing he was employed by Grey as a copying clerk. He had a good knowledge of botany and in 1842 sought unsuccessfully to be appointed curator of the botanic gardens, believing that he could extend the science of botany and horticulture and greatly improve the collection by exchanges with Europe and America. Grey appreciated Knight's 'cheerful and unwearying industry' and in 1843 confirmed his appointment in the Colonial Secre-

## KNIGHT

tary's department. He acted as private secretary and had charge of the preparation of all blue books and other statistical returns for the Home government.

In 1844 Knight married Caroline Symes, who had arrived in the colony in 1839. In the following year the East India Company's ship *Elphinstone* arrived, bringing Grey's commission as Governor in New Zealand. Grey took Knight to the new government for the sake of his knowledge of finance and official routine. Arriving in Nov 1845, he was appointed auditor-general in Feb 1846 and at the end of that year he brought his wife and two children from Australia in the schooner *John Lord*, 70 tons. Wynyard, who succeeded Grey as administrator, depended much on Knight's knowledge of finance. In 1856 Knight was appointed manager of the colonial bank of issue, and in 1858 auditor of the accounts of the general Government. In 1861 he was deputed to inquire into charges against Macandrew (q.v.) of defalcation of provincial funds in Otago. In 1863 he was a member of the commission to investigate the claims for flax rewards.

On the removal of the seat of government Knight was appointed agent of the Government at Auckland for a short period. He was chairman of the commission in 1866 to investigate the civil service, and in 1867 was charged with bringing into operation the money order and savings bank. In 1868-69 he visited England with Grey, and on his return went with Vogel and Seed to negotiate a customs and mail agreement in Australia. He was a member of the board of advice under the Government annuities act 1869; was appointed auditor-general in 1870, and a commissioner of the board of audit in 1872.

Six years later Knight retired on pension. He lived thereafter in Wellington until his death on 3 Sep 1891. In 1857 Knight was elected a fellow of the Linnaean Society. His special study was lichens, his collection being now at Victoria College. He was president of the Wellington Philosophical Society (to which he presented various papers) and a fellow of the New Zealand Institute. He was a skilled lathe worker and received a silver medal for lathe tools at the first Wellington exhibition. Knight was aboard the *White Swan* when she was wrecked (1862).

## KNOWLES

*South Aust. Archives; Evening Post*, 4 Sep 1891; information from Dr C. Prendergast Knight. Portrait: General Assembly Library.

KNIGHT, JOHN (1802-71) was born and educated in England and engaged in banking for many years. Arriving in New Plymouth by the *Joseph Fletcher* (1854), he found no opening in his own profession, so turned to his hobby (watch and clockmaking). Though retiring in disposition he was elected to represent New Plymouth in the Provincial Council (1861-65 and 1869-71). In the last term he was provincial treasurer. Knight was drowned in the Mangatuku river on 23 July 1871. He was a prominent freemason.

Family information through W. H. Skinner; *Taranaki Herald*, 26 Jul 1871.

KNOWLES, FRANCIS (1830-1916) was born at Limehouse, London, and educated at Stebon Heath House school, Stepney. After a few months in a law office, he decided to become a teacher and qualified for the diploma of the College of Preceptors (1848). In 1855 he married, and two years later was ordained deacon. In 1851 he came to Lyttelton in the *Travancore*, and for seven years he conducted a school at Pigeon Bay, varied with short service as sub-editor of the *Lyttelton Times*. In 1857 he was ordained deacon and appointed to the cure of Banks Peninsula. Ordained priest (1859), he was appointed vicar of Lyttelton, a position he held until 1872, when he was transferred to Merivale. From 1876-78 he was vicar of Balclutha, and in 1878 was appointed to Gladstone (Invercargill). He then became diocesan secretary, registrar and treasurer in Christchurch. In 1894 he was appointed honorary canon of the cathedral. Knowles died on 11 Sep 1916.

*eye! N.Z.*, iii; *The Press*, 12 Sep 1916.

KNOWLES, JOHN (1823-91) was born in London, educated there and was in the service of the New Zealand Company before coming to New Zealand as storekeeper and clerk in the *Gertrude* (1841). He remained in the Company's service until operations were suspended; then worked his passage to England and became connected with the Canterbury Association (1845).

He came to New Zealand again in 1850, and a third time with E. G. Wakefield (1853). In

## KOCH

1855 he was appointed clerk in the Superintendent's office. He edited the *Wellington Independent* for nine years (1855-64), the *Wanganui Chronicle* for a short time, and was also connected with the *New Zealand Spectator*. In 1869 Knowles went to England as secretary with Featherston and Bell. Returning in 1871, he was appointed Under-secretary for Public Works and retired in 1883. He died on 3 Dec 1891.

N.Z.C. papers; Ward; *N.Z. Times*, 4 Dec 1891.

KOCH, AUGUSTUS KARL FREDERICK (1835-1901) was born in Berlin, Germany, and studied at the Royal Academy. In his teens he was engaged at the barricades in Berlin in the rising of 1848. He graduated B.A. at Berlin University. He studied art under Mandel, the portrait painter and engraver, and made caricatures for *Kladderadatsch*.

In the interest of his health Koch went to sea and became second officer in an East India trader. Being in Auckland when the Austrian frigate *Novara* arrived (1858), he was attached to Hochstetter's staff as, artist during his explorations in Auckland and Nelson, and he projected the first large map of Auckland. Most of his drawings are in the Colonial Museum at Vienna. He afterwards remained in the employ of the Government, surveying, mapping and subdividing in the neighbourhood of Auckland. He introduced the process in photography of printing from negatives. He was the first chief draughtsman in the province of Hawkes Bay, and prepared the first map of the province, and the first original plan of Napier. After spending some time on the Thames goldfield as a mining surveyor, Koch joined the public works department as chief draughtsman. He made the parliamentary map of the Auckland-Waikato railway. He was 30 years a member and 20 years chairman of the Thorndon school committee. Koch died on 31 Dec 1901.

*N.Z. Times*, 1 Jan 1902.

KOHERE, MOKENA (1812-94). One of the leading chiefs of Ngati-Porou, Kohere was the son of Pakura, who fell while leading an attack on Wharekura stronghold, near Te Kaha, Bay of Plenty, a fate fully avenged by the taking of Toka-Kuku pa, not far from Wharekura.

Kohere was himself a warrior and wielded

## TE KOOTI

wide influence over the whole of the East Coast. Always friendly to the British and to the Christians, his instant taking up of the Queen's cause and uncompromising attitude towards Hauhauism and the Maori King movement brought him to the front. When the Hauhau emissaries arrived in 1865 he refused to receive them, and by raising the British ensign divided his people. He applied for arms and took the field. Biggs reinforced him with the Napier volunteers, but Waiapu was still in a precarious position, until the colonial forces under Major Fraser garrisoned Mokena's stronghold, Te Hatepe, on the night of 5 Jul 1865. On the following day, supported by the guns of H.M.S. *Eclipse*, they began their advance. At the surrender of Hungahungatoroa in Oct Kohere appealed to Ropata (q.v.) to make peace with the Ngati-Porou tribesmen who had sided with the Hauhau. About 500 surrendered under this promise and afterwards took the oath. Kohere was able to exhibit three Hauhau flags at Napier. He received a sword of honour from Queen Victoria (1870), and was one of the first two members of the Maori race called to the Legislative Council (1872). He resigned in 1887, and died on 4 Mar 1894.

A grandson, **HENARE** KOHERE (1878-1916), was educated at Rangitukia native school and Te Aute College, and became a sheep farmer at East Cape. For saving the lives of seamen in the wreck of the scow *Whakapai* he received the Royal Humane Society's medal and certificate. He was a member of the New Zealand contingent at the coronation of King Edward VII and served in the war of 1914-18 with the Pioneer battalion with the rank of lieutenant. He died in France on 16 Sep 1916 of wounds received in action. His father was Hone Hiki Kohere, eldest son of Te Mokena Kohere, and his mother was Henarata, of Te Araroa.

Lambert; Cowan; Studholme.

TE KOOTI, or RIKIRANGI, also called TE TURUKI (?1830-93), was the son of Te Rangi Patai, of the Ngati-Maru hapu of Rongo-Wakaata, of Poverty Bay. He belonged to both Ngati-Kahungunu and Ngati-Porou and was called by the Tuhoe •Te Turoki. The origin of the name Te Kooti is obscure. It is held by some to have been assumed at his baptism, after Dandeson Coates (q.v.). Another explanation

## TE KOOTI

is that it signified' court: Rikirangi having been one of the early litigants in the native land court at Turanga. He was not of chiefly birth, but as a young man showed considerable force of character and personal magnetism. While a pupil at the mission school at Whakato, or Waerenga-a-Hika, he studied deeply both the Old and the New Testament. A skilful horseman and boatman, he was for some time supercargo of the native schooner *Henry*, and captain of the *Rua-whetuki*.

When the Hauhau insurrection reached the East Coast district in 1865, Rikirangi accompanied the colonial forces in the field. At the siege of Waerenga-a-Hika (Nov 1865) when he was left in charge of the ammunition, he entered the pa and communicated with his friends amongst the defenders. Being suspected of spying, or of supplying the enemy with caps, he was placed under arrest and kept in custody for several days. He was not tried but was re-arrested some time later and, without being tried, was sent away with other prisoners to the Chatham islands, on the grounds that he was generally troublesome. His tribesmen made no objection to this treatment, but Te Kooti considered the punishment unjust, and he devoted much of his time in captivity to considering means of obtaining his freedom and avenging himself. He now practised the Pai-marire rites, and as an apostle of Ringatu he gained considerable influence over his fellow prisoners. Incidentally he commenced to prepare a new version of the New Testament. His mana was considerably enhanced by his unexpected recovery from a serious illness. Te Kooti did useful service as steersman of the government whaleboat.

Alarmed at the influence he was exercising over the other prisoners, the authorities ordered Te Kooti to desist from preaching. He complied, but a fellow prisoner assumed the role of preacher, using the pure Pai-marire doctrines. The prisoners generally now expected Te Kooti to lead them out of bondage and when, on 4 Jul 1868, he seized the schooner *Rifleman* the pakeha guards and the crew of the schooner were the only ones to be taken by surprise. Only one man was killed. The captain was compelled to navigate the vessel back to New Zealand, having on board 298 Maori-including 64 women and 71 children-and all the arms

## TE KOOTI

and ammunition they could find in the government offices and in private houses. When adverse weather was encountered a relative of Te Kooti was sacrificed to propitiate the gods. The *Rifleman* reached the landing place at Whareongaonga on 10 Jul. Major Biggs, R.M., immediately called out the Mounted Rifles and sent a chief of Te Kooti's hapu to call upon him to give up his arms. He replied that he intended to proceed to the Waikato, to open up the road into the interior, and to set up a new King of the Maori. Setting out on the 15th, he was pursued by the Colonial forces and attacked at Paparatu on the 20th. Te Kooti surprised the force by a flank and rear attack and inflicted some losses, in the glory of which he directed his course towards upper Wairoa, where he was joined by Te Waru (q.v.). Impressed by the new karakia of the Ringatu, many of the local natives who had been wavering joined him. On Aug he beat off an attack at Ruakitire and retired to Papuni to nurse his wound and to receive more reinforcements from the Ngati-Porou and from Urewera.

On 9 Nov Te Kooti made a sudden descent on the settlements in Poverty Bay district, massacring Major Biggs and many of the outlying settlers and their families; in all 33 whites and 27 friendly natives. Ropata Wahawaha (q.v.), with a force of Ngati-Porou and Ngati-Kahungunu under Preece, drove him from a strong position at Makaretu with the loss of 63 killed (including the chief Nama). He withdrew to a strongly fortified position at Ngatapa, which was assaulted first on 5 Dec, and from which he was dislodged with the loss of 136 killed on 5 Jan 1869. Thereafter he was pursued with great intrepidity through the Urewera and the Taupo country. Lightning marches and hairbreadth escapes preserved his mana and enabled him to cow wavering or neutral tribes into joining his force. Nevertheless, the steady attrition of his forces by pursuing detachments gradually reduced his power for mischief.

He had been driven from the Urewera country and was making towards Taupo in the hope of enlisting the help of the Ngati-Tuwharetoa and the King tribes, when the Colonial troops converged upon him and cut off his retreat to the bush. After sharp fighting south of Lake Taupo he was brought to bay in a strongly fortified position at Porere, in the open country

## TE KOOTI

west of Roto-aira. The stronghold was surrounded and carried by assault on 3 Oct. Te Kooti was again wounded, having a finger shot off, but managed to escape to the forests of the Wanganui river. There he was befriended by Mamaku, until news of the killing of an old man at a Taupo village who was related to Topia Turoa brought that chief unequivocally to the side of the Government. Mamaku warned Te Kooti of the approach of hostile forces from Wanganui under Topia and Keepa te Rangihwinui. Disappointed in his hopes of help from Rewi, Te Kooti fled northward and disappeared in the forest. This ended the campaign.

In Jan 1870 J. C. Firth (q.v.) met Te Kooti at Turangamoana and transmitted to the Government his message that he wished to live at peace and would not fight again unless he was attacked. He refused to surrender, and the Government declined to honour the half-promise made by Dr Pollen (without its authority) that he would not be apprehended. There were, however, no further operations against him, and he never again raised a hand against the Government. Though several times wounded, Te Kooti was never disabled. In 1871, accompanied by his wife Sophia, the faithful companion of his arduous campaigns, he withdrew to the King Country and placed himself under the benevolent protection of Tawhiao. He claimed later that he had not been guilty of any offence against the law since 1874; and in 1883 he exerted his influence, which was still considerable amongst the disaffected tribes, to secure the safety of the surveyors Hursthouse and Newsham. He continued to exercise mana through the practice of the Ringatu cult, but made no resistance to the progress of the surveys in the interior.

At a meeting at Manga-o-Rongo on 12 Feb 1883 the Native Minister (Bryce), in the presence of Rewi, formally pardoned Te Kooti and gave him a small piece of land near Orakau on which he might live. The offer of a reward of £5,000, which had accompanied the proclamation of his outlawry in 1868, was then revoked.

While Mitchelson was Native Minister (1887-89) Te Kooti paid a visit to Auckland, where he was an object of much interest. He travelled widely over the North Island, including Hawkes Bay, but when he wished to revisit his people

## KOPU

at Poverty Bay in 1889 feeling was so hostile that the Government dissuaded him. A few years before his death the Ngati-Maniapoto, amongst whom he was living, erected for him at Te Kuiti an interesting house 'embellished with rich carvings symbolic of events in his stirring career and aspects of his curious philosophy, which "was a compound of Judaism, Christianity and Hauhauism. Sobriety and hard work were inculcated, and every twelfth day was considered holy. Te Kooti composed many waiata, which were distinguished by original and unaffected imagery. His yearning to be back amongst the Urewera led the Government to grant him a small area near Ohiwa, Bay of Plenty, for a residence. There he died a few months later (17 Apr 1893), his age being stated as about 70 years. In stature Te Kooti was about 5ft 9in. He had a firm jaw and was not tattooed.

*N.Z.P.D.*, pass. and 1 Aug 1888; *Monthly Review N.Z.*, 1889, P 175; Cowan; Lambert; Gudgeon; Whitmore; Porter, *Life of Ropata Wahawaha*; Buller; Gascoyne; Grace; *N.Z. Herald*, 8, 23 Feb 1889; 28 Mar 1891; 18 Apr 1893; 19 Feb 1930; T. W. Porter in *Otago Daily Times*, 16 Feb-16 May 1914.

KOPU, PARAPARA PITIERA (?-1867), a chief of Ngati-Kahungunu at Wairoa, was descended from Kahungunu through Tuteihonga and was the son of Haputanga, who was killed in Pomare's attack on Kaimango. Kopu took to the bush with his grandfather, Rekehini, who adjured him to take revenge. After the fall of Titirangi (1832) Kopu and Henare Apatari went on with a strong force to Kaiuku, where they were besieged by Waikato and their allies. Still a young man, he led one of the war parties at Toka-kuku (1836), where Ngapuhi and Ngati-Kahungunu were victorious over the Bay of Plenty tribes.

The Treaty of Waitangi having brought peace amongst the tribes, Kopu led an armed party to Hauraki Gulf for the purpose of bringing back some of his people, who had been kept prisoners by Ngati-Maru since the invasions of Taraia, or had been sold to Ngati-Maru by Tuboe in exchange for guns. They met with resistance from the local people and many casualties occurred in the fighting, including Kopu's brother.

KORAKO

By this time Kopu was under the influence of Christianity; he adopted civilised customs and took an active part in the Europeanisation of his people. He was a disinterested and public spirited chief, generous in the extreme. Through his marriage with Mere Karaka, a woman of illustrious descent, he extended his influence in the Wairoa district. When the Hauhau emissaries first approached the East Coast Kopu and Whanga, two of the most dependable chiefs in the district, threw their whole weight against the new doctrines. Mere Karaka, on the other hand, sympathised with Te Kooti in later years, and on this account made a voluntary renunciation of her rights to confiscated land. In Mar 1866 Kopu surprised Te Waru's brother (who surrendered with his followers), and two months later marched to Napier, cutting down all Hauhau poles. He and Whanga led the friendlies at Te Kopani and tried to restrain Ropata from killing the prisoners. A few months later he was engaged at the battle of Omarnnui (Oct).

Kopu sold to the government early in 1867 the site of Wairoa and came under the displeasure of his people on account of a great gathering at which the chief agreed to the cession of 70,000 acres of land to the Government. He died on 11 Apr 1867, while his men were still in the field against Te Kooti. Kopu received a sword of honour from the Queen. He commanded his own schooner, the *Effort*.

Lambert (p); Sir Apirana Ngata (information); *Waka Maori*, 1873, p. 145.

KORAKO, a chief and tohunga of the Ngaite-rangi-Whakapito hapu at Waikouaiti, is said to have remembered Cook and to have treasured a tomahawk received from him. He was the grandfather of H. K. Taiaroa (q.v.) and lived at Kawakaputaputa (Southland). An experienced old warrior and cannibal, he came under the influence of James Watkin (q.v.) and, having put away his young wife, was baptised as Te Wakena and married to the older wife, Kupukupu (1848). Having lost several of his family in the swamping of a canoe (Mar 1841) he supported Watkin in resisting the making of a human sacrifice. Korako died on 31 Oct 1852.

Roberts, *Southland*; Pratt; Shortland; Selwyn, *Annals*.

KRIPPNER

KOROKORO, or MANUHIKITEA (? 1760-1823) of the Parupuwaha hapu of Ngapuhi, lived at Paroa, Bay of Islands. He was implicated in the attack on Marion du Fresne in 1772. He was the elder brother of Tuhi, who had lived in England and spoke the language well. Korokoro (already an elderly man in 1820) had shortly before 1814 been on a long trading expedition as far as Port Nicholson. He went to Sydney in the *Active* in 1814, and lived with Marsden while the second voyage of the *Active* was in preparation. On the return to Bay of Islands Marsden reconciled Korokoro with the chiefs of Whangaroa. He pleaded with Marsden for a missionary to be settled at Rangihoua, near his island pa at Moturoa, urging that the long absence of his brother Tuhi in Australia and England gave him a claim. Tuhi agreed that Hongi had the superior claim as the more powerful chief. Eventually in 1819 Korokoro's offer was accepted, and the mission was established at Manawara. Marsden considered Korokoro a brave, sensible chief, who had good control over his people and was willing to stop fighting if he could make an honourable peace with his enemies at the Thames.

In 1818 he accompanied Te Morenga on his East Coast expedition, and early in 1820 he inflicted severe losses on the Thames tribe. He took part in Hongi's expedition against Rotorua (1823) and in Sep died of wounds at Kati-Kati.

S. P. Smith, *Wars*; Carleton; Stack; Marsden *L. and J.*

KRIPPNER, MARTIN (1819-94) was born at Staab, in Bohemia, and at an early age entered the Austrian army, in which he saw some service and rose to the rank of captain. In 1859 he retired and came to New Zealand, taking up a 40-acre farm at Orewa, 25 miles north of Auckland. Having arranged with the Provincial Council, he returned to Bohemia and recruited emigrants to settle at Puhoi. By the time they arrived the Waikato war had broken out and, having a fair knowledge of Maori and English, he enlisted a German company for the 3rd Waikato Regiment. After service in the field, Krippner was placed in charge of Maori prisoners in the hulk at Auckland. At Puhoi later he was postmaster and schoolmaster, secretary and chairman of the road board and a member

KUKUTAI

of the county council. He died on 1 Feb 1894.

Silk (p); Morton; Cowan; *N.Z. Herald*, 5 JUL 1888.

KUKUTAI, the leading chief of the Ngati-Tipa tribe in the early nineteenth century. He led the Ngati-Tipa contingent in the Amio-whenua expedition of 1821-22, and also accompanied the expedition to help the Ngati-Raukawa against Ngati-Awa and personally carried the overtures of peace after the engagement at Haowhenua. Just before the 'peace of 1822 he joined the Ngapuhi in making war on Te Rau-paraha at Kawhia.

When the Rev R. Maunsell settled in his territory in the late thirties, Kukutai felt keenly the degradation (as he thought) of his grandson Ngataru being converted to Christianity, and afterwards dying, in the land of another tribe (at Kohanga). His sons Ngapaka and Waata had great difficulty in preventing him from killing a slave at the obsequies. Kukutai was killed at Te Ihutaroa in 1846, and the tribe elected his second son, Waata, to be chief.

Waata Kukutai was a man of remarkable talents and natural qualities. Closely tattooed, he had a fine, commanding figure and dignified manners, and he built himself a European house, though continuing to live in a whare close by. On becoming chief he moved his whole tribe to Kohanga, and all were baptised under the teaching of Maunsell and lived peaceably and usefully, engaged in farming and dwelling in European houses. In 1857 Kukutai was elected manager of the tribal farm, which was governed by a set of regulations one of which declared: 'Whether chiefs or slaves, we agree to work equally and to divide equally the fruits of our labour: Kukutai was a friend of Governor Grey, and was appointed in 1857 an assessor to sit with the resident magistrate. Though he was opposed to land selling, he did not approve of the King movement, and at the meeting in 1857 he paraded all the Queen natives under the Union Jack. He stopped the use of liquor at Maori meetings and the holding of tangi-hui. In 1860 Kukutai gave evidence before the Waikato committee of the House of Representatives, and in the following year he was installed at Taupiri as a magistrate. Grey was present to explain his intentions towards the Maori people.

KYNNERSLEY

In the Waikato war he took the Government side, moved his people lower down the river to Te Ia, and furnished a water transport corps on the Waikato. He was a major in the New Zealand militia. After the war his people were enlisted for roadmaking and frontier guards. Their settlements at Taupiri and Kohanga were models of orderliness and efficiency. Kukutai was one of the most civilised of the North Island chiefs, but was rather reckless in his expenditure.

After his death, which occurred on 8 Jan 1867, his people became a prey to the general despondency into which the Maori people fell and their habits degenerated considerably. He was succeeded by his nephew Hori, who was reserved and kindly in disposition, but had not a strong character.

Gorst; *App. H.R.*, 1856-67; W. Williams; Cowan; Maunsell; Stack, *More Maori/and Adventures*.

TE KUMETE, WHITIORA, a Ngati-Mahuta chief of high rank, and a relative of Tawhiao, was an ardent Kingite. Having surrendered to General Cameron after the battle of Rangiriri, he was sent with others to Kawau island, whence they made their escape to the mainland and back to their homes, defying the Government to retake them. Kumete more than once left his cultivations in Waikato to take part in the fighting in Taranaki. One of these visits coincided with the attack on No.3 redoubt, at which he was present (23 Jan 1861).

Cowan, *War; Sketches* (P).

KYNNERSLEY, THOMAS ALFRED SNEYD (1840-74) was born in 1840 and entered the Royal Navy as a midshipman. His promotion was rapid until in Jul 1858 he was appointed mate and posted to the *Syren* for service on the south-east coast of America. Early in 1861 he was promoted lieutenant, but shortly afterwards was compelled to seek a better climate on account of his health. Kynnersley came to New Zealand and became a settler at Queen Charlotte Sound about 1861 or 1862, cultivating a small plot of ground, living in primitive fashion and spending his leisure time sailing boats.

In Oct 1864, through the influence (it is said) of Sewell, he was appointed warden and resident magistrate on the Pelorns goldfield, and shortly afterwards for the goldfields of the pro-

KYNNERSLEY

vince. Towards the end of 1865 he was selected by A. Saunders (q.v.) for the important post of resident magistrate and warden on the newly opened goldfields in the south-west of Nelson province. In Jan 1867 he was appointed chief warden and commissioner, and two months later receiver of land revenue. The next Superintendent (Curtis) also had confidence in Kyppersley, whom he granted almost plenipotentiary powers, while the Provincial Council voted generous funds for the work. Though not yet 30 years of age he showed surprising tact, good sense and fairness in dealing with an independent and sometimes wilful class of men, and great judgment in superintending the construction of public works in his district. In Mar 1868 he dealt most tactfully with the Fenian outburst at Addison's Flat.

Feeling that his post, as an emergency one, was no longer necessary, he resigned in Sep in

KYNNERSLEY

the hope of recruiting his health by a visit to England. While there he retired from the Navy (Sep 1869), and when he came back he was again appointed warden for Wangapeka and Upper Buller (Feb 1870). A few weeks later he was a member of the provincial executive. He resigned from the executive in Jun and in the following month was elected to represent Westland North in Parliament. The dual position (official and parliamentary) which he held until the dissolution at the end of the year did not escape criticism. In Mar 1872 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Grey, and for 12 months was a capable and prominent member. His health, however, steadily declined, and he died at Nelson on 31 1874.

Admiralty records; *Proc. Nelson P.C.*; Beauchamp; Hindmarsh; Reid; *The Colonist*, 24 Apr 1868; *Westport Times*, 6 Feb 1874.

L

LAHMANN, HENRY HERMAN (1816-90) was a native of the Free City of Bremen, Germany, where he was educated. As a young man he went to London, where for 19 years he was engaged in business. In 1853 he emigrated to Melbourne, and carried on business for eight years as a merchant and shipping agent. Attracted to Otago by the discovery of gold, he started a tobacco business in Dunedin in partnership with A. Helm. Four years later he followed the gold diggers to Westland and settled in Greymouth as a timber and general merchant, interested also in shipping.

Lahmann was a member of the first Greymouth town improvement committee, and represented his district on the Westland county council (1868), of which he was chairman until his defeat in 1872. He was also on the first Provincial Council (1874), of which he was speaker until the abolition. He then became a member of the county council under the new act. He was a member of the cattle and stock board and the Greymouth harbour board. In 1872 Lahmann was called to the Legislative Council (in view of the proposed immigration of German settlers). He died on 1 Jun 1890.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1872-90; Harrop, *Westland* (p); *Westland C.C. and P.C. Proc.*; *Grey River Argus*, 2 Jun 1890. Portrait: Parliament House.

LAIRD, JAMES (1831-1902) was born in Forfarshire, Scotland, and came to New Zealand in 1855, settling in Taranaki as a nurseryman. He served in the Maori war (1860-65), and two years later removed from New Plymouth to Wanganui, where he established himself in business. He was a borough councillor for 15 years and mayor (1886-88), chairman of the Waitotara county council and a member of the

hospital committee and harbour board. He died on 3 Sep 1902.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, vi.

LAISHLEY, RICHARD (1844-1907) was a son of the Rev Richard Laishley (1816-97), who was in charge of the Congregational Church at Peartree Green, Southampton, before being appointed by the Congregational Missionary society in 1860 to come to Auckland. He came by the *Caduceus* and laboured at Auckland, Melbourne, Thames and Devonport.

The son was educated in Southampton. He was articled in 1870 to Jackson and Russell, Auckland, and being admitted to the bar in 1873, began to practise. He was at times a member and chairman of the Auckland education board and a governor of the Auckland Grammar School. In 1883-84 he made an extensive tour abroad investigating educational methods, his report being published as a parliamentary paper. He received the honorary LL.D. of St Andrews University (1887), the Ph.D. and M.A. of Leipzig, and several foreign orders. In 1901 Laishley gave evidence before the federation commission. His published works are mainly on education, but in 1881 he issued a pamphlet on the causes and cure of the exodus of population from New Zealand. He died in Sydney on 30 Jan 1907.

*App. H.R.*, 1886 (ii), E 1, E 12; Butchers; Laishley, *op. cit.*; *Auckland Star*, 6 Jan 1897.

LAKE, EDWARD (1838-1908) was born in Kent, graduated at Wadham College, Oxford, and then turned his attention to farming in his native county. In 1875 he came to New Zealand, and in 1877 took up land at Ohaupo, Waikato, where he farmed 1,170 acres. He served on several local bodies, and was chair-

## LAMB

man of the Waipa county council for many years. In 1884 he was elected to Parliament for Waipa in opposition to the Stont-Vogel Government; and in 1891-93 he represented Waikato (in opposition to the Ballance Government). His later years Lake spent in Auckland, where he was a member of the hospital and charitable aid board. He died on 25 Feb 1908.

*Cycl. N.z.*, ii (p); *N.z. Herald*, 26 Feb 1908. Portrait: Parliament House.

LAMB, ROBERT (1863-1907) was born at Makakana, Auckland, and received most of his education at the West Christchurch school and Canterbury University College, where he graduated M.A. Proceeding to Edinburgh, he graduated M.D. and was ordained a minister of the Presbyterian Church. He spent many years as a medical missionary in the New Hebrides. Lamb published two books: *Saints and Savages* and *The Will of God*. He died on 18 Jun 1907.

*The Press*, 19 Jun 1907.

LAMBERT, CHARLES (1809-82) held a commission in the 62nd Regiment, from which he retired as a captain in 1851. He became adjutant of the Hampshire militia during the Crimean war and resigned again in 1857, when he came to New Zealand, and took up land on the Ruataniwha plains. He represented Waipukurau in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council (1861-62, 1864-71), and Te Aute (1871-75). From 1865-67 he was speaker.

Commissioned as major in the Napier Cavalry volunteers in 1865, Lambert was in command of two companies of militia at the attack on the Hauhau force at Omarunui (Oct 1866). In the advance on Puketapu (27 Oct) he assumed command of the pursuing force and, against the decision of a council of officers, he stopped the pursuit and withdrew to Wairoa (3 Nov). Te Kooti had evacuated Puketapu, and thus got off to commit the massacre at Poverty Bay. Again, when he brought a force to relieve Mohaka, Lambert refused to advance inland and declined to attack the position at Ora-kanihi, where the Hauhau were in a state of intoxication. He was a member of the Napier harbour board and the Hawkes Bay land board. He died on 12 Oct 1882.

*Hawkes Bay P.C. Proc.*; Cowan; Gascoyne; Lambert.

## LANCE

LAMBERT, WILLIAM (1811-61) was born at Exeter, England, and educated there under the Rev John Mason. For some years he was connected with the *Chronicle and Morning Post*, in London. There he was a member of the Rev D. Weir's church in River terrace, and took a warm interest in the Sunday school. In 1852 he came to New South Wales and worked for the *Sydney Morning Herald*. He gave up that post because he objected to work on Sundays and crossed to Auckland (1856). There Captain Cargill engaged him to help establish the *Otago Colonist*, which he controlled till his death.

Lambert represented Eastern District in the Otago Provincial Council (1857-59), and was a member of the executive in 1859. He lost his seat owing to his views on state aid to education. He died on 19 Dec 1861.

*Otago P.C. Proc.*; Hocken, *Otago*; Paul; Scholefield, *Union Catalogue*; *Otago Colonist*, 27 Dec 1861.

LANCE, HENRY PORCHER (1830-86) was a son of the Rev E. J. Lance, of Buckland St Mary, Somersetshire. Coming to New Zealand with his brother, J. D. Lance (q.v.), he was interested with him and the Mallocks in several Canterbury properties, notably Four Peaks, Heathstock and Horsley Downs. He took little part in managing the stations, but was interested in stud breeding and produced many fine thoroughbred horses at Heathstock and Horsley Downs. He was a daring and clever gentleman rider and won many races both on the flat and across country with Strike a Light, Emmeline and Market Gardener. In England also he rode, as Mr Dart: with notable success. In Canterbury in partnership with Creyke he purchased Henry Redwood's stud, including Lady Bird and Miss Lee. In 1862 they won the Canterbury Cup with Revoke and the Derby with Azucena; in 1863 the Cup with Golden Cloud; and in 1864 and 1865 the Derby (with Egremment and Nebula). In 1868 Lance went to England. On his return 10 years later he was joined by Mallock and they owned some noted winners, including Foul Play and Nemo.

Lance represented Sefton in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1862-65). He married first Miss Bradshaw, and second a daughter of the Hon William Robinson (q.v.). He died on 19 May 1886.

## LANCE

Acland; *Canterbury PoCo Proc.*; *Lyttelton Times*, 20 May 1886; *The Press*, 21 May 1886, 28 Jun 1930.

LANCE, JAMES DU PRE (1828-97) was born at Boulogne, France, the son of the Rev Edwin J. Lance, rector of Buckland St Mary, Somerset. Intending to serve the East India Company, he entered Addiscombe Military College, and in 1845 was commissioned as an ensign. On reaching India (1848) he was posted to the 8th Native Infantry, in which he shortly received his lieutenancy (1855). He is said to have penetrated into Tibet with an exploring party.

In 1856 Lance took advantage of his health leave from India to visit the Mallock brothers of Horsley Down, and was much attracted by the country. He was recalled to India by the outbreak of the Mutiny. On arrival at Calcutta he found that his regiment had joined the rising, and, being a good linguist, he was attached as interpreter to the 42nd Highlanders. He was present at the relief of Lucknow and the capture of Cawnpore. After the Mutiny Lance visited England and came again to New Zealand with his brother, Henry Porcher Lance (q.v.) with the intention of settling in Canterbury. They purchased first, in 1858, the Four Peaks station, near Geraldine, but soon sold it and bought into Horsley Down in association with the Mallocks. Early in the sixties Lance went on a visit to England and France. He married (1862) a daughter of Captain T. Mallock, R.N.

On returning to New Zealand Lance bought the Heathstock station, which was worked in conjunction with the others, and erected on it the fine homestead described in *Lady Barker's Station Life in New Zealand* (1871). There he lived the life of an English gentleman, entertaining lavishly. He paid great attention to the improvement of his estate and laying out plantations, erected 300 miles of fencing, and with his brother took a great interest in stock breeding. Lance was one of the best amateur whips in the province. The names of Traducer, Blood Royal, and Anteros are honorably associated with the Heathstock and Horsley Down stud.

Lance entered the Canterbury Provincial Council for Sefton in succession to his brother, who retired in 1865. He had no sooner entered the Council than he was sought as a leader. A vacancy having occurred in the superintendency, the land-owning interest persuaded Lance

## LANE

to stand as their candidate. The result was: Moorhouse 1,479, Lance 742, Travers 176. Just after the election Lance had a buggy accident and had to go to England for treatment. He had accordingly to vacate his seat in the Provincial Council, and eventually his membership of the Legislative Council, to which he was called in 1865. He was away from the colony for 13 years. Most of the time he lived at Dinant, in Brittany, passing to and fro between France and England in his study of comparative methods of agriculture and land utilisation. He had great success in growing root crops and encouraging the French farmers to follow his example.

Returning to New Zealand in 1879, he was the first chairman of the Waipara road board. In 1884 he was elected to Parliament for Cheviot, and he sat for that district until being defeated by Richard Meredith in 1890. Lance urged vigorous steps to combat the rabbit danger (which was threatening north Canterbury with ruin). He assisted in the passing of legislation with that object, and promoted the Hurunui rabbit board, which protected the province by erecting a wire-netting fence against invasion from the north. Lance lost his Heathstock homestead by fire in 1889. His heavy commitments in land about this time involved him in difficulties. In 1896 and the following year the greater part of the estate was acquired by the Government, and cut up into farms for disposal on lease-in-perpetuity. Lance died on 28 May 1897. His widow died on 2 Sep 1923.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Cox; Acland; *The Press*, 29 May 1897, 28 Jun 1930 (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

LANDELS, ADAM (1840-87) was a native of Berwickshire, where his father owned a farm at Bankend. He was educated at the High School in Edinburgh, and worked for some years in the Bank of Scotland before coming to Otago in 1858. Having purchased property at Stoney Creek, Landels revisited Scotland and after coming back farmed at Stoney Creek, Lakeside and Otaria. He was member of the Provincial Council for Tokomairiro (1866-67), and was for many years a member of the Crichton road board. He died on 8 Nov 1887.

*Clutha Leader*, 9 Nov 1887.

LANE, WILLIAM (1861-1917) was born in Bristol. His father was a native of county Cork,

Ireland, who became a Protestant after their removal to Dublin. For some years he had a prosperous business as a nurseryman and gardener, employing as many as 20 hands. He was a popular speaker, a member of the poor law guardians and chairman of the Conservative workingman's club, but dissipated his prospects in public interests and insobriety. His wife, who came of a West-country yeoman family, experienced great difficulty in bringing up the family and paying for their education. William was small in build and slightly lame from birth. He attended the Bristol Grammar School, where he studied classics and passed the Oxford local examination before he was 14.

As a boy Lane was led to attend political meetings and became a member of an Orange clique, disturbing hostile gatherings, but he early became his mother's confidant, noted the unfavourable tendency of his father's affairs, and determined to shift for himself. His first post was as office boy in an art shop, followed by a small clerkship in a glue factory. He made his first essay in journalism thus early, writing in the *Bristol Times and Mirror* a defence of Lady Butler's paintings. His mother died in 1875. Two years later William sailed for America and maintained himself for several years at various occupations in the United States and Canada. At the age of 20 he was promoted reporter for a Canadian paper, and shortly afterwards he married Annie Mary Macquire, a member of the staff (granddaughter of a Scots professor). Meanwhile Lane's brother John, who had won a scholarship at Colston's hospital, and had studied in London the business of a nurseryman, had decided to emigrate with his family to Australia. William's experience in America had completed the education of a radical and, thoroughly convinced of the hopeless future in England for people of his class, he agreed to go with John.

The two families sailed in the *Quetta*. Soon after reaching Brisbane Lane got a start in journalism by reporting a dance for the *Figaro*. His breezy and sympathetic accounts of the temperance lectures of R. T. Booth commended him to the *Courier*, and before long he had a lucrative connection with these papers, the *Leader* and other Australian journals. As labour writer for the *Evening Observer* he spread his doctrines of communism and social-

ism to such effect that before long he was in the inner councils of the labour movement. He preached a vigorous nationalism for Australia, believing that living conditions could only be improved by confining their attention to Australian affairs. In 1885, mainly through his influence, the Brisbane trades and labour council was established, which soon embraced seven unions and 6,000 members, and in the following year the Maritime League was founded incorporating all branches of sea labour in the five colonies of Australia and New Zealand. At this stage Lane was rabidly anti-British and republican, but he resisted the inclusion of protection in the platform of the labour movement, until events converted him on this point.

In 1887, with Alfred Walker, a compositor, he founded the *Boomerang*, which openly defended the association of labour and liberalism, advocated Australian nationalism, and gradually worked out Lane's theories of universal co-operation and land nationalisation. He turned from Fabianism to the cult of Henry George, firmly believing that liberty was dependent on the right to earn a livelihood from the soil. He wished Australia to be left alone, an independent republic free of British imperialism. This gradually brought him round to protection as a measure of nationalism. He was also passionately opposed to the admission of Chinese to Australia and in 1889 published a serial story descriptive of a civil war in 1908 between the Australians and Chinese. A libel action brought successfully against the *Boomerang* in 1888 by a political candidate disclosed the great influence Lane now had in Queensland politics. His emotional prose was typical of the labour movement of the day. He still believed in the trades union movement as the means of gaining labour ends, and insisted that labour leaders must be sober men, abstainers for preference. His 9,000 subscribers were largely members of the shearers' union. In 1888 a trades unionist (T. Glassey) was elected to Parliament although the *Boomerang* was the only paper which supported him. The trades and labour council developed in 1889 into the Australian Labour Federation.

In 1889 Lane disposed of the *Boomerang* to Gresley Lukin (q.v.), in order to accept the editorship of a new paper, the *Worker*, founded by the unions with a commencing circulation of

13,000. This involved a personal sacrifice for Lane, who gave up a connection worth £600 a year for a salary of £3 a week. In the new monthly, signing himself 'John Miller,' he worked frantically for his vision of the co-operative state, and moved perceptibly towards the political sphere for labour aims. The Workers' Political Organisation Conference in 1891 claimed 15,000 adherents, and Lane succeeded in bringing women into the movement. At this time he considered compulsory arbitration merely a device of the capitalists to make wage-slavery permanent; he advocated voluntary agreements with the employers. During the series of strikes inaugurated by that of the shearers in 1889 Lane was sent to South Australia as a delegate of the general executive of the Australian Labour Federation to compose the differences of the five great pastoral unions. Throughout these strikes he directed operations, organised relief and published his great propaganda novel *The Workingman's Paradise* (1892). It was in these days that he overcame his aversion to public speaking, and appeared on the soapbox so effectively that when the strikes failed the *Daily Telegraph* (Brisbane) demanded his arrest. His conviction of the inevitability of socialism—the workers owning and operating the means of production—was adopted by the A.L.F. in a manifesto which demanded the nationalisation (at a fair valuation) of all sources of wealth and means of producing and exchanging wealth; pensions for children, aged and invalid persons, and the eight-hour day. Lane had a part also in the formulation of the People's Parliamentary Platform adopted by the Labour Federation. Throughout these years he urged the passing of village settlement bills. He continued to insist on the sobriety of labour leaders and was able to point to the outstanding success of the Queensland labour movement, which was directed by total abstainers.

Labour had considerable success at the elections, but Lane was soon disappointed with their political conduct. In his disappointment he talked of the establishment of a collectivist colony which should be a demonstration of his social views. In May 1890 application was made for suitable land at Wilcannia. Copeland, the Minister for Lands in New South Wales, was disposed to make provision for a co-operative colony, but he was over-ruled on a technical

point. Meanwhile inqwnes made by Alfred Walker in South America commenced to yield hopeful replies. The plan was looked upon favourably by Australian unionists before the strike of 1891, and later in the year it was developed in a pamphlet. Lane, who regarded socialism as practical Christianity, lost confidence in the political machine. He believed that in 'New Australia' they could achieve socialism at once and afford an object lesson to Australian reformers. A committee was set up with him as chairman, and an invitation was extended to thrifty and sober men and women, bushmen for preference, to realise their assets and join the movement. In a very short time £30,000 was paid in and a picked band of pioneers, including John Lane and his wife, and James Murdoch (of the Brisbane Grammar School, afterwards a professor in Japan) were ready to sail.

Lane was unrestrained in his devotion to the cause of communism and his energy in organising the colony. Alfred Walker cabled in Jan 1892 that he had been offered a grant of 40 leagues of land in Paraguay, 130 miles from Asuncion; immunity from customs taxation for 10 years; and free rail transport, on condition that 800 families were settled within four years. The New Australia Settlement Association Company was registered at Lane's house in Brisbane (removing later to Wagga, and eventually to Sydney). The articles of association provided for communal and co-operative ownership and operation of all the means of production and exchange; community sanitation and education; community maintenance of children (under the guardianship of their parents); the division of the surplus production amongst the settlers without regard to age, sex or physical or mental capacity; complete sex equality and individual and religious freedom. The sole executive authority was vested in a director elected by a two-thirds vote in a general ballot; with an advisory board of superintendents similarly elected. Lane resigned the editorship of the *Worker* to carry on the organisation, and by May 1893, despite obstruction by governments and some selfish dilatoriness on the part of the workers, the first batch of Pioneers was ready for embarkation. The barque *Royal Tar*, 598 tons, which had been in the South American trade, was purchased for £1,200, and she eventually sailed

## LANE

(Jul 1893) with more than 200 emigrants, the pick of Australian workers. Lane had been elected director. On 13 Sep the *Royal Tar* arrived at Monte Video and 220 passengers and 150 tons of their belongings were transferred to the river steamer for their destination 1,200 miles distant.

In Dec Lane registered the Association's title to 225,000 acres of land, and received from the government of Paraguay the powers of a magistrate and governor of a separate district, so that the colonists should be free from interference by local administrators. The settlers started erecting their homes and dearing the land for cultivation, and the various organisations of government, which had been discussed on the voyage, were put into operation. The debates on the voyage had unfortunately created a partisanship which became accentuated in the colony. Complaint was made that Lane was too puritanical in his judgment of human frailties. In Dec 1893 three members were expelled by Lane for misconduct, and a few weeks later 85 seceded in a body.

Meanwhile the *Royal Tar* made a second voyage with 200 settlers, under Gilbert Casey. Casey soon became leader of the opposition to the policy adopted by Lane, and eventually returned to Australia to take over the assets of the Association there.

In May 1894, less than a year after leaving Australia, Lane himself, feeling that individualism was becoming too aggressive, seceded with 60 followers to found an independent communistic settlement. His own opinions were becoming strongly Christian and he took a more religious view of the Labour movement, and represented Communism as the law of God. The seceders purchased 15,000 acres of land 11 miles from the small town of Caazapa, where they established their new settlement of Cosme in Jul 1894. Though they suffered great privations at first, the settlers lived in unruffled amity and made a marked success of their settlement. Within a few years they had established such essential industries as dairying, tanning, sawmilling and brickmaking. In 1896 the government recognised their success by enlarging the boundaries and reimbursing the payments made for the land. In 1897 the population had increased to 131.

Lane had a severe illness in 1895, and in the

## LANE

following year paid a visit to England to recruit new settlers, preferably skilled mechanics. He now began to feel that even the colonists of Cosme were not sufficiently religious in their outlook and tended to run the colony on purely material lines. Early in 1899 his wife was seriously ill. He had a growing conviction that he was not taking sufficient thought for the future of his family, and eventually he decided to withdraw from Cosme and leave Paraguay for good, to continue his work through the press and to earn money to repay liabilities he had incurred on behalf of the settlement.

Accordingly he took his departure (on 2 Aug 1899) for England on his way to New Zealand. He had accepted employment on the *New Zealand Herald* when he received an invitation from the Australian Workers' Union to be the first full-time editor of the *Worker* (Sydney). His acceptance of this post was announced on 20 Jan 1900. It was a short-lived engagement. Disillusioned by what he had gone through, and impatient of the results of labour's political activities, he soon found himself out of tune with current philosophies. His intense nationalism, which formerly had expressed itself in an anti-British direction, now made him a fervent supporter of British policy in South Africa. This caused hostility to his management of the *Worker*, and in May 1900 he retired, came to Auckland, and joined the staff of the conservative *New Zealand Herald* as leader-writer. His 'Tohunga' articles, which began on 9 Jun 1900, were characterised by an old-fashioned conservatism, with a strong tinge of humanity and burning loyalty to the British connection. That he should have been the head and front of the National Defence League, which was formed in 1906 to promote universal military training in New Zealand, was no departure from his earlier nationalism, which exulted in the belief that the military training of her citizens made Australia at last free from any fear of invasion.

Lane became editor of the *Herald* in 1913 and held that post until his death on 26 Aug 1917.

*Australian Rev. of Reviews*, iii, p. 276; Fairfax, *A Century of Journalism*, p. 338; W. Lloyd Ross, *William Lane and the Australian Labour Movement*; T. A. Coghlan, *Labour and Industry in Australia*; A. St Ledger, *Australian Socialism*; Stewart

## LANG

Graham, *Where Socialism Failed*; W. K. Hancock, *Australia*; Mary Gilmore, *Old Days and Old Ways and More Recollections*; *Otago Daily Times*, 15 Sep 1916; *NZ. Herald*, 26 Aug, 1 Sep 1917, *et pass.*

LANG, SIR FREDERICK WILLIAM (1852-1937) was born and educated at Blackheath, London, and came to New Zealand at the age of 19. After a careful inspection of the province of Auckland he took up land at Tuhikaramea, on the Waipa river, where he farmed successfully for a long period. He was chairman of the Tuhikaramea road board, the Waipa county council and the hospital and charitable aid board.

In 1893 he was elected M.H.R. for Waipa (defeating Gerald Peacocke) and at the following election he gained the new Waikato seat, which he held until 1905 (when he was unseated by H. J. Greenslade). The death of Kirkbride a few months later made a vacancy in Manukau, and he represented that district until 1922 (when he was defeated by W. J. Jordan). Lang was a hard-working member of parliamentary committees, notably those on lands, agriculture and stock. He was for some years senior Reform whip; and in 1912 chairman of committees. In the following year he succeeded Guinness as Speaker of the House and held that position until 1923. (K.B. 1916.) In 1924 Lang was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member at his death (on 5 Mar 1937).

*NZ.P.D.*, 10 Sep 1937; *Who's Who NZ.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *NZ. Herald*, 6 Mar 1937. Portrait: Parliament House.

LARKWORTHY, FALCONER (1833-1928) was the son of a surgeon and was born at Weymouth, England, educated partly at the Liverpool Institute, and at the age of 16 entered the countinghouse of a firm of East India merchants in London. In 1852 he joined the Oriental Bank Corporation, and was sent out as sub-accountant to a new branch in Mauritius. Ill-health led him to Australia in 1855, and from the management of the agency at Beechworth he was sent to New Zealand in 1861. There he received instructions to wind up the business of the Oriental Bank.

Later in the year he opened a branch of the Bank of New Zealand. In his book *Ninety-One Years* (published in 1924), he describes the straits to which he was reduced to provide currency for the purchase of gold from miners

## LARNACH

'on the new fields, then at the height of their prosperity. He opened an agency at Wetherstones, where he bought gold for notes. In his absence with the escort in Dunedin, a run occurred and he had to hasten back to arrest it. At the end of the year he returned to England, where he was for almost 30 years managing director of the Bank of New Zealand. Larkworthy was concerned in the flotation and management of the New Zealand Loan and Mercantile Agency Co., of which he was managing director from 1866 to 1890; the Waikato Land association and the Auckland Agricultural Co. From 1863 he was connected with the Commercial Assurance Co.

In 1898 he became a director of the Ionian Bank, and in 1900 chairman. In 1903 the King of Greece made him a commander of the order of the Saviour for his services. Larkworthy died on 22 May 1928.

Larkworthy, *op. cit.* (p), and *N.Z. Revisited* (1881); Ross; J. G. Wilson; Preshaw; Beauchamp.

LARNACH, WILLIAM JAMES MUDIE (1838-98) was born at Castle Forbes, on the Hunter river, New South Wales, his father (James Larnach) having arrived in the Colony in 1822 as a cadet to Major Innes. Young Larnach was educated at Hetherington's High School, Singleton, Patrick Plains and Sydney College. As a boy he visited the goldfield discovered by Hargreaves, near Bathurst, and worked for four months on the Turon field. He spent some years on the land, and about 1863 entered the service of the Bank of New South Wales, eventually becoming manager of the Geelong branch. In 1866-67 he paid an extended visit to Europe with his family, and shortly after returning was offered from London the chief colonial management of the Bank of Otago. Larnach arrived in Dunedin in Sep 1867, and was successful until the London board agreed on a merger of the bank with the National. He remained in the service of the National for a year, and then retired to join Walter Guthrie in Guthrie and Larnach, ironmongers, hardware merchants and sawmillers. The firm languished in the eighties, and in 1887 Larnach went to Melbourne to start in business with Montague Pym. He soon returned to Dunedin, and was a director of the Colonial Bank until it merged in the Bank of New Zealand.

## LARNACH

Larnach was first induced to offer himself for Parliament in 1875, when he contested the Peninsula seat against Stout, and was defeated by II votes. At the general election next year he came forward for the City of Dunedin as a strong anti-abolitionist and was returned, with Stout and Macandrew. During the session of 1877 he moved the vote of no-confidence which resulted in the defeat of the Whitaker-Atkinson Government and was sent for by the Governor (Normanby). When Grey formed his ministry Larnach was Colonial Treasurer and Minister of Public Works and Railways. His financial policy included the nationalising of the land funds of the provinces. At the request of his colleagues he resigned his two principal portfolios and went to England early in 1878 to float a three-million loan. This he succeeded in doing, and he also arranged that the Bank of England should act as agents for such transactions instead of the private banking houses as hitherto. As one of the two commissioners from New Zealand to the Paris Exhibition of 1878 he spent several months in France. In 1879 he received the C.M.G. Meanwhile his colleagues had put in his resignation without calling him to the Council, and when he returned to New Zealand he was out of Parliament for two years. In Nov 1882 a vacancy occurred for the Peninsula seat through the death of the sitting member, and Larnach was returned, his principal opponent being Bishop Moran (q.v.). He declined to join the first Stout-Vogel Government in 1884. In Jan 1885 he was invited to join the second and (on condition that he had a free hand in developing mining) he accepted the portfolios of Mines and Marine, which he administered capably for more than two years. A promise to call him to the Legislative Council was not honoured, and he represented the Peninsula continuously until 1890. In that year the rising power of Labour, to which (although a Liberal) he would make no concessions, led to his defeat by Earnshaw. In 1893 Larnach contested Wakatipu against Fraser (without success), but on the death of Pyke he won the Tuapeka seat against M. J. S. Mackenzie (Jul 1894). He was a helpful critic of financial legislation, and suggested to Ward a means of financing advances to settlers without charging more than 3 per cent. interest. In 1891 he was chairman of the royal

commission on the public trust. He was re-elected for Tuapeka in 1896. Larnach's activities in the financial world were wide and varied. Besides his own business in Dunedin, he was one of the promoters of the National Insurance Co. and a director until his death. He was a promoter of the Colonial Bank, and a director until he left the Colony in 1887, and again from his return until its amalgamation with the Bank of New Zealand. He was a director of the Kaitangata Coal Co. (1881-92).

Larnach married (1859) Eliza Jane (d. 1880), daughter of Richard Guise (New South Wales). In 1882 he married Mary Cockburn (d. 1887), daughter of R. J. Alleyne (Murrumbidgee, New South Wales). In 1891 he married Constance, daughter of A. de B. Brandon (q.v.). He died on 12 Oct 1898.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 13 Oct 1898; *Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Ross; Gisborne; Saunders; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Oct 1898; *Otago Daily Times* and *Evening Star*, 13 Oct 1898. Portrait: Parliament House.

LATTER, EDWARD CIRCUIT (1829-96) was born at Wicken, Cambridgeshire. He came to New Zealand in the *Travancore* (1851), worked for a while in Christchurch and on Innes's station in South Canterbury; then opened a quarry on the Port Hills and started a dairy farm at Governors Bay. He represented Heathcote in the Provincial Council (1860-61). In 1862 he settled at Akaroa as a merchant and shipping agent, and acquired the steamer *Wainui* to maintain a service between the bays and Lyttelton. In 1876 he extended his operations to Barry's Bay, where he took up 2,000 acres and opened a sawmill. In 1879 he was appointed land tax commissioner, and in 1884 official assignee, which positions he held to 1889. Latter was chairman of the Akaroa county council and road board and a member of the Ellesmere trust. He was a J.p., a synodman and a freemason. He married (1854) Mary Elizabeth (1838-94), daughter of Samuel Gundry (who arrived in the *Steadfast* 1851). Latter died on 4 Sep 1896.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Stack, *Early Maoriland Adventures*, and *More Adventures*; *Lyttelton Times*, 27 Jun 1894, 5 Sep 1896.

LAUPER, JAKOB, or LOUPER, belonged to Giffers, canton Freiburg, Switzerland, and came to New Zealand in 1863. He was engaged with

## LAUPER

## LAURENSEN

J. H. Whitcombe (q.v.) in exploration of the routes to the West Coast when the latter was drowned. Lauper's report of the exploration appears in the *Canterbury Provincial Gazette* (1863, vol x, no. 10). He received a grant of £100 from the province for his services. Some years later he returned to his native land, which he again left in 1884 or 1885 for New Zealand.

*Canterbury P.E. Proc.*, ii, p 214; *Canterbury Gaz. cit.*; Lands and Survey dept' (information); Dobson; Harrop, *Westland*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i, 1023; *Lyttelton Times*, II Jul 1863.

LAURENSEN, GEORGE (1857-1913) was born in Edinburgh, and educated at a private school in the Shetland islands. He served for a short time in the office of a ship chandler in Glasgow before coming to New Zealand with his parents in 1876. Here he studied for the civil service, but took employment with R. Forbes and Co., ships' store merchants at Lyttelton, and eventually became a partner. He retired in 1906.

Laurenson was a member of the Lyttelton borough council, and chairman of the school committee and the harbour board. In 1899 he won the Lyttelton parliamentary seat as an independent Liberal. For some years he gave a general support to the Seddon Government, but about 1905, with T. E. Taylor, H. D. Bedford and F. M. B. Fisher, he withdrew to form an independent wing known as the New Liberals. He was Minister of Marine, Labour and Customs in the Mackenzie Government of 1912, but thereafter was a private member till his death (on 19 Nov 1913). Laurenson was deeply interested in social movements, and devoted much time to temperance reform, the sailors' home in Lyttelton, and the Boys' Gordon club (from which the Gordon Hall in Christchurch sprang). He was an elder of St Paul's Presbyterian Church in Christchurch, and of St John's in Lyttelton, and was associated with Sunday school work for a long period. He was also chief of the Scottish society, took much interest in the development and beautifying of Lyttelton and was a keen yachtsman, owning the *Fleetwing*.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 19 Nov 1913; *Lyttelton Times* and *The Press*, 20 Nov 1913.

LAVAUD, CHARLES FRANCOIS (1798-1878) was born at Lorient, France, and entered the

## LAVAUD

French Navy as an apprentice in the frigate *Nymphé* in 1810. He served in India (1811), in the frigate *Junon* in the Greek war of independence (1826-28) and later commanded the *Philomène* (1829-31), the *Endymion*, *Cuirassier*, *Aube* and *Bonite*. (Ensign 1819; lieutenant 1825; captain 1832; post-captain 1840.)

Before sailing for the Pacific in command of the *Aube* in 1839, Lavaud was called into conference by the Minister of Marine to discuss the protection proposed to be extended to the Nanto-Bordelaise Company in New Zealand and the whale fisheries. His orders were to hoist the French flag only at Akaroa. Lavaud arrived at Bay of Islands on 10 Jul 1840, and met Captain Hobson (with whom he discussed his intentions), Bishop Pompallier, de Thierry and others. In view of his statements Hobson despatched the brig *Britomart* on 22 Jul to take a magistrate to Akaroa, so that a British court of justice might be in existence when the French arrived. The *Britomart* reached her destination on 10 Aug, and five days later the *Aube* appeared off the harbour and was towed in by the British ship's boats. On the 17th the *Comte de Paris* arrived with the French immigrants, who landed two days later. When the *Britomart* left, on the 27th, Lavaud co-operated cordially with the magistrate (C. B. Robinson) in maintaining order in the settlement, even to the extent of landing a police guard to enforce the regulations they had agreed upon. Hobson, arriving on a visit on 12 Sep 1841, appreciated the tactful manner in which Lavaud had conducted himself, and, since the question was still being discussed between the two governments, he agreed not to weaken Lavaud's authority with the French people by hoisting the British flag on shore.

Lavaud terminated his commission in New Zealand in 1843 and returned to France. His conduct was warmly approved by the Minister of Marine and he was advanced to the rank of an officer of the Legion of Honour (1842). In 1846 he was appointed governor of the French establishments in Oceania, commander of the frigate *Sirene* and the naval squadron on the station. In 1849 he returned to France, and in 1856 was appointed second in command of the squadron of evolutions and later to command the first division of the squadron. In 1860 he was appointed to the general staff.

## LAWRENCE

Lavaud died on 11 Mar 1878. A street in Wellington is named after him.

*G.B.O.P.*, 1841/311; 1842/569; *Ministere de Ja Marine (Service Historique)*; Buick, *French at Akaroa and Waitangi*; Scholefield, *Hobson*.

LAWRENCE, BURTON CHARLES, was born in London and came to New Zealand in the *Joseph Fletcher* (1853). He was engaged in his trade in New Plymouth, and represented the town in the Provincial Council (1866-73).

*Parltry Record*.

LAWRENCE, JAMES, was born at Hythe, Kent, in 1826, educated there and joined the customs at Folkestone. He came to New Zealand with H. S. Tiffen in the *Westminster* in 1856, and became his manager at Homewood, Kaitiaki. He afterwards purchased a portion of this estate and carried it on as a sheep run till 1886. Lawrence was in the Hawkes Bay Provincial Council for Te Aute in 1875. He was chairman of the Kaitiaki road board, school committee and licensing committee, a justice of the peace and president of the Wai-pawa Racing club. He married (1866) a daughter of Captain Brown, R.N., of Sligo, Ireland.

*Parltry Record; Cycl. N.I.*, vi (p).

LAWRY, FRANK (1844-1921) was born at Bleadon, Somerset, the son of a farmer and Methodist minister. Educated at Weston-super-Mare, he arrived in New Zealand by the *Ulcoates* (1863) and engaged in farming. He was chairman of the Epsom road board and the Epsom school committee, was on the Auckland education board (1885-87), and some time president of the Agricultural and Pastoral society. After contesting the South Franklin and Manukau seats in 1881 and 1884 (against Hamlin and O'Rorke), Lawry in 1887 was elected for the Franklin South seat in Parliament. At the election of 1890 he won Parnell, which he held until his retirement in 1911. Lawry was senior whip (1891-94) and chairman of the agricultural and stock committee. He died on 19 Jan 1921.

*N.I.P.D., pass.*, 11 Mar 1921; *Who's Who N.I.*, 1908; *N.I. Herald*, 20 Jan 1921. Portrait: Parliament House.

LAWRY, HENRY HASSALL (1821-1906), a son of Walter Lawry (q.v.), was born at Parramatta

## LAWRY

in 1821, and spent six years at the Kingswood School near Bristol (for the children of Wesleyan ministers). In 1836 he was apprenticed to a printer, and he was a journeyman when the family returned to New Zealand (1843).

Lawry joined the mission forthwith, and was received into the ministry in 1845. During the next four years he was engaged with Buddie in organising and teaching at the native institutions at Grafton road and Three Kings. He then took charge of the mission station at Waima, where he remained until it was broken up by the war (1864). The native institutions were suspended for the same reason, and during 1864-79 Lawry did supernumerary work in and about Auckland. Then at the suggestion of Sir George Grey he was appointed an interpreter in the native land court. From the time he returned to Auckland his home at Carlton Gore was a centre of the evangelical alliance. He was from 1866 secretary of the Auckland auxiliary of the British and Foreign Bible Society, and in 1892 was elected a life governor of the parent body. For 30 years he was secretary of the Educational Institution, afterwards known as Prince Albert College, of which he was also a trustee. He edited and put through the press a Maori service book and assisted Maunsell (q.v.) in revising and printing the Maori Bible. He died on 8 May 1906. His son, the REV ALBERT CHARLES LAWRY, was president of the New Zealand conference in 1916.

*Who's Who N.I.*, 1924; *Morley; N.I. Herald*, 9 May 1906.

LAWRY, SAMUEL (1854-1933) was born at Bodmin, Cornwall, and came to New Zealand with his parents in 1862. From the yeoman stock of Cornish Methodism he inherited a stalwart frame and a virile intellect. He joined the Methodist Church when 10 years old and became a local preacher in 1872. He pursued his studies first under the Rev J. B. Richardson and later at Three Kings College. In 1877 he began his ministry at Rangitikei, and for 34 years served in various circuits. For seven years he rode over 4,000 miles a year on horseback. In 1881 he married Janet McHardie, of the Hutt (who died 1920).

On seven occasions Lawry was secretary of conference, and he became president of the

## LAWRY

New Zealand conference in 1904. He also served as chairman of synods and was assistant secretary to the general conference of Australasia. He excelled in ecclesiastical statesmanship, and was well versed in the principles and policy of his Church. In 1911 he was appointed connexional secretary. He led the movement for an independent self-governing conference for New Zealand, and had a large share in promoting the Methodist Union within New Zealand, in recognition of which he was elected president of the United conference in 1913. He became secretary and managing treasurer of the supernumerary fund and business manager of the *Methodist Times*. For some years he was on the board of governors of Canterbury College, and he was a member of the Boys' Gordon Hall trust established by Sir John Hall.

Lawry was superannuated in 1927, and was succeeded by the Rev M. A. Rugby Pratt. He died on 26 Jul 1933. M.A.R.P.

LAWRY, WALTER (1793-1859). Born at Ruthern Bridge, near Bodmin, Cornwall, on 3 Aug 1793, Lawry was the son of a devout yeoman farmer. Received into the Methodist ministry at the conference of 1817, he was appointed as the second Wesleyan missionary in Australia to be colleague to Samuel Leigh (q.v.). He sailed in the convict ship *Lady Castlereagh*, and arrived at Port Jackson on 1 May 1818. He laboured at Parramatta with Leigh until 1820, when the mission was divided into three circuits, and he was appointed to Parramatta. In 1819 he married Miss Hassall, daughter of a pioneer missionary to Tahiti, and sister of Marsden's son-in-law, the Rev Thomas Hassall. Owing to a difference amongst the subscribers as to opening the chapel to all Non-conformists, Lawry built it mainly at his own expense on a site given by Governor Macquarie.

Meeting at Parramatta the widow of Shelley, one of the survivors of the pioneer mission to Tonga (1797), Lawry became interested in this far field. As a result he succeeded in moving the British conference in 1820 to appoint him with another to labour in Tonga. Without waiting for his colleague to be appointed, he sailed in the hired ship *St Michael*, with his wife and two artisans and a few cattle presented by Governor Brisbane. He reached the Bay of Islands

## LAWRY

on 12 Jul 1822 and remained till the 28th. On 16 Aug he landed at Nukualofa. Land for the mission was given by a son of the first Tugi, who, however, declined to protect the mission. After undergoing many annoyances, and the climate from which the health of his wife suffered, Lawry was obliged to leave the group. He reached Sydney on 23 Oct 1823. The mission was reopened in 1826 by two Tahitian converts, and Lawry's successors arrived shortly afterwards.

In 1824 Lawry proceeded to England, where he spent the years 1825-44 in circuit work. In 1843 he was appointed general superintendent of the Wesleyan missions in New Zealand and visitor to those of Polynesia, a position he held for 11 years. He reached New Zealand on 17 Mar 1844, at a critical time in the relations with the Maori. The great tribal meeting was held at Remuera shortly afterwards, and a few months later war broke out in the north, causing the temporary closing of many mission stations. Meanwhile Lawry was closely engaged in the organisation of the church in Auckland for both races. Sectional meetings were held all over the district. Lawry, always mindful of the Maori, proposed to Sir George Grey the establishment of an institution for the training of native boys and girls, teachers and ministers, the outcome of which was the model school at Three Kings and Wesley College in Auckland. There a large number of youths were trained in the rudiments of English education and Christian knowledge and in industrial pursuits.

During these years Lawry paid two visits to Tonga and Fiji (1847 and 1850) in the new mission ship *John Wesley* (which had replaced the *Triton* in 1846). In her also he went to England in 1849, with the Rev William Williams and Tamihana te Rauparaha as fellow passengers.

After his return to New Zealand he assisted in the formation of the Australasian Wesleyan Methodist conference. In 1854 he was superannuated and moved to New South Wales. Lawry died at Parramatta on 30 Mar 1859, leaving a mark on the history of his church. He was a man of robust constitution and manner, a powerful preacher and able administrator. His widow died at Auckland 9 Dec 1877, aged 89. Amongst his publications were narratives of his

## LAZAR

two visits to the Friendly Islands and Fiji.

Morley; Marsden, *Lieutenants*; Ramsden; M. A. R. Pratt (information); Lawry, *op. cit.*; Men-  
nell; Buller.

LAZAR, JOHN (1801-79) was born at Edin-  
burgh, and arrived in New South Wales by the  
*Lady McNaughten* (1836). There he engaged  
in the theatrical profession till 1851, leasing  
and managing theatres in Australia and play-  
ing in his own productions. He then went into  
business as a jeweller in Adelaide, was an alder-  
man of the City Council (1853-55 and 1857-59)  
and mayor (1855-57). In 1863 Lazar left for  
New Zealand, having lived for 24 years in  
South Australia. He was clerk of the Dunedin  
town board (1863-65) and town clerk (1865-  
66), and on resigning to live in Hokitika re-  
ceived a gratuity of £200. He was town clerk  
of Hokitika (1866), county treasurer (1873),  
and eventually provincial treasurer. Lazar was  
very prominent in freemasonry, into which he  
was initiated in Sydney in 1838. In South Aus-  
tralia he was deputy provincial grandmaster;  
and he was provincial district grand-master for  
Westland (1871-79). He was a member of the  
Jewish community. His death occurred on 8  
Jun 1879.

*City of Adelaide Alunicipal Yearbook* (1920);  
Barclay; *Grey River Argus*, 9 Jun 1879.

LEADLEY, GEORGE WILLIAM (1856-1933),  
who was born in Yorkshire, came to New Zea-  
land in 1863 by the *Lancashire Witch*. His  
father, C. R. Leadley, was one of the early set-  
tlers of Courtenay, Canterbury. In 1877 he  
bought land at Ashburton, which he sold to the  
Government as the Valverde estate in 1911  
and moved to Eglin.

In public life Leadley served as chairman of  
the Wakanui road board and school committee  
and of the Ashburton Agricultural and Pastoral  
association, and as a member of the Ashburton  
county council, and of the licensing committee.  
He took a prominent part in establishing the  
Fairfield freezing works and the Ashburton Co-  
operative Dairy Co. In 1901 he formed at Ash-  
burton the first South Island branch of the New  
Zealand Farmers' Union, of which he became  
local and Dominion president.

Leadley was for many years a prominent local  
preacher in the Methodist Church, and was  
elected president of the New Zealand local

## LEE

preachers' association. He married in 1881,  
Elizabeth, daughter of William Paterson, of  
Prebbleton, and 1901, Elizabeth, daughter of  
William Fleming, of Ashburton. Leadley died  
on 15 Nov 1933.

*Who's Who No2.*, 1924, 1932; *Ashburton Guard-  
ian*, 16 Nov 1933.

LEARY, RICHARD HENRY (1840-95) was born  
at Southall, Middlesex, and educated at an ele-  
mentary private school in London. In 1854 he  
emigrated to Victoria, where he spent some  
years on the gold diggings, in the bush and  
in merchants' offices in Ballarat and Melbourne.  
For a while he represented his firm in Geelong.  
In Sep 1861 he came to Otago, spent a few  
months on the goldfields and then became man-  
ager for R. Wilson and Co., in Dunedin. In  
1865 he moved to Hokitika, but a few years  
later was back in Dunedin as accountant to  
Driver, McLean and Co. On the dissolution of  
that firm (1871) he started in business as a  
public accountant and estate agent, and for  
some years was also provincial trustee in bank-  
ruptcy. In 1878 he entered into partnership  
with Horace Bastings, as Bastings, Leary and  
Co., auctioneers and agents, afterwards continu-  
ing on his own account. He formed the account-  
ants' institute.

Leary was a member of the Dunedin City  
Council (1875). In 1877 he was elected mayor,  
but resigned a few months later when the  
Council refused to support him in a contest  
with the town clerk on the method of keeping  
the city accounts. He was re-elected on that  
occasion and again in 1886. In the latter term  
of office the foundation stone of the town hall  
was laid and the Silverstream water supply was  
adopted. In 1890 Leary contested the Dunedin  
City seat in Parliament (without success). He  
was a member of the first parliamentary union  
in Dunedin, and speaker when it was revived  
in 1893. For some time he was secretary of the  
Otago Central Railway league. He was man-  
ager of the *Otago Guardian* and from the for-  
mation of the *Otago Daily Times* Co. in 1878  
he was a director. His death occurred on 16  
May 1895 while he was in London as agent for  
the raising of a Dunedin city loan.

*Otago Daily Times*, 11 Jun 1895.

LEE, EDWARD JAMES (1822-83) was born in  
London, where he was engaged in a bank be-

## LEE

fore coming to Nelson (1848). In 1849, with  
Edward Jollie, he took up Mt Parnassus station,  
near which in 1859 William Jones discovered  
the Hammer springs. Lee and Jollie drove  
1,800 sheep through from Nelson to the Wai-  
au-ua, taking two months and losing only 3  
per cent. Lee moved to Southbridge in 1862,  
and was a member of the road board for a long  
period, and chairman of the Selwyn county  
council. He was elected to represent Selwyn  
in Parliament in 1883, and died on 17 Dec  
of that year. He married (1851) a daughter of  
Archdeacon Paul. Lee drove the first flock  
of sheep overland from Nelson to Canterbury.

*Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N02.*, iii; Adand; *Lyttel-  
ton Times*, 21 Dec 1883.

LEE, ERNEST PAGE (1862-1932) was born at  
Teignmouth, England, and educated at Chel-  
tenham and London. In 1880 he was articled  
to a firm of solicitors in the west of England,  
and in 1885 he was admitted a solicitor. He  
came to New Zealand in 1886 and qualified as a  
barrister and solicitor. He was for some years  
managing clerk to Hislop and Creagh, Oamaru,  
and then practised with A. J. Grave (as Lee,  
Grave and Grave).

Lee was a member of the Oamaru borough  
council and of the school committee; a founder  
of the North Otago Jockey club, a member of  
the Waitaki High School board of governors  
and a strenuous advocate of junior high schools.  
In 1911 he defeated T. Y. Duncan for the  
Oamaru seat in Parliament, which he held  
until 1922 when he was defeated by J. A. Mac-  
pherson. He regained the seat three years later,  
but was again defeated by Macpherson in 1928.

Lee married Jane Winifred de Lambert  
(Oamaru). He died on 18 Feb 1932.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Otago Daily Times*, 19  
Feb 1932.

LEE, GEORGE LESLIE (1814-97) was one of  
the earliest settlers in Canterbury, taking up,  
first Highfield, and afterwards Stoke Grange,  
Moeraki. He represented Amuri in the Nelson  
Provincial Council (1855-57) and Oxford in the  
Canterbury Council (1867-70), being a member  
of Jollies' executive (1868-69). In 1862 he was  
called to the Legislative Council, of which he  
was a member till 1870. On giving up farming,  
Lee became clerk of the Provincial Council and  
later returning officer for Christchurch. He once

## LEE

owned racehorses, including Nourmahal. He  
married (1857) a daughter of Colonel Fuller.  
He died on 15 Sep 1897.

*Parltry Record*; *Nelson and Canterbury P.C.  
Proc.*; Roberts; *Lyttelton Times* and *The Press*,  
16 Sep 1897.

LEE, ROBERT (1837-1922) was born at Gran-  
tham, Lincolnshire, and educated there. Mter  
three years as a pupil teacher he won a scholar-  
ship at St Mark's College, Chelsea, and after  
completing that was for two years master in  
charge of the College upper division practising  
school. In 1856 he was appointed headmaster  
of All Saints Boys' school at Preston, Lanca-  
shire, and in 1863 was offered the headmaster-  
ship of the Bishop's school at Nelson. There  
he remained till the end of 1873, when he be-  
came inspector of schools for Wellington provin-  
cial district, a post he held for 28 years. He  
introduced and developed the system of stan-  
dards. In 1906 Lee was commissioner on the  
Te Aute and Wanganui College endowments.  
He was the editor of Longman's *Geographical  
Reader for New Zealand* and leaflets in arith-  
metic. He married (1870) Fanny, daughter of  
John Gully (q.v.).

*Who's Who N.z.*, 1908; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Evening  
Post*, 19 Jun 1922.

LEE, SAMUEL (1783-1852) was born of poor  
parents at Longnor, Shropshire, given an ele-  
mentary education in the parish and appren-  
ticed at 12 to a carpenter. Fond of reading and  
languages, he mastered Greek and Hebrew by  
private study before he was 25 and made pro-  
gress in Chaldee, Syriac, Persian and Hindus-  
tani. Marriage compelled him to work harder  
at his trade, but he became a teacher in Bowd-  
ler's foundation school in Shrewsbury. Under  
the auspices of the Church Missionary Society  
he entered Queen's College, Cambridge (1813),  
where he graduated (B.A. 1818; M.A. 1819;  
B.D. 1827; D.D. 1833). In 1819 he became  
professor of Arabic, and in 1831 regius profes-  
sor of Hebrew. A profound linguist, he made  
a study of the Maori language with Hongi,  
Waikato and Kendall, and successfully produced  
the first *Grammar and Vocabulary of the New  
Zealand Language* (1820). Lee died on 16 Dec  
1852.

*D.N.B.*; Hocken in *Trans. N.Z. Inst.*; Marsden, *L.  
and I., Lieutenants*.

## LEE

LEE, WALTER (1811-87) arrived in Auckland in 1842 and engaged in sawmilling and other ventures. Elected to the first Parliament for Northern Division (1853), he sat to 1860. When it was proposed to open the proceedings of Parliament with prayers Lee, who was a Roman Catholic, moved a resolution (which, on the suggestion of E. G. Wakefield, he withdrew) disapproving of 'converting the House into a conventicle.' He was chairman of the first Auckland City Council (1855), and was M.P.C. for Northern Division (1857-60). Lee died on 29 Jan 1887.

*Parltry Record; Auckland P.C. Proc.; N.Z. Herald*, 30 Jan 1887.

LEE, WILLIAM (1840-1925), who was a native of Yorkshire, was ordained by the Methodist Church in 1864. Coming to New Zealand some years later, he was superintendent of 14 different circuits, including New Plymouth, Christchurch and Auckland (where he retired in 1907). Lee served as president of the Methodist Church conference for several terms and also held a number of connectional offices. He twice visited England as a representative of the New Zealand Church at British conferences. He died on 12 Nov 1925.

*eye!*. N.Z., iii; *Evening Post*, 14 Nov 1925.

LEIGH, SAMUEL (1785-1852). The pioneer of Methodism in Australia and in New Zealand was born at Milton, near Hanley, in Staffordshire, on 1 Sep 1785 and came early under strong religious influence. He joined the Congregational Church and prepared for the ministry, becoming a student under Dr Bogue at the academy at Gosport; but, finding this rather Calvinistic for his maturing judgment, he offered himself to the Wesleyan Methodist society at Portsmouth and was approved by conference as a probationer. He was two years on circuit duty at Shaftesbury before being ordained in 1814 and appointed by the conference to North America. The political disturbances in Canada caused the cancellation of this appointment.

Meanwhile he was inspired by Dr Coke to enter the mission field. The missionary committee in London, having received complaints as to the low moral state of the colony of New South Wales, decided to send him there as a missionary to the savages and settlers. Leigh sailed from Portsmouth in the *Hebe* on 28 Feb

## LEIGH

1815, and landed in Sydney on 15 Aug 1815, the pioneer Wesleyan missionary in the southern world. He opened the first Wesleyan chapel in the southern world at Castlereagh. In New South Wales he won the confidence and good will of Governor Macquarie. He founded in Sydney the first Benevolent Society in Australia, as well as a Bible Society, a tract society and the Australian Methodist Missionary society. The work in the colony entailed severe hardship, from which his health suffered, and it was on the suggestion of the Rev Samuel Marsden, who had given him his cordial support in establishing Methodism in New South Wales, that for health reasons he paid a visit to New Zealand.

Landing from the *Active* on 5 May 1819, he stayed there nine months. At Marsden's request he mediated in differences that had arisen amongst the workers in the Anglican lay mission. He restored harmony amongst them, and organised their work on a circuit basis. His report to Marsden led to the appointment of the first Anglican clergyman (the Rev J. G. Butler, q.v.) to New Zealand. When Leigh visited England in 1820 to advocate the establishment of a Wesleyan mission in New Zealand, the Church Missionary Society thanked him for his services to the Anglican mission there and made him a presentation of books. When he laid before Mission House the necessity of opening the field in New Zealand and Tonga, the conference, though badly in need of funds, accepted his proposals (1820). He then made an energetic canvass for goods, the yield of which materially assisted the support of both missions. Leigh was appointed to New Zealand, and Lawry (who had arrived in New South Wales in 1818) to Tonga. Having married Miss Clewes, Leigh sailed in the *Brixton* on 28 Apr 1821, and reached Port Jackson on 16 Sep. They crossed to New Zealand by the *Active*, arrived on 22 Jan 1822, and were heartily welcomed at Paihia by the C.M.S. missionaries, with whom they lived for 16 months acquiring the Maori language. Leigh preached his first sermon in Maori on 25 Aug.

As Hongi's hostility forbade the establishment of a mission at Mercury Bay, Leigh prospected both Whangarei and Whangaroa. He chose the latter, and landed on 6 Jun 1823 from the *St Michael*. His first mission at Whangaroa he

## LELIEVRE

opened under the protection of the native chief George, who had been mainly responsible for the burning of the *Boyd*. Leigh encountered many difficulties and dangers in establishing himself at Wesleydale, near Kaeo, seven miles up the river. The tribal wars following the return of Hongi often threatened the mission. Leigh suffered a severe attack of fever, and when the Turners and Hobbs visited the station with Marsden in Aug 1823 his health was so feeble that Marsden insisted on taking him back to Australia. Mr and Mrs Leigh and Marsden left by the *Brampton* on 7 Sep 1823, but the vessel was wrecked. The passengers and crew spent three days on an island, and subsequently sailed from Bay of Islands in the *Dragon* on 14 Nov 1823, and reached Sydney on the 30th.

Here Leigh continued to work until the death of his wife (15 May 1831). He then returned to England, where he became a supernumerary in 1845, but continued to work on the platform on behalf of the mission. He married a second time (1842), and died at Reading on 2 May 1852.

*Austral Encycl.*; Buller; A. Strachan, *Life of Samuel Leigh*; Marsden, L. and J., and Lieuts.; G. Smales, in *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Dec 1893.

LELIEVRE, FRANCOIS (1803-1902) was born in France. He went to sea and first came to New Zealand in the whaler *Nile* in 1837. He was present when Captain Langlois purchased part of Banks Peninsula, and again in the *Cachelot* (1838). In 1840 he came to Akaroa as one of the emigrants in the *Comte de Paris*. He entered into business as a blacksmith, but was also a sheep farmer. Lelievre died on 12 Jul 1902, the last of the French settlers.

Jacobson; J. Hay; Buick, *French at Akaroa; The Press*, 14 Jul 1902.

LEMON, CHARLES (1834-1901) was born in London, educated there, and at the age of 13 entered the technical school at South Kensington, where he applied himself particularly to the study of surveying and electricity. His brother John having settled in Oamaru and prospered, Lemon came out to join him, worked for a short time at his own trade as a builder, and was then appointed postmaster at Oamaru (1863). When the telegraph line was opened (1865) he was appointed telegraphist, being in-

## LENIHAN

structed by John Bull in the Morse code. In 1867 he was General Manager of Telegraphs, which at that time was confined to 757 miles of line. Lemon showed unusual business capacity and energy in developing the service by erecting new lines all over the Colony. In 1881 he was superintendent of the telegraph branch of the Post and Telegraph department, and when he retired (in 1894) there were in New Zealand 5,513 miles of line. He installed a duplex system in 1874. When the Western Electric Co. of Chicago wished to introduce its telephones he persuaded the Government to exercise the sole right to operate the new instruments. In recognition of his assistance to the American expedition which came to New Zealand to observe the transit of Venus (1874-75), Lemon had conferred on him by Hamilton University, U.S.A., the degree of doctor of philosophy. After his retirement he farmed a property at Fitzherbert, Palmerston North, where he died on 6 May 1901. Though the postal and telegraph branches were amalgamated in 1881 Lemon, as superintendent of telegraphs, continued to be responsible to the minister.

Post and Telegraph dept. records; J. E. Green in *P. and T. Guild Jour.*, Dec 1934; *Evening Post* and *N.Z. Times*, 7 May 1901; *NZ. Graphic*, 25 Feb 1893 (p).

LENIHAN, GEORGE MICHAEL (1858-1910) was born in London of Irish parents, who died while he was a child. At 14 he entered the Benedictine College at Ramsgate, which was then under the Lord Abbot Alcock (who had associated with him Father Edmund Luck, q.v.). After four years there, he went to St Edmund's College, Oldhall Green, to study for the Westminster diocese priesthood, and then for philosophy and theology to the English College at Valladolid, Spain. In 1882, when he was a sub-deacon, he was invited to accompany Bishop Luck to New Zealand, and he was the first student of Ramsgate College to be ordained to the secular priesthood (on 27 Aug 1882).

Arriving in Auckland late in the year, Lenihan was appointed curate to Monsignor Walter Macdonald at St Patrick's Cathedral, where he worked for more than three years. In 1886 he was appointed pastor of Ponsonby, which he found without either church or presbytery. The church was blessed six months later, and opened

## LEPPER

within the year. Lenihan had also entrusted to him the charge of the Star of the Sea orphanage at St Mary's. In 1891 he was appointed irremovable rector of Parnell, and four years later coadjutor to Bishop Luck, on whose death (early in 1896) he was selected as bishop. He was consecrated on 15 Nov 1896.

In 1899 Lenihan visited Rome and Ireland and secured more priests for his diocese. He opened the Sacred Heart College in 1900, and in 1905 undertook the completion of St Patrick's Cathedral. This was accomplished in 1907, the complete building being dedicated in 1908. Lenihan again visited Europe and North America in 1908, when he attended the celebration of the golden jubilee of Pope Pius X and the Eucharistic congress in London. He died on 23 Feb 1910.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *N.Z. Herald*, 23 Feb 1910 (p).

LEPPER, MAXWELL (1828-69) got his ensigny in the 86th Regiment in 1847, purchased his lieutenancy in 1849 and his captaincy in 1855. In 1858 he went to India with the Regiment, and was present at the sieges of Chandaree and Jhansi, the battles of Betwa, Golowli and Kunch, and the capture of Kalpi (after which he commanded the European infantry in the pursuit); then at the battle of Morarand the capture of Gwalior. He was thrice mentioned in despatches, was promoted brevet-major, and received the medal and clasps. Lepper then exchanged (1860) into the 14th Regiment, with which he came to New Zealand. Here he retired from the army and was appointed lieutenant-colonel commanding the Taranaki Military Settlers (Sep 1864). He farmed the Brooklands estate and died at Manutahi on 24 Nov 1869.

*War Office records*; Wells; *Taranaki Herald*, 27 Nov 1869.

LETHBRIDGE, FRANK YATES (1852-1915) was born at New Plymouth, the son of G. M. Lethbridge (q.v.) and educated at a private school there, at Nelson public school and at Wellington College (1868-71). After finishing at a private school in Wellington, he started work on his father's property, and in 1876 took charge of the run at Feilding. He married his cousin (nee Lethbridge). He was 15 years a member (and six chairman) of the Manchester road board; was one of the first

## LEVESTAM

borough councillors of Feilding (of which he was mayor in 1882 and 1889); an original member of the Manawatu county council, and a member of the Wanganui education board and the Palmerston North hospital board (first chairman); and president of the Feilding Jockey club.

In 1893, as a Conservative, he contested the Rangitikei seat against J. Stevens (q.v.). He was M.H.R. for Rangitikei (1896-1902), and for Oroua (1903-06). Lethbridge was a lieutenant of militia and captain of the Manchester rifles. He died in 1915.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1896-1906 and 25 Jun 1915; Leckie; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

LETHBRIDGE, GEORGE YATES (1821-1902) was born at Ivybridge, Devon, and came to Taranaki with his parents in the *Oriental* (1841). During the Maori war he carried out contracts for the troops in the Taranaki and Wanganui districts. He was a member of the Taranaki Provincial Council (for Grey and Bell 1857-61, and for New Plymouth 1861-64). About 1867 he settled at Turakina, where he played his part on all local bodies, being chairman of the town board almost continuously from its inception, and first chairman of the Rangitikei county council. He died on 3 May 1902. (See his son, F. Y. LETHBRIDGE.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Taranaki P.C. minutes*.

LEVESTAM, HENRY AUGUSTUS (1833-89) was a native of Flensburg, in the Duchy of Schleswig, his father being a Danish doctor practising in Copenhagen. He was educated in Denmark, and after training as a marine engineer went to London for experience and was employed in English steamers. In 1855 he came to New Zealand as second engineer of the *Lord Ashley*, and he served also in the *Airedale* for some years before settling down in Nelson. There he married (1861) Miss Hargreaves. He established the Soho foundry and afterwards engineering works.

Though hampered in speaking by his foreign accent, Levestam was keenly interested in Liberal politics, and in 1881 was elected M.H.R. for Nelson City (defeating J. C. Richmond). He was elected again in 1884 (defeating Piper), and in 1887 (defeating Piper and Gibbs). He died on 11 Feb 1889.

*Parltry Record*; *N.Z.P.D.*, 1881-89; *Nelson Evening Mail*, 12 Feb 1889. Portrait: Parliament House.

## LEVIN

LEVIN, NATHANIEL WILLIAM (1819-1903) was born in London, and brought up to business life there. He came to New Zealand in 1841, and carried on business for some years. In 1852 (with C. J. Pharazyn) he established the firm of Levin and Co. The partnership was dissolved in 1869, when Levin retired and the firm was re-established by W. H. Levin and Walter Johnston (q.v.). Levin was on the roll of burgesses in 1843, and a lieutenant in the militia in 1845. In 1869 he was called to the Legislative Council, but he retired in 1871 on leaving the Colony to live in England. There he died on 30 Apr 1903. His widow (Jassy) died on 29 Aug 1904. (See GEORGE BEETHAM.)

Ward; *The Colonist*, 30 Nov 1869; *N.Z. Times*, 1 May 1903.

LEVIN, WILLIAM HORT (1845-93) was a native of Wellington, the son of Nathaniel Levin (q.v.). Educated at Toomath's school, he then went to England and on his return entered his father's firm as a wool clerk. In 1868 his father retired from the business, and he entered the partnership, which included also C. J. Pharazyn and Walter Johnston. When the partnership expired in 1878, Levin carried on for some years. In 1889 Edward Pearce joined his business with that of Levin and Co., and John Duncan also came in.

Levin in 1879 consented to be nominated for Parliament, in which he represented Wellington City (1879-81) and Thorndon (1881-84). His health was never robust, and he resigned his seat in 1884. In municipal life he was a member of the City Council for three years, representing Thorndon ward. He retired in 1884, and declined to stand for the mayoralty. In 1875 he was president of the chamber of commerce, which he found moribund, but left once more thriving. Then he turned his attention to the harbour board. In 1879 Levin, as member for the City, secured the passage through Parliament of bills establishing a harbour board and giving it the necessary powers to manage and develop the harbour. He was a member of the board (1880-83), and its first chairman. Levin was a director of the Patent Slip Co., the Wellington Trust and Loan Co. (some time chairman), the Wellington and Manawatu Railway Co., a New Zealand director of the Colonial Land and Loan association and of the

## LEWIS

National Mutual Life. He was a justice of the peace, and frequently presided in court. He was president of many sporting societies, including the Port Nicholson Yacht Club, and of the Art society, the Amateur Operatic and Dramatic society, and the Horticultural society.

The free library in Wellington originated from his gift of £1,000. He liberally assisted also the Working Men's club. His private charities were innumerable. The Home for the Aged Needy owed its existence largely to his munificence, and after his death, on 15 Sep 1893, a public meeting considered that the best memorial to him would be a home for friendless children. Levin married a daughter of James Edward FitzGerald.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Ward (p); *N.Z. Times*, 16 Sep 1893; *Evening Post*, 24 Sep 1929 (p).

LEVY, MORRIS (1821-1901) was born in Jersey, and went to sea as a boy. Finding his way to Melbourne he went into business, owning lighters and city property. In 1861 he came to Otago and settled at Invercargill, where he lightered, owned a coaster, the *Eclipse*, and acted as pilot to warships. During the depression Levy moved to the north, and with his brother kept a store at Opotiki and ran the *Eclipse* between that port and Auckland. As Jews, they were on good terms with the Hauhau. When Volkner was murdered, Levy remained to take off the Rev T. S. Grace, the survivor, and he piloted the *Huntress* when she arrived with the punitive expedition (Oct 1865). Levy lost heavily in the war. He moved to Nelson in 1871, and died there on 12 Sep 1901.

Cowan, ii; *The Colonist*, 14 Sep 1901; *Southern Cross*, 25 Oct 1865; *Wellington Independent*, [3 Apr 1865.

LEWIS, CHARLES (1857-1927) was born at Christchurch, the son of David Lewis, of Halswell. He was educated at Christ's College (1869-73) and then at Clifton and Malvern Colleges, in England. Returning to Canterbury in 1875, he became a cadet under Duncan Cameron, of Methven, and afterwards began farming at Brookside, Ellesmere. He was a member of the Halswell road board.

In 1896 Lewis contested as a Conservative the Christchurch seat, rendered vacant by the resignation of W. P. Reeves, and defeated two opponents. (Lewis, Conservative, 4,714; T. E.

## LEWIS

Taylor, prohibitionist, 4,204; R. M. Taylor, Liberal, 3,196). He was at the top of the poll at the following election, and represented Christchurch till 1901, when he resigned as a protest against the apathy of his supporters. In 1902 he won the Courtenay seat, which he represented till 1908. He was Conservative whip for some time. Lewis was chairman of the Canterbury College Council (1904-07) but did not take much part otherwise in public life. He was an expert breeder of Shropshire Down sheep, with which he won many prizes and he was interested in cricket and rifle shooting. In 1911 he moved to Hawkes Bay, and engaged in sheep farming at Makaretu. There he died on 28 Nov 1927.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 3 Jul 1928; *Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; Hight and Candy; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924; *The Press*, 29 Nov 1911. Portrait: Parliament House.

LEWIS, JOHN JAMES (1844-1931) was born at Abergavenny, Monmouthshire. After receiving an elementary education he studied at King Henry VIII Grammar School in his native town, and later at Boulogne-sur-Mer in France. After extensive travels in Europe he returned to England. He had been confirmed in the Church of England but joined the Wesleyan Methodist church in London in 1864. While following business pursuits there he served as a local preacher, and in 1868 was accepted as a candidate for the ministry. He was trained at Richmond Theological College.

Lewis sailed for New Zealand in the *City of Auckland* (having as fellow-passengers the Revs F. W. Isitt, J. S. Smalley and W. J. Williams and W. F. Massey) and reached Auckland on 11 Dec 1870. A widely read scholar with a mastery of at least a dozen languages in which he studied the Scriptures, he was a superb expositor and a fervent evangelist. Lewis was ordained at the first Methodist conference held at Christchurch (1874). Owing to a break-down in health he returned to England for two years and in 1877 he resumed work in New Zealand. He married (1880) M. E. G. Bowles of Waimate. Tireless in industry, punctual, exact in attention to detail, Lewis rose to eminence in administrative work in his church. Several times he represented New Zealand in the Methodist general conference of Australasia. In 1890 he was elected president of the New Zealand

## LEYS

land conference and in 1896 was appointed to represent New Zealand Methodism at the Irish Wesleyan conference. He held many important official positions and was chairman of synods on many occasions. He was an able and widely read scholar. Few were his equal in debate, but his powers of eloquence were most manifest in the pulpit. He was superannuated in 1919, but preached until his death (on 12 Jun 1931). M.A.R.P.

LEWTHWAITE, JOHN (1816-92) was born in Halifax, Yorkshire. He purchased land orders from the Plymouth Company, and came to New Zealand in the *Amelia Thompson* (1841). Having selected his land at Waitara and Mangaoraka in 1842, he held it until being ejected by Fitz-Roy's order. He then paid visits to other provinces to calculate his prospects. In 1844 he was at Otakou with Tuckett, a son being born at Koputai. Lewthwaite returned to Taranaki and entered into business with some success. From 1856-58 he was M.H.R. for Grey and Bell. About 1860 he moved to Nelson, where also he took an interest in politics, being a member of the Provincial Council for Massacre Bay (1861-65). Besides being an enterprising man of business, Lewthwaite had considerable skill as a mechanic. He devised a floating breakwater for New Plymouth on a system which was adopted later by engineers and he invented a railway ticket stamping machine. Lewthwaite died in London on 2 Aug 1892.

*Parltry Record*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vi; *The Colonist*, 20 Sep 1892.

LEYS, THOMSON WILSON (1850-1924) was the son of a Scots supervisor of inland revenue, and was born at Nottingham. Educated at the People's College in Nottingham, he undertook at the age of 12 to teach classes of small boys in the ragged schools, and soon became interested in other social work. In 1862 his father became associated with the proposed Nonconformist colony for Albertland, New Zealand, for which they sailed in the *Tyburnia*.

Landing at Auckland in Sep 1863, his father decided to remain there, and Thomson served a three-years' apprenticeship at the composer's case in the *Southern Cross*. He afterwards became sub-editor, but ill-health compelled him in the early seventies to take a respite from journalism and for some years he contributed

## LEYS

articles on commercial subjects and current topics. He then became sub-editor of the *Auckland Star* (1872) and on the retirement of G. M. Reed in 1876 was appointed editor, a position he held for 45 years. Leys compiled the first *Auckland Provincial Almanac and Handbook* and wrote the Auckland section of Vogel's *Handbook of New Zealand*. He edited the history of New Zealand, which was written by Sherrin and Wallace and published by Brett, and compiled the first *Colonists' Guide* (1883). In 1889 he became a partner in the *Auckland Star*, the *New Zealand Graphic* and the *New Zealand Farmer*, which had been floated into a company, and he was a managing director until his death. He was a director also of the *Napier Daily Telegraph Co.*, the Auckland Gas Co., and the Northern Milling Co.

Leys presided at the meeting held in Wellington at which the first Press agency was formed, which was afterwards amalgamated with the United Press Association. He was for many years the New Zealand representative of Reuters Telegram Co. and of the Sydney *Daily Telegraph* and the *Insurance and Banking Record*. In 1920, as chairman of the Zealand delegation to the Empire Press conference in Canada, he received the honorary LL.D. of McGill University.

Always strongly Liberal in politics, Leys supported Grey and later Ballance and Seddon. He declined a seat in the Legislative Council in the conviction that a journalist should not accept such a restriction on his freedom to criticise. In the nineties he represented a syndicate of New Zealand newspapers at the federal conventions in Australia, and in 1901 he was a member of the royal commission on federation. His services to education in Auckland were noteworthy. He made liberal donations to supplement the bequest of his brother William, in establishing the Leys institute in Ponsonby, and paid half the cost of the building and furnishings. He was president of the Ponsonby boys' brigade band and a councillor of the boy scouts' association. Having been interested in Mechanics' institutes, he was on the committee of the free public library in Auckland, assisted to draft its constitution and was president. He was president of the first libraries' conference in Dunedin, and took a great interest in school libraries under the Buffalo sys-

## UARDET

tem. Leys was also connected with the Auckland Art Gallery, the McKelvie Trust board and the Auckland War Museum, and presented a number of paintings to the Art Gallery. He was a member and some years chairman of the Auckland University College council, a member of the Auckland Institute and of the council of the Workers' Educational Association. He died on 27 Sep 1924.

*Auckland Star*, 27 Sep 1924 (P).

LIARDET, FRANCIS (1798-1863) joined the *Mercury* in 1809, and saw service in Greenland, North America, the West Indies and West Africa. In 1819 he visited the East Indies as mate of a merchant ship. Serving later in the *Hyperion* (42 guns) against pirates in the West Indies, he was detached to the schooner *Union*, and thus came into contact with Lieutenant (afterwards Governor) Hobson (q.v.), whom he succeeded in command of the schooner *Lion* (1824). In operations on the coast of Yucatan (1823) he received two severe gunshot wounds. Hobson was made prisoner and Liardet took command of the boats, receiving the warm praise of Hobson for his zeal, bravery and perseverance. While in command of the *Lion*, Liardet captured nine pirates and retook the French ship *Calypso*, which he reloaded and carried off the shoals. Promoted lieutenant (1825), he became commander of the *Powerful* (84 guns) in 1838, and gained post rank for distinguished service at the siege of Acre (1840) as flag captain to Sir C. Napier.

His friendship with Wakefield secured him a post in the New Zealand Company and he sailed in the *Whitby* (1841). Liardet was banqueted at Wellington, and proceeded to take up the post of agent at New Plymouth. He had scarcely entered on his duties when he suffered severe injuries by an explosion while trying to clear the vent of a 4-pounder gun on the beach (29 Nov). Partially recovered, he returned to England (Feb 1842) and did not realise his hope of making New Zealand his home. In 1856 Liardet became a governor of Greenwich Hospital dying there on 1 Mar 1863. He published *Recollections of Seamanship and Discipline*; *Friendly Hints to the Young Lieutenant*; and *The Midshipman's Companion*.

Wells; Scholefield, *Hobson*; *Taranaki Herald and Budget*, 18 Dec 1926 (p).

## UGAR

LIGAR, CHARLES WHYBROW (1809-79) was born in Ceylon, where his father was stationed, and educated at the Royal Military College at Sandhurst. He received his commission in the Royal Engineers, but soon resigned and afterwards joined the hill drafting department of the Ordnance Survey. He was serving in Ireland when he was appointed by the Colonial Secretary to be surveyor-general in New Zealand (1840). Ligar married (1839) Grace (1811-58), daughter of Thomas Hanyngton, of Dungannon, county Tyrone (a niece of Lord Charlemont). They sailed for New Zealand in the *Prince Rupert*, which was wrecked on the coast of Brazil, and they continued their voyage in the *Antilla*, arriving in Dec. In addition to his duties as surveyor-general, Ligar was a lieutenant-colonel in the Auckland battalion of militia, and served during Heke's war. He was a magistrate and land titles commissioner in 1846. In 1848 he was a member of the Legislative Council of New Zealand. In 1856 he retired from the position of surveyor-general, and proposed to take up a run in south Otago, where he had made extensive explorations. During this trip he reported to the Superintendent of Otago that he had discovered gold in the Mataura river at Tukurau. Ligar went on pension in 1857 and was afterwards surveyor-general in Victoria (1858-69). On retiring he settled in Texas as a cattle grazer, but without much success. He married (secondly) Marie, daughter of Captain Williams (of New Zealand). Ligar died in 1879.

Mennell; N.Z.C., 32; Ordnance Survey records; Pyke; Beattie, ii.

LIGHTBAND, GEORGE WALES (1804-91) was born in Worcestershire, and was brought up to the tanning trade. As a young man he was a strong Methodist, and when he came to Nelson he assisted to establish that Church there and became a trustee of it. In England he attended public meetings in connection with the Reform bill. He came to New Zealand with his family in the *Thomas Harrison* (1842), settling at Nelson, where he established himself in a tannery. In 1857 he paid a visit to Australia on business, and while there obtained a printing plant and printer with which *The Colonist* was established, the first issue appearing on 23 Oct 1857. Lightband was much in-

## UNDAUER

terested in the development of New Zealand industries, and made many experiments in the manufacture of leather and paper. He produced the first parchment made in New Zealand. He died on 22 Oct 1891.

Broad; *Cycl. N.Z.*, v (34); *The Colonist*, 23 Oct 1891.

LIGHTBAND, MARTIN WALES (1831-1914) was the son of G. W. Lightband (q.v.), and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Thomas Harrison* (1842). He was educated in Nelson and brought up to his father's business, tanning, which he carried on for nearly 24 years. In 1896 he started business as a grain merchant. He was M.H.R. for Nelson City from 1871 till he resigned on 16 Apr 1872. Lightband was a member of the Nelson City Council from 1902. He died on 1 Aug 1914.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, v (p); *The Colonist*, 3 Aug 1914.

LINDAUER, GOTTFRIED (1839-1926) was born at Pilsen, in Czecho-Slovakia, and at the age of 16 went to Vienna, where he studied art under Fuehrich and Kuppelwieser. He was there for seven years, and received many commissions for portraits and painting of Biblical subjects for Roman Catholic churches throughout Austria.

Being attracted by reading about New Zealand, he came out in the ship *Reichstag* in 1873, and commenced painting portraits of prominent Maori chiefs. In 1874 he made the acquaintance of H. E. Partridge, who conceived the idea of forming a collection of Maori portraits and accompanied Lindauer on his visits to native villages. The principal collection was paid for by Partridge, who presented it to the Auckland Art Gallery in 1915. A description of the subjects was published by J. Cowan in 1901, and in 1930 many of them were reproduced and described by the same author. Lindauer made many other portraits of eminent New Zealanders, including Sir Walter Buller. He showed a collection of Maori pictures at the Indian and Colonial Exhibition, from which one was selected by the Prince of Wales (Edward VII). Lindauer died at Woodville on 13 Jun 1926.

Lindauer, *op. cit.*; Cowan, *op. cit.* (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 16 Jun; *Evening Star*, 15 Jun 1926 (p).

## LINGARD

LINGARD, EDWARD ATHERTON (1839-1903) was born at Runcorn, Cheshire, England, and educated at the Haversham and Manchester Grammar Schools and St Edmund Hall, Oxford. He came to New Zealand (1860) and became assistant master at the Bishop's school, Nelson (1861) and headmaster (1863). In 1864 (the year in which he was ordained deacon) he had temporary charge of Christ's College, and was appointed curate of Addington and Governor's Bay. In 1866 he became vicar of St Luke's, Christchurch; and in 1885 archdeacon of Akaroa. He was for some years clerical secretary to the synod, a member of the general synod and president of the bellringers' association. He died on 20 Sep 1903.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii (p); *The Press*, 21 Sep 1903.

LINGARD, WILLIAM (1845-1922) was born in county Clare, Ireland, the son of an officer of the British army who served in the Waterloo campaign. He was educated in Yorkshire, and was intended for the army, but becoming slightly deaf had to change his course and came to New Zealand in 1863. He served in the 2nd Waikato militia during the Waikato war; then farmed in the Wanganui and Waitotara districts, and served successively in the Prince of Wales Rifles, the Alexandra Lancers (1865), the Wanganui Cavalry and the Kai-iwi Cavalry. While engaged with the last-named corps in front of Tauranga-ika (Feb 1869), he was with a party of four reconnoitring the position when they were suddenly fired upon. Troop-sergeant Maxwell was badly wounded, and Trooper Henry Wright was pinned down by his horse falling on him. He was about to be tomahawked when Lingard rode up and freed him, covering him with his revolver while he retreated. He then rode round to the back of the pa and captured a horse, with which they made good their escape. Lingard received the New Zealand Cross. He was afterwards in charge of a party of scouts, but was invalided at Patea and the command fell to C. Maling (q.v.). Lingard farmed for some years afterwards and then entered into an insurance and land agency in Wellington. He was on the Wellington City Council (1896-99).

N.Z. Army records; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; Gudgeon (p); Cowan.

## UTTLE

LINTON, JAMES, was born in Dumfries, Scotland. He came to Australia in the fifties, and to New Zealand in 1860, going first to the goldfields at Queenstown. In 1871 he moved to Palmerston North, and he took a leading part in the progress of that town, of which he was mayor (1879-82 and 1884-85). He was a strong advocate of the Wellington Manawatu railway, and was for many years a director of the company. The town of Linton was named after him. (See E. S. THYNNE.)

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i.

LITTLE, JAMES (1834-1921) was born in the parish of Moorefoot, Midlothian, Scotland. In 1863 he came to New Zealand in the *Canterbury* as manager to Dr George Webster (q.v.) on the Corriedale and Balruddery estates, in north Otago. He brought with him 22 Romney Marsh ewes and nine rams, some of the first of that breed to come to New Zealand. Sheep owners ridiculed the idea of using such a breed in a part of the country where the merino was predominant. Little in a year or two recognised that they were right, but was convinced that the merino also would have to go. He suggested to Dr Webster experimenting by crossing the Romneys with the merino flock at Corriedale and so producing an inbred halfbred sheep. At that time there was no English grass on either station and the native tussock would not carry the coarse-feeding Romney. Little had considerable success in showing and selling Romneys in Canterbury, and Webster then made available a flock of 600 ewes for his experiment, and was prepared to stand the loss if the inbred flock should prove a failure. When Webster died (1878) Little bought his Lincolns and a large number of merinos and established himself on the Allandale estate in North Canterbury. The Lincoln-merino cross he named 'Corriedale' because it was first produced on that station. After a few years he showed inbred Corriedales in Canterbury shows. Little began his flock at Allandale about 1878 or 1879, and by 1890 the new inbred Corriedale was thoroughly established. In 1911 the breed was admitted to the Flock Book. In 1923 there were 105 registered flocks in the South Island and seven in the North. Corriedale sheep became an established and very successful breed and many animals were shipped to other sheep countries.

## LITTLEJOHN

Little also bred Ayrshire cattle and Clydesdale and Shire horses. He died in 1921.

James Little, *The Story of the Corriedale* (1927); Playne.

LITTLEJOHN, WILLIAM STILL (1859-1933) was born in Aberdeenshire, and educated at the Grammar School there and the University (M.A.). After serving as assistant at the Melrose boarding school, he came to New Zealand (1881) as mathematics and science master at Nelson College. On the resignation of J. W. Joynt he was appointed headmaster (1898), a position he held for only five years, though with distinction. A fine cricketer and football coach and referee, he was keen on all forms of sport and was president of the Nelson Rugby union. He brought the College cadet corps to a state of high efficiency, and was a captain and adjutant of the Nelson volunteers and major in the infantry battalion. In 1904 he was appointed principal of Scotch College in Melbourne, where again his inspiring enthusiasm had a marked influence upon the development of the school. He was also a member of the council of Melbourne University. In 1929 he received from Aberdeen University the honorary degree of doctor of laws. Littlejohn died on 8 Oct 1933.

*Nelson Coll. G.B. Reg.; Who's Who in Australia; Evening Post and The Dominion*, 9 Oct 1933.

LIVINGSTON, ALEXANDER (1806-79) was one of five teachers brought to Otago from Scotland under the education ordinance of 1856. He enjoyed the title of rector of the High School and a salary of £250 a year, but there was no accommodation for the higher classes, and though he was a competent classical and mathematics master he was restricted to teaching the elementary subjects. The diggings drew away many of the older pupils (in 1861) and in 1862 Livingston resigned to accept the post of provincial auditor. He died on 21 Dec 1879.

*Otago H.S. Reg.; Otago Daily Times*, 23 Dec 1879, 8 Aug 1893.

LLOYD, HENRY, was a native of King's county, Ireland, and came to New Zealand in 1860, taking up farming at Wade. He represented Kaipara in the Auckland Provincial Council (1873-75), was chairman of the Wade highway board, a member of the Waitemata county coun-

## LLOYD

cil and a justice of the peace and coroner. He spent much time prospecting for gold, which he believed would be found in north Auckland. Uoyd died on 12 Jul 1891.

LLOYD, JOHN FREDERICK (1810-75) was born in Ireland, and educated at Trinity College, Dublin, where he graduated M.A. (1835). Ordained deacon (1839) and priest (1840), he was curate of Kilmore, Ireland (1840-48). He then came to New Zealand, and was a fellow of St John's College, Auckland (1849-53); was vicar of St Paul's, Auckland (1853-65) and archdeacon of Waitemata (1865-70). He attended all the general synods to the third (1865), and in 1870, owing to impaired health, returned to England, where he became rector of Kirk-Iretton, Wirksworth, in the diocese of Lichfield. Uoyd read the prayers at the opening of the first session of the General Assembly (1854). While in Auckland he established the Orphans' Home. He died in 1875. (See SIR CHARLES CLIFFORD.)

Synods of the Province of New Zealand and the Diocese of Auckland; Crockford; Jacobs; Tucker; *Southern Cross*, 15 Feb 1870.

LLOYD, JOHN YEEDEN, was born in 1795, and appointed in 1813 an ensign in the 73rd Regiment, with which he served at Waterloo and in Canada. He attained the rank of major (1828) and retired in 1839.

Uoyd arrived in Taranaki by the *Kelso* in 1849, and took up land at Waireka. When the natives became hostile in 1850, he advised the settlers to drill and offered his services to train them. Major Uoyd was called to the Legislative Council in 1853. He made a strong stand in defence of the rights of Parliament, and resisted the introduction of responsible government lest the government should overrule the representative house. He returned to England about 1856.

*Army Lists*, 1814, 1829, 1840; *N.Z.P.D.*, 16 Jun, 24 Jul 1854.

LLOYD, TREVOR (?-1937), one of the earliest etchers in New Zealand, was the son of a farmer at Silverdale, Auckland, and was educated in the public school there. Artistically inclined, he taught himself and made many sketches and drawings of New Zealand fauna and flora and Maori faces until, on the death of his father in

## LOCKE

the early nineties, he moved to Auckland determined to make a living by his art.

Uoyd's first commission was to illustrate stories for the *New Zealand Magazine*, and he also contributed to the *New Zealand Graphic*. In 1903 he was appointed to the staff of the *Auckland Weekly News*, for which at first he drew mainly political cartoons and sketches of night and indoor events which were not susceptible of treatment by photography. Most of his work, including cartoons in every mood, was done in line and wash until 1921, when he began to contribute pen and ink drawings to the supplement of the *New Zealand Herald*. Lloyd was one of the first in New Zealand to make etchings, his subjects being mainly New Zealand bush scenes and other genre and Maori heads. He was keenly interested in native tools and carvings and spent much time searching for relics in caves and middens on the west coast north of Manukau. He died on 11 Sep 1937. He married (1894) Emily Lamont.

*N.Z. Herald*, 12 Sep 1937 (p).

LOCKE, SAMUEL (1836-90) was born in Norfolk, the son of a landowner whose fortunes suffered in the depression of 1847-48. Having been educated as a surveyor, Locke came to Auckland in 1853 and engaged in his profession for some years, employing Maori labourers from whom he learned the language. In 1859 McLean gave him a position in the Native department, and he was appointed district surveyor in Hawkes Bay. During the Hauhau rising he raised a native contingent under Whanga and Kopu, and with fifteen Europeans defeated the enemy on the Wairoa river. In 1869 he joined the General Government.

Locke was M.P.C. for Napier Town (1866-69). He was then appointed officer in charge of native affairs on the East Coast, and as resident magistrate at Taupo assisted materially to open up that district by means of roads after the conclusion of the war. He purchased the Seventy Mile Bush (1870-71), and in 1873 settled a dispute between the Wairoa tribe and the Urewera. In 1878 he gained the East Coast seat in Parliament, defeating Rees twice in that year. He retired in 1887, and died on 13 Apr 1890. He married Caroline Fanny, daughter of Joseph Rhodes (q.v.).

Lambert; Woodhouse; Cowan, ii; *Poverty Bay Herald*, 5 Jan 1924; *Auckland Star*, 14 Apr 1890.

## LOGAN

LOCKHART, GEORGE DUNCAN (1821-90) was a brother of the 10th baronet and father of the 11th baronet. He was an Australian squatter, and came to New Zealand in 1851, taking up land at Hakataramea, Canterbury. This failing, he devoted his whole attention to a Christchurch stock and station agency. He was interested in Sandy Knolls station (1851), and in 1854 he took up Valetta station near Ashburton, which he resold in 1858. He represented Timaru in the Canterbury Provincial Council (1859-60). Lockhart married (1856) a daughter of Dr Thomas, of Clifton, England. He died on 13 Sep 1890.

Acland; Burke, *Peerage*; Andersen; *Lyttelton Times*, 1 Oct 1890.

LOGAN, FRANCIS (1784-1862) was the son of William Logan, a farmer in the parish of Dunlop, Ayrshire. He matriculated in 1802 and passed through his medical course at Glasgow University. In 1808 he was admitted as an assistant-surgeon and posted to H.M.S. *Namur* at the Nore. In 1811 he transferred to the *Hyacinth*, a 20-gun ship, in which he was present at the operations of Spanish guerillas against the French positions at Castle Nersa and Almunecar. Promoted surgeon, he served in the *Rainbow* (1812) and the *Rifleman* (1823) and in the *Menai* (1824) on the coast of North America. In 1830 he was in the *Etna* surveying in West Africa, and in 1832 he made his first voyage to Australia in charge of convicts in the *Fanny*. She had an outbreak of cholera during the voyage, and reached Port Jackson on 1 Feb 1833. After a few months in the *Royal Sovereign* on the home station, Logan again came to Australia, in the convict ship *Mangles*. He left her in Sydney (Aug 1837) and called at New Zealand on his way back to England in the *John Barry*. In 1839 he was reported as unfit for sea service.

Logan was enthusiastic in his praise of New Zealand as a land for settlement, and joined the West of Scotland committee in 1839. He came to Wellington as surgeon in the *Bengal Merchant* (1839-40) bringing his wife and son, and selected his country land first at Porima. He was interested in natural science. His death occurred on 30 May 1862.

Admiralty Records; *Hist. Records Aust.*; Ward; Guthrie Hay; *Cant. O.N.*

## LOGAN

LOGAN, JAMES KENNEDY (1843-1912) was born at West Kilbride, Ayrshire, and educated at Paisley and trained in telegraphy in Glasgow. He came to Otago in the *City of Dunedin* (1864) and was employed on constructing the telegraph line from Dunedin to Christchurch. In 1865 he was appointed to the Dunedin telegraph office and later was appointed by the provincial government to construct the line to Queenstown. In 1869 he became inspector in Otago under the General Government; in 1894 superintendent of telegraphs for the Colony, from which position he retired in 1911. (I.S.O., 1909.) He died in Dec 1912.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908; *Otago Daily Times*, 2 Dec 1912.

LOGAN, ROBERT (1863-1935) was born in Berwickshire; educated at Wellfield and at Edinburgh Academy, and came to New Zealand in 1881. After some time on Ringway station in Southland, he acquired the nucleus of Maritanga estate in Central Otago. He was a member of the Maniatoto county council from 1893 (chairman 1900-02) and of other local bodies; and raised a squadron of mounted rifles (Maniatoto) in 1898. (Captain 1900-03; major 1904.) As colonel he commanded the expeditionary force which captured German Samoa (1914), and he administered that territory (1914-19). (C.B.; Chevalier Legion of Honour.) Logan died on 7 Feb 1935.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; Studholme.

LOMAX, HENRY ALFRED (1847-1932) was born in London and came to New Zealand at the age of 16, settling at Wanganui. For many years he managed Pharazyn's Marahau sheep station at Nukumaru. He was a lieutenant in the Wanganui Cavalry. During the sixties he was appointed to the civil branch (1868), but in 1869 he was sent as A.D.C. to Colonel McDonnell with the force at Taupo. He distinguished himself at Tapapa (24 Jan 1870), and in further engagements on the Upper Waikato and Bay of Plenty (being promoted captain). After the war Lomax lived mostly in Wanganui and Waitotara county. He was a justice of the peace and for a short time acting magistrate, and took a great interest in sport (especially cricket and rowing). As staff officer to Colonel Newall, he had important duties connected

## LOUGHNAN

with the Royal visit (1901). His death occurred on 31 Aug 1932.

Gudgeon (p); *Who's Who N.Z.*; *Wangantti Ch'ollide*, 1 Sep 1932.

LORIGAN, PATRICK (1817-60) born in Ireland, came to Auckland in the *Duchess of Argyle* (1842), and was engaged for many years as a timber merchant. He represented the Southern Division in the Provincial Council (1859-60) and died on 28 Aug 1860.

LOUDON, JAMES (1839-1903) was born at Airdrie, Lanarkshire, Scotland, and at the age of 20 emigrated to Australia to join his elder brother, who was mining at Ovens, Victoria. In the early sixties he crossed to Otago where, with his brother and Andrew Pollock, he became interested in coal mines at Green Island. He afterwards on his own account opened up the Walton Park mine, and when it was merged in the Walton Park Coal and Pottery Co. he became general manager. When this company wound up he opened up the Jubilee colliery, which was very successful. Loudon was a large employer of labour, and besides the mine operated a store at Walton Park. He was mayor of Green Island, chairman of the school committee, and president of several local societies. He died on 9 Aug 1903.

*Otago Daily Times*, 17 Aug 1903.

LOUGHNAN, ROBERT ANDREW (1841-1934) was born at Dacca, India, the son of R. J. Loughnan (1808-89, who was for 30 years a judge in the service of the East India Company, retired before the Mutiny and died in Canterbury). He received his education in France and at Stonyhurst College and the Catholic University in Dublin, and emigrated to Australia with his father at the age of 20 (the ship being wrecked on Flinders Island, in Bass Strait).

For several years Loughnan was engaged on his father's run in the Murrumbidgee district. In 1865 he came to New Zealand on behalf of a syndicate which purchased the Mount Pisa run, near Cromwell. This property he managed for a short time, and then became interested in meat-canning works at Fairfield, where he made use of his Australian experience. Want of markets crippled the new industry. As phormium tenax was realising about £70 a ton,

## LOUGHREY

Loughnan went into this business at Cust, Canterbury. A slump soon closed down the mill and he moved to Dunedin, where he entered journalism by contributing to the *Otago Guardian* (of which Vincent Pyke was editor.) Loughnan's education, experience and knowledge of music were of great service, and he became a valued writer both to the *Guardian* and the *Otago Daily Times*. He attracted the attention of William Reeves, and in 1875 was appointed editor of the *Lyttelton Times*, which he controlled until 1889.

At that time Archbishop Redwood established in Wellington the *Catholic Times*, of which he appointed Loughnan editor. A few months later the *New Zealand Times* was purchased by Captain Baldwin, and Loughnan edited it for six years (1890-96). He then went to Australia, where he acted as correspondent at the Federal conventions and wrote descriptive articles for the New Zealand press. He was on the editorial staff of the *Sydney Morning Herald* for several years, and wrote also for Melbourne papers.

After returning to New Zealand Loughnan was for many years associate editor of the *New Zealand Times*. In 1904 he was secretary of the land commission. In 1907 he was called to the Legislative Council, of which he was a member till 1914. Loughnan was a fine singer and a member of the choir of the Wellington Basilica. He published a good deal of literary work in book form, notably the *New Zealand Handbook* and *The Royal Tour* (1901), *The Settlers' Handbook* (1902), *New Zealand at Home* (1908) and a biography of Sir Joseph Ward (1928). He married (1877) Victoire de Malmanche (of Akaroa). Loughnan died on 14 Sep 1934.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 18 Sep 1934; Loughnan, *op. cit.*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908, 1924, 1932; *Evening Post*, 14 Sep 1934; *The Dominion*, 15 Sep (p). Portrait: Parliament House.

LOUGHREY, ANDREW (? -1913) was born in Melbourne, and educated at Melbourne University, where he graduated B.A. Though he leaned towards law, he was appointed inspector of schools in Victoria and travelled all over the colony on duty. He came to New Zealand after the passing of the new act (1877) and was appointed headmaster of Christchurch East school. While there he was induced to return to Victoria in his old position; took advantage

## LOUISSON

of the change to study law, and graduated LL.B. He came back to Christchurch (1880) and started to practise with McConnell; in 1882 with W. J. Holmes, and from 1890 as Loughrey and Lane.

In 1886 he raised the Irish Rifles, of which he was captain until they were disbanded. In 1887 Loughrey was elected M.H.R. for Linwood, which he represented to 1889. He was a supporter of the Stout-Vogel party. He died on 24 Sep 1913.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, iii; *N.Z. Herald*, 28 Sep 1887; *The Press*, 27 Sep 1913.

LOUISSON, CHARLES (1842-1924) was born in London, educated at Gravesend, and at the age of 14 emigrated to Victoria, where he worked for some time on sheep and cattle stations and on the goldfields at Ballarat. In 1865 he crossed to New Zealand and joined his brother Alfred in carrying across the Port Hills. They then went into business as general merchants in Hokitika, and after a year or two took up a sheep station in Marlborough. Meeting with no success, they returned to Canterbury and commenced farming at Southbridge, where they were joined by another brother (Cecil). In 1871 they took over the Crown brewery in Christchurch, which they operated with considerable success.

Louisson took an active part in municipal affairs, being for some years from 1881 a member of the City Council and on two occasions (1888-89 and 1898-99) mayor of the City. In 1888 he was one of the New Zealand commissioners at the Melbourne Exhibition. He was also a member of the North Canterbury hospital and charitable aid boards before they amalgamated, deputy-inspector of the mental hospital at Sunnyside, and an official visitor to the school for deaf mutes at Sumner. He was one of the founders of the Jewish congregation at Christchurch, in which he held every office. He was a trustee of the synagogue at the time of his death, having previously been elected a life member in recognition of his services. As a trustee for Hyman Marks, he did important service in connection with one of the largest benefactions in New Zealand, one of its activities being the establishment of the Marks ward at Christchurch hospital. Louisson was a prominent freemason (S.C.) and for some years

## LOVELL

district grand master for Canterbury. In 1900 he was appointed to the Legislative Council, in which he held a seat (except during 1915-18) until his death on 19 Apr 1924. He took a keen interest in volunteering (having been a sergeant-major in the Westland Light Horse), and he gave prizes for rowing, shooting and other sports. His main interest was trotting. He was a member of the committee of the N.Z. Metropolitan Trotting club from 1893 until 1907, and thereafter president, and a member of the Canterbury Jockey club.

*Who's Who N.Z.*, 190B; *N.Z.P.D.*, 2i Jun, 1 Jul 1924; 'Wigram; *The Press* and *Lyttelton Times*, 21 Apr 1924. Portrait: Parliament House.

LOVELL, JOHN (1810-97) was born in England, and came to New Zealand in the *Tasmania* in 1853. He took up land at Sawyers Bay, near Dunedin, and later a sheep station near, Kaitangata, from which Lovell's Flat took its name. His son John (who was drowned shortly afterwards) discovered coal there. Lovell returned to live in England and bought an estate in Sussex, but came to New Zealand again in 1864 and lived in Dunedin until his death (on 11 Mar 1897).

*Otago Daily Times*, 13 Mar 1891.

LOWDEN, JOHN (1845-1924) was born in county Durham, and educated at an elementary school in Gateshead. Apprenticed to engineering, he served in his father's works at Sunderland. In 1879 he came in the *Taranaki* to Otago, bringing his own engineering material; and for some years he was in business in Oamaru. Lowden erected the machinery in the Mataura paper mill, of which he had charge for some years. In 1883 he again entered into business for himself. He was nine years a member of the Mataura town board, and was on the first borough council, being elected mayor on 10 occasions between 1903 and 1921. He was a member also of the Southland hospital and charitable aid boards and the Bluff harbour Board (1918), secretary and chairman of the school committee, and for 40 years an elder of the Mataura Presbyterian Church. Lowden died on 21 Apr 1924.

*N.z. Herald*, 22 Apr 1924.

LOWE, ALEXANDER FRANCIS (1861-1929) was born at Nelson, the son of James Townsend

## LUCK

Lowe; educated at Nelson College and in England and became a clerk in the House of Representatives in 1885. In 1915 he became clerk of the House and in 1920 clerk of the Legislative Council and of Parliaments (C.M.G., 1924). He was honorary secretary of the Empire Parliamentary association. Lowe was keenly interested in acclimatisation and was a vice-president of the Wellington society. He married (1895) Laura Mildred, daughter of Henry Phillips, of Canterbury. He died on 20 Nov 1929.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 1 Jul 1930; *Parltry Record*; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1924; *Nelson Coil. Reg.*

LOWES, WILLIAM, was born in Northumberland, and came to New Zealand in the *Ramsay* (1865). Though he was a farmer by training, he carried on a business in Wellington as an importer of saddlery until 1873, when he moved to Wairarapa, purchased several properties and founded a stock and station agency (1879). He represented Porima in the Wellington Provincial Council (1873-75), and in Masterton was chairman of the trust lands trust and a member of the education board.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, i.

LOWRY, RICHARD JENNINGS, was chief mate in the *Tory*, which brought the New Zealand Company's preliminary expedition to Port Nicholson (1839). He assisted in the survey of the harbour, his name being given to Lowry Bay. In Apr 1840 he succeeded Chaffers in command of the vessel. Lowry died at sea in the East Indies about Oct and the command of the vessel passed to his brother Nicholas, who had joined her in Sydney. She was wrecked on the Half Moon shoal in Palawan passage (23 Jan 1841), and Nicholas died at sea on board an American whaler.

*N.Z.C.*; E. J. Wakefield; Ward.

LUCK, JOHN EDMUND (1840-96) was born at Peckham, London. His father belonged to a Protestant family in Kent, but became a Catholic during his stay in France. Studious as a child, John went at the age of nine to St Edmund's School in Hertfordshire.

During his vacations he came into contact with the Benedictine fathers of the Congregation of the Primitive Obsen'ance at Ramsgate,

## LUCK

and in 1858 he decided to become a monk. With that in view he studied philosophy at the seminary of St Sulpice in Paris, and in 1860 he joined the order (taking the name of Edmund). He was sent to the monastic college of St Ambrogio, in Rome, and prosecuted his theological studies at the Collegio Romano, where he took his D.D. (1865). His father (Alfred Luck) had meanwhile built the monastery at Ramsgate at his own expense; had with the sanction of the Pope been ordained a priest (1863) and died in 1864, leaving his own home to house St Augustine's College. John completed his theological course, was ordained priest (1865), and spent two years at Subiaco, where he taught philosophy. In 1867 he assisted in the foundation of a novitiate at Tenterden, Kent. Here he fulfilled the duties of novice-master and administered the temporalities. In 1872 Luck was appointed superior of the monastery and college and in 1875, his health having failed, he was appointed assistant-chaplain at Hales Place, Canterbury. During this period he translated and published the *Short Meditations*.

In 1878 he returned to the monastery at Ramsgate, and was vice-president of the college until the end of 1880, when the abbot-general of the Congregation decided to employ him in the foundation of a novitiate for the Italian province in Malta. While on his way to that post he was appointed Bishop of Auckland, and on 13 Aug 1882 he was consecrated by Cardinal Manning in the priory church of St Augustine, Ramsgate. Arriving in Auckland on 14 Nov 1882, he met his brother (Father F. A. Luck, O.S.B., 1841-99), who had preceded him by 18 months. During his episcopate of 13 years, Bishop Luck opened 19 new churches in the Auckland diocese, extended St Patrick's Cathedral and established 13 schools and eight convents (including the Home for the Aged Poor at Ponsonby). The number of priests in the diocese increased from 15 to 30, the Marist Brothers were introduced, and various extensions and new organisations carried out.

Luck was scholarly and studious, a charming conversationalist, an eloquent preacher, an accomplished musician and a skilled botanist and horticulturist. He wrote in 1888 an introduction to Pompallier's history of the Church in Oceania. His death occurred on 23 Jan 1896.

*N.Z. Herald*, 9 Aug 1882, 24 Jan 1896 (p).

## LUDLAM

LUCKIE, DAVID MITCHELL (1828-1909) was born at Montrose, Scotland, educated there and entered a mercantile office. He afterwards worked as a law clerk, and became an assistant assessor under the property tax act. Leaving this for journalism, he became in turn sub-editor of the *Montrose Review*, editor of the *John o' Groats Journal*, and editor of the *Arbroath Guide*.

Coming to New Zealand in 1863, he became part proprietor and editor of the Nelson *Colonist*. In 1869 he was gazetted a justice of the peace. He contested the Nelson seat in Parliament in 1866 against Stafford and Curtis without success, but he represented Nelson City in the Provincial Council (1869-72). In 1872 he was elected to Parliament, sitting for Nelson City till 1875. After the amalgamation of the *Southern Cross* with the *New Zealand Herald* (1876) he was editor till 1878, when he assumed control of the *Evening Post*, Wellington. In 1879 Luckie was appointed commissioner of the Government Insurance department. Ill-health compelled him in 1889 to relinquish this post and become deputy-commissioner. In 1894 he published *The Raid of the Russian Cruiser Kaskowski* to impress upon the public the danger of being unprepared for possible invasion. He was a fellow of the Royal Statistical society (1885). Luckie died on 6 May 1909.

*Cycl. N.z.*, i (p); Luckie, *op. cit.*, 1BB-; *Who's Who N.z.*, 190B; *Evening Post*, 7 May 1909. Portrait: Parliament House.

LUDLAM, ALFRED (1810-77) seems to have been born in county Down, Ireland. Nothing is known of his early life, but he was a man of culture, with the tastes of a country gentleman. He spent some time in the West Indies before coming to New Zealand in the *London* (which arrived on 12 Dec 1840). He was then unmarried.

He had a section in Ghuznee street, Wellington, and established his farm, Newry, at the Waiwetu. Ludlam soon achieved a reputation by his farming methods, and his steady selection of good class stock. His sheep had a New Zealand reputation, and at the Dunedin Exhibition (1865) he received a silver medal for information on his exhibits of fine and crossbred wools. He was an enterprising gardener, and

## LUDLAM

experimented with many imported plants. When the Horticultural and Botanical society was founded (1842) he was a member of the committee, and years later he co-operated with Travers, Hector and Mantell in securing for Wellington the botanical gardens, which he endowed with gifts of plants from his own property. Ludlam and Molesworth's windmill at Newry began grinding flour in Sep 1845. The barn was often used for public events (such as the dinner to Sir George Grey in 1851). The house was almost completed when the earthquake of 1848 caused considerable damage. In the earthquake of 1855 Ludlam and his wife (a daughter of Lieut-colonel Gibbes) were caught inside the house and were in danger of being killed by the fall of a chimney.

Ludlam was appointed by Grey a member of the nominated Legislative Council of New Munster (1849), but he resigned in the following year. He had a disposition for public affairs, and when the new constitution came into force he was elected to the Wellington Provincial Council for one of the Hutt seats, which he represented 1853-61 and 1865-75. He sided with the Hutt members (led by Wakefield) against Featherston in the political feud of 1857-61, and after the election in 1858 was elected Speaker. It was an unenviable position, since he was required to register decisions of the Wakefield majority of which he obviously did not approve. As Speaker he was called upon in emergencies to act as Superintendent. Such an emergency arose when Featherston resigned (1858), and Ludlam had to appeal to the courts to assert his rights against the ex-superintendent. Eventually Featherston handed over the keys, but only for a few days until he was re-elected Superintendent. Ludlam escaped from his unpleasant position by resigning the speakership (Sep 1859). He was too outspoken to be politically successful, and it is said that he spoke too often to be a strong man. In any case, his interests were those of a country gentleman rather than a man of affairs. He was one of the first members of the General Assembly, in which he represented the Hutt (1853-56 and 1866-70). Twice in the first period he resigned his seat. Between the first meeting of the Provincial Council and the assembling of Parliament in 1854 he changed his opinions regarding responsible government, and when Parliament

## LUKE

met he moved the address-in-reply as a convert to the principle. He never appeared as a parliamentary candidate after 1870, but he was at the head of the poll at the provincial election in 1873.

In 1867 Ludlam was appointed a governor of the newly created New Zealand Institute, and a member of the reception committee for the Duke of Edinburgh's visit. He was an enthusiastic volunteer, and attained the rank of major in the Hutt militia in 1868. In 1870 he was a pallbearer at the funeral of Te Puni. Ludlam's last days were spent, we are told, in a summer of golden charity: so that 'wherever his name was known there will be mourning for the honest, somewhat impractical, but outspoken and enterprising man.'

A year or two before his death he visited England for the health of his wife, who died while away. Ludlam died on 8 Nov 1877. Ludlam's Gardens were afterwards called 'McNab's' from a gardener (James McNab, 1831-90) who acquired them after his death.

*App. HR.*, 1874 H24, 1875 H35; *Wellington P.C. Proc.*; Ward; Wakelin; Carter; *Wellington Independent* (notably 22 Apr 1872) and *Spectator*, 1854-56; *Evening Post*, 15 Nov 1929.

LUKE, SIR JOHN PEARCE (1858-1931) was born at St Just, Penzance, Cornwall, and educated at the Penzance Wesleyan day school. In 1874 he came with his parents to New Zealand, and entered the engineering shop of E. W. Mills to complete his apprenticeship. He was afterwards employed by Edward Seagar, of the Victoria foundry, and was then engaged by the Government as an engineer in the Petone workshops. In 1879 he joined his father and brothers in founding the firm of S. Luke and Sons, which carried out many important engineering works, including shipbuilding and lighthouse construction. Luke was later joint manager and director until the business was merged in J. J. Niven and Co.

He was a member of the Wellington City Council (1898-1911) and mayor of the City (1913.21). In the Council he moved the resolution to purchase the horse trams for the City, and as mayor he furthered reclamations and inaugurated the superannuation scheme for city employees. He was many years president of the New Zealand Engineers' and Ironmasters' association, and was a member of the hospital

## LUKE

board, the technical education board and the Wellington Industrial association. In 1908 Luke was elected Liberal member for Wellington Suburbs. Defeated by W. H. D. Bell in 1911, and for Wellington South by Hindmarsh in 1914, he was returned for Wellington North in 1918, and held the seat till 1928. He was defeated by C. H. Chapman in 1928 and 1931. Luke received the C.M.G. (1917) and was knighted in 1921. He died on 7 Dec 1931. He married (1880) Jacobina (1861-1937, daughter of H. A. Gordon), who was awarded the C.B.E. for social and war work.

*N.Z.P.D.*; *Who's Who N.z.*, 1908, 1924; *Evening Post* (p) and *The Dominion*, 8 Dec 1931 (p), 16 Mar 1937.

LUKE, SAMUEL (1832-1906) was born at Royston, Hertfordshire, came to New Zealand in the *Annie Longton* (1857), and commenced farming at Paerata. On the outbreak of the war he had to remove to Otahuhu, where he farmed for the remainder of his life. He was chairman of the Otahuhu highway board (1877-79) and school committee, and a member of the county council and licensing committee. He was for 30 years from 1878 a member of the education board (and chairman in 1888 and on three other occasions). He was a member of the Auckland Grammar School board and the council of Auckland University College, and a member of the teachers' salaries commission (1901). Luke was on the Anglican diocesan synod and the general trust board and was a licensed lay preacher. He died on 28 May 1906.

*Otahuhu Borough Council Diamond Jubilee* (p); *N.Z. Herald*, 29 May 1906.

LUKIN, GRESLEY (1840-1916) was born at Launceston, Tasmania (the son of English parents), and educated in his native town. He studied engineering for two years, but disliked it and went on the stage, where for a few years he took a variety of parts in comedy and drama and was particularly successful in Shakespeare characters.

In 1866 he relinquished acting and accepted a post in the Queensland civil service, rising in two years to be chief clerk of the Lands department. He was for a while superintendent of a vast land district, which he had to traverse on horseback, thus gaining an insight

## LUKIN

into administrative matters and the life of the outback settlers. He personally drafted the Queensland land act of 1868. In 1871 Lukin was transferred to the Justice department as chief clerk in the supreme court at Brisbane. In 1873 he purchased an interest in the Brisbane Newspaper Co., which owned the *Courier* and the *Queenslander*. He edited the latter paper for some years with considerable success and became managing director of the company. He was one of the movers in the despatch of Ernest Favenc's expedition across the continent. Lukin was at this time a prominent citizen of Brisbane, and in 1879 he was sent to Sydney as Queensland commissioner to the International Exhibition. In the following year he disposed of his Brisbane interests and moved to Sydney, where he entered into journalism as a freelance writer and correspondent. He also tried a small pastoral venture in New South Wales, but in a year or two returned to Brisbane, and purchased the *Boomerang* from W. Lane (q.v.). This was a bright and convincing weekly run with great vigour and personality, and advocating the cause of the working class with fairness and humanity.

While conducting the *Boomerang* Lukin made the acquaintance of many rising writers afterwards famous in Australian journalism. He took a great interest in the Australian Natives' association and was one of the founders of the Queensland Agricultural and Pastoral association. He also founded the Johnsonian Club, which included in its membership many professional men of Brisbane. He was keenly interested in mining enterprises, and was instrumental in the flotation of several companies. In 1892 Lukin suffered a breakdown in health and was compelled to seek a more invigorating climate. He disposed of the *Boomerang* and paid a visit to New Zealand. While living in Otago, the floods occurred in Queensland and he wrote to the *Otago Daily Times* an eloquent appeal for relief for the sufferers (his first contribution to the New Zealand press). Mter doing a little freelance writing he joined the staff of the *Evening Post*, Wellington, then edited by Gillon (q.v.), and soon made a reputation as a fine writer and a scrupulously honest, humane and fairminded journalist. In him the highest traditions of the press were maintained. At an early date he made a 'scoop'

## LUMSDEN

by forecasting the proposed legislation to rescue the Bank of New Zealand.

On the death of Gillon (1896) Lukin became editor. Essentially a non-party man and a convinced democrat, he was a constant advocate of liberal land laws, education, and a white New Zealand. Though a strong imperialist, he was also an ardent nationalist and a supporter of home rule for Ireland. He advocated also a non-political civil service and the reform of the legislative council (which became law before his death, but was not brought into operation). Under his control the *Post* became the leading independent paper in New Zealand. In 1906 he represented the Commonwealth of Australia at the funeral of Seddon and in 1909 he attended the first Imperial press conference in London. As president of the New Zealand Institute of Journalists he warmly advocated a better organisation of the professional interest in journalism, but failed to get it accepted. Lukin died on 12 Sep 1916.

*Evening Post*, 12 Sep 1916 (p); *Otago Daily Times, N.Z. Herald, Brisbane Courier*, 13 Sep 1916; *Cycl. N.Z.*, vol i; *Who's Who N.Z.*, 1908.

LUMSDEN, GEORGE (1815-1904) was born in Fifeshire, educated at the Kilrenny school in his native shire and served his apprenticeship with his uncle, a jeweller in Pittenweem. In 1836 he went to Edinburgh and worked for many years for James Whitelaw. Having married Christina Blackwood Anderson in 1842, he went into business for himself. In 1853 he came to Australia in the *Ravensraig* and opened a shop in Geelong, but was soon attracted to the goldfields at Ballarat. Having little success, he returned to his shop in Geelong.

In 1861 Lumsden came to Invercargill. In 1866 he was elected to the Southland Provincial Council for Invercargill, which he represented until 1870, being a member of the executive in 1867 and 1868. Mter the reunion of Otago and Southland he continued to represent his constituency in the Otago Council until the abolition of the provinces. He was again in the executive in 1874-75 and for another term in 1875. Lumsden was elected to Parliament in 1876. After attending two sessions he found that the absence affected his business, and resigned (1878). He promoted the interests of his city in many ways, notably in the matter of

## LUNDON

education. He was one of the founders of the Southland Boys' High School (of which he was chairman for 14 years), and was a member of the education board and the land board. He died on 11 Feb 1904.

*Southland and Otago P.C. Proc., Southland B.H.S. Reg., Cycl. N.Z.*, iv (p); *Otago Daily Times*, 12 Feb 1904.

LUNDON, JOHN (1829-99) was born at Caherelly, county Limerick, and came to New Zealand with his parents in the *Westminster* in 1842. In 1852 he visited the Victorian diggings, and for some time after returning was engaged in shipping potatoes to Australia. He built the Harp of Erin hotel (1857), erected the first grandstand at Ellerslie and inaugurated horse-racing there.

In 1860 he joined Nixon's Volunteer cavalry, with which he served in the field. He was also engaged in transport and road work. In 1863 he raised the Manukau Rifle volunteers (of which he was captain) for service in the Waikato. He lived for some years at Onehunga and Awanui. He represented Raglan in the Auckland Provincial Council (1863) and Onehunga (1870-75). In 1868 he settled at Thames, but soon returned to Onehunga. He was elected M.H.R. for Mangonui and Bay of Islands (1879-81) as a follower of Grey.

In 1883 London was appointed as the representative in Samoa of the South Sea Island Produce Co. While there he conceived the idea of annexation, and proposed to Sir R. Stout (then Premier) that the New Zealand Government should take action so as to forestall German annexation. He returned to Apia to treat with the chiefs for the transfer of sovereignty and the recognition of Malietoa as paramount chief. The Samoan Parliament, on his recommendation, passed a bill favouring annexation to New Zealand (9 Feb 1885) and appointing Grey and London agents of Samoa to carry the measure into effect. The Germans had meanwhile hoisted their flag, and the action of London was officially disavowed in London. During the war scare in the eighties he raised two volunteer companies and a cadet company in Onehunga. In 1886 he launched a scheme of land settlement in north Auckland. London died on 7 Feb 1899.

*Auckland P.C. Proc., App. H.R.*, 1884, ii, A3,

## LUSK

1885 AI, 4D; *Auckland Star*, 8 Feb 1899. Portrait: Parliament House.

LUSK, DANIEL HENDERSON (1833-1921) was born in Renfrewshire, Scotland, the son of R. B. Lusk (q.v.). Educated at the High School in Glasgow, he studied civil engineering and arrived in New Zealand with his parents in the *Thames* (1849). He was employed by the Government in the survey of the Canterbury block and Christchurch (1850). Then he was appointed assistant engineer and engineer of roads under C. W. Ligar (1857).

Lusk had a bush farm at Mauku, and was at an early date involved in native hostilities. In 1858 he assisted to form the first volunteer company in Auckland, and when the war broke out in Taranaki he and Judge Maning enrolled 1,500 Ngapuhi and Rarawa to serve against the Taranaki tribes. The offer was not accepted, and the enrolment lapsed. Having surveyed a road from Auckland to Waikato, he was attached to the Royal Engineers in constructing it. When hostilities commenced, he was the principal agent in forming three companies of Forest Rangers (at Mauku, Pukekohe east and Waiuku), and early in the operation he showed a marked faculty for leadership. On 8 Sep he was in command of the stockade at Mauku when his force became engaged in a sharp action, and were extricated with difficulty from a dangerous ambush. Again on 23 Oct, in a fight against an overwhelming force, Lusk gave evidence of his skill and daring. Von Tempsky, who was present as an ensign, remarked that he was a man of consummate judgment about Maori warfare. These operations, which relieved Auckland of danger from a strong body of King natives who had eluded General Cameron in the Waikato, are fully described in Gudgeon (pp. II3-7) and are the subject of a laudatory despatch by Sir G. Grey to the Secretary of State (2 Nov 1863).

In Dec the transport service on the river broke down through the sinking of the gunboat *Avon*, and Lusk, who was with the troops as guide, was transferred to the transport corps. Working with great energy, he opened up a track which he had previously surveyed from Raglan to the Waikato at Te Rore. He was then appointed to command the transport service at Te Awamutu. While in this post he became aware of the enemy entrenching them-

## LUSK

selves at Orakau, and reconnoitred the position, narrowly escaping capture. He took part in the siege and capture of Orakau and the battle of Rangiriri. Mter the cessation of hostilities Lusk was appointed to command the Waiuku and Wairoa district. On news arriving of the approach of Te Kooti (1868), he mobilised his force of 300 men and marched them thirty miles into Mercer as a precautionary measure, for which he received the thanks of the Government. He remained in command of this district for another ten years.

In 1893 he was chief crown ranger for the Auckland land district. Retiring in the following year, he took up a cattle station in the King country, where he was one of the earliest settlers of Te Kuiti and was a member of the borough council. He promoted the new county of Waitomo (1906), and was its first chairman. He helped to establish the dairy company and was president of the racing club. Mter returning to live in Auckland, Lusk was president of the provincial Farmers' Union when the Trading Co. was established, and when the special constables were organised to break the strike (1913).

He married (1864) Ellen Henrietta (d. 1890), daughter of Captain William Butler (q.v.). Lusk's death occurred on 11 Jun 1921.

*Cycl. N.Z.*, ii (p); Cowan i (p); Gudgeon (p); Jourdain; *N.Z. Herald*, 13 Jun 1921.

LUSK, HUGH HART (1837-1926) was the youngest son of R. B. Lusk (q.v.) He came to New Zealand in 1849, and was educated in Auckland, and practised as a barrister and solicitor there. He married (1864) Mary (1845-1905), daughter of Captain William Butler (q.v.).

Lusk had advanced views on social matters, and as early as 1870 supported the principle of free education. In 1870 he was elected to the Provincial Council for Parnell, which he represented to 1873, being a member of the executive all the time. His political career received a setback from his suggestion that a poll-tax should be levied for education purposes. From 1875 until the abolition of the provinces he represented Wairoa and Mangapai. In 1876 he was elected M.H.R. for Franklin, resigning the seat two years later. In 1890 he went to Australia and the United States,

## LUSK

residing abroad for many years. Lusk wrote a good deal all his life. In 1865 he contributed to the *Fortnightly Review* an article on Hau-hauism, which he described as 'Maori Mohammedanism.' He also published *Our Foes at Home* (1899) and a thoughtful work on *Social Welfare in New Zealand* (1913). Lusk died on 8 Sep 1926.

*N.Z.P.D.*, 24 Jun 1927; *N.Z. Herald*, 9 Sep 1926; *Auckland P.C. Proc.*; *Otago Daily Times*, 13 Apr 1907.

LUSK, ROBERT BAILLIE (1798-1891) was born in Ayrshire, and educated at the Greenock Academy and Edinburgh University. His deeply religious views and high ideals were due in some measure to early association with Dr McLeod Campbell, Thomas Erskine and the Rev F. D. Maurice. For sharing their opinions on points of doctrine he was disqualified from being an elder of his church in Glasgow.

Lusk came to New Zealand in 1849; settled first at Turanga creek, Auckland; and moved later into the city. He was a zealous Anglican and a member of the diocesan and general synods. He became provincial accountant during the superintendency of Williamson (1857), and treasurer in 1865, holding office until the abolition (1876). Lusk married Jessie E. Hart. His death occurred on 6 Sep 1891. (See D. H. Lusk, H. H. Lusk.)

Cowie; Morton.

LUXFORD, JOHN ALDRED (1854-1921) was born at Hutt, his parents having arrived in New Zealand in the *Duke of Roxburgh* (1840). He was educated at the school of the Rev W. Fell and later at the Wellington Grammar School (before it was incorporated in Wellington College). In 1875 he was received for training for the Methodist ministry. He studied under the Rev Joseph Berry and at Canterbury College, began his ministry at Woodend (1876), and was ordained in 1880. He married (1880) Emma Allen Mansfield, daughter of the Rev John Aldred. Luxford held several important pastorates, and proved himself a thoughtful preacher, a wise administrator, and an able representative of his Church in the community. The church at Rugby street, St Albans, was erected under his leadership. As a freemason he filled the master's chair and also the office of grand chaplain. For many

## LYALL

years he was convener of the naval and military committee. In 1902 he was chaplain to the 10th New Zealand contingent in South Africa. In 1903 he became president of the New Zealand Methodist conference. In the war of 1914-18 he left New Zealand with the Main Body, served in Egypt and Gallipoli, and won a wide reputation for valorous and self-denying devotion to the needs of the wounded and dying. At Suvla Bay, while ministering to the wounded, he was shot in the leg (which was amputated). Later he was chaplain to the military hospital at Walton-on-Thames. He sought superannuation from active work in 1916, and returned to New Zealand in Sep 1919. A resolute and heroic soldier, he was twice mentioned in despatches; attained the rank of lieutenant-colonel, and was made a C.M.G. He died on 28 Jan 1921. M.A.R.P.

LYALL, DAVID (1817-95) was born at Auchinlae, Scotland, and educated at Aberdeen and Edinburgh Universities. Having entered the Royal Navy, he was chosen in 1839, on account of his knowledge of natural history, as assistant surgeon in the *Terror*, under Sir John Clark Ross (Hooker holding the same position in the *Erebus*). He served in this capacity (much of the time in New Zealand waters and the Antarctic) until 1842, when he was sent to the Mediterranean.

Promoted surgeon, Lyall came to New Zealand again as surgeon and naturalist in the *Achemn*. Returning to England in 1852, he volunteered as surgeon in Belcher's expedition to find Franklin, and was posted to the *Assistance*. For the next two years he was senior medical officer in the relief expedition, with jurisdiction over many crews then concentrated in the Arctic. He served in the *Pembroke* in the Russian war (1855), had a short term in the *Royal William*, and was then appointed to the surveying ship *Plumper*, delimiting the boundary between Great Britain and the United States in the north Pacific. Following this he was surgeon and naturalist to the land boundary commission under Sir John Hawkins, R.E. He was medical officer again in the *Pembroke*, and in 1868 received a home appointment, from which he retired in 1873 as deputy-inspector-general.

Lyall's activities as a naturalist are recorded

## LYND

in the early scientific history of New Zealand and the Antarctic. His work was much appreciated by Hooker. He died on 25 Feb 1895.

J. C. Ross, *A Voyage of Discovery* . . . 1839-43, 1847; J. D. Hooker, *The Botany of the Antarctic Voyage of H.M. Discovery Ships Erebus and Terror, 1844*; *The Times*, 2 Mar 1895.

LYND, ROBERT (1816-51) was born at Plymouth, England. At the age of sixteen he became an ensign in the 65th Regiment, with which he served in the Persian Gulf (1819) and Arabia (1821). In 1823 he became a lieutenant on half-pay, but some years later was appointed barrackmaster at Dominica, whence he was transferred to Hobart, and then to Sydney. He came to Auckland in the same capacity in 1847. A man of scientific interests and considerable literary attainments, Lynd studied natural history in New South Wales and was a close friend of Dr Leichhardt. On the report of Leichhardt's death in 1845 he wrote some of his best stanzas. He was associated with many charities and was a vice-president of the Auckland Mechanics' Institute. He died on 24 Sep 1851.

*N.z. Herald*, 29 Sep, 4 Oct 1851.

LYON, WILLIAM (1805-79) was born in Scotland, brought up to the bookselling trade, and had a business in Hamilton, near Glasgow, before coming to New Zealand in the *Duke of Roxburgh*, which arrived on 8 Feb 1840. He entered into business as a bookseller, for which he had every qualification. He was a man of some attainments; 'a fluent writer who wrote much for the early press of Wellington; and a fellow of the Geological Society of London who gave many public lectures at the Mechanics' Institute. His business afterwards became known as Lyon and Blair, and was merged early in this century in Whitcombe and Tombs.

Besides his business, Lyon had a farm near Pito-one, which he called Glenlyon, and where the first St Andrew's day picnic was held (30 Nov 1840). During the day a Scotch thistle was sown on the property. A man of commonsense and broad humanity, Lyon soon had an assured position in the settlement. When the first election was held of mayor and aldermen (under the abortive charter) he came second on the poll (George Hunter 273; Lyon 237; Fitzherbert 210). From an early date he was a

## LYON

justice of the peace, and he sat on the bench regularly. He was a founder of the Pacific lodge, the first lodge of freemasons in New Zealand, and took a part in the establishment of the *Spectator* and the *Independent*, to both of which he was a regular contributor.

Shortly after the pioneers arrived, the Port Nicholson institute, library, and reading-room was formed, and acquired for its rooms a native house built originally for Barrett's hotel. When this institution failed (1842), Lyon at his own risk negotiated for the purchase of the rooms, and with the help of friends formed in May the Mechanics' Institute. When this became moribund, he called a meeting to resuscitate it. He was vice-president for many years, and was the last survivor of the original trustees.

Lyon attended the public meetings to consider measures of defence after the attack at Boulcott's farm (1846). He took a prominent part in the movement for representative government, and when the Settlers' Constitutional association was formed in 1850 he was elected a corresponding member. He was one of the first members of the Provincial Council for Wellington City, which he represented 1853-57, being throughout a supporter of Featherston. He was a member of the Council's first education committee (1853) and afterwards of the education commission. With Hunter, R. J. Duncan, Dransfield and others, Lyon assisted at the formation of the New Zealand Steam Navigation Co., of which he was a director for some years. In business he was strictly honourable, in public life straightforward and generous. He was an acute observer and a great reader, and possessed one of the best libraries in the Colony. He was known later to have been the author of a clever political satire, *The Ghaldean Manuscript*.

Lyon was a strong Presbyterian, and at the time of the disruption warmly supported the Free Church. He married (1843) Margaret Barr (d. 1871). His death occurred on 22 Feb 1879.

*Wellington P.C. Proc.*; *Cycl. N.Z.*, i (p); Ward.

LYON, WILLIAM CHARLES (1825-87) was the only son of General Sir James Lyon, K.C.B., G.C.H., sometime governor of Barbados. Receiving his commission in the Coldstream Guards, he exchanged into the 92nd Highlanders in order to see active service, and was

LYTH

for 10 months in the Crimea. After returning to England, he had an accident which resulted in the loss of an arm, and he retired from the army to settle in New Zealand.

When the Maori war broke out Lyon was given command of a volunteer company, and was adjutant to Colonel Balneavis. In May 1863 he received his majority and command of a wing of the 3rd battalion Auckland militia. With a force of 150 Imperial and Colonial troops he repulsed an attack on the stockade at vVairoa, and then drove the Maori from their position. He was mentioned in despatches and thanked by Generals Cameron and Galloway. In Oct he was promoted lieutenant-colonel and given command of the 3rd Regiment Waikato militia. He commanded the expedition to Opotiki (1865), and then returned to the Waikato command. In 1869, during the absence of Whitmore on the East Coast, he took command of the Colonial Field Force assembling at Wanganui. He served throughout the campaign against Titokowaru as second in command, being present at Otautu (13:Mar) and Te Ngaere, and remaining in command at Patea until returning to his post in Waikato.

Lyon was appointed acting Under-secretary for Defence and Commissioner of Armed Constabulary during Colonel Moule's absence on leave, and in 1884 (during the Russian war scare) he was entrusted with the defence of Auckland and command of the district. Lyon was brusque and blunt in manner, but courteous and considerate and most popular with the rank and file. He died on 16 Nov 1887. He married (1865) Sophia, daughter of Edward Rawlinson, Blair Castle, county Cork.

Gudgeon (p); Gorton; Cowan ii (p); *Auckland Star*, 18 Nov 1887; *N.Z. Herald*, 27 Feb 1888.

LYTH, RICHARD BURDSALL (1810-87) was

LYTH

born in York, England. He was educated for the medical profession and admitted a member of the Royal College of Surgeons. At the age of 26 he entered the Methodist ministry and was one of the first medical missionaries sent out by the Wesleyan Missionary Society. He and his wife arrived at Sydney in 1837 and proceeded to the Friendly islands in H.M.S. *Collway*. Leaving Sydney on 11 Oct 1837, the *Conway* anchored off Entry Island, New Zealand, where Lyth established contacts with the Methodist missionaries in various stations. For three years he served in Tonga, acquiring a mastery of the language. He was next appointed to Fiji, where his medical skill gave him great influence over the natives. He soon gained an accurate knowledge of the Fijian language which he wrote with idiomatic correctness. He translated some of the New Testament books and revised a large part of the Fijian Old Testament. Many Fijian hymns are his composition. His greatest work in Fiji was the training and directing of a large body of native missionaries who were sent throughout the group and other fields in the Pacific. In 1855, because of his scholarship, his culture and his refinement he was appointed governor of the Wesleyan college at Auckland. He made an indelible mark upon the life of the college and of his Church and stamped the impress of his character upon many students. Returning to England in 1858, he was for some time engaged in revising the Fijian scriptures for the British and Foreign Bible Society. Later he was engaged in mission work in Gibraltar for five years and he subsequently took an active part in army chaplaincy. In 1876 he was superannuated and settled in York. He resided in Fulford Barracks and until his death (on 11 Feb 1887) did devoted pastoral work amongst soldiers and civilians.

M.A.R.P.